

WORLD OF IMMORTALS

by Chen Dong



World of Immortals (长生界 Chángshēng jiè)

Author : Chen Dong (辰东).

Year : 2008

Status : 688 Chapters [Completed]

Category : Ancient Myth

It has over 30,356,327 views and 3,068,008 characters, being the most viewed novel in the categories.

Synopsis :

The World of Immortals, it is the world every mortals long for. For many, it is an eternal glory to distort the dimension and enter the World of Immortals. But the vicissitude of time is simply merciless, the legends regarding immortality had long been forgotten.

However, a miracle shall rise once more! An immortal was about to distort the dimension with martial arts and cut all ties with the mortal world. The protagonist, Xiao Chen, was caught up in it and accidentally brought to the World of Immortals. What will they find in the vast world beyond the rift?

Info :

<http://www.novelupdates.com/series/world-of-immortals/>

Raws:

<http://www.ranwen.org/files/article/3/3171/index.html>

Translators:

<http://pikatranslations.com/side-project/world-of-immortals/>

Changed to

<http://silvalibrary.com/world-of-immortals/>



Table of Contents

[World of Immortals](#)

[WOI-Glossary](#)

[WOI-C01](#)

[WOI-C02](#)

[WOI-C03](#)

[WOI-C04](#)

[WOI-C05](#)

[WOI-C06](#)

[WOI-C07](#)

[WOI-C08](#)

[WOI-C09](#)

[WOI-C010](#)

[WOI-C011](#)

[WOI-C012](#)

[WOI-C013](#)

[WOI-C014](#)

[WOI-C015](#)

[WOI-C016](#)

[WOI-C017](#)

[WOI-C018](#)

[WOI-C019](#)

[WOI-C020](#)

[WOI-C021](#)

[WOI-C022](#)

[WOI-C023](#)

[WOI-C024](#)

[WOI-C025](#)

[WOI-C026](#)

[WOI-C027](#)

[WOI-C028](#)

[WOI-C029](#)

[WOI-C030](#)

[WOI-C031](#)

[change](#)

[WOI-C032](#)

[WOI-C033](#)

[WOI-C034](#)

[WOI-C035](#)

[WOI-C036](#)

[WOI-C037](#)

[WOI-C038](#)

[WOI-C039](#)

[WOI-C040](#)

[WOI-C041](#)

[WOI-C042](#)

[WOI-C043](#)

[WOI-C044](#)

[WOI-C045](#)

[WOI-C046](#)

[WOI-C047](#)

[WOI-C048](#)

[WOI-C049](#)

[WOI-C050](#)

[WOI-C051](#)

[WOI-C052](#)

[WOI-C053](#)

[WOI-C054](#)

[WOI-C055](#)

[WOI-C056](#)

[WOI-C057](#)

[WOI-C058](#)

[WOI-C059](#)

[WOI-C060](#)

[WOI-C061](#)

[WOI-C062](#)

[Character review](#)

[WOI-C063](#)

[WOI-C064](#)

[WOI-C065](#)

[WOI-C066](#)

[WOI-C067](#)

[WOI-C068](#)

[WOI-C069](#)

[WOI-C070](#)

[WOI-C071](#)

[WOI-C072](#)

[WOI-C073](#)

[WOI-C074](#)

[WOI-C075](#)

[WOI-C076](#)

[WOI-C077](#)

[WOI-C078](#)

[WOI-C079](#)

[WOI-C080](#)

[WOI-C081](#)

[WOI-C082](#)

[WOI-C083](#)

[WOI-C084](#)

[WOI-C085](#)

[WOI-C086](#)

[WOI-C087](#)

[WOI-C088](#)

[WOI-C089](#)

[WOI-C090](#)

[WOI-C091](#)

[WOI-C092](#)

[WOI-C093](#)

[WOI-C094](#)

[WOI-C095](#)

[WOI-C096](#)

[WOI-C097](#)

[WOI-C098](#)

[WOI-C099](#)

[WOI-C0100](#)

[WOI-C0101](#)

[WOI-C0102](#)

[WOI-C0103](#)

[WOI-C0104](#)

[WOI-C0105](#)

[WOI-C0106](#)

[WOI-C0107](#)

[WOI-C0108](#)

[WOI-C0109](#)

[WOI-C0110](#)

[WOI-C0111](#)

[WOI-C0112](#)

[WOI-C0113](#)

[WOI-C0114](#)

[WOI-C0115](#)

[WOI-C0116](#)

[WOI-C0117](#)

[WOI-C0118](#)

[WOI-C0119](#)

[WOI-C0120](#)

[WOI-C0121](#)

[WOI-C0122](#)

[WOI-C0123](#)

[WOI-C0124](#)

[WOI-C0125](#)

[WOI-C0126](#)

[WOI-C0127](#)

[WOI-C0128](#)

[WOI-C0129](#)

[WOI-C0130](#)

[WOI-C0131](#)

[WOI-C0132](#)

[WOI-C0133](#)

[WOI-C0134](#)

[WOI-C0135](#)

[WOI-C0136](#)

[WOI-C0137](#)

[WOI-C0138](#)

[WOI-C0139](#)

[WOI-C0140](#)

[WOI-C0141](#)

[WOI-C0142](#)

[WOI-C0143](#)

[WOI-C0144](#)

[WOI-C0145](#)

[WOI-C0146](#)

[WOI-C0147](#)

[WOI-C0148](#)

[WOI-C0149](#)

[WOI-C0150](#)

[WOI-C0151](#)

[WOI-C0152](#)

[WOI-C0153](#)

[WOI-C0154](#)

[WOI-C0155](#)

[WOI-C0156](#)

[WOI-C0157](#)

[WOI-C0158](#)

[WOI-C0159](#)

[WOI-C0160](#)

[WOI-C0161](#)

[WOI-C0162](#)

[WOI-C0163](#)

[WOI-C0164](#)

[WOI-C0165](#)

[WOI-C0166](#)

[WOI-C0167](#)

[WOI-C0168](#)

[WOI-C0169](#)

[WOI-C0170](#)

[WOI-C0171](#)

[WOI-C0172](#)

[WOI-C0173](#)

[WOI-C0174](#)

[WOI-C0175](#)

[WOI-C0176](#)

[WOI-C0177](#)

[WOI-C0178](#)

[WOI-C0179](#)

[WOI-C0180](#)

[WOI-C0181](#)

[WOI-C0182](#)

[WOI-C0183](#)

[WOI-C0184](#)

[WOI-C0185](#)

[WOI-C0186](#)

[WOI-C0187](#)

[WOI-C0188](#)

[WOI-C0189](#)

[WOI-C0190](#)

[WOI-C0191](#)

[WOI-C0192](#)

[WOI-C0193](#)

[WOI-C0194](#)

[WOI-C0195](#)

[WOI-C0196](#)

[WOI-C0197](#)

[WOI-C0198](#)

[WOI-C0199](#)

[WOI-C0200](#)

[WOI-C0201](#)

[WOI-C0202](#)

[WOI-C0203](#)

[WOI-C0204](#)

[WOI-C0205](#)

[WOI-C0206](#)

[WOI-C0207](#)

[WOI-C0208](#)

[WOI-C0209](#)

[WOI-C0210](#)

[WOI-C0211](#)

[WOI-C0212](#)

[WOI-C0213](#)

[WOI-C0214](#)

[WOI-C0215](#)

[WOI-C0216](#)

[wink](#)

The Training Method is actually a Qi-Training Method:

Secret Qi-Training Method 炼气法诀 [liàn qì fǎ jué]

Qi-Training Diagram 炼气图 [liàn qì tú]

P.S. The ancestor of the protagonist in Inch of Radiance is in this chapter too.

World of Immortals Chapter 1

Who in this world can escape death?

No matter how talented you were within this breathtaking world, you would simply end up as a skeleton covered in sanguine ash. No amount of pride could overcome your inevitable fate of 'turning into yellow soil and returning to the vast mountains and rivers'!

Immortality was without a doubt the greatest desire of every living being. Unfortunately, individuals that never grew old didn't exist, and there was no such thing as an immortal emperor. Regardless of how mighty you became, it was impossible to escape the crutches of illness and death. Nobody is capable of living an eternal life within this world.

However, the legends of immortality had been passed down since ancient times.

Bodhidharma, Dugu Qiu Bai, Ximen Chuixue, Li Xunhuan, Shi Fei Xuan, Lang Fan Yun, Pangban, Qin Meng Yao...

Each and every one of these historical names had been passed down from the beginning of time, almost as if it they were an ancient curse that continuously encouraged the later generation. It allowed the people to believe that immortality was absolutely not ridiculous and that some people could eventually reach that domain through hard work.

Only.... the flow of time was simply ruthless. As the years passed by, the legends of immortality were gradually erased along with the flow of time.

Silently and endlessly erased until the present, but... a miracle shall rise once more!

The evening of the fifteenth month's full moon, there appeared a Goddess known as Lan Nuo who was cutting off all familial ties on top of the Kunlun Mortal Mountain. She shattered space itself, shocking everyone around her and causing the rumors of immortality to heat up once more.

More than ten thousand people came to visit the Kunlun Mountain Range. It didn't matter if it was highly esteemed aristocrats and noblemen or lowly peddlers and commoners; they all came for the same purpose. This purpose was to witness a once in a lifetime miracle.

At last, the day of the full moon arrived. The moon was high above Kunlun, majestic and beautiful. Under the bright moonlight, as if being shrouded by a layer of hazy veil, the sacred mountain was faintly discernable. It made the mountain range look like a fairyland.

Xiao Chen ¹ was running like the wind under the moonlight. His entire body was covered in blood, and even his pitch-black long hair was stained. However, the sharp gaze on his handsome face was unyielding. A pair of pupils that shone as bright as a star transmitted his unwavering determination!

He was currently facing a life or death situation!

The Imperial Angel Zhao Lin Er vowed to exterminate him, and ten highly trained people hastily surrounded him in all directions. The angel's face were concealed by silk, and the curves on her body figure were graceful. Her pupils were like the limpid autumn water. She seemed so elegant even when she was

flying so fast. Like a glimpse of light, she only left behind elegant fairy dust in her path.

Unable to escape, Xiao Chen rushed towards the direction of the Mortal Mountain!

Under the moonlight, vast amounts of people gathered near the Mortal Mountain. The figures of men filled the area, but despite there being over ten thousand individuals gathered at the moment, it was extremely quiet. Everyone's attention was focused on the girl in white dress standing atop the Mortal Mountain.

At the peak of the mountain, Lan Nuo's whole body was covered by a snow white dress enveloped by the moonlight. Her immortal body seemed as if it was emitting a faint pure and holy radiance. The white dress was brushed by the wind and she truly appeared as if she was a fairy that didn't eat the food of common mortals.

During this half month, she tried to split the space twice. However, she would pull back her foot every time it succeeded.

If she took that single step, she would have entered the world of immortals!

But if she took that one step, the boundless world of mortals would slowly escape her reach forever, henceforth severing all the bonds with this world!

It required great courage to cut off all bonds! Once she took the step, what awaited her later in life might just be endless solitude.

It was hard to predict what might happen; it would be better for immortals to feel no emotion!

She stood still in the early morning today up until now. All kinds of mortals appeared in her mind one after another. The moment to say goodbye to the mortal world finally arrived. A divine light burned fiercely and suddenly erupted above the summit of the mountain. The entire mountain summit was enveloped by layers and layers of pure and holy radiance.

Lan Nuo's soft and smooth skin looked so radiant and noble within the multicolored holy light. Under the watchful eyes of tens of thousands of people, she shattered the space and hardened her resolve to move forward.

At the final moment, she took a final glance of the mortal world. That fantasy and dreamlike moment, as well as the face of the immortal, had been forever carved in the hearts of the common people. Tens of thousands of people all shouted Lan Nuo's name at the same time.

But the orderly shout immediately fell into disorder. Unexpectedly, they discovered two silhouettes running at high speed to the top of the mountain summit at the same time Lan Nuo shattered the space!

Recorded in ancient calendar, Year 7316, one proud goddess, Lan Nuo, split the space with martial arts and left the mortal world. The Imperial Angel, Zhao Lin Er, was fortunate enough to accompany her to the world of immortals.

As for Xiao Chen, his name was not placed in any of the history books.

The instant the space was shattered, Xiao Chen was indeed extremely

astonished!

He never thought such a day exist; he was actually about to enter the world of immortals like this. At that moment he thought about a lot of things, family and friends... he would have to part with them forever. He would depart from this mortal world forever.

Fleeing for his life had unexpectedly led to this result. For many people, shattering the space and entering the world of immortals was an eternal glory, but Xiao Chen would rather abandon this opportunity. He would remember this mortal world for as long as he lived, Parent, relatives... farewell! He silently departed from the mortal world.

At that time, however, Xiao Chen didn't know that the Imperial Angel Zhao Lin Er also headed straight through that shattered space.

References:

[↑] 1. The protagonist's name.

World of Immortals Chapter 2

Black, thunderous clouds roiled about, blocking off all the sunlight. A darkness that resembles a curtain of death fell down. With a flash, a dense and frightening aura began to fill the air.

Within the turbulent, black, death-like clouds, stood a tall and majestic ancient castle that was faintly discernible at the horizon. Bloody waves soared from within the ancient castle one after another, emitting a violent and gorgeous red flair from within the black clouds. The Heavens and the Earth were deathly quiet, permeating a frightening atmosphere. Not a sound could be heard, not a movement could be seen.

With the passing of time, the ancient castle had been through the vicissitudes of time, and it appeared as if it had ripped through space-time and came into existence today. The ancient castle resembled a whirlpool of death and enveloped the surrounding area with an inexhaustible aura of death. The rolling black clouds began to slowly gather around the ancient castle and were gobbled up by the ancient castle.

The black clouds gradually faded away, however, that only caused the sky to appear even more eerie and terrifying. Endless amounts of skeletal remains were scattered around the ancient castle. The boundless white bones were spread out and formed a deathly sea of bones. The awe-inspiring ancient castle was standing tall and upright above the snow white sea of bones. Words could not begin to describe how frightening and deathly silent it was.

From within the ancient castle, a few human shaped skeletons with greyish wings flew out, and the inexhaustible aura of death grandiosely enveloped the area. They were overlooking an isolated island in the depths of the ocean.

That was an isolated island at the depths of the boundless ocean.

The island was flourishing with greenery and the cry of wild beasts could be heard. 90% of the entire region was covered by primitive forest. The ancient trees reached a height so great that it blocked the sky and all sunlight, and plenty of vicious beasts hid within the forest, ready to prowl on unsuspecting prey. It was truly the scene of an uncivilized era.

Around this time, however, a sliver of an incomparably cold and dense aura of death came and covered the entire area from afar. The originally noisy isolated island that was filled with the cry of beasts gradually became more quiet.

It seems there was a great ancient beast hidden within the deepest part of the island that occasionally released low and angry roars. Apart from that, the Heavens and Earth were completely soundless.

Xiao Chen, who had lost his consciousness on the sandy beach of the island, also seemed to be able to feel the bone chilling coldness. His body involuntarily started to tremble a few times.

After a long time, the eerie aura of death finally began to slowly diminish. The vast ocean of white bones that were sustaining the weight of the ancient castle at a distant gradually faded away from the peak of that boundless ocean.

Only at this time did the Heavens and the Earth finally restore its former liveliness. Countless dragonic roars from the residential beasts rang out from the deepest part of this island. The island's vitality was slowly restored.

With the intense sun high up in the sky, and after who knew how much time had passed already, Xiao Chen finally regained his consciousness. The sound of sea waves entered his ears, and he slowly opened his two eyes before noticing the bluish green ocean waves that were moving up and down before him. Currently, he was lying on top of a scalding golden sandy shore.

The blazing sunshine made Xiao Chen feel slightly dizzy. He was suffering from a severe sunburn and his mouth felt dry. His lips were already chapped, and sitting up with a slight difficulty, Xiao Chen tried to size up this unfamiliar environment.

The scorching heatwave carried over the sea breeze's waves of fishy and salty smells. A group of seabirds were currently soaring above the ocean. Occasionally, huge fish would leap up from the water surface and stir up layers upon layers of big waves.

Within the depths of the island, all kinds of ear-splitting roars from barbaric beasts could be heard. Xiao Chen felt as if he had returned to an uncivilized era!

A large amount of already ripe light brown coconut fruits fell from the fresh and dark green coconut groves at the side of the seacoast. They were piled up under the green leaves and especially enticing.

Apparently, some salivary fluids were already being produced at Xiao Chen's dry lips. He expended a great deal of effort before finally standing up and walking forward unsteadily.

Xiao Chen managed to find a temporary shelter to relieve the burning pain of being roasted alive by the sun.

A gentle sea breeze glided past, causing the bluish green leaves to be brushed lightly. Xiao Chen finally began to feel a bit refreshed.

The ripened coconut fruits fell to the ground from time to time, producing “Bang! Bang!” noises.

Xiao Chen felt as if a blazing flame was rising from within his throat, and it felt as if there was fire and smoke coming out from his mouth. He was extremely thirsty. Bearing the pain all over his body, Xiao Chen walked forwards unsteadily and gathered a pile of coconut fruits. Then with a “Plop” sound, he sat down on the ground.

He used brute force to split open a coconut and gulped down big mouthfuls of the sweet coconut juice. This kind of feeling was indeed extremely splendid. For Xiao Chen who was parched to the point of almost burning up, the coconut juice could be compared to top quality wine.

He had unexpectedly entered the World of Immortals!

Xiao Chen was deep in thought, where did that Lan Nuo go? In addition, were those people who had their names passed down for all eternity really living in this world? His mind was brimming with questions. Of course, he didn’t know that the Imperial Angel Zhao Lin Er had also entered this piece of space.

Resolutely, Xiao Chen silently knelt on the ground and bade farewell to his parent who were across space and time, henceforth severing all ties with the mortal world!

He was naturally a decisive person, so he compelled himself to organize his

disordered mood. He then started to consider how he should go about in order to survive in this unfamiliar world.

Quietly sitting on top of the sandy beach with his back leaning against the bulky coconut tree trunk. Xiao Chen's body began to flicker with a sparkling luster, as if his body was being enveloped by a layer of hazy light. The essence of the Heavens and Earth came together unceasingly. The spiritual energy within the coconut grove was gradually spread out, as if there were seamlessly dim multicolored rays enshrouding the forest.

The roar of the beasts constantly rang out. This really wasn't a piece of 'Ultimate Bliss Pure Land'. Now his highest priority was to restore his body to its former condition as soon as possible. Xiao Chen began to immerse himself in the secrets of the law, guiding the wood essence to start treating his injuries.

The origins of his training method came from a mysterious stone inscription.

He grew up near the river bank of the Yellow River since childhood. At the age of 7, he encountered a rarely seen drought. The water mass of the Yellow River in front of the village was nearly dried up, and a huge stone tablet revealed itself. After removing the mud, 4 big letters could be seen carved on the front of the stone tablet: Eternally Restrained Yellow River!

There was an ancient legend that had always been passed down from both sides of the Yellow River. During the time when Yu the Great¹ tamed the floods, the highest of the heavens dropped a mysterious stone tablet into the Yellow River to subdue the water eternally, ensuring that there would no longer be any more flooding.

Therefore, the villagers immediately thought of that mysterious legendary

stone tablet when they saw this stone tablet revealed itself from the base of Yellow River. They washed the mud off of the stone tablet and started to burn incense to pray for an entire day.

After cleaning it up, a few carving marks appeared on the back of the stone tablet. The carvings produced a mysterious and complex diagram, it was impossible for the villagers to understand so they took it as some sort of celestial writings.

“The Legend of Celestial Writings” It filled the little Xiao Chen with endless delusion. Everyday he went to stare at the stone tablet and became lost in his thoughts. 2 months later, the water level of Yellow River started to rise again due to a rainstorm and the stone tablet was once again submerged under the river forever.

By the time, the mysterious and complex diagram was already carved deeply within little Xiao Chen’s mind long ago. After learning martial arts, he finally began to understand the complex stone inscription, causing him to follow the path of asceticism ²!

That was an ancient and mysterious Qi-Training Diagram bestowed by the heavens!

Xiao Chen didn’t know whether the mysterious stone inscription could be compared to those other legendary secret methods. Since 10 years of age, he started to persist and train relentlessly. Afterwards, he spent 10 years to constantly learn many fighting styles, but the method he used to train his spiritual power never changed.

[↑] 1. Yu the Great (c. 21st century BC) mythical leader who tamed the floods

[↑] 2. Severe self-discipline and avoidance of all forms of indulgence

World of Immortals Chapter 3

Xiao Chen benefited greatly from painstakingly studying the mysterious stone inscription for 10 years. His physique was transforming unceasingly and it vaguely felt as if he was turning over a new leaf. However, what ultimately made him place his faith in this mysterious Qi-Training Diagram originated from the great war at Kunlun Mountain Range.

In order to watch Lan Nuo miraculously split the space with martial arts, he unexpectedly got bullied by the Imperial Guards on the way. That was the most desperate fight in his entire life. He was surrounded by 13 Imperial Guards and within that time, he killed Zhao Lin Er's maid servant.

He could tell that the mysterious stone inscription was not an ordinary training method. With only ten years of bitter training, he had already advanced to a higher level.

Training day after day, Xiao Chen gained a profound understanding on the secrets of the Qi-Training Diagram bestowed by Heaven. The deeper his understanding, the more he thought that there was still more to this Secret Technique. He felt that this Secret Technique was not complete!

According to legend, the Eternally Restrained Yellow River Stone Tablet descended from the Ninth Heaven. Maybe he was still missing another similar stone tablet, but his chances of obtaining a mysterious tablet with similar inscriptions was simply too rare!

The splendor of the sun, the moonlight, and the essence of the plants... the nature possessed boundless strength and all sorts of energy. Xiao Chen was operating the Secret Qi-Training Method in the middle of the coconut grove,

absorbing the essence of the heaven and earth to nourish his own injured body. His surroundings were shrouded by a hazy multicolored light.

After two hours, Xiao Chen finally awoke from his state of stillness. The condition of his body wasn't as severe as he thought, and he unexpectedly underwent full recovery within just ten days.

The sun was setting in the west, and the afterglow of the sun was reflected by the ocean's surface, dying it a crimson color. This scenery made it appear as if the ocean and sky were actually linked together.

"Rumble", "Rumble", "Rumble" and at this moment, waves of rumbling sounds could be heard from the beach, the oppressive noise directly transmitted to Xiao Chen's ear. When he turned his head to assess the situation, his complexion immediately paled.

A huge silver-colored beast climbed up to the coastal area from the ocean. Its body was around 50 meters long. From just a glance, the silver-colored alligator could almost be mistaken for a mountain, but as you looked more carefully, the differences became more obvious.

Hundreds of gigantic bony outgrowths glittered like frost and snow along the beast's mountain ridge-like spine. Each bony outgrowth was around two meters long and looked like a sharp lance pointing towards the sky, protecting its huge back.

It was really way too huge! It was covered with silver-colored scales that glitters like frost and snow from head to toe. Each scale was at least 1 meter long and half a meter wide. Looking from a distance, this silver-colored giant that was covered with cold and flickering scales all over its body seemed especially fierce.

The vicious silver-colored beast had eight thick and powerful claws all together. There was an awe-inspiring light hidden at the tips of the sharp and gigantic claws, striking anyone who gazed upon it with terror. In addition, a sharp horn protruded roughly seven to eight meters above its head. A cold and threatening silver-colored radiance was flickering from its horn. This beast was really incomparably scary and huge.

Its enormous gloomy jade colored eyes were like millstone plates and the eyes emitted dim light as if they were a torch. After taking a quick glance of its surroundings, it ascended to the sandy shore.

It then turned towards the sunset and revealed its one meter long teeth that resembled a broadsword by opening its enormous mouth before emitting a terrifying roar, causing the seawater as well as everything in its vicinity to shake violently. A lot of seabird were terrified and flew to the distant sky. Some seabirds nearby even fell into the ocean.

It was so mighty! It was seriously earth-shattering!

Even though he immediately covered his ears, the buzzing sound was still transmitted to Xian Chen's ear. This tremendous roar was like thunder exploding right beside his ears.

After the 50 meters long huge beast faced the sunset and roared, it lied down on the sandy shore and shut its gigantic eyes. Apparently, it wanted to stay the night here.

Xiao Chen was shaken to his core. As expected, the World of Immortals is not that simple!

Looking at the silver giant that resembled a mountain ridge, Xiao Chen recalled the vicious beast from ancient times in the legend of the seaside era — — — — the Eight-clawed Tyrant Dragon!

This fierce and terrifying giant's appearance was exactly the same as the Eight-clawed Tyrant Dragon described in the legend!

According to legend, the ancient beast was capable of overturning the seas and rivers. It was capable of conjuring clouds and bringing about rain. Once encountered, the only fate that awaited any ship that went out to the sea was death! It was the most savage beast within the ocean. Even Neptune¹ required to retreat three day's march ² once he encountered it!

"The ancient beast that was capable of confronting god... it actually exists in this world!" Recalling those ancient legends, Xiao Chen had a hint of astonishment on his face. He never thought he would be able to meet such an ancient beasts with his own eyes in this World of Immortals.

Even though he was far away from the beast, Xiao Chen could already feel the bitter waves of demonic aura. Who knew how many sea creatures had already fallen prey to this enormous ancient beast!

Xiao Chen was very rational. He got up on his feet and lightly walked towards the depths of the coconut grove. Only until he was convinced that the ancient beast was unable to detect him did he stop and observe from a distance.

The Eight-clawed Tyrant Dragon was motionless, it was just quietly lying there as if it had been petrified. It looked like a silver mountain ridge. Xiao Chen guessed that this beach might be where it resides and most likely where it

spends the night sleeping.

After the ancient beast climbed up the beach and roared before the twilight of the sunset, the primitive jungle in the vicinity suddenly became quiet. Only the howls of the savage beasts in the depths of the island could be heard from time to time.

The sea breeze was blowing gently and the glow of the sunset was fading away. Xiao Chen startled countless number of birds in the middle of the seaside jungle and found that the ground was covered with bird eggs. Dinner had been secured!

The moonlight was like a flowing river. Specks of starlight filled the night sky. The sea waves lightly glided over the sandy shore. The salty sea breeze declined and lightly brushed the night scene. Xiao Chen slowly entered the land of dreams within the coconut grove.

Early the next morning, the sun ascended from the East and the red clouds in the morning sprinkled over the wide expanse of area with its golden luster.

A terrifying ear-splitting howl that could shatter the will of the people resounded and pierced through the skies!

The legendary ancient beast, Eight-clawed Tyrant Dragon, was facing the rising sun that just crawled up from the sea a moment ago and opened its gigantic mouth to send out an earth-splitting roar. The sound waves caused the tranquil bluish green ocean to shake violently. All the seabirds that were flying toward the horizon were so frightened that they disappeared completely.

The silver-colored dragon's eight claws moved simultaneously, causing a booming noise from the beach. It slowly entered the ocean and an outburst of waves immediately surfaced from the tranquil ocean, as if a tsunami had just broke out. That silver-colored shadow in the ocean continuously stirred about, causing torrents of big waves to well up.

Only after it gradually disappeared into the distance did the ocean slowly regain its former tranquility.

As the tide swayed back and forth, the seawater swept away any remaining traces left behind by the vicious dragon.

References:

[↑] 1. The Emperor of the Sea. Literal translation is “God of the Sea”, or “Sea God” for short.

[↑] 2. To Retreat Three Day's March (退避三舍); It's a Chinese idiom. It means to give way in the face of superior strength / a strategic withdrawal

World of Immortals Chapter 4

Xiao Chen moved away from the depths of the coconut grove and observed the vast ocean attentively while recalling the frightful scene of the huge monster flaunting its strength in the seawater. That really was an exceptionally vicious beast!

After a night of rehabilitation, Xiao Chen's body felt much better. As long as he didn't move around too violently, it shouldn't obstruct his actions. Laying down on the beach while facing the morning sun, he began to gather the worldly essence and practice the mysterious training method from the ancient tablet. His entire body was as still as a pine tree.

The gentle morning sun shone upon Xiao Chen's body, and his breathing was consistent and smooth. One after another, miniature light rays that couldn't be seen by the naked eye rushed forth, breached his skin, and entered his body. The light rays were moving about energetically within his body.

Xiao Chen was rather talented in training as he had studied the mysterious Qi-Training Diagram since childhood. The entrance to the vast divine palace was already slowly opening up for him!

The rising morning sun was emitting multicolored rays.

Xiao Chen began to divide his breathing into a stable tempo, and a magnificent golden ray would enter his body each time he inhaled. He guided the air through his flesh and into his internal organs and bones, allowing the golden rays to rush forth into every inch of his body. As he breathed out, the impure power within the internal organs, bones, and flesh were all expelled out of his body through his skin.

His flesh was being purified and improved by the purest energy, causing his physique to constantly change day after day, year after year.

The essence of training was to constantly break through the limits of the human body, and constantly transform the body in order to raise it to a higher level. Xiao Chen firmly believed that sooner or later, he would break through the boundary between life and death and take a step into the realm of immortals. As described in legends, he would then become one of those people whose names had shaken the world for eternity!

A lot of shells, shrimps, crabs, sea urchins, as well as some other lively saltwater fishes were left on the beach after the morning tide retreated, making Xian Chen's breakfast incomparably sumptuous. The flame was throbbing about at one side of the coconut grove, and on top of the flame was a shell about the size of a washbowl. Coconut juice was being boiled inside the shell while the seafood were already releasing alluring aromas.

After enjoying the sumptuous meal, Xiao Chen decided to investigate the circumstances of the terrain within the vicinity and find a place to stay temporarily.

Beyond the coconut groves was an even more concentrated forest. That place was full of vitality, thick foliage and an abundance of vegetation. There were Parashorea Chinensis¹, white Costus Roots², yellow Aleurites Cordatas³, olive trees, palm trees, rubber trees, and so on. Ancient trees of great height hid the sky and covered the earth.

When Xiao Chen entered the territory of the seabirds, countless birds in the jungle became frightened and flew off. Countless numbers of seabirds began to

circle the horizon while chirping. The feathers of the birds filled the entire sky as they fluttered while gently floated downwards.

A thick layer of bird excrement covered the ground and there were bird nests everywhere from the branches all the way to the ground. One could clearly see bird eggs everywhere and there were even nestlings crying piteously for food. Countless fully grown seabirds were flying in circles while crying out in fear.

Only after he left the jungle for an extremely long time did that place slowly regain its previous tranquility.

Walking forwards for roughly 1.5 to 2 kilometers, Xiao Chen entered a primitive and ancient region of the forest. The roots of the thousand years old ancient trees were twisted in a complicated and tricky position. Vines that were a few centuries old coiled around the trees. This part of the forest was populated by many vicious beasts that were ready to go on a rampage.

“Hooowl.....”

A fierce Saber-Toothed Tiger snarled and exposed its thick and sharp teeth before lunging at Xiao Chen. Xiao Chen quickly turned his body around and swept his right leg out with all his might to trip the vicious tiger.

Just around this time, the howl of another beast could be heard from nearby. A violent ape with 2 heads and roughly 5 meters tall dashed straight towards this area. It was especially frightening with its tall demonic body, dark and forbidding fur, as well as its pair of sinister heads.

Xiao Chen did not want to provoke some exotic barbaric beast so he hastily

turned around and rushed into the mountain forest. That Saber-Toothed Tiger faced the Double-Headed Ape.

“Hooowl.....”

The roar of the tiger suddenly came to a stop, and Xiao Chen turned around to take a quick glance. What he saw was a bloody scene where the Double-Headed Ape unexpectedly tore the Saber-Toothed Tiger apart, causing the ape’s dark and forbidding fur to be stained with blood.

Xiao Chen became more cautious and ran away as fast as lightning while avoiding the various exotic beasts. He didn’t want to have a direct confrontation with them.

Xiao Chen hadn’t even moved that far before he saw a bunch of vicious beast that only appeared in legends. However, he saw even more bloody scene. On one occasion he saw a Heavenly Leopard with a pair of wings rip apart a Two-Headed Elephant, and another incident where an enormous python with a horn devour a Three-Headed Tiger.....

Walking within the endless primitive forest, Xiao Chen could see some bone remains frequently. They were the remains of tigers, lions and elephants as well as unknown gigantic skeletal remains. The dozens of 7 to 8 meters long disintegrated skeletons hidden between the woods and the grass made the forest seem especially frightening.

“Roar.....”

A huge roar suddenly emitted from the depths of the mountain ridge. The

sound was ear-splitting and soared through the sky! Countless beasts were startled by the sound and started to wail, causing a huge chaos in the depths of the mountain ridge.

Xiao Chen had also been shaken to his core. His body trembled violently and his eardrum nearly ruptured.

It was only natural as this was comparable to the roar of a legendary dragon!

This roar was by no means any inferior to the ancient Eight-clawed Tyrant Dragon's roar! It was hard to imagine just exactly what kind of vicious beast it was.

Xiao Chen was secretly anxious, as he had already discovered two huge vicious beast at the external regions of the island. This island was indeed incomparably mysterious. His wound did not fully recover yet, so he didn't dare to take the risk of moving any further ahead. He followed his former path and began to go back.

Finally, Xiao Chen searched for a place suitable to recuperate at the external region of the island. The distance here was only about 1.5 kilometers away from the beach. It was close to the dwellings of the Eight-clawed Tyrant Dragon, so ordinary vicious beasts didn't dare to rashly approach this area.

A clear spring that looked like a jade-colored band flowed continuously as it gathered into a small lake within the forest. The surface of the lake was as clear as sapphire and the tall and crowded forest encircled the small lake. The trees blocked the scorching sun, creating a spacious and cool shelter.

The surrounding of the small lake was covered in layers of Wisterias 4, and

all kinds of unknown beautiful purple and brilliant red-colored flowers were in full bloom. With the fragrance of the flowers in the air and the pleasant song of the birds, it was indeed a good hiding place.

Moreover, there were many of fruit trees in the vicinity. Not only was there a tall coconut tree, there were also somewhat short pineapple plants, lemon trees, lychee trees and so on. The branches were heavily laden with fruits, and they emitted a sweet fruity aroma that filled the surrounding woods. It was especially alluring.

Xiao Chen discovered a bamboo forest somewhere not far away. He tried to operate his Battle-Qi carefully as not to affect the condition of his wound and chopped some of the green jade bamboo with a stone hatchet to bring back. He then went to search for strips of flexible vines.

At the side of the sapphire-like lake, Xiao Chen built a green jade bamboo house, and within the house was a bed made entirely out of bamboo. The house made out of natural woods was brimming with the sweet fragrance of plants. It felt extremely refined and free from worry.

It should be mentioned that the weather at the ocean was very unpredictable. Until that afternoon, there was originally no clouds in the sky but in the blink of an eye, the weather suddenly became dusky and gloomy. A wide expanse of black clouds covered the entire sky in an instant.

“Rumble”

The black clouds roiled about over the island and lightning flashed, the thunder rolled, and a heavy downpour began to fall. Xiao Chen was glad that he built a bamboo house in time. Looking at the heavy rain outside the window, he started

to ponder.

After entering the World of Immortals, he kept thinking about the shattered space, about the figures who left their fame behind in the mortal world for all eternity, and whether he would be able to meet them one of these days?

With a single sword, Dugu Qiubai shocked the whole martial world. There was not a single person who could stand up to resist him.....

Li Xunhuan, who was nicknamed Xiao Li Flying Dagger, never missed his target and his throwing knife was capable of shattering space.....

Shi Feixuan, an extremely gifted fairy whose beauty was out of this world.....

Wan Wan, who possessed worldly intelligence and was as quick-witted as the Elves.....

Pangban, an unrivalled demonic ruler who planted fear into the hearts of the devils, making them cower for all eternity.....

Lang Fanyun, an individual who was extremely passionate and his love for the sword was unmatched. Because of love, he took up the sword and entered the path of Daoism.....

.....

Those mighty names that shook the world for all eternity emerged from within Xiao Chen's mind one after another. Since those figures had already entered the

realm of immortals, he believed that there might be a chance to meet them in the future. This was absolutely not an empty dream!

References:

[↑] 1. https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Parashorea_chinensis

[↑] 2. A Medical Herbs

[↑] 3. Chinese wood-oil tree

[↑] 4. <https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Wisteria>

Chapter 5 – Jade Dragon’s Egg

Three days passed in an instant and Xian Chen’s wound recovered very quickly. He determined that it would fully recover within 6 to 7 days.

A flame was throbbing within the forest when night fell. On top of the bamboo stick was a hare that was being roasted until it was golden brown. The grease that dripped on the fire was emitting a “Chi Chi” sound. The sea salt had already thoroughly lubricated the meat, and an alluring aroma was lingering around the forest.

Xiao Chen used a bamboo sword to slice the golden brown hare on top of a shellfish plate. Then, he started to wash the different kinds of fruit he plucked from the forest, sliced them up and put them together into several plates full of fruits. After that he poured the coconut juice into a cup made out of bamboo before he finally began to enjoy his dinner. After one bite of the flexible, slippery and tender rabbit meat, the fragrance spread through his mouth. In addition to all kinds of sweet fruits, it made his appetite increase greatly.

The sunset glow faded and night fell but instead of becoming more tranquil, the rumbling sound at the seaside became much louder.

For unknown reasons, the Eight-Clawed Tyrant Dragon had been roaring continuously at the seaside since the sun had fallen. It produced an even more ear-splitting thunderous roar as time passed. The thunderous roar caused a huge turmoil in the bluish-green ocean and mountain forest. The power of the sound wave was extremely terrifying.

The ancient beast was still shouting non-stop even when the entire sky was already filled with sparkling stars. Xiao Chen was surprised by this unusual sound

and felt attracted to the dragon's oppressive roar. He arrived at the seaside coconut grove under the moonlight.

Silvery lights were flickering all over the body of the 50 meter long Eight-clawed Tyrant Dragon, making it seem like a mountain made out of silver. On top of that, the sharp horn, the upside-down bony outgrowths, and the eight huge claws that were glittering like frost and snow made the beast seem especially frightening and ferocious.

The ear-splitting thunderous roar already started to gradually calm down. It seemed like the ancient beast went on a rampage on the sandy shore and created a lot of pot-holes everywhere. What appeared on the beach one after another were huge and frightening deep ravines.

Xiao Chen's gaze was completely captivated by it!

At the side of the vicious dragon, a pure and holy rosy cloud was flickering. If one observed carefully, one would realize that it was actually caused by two dragon eggs! The size of the eggs were as big as a millstone plate and the shells were sparkling and translucent as if they were made of jade. The eggs were transmitting a bright and glorious ray.

The ancient dragon actually laid eggs!

Xiao Chen was extremely shocked. He finally knew why the vicious dragon was being abnormal.

The Eight-clawed Tyrant Dragon dug up a big hole at the sandy shore and carefully buried the two dragon eggs within the hole.

The seaside finally regained tranquility the following night.

The stars filled the entire sky, it was gorgeous and exceptionally beautiful.

After returning to his hideout besides the lake, Xiao Chen started to practice the qi-method for 2 hours. After that, he entered the bamboo house that emitted the sweet scent of vegetation and slowly entered the land of dreams on top of the bamboo bed.

He spent the majority of his day training because he knew that regardless of whether he was in the human world or this unknown immortal world, only by having enough strength would he be able to keep himself alive.

Early in the morning, the tide was rising and falling. The sea was calmly waving back and forth.

The ancient Eight-clawed Tyrant Dragon already left a long time ago, Xiao Chen dug up the big hole at the sandy shore. Two dragon eggs about the size of a millstone plate revealed themselves and they emitted a glorious radiance.

The eggshell was glittering and translucent, as if it was carved out of the finest jade. It was flickering with magical silver rays of light.

The dragon egg that had only ever appeared in legends!

And now, a genuine one presented itself before Xiao Chen's eyes.

Xiao Chen brandished his hand to strike one of the dragon egg. The dragon egg was flickering with a silver light and to one's surprise, there was not the slightest amount of damage. Xiao Chen was extremely shocked, he increased his strength to strike at the egg again. A brittle "Crack" sound could be heard coming from the jade-like eggshell and a big crack emerged.

Xiao Chen did not feel guilty. After all, this is the legendary vicious dragon capable of confronting the Emperor of the Sea, Neptune. This is the most savage ruler of the ocean that would eventually rip apart countless living things everyday.

The sparkling and translucent dragon egg finally broke, and the brilliant silver light inside was really blinding. The egg white leaked out and covered the ground. Very soon, the egg white seeped into the sands, exposing the silver-colored "egg yolk" which acted as the core. A magnificent light was circulating on top of it, it seems like this was the origin of the glorious radiance.

The almost non-existent hissing sound of the dragon was transmitted to Xiao Chen's ears. To his amazement, he discovered a silvery light was rising from the dragon egg. That was a mini-sized vicious dragon baring its fangs at Xiao Chen. It was sending out an extremely powerful life energy.

That was the essence of a Dragon Soul!

He did not hesitate to take that silver radiance into his stomach. In that instant, Xiao Chen felt as if his soul was about to burst into flames. A surge of violent life energy was attacking him from within!

The dragon eggs laid by the ancient beast contained an unimaginably strong life energy because it would eventually become a vicious dragon in the future

after all! It was only natural that its inborn energy was abundant.

Xiao Chen's body was entirely enshrouded by a silver light and it appeared as if his entire body was enshrouded by a raging flame. What was contained within the essence of the dragon egg was an inexhaustible life energy. Xiao Chen's body seemed almost transparent and hard to be discerned. A silver vicious dragon entered his 'Ocean of Qi'.

As if attracted by the energy within Xiao Chen, the remnants of the dragon egg and essence gathered around his body and attempted to fuse with the shadow dragon within his body.

Xiao Chen felt as if his body was about to shatter into pieces. His soul and body was about to fall apart!

Just at this moment, the true nature of the ancient monument, Eternally Restrained Yellow River, revealed itself within Xiao Chen's mind. The secret method of the Qi-Training Diagram bestowed by heaven acted independently. Xiao Chen endured the extraordinary pain to observe the bizarre things that were happening within his body. The shadow dragon within his body was slowly getting refined!

At last, the silver flame that was pulsating outside of Xiao Chen's body gradually vanished after almost half a day had passed. The silver vicious dragon within his body had disappeared and changed into a silver light that was about the size of a grain of rice. It submerged into the left foot's 'acupuncture point'.

The acupuncture point was located underneath the ankle. The silver-colored light within the acupuncture point made it seem divine. Compared to the other acupuncture points, it was like a bright light within the darkness!

After two more hours had passed, Xiao Chen opened his eyes. Even though he took in the legendary dragon egg, his power did not advance at all. Xiao Chen started to ponder, if such an enormous Dragon Essence could barely transform into a silver light about the size of a rice grain and set into the acupuncture point at the left foot, how much Dragon Essence would he need to fill the 365 points within the human's body? And what sort of transformation would occur if all the acupuncture points in one's body were fixated with this light bead?

The sun had already set and the roar of the dragon could be heard from the depths of the ocean. The calm ocean was split apart and big waves surged towards both side. That obviously marked the arrival of the ancient beast.

Chapter 6 – The Savage Beast’s Rampage

Xiao Chen shouted “not good” loudly and rushed towards the jungle at the side of the coastal area rapidly. The Eight-clawed Tyrant Dragon was returning, he had to go into hiding as quickly as possible or else he would inevitably meet a tragic end!

Fortunately, Xiao Chen had already entered the primary forest as the ominous shadow of the huge vicious dragon appeared at the ocean.

Not long later, a dragon’s roar came from the seaside and shook the heavens. Even though they were separated by several kilometers, the tremendous roar was still as piercing as before. It was like a heavenly thunder that caused one’s blood to roll over and over.

The Eight-clawed Tyrant Dragon discovered that one of the dragon eggs were destroyed and went crazy. It began roaring at the seaside unceasingly. The tremendous roar caused the tranquil ocean to rumble. Soon after, the vicious dragon started to wreck havoc at the vast expanse of coconut grove nearby.

Silver flames pulsed all over the mountain-sized ancient beast as it rushed towards the dense forest region at the inner parts of the island. Killing intent was breaking out from the huge dragon’s 50 meters long body, everything in its path was destroyed!

The forest trees fell one after another, the ground trembled violently, and the dead leaves from the mountain woods fluttered about as they were lifted from the ground due to the vibration. The forest birds flew off like a rocket and the wild beasts panicked as they ran away in fear. Xiao Chen also had no other option but to run away as quickly as possible. He kept changing from one

location to another within the dense forest region.

The Eight-clawed Tyrant Dragon was really too formidable, it was practically unstoppable. Nothing in its path could prevent it from advancing!

Whether it was by coincidence or the ancient beast really could summon the clouds and rain, the weather rapidly turned gloomy and endless black clouds enveloped the sky overhead the island. After that, the lightning flashed as violent wind and rain began to fall!

The huge lightning danced about violently and a hurricane threw itself onto the island from the surface of the sea. It caused the collapse of many tall trees, and the uprooted trees would then charge towards the dusky sky. Soon after, they were crushed by the huge lightning in the sky.

The scene resembled the end of the world. Darkness enveloped the surroundings, and the howling wind and torrential rain fell unceasingly. The forest was ruined, and the beast's constant roar was like clap of thunder.

Meanwhile, the Eight-clawed Tyrant Dragon's huge dragonic body was enveloped by a fierce silver flame and charged around the jungle violently, destroying everything in its path!

The primitive forest was in a state of disorder, and endless amounts of vicious beasts ran away in all directions. Aside from the commonly seen lion, tiger and elephant type beasts, there were also a lot of other varieties, such as a lion with divine wings, a snake with a horn atop its head, a Three-Eyed Divine Wolf that was as tall as a huge elephant, a two to three meter long golden centipede.....

Many more ancient beasts that seemed to be recorded in some of the ancient books were running like the wind, their roars were like a clap of thunder. Even ferocious beasts such as the tigers and lions were frightened and made way for these ancient beasts.

Xiao Chen was extremely shocked, just what kind of island was this? It actually possessed so much ancient beasts..... it seems as if this place was an ancient uncivilized world!

The lightning flashed and thunder rolled about high in the sky, and there was no sign of the rainstorm coming to a rest soon. Even the squall was still wreaking havoc everywhere. A lot of vicious beasts that were running got lifted to the sky by the strong wind and they were never seen again.

Xiao Chen unexpectedly ran into several dangerous situations. Not only would he have to avoid the ancient dragon, he also had to evade all the attacks from various kinds of ancient beasts. Once, he was almost lifted to the sky by the hurricane when he escaped to a sparse region of the forest. He was only one step from death's door.

The Eight-clawed Tyrant Dragon wreaked havoc on the island for almost an entire night and then it rushed towards the depths of the island. The deepest part of the mountain ridge region fell into a state of disorder.

Apart from the angry roar of the Eight-clawed Tyrant Dragon, another ear piercing roar rang out. It was actually not any inferior to the Eight-clawed Tyrant Dragon's roar. The sound emitted from both sides were rising and falling in succession as they got closer and closer.

Not long later, the two beast started to fight and terrifying noise came from

the deepest part of the mountain region. To one's surprise, the two different ear-splitting roar even suppressed the sudden clap of thunder!

Xiao Chen was extremely shocked, there was actually a beast capable of standing up against the ancient Eight-clawed Tyrant Dragon. This island was indeed very mysterious!

“Roar.....”

“Ao.....”¹

The strength of the two savage beasts seems to be evenly matched. The roaring sound of the beasts unceasingly rang out from the depths of the mountain region. The fight was so intensive that the entire mountain region started to tremble. It caused innumerable beasts to be frightened and identical pitiful howl can be heard from all directions.

This was a chaotic and rainy night. With the rumbling of thunder and lightning, the bellow of the squall, the intense fight of two ancient beasts, and the pitiful howl of innumerable beasts while they ran in all directions..... it lasted until the crack of dawn. The intense fight of the beasts finally came to a conclusion after rainstorm ceased.

The Eight-clawed Tyrant Dragon was seriously injured and retreated, causing a 'crashing sound' from the mountain forest. The dead leaves flew around violently. A silvery flame was pulsating all over its body. There were a lot of frightening wounds all over the ancient beast, a large area of its scales came off, and several parts of its body were badly damaged. Out of the eight claws it possessed, the ancient beast didn't dare touch the ground with its' three wounded claws. Even though there was a hint of the opponent's blood, cracks

appeared on the 7 to 8 meter sharp silver horn atop its' head.

One can imagine just how violent the fight was. Who knows just where did the other beast originated from, for it to be capable of making the Eight-clawed Tyrant Dragon to pay such a large price. Furthermore, the outcome between the two beasts' fight was unknown.

Along with the retreat of Eight-clawed Tyrant Dragon, the forest region immediately burst into a state of disorder again as innumerable beasts ran away.

Xiao Chen who had witnessed everything couldn't help but feel that the ancient beast was really mighty. It was way too frightening!

The vicious dragon dragged its body and gradually distanced itself from the mountain. And around this time, the black clouds that were enveloping the sky overhead of the island started to disperse and the heavy rainstorm finally came to an end. Light ray fell from the sky, it was already early in the morning.

One night of heavy rainstorm destroyed a wide expanse of forest, but even more vicious beasts were killed in the turmoil last night. The primitive forest was in complete disorder.

The splendor of the morning sun shone upon the forest. It caused the dew on the leaves and flowers to radiate a sparkling and translucent light, making them look like a pearl was rolling. The fresh and clean air carried by the wind felt quite refreshing.

It was a very lively morning. After the frightening event last night, they were finally able to welcome the auspicious and peaceful morning.

Xiao Chen was feeling the fresh air after the rain as he walked atop the broken branches and withered leaves. His pupil contracted all of a sudden and two divine light burst out from both of his eyes.

On top of the giant tree besides the sapphire-like lake, there was a transparent fabric hanging on one of the branch. The fabric swayed as it was lightly brushed by the wind and it was especially eye-catching in this inhabitable forest.

References:

[↑] 1. The sound of wailing.

Chapter 7 – Unicorn Arrived Under The Moonlight

Xiao Chen rapidly climbed up the ancient tree and grabbed the transparent fabric. This appeared to be a fabric that was used to cover the face. The fabric was very smooth and soft, it was almost weightless. It looked like this silk was made out of the finest materials.

On top of the fabric was a faintly discernible embroidery of a Phoenix. If one looked carefully, the Phoenix looked truly realistic. Xiao Chen suddenly recalled something and one familiar figure entered his brain; A pretty girl with elegant figure covering her face with a transparent fabric.....

He clearly recalled the veil worn by the Imperial Angel Zhao Lin Er, it was precisely this kind of Phoenix veil!

Could it be that Zhao Lin Er had also entered the World of Immortals?

Xiao Chen momentarily associated it with the scene on that day, he was running in front of Zhao Lin Er towards the summit and the distance between them was not that big. Then at that time they came across Goddess Lan Nuo shattering the space and a dazzling rays of light burst forth, enveloping the summit of the mountain with a layer of holy radiance.

He was enveloped by the multicolored lights on the spot and hereby entered the world of immortals. Could it be that Zhao Lin Er also met the same fate as him? The more he thought about it, the higher the probability of this happening.

This place was no longer the mortal world, Zhao Lin Er's status as an Imperial Angel won't have any effects here. If he caught Zhao Lin Er on the island, he

wouldn't have to worry about how to handle her.

Not long ago, Xiao Chen was being pursued by Zhao Lin Er, but if she really entered the world of immortals, then their roles will be swapped!

However, Xiao Chen does not wish to encounter Zhao Lin Er too soon. That was because the opponent was a real expert and due to his injuries, he would have a hard time fighting back.

Five days! Just barely five days should be enough. After he fully recovered, he wouldn't have to fear the Imperial Angel anymore.

Two days passed by safely, Zhao Lin Er hadn't appeared.

Even though the light fabric was blown here, her distance might be very far from this zone. After all, the squall was extremely fierce that night. However, Xiao Chen believed if she was still alive, he would encounter her on this island sooner or later.

The Eight-clawed Tyrant Dragon had been guarding the last remaining egg at the seaside ever since. In the event that it goes out to the sea, it would still be in the sea area nearby. Xiao Chen doesn't want to take any more risks. Once this ancient beast went on a rampage, it seriously had the power to destroy the heavens and exterminate the earth.

The light speck at the acupuncture point of Xiao Chen's left foot seemed as if it had perfectly fused with the acupuncture point. The silver light speck is the acupuncture point, the acupuncture point is the silver light speck. One could not tell them apart from one another.

Even now, Xiao Chen still had no idea what was the light speck capable of. He was unable to feel that tremendous life energy it once possessed nor any unique characteristic.

These past 2 days, Xiao Chen diligently recuperated and his recovery went very smoothly.

The gentle moonlight was like a ripple on the surface of the water and making the forest looked as if it was enveloped by a layer of thin silk. Xiao Chen was standing at the side of the tiny lake that seemed to resemble a mirror. His slender and well-built body was motionless as he guided the essence of the moonlight enter his body.

One after another miniature holy luster were flowing inside of Xiao Chen's body. The essence of the moonlight was like a sweet nectar moistening his acupuncture point, making his inner organs, bones and flesh to overflow with a layer of splendid gem.....

The flow of time seemed to have come to a standstill, Xiao Chen was immersed in the splendid state of meditation. The inexhaustible essence of the moonlight became more and more concentrated, there was already a layer of hazy radiance enveloping his surrounding. His whole body was emitting a dim light.

Right now, Xiao Chen's entire person advanced to some kind of empty spiritual realm. Even though his eyes were shut, the surrounding scenery clearly emerged within his mind. His entire person exuded an agile and graceful aura.

All of a sudden, Xiao Chen could feel some life form approaching at lightning fast speed from the depths of the jungle. Soon after, he saw a bizarre scene; A

tiny horse with snow white body actually stepped on the tip of the branches and gently leaped over his position from one treetop to another.

This was a really shocking scene!

The tiny horse was very young and delicate, its height hadn't even reach 1 meter yet. However, it seemed extremely magical as its snow white body was flickering with a sparkling and translucent luster, as if it was sculpted out of an extraordinary beautiful white jade. In addition, on top of its forehead was a horn that seemed to be made out of jade, making it appears even more mysterious!

Especially under the moonlight, it seemed all the more outstanding as it reflected the gentle moonlight while leaping from the treetops in the forest. It resembled the divine steed to the extreme point!

It was an immature Unicorn! Xiao Chen felt extremely astonished.

The tiny horse was circling around the lake as it leaped on the treetop and stealthily observed Xiao Chen who was shrouded by the essence of the moonlight. Its huge eyes that resembled a black gem were brimming with curiosity.

Xiao Chen feigned ignorance as to not frighten it and continued to draw the hazy moonlight energy. It was as if a water ripple that was as pure as a splendid white cloud encircled the surroundings, making the spiritual energy around this area very dense. A divine and harmonious aura filled this entire area.

The tiny horse seemed as if it really wanted to get close to Xiao Chen but it was somewhat afraid. It carefully observed Xiao Chen with its pair of clear big eyes.

Until it was convinced that Xiao Chen was harmless, it leaped towards a giant tree that was not too far from Xiao Chen.

Soon after, Xiao Chen once more noticed this tiny horse was out of the ordinary. The jade horn on top of its forehead could actually gather the essence of the moonlight. Half of the multicolored lights lingering around Xiao Chen was actually absorbed by the jade horn. The tiny horse's entire body was even more shiny, dim light constantly flickered. It was truly magical.

It lasted until Xiao Chen stopped gathering the energy, the tiny horse was like a startled rabbit and ran towards the jungle by leaping from the tip of the branches to another, leaving behind a silver light in its path. Its speed was extremely fast.

Xiao Chen smiled, that was indeed a fascinating and lovely young unicorn.

Two days from then on, the tiny horse would constantly roam around the lakeside to partake the spiritual energy gathered by Xiao Chen. Early in the morning, it was essence of the sun. During the day, it was the essence of the plants and then there was the essence of moonlight during the night. It slowly got used to the regular pattern and was not scared anymore.

Xiao Chen did not attempt to catch this unicorn because of two reasons. One, because he doesn't have enough confidence that he would be able to catch it. Two, because the divine creature possessed intelligence, it would be hard to make it acknowledge him even if he caught it forcefully. He was waiting for an opportunity.

Ten days passed in a flash since Xiao Chen had arrived at this mysterious island. His wounds were thoroughly recovered.

“Flap, flap, flap”

Countless of seabirds flew off like a rocket from the bird’s forest nearby. The tiny horse that seemed to be sculpted out of a fine jade escaped by leaping off the branches of the trees, leaving behind silvery light in its trail. Xiao Chen could detect that there are people approaching!

Their speed were extremely fast, one could only see their shadows as they pass by. They practically pass through that woodland in an instant and then they met eyes to eyes with Xiao Chen from afar.

Chapter 8 – The Undying Disciple

That was a man who had a tall and straight build. He was wet from head to toe, and there were traces of blood flowing out from the corner of his mouth. His face could be considered handsome. Just that he gave people around him a very unusual feeling, especially the eerie air emitted from his pair of eyes.

To put it briefly, that feeling was bizarre!

It was unexpected to see anyone that was not Zhao Lin Er on this uninhabited island. However, Xiao Chen was not feeling delighted at all, since he could feel that this young man before his eyes was a dangerous person. Xiao Chen carefully took precautions and slowed down the tempo of the mysterious qi-technique within his body. He wanted to conceal his true strength.

Countless of seabirds from the forest region nearby once again flew off like a rocket and another person rushed towards this direction rapidly. That person's speed was as fast as lightning and arrived in the blink of an eye.

That was a young girl with an elegant curve, the clothes she wore exposed most of her body. The slender and snow white legs were faintly discernible under the almost transparent skirt. Both her jade-like arms and flat underbelly were exposed, her twin peaks were extremely enticing and wrapped by a light fabric.

Her shiny black hair was dripping wet, with water droplets draping over her shoulders. Her tender skin was as sleek as that of a baby and she looked extremely charming. However, her peach-shaped eyes revealed a hint of dismay. Only until she was running side by side of the young man did her state of mind stabilize.

“Roar.....”

It was indistinct but one could hear the roar transmitted by the Eight-clawed Tyrant Dragon from the seaside. Looking at their dripping wet appearances, it was not hard to imagine that they had encountered the vicious dragon.

A layer of mist was rising from the body of the young couple, and in the blink of an eye, their dripping wet clothes became as dry as they were before. One could see that their teachings were out of the ordinary. A hazy and pure light was flickering over their bodies as they both walked towards Xiao Chen.

Xiao Chen was not shocked that the teachings of the people in the world of immortals was extraordinary. After all, this place was the ultimate goal of all warriors. Dozens of the most distinguished people throughout the ages from the mortal world had also entered this plane.

“Who are you, why are you here?” The young man opened his mouth to ask. His accent was somewhat peculiar, however Xiao Chen was able to completely catch what he was saying.

Xiao Chen could feel that these two people were bad news. They were emitting a faintly discernible killing intent. However, Xiao Chen calmly replied, “Xiao Chen, I hail from the mortal world.” He did not try to conceal anything and hide his identity from them. He knew it was impossible for there to be any grudges between them so it was impossible for them to become enemies.

Hearing Xiao Chen’s words, the two of them were very shocked and couldn’t help but fall back several steps. Practitioners capable of shattering space could be considered an expert at the absolute peak of this world. Otherwise, those two

wouldn't act like this either.

Only after they heard Xiao Chen explain that he passively entered the world of immortals by following Lan Nuo, did they start to feel relieved and let out a breath.

"I'm not sure if I should say you are lucky or unlucky. Although you have entered the world of immortals, the destination is too horrible. This piece of territorial waters is the famous Taboo Ocean, and this island is even more..... hehe....."

The young man's laughter was somewhat cold. However, the killing intent appeared to be gone. He walked towards the tiny lake alongside the enchanting and lovely lady. They seemed to completely loosen their guard at the lakeside brimmed with green vegetation and fragrant of flowers.

"It was truly unlucky! I never thought we'd encounter an ancient beast the moment we entered the island." The gorgeous lady who wore a revealing outfit complained resentfully, "Our ship had been destroyed, and all the crew had been devoured by the vicious dragon. How are we supposed to get back? We shouldn't have come here in the first place."

"You should be glad instead. Over the past hundred years, we might be the only one that were still alive after entering this island." Speaking until here, the young man glimpsed at Xiao Chen and asked, "Can you prepare something for us to eat?"

His speech was awfully forceful. Rather than a request, it was more like an order. However, Xiao Chen was very calm as he responded, "Sure."

Seeing Xiao Chen's figure fade away from the back, the young man asked, "What do you think?"

The alluring lady sneered, "Humph! Whether what he said was true or not, he still has to die! We cannot let anyone know we are the very first to arrive here. Only a dead person has enough capability to guard this secret."

The young man nodded and smiled sarcastically, "His teachings is not weak, even though he concealed his strength, he is not a match for you and I. Anyone who faces us will undoubtedly be damned! However, we will let him keep his life for now and take advantage of him temporarily."

Xiao Chen was at a distant place within the forest as he watched the movement of their mouth attentively through the branches and leaves. He turned around and left the area after a while.

Not long later, an alluring aroma rose from the tiny lakeside. A golden yellow and glossy Mongolian gazelle¹ leg was being roasted. The seafood within the shell pot were being cooked until they were incomparably tender. Furthermore, various fruits were arranged on top of the shell plate, such as lychee fruits, pineapples, bananas and so on.

The young couple were pleased and enjoying the food to the fullest extent.

As the lady drank the coconut juice from the bamboo cup, she said with a lovely smile, "We are thankful for Brother Xiao's kind hospitality. I am Liew Yue, he is Wang Zi Feng. He is my senior apprentice. Hehe....." Her smile was really charming. Under her snow white neck, her twin peaks that were binded by light clothes constantly trembled. It was seriously very enticing, her seductive appearance was more than enchanting.

Wang Zi Feng continued, “You might not know our names, but you might have heard of our great master.”

“Please state the name of your great master.” Xiao Chen already had a vague idea that the great master most likely hail from the mortal world.

“The Demon King, Pavilion!” As Wang Zi Feng and Liew Yue said this name, they exposed an extremely respectful and fascinated expression.

Xiao Chen was astonished!

As far as this name was concerned, who wouldn’t know? He was one of the most talented figures in the mortal world throughout all the ages. His reputation was as world-shattering as Bodhidharma, Zhang Sanfeng² and Dugu Qiubai!

Once he executed the Undying Demon Technique, who in the whole world could intercept it? Due to a hard-pressed situation, his dantian collapsed and broke into pieces. However, with his great wisdom and knowledge, he successfully cultivated a supreme technique and easily shattered the space, leaving his fame behind for all eternity!

Part Daoism, part Demon, the Undying Demon King!

References

[↑] 1. TL Note: https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Mongolian_gazelle

[↑] 2. TL Note: https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Zhang_Sanfeng

Chapter 9 – Entering the Primitive Forest

Wang Zi Feng and Liew Yue were extremely pleased after seeing Xiao Chen's expression. The name of the Demon King was indeed able to strike fear in the hearts of anyone for all eternity!

"The Demon King spent his eternal life in this world?" Xiao Chen was extremely excited.

"Naturally! The great master had already achieved an indestructible body a long time ago!"

"Then how about both of you?"

"We..... naturally still have yet to reach the realm of immortals. The world of immortals is not as you had imagined, in fact, the people who are truly immortal is not much."

Liew Yue laughed lovably, "Brother Xiao, since you just entered the world of immortals, I suspect that you still had yet to understand anything. How about joining our faction and let allow us give you some guidance."

If Xiao Chen doesn't know the opposite side wanted to kill him, he would certainly be happy from the bottom of his heart. However, he could only act as if he was happy at the moment.

"May I ask if there is any peculiar place on this island?" Xiao Chen doesn't have the fundamental knowledge regarding the world of immortals, there was a lot of

questions he wished to ask the other side. However, he had no other choice but to start from this uninhabited island first.

“A peculiar place? Hehe, you should to say that this place is so special that it requires a Heavenly Descended Monument to suppress!” Wang Zi Feng sneered somewhat ruefully, but he did not continue to explain.

Liew Yue smiled charmingly and said, “It’s hard to express it in a few words. You will slowly come to understand sooner or later. This world is far more magical than your imagination. Coming across a powerful mankind who was born with a pair of wings doesn’t even count as a rare encounter!”

Just around this time, the presence of a living creature could be felt coming from the tip of the branch far away. The three of them had already detected the presence and turned around to take a quick glance without caring.

What appeared was only a little horse that seemed to be sculpted out of fine jade. A faint light was circulating around its body and it was in the middle of blinking its pair of big eyes that looked like a black gem. It concealed itself on top of tall tree and secretly looked at the three person up and down curiously.

Liew Yue was surprised and cried out in a low voice, “Praise the Demon King, it is actually an immature one-horned divine beast!” One could see that she was exceptionally bewildered, her state of mind was fluctuating intensely and her towering twin peaks were swaying up and down constantly.

Wang Zi Feng was also bewildered as he said, “We already knew that this island was mysterious but we never thought we would encounter the one-horned divine beast at the borderline zone right away. Junior sister, you go give it a try. I hear only a young lady with pure heart can get close to this kind of

divine beast.”

Liew Yue stood up and her lovely attitude vanished. She now gives people the impression of a dignified and pure young lady. She walked towards the ancient tall tree with graceful and elegant steps.

“Whoosh”

The young unicorn ran away in an instant like a startled rabbit. Looking from a distant, only a silver silhouette could be seen as it disappeared in the forest.

“So it was actually known as unicorn. I was under the impression that it was the legendary Pegasus.” Xiao Chen was talking to himself.

“Hehe..... It can also be considered a Pegasus. It can run as fast as lightning when it is still young but once it reaches adulthood, it will be capable of flying. At the same time, it possesses formidable firepower beyond comparison once it has been angered.” Wang Zi Feng appeared very regretful and said, “What a pity, it is possible to subdue a unicorn this young but it is way too vigilant.”

“Humph!” Liew Yue snorted coldly. She was very unhappy and returned disappointedly.

Wang Zi Feng had already finished enjoying his food, then he turned his head back to Xiao Chen and said, “When the time comes, we will take you away from here. However, that is impossible at the moment. First, we want to roam around the depths of the island. Second, we have to wait for our ship to come to aid us. Are you still willing to go with us?”

Regarding this, what else could Xiao Chen say other than he was willing to go with them while acting as if he was really happy.

“That’s good, then you go gather some more sea salt. We can use it on the road later. The inner island is extremely dangerous. We have no other choice but to flee and take a detour if we encounter any ancient beast. We do not even know how many days would it requires to thoroughly explore the island.”

Looking at Xian Chen gradually getting further away, Liew Yue’s expression became cold and said, “Let’s kill him immediately, so as to avoid anything unexpected from happening.”

Wang Zi Feng shook his head, “You have also seen it for yourselves, we still need him for these miscellaneous work. Maybe after two more days. The inner island is full of dangers, maybe we can still use him as a bait to draw the attention of the beasts.”

The both of them started to laugh grimly.

In the distant jungle, Xiao Chen observed the movement of their lips attentively and then retreated silently. If he doesn’t know how to read the movement of the lips, perhaps he wouldn’t even know how he died.

He could tell that Wang Zi Feng and Liew Yue was pressing for time so he didn’t dare to be negligent. After Xiao Chen had gathered enough sea salt, they began their journey.

They already walked for half an hour, the tall ancient trees were getting more concentrated. The tall and green trees covered the sky, even a dozen of people

combined wouldn't be able to surround the ancient trees in this endless primitive forest. The thick and old vines stretched for several hundred meters. Ferocious beasts were constantly roaming about and howled unceasingly.

The three of them had already encountered several dozens of extremely rare barbaric beasts, but in order to avoid any unnecessary trouble, they were making supreme effort to avoid encountering them.

Walking in the ancient primitive forest, they would frequently see some snow-white bones of the beasts. Many of them extended for as long as 8 to 9 meters, they were clearly the skeletons of the ancient beasts. They were hidden from view by the grasses and woods, making the place seemed especially frightening.

While they were advancing, Xiao Chen saw the traces left behind by the Eight-clawed Tyrant Dragon. Along the sides of the road, there were some fragments of the silver scales left behind by it. The huge claw prints on the surface of the ground were a horrible sight to see. The claw prints were much longer compared to the length of Xiao Chen's body. The trees had collapsed and turned upside down at the region that they had just passed by.

Xiao Chen really wanted to know, just what kind of ancient beast did the Eight-clawed Tyrant Dragon broke out in a fierce battle with at that night.

Wang Zi Feng and Liew Yue were not aware of the fierce fight between the Eight-clawed Tyrant Dragon and another ancient beast a few days ago. During the whole journey, they felt fearful.

Not long afterwards, Xiao Chen discovered the site where the two beasts had a fierce fight that night. That was originally a wide expanse of woodland but now, the entire region of forest had been thoroughly flattened, only leaving behind

the broken branches and withered leaves.

Bloodstain covered a wide expanse of the messy woodland and there were many fragments of silver scales, as well as cyan scales. They clearly belonged to the Eight-clawed Tyrant Dragon and the other ancient beast respectively.

Seeing everything before them, Wang Zi Feng and Liew Yue had a very ugly complexion.

They followed the trail of the other vicious beast for quite some distance and discovered that the beast appeared to be walking upright; two huge claw prints alternate between one another. They did not continue to follow the trail of the vicious beast and changed to different direction. If they ran into that vicious beast by any chance, they will probably meet a tragic end.

However, after changing their directions several times, the three of them had noticed the traces left behind by the vicious beast in many of the regions. It appears to be dwelling in this territory.

That was definitely not a good situation, they had already entered the territory of the ancient beast!

Chapter 10 – Kill Without Hesitation

When the sun was about to set, the three discovered a stone wall in front of them that was more than 100 meters tall. The forest trees in the vicinity were also more concentrated in contrast. They decided to climb on top of the cliff and rest there for the night.

After they finished their dinner, the last shred of sunlight finally faded away and the color of the sky darkened rapidly. However, as this island was filled with numerous ancient beasts, even the night was equally dangerous.

Staying on top of the cliffs was a wise decision. When the darkness had enveloped the earth, many wild beasts would roam about in the mountain woods. The howling sound of the beasts never stops.

That was a hot and stuffy night, black clouds had enveloped the sky overhead the island. However, there wasn't a single drop of rain falling. The night was pitch-dark, the mountain woods far away had also blended with the darkness, it was impossible to see the scenery clearly.

In the latter half of the night, it appears that a tremendous roar shook the cliff. A gale blew from the gaps of the mountain woods, it was mixed with a bloody and baleful aura.

Wang Zi Feng and Liew Yue sealed their sense of hearing immediately. That sound was capable of suppressing the sudden clap of thunder, it makes the airflow in their ears to rumble violently! If they did not protect their eardrums in time, it would certainly be ruptured!

This tremendous roar of the beast that could even shake the heaven and earth was too frightening indeed!

In the mountain woods far away, a huge monster with a layer of faint green light enveloping all over its body was facing the sky and roared. The distance was too far apart, they were unable to make out its appearance clearly. However, they could vaguely see that it was as tall as a hill.

“Bang! Bang! Bang!”

The huge and vicious beast was bellowing as it moved forward in the mountain woods. Although they were on top of a precipice, they could still feel a little bit of vibration transmitted from a distant location. This was an extremely mind-blowing scene!

It should be the ancient beast that was formerly fighting with the Eight-clawed Tyrant Dragon.

Endless wild beasts ran in all directions, this part of the mountain woods burst into a state of chaos.

Just around this time, Xiao Chen finally makes his move!

The tremendous roar filled the heaven and earth, and the stream of air rumbled violently, everything was concealed by the waves of the sound. In the blink of an eye, Xiao Chen’s left hand thrust towards Liew Yue’s back like a knife. Meanwhile, his right hand drew the long sword that was on his waist.

Blood gushed out as he brandished the long sword!

With his back facing Xiao Chen, Wang Zi Feng who was surveying the surrounding from an elevated position let out a miserable shriek as his right arm fell from the overhanging cliff.

Kill without hesitation!

Everything happened in an instant, there wasn't any delayed motion!

Liew Yue directly received a fatal strike, but Wang Zi Feng was too sharp. Even if he couldn't perceive anything, his sharp intuition informed him of dangers approaching. His instinct allowed him to escape death, but his right arm was forever lost.

Xiao Chen was waiting for a golden opportunity all along! The dreadful sound waves enveloped the world, causing Wang Zi Feng and Liew Yue to temporarily lose their five senses. While they were momentarily distracted by the frightening beast, Xiao Chen finally had the opportunity to rebel.

Liew Yue's miserable cry was masked by the ear-splitting roar of the beast, but she did not die immediately. She actually pounced on Xiao Chen even while she was swaying unsteadily. Meanwhile, the one-armed Wang Zi Feng who was covered by bloodstain all over his body bellowed in a fit of rage. He grabbed the double-edged sword with his left hand and attacked Xiao Chen.

They were extremely angry, never had they thought that their target would actually grab this brief opportunity to attack them!

In the middle of the night, Xiao Chen was incomparably cool-headed. The

longsword in his hand burst out with a gorgeous radiance as if it was a rainbow. Without any hesitation, he beheaded Liew Yue in a split second.

Under the glorious light of the double-edged sword, Liew Yue's falling head was filled with unwillingness and she doesn't want to believe what had just happened. Her beautiful complexion was filled with deep regret as her head fell to the bottom of the cliff and blood gushed out violently from her headless body.

Even if that was the number one beauty in the world, Xiao Chen wouldn't think twice either. An enemy is an enemy, he wouldn't be swayed by any reasons!

The black clouds rumbled high above the sky, one after another lightning fell from the sky and strike wildly. The infinite lightning within the darkness seemed exceptionally threatening.

Xiao Chen and Wang Zi Feng exchanged blows on top of the rocky precipice. The longsword was like a white silk as it splits the darkness. In the end, the longsword seemed to fuse together with the unceasing lightning strike!

As the distinguished disciple of the Demon King, Wang Zi Feng's natural talent was extremely profound, however his arm was chopped so easily. His blood gushed out violently as it became harder for him to brace himself. At last, he abandoned the longsword on his hand and tossed it towards Xiao Chen with ferocious force. The ray of the sword seemed as if it could rip the space apart.

Xiao Chen hastily evaded this incomparably sharp sword. Meanwhile, Wang Zi Feng tossed another object at Xiao Chen, it appeared to be a scroll. A terrifyingly mighty energy spread out from the scroll, Xiao Chen relied on his keen intuition and detected a great danger approaching.

The scroll faced the wind and spread out like a painting scroll. At this moment, Xiao Chen genuinely felt that his life was endangered. He felt as if the Death God was closing in, a huge and deathly chain had already encircled around his neck!

Xiao Chen jumped down the cliff without any hesitation, this was his only method rapidly to break away from this deathly aura.

A whizzing sound wind past the ears, a pretty red light erupted on top of the rocky precipice, followed by a dazzling radiance that completely enveloped the apex of the precipice. The one-armed Wang Zi Feng also jumped down without the slightest hesitation. The frightening radiance engulfed the apex of the precipice and filled the air with a deathly aura.

Below the cliff was a sea of forest, a lot of ancient trees reached up the height of several tens of meters. The instant Xiao Chen fell into the thicket, he moved his arms and legs simultaneously to cushion the fall. Every vines were his protective talisman.

He dropped all the way down in this kind of method. Except for his qi and blood, as well as suffering from a light internal injury, he didn't suffer from any major setback. The instant he fell to the ground, Wang Zi Feng had also landed. He was covered in bloodstain from head to toe and his hair was dishevelled. He was in an extremely sorry state.

After picking up the longsword on the ground, Xiao Chen rushed forward rapidly. One must not be merciful towards one's enemies!

Wang Zi Feng actually rushed over bare-handed and strike with his only hand. A divine light similar to rainbow spread from the heart of his palm make contact with the longsword. Xiao Chen felt as if his right arm had been struck by a

thunderbolt. A terrifying power came from his longsword and it started to tremble violently. After that, it started to produce a brittle sound, the sword was actually beginning to snap off.

Unexpectedly, only the sword hilt of the one meter long refined iron sword remained in the end. Xiao Chen was unable to avoid the attack so he cast aside the handle of the destroyed sword and pushed his palms forward with all his might. A dazzling radiance illuminated the night sky, the sound of wind and thunder echoed throughout the forest and was submerged by the multicolored light.

Chapter 11 – Reappearance of the Angel

All of a sudden, Xiao Chen's complexion changed abruptly because he noticed Wang Zi Feng was revealing a demonic smile. His entire body was almost transparent as it emitted countless rays of dazzling light. As if his body was cracking, criss-crossed patterns started to emerge on the surface of his body. It resembled a piece of porcelain on the verge of breaking.

Xiao Chen retreated with all his might, his body transformed into lightning.

A boundless and formidable power exploded from within the mountain forest.

“Bang!”

Accompanying the explosion of the terrifying energy, Wang Zi Feng's body disintegrated. A wide expanse of surrounding forest was completely flattened by the impact of the explosion! Even though Xiao Chen's body was enveloped by a hazy radiance, he was still unable to resist the shockwaves and was blown away by the explosion. Only after he bumped into a few ancient giant trees did he fall to the ground.

Xiao Chen wiped the blood from the corner of his mouth, then he struggled to get up from the ground. As if he was relieved from a burden, he finally smiled. With a firm intention to kill and execute it, he finally eliminated two powerful enemies who threatened his life.

As red light radiated on the top of the cliff, ripples of terrifying heat was transmitted from that location. To one's surprise, the summit of the cliff was actually melting, boiling hot lava could be seen flowing down from the cliff!

The lava ignited the forest region below the cliff, causing all of the beasts in the vicinity of the forest to howl unceasingly. All the wild beasts started to scramble around.

The fire was spreading through in the forest, the flames soared high into the sky. It was especially dazzling in the middle of the night!

Xiao Chen dragged his injured body and picked up the longsword dropped by Wang Zi Feng. Then he retreated to the riverside nearby to watch the forest fire from the sidelines. After that, he started to treat his wounds on the river bank.

A little less than half an hour later, the lightning and thunder was still ongoing. However, there was still not a single drop of rain. A wide expanse of the primitive and ancient forest in the vicinity had already been burned.

Around this time, Xiao Chen suddenly opened his eyes. He could feel a scary, murderous aura!

At the side of the freshwater river, a beauty of peerless elegance flew at a high speed gracefully. She was so fast it seemed like a light ray was sweeping past. She looked like a fairy which had emerged from a drawing, it was as if a goddess had descended to Earth.

“Zhao Lin Er!” Xiao Chen never thought that Zhao Lin Er would appear at a time like this. She was most likely attracted here by the light of the flames.

Her face cover had been missing for awhile. Her skin was smooth, her eyes was like a limpid autumn waters, her beautiful nose was sticking up, her red lips were

moist, and her teeth were as fine as jade. The Imperial Angel's devastating beauty was out of the world, she was so beautiful that it caused people around her to stifle. It was just like the fairy in Chinese mythology descending to the mundane world.

Zhao Lin Er was praised by others as the most beautiful girl in all of the nine states. However, Xiao Chen could only helplessly sigh when he confronted such an exceptionally charming woman. That was because a life or death fight was about to begin!

The soaring flames lit up both sides of the river bank brightly. Zhao Lin Er was standing there quietly, her debut was just as awe-inspiring as when Goddess Luo came to this world. Her movements were faintly discernible, as if a thin cloud was shielding the moon, her figure was fluttering in the wind, like a revolving snowflake that was blew by stream of wind. ¹ Looking from a distance, it was like the morning sun rising to the sky. On closer inspection, it was like a lotus sprouting from clear water.

Xiao Chen used the longsword as a prop to pull himself up from the ground. He faced the Imperial Angel and calmly said, "I never thought Her Highness had also entered the World of Immortals. To encounter someone from one's homeland in this uncivilized island was a rare encounter."

Zhao Lin Er was a figure of peerless talent. She arrived in front of Xiao Chen elegantly and with a graceful voice free from vulgarity, her lucid and elegant face exposed a cold sneer. "You really know how to speak. Could it be that you want me to cherish the feeling of my native country and not kill you? Do not forget how we got here in the first place!"

Xiao Chen tightly grasped the longsword in his hand and already finished his preparations to fight. He laughed helplessly as he said, "Entering the World of

Immortals can also be considered one kind of fate. Since the ancient times, only how many people were able to accomplish this? Who knows, maybe Her Highness can live an eternal life in this world later. When you look back at the present then, our enmity now is not even comparable.”

“Living an eternal life in this world? I am unable to envision such a future. I can only see the vicious beasts roaming about, the barbaric beasts going on a rampage, and the image of an uncultivated era. This is the equivalent of being banished to a wretched wasteland, and the main cause of this disaster was you! To make me bid farewell to the beautiful Sichuan Hill, depart from the prosperous golden age, and to part forever with father, the Emperor, and mother, the Empress!” Zhao Lin Er stared at Xiao Chen coldly, a clear killing intent emerged on her attractive face.

The flames were ebbing between the forest, making the night as bright as daytime. At this moment, the thunder was even more violent high above the sky. One after another, lightning strikes ripped through the vast sky and split unceasingly as they danced about. The black clouds were rolling about and rapidly fell towards the ground. A heavy rain was going to come down in just a moment.

Xiao Chen looked at Zhao Lin Er and said earnestly, “The vicious beasts are running amuck and roam about only on this island. Furthermore, it is brimming with mystery. There are only two of us now, and we both hail from the human world. Your Highness, is it really necessary to fight one another to death? If that is the case, I feel extremely regrettable. After all, we came from the same place, we really shouldn’t slaughter one another in a foreign land. Since we already entered the World of Immortals, I think we should put the enmity from the human world between us behind? We can start over, we have to look out for each other while we are on this barren island.”

Zhao Lin Er’s laughter sounded like a bell, it was sharp and sweet-sounding,

but her killing intent subsequently filled the air. Then she sneered coldly, “If the enmity from the human world doesn’t exist, then we can get along. However, it is impossible now. Leaving you alive on this island would only invite trouble. Right now, you are only being humble because you have a serious injury. Otherwise, you would already attack me mercilessly.”

Xiao Chen had nothing else to say, they were both intelligent people, some things were better left unsaid. Otherwise, they would only sound superfluous.

The Imperial Angel had already noticed the corpse off in the distance. She faced Xiao Chen and said, “They must be the cause of your wounds. Why are there other people on this barren island, who are they?”

“The disciples of the Demon King, Pavilion!”

Zhao Lin Er was momentarily absent-minded after she received this information.

Xiao Chen’s body emitted a splendid light, it looked as if a legendary dragon sprung out of his body and flew into the jungle to escape. It was really impossible for him to face Zhao Lin Er at this moment. Wang Zi Feng’s last resort destroyed his own body; that surge of life energy brought a huge sense of dismay to Xiao Chen. Although he was able to withdraw and defend promptly, he still became gravely injured.

Zhao Lin Er recovered from her shock in an instant; her silhouette disappeared in the blink of an eye as she chased after Xiao Chen. She knew this was a rare opportunity, otherwise she would have a hard time suppressing Xiao Chen when he fully recovered.

“Bang!”

After the sudden clap of the thunder, the heavy rain finally started to pour. The endless curtain of water enveloped the world, the forest fire was extinguished at a high-speed.

References

TLN: A Poem to describe a girl's beauty and temperament are attractive and fascinating.

Chapter 12 – Ancient Tyrannical Dragon

“Tsk!”

The sword suddenly lit up with a dazzling glow, and sent a wave of criss-crossed Sword Auras through the forest!

Xiao Chen was heavily injured, his movements were not as fast and nimble as before. In the end, the Imperial Angel still caught up to him. Now, he could only leave it up to fate and fight.

The forest fire was already extinguished, the mountain woods were filled with darkness. However, the glorious ray from the sword constantly lit up the area. Combined with the lightning high above the sky, the forest was laid to waste.

As a member of the Imperial Household, it was only natural that Zhao Lin Er had learned a top-notch Secret Technique; it was the famous Rainbow Sword Secret Arts. Her whole body was enveloped by a bright and beautiful rainbow, she sets off the rainbow-colored Sword Aura unceasingly in the midst of the rainy night.

Xiao Chen met the enemy head-on with his wounded body and danced around wildly, his eyes were cold and the longsword looked like a rainbow when it was brandished. However, he wasn't able to fight back and forced to retreat again.

Even though the world was enveloped by the endless darkness and increased his chance to escape, but Zhao Lin Er was really too fast. The technique she practiced was the “Transient Light: Heavenly Steps.” It was a technique capable of standing side by side with the “Light Weight Technique of Bodhidharma.”

With fast yet graceful steps, she firmly locked her attention on Xiao Chen.

In the midst of the endless darkness, the heavy rain poured, and Xiao Chen was dashing in the forest. The blood gushed up to his throat, he was almost unable to endure the wound. However, the murderous aura behind him was getting closer and closer, the rainbow-colored Sword Aura will reach him soon.

He soared into the sky and twisted his body around in midair, then he dispersed a piece of gorgeous light curtain. It seemed like the stars had fallen from the heaven itself, the light curtain extinguished the rainbow aura that was launched towards him and barely escaped death. After that, his longsword lit up and a dazzling sword aura was launched straight ahead just like a gorgeous silver dragon. It seemed as if it was going to fuse with the lightning that fell from the sky.

The approaching Sword Aura forced Zhao Lin Er to withdraw, then Xiao Chen used that chance to flee. With the heavy downpour very late at the night, all the creatures were already in hibernation. Apart from the sound of the rain and thunder, there was no any other sound.

Xiao Chen knew this cannot continue, he must change his course of action or else he would inevitably die. He singled out a single path, then he turned around and ran towards the dense mountain forest in that direction. Whether or not he could get out of this alive depends on this bet!

Even though the howling sound of the beasts could not be heard in the other areas, one could still find traces of their footprint. Only this direction was completely vacant, there was not a single trace of any beasts in such a big mountain forest. Although the thunder roared unceasingly and the torrential rain continue to fall, for some reason, this region of forest gave people some indescribable deathly silent kind of feeling.

It was as if this was the territory of a powerful beast!

A baleful aura spread out deep in the mountain forest, even the rain water was incapable of obstructing it.

However, Xiao Chen did not stop and kept going straight at lightning speed. On the other hand, Zhao Lin Er was overwhelmed by shock. She could feel the frightening aura of the fiend. That aura was something could only be accomplished by a fiend that had killed myriads of creatures, there is great danger ahead!

However, even though she was a bit hesitant, she still chased after Xiao Chen. If she missed this opportunity today, she might not have a chance to kill him anymore. Since it had already begun, it ain't possible to stop now.

“Roar.....”

All of a sudden, a deep and low roar echoed from deep within the mountain forest. A gale that was reeking of blood blew in a straight line and caused the forest trees to dance wildly. Along with the wind, a dreadful creature was quickly approaching.

The rainwater tilted as it was blown by the gale, the tree leaves scattered, and the ground trembled!

“ROOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOAR.....”

The loud roar completely suppressed the thunder, even the perpetual mountain ridge started to tremble. From within the primitive ancient forest appeared a huge monster, the enormous body of the beast was enveloped by a hazy green light. As if a mountain was standing tall and upright there, the inexhaustible demonic aura was emitted by that monster.

It was because of the appearance of this vicious beast earlier that gave Xiao Chen the opportunity to smoothly exterminate Wang Zi Feng and Liew Yue. Right now, as he was being cornered by the Imperial Angel, he wanted to draw out the ancient beast to force her to retreat.

At present, not only Zhao Lin Er, even Xiao Chen was stupefied. He finally knew the origin of the vicious beast that was capable of standing up against the Eight-clawed Tyrant Dragon for half night.

This vicious beast was actually the Tyrannical Dragon from ancient folklore!

It could grow up to fifty meters in length, and up to twenty meters in height. With a pair of sturdy and thick hind legs, it could run with only its hind legs. Its upper limbs were exposed, the sharp and scary dragon claws were flickering with glaring cold light.

Its huge head were sinister and scary, the six to seven meters long sharp horn on its head was flickering with an awe-inspiring bluish green light. Its pair of green eyes were almost as big as a millstone, a chilly radiance was reflected from the pair of eyes. The sharp teeth were scary as each were as sharp as a shiny broadsword.

The crocodile like green tail lengthen out to twenty or so meters. Without a doubt, the tail contains immeasurable power and effortlessly annihilated

everything in its path. Its body was entirely covered by green scales and flickering with terrifying green light. It seemed especially magical under this dark rainy night.

It possessed many terrifying wounds on the body, there were missing scales in many of the regions. It was evidently the results of the fierce fight with Eight-clawed Tyrant Dragon that night.

A baleful aura permeated all over its body, it was not hard to imagine how many creatures had already been ripped apart by this monster. According to the legend, it was one of the strongest even amongst the top-level ancient dragon race. Only a few could reach this level of physical strength. It was revered as an overlord, besides summoning the cloud, it could also manipulate the lightning, and even move in the air freely. Even the gods were unwilling to rashly provoke it.

Evidently, the clash of the longswords attracted it here, the glorious light of the sword aroused its curiosity. It came to realize that someone had invaded its territory. A single roar caused the mountain ridge to shake, with its huge dragonic body that was like a tiny hill, it pressed on towards Xiao Chen and Zhao Lin Er's direction.

Zhao Lin Er's expression was really ugly to behold. When she saw Xiao Chen who was not far ahead of her, she burst into a fit of rage and pressed on with her longsword once more. Xiao Chen had no other choice but to brace himself to dash towards the vicious dragon once again.

The earth tremble violently as the ancient beast approached them. The both of them were already unable to stand steadily, they swayed endlessly in the process of running.

The legendary Tyrannical Dragon was getting closer and closer, Zhao Lin Er finally turned around helplessly and left regretfully. This type of legendary ancient beast was really too scary, one second late and you're toast.

Xiao Chen felt a nip in the air, he actually drew near to within fifty meters of the Tyrannical Dragon. That huge monster would get in front of him with just three or four more steps. Its pair of huge green eyes had already firmly locked onto him!

Chapter 13 – Unicorn Came to the Rescue

Xiao Chen sighed helplessly, Zhao Lin Er was really courageous. She actually risked her own life to force him into a dead end. He turned around quickly to flee, he was determined to not be ripped apart by this type of vicious beast.

“Snap!”

An ear-piercing sound rang out beside him, the thick and powerful claw of the Tyrannical Dragon snapped a big tree and it fell beside him. He just narrowly escaped death and had a brief encounter with the Death God.

Xiao Chen doesn't want to die, however he was somewhat desperate at the moment. Once he had been discovered by this ancient beast, was there still any hope of escaping? Even though he was able to break away from Zhao Lin Er, he still found himself caught up in the boundary of death.

“Snap! Snap!”

The noise made by the snapping tree sounded like the chains of the Death God, it echoed unceasingly around Xiao Chen. Even though he increased his speed to the limit, he was still unable to outrun the Tyrannical Dragon.

“Roar.....”

The Tyrannical Dragon bellowed in rage as it faced upwards, the surge of sound waves almost made Xiao Chen faint. He hastily covered his ears even though the pain still remains, he felt as if his eardrums were going to shatter into

pieces.

He rolled around on the ground and covered with dirty mud all over his body. Not far from him, that huge and incomparably sharp dragon claw that glitters like frost and snow stabbed deeply into the ground. Xiao Chen felt a cold sweat rolling down his back, just a little bit more and he would be pierced!

Xiao Chen was not someone who would give up easily, however he really felt it was hopeless now.

A silvery light shone and Xiao Chen suddenly realized a tiny horse that seemed to be sculpted out of divine jade appeared not far away from him. Its pair of black gem-like eyes were filled with fear, however it still dashed on top of the tree branches and recklessly run around the Tyrannical Dragon.

Was it trying to attract the attention of the ancient Tyrannical Dragon? Xiao Chen was incomparably surprised, this young unicorn actually ran all the way here..... just to save him!

The Tyrannical Dragon was indeed attracted by the young unicorn, its malevolent draconic head turned towards the young unicorn who was flickering with multicolored lights. After that it roared and pressed on towards the young unicorn.

Xiao Chen stood up quickly and ran over hundreds of meters in one breath, however he stopped in the end. He was afraid that the young unicorn would get into difficulties, this adorable and mysterious young unicorn put itself in such a dangerous situation just to save him. If that was really the case, he would feel guilty just leave it behind like this.

The young unicorn stepped on the treetop and ran as fast as lightning. It only left behind trails of light as it disappeared in the primitive ancient forest. Even though the ancient Tyrannical Dragon was as big as a mountain and could cover more than ten meters with a single step, it was still unable to catch up with the young unicorn.

The young unicorn was really too magical, it leaped from the top of one tree to another just like that. From head to toe, it was covered with brilliant lights and vibrant colors. It was as if the young unicorn was really soaring in the air.

Xiao Chen felt relieved and kept distancing himself without turning back. Naturally, it was not possible to get back to the seacoast as Zhao Lin Er might be waiting for him on the way back. Even though the inner parts of the island might be dangerous, nobody would think of going after him. Perhaps it might be safer for him at the moment.

Under this gloomy and rainy night, Xiao Chen constantly coughed out blood as he ran, he could not turn around nor could he stop. During the time the Tyrannical was distracted by the young unicorn, he must escape from the ancient beast's territory!

It lasted until he was more than five kilometers away from the mountain ridge. He fell on the rain water head first, he was finally unable to endure the wounds inflicted by Wang Zi Feng. Lying on top of the muddy water, the blood spilled out from the corner of the mouth and mixed with the rain water.

Xiao Chen felt his eyelids were very heavy and wanted to lie down and sleep for a really long time, however he knew that was not possible. Ferocious beasts roamed around everywhere in this endless primitive forest, as long as the rain ceased a little, he would turn into the vicious beast's lunch.

He struggled to get up and turned around to survey the path he just came from. He had already distanced himself from the fierce ancient dragon far enough. He climbed up a giant tree with difficulty, and then fainted on top of a thick branch.

On this rainy night, Xiao Chen felt that the tiny unicorn had apparently arrived at his side. The little guy whose body was as white as snow revolves around him. It blinked its pair of big eyes that was brimming with intelligence, then it extended its front hoof that was sparkling and translucent. It seemed as if it really wanted to touch him for a while, but it was scared and pulled back its front hoof.....

At the time Xiao Chen woke up, it was already noon. The heavy rain had already ceased a long time ago, the sunlight shone through the branches and leaves. He expended a great deal of effort to sit up and observed his surroundings.

His surroundings were filled with lush greenery, and there was a Saber-Toothed Tiger looking at him under the giant tree. Among the pile of rocks near him, a snake whose body was as thick as a bucket laid there motionlessly. Further away from him were several huge crocodiles bobbing up and down on the river.

It could still be regarded as a relatively safe place. Although few of the lesser beasts down there could still be considered a ferocious beast, they were weak and docile compared to those bizarre and cruel barbaric beasts.

However, Xiao Chen still felt the need to change location. Around two miles from here, he found a small peak with fragrant flowers and plants. The terrain

was comparatively high here, he could overlook everything in the surroundings. Not only for the purpose of keeping a lookout for Zhao Lin Er, he could also detect the movements of the barbaric beasts in advance.

Being able to escape alive this time was all because of the young unicorn. Xiao Chen was still traumatized after the event last night.

At the same time, Xiao Chen was puzzled. The legendary ancient Tyrannical Dragon should be capable of manipulating the wind and lightning, it should also possess the ability to move in the air freely. However, he had yet to see that kind of divine power that rainy night. He didn't see the divine nature of the beast, he only saw the brutal side. Could the legend be false?

That should not be the case!

Similar to the Eight-clawed Tyrant Dragon, many ancient texts should have recorded most of their divine power. They were definitely not a vicious beast with only brute strength!

Xiao Chen recalled what Wang Zi Feng had told him about this island, "It requires a Heavenly Tablet to suppress!"

Could the reason the ancient beast lost its divine power be related to these? Xiao Chen thought about a lot of things.....

The vicinity of the small peak were filled with lush green grasses and fine trees, there was even a clear spring flowing swiftly. The spiritual energy here was supplemented by all these factors.

Enjoying the flavor of the not so bad lunch, Xiao Chen lay down on a hammock made out of vines in the forest and started to sample the pineapples which had been soaked in the clear spring. While enjoying the sweet scent of the flowers, and listening to the pleasant song of the birds from a distant place, Xiao Chen felt relaxed.

This time, Wang Zi Feng offered his life to inflict a series damage on Xiao Chen. If he didn't withdraw and defend in time, he would be dead by now. Even now, he would need to recuperate for at least more than one month to fully recover.

Thirty days! If he could get through thirty days safe and sound, then it will be the beginning of Zhao Lin Er's nightmare!

Time is equivalent to life, Xiao Chen doesn't want to waste a single second. He immediately operated the Ancient Secret Technique to heal his wounds.

This lush and flourishing forest was covered by vegetation everywhere, it was brimming with infinite plant essence. Xiao Chen stood in the sea of forest to feel the spiritual energy of the vegetations, then he guided these essence into his own body.

The tiny green lights started to circulate within Xiao Chen's body along with the rhythm of his breathing. They were very lively and brimming with unlimited life energy, these inexhaustible energies were transported and absorbed by his flesh, inner organs, and bones.....

Chapter 14 – Mystical Giant Ape

The tiny green lights started to circulate within Xiao Chen's body along with the rhythm of his breathing. They were very lively and brimming with unlimited life energy, these inexhaustible energies were transported and absorbed by his flesh, inner organs, and bones.

Along with the passing of time, the essence of the plants slowly gathered around Xiao Chen from all directions. The green essence around him was so dense that they could even be seen by the naked eyes, a green fog was seen lingering around him.

Xiao Chen immersed himself within the dim green light. He could feel his inner organs and blood vessels brimming with life energy. This thriving forest was filled with plentiful of plant essence, as if the supply was inexhaustible.

He could clearly feel the tiny green lights circulating around his body vigorously, it was like a river flowing over and over again. Not only was his body brimming with vitality, his mind was also feeling cool and refreshed.

Xiao Chen already could not feel the flow of time, he completely blended with the nature, it was as if his body and mind were one with nature. Apparently, he was able to hear the voice of the plants and feel the pulse of the forest. He had already turned into one of them.

The breeze brushed lightly and the fragrance of all kind of flowers spread around the forest. Xiao Chen had entered the boundary of selflessness.

The young unicorn stealthily sneaked over here, it was particularly fond of

basking in this dense spiritual energy. The shiny jade horn was flickering with brilliant lights and absorbed a portion of the condensed plant essence.

Xiao Chen was already getting used to this young Unicorn's action. He didn't want to disturb this young divine beast, and happily allowed it to participate. Since he was saved by the young Unicorn, he never had any intention of subduing it anymore. Just living in harmony with it like this was also not bad.

The sun slowly sets in the West, Xiao Chen finally withdraw from the mysterious boundary after the entire sky was filled with the afterglow of the sun. The essence of the plants in the forest had great benefits for his body. The green essences were like a fairy dew and moisturized his wounded body, that enabled him to recover especially smoothly.

The young Unicorn did not leave immediately, it leaped on top of an ancient tree and blinked its black eyes while observing Xiao Chen.

Xiao Chen smiled faintly, he realized that the young divine beast was not that wary of him anymore. He gathered some fruits and wash it at the clear spring, then he tossed some towards the ancient tree.

The young Unicorn was ready to escape at any moment. However, when it noticed it was just a pineapple, it stopped and jumped up to grab the pineapple with its mouth. But, it was picky about food like a kid. Only after a single bite, it threw the pineapple down the tree.

Xiao Chen continued to toss fruits at the young Unicorn, but it tossed the fruits down the tree every time. It was not very interested in these fresh fruits. In the end, it ran away in an instant when it saw Xiao Chen preparing to roast the meat.

The flame throbbed in the forest, the meat was already roasted until golden yellow and glossy. An alluring aroma spread through the forest.

All of a sudden, cries of the beasts echoed from far away and it was rapidly closing the distance. Dozens silhouette of powerful beasts could be seen in the dense forest beneath the small peak. They were flying vertically on the treetops, as though they were walking on the cloud. They would leap for about eight to nine meters by only making slight contact with the branches and leaves, they were seriously extremely nimble.

In only a moment, the dozens of beasts had already rushed over to this area. Naturally, their destination was not this small peak, but rather the chaotic Stone Forest that's about two or three hundred meters from here. When they stopped in the midst of the Stone Forest, their strong and sturdy figures in the sunset appeared very majestic.

There were a dozen of gigantic ape, their heights were about three meters or so. They were covered in black fur from head to toe, their appearance looked very hideous and frightening. They were clearly a peculiar race, an ordinary ape wouldn't be this tall and well-built. Without a doubt, the Stone Forest was their dwelling.

There was one particularly special ones among them, its height reached up to four meters and it seemed much more sturdy when compared to the other gigantic apes. Moreover, its fur was crimson red in color. It was flickering with a bewitching radiance under the setting sun. That was not all, it also possessed four arms brimming with formidable strength. Its pair of eyes emitted an electrifying cold radiance. Even though they were separated by two or three hundred meters, Xiao Chen could still feel that cold aura.

A high-pitched cry of the ape echoed from the Stone Forest, the group of apes

had discovered Xiao Chen who was on top of the small peak. The four armed crimson ape took the lead and rushed over there, then dozens of powerful silhouette followed at the back.

Xiao Chen frowned, he possessed a serious wound at the moment, and all of those gigantic apes seemed to be a peculiar race. It was not a wise decision to get into a fight with them.

It was impossible to escape, he was definitely slower than these gigantic apes that could cover eight to nine meters with a single leap. He continued to roast the deer meat that weighed a few kilograms calmly, the aroma began to fill the air and spread around.

Dozens of three to four meters tall gigantic apes appeared above the small peak rapidly. They were like a row of enormous stone tablets, blocking the last bit of radiance from the setting sun and left behind one after another terrifying shadows.

The crimson colored gigantic ape should be their leader, it was standing in the front and produced a low growl. Its pair of eyes emitted a terrifying light, it seemed as if it would pounce on Xiao Chen at any time and rip him apart. However, it didn't take any action immediately as it was attracted by the smell of the aromatic meat.

After that, it actually got in front of Xiao Chen with a single step. It snatched away the roasted meat that weighed a few kilograms with speed as fast as lightning. It cautiously took a small bite to taste the meat, then it tore the meat apart and wolf it down¹. It threw the remaining meat to the gigantic apes at the back.

Low growls echoed from within the forest as the group of apes fought over the roasted meat. Each apes only ate a mouthful, yet there was not a bit of meat remained.

Xiao Chen oversaw everything calmly, then he sliced a big piece of raw meat in a composed manner and started to roast the meat. Once the aroma of the meat waft through the air again, all the apes also started to growl in a low voice. They stared at the golden yellow and glossy deer meat nervously.

This time, Xiao Chen used the bamboo knife to cut one kilogram of cooked meat for himself, then without waiting for the apes to come forward, he threw the remaining meat that weighed more than ten kilograms towards that four-armed ape. The gigantic apes once again let out a deep and low growl as they wolf down a portion of the meat.

After they finished eating, their hostility towards Xiao Chen seemed to have faded away. Their eyes emitted a brilliant hopeful ray, it looked like they wanted to savour more cooked meat.

Xiao Chen smiled faintly and calmly cooked the rest of the raw meat. After that he presented it to those gigantic apes.

He actually averted a crisis in such a way, it was somewhat unimaginable. The numerous apes were somewhat reluctant to part, they already do not possess any hostility towards Xiao Chen. Before that four armed crimson ape left, it stood in front of Xiao Chen and exerted all of its strength to beat its own chest. Apparently, it wanted to express something to Xiao Chen.

During the night, Xiao Chen faced the moon and started to gather the moon essence. He immersed himself in some kind of tranquil and mysterious boundary.

The chaotic Stone Forest on the opposite side, dozens of gigantic apes were also standing while facing the moon. Xiao Chen could feel it to some extent so he opened his eyes and faced the forest at the opposite side. He couldn't help but felt astonished, the dozens of gigantic apes were actually swallowing and spewing out the moonlight!

References

Idiom: Fig. to eat something very rapidly and in very large pieces. (As a wolf might eat.)

Chapter 15 – Man and Beast Combine Forces

Although the light in their mouths was faint, it was still possible to see with naked eyes. The dozens of gigantic apes seemed to know some simple training exercise. Xiao Chen was honestly a little astonished, he couldn't help but recall the legends of the monsters from the human world. Doesn't the Elite Monsters trained by absorbing and exhaling the essence of the sun and moon?

Among the dozen of gigantic apes, the crimson four-armed ape was the most breathtaking. The moonlight it swallowed and spewed condensed into a ball of intermittent light. Moreover, all of its crimson-colored furs were glittering with a dim light. Clearly, it possessed intelligence and seemed very threatening!

The following days, the dozens of gigantic apes came over to cadge a meal every evening. Naturally, they weren't able to eat their fill due to their large appetite, they could only savour the taste.

"Roar....." The roar of a tiger was transmitted from a distant mountain forest. However, it followed by with a grunting sound before it stopped. Not long later, dozens of powerful beasts leaped towards Xiao Chen. The crimson four-armed ape was carrying a three or so meters long Saber-Toothed Tiger on its hand as it hopped in front of Xiao Chen.

Xiao Chen shivered with cold, this peculiar ape's fighting strength was really as formidable as expected. Saber-Toothed Tiger was downed in a single hit, it had its entire head pulverized. One could imagine just how formidable was the four-armed gigantic ape.

After the gigantic apes finally left, Xiao Chen began to operate the Secret Qi-Training Method again to treat his wounded body. Time represents life, he had

no other choice but seize every moment to recover his strength.

Strangely, as if the young Unicorn had disappeared, there was no traces of it these past two days. Xiao Chen was somewhat concerned, he was afraid that something might have happened. After all, this island was too mysterious and dangerous.

He felt relieved when the young Unicorn make an appearance again one day later. The young Unicorn was still as timid and curious as before, it would flee when something unusual happened. Other than consuming the worldly power gathered by Xiao Chen, the young Unicorn was like a curious child and likes to observe Xiao Chen in secret.

Three days had passed and the recovery went smoothly. However, Xiao Chen ran into a dangerous situation that night, Zhao Lin Er finally made her appearance again! The Imperial Angel broke through the ancient Tyrannical Dragon's territory and finally tracked down Xiao Chen's trails. She was determined to not let him slip away again and eliminate him this time.

Her steps were as gentle as a lotus and arrived elegantly. In this primitive ancient forest, her figure was indeed very spectacular under the bright moonlight! The entire mountain forest seemed as if it had become brighter. The terrifying howl of the beasts from the surrounding make her seems especially outstanding and noble. It was as if the fairy from the Ninth Heaven had descended upon the uncivilized island.

Even with her beauty exceeding that of the natural world and put the flowers to shame, Xiao Chen was not in the mood to appreciate it. She was equivalent to a female Death God to him!

Xiao Chen did not escape immediately, but rather retreated to the gigantic ape's habitat unhurriedly.

Dozens of gigantic apes were inhaling and exhaling the moonlight. They did not make any dangerous action when they saw Xiao Chen entered their territory. They had been asking for food from him the past few days, and had already acknowledged Xiao Chen as their neighbour.

Zhao Lin Er was carrying a divine sword on her hand, she chased after Xiao Chen slowly and steadily. However, she was dumbfounded after she entered the chaotic Stone Forest. Dozens of gigantic apes were standing on top of stones. They looked like huge stone tablets, leaving behind dozens of huge shadows under the moonlight.

Dozens of lights were entering and exiting their mouths simultaneously, the gigantic apes were paying their respects to the moon and absorbed the essence of the moon. One could tell that they were intelligent creatures with a single glance.

Zhao Lin Er hesitated, even though she knew these peculiar beasts were terrifying, she just found Xiao Chen and was reluctant to let this chance slip. It was because she knew it would be disadvantageous for her as more time passed, she couldn't let him continue to recuperate.

She executed the Transient Light: Heavenly Steps and rushed toward the Stone Forest while she performed the Rainbow Sword Secret Arts. Rainbow-colored light lit up the night sky immediately.

“Roar!”

The crimson-colored gigantic ape in the center let out a sharp roar, its entire body was covered by a faint moonlight, making it seem extremely mystical and scary! Its tall silhouette disappeared in the blink of an eye. “Clink! Clank!” With its nearly two meters long arm, it struck the rainbow-colored light, sparks burst forth from the longsword.

The Imperial Angel was greatly alarmed, this peculiar four-armed ape possessed extraordinary strength and even its defense was remarkable!

Zhao Lin Er could tell how terrifying the gigantic ape was with a single strike. She turned around without any hesitation and wanted to escape. However, dozens of huge shadows in the surrounding swayed and blocked her path with speed as fast as lightning.

“Roar.....” The gigantic apes keeps roaring, their shadows were wide under the moonlit night.

Xiao Chen was watching calmly from the distant, he didn’t make any sound. The gigantic ape’s intelligence came as no surprise. However, he never thought they were so loyal to their friend. They actually went as far as subjugating Zhao Lin Er in such a way.

The Imperial Angel’s complexion already changed colors, she wanted to promptly break out of this enclosure. She raised the power of her technique to the limit, her body seemed to transform into rainbow. The rainbow-colored brilliance was circling around in the Stone Forest.

“Plop!”

Bright red blood gushed out as a thin and gorgeous seven-colored rainbow aura pierced through the chest of a single gigantic ape. Zhao Lin Er practiced in one of the famous Secret Technique, that was the Rainbow Sword Secret Arts. The power of this technique was formidable, the rainbow aura ripped apart the body of the gigantic ape in a flash and killed it on the spot.

Zhao Lin Er regained some of her confidence, except for the peculiar four-armed ape, the rest only had claws as hard as iron. Their body had yet to reach that stage.

“Roar!”

The four-armed crimson ape roared in sorrow, it dashed to the foremost position and charged at Zhao Lin Er wildly. One after another light beams hit the ape’s body, but it was unable to injure him at all. It only produced “Clink! Clank!” sound as the light beams hit the ape. The crimson colored fur was extremely magnificent under the brilliance of the moon. The leader of the gigantic apes was clearly very furious. Its eyes were emitting a chilling cold radiance, they were filled with inexhaustible hatred. It wanted to tear Zhao Lin Er to shreds.

With Zhao Lin Er’s talent, she might be able to fight with this intelligent beast into a standstill. However, there were still dozens of gigantic apes around her, she was surrounded by perils. Around this time, Xiao Chen also dashed forward. He didn’t waste any time on superfluous words anymore, he only answered with his fist!

“Rips!”

The long sleeve of Zhao Lin Er’s shirt was tore apart by a gigantic ape, exposing her elegant arm that was as beautiful as a fine jade. At the same time, the raging

crimson ape grabbed Zhao Lin Er's longsword with a single hand. It snapped the longsword in half with its gigantic claws!

At this time, Xiao Chen was ready to attack. He always believed the strongest weapon was one's own body, it doesn't matter if he had to give up the sword. He gathered mysterious lights around both of his hands and formed a splendid light curtain before he delivered the attack to Zhao Lin Er.

Chapter 16 – Bellow of the Beast

Zhao Lin Er's lily-white hands were like single-edged blades, they were flickering with seven-colored light and cut apart the heavy light curtain. She turned her body around simultaneously, leaving a long rainbow in her trail. She attempted to leap towards the giant tree outside of the Stone Forest one more time. However, the crimson four-armed ape was even faster in the Stone Forest, it transformed into a bloody ray of light as it soared into the sky. It looked like it would rip Zhao Lin Er apart in midair.

The Imperial Angel wanted to avoid the claws, but it was an extremely arduous task.

However, something unexpected happened. Just around this time, a silver shadow rushed over there from the depths of the jungle rapidly. In that instant, it bumped against the crimson colored ape and caught Zhao Lin Er in the air. After that, it soared into the sky and landed on top of a giant tree in the vicinity.

Few of the gigantic apes nearby actually failed to stop it!

Xiao Chen was shocked as he raised his head to survey the giant tree. It was actually the young Unicorn! It was actually the young Unicorn that saved Zhao Lin Er!

Its small and weak body was not even 1 meter tall yet. It was too delicate when compared to the four-armed crimson ape, but just now it actually pushed the mountain-like ape back. It was hard to imagine just what kind of power was accumulated within its small body.

“Roar!”

The crimson colored ape snarled angrily, it leads more than ten gigantic apes and soared into the sky. They climbed up the giant tree and surrounded the young Unicorn. However, the young Unicorn was too fast, it was practically lightning incarnate. It stepped on the tip of the tree and break out of the enclosure in an instant.

“Run quickly!” Zhao Lin Er used her pleasant voice to urge the young Unicorn. Apparently, they had already been acquainted for a long time.

Xiao Chen recalled what Wang Zi Feng had said, only a pure hearted girl could get close to the Unicorn. He suddenly realized in that moment, maybe the young Unicorn disappeared for two days because it was with Zhao Lin Er. Maybe the two of them already had an encounter much earlier than that.

Although the gigantic apes were also very fast, they were still unable to catch up to the mystical young Unicorn. In the end, the four-armed crimson ape faced upwards and let out a long cry. A bright multicolored light spurt out from its mouth, and shoot towards the rear of the young Unicorn.

Xiao Chen was gobsmacked! He was amazed by the gigantic ape’s miraculous ability, it actually possessed divine power that closely resembled sorcery.

The young Unicorn detected the energy waves from the rear, its jade-like horn lit up with brilliant rays and a white lightning was released from the horn the instant it turned around. It hits the bright multicolored light that was chasing them in a flash. As a result, the multicolored light exploded and splendid rays of light scattered around simultaneously!

A powerful waves of energy wrecked havoc in the forest. A wide expanse of forest around the point of explosion was destroyed. The leaves were swirling in the air, fragments of woods filled the sky, and a huge hole emerged on the ground.

Xiao Chen was extremely amazed, an ordinary expert wouldn't be able to receive that kind of attack. Both of the peculiar beasts possessed extraordinary divine power, especially the young Unicorn. It was still so young, yet it already possessed such a bizarre ability. It was hard to imagine just how powerful would it be once it reached adulthood, no wonder it was the divine beast!

The young Unicorn was like a silver arrow that was shot out and disappeared in the blink of an eye, leaving no traces behind. Dozens of gigantic apes let out a bellow of rage as they faced upwards. They seemed to be very angry, but there was nothing else they could do.

Xiao Chen also felt very disappointed, he had the chance to finish off Zhao Lin Er. However, she was saved by the young Unicorn in the end. He could feel hostility coming from the dozens of gigantic apes, he shouldn't stay at the Stone Forest any longer and retreated towards his own small peak.

Just around this time, something that makes Xiao Chen flabbergasted occurred. The four-armed crimson ape actually dug out a translucent crystal from within the body of the dead gigantic ape. After that, it swallowed the crystal.

Originally, it appeared to be mentally exhausted after attacking the young Unicorn with the multicolored light. However, after it swallowed the crystal, it quickly recovered its energy. Moreover, its entire body was emitting a dim light.

Could that be the legendary Monster's Core? However, it doesn't seem to have much resemblance! Xiao Chen was bewildered as he returned to the small peak.

"Roar....."

Dozens of gigantic apes bellowed in agony, and brought the carcass back to the Stone Forest with them.

As if Zhao Lin Er had backed out to avoid defeat, she did not make her appearance in the following two days. However, Xiao Chen doesn't dare to be careless, he was not convinced that the Imperial Angel would give up just like that.

Dozens of gigantic apes clearly showed some hostility towards Xiao Chen, their friendly relationship was not the same as before. Xiao Chen knew it was about time to change location.

He pushed his way through the Tyrannical Dragon's territory and discovered plenty of large barbaric beast's remains. He also had no idea what kind of species the skeletal remains belong to. There were skeletons of all sizes, from three to four meters until more than ten meters. The white bones were everywhere, making this place seems especially eerie. They were clearly skeletal remains left behind by the Tyrannical Dragon.

When Xiao Chen passed through the pile of bones from the other side, he discovered a red crystal by chance. It was as big as a thumb and resembled a dazzling gem. His heart was stirred, wasn't this crystal similar to the one swallowed by the four-armed ape? The only difference was the color.

He picked up the translucent red crystal from the pile of bones. While he was holding the red crystal, he could clearly sense the pure energy contained within it. Xiao Chen was somewhat shocked, could this be the Monster's Core? He activated the Secret Qi-Training Method recorded on the Ancient Stone Tablet to guide that extremely pure spiritual energy into his body.

A short while later, brittle sounds were produced from Xiao Chen's hand, "Clink! Clink!" The originally translucent red crystal lost its luster and became dull. It was starting to fall apart, along with the last of the spiritual energy absorbed by Xiao Chen, the crystal immediately disintegrated and turned into dust!

The spiritual energy contained within the crystal was really not feeble, and it was really easy to absorb. When comparing to the speed of gathering the worldly essence, it was several folds faster. If that was not the Monster's Core, it would otherwise be known as a Spirit Stone.

However, Xiao Chen was very puzzled. Only a small amount of spiritual energy he absorbed was used to heal his wounded body, and most of it unexpectedly disappeared without a trace. He had no idea where the rest of the spiritual energy went to.

Xiao Chen activated the Secret Technique to inspect his own arteries and veins, in order to find the traces of those spiritual energy. All of a sudden, he discovered the silver light in his left foot. That was from the enormous life energy contained within the dragon egg. It seemed to have fused with that acupuncture point. The difference was like that of night and day when compared to the other acupuncture point, it was like bright star in the night sky!

At the same time, he discovered a faintly discernable red light in the acupuncture point of his other foot. He immediately realized the same thing had

occurred in his other foot. However, the spiritual energy contained within the crystal was far from comparable to the dragon egg. He wondered if there would be a similar change in his other foot after he accumulated enough spiritual energy.

Xiao Chen did not advance to the depths of the island, he merely moved several miles away from the habitat of the gigantic ape. He relocated next to a rocky precipice close to the borderline of the Tyrannical Dragon's territory.

That was because the terrifying barbaric beasts wouldn't dare to approach this territory. In regards to the condition of his body at the moment, he was unfit to engage in a fierce fight with the vicious beasts.

It was already the dusk, Xiao Chen was calmly meditating on top of the rock precipice to recover his wounded body.

"ARH-WOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOO....." The sudden howl of a wolf could be heard from the distant mountain forest. Moreover, it was accompanied by the cries of the other beasts.

At first, Xiao Chen was not really concerned about it, because the wolf was really weak compared to the other beasts on this uninhabited island. However, the cries of the other beasts could be heard soon after, such as the bellow of the tiger, lion and ape. Moreover, the mountain forest not far from him started to tremble. It seemed like many vicious beasts were fighting in that region!

Xiao Chen stopped meditating and went to find out what happened.

When he arrived at this woodland, the battle between the vicious beasts were

already approaching the climax. A large area of the woodland were covered by the carcass of the beasts, a dense fog of blood permeated in the air. The bloody smell that stings the nose spread through the forest.

Two male lion that was as big as a huge elephant had their necks ruptured and there were innumerable carcasses across the forest; seven to eight Three-Eyed Black Tiger had their body ripped in half and concealed by the underbrush, two eagles that were five to six meters long were hanging on a huge tree with their chest and abdomen penetrated, three huge One-Horned Bear that spanned five to six meters long were piled together with their heads severed..... There were actually so many carcasses of different peculiar beasts here.

Chapter 17 – Transformation of the Acupoint

It was a really rare occurrence for the vicious beasts to slaughter one another, the law of the jungle was really grim!

Only because this was within the Tyrannical Dragon's territory, the amount of the vicious beasts were little. At the same time, there was also no King of the Beasts type of powerful beasts. Otherwise, the war between the vicious beasts would be even more devastating and cruel.

The entire area was drenched in blood, the carcasses of the beasts before Xiao Chen's eyes was a horrible sight to see. Apparently, they were fighting for an ancient cave. Most of the vicious beasts died in front of the entrance of the cave. It seemed like this ancient cave was originally sealed off. The huge boulder that blocked off the entrance of the cave was gradually breaking apart over many years. Today, the cave finally saw the light again and invited the slaughter of the vicious beasts.

The ultimate winner was a Divine Wolf! Its blue-colored fur was shining like a gem and overflowed with a bizarre energy. It was as if the wolf was sculpted out of a divine blue rock. Its length could go up to three meters or more and its height was around 1.6 to 1.7 meters. It was rather "small" when compared to the other vicious beasts. However, its intimidating aura and bloodthirsty killing intent generated fear in the heart of others.

The most mystical part was its pair of blue wings. That pair of wolf wings could extend up to five or six meters long. The blue radiance circulating around the wings was even more concentrated compared to the other parts of its body. Other than that, this wolf actually possessed three eyes. The third eye was aligned vertically between the other two and it was as bright as a sapphire.

However, it emitted a demonic aura, just looking at it gave people an extremely ominous feeling.

To be able to survive the massacre between so many vicious beasts proved just how fierce and formidable that divine wolf was.

It pushed the boulder that was blocking the entrance of the cave aside, but just when it was about to enter the cave, it noticed something in that instant. It looked towards the direction where Xiao Chen was hiding. Its pair of fierce eyes were flickering with bloody light, and the vertical eye on its forehead was pulsing with a bluish aura. Soon after, a fiendish aura spread everywhere and filled the air!

Xiao Chen was in a dangerous situation, but when the divine wolf turned its head around, Xiao Chen noticed a terrible wound on the side of its neck. It was clearly wounded heavily in the course of the fight. The wound stretched all the way from the side of the neck until its abdomen. Apparently, one of its blue wing was almost ripped apart and it drooped low on the ground. The eerie white bones around its chest and abdomen had been exposed. The ground was soaked by its bizarre blue-colored blood.

“ARH-WOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOO.....”

Driven by its bloodthirsty impulse, the mystical wolf faced the sky and let out a howl, then it transformed into a blue light as it dashed towards Xiao Chen. However, the instant it landed in front of Xiao Chen, the body of the wolf shuddered and it nearly fell on the ground.

Xiao Chen felt relieved, the divine wolf was like an arrow at the end of its flight [1]. When the vicious wolf opened up its ferocious mouth and pounced on Xiao

Chen with its exposed teeth, Xiao Chen left a silhouette behind in his original position as he dodged the attack. Following that, he swept his right leg and ruthlessly strike the white bones exposed by the divine wolf.

[TL Note : [1] = Chinese idiom: Means it has lose all of its strength.]

The divine wolf was tough as expected, its body only shook a few times. It didn't fall back a single step nor did it flip over and fell on the ground. Xiao Chen's kick was powerful enough to split a stone tablet in half, however it was unable to break the exposed wolf bones into pieces. One could imagine just how tough was the divine wolf's skeletons!

“ARH-WOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOO.....”

The Three-Eyed Divine Wolf let out a miserable howl, the sharp pain drew out all of its violent nature. The fur all over the wolf's body was standing on end, and it was bursting with an indistinct blue radiance. The faint glorious radiance was flickering unceasingly!

It pounced at Xiao Chen again and this time, its speed had been raised to the limit, only blue light was left behind its track! However, it seemed to have lost all of its strength in midair and suddenly dropped to the ground.

It was really an arrow at the end of its flight, it was unable to flaunt its strength before the final radiance of the setting sun. A blue disintegrated heart spewed from the mouth of the wolf. Xiao Chen was actually very frightened inwardly, if the divine wolf was not heavily injured, it was not an opponent he could handle!

Looking at the woodland that was dyed red by the blood, as well as the carcass

of the vicious beasts, and also the bloody fog that was drifting in the air, Xiao Chen walked to the entrance of the ancient cave. He wanted to find out just why did so many vicious beasts fought over this ancient cave and what kind of secret it contained.

The inside of the cave was spacious and empty. If the boulder that sealed the cave was completely removed, even huge monsters like the Eight-Clawed Tyrant Dragon would most likely be able to crawl inside here. All of a sudden, Xiao Chen's expression became serious. With the help of the faint light coming from the cave entrance, Xiao Chen could see..... what appeared to be a huge monster creeping in the depths of the cave!

If one observed carefully, the figure in front was all white in color, that was a huge skeletal frame!

Fortunately, it was not a living beast! Xiao Chen walked forward. The huge skeletal frame was just like a mountain made out of bones. That ought to be the skeletal remains of a vicious dragon because no other giant creatures would be as big as this. The completely intact skeletal remains was about forty to fifty meters long. It was quite similar to the Saber Dragon recorded in the ancient book. That was one of the vicious type among the dragon race!

Xiao Chen discovered a faintly discernible radiance in the depths of the cave and he was surprised to find out that it was actually a dragon crystal! The crystal was as big as a person's head, even the darkness of the ancient cave was unable to cover up its radiance. Xiao Chen was very shocked, it was too big when comparing this with the commonly seen crystal.

The dragon crystal was sparkling and translucent, it emitted a divine light. The closer one walks toward the light, the brighter it became. The glorious radiance was similar to a divine afterglow. Without a doubt, this crystal was of the highest

quality among the rarities!

Undoubtedly, numerous vicious beasts slaughtered one another in order to obtain this dragon crystal. This place was the tomb of the savage dragon. Xiao Chen quickly left the dragon cave, he wanted to leave this place as quickly as possible. Walking over the woodland dyed by blood, Xiao Chen collected over a dozen of crystals from the body of the beasts, and then he left like the wind.

There was no crystal within the body of an ordinary beast, it could only be found in peculiar vicious beasts. With so many dead body of the vicious beasts here, it was inevitable that there would be dozens of crystals to be found. However, Xiao Chen doesn't have enough time to gather all of them. If by any chance, the vicious beasts within the forest were to become aware of the dragon crystal, it will inevitably lead to another massacre again!

Using his clothes to wrap the glorious dragon crystal, Xiao Chen swiftly returned to his temporary residence close to the rocky precipice.

After about half an hour later, the bellow of the beasts could be heard from that region again. Xiao Chen could see a few flying beasts charging into that woodland reeking with the scent of blood from the rocky precipice.

Among them was a divine wolf! The body length of the wolf was around five or six meters long, its height was close to three meters. It was flashing with blue radiance from head to toe. The divine wolf flapped its pair of blue wings and generated a gale. The unfolded wings extended to twelve or thirteen meters long. Exactly on the center of its forehead, there was also a blue vertical eye. Furthermore, the icy aura was even colder than the one before.

This divine wolf was two times bigger than the one which attacked Xiao Chen

before! A terrifying howl of the wolf was transmitted from the sky in that region, the huge sound wave raged on in the vast sky like a muffled thunder. It must be the leader of a wolf pack in a certain region of the forest.

The vicious beasts that died in the slaughterfest became food of the latecomers. Only until the color of the sky became dark did that place gradually regained its tranquility. However, a lot of pure white beast bones were left behind in that region!

When the noise finally subsided, Xiao Chen used a boulder to seal himself in a cave. He activated the secret technique as held the shiny and translucent dragon crystal in both hands. He absorbed the pure energy of the dragon essence within the dragon crystal with the Secret Qi-Training Method bestowed by Heaven.

If an outsider was allowed to see the scene before Xiao Chen, they would certainly be dumbstruck. The dragon crystal was so big that it needed both hands to support, the cavern was completely lit up by the glorious divine light.

The divine afterglow seemed as if it was living, the huge dragon crystal was slowly shrinking as the divine light rushed into Xiao Chen's body unceasingly. This was a moment that could make anyone feel excited, the pure and boundless energy of the dragon essence was like an unending stream. It keeps flowing into Xiao Chen's body without an end in sight.

The bright radiance was like a water ripple, it keeps circling around in the cavern and finally gathered around Xiao Chen's body. After one night, the dragon crystal shrunk more than half, and Xiao Chen was already enveloped by a dense multicolored light.

The dragon crystal was finally reduced to the size of a clenched fist by the

noon. However, it was still as bright as before and illuminated the cavern. The dragon crystal was reduced to the size of a pigeon egg after a few more hours had passed, it became a shiny and translucent bead.

Only until this time did Xiao Chen stop and opened his eyes. As he expected, the enormous power of the dragon all gathered in the acupuncture point of his other foot. Only until the essence within the dragon crystal was almost exhausted did the acupuncture point had enough, a blinding light speck emerged.

The light speck perfectly fused with the acupuncture point. The light speck and the acupuncture point was one and the same, it seemed to have transformed completely. Compared with the other acupuncture point, it was like a bright lantern in the dark of the night!

One rare dragon egg caused the acupuncture point in Xiao Chen's left foot to transform. One rare dragon crystal caused the acupuncture point in his right foot to transform. For that kind of enormous power to actually completely merge with two tiny acupuncture point, he felt that his own Secret Qi-Training Method was very mysterious.

Within the human body, there are three hundred and sixty five acupuncture point. If every acupuncture point transformed into a light speck, just what kind of transformation would occur? Xiao Chen was looking forward to the arrival of that day.

Chapter 18 – Merciless

Xiao Chen refined the rare dragon crystal, the boundless energy of the dragon crystal almost entirely absorbed by the acupuncture point in his right foot. Even though only a little portion of the dragon essence entered his wounded body, the condition of his wounds was much better than before.

Zhao Lin Er hadn't shown herself in the past three days. However, she would certainly never give up on the opportunity to kill Xiao Chen right before her eyes. After all, both of them strived for time, perhaps the sound of thunder strike would happen at a moment's notice.

Xiao Chen urgently needed time to recover his wounded body. In the past few days, he constantly regulated his breathing through certain techniques in the primitive forest.

This island was brimming with mystery, Xiao Chen discovered traces of many huge monsters in the vicinity of the Tyrannical Dragon's territory. Many of them were sacred ancient beasts. Such as: A Divine Panther capable of ripping apart a huge elephant, an ancient crocodile that extended up to twenty meters long, a huge golden centipede that was as thick as a bowl..... He could even hear the dragon roar that was transmitted from the depths of the island. Naturally, that was not from the Eight-Clawed Tyrant Dragon nor the ancient Tyrannical Dragon. It was from another unidentified dragon-kind.

The essence of the plants was flowing sluggishly, the green radiance flickered unceasingly in the mountain forest. Xiao Chen's surrounding was occupied by a dense spiritual energy, his body was enveloped by a hazy green radiance. The pure essence of the plants entered his body and he was healed by the lukewarm green afterglow.

Another two days had already passed, the state of Xiao Chen's body was so much better than before. He decided to go and observe what Zhao Lin Er was doing, she couldn't have given up her intention to kill him. The next time would probably be the conclusion, it was necessary to probe around.

After by-passing the zone frequently roamed by the Tyrannical Dragon, Xiao Chen passed through a dense primitive forest, avoided various kinds of peculiar beasts, and finally returned to the outermost zone of the island where he had built the green bamboo house.

The blue sky and white clouds were reflected by the clear sapphire-like lake, the surrounding was filled with wisterias and colorful flowers in full bloom. The refreshing fragrance of the flowers filled the entire region of this forest.

The bamboo house was fresh and green, it was decorated with some vines and fresh flowers. A plain cotton towel was hanging on the rattan string in front of the bamboo house, fluttering lightly along with the breeze.

The bamboo house built by Xiao Chen was already occupied by Zhao Lin Er. That was indeed a spoil of war not just in name only, but also in reality.

However, Xiao Chen did not see Zhao Lin Er at all, he began searching by circling around the area . He suddenly concentrated his sight, in the depths of the jungle hundred meters away from the tiny lake, there were actually five newly constructed bamboo houses! Moreover, he saw an unfamiliar figure there!

It was a youngster with a tall stature and judging by his appearance, he seemed to be roughly twenty plus years old. The youngster had a long brown

hair, and extremely fair skin. However, the expression in his eyes was somewhat malicious, giving an impression that he was not very friendly.

Who was that?

Xiao Chen observed the brown-haired man quietly in the forest.

Not long later, countless seabirds flew away from the direction of the seaside with a jet-like speed. The silhouettes of two people could be seen passing through the jungle, they quickly ran towards the brown-haired man. They appeared to be a man and a woman around the age of twenty, both of them have light brown hair and by the looks of their uniform, they seemed to be the servant of the man in front of the bamboo house. The two of them bowed when they reached the brown-haired man.

The brown-haired youth waved his hand to dismiss the courtesy. After that, he asked, "There are still no traces of them?"

"Yes, My Lord. We couldn't find a single ship at the ocean."

The brown-haired youth slightly knitted his brows and said, "It is rare for the Taboo Ocean to be this calm, and that there isn't any mysterious power hindering us. There shouldn't be any great danger, how come they still haven't arrived? Could it be that they ran into the vicious dragon?" Soon after, he turned his head to the direction of the tiny lake. After a brief silent, he said to himself, "Exceptionally charming..... even the Unicorn is accompanying her, she is seriously as beautiful as an angel....."

The male servant who was standing at the side said, "My Lord, if you like her,

why not.....”

“Humph!” The brown-haired man snorted coldly to cut off the servant’s words. Then he reprimanded him, “You better watch your word! Wait until our men arrive, then we will help her eliminate her enemy first. I have my own plans.”

Xiao Chen calmly retreated back into the jungle.

Zhao Lin Er! Even just the thought of her name alone made Xiao Chen’s eyes filled with rage. She had already met with the people of this world and pledged to have him killed no matter what.

Now, he had even more powerful enemies to worry about, Xiao Chen couldn’t help but sigh. The charm of a woman was indeed the most powerful weapon, Zhao Lin Er had actually gained the assistance of this brown-haired man with her beauty.

He had two options to pick from. One: Immediately flee into the depths of the island. Two: Wait for an opportunity and strike first.

He was a very calculative person, after pondering for a while, he decided to gain the initiative by striking first. He should try to vanquish the opponent’s strength first, so as to avoid the worst case scenario when the brown-haired man’s reinforcements arrived later.

Xiao Chen carefully surveyed the surrounding, and discovered that there were three concealed guards around the newly constructed bamboo houses protecting the brown-haired man. Soon after, Xiao Chen discovered three more people at the coconut grove near the coast. Judging by their uniform, they ought

to be the brown-haired man's servants. Each of them surveyed a different area of the sea, they were obviously waiting for the backup to arrive.

After scouting the place over and over again, Xiao Chen decided to begin his assault!

The coconut grove was tightly secured, each person stood about five hundred meters apart. Xiao Chen approached one of them without making a single sound. He didn't have any weapon with him, his body itself was the best weapon. A cold aura came forth and his finger assaulted its target! The blood burst forth, then Xiao Chen retreated quickly. One brown-haired servant had his throat ruptured and fell on the ground.

He didn't have the slightest hesitation, if he didn't kill the enemy, he would be killed instead. Only by cutting them down firmly would he have the chance to survive!

He approached his second target, but when there was only seven meters left between them, a ripe coconut fell on the sandy beach with a "Plop!" sound. When the servant heard the noise, he turned his head around. Xiao Chen promptly increased his speed to the limit, then he leaped towards the servant. While he was still airborne, he twisted his leg around and swept it towards the opponent's throat.

Everything happened as quick as lightning, however that servant was quite perceptive. Even with the unexpected occurrence, he did not panic as he quickly reeled back away from the kick and used both arms to protect himself simultaneously.

"Bang!"

Xiao Chen's right leg packed several thousands pound of weight. It broke the brown-haired servant's arms in a flash. Even though the sharp pain distorted his senses, he was still as clear-headed as before. He urgently shouted for help, "Help....."

Xiao Chen's right palm was enveloped with a glorious divine light, it was just like a divine blade splitting the air. Along with the flash of the dazzling radiance, the brown-haired servant was decapitated and blood spilled everywhere. Xiao Chen then jumped backwards to retreat.

The shout of the servant was engulfed by the sound of the sea waves. The blood was gushing out rapidly from the headless body as it fell on the sandy beach. By the time the stench of blood had spread through the entire forest, Xiao Chen was gone without a single trace.

Chapter 19 – Cold-Blooded & Cold-Hearted

Actually, this servant was not weak, it was only because Xiao Chen executed a lightning fast killing move. It was impossible to allow the opponent any time to react to the attack. Judging from the exchange earlier, it seemed like the opponent next time wouldn't be as easy to handle.

Without any hesitation, Xiao Chen ran like the wind towards the third person five hundred meters from here. He concealed himself as he got closer to the third person. In the end, Xiao Chen attacked him without any remorse. The operation was very smooth this time, he disposed of his opponent with a single strike!

The bluish green ocean surged up violently, the sea waves washed up the shore. It was as if nothing had ever happened in the coconut grove.

Xiao Chen followed the path he took and returned to the vicinity of the green bamboo house. There was still no traces of Zhao Lin Er, just where could she be now.

The malicious brown haired man had already entered the bamboo house. That pair of male and female servants were keeping watch at the door. In addition, there were still three more servants hidden in the forest securing the safety of this place.

Xiao Chen did not become impatient, he was quietly waiting for an opportunity to strike.

Sure enough, he didn't have to wait a long time for a golden opportunity. That

pair of male and female servants were ordered to go investigate the seaside. Xiao Chen calmly followed them from a distance, only when they were far enough away from the green bamboo house did he accelerate and caught up to the two servants.

After entering the coconut grove at the beach, Xiao Chen finally made his move. Two sharp bamboo spears seemed like green lightnings as they were thrown towards the back of the servants. However, these two were obviously powerful experts. As soon as they heard the sound of the air shattering noise behind them, they dodged to the side. “Plop! Plop!” The two bamboo spears missed their targets and thrust into the sandy beach.

The real killing moves followed afterwards. Although the bamboo spears failed to hit their targets, Xiao Chen had already closed the distance and was about to execute his moves. Xiao Chen made a horizontal slash with his palm that was filled with glorious divine light, as he cut across the man’s chest. With his right leg, he kicked the side of the girl’s abdomen.

The two servants reacted promptly and lifted their palms to block the attack. Xiao Chen’s palm and leg impacted with their palms. The two seemed to have been struck by lightning, the girl fell back involuntarily. However, the man was not so lucky, his arm had been grabbed by Xiao Chen.

“Snap!”

A snapping sound resounded, Xiao Chen completely snapped off the arms of his opponent. Taking advantage of this opportunity, he struck the opponent’s chest with his fist and it caved in. After that, he whirled around as his leg swept towards the girl.

This series of actions could even be said to be carried out in a single breath, everything happened in the blink of an eye.

The agility of the girl was extraordinary, she reacted promptly and actually managed to dodge the leg that was swept towards her. She retreated backwards quickly while withdrawing a scroll and spread it open in the wind. The scroll spread open as she exerted her strength to toss it towards Xiao Chen.

Xiao Chen felt greatly alarmed, he had firmly embedded this object in his mind. Last time Wang Zi Feng used this kind of scroll, a powerful and extremely formidable energy fluctuation forced him to jump down from a hundred meters high cliff. When he saw this similar murderous tool again, he instinctively fell back at lightning speed.

However, the energy emitted by the scroll this time was far inferior than the one last time. Xiao Chen felt that he would be able to resist it. Of course he didn't actually do it, instead he fled to the woodland, leaving a few afterimages behind as he dodged the attack at high speed.

When the scroll exploded, a three meters long One-Horned Serpent appeared from within the dazzling radiance. It flew towards Xiao Chen's chest like a sharp spear, and there were many ice spheres following the left and right side of the vicious serpent.

Xiao Chen was somewhat amazed, he could feel that the One-Horned Serpent was an artifact purely made out of energy, and it contained a terrifying power. Moreover, those ice spheres were not illusions but the real thing. This made him somewhat puzzled, just how could a picture scroll contain so many killing tools, it was a strange phenomenon.

Xiao Chen's body emitted a faint radiance as he changed his position, leaving behind an afterimage in his original location. The One-Horned Serpent and those ice spheres hit the empty air in succession. In the end, all of them crashed on the ground. The approximately two meters long ice spheres all thrust into the ground, and that energy-converted One-Horned Serpent exploded, creating a two meters deep crater.

"Help....." The female servant shouted loudly. However, her cries for help was completely disregarded as it was engulfed by the sea waves.

Without saying anything, Xiao Chen pressed on towards her. The girl turned around to flee, but she was stopped by Xiao Chen and got pinned on the beach by a bamboo spear. The sandy shore was dyed red by the blood.

Even though it seemed somewhat cruel, that was the harsh reality. Only by killing would one be able to ensure their own safety. For the sake of survival, one must not hesitate to become a demon..... Without wasting any time, Xiao Chen rushed towards the green bamboo house.

The brown haired man was still in the bamboo house, and the three personnel were still concealed in the dark to protect him. Xiao Chen advanced stealthily while hiding his presence, he planned to finish off the three hidden personnel before he dealt with the brown haired youth.

Xiao Chen got behind a man soundlessly, however in that instance, it appeared as if the man was acting on instinct as he urgently let out an eccentric sound. After that, he drew the Blazing Sword with his right hand and slashed it backward in high-speed.

The scene was a bit bizarre, the longsword was completely made out of flame.

The blazing flame was piping hot, however it was unable to burn the palm that grasped the sword.

Evidently, these three concealed men were much stronger compared to the other servants. Otherwise, it was impossible for them to serve as the bodyguard of the brown-haired man. This man's Blazing Sword exchanged two blows with Xiao Chen, and he was obviously not at a disadvantage.

Xiao Chen sighed and retreated at lightning speed, even if he was able to kill the opponent, it was impossible to finish him off in a single strike. He didn't have enough time, the other two were already rushing over here. At the same time, the brown-haired man also opened the door and came out from the green bamboo house.

Xiao Chen didn't wish to go all out against his opponent, he could not afford to sustain another heavy injury now!

"Humph! I suppose you are the one called Xiao Chen? I didn't pursue you, but you came to me instead. Seriously, there is a path to heaven but you didn't go and throw yourself into hell instead! If the mountain forest wasn't so chaotic and dense, I would not need to wait until I have enough manpower to search for you, I would have killed you already at an earlier time!" The brown-haired man smiled coldly, he was very calm. He thought he already had Xiao Chen in the palm of his hand.

Xiao Chen did not say anything, he didn't have the slightest interest to find out who his opponent was. His plan to weaken his opponent had failed so he firmly retreated.

The three bodyguards were around thirty years old, their skills were indeed

outstanding. They tagged along and chased after Xiao Chen.

“Boom!”

A few powerful energy fluctuations suddenly spread within the woodland. Eight scrolls were tossed towards eight giant trees and unfolded as they hit the tree trunks. They spread out in eight different directions and surrounded the green bamboo house. Even though they had yet to activate at this point, it was sufficient to block the path Xiao Chen was taking.

“Even though I never thought you would come to counterattack, how could I let you leave my residence that easily. Humph!” The brown haired man had a malicious gaze and his expression was grim.

The eight scrolls were like eight dark doors leading to another world. The scrolls were enveloped by black clouds, it was impossible to see beyond them. Xiao Chen did not rashly break out of the enclosure, he knew just how frightening these scrolls were. He kicked a dried up branch on the ground and launched it towards one of the scrolls.

Apparently, the brown-haired man could control these scrolls, an eccentric sound came out from his mouth. At the same time, his hands moved according to some bizarre movements. That unfolded scroll actually rebounded the dried up branch rapidly and rushed towards Xiao Chen.

Chapter 20 – Negative Energy Pervaded

Xiao Chen retreated at lightning speed, he rushed straight towards the three bodyguards that were chasing him. He voluntarily jumped into the encirclement, however the brown-haired man only sneered coldly. He controlled the scroll and continued to assault Xiao Chen, he doesn't even care that his underlings were also within the range of attack.

Xiao Chen must break through the three bodyguard's encirclement no matter what. He raised his attack power to the limit, his body emitted a faint radiance simultaneously. After that he used an indescribable technique to move both hands, stirring up a violent energy fluctuation. After a loud shout, all the dried up branches and pebbles on the ground floated and rushed towards the scroll in the sky.

Naturally, it didn't only attack that scroll, the rest of the scrolls that had not moved yet were also within the range of attack. The brown-haired man's expression abruptly changed, he had no other choice but to activate the scroll that enveloped Xiao Chen. From the scroll emitted a burst of terrifying energy fluctuation.

A five meters long white tiger that was completely made up of energy soared into the sky, then it pounced at Xiao Chen who was on the ground. At the same time, a few dozen of energy swords launched out accordingly.

Sensing the terrifying energy fluctuation, Xiao Chen increased his speed to the limit, and narrowly dodged the dangerous attack. The earth trembled violently, on the ground appeared a terrifying hole that was as deep as four meters. Endless amount of smoke and dust pervaded the air.

Even though the three bodyguards were not hit, they were caught up in the aftermaths of the quake and fell within the cloud of dusts. Xiao Chen did not turn back and disappeared within the cloud of dusts, he quickly rushed out of the area sealed off by the scrolls.

Waiting until the smoke and dust totally dispersed, the brown-haired man's complexion turned pale, then he shouted loudly, "Chase! Put away the rest of the seven scrolls, lead another three bodyguards to chase after him."

Meanwhile, the unicorn that seemed as if it was sculpted out of a divine jade, treaded on the tip of the branches. It appeared from a distant location while carrying Zhao Lin Er as they rushed over there.

Xiao Chen could feel how dangerous his current situation was, the terrifying energy fluctuation bursting out of the scroll attracted his mortal enemy. He left behind afterimages in the jungle as he rushed towards the ancient forest rapidly.

When the unicorn caught sight of Xiao Chen's shadow, it turned around and carried Zhao Lin Er to the opposite direction as if it knew what was about to happen.

The brown-haired man was extremely surprised.

Zhao Lin Er was also shocked that the unicorn did not listen to her commands at all, carrying her randomly around the forest as if it didn't want her and Xiao Chen to encounter each other.

The Imperial Angel couldn't help it, but she had to find a way to jump off the

unicorn.

Zhao Lin Er saw her chance when Xiao Chen showed up himself, she didn't want to let this opportunity slide. She wanted to kill him herself but the brown-haired man's underlings would be there soon.

Awhile later, when Zhao Lin Er and the brown-haired man finally met up, Xiao Chen had already disappeared out of sight due to the delay and also because the forest was a little too dense.

At this moment, the brown haired man wiped off the malicious expression from earlier and confidently announced, "Your Highness, please do not be distressed, he only got away for the time being. By tomorrow, our reinforcements should arrive, even if there were dozens of gigantic apes protecting him, we would be able to completely destroy him with few men to spare!"

"Thank you so much for the help, Mr. Gu Lou!" said the beautiful Imperial Angel Zhao Lin Er with magnificent elegance.

After losing the enemies behind him, he bypassed the Tyrannical Dragon's territory and slowed down his pace in the mountains. He was able to escape successfully after he finished off his enemies cleanly. This should be counted as a successful counterattack.

With one additional strong enemy, it made Xiao Chen's situation a lot more dangerous, he needed to start considering how to deal with this.

During the evening, the brown-haired man, Gu Luo, stood in front of the old

bamboo house with a grim face, five of his underlings had been killed. He felt enraged and clenched his knuckles so hard that they turned white. Back then he wanted to kill Xiao Chen because of Zhao Lin Er, now he wanted to do it for himself, he couldn't let him live for any longer.

Zhao Lin Er was talking to the young unicorn beside the lake, but no matter how many times she asked it to search for Xiao Chen, it would shake its head vehemently and wouldn't give in.

Right now Xiao Chen was advancing into the depths of the island. He could no longer stay in the territory of the Tyrannical Dragon, because if he did, he would possibly be annihilated the next day.

But of course, before he left, he tore off some clothes to leave some clues behind as a diversion, intending to lead his pursuers to an extremely dangerous territory. If the forces that were chasing him happened to clash with some dangerous monsters, then his purpose would have been accomplished.

When the sun painted the sky red, the fiery red cloud also casted a shadowy orange hue to the mountains. Various howls of beasts could be heard from the distance and horrifying beasts were starting to lurk around the area.

“Rumble!”

A giant elephant, covered entirely in green scales, with fierce eyes, and two sharp tusks that looked like broadswords, chased after a herd of bison ox not far from where Xiao Chen stood, eliciting high decibel of rumbling noises. And not long from then, a desperate and painful yowl from an ox was heard.

As Xiao Chen glanced past the branches, he saw the giant green scaled elephant devouring a bison ox. The scene was so bloody that he sighed and thought of how this island inhabited too many terrifying creatures.

Cautiously avoiding all kinds of extremely rare and terrifying beasts that were unheard of, Xiao Chen advanced for eight to nine kilometers, he completely disappeared in a murky and damp swamp before the sunset.

The swamp was eerily silent and other than the tall trees, there were no beasts around, not even a bird. Even the pond and swamp were completely serene..... , it was as if there was nothing at all.

The roar of the beasts resounded again and again from far away, yet it was extremely silent around here, making the difference between the two even more surreal.

The air became more humid as he entered the swamp, and as a distinctive rotten smell from the mud invaded his nose, he frowned, how could he fail to detect the ominous feeling here? The negative energy felt extremely dense, providing the place an eerie atmosphere.

After having travelled about a mile, except for trees, no living things had been spotted. However quite a lot of bones were scattered around in mud and water puddles, some of them half submerged and others laid on the surface, making the dusky swamp somewhat terrifying.

There are many varieties of bones from mighty beasts, ranging from a couple meters up to ten meters in length, but what surprised Xiao Chen the most was that he also saw numerous human bones! From the colours and looks of those human bones, they were most probably from hundreds of years ago.

As the last touch of sunset finally disappeared, the place completely darkened, the swamp turned even more gloomy than it used to be. The gigantic trees around started to look like tombstones in the deadly silent swamp.

“Snap!”

A bone shattering noise fractured the silence, making this deadly swamp even more terrifying! Xiao Chen turned back around but did not find anything, maybe some dried bones just disintegrated by coincidence.....

Chapter 21 – Skeleton with Wisdom

The moon rose to the sky as night approached, the moonlight was so very pale in this deathly quiet region, it was especially frightening. Meanwhile, without the slightest delay, Xiao Chen quickly dashed out of the swamp as soon as he detected signs of danger.

Faint black fog emerged from the mud and puddle, as they started to linger in this swamp forest. Xiao Chen was startled, he already guessed that this was a miasma. Not only that, it might even be the most malicious ones in the legend, the undead miasma.

Standing outside of this deathly region, and looking at the situation inside the miasma, Xiao Chen started to ponder, wondering if he could take advantage of this area? If he could attract Zhao Lin Er and that brown-haired man there.....

“Snap!”

He heard the noise generated by the movement of the bones again!

“Snap! Snap!”

A white figure was swaying in the dusky swamp forest, a human-shaped skeleton actually stood up!

Xiao Chen was extremely shocked, he stood at the borderline zone and properly concealed himself. He observed the moving skeleton from there.

The initial movement of the skeleton was mechanical and stiff, however after it adjusted its crooked body with a few cracking sound, the movement of the skeleton became much more agile. It was walking around back and forth in the swamp, it seemed to be looking for something.

Xiao Chen held his breath and didn't utter a single sound, he continued to observe quietly.

The snow-white human-shaped skeleton appeared eerie and frightening under the deathly pale moonlight, especially when it could move around freely, making it appear even more frightening! When it turned around and faced Xiao Chen's direction, Xiao Chen saw a dim light flickering from its hollow eye socket. It was extremely bizarre and scary.

“Snap! Snap!”

The cracking sound of the bones could be heard from two other direction, two more human-shaped skeleton stood up within the forest. They walked past the muddy puddle, and joined up with the other skeleton. They also had faint flickering lights on their skull, it seemed they could communicate with each other. Every time they faced each other, the faint light in their eye sockets would flicker constantly.

Xiao Chen couldn't understand anything, were they ghost? He don't think so!

One hour after that, no other similar skeletons showed up.

The entire time, Xiao Chen had concealed himself and watched from the sidelines. He discovered the three skeletons flipping over the skeletal remains in

the swamp unceasingly, as if they were looking for something. One could tell how much power they possessed by seeing them easily flip over gigantic skeletal remains that weighed over five hundred kilograms! Only until one of the skeletons scooped out a bright crystal stone from the pile of bones did Xiao Chen realize what they were doing.

That skeleton who was holding the crystal seemed very excited, it moved its chin up and down, generating a clacking sound to attract the other two skeletons. It was eerie, but also slightly comical.

When the three skeletons gathered in one place under the deathly pale moonlight, they seemed very awe-inspiring and terrifying.

“Clank!”

That light blue crystal was split open by the skeleton, and divided into three pieces about the same size. Each skeleton took one piece and stuff it into their own eye sockets. Bright rays of light emitted from their eye sockets, the light blue radiance flowed like a river stream from their head all the way down to their body.

The snow-white skeletons were flickering with a faint blue radiance, the gentle rays of light quickly enveloped the three skeletons. After a long time later, the blue radiance finally diminished gradually. The white skeletons seemed more sparkly than before.

Xiao Chen was very shocked, the skeletons were actually capable of absorbing the energy within the crystal stone, was that some kind of weird evolution? He simply doesn't know how they were born in the first place.

Under the deathly pale moonlight, the undead miasma drifted in the swamp, three skeletons were walking around freely, the entire scene was really bizarre!

Suddenly, the skeleton that walked at the edge of the swamp seemed to have found something, it doubtfully walked towards Xiao Chen's hiding place. Xiao Chen started to feel anxious, however he didn't withdraw immediately. Rather, he turned around the giant tree to face the human skeleton.

The human skeleton was at a loss, it turned around to look at its two companion at the back, then turned back to look at Xiao Chen. The weak light in its eye sockets was flashing and flickering indefinitely, it seemed to be thinking of something. The other two human skeleton also walked over there, they were also as baffled as they looked at Xiao Chen. They seemed to be thinking the guy brimming with life energy in front of them was very "weird".

Xiao Chen wanted to observe them in a close range, he wanted to see if there were anything special about them. However, other than the mysterious energy in their skull that provided the energy to move their entire body, he couldn't find anything unusual about them.

All of a sudden, he had an excellent idea, taking out a brown crystal stone he retrieved from the corpse of a beast, he held it in the palm of his hand. The three human skeletons' eye sockets suddenly emitted flickering lights indefinitely. At the same time, they extended their bony claws toward the crystal stone.

Xiao Chen stepped backwards once, the three human skeletons followed closely and got out of the swamp.

Xiao Chen didn't detect any killing intent from them, so he hand the crystal over to them. They easily split the brown crystal into three pieces. After that,

they threw the tiny pieces of brown crystal into their eye sockets. Brown radiance flickered, the radiance spread from their skull towards their lower body.

A clattering noise resounded from their joints. Watching closely, the radiance was circulating around the skeleton, the three human skeleton was as bright as a jade. This kind of strange scenario finally receded after the energy from the crystal was thoroughly absorbed. However, their bones seemed much more glossy than before!

One of the human skeleton stretched out its bony claw to strike the giant tree beside it. With a “Plop!” sound, the snow-white bony claw penetrated deeply into the tree trunk, half of its bony arm had penetrated the tree trunk.

An ordinary strike already possessed this much power, one could tell just how formidable these human skeletons were! Xiao Chen was extremely startled, the power of these human skeletons exceeded his imagination by a huge margin!

The radiance in the eyes of the three human skeletons flashed, they stood in front of Xiao Chen and quietly observing him. Until a long time later, they moved their chin repeatedly to generate a clacking sound. It seemed like they wanted to say something. After that, they walked back to the depths of the swamp simultaneously, slowly disappearing in the forest permeated by thick layer of negative energy.

A formidable and knowledgeable human skeleton!

All of these made Xiao Chen felt somewhat inconceivable, he explored this deathly swamp by going around it. After walking for half an hour, he discovered that place was at least a few dozen square kilometer. The inside was filled with layer upon layer of undead miasma, and dense negative energy, it seemed very

mysterious yet frightening.

During the midnight, the undead miasma in the swamp was the strongest, the heavy black fog actually blocked the deathly pale moonlight.

Only until the latter half of the night did the undead miasma gradually decline, becoming thinner and thinner.

Around this time, Xiao Chen suddenly heard a commotion in the surrounding of this deathly swamp. Apparently..... someone was fighting in this swamp! He bypassed the swamp and ran towards where the sound transmitted from. A short while later, he saw a really startling scene!

Chapter 22 – Undead

Three animated human skeletons and five zombies were having a fierce fight in the forest. The three skeletons' movement was extremely fast, it was as if they moved with the speed of light. They circled around the five zombies, all that could be seen were the afterimages they left behind. The white bony claws struck against their bodies from time to time, generating banging noises.

Xiao Chen was completely shocked, the scene in front of him was simply unfathomable!

Although the zombies were not as agile as the skeletons, their physical resistance was much stronger. The bony claws of the three skeletons could penetrate huge tree trunks, however they could barely inflict any damage to the zombies. Only when the attacks were aimed at their eyes, would the five zombies dodge in terror.

In this terrifying swamp, the showdown between the undead goes on.....

After watching for roughly fifteen minutes, Xiao Chen realized that the three skeletons were gradually becoming disadvantaged. If it was one on one, the skeletons were stronger than the zombies, however due to their numbers, it was obvious that the three skeletons were no match against the five zombies.

As dawn approached, the undead miasma in the swamp slowly thinned out, it seemed as if it would completely fade away soon.

Xiao Chen thought for a moment before he held his breath and entered the swamp. After that, he charged towards one of the zombies like a streak of

lightning. His palms emitted faint radiance as bright as a sparkling and translucent jade. He pressed his palms forward with all his might.

“Bang!”

One of the zombies got knocked back a few steps, however it was not defeated. Xiao Chen felt as if he had struck against a divine armor, both of his palms ached dully, and yet the zombie did not suffer the slightest injury, it was indeed a powerful undead!

After getting closer, Xiao Chen was finally able to see the appearance of the zombies clearly. The five zombies were all very tall, they had sinister facial features. All of them had yellow hair and green eyes, their clothing had rotted a long time ago, giving them a frightening look.

The zombie that was attacked waved its rotten arm mechanically, then it pounced on Xiao Chen. Although its movements were rather stiff, its speed wasn't slow. Xiao Chen aimed for the zombie's eyes with speed as fast as fiery light, making the undead defend in terror.

Due to Xiao Chen's participation, the pressure on the skeletons decreased greatly, they quickly gained the upper hand. The human skeleton's physical resistances were equally strong, their bones were as tough as steel. They were not any bit inferior to the zombies, in addition to their speed, their advantage couldn't be more obvious.

The longer Xiao Chen fought, the more anxious he became. If his skill hadn't already advanced to the next level, he would undoubtedly be killed if he ran into these kinds of undead. Although he was wounded and could not display his peak strength, he was really shocked that the fight had not been concluded yet, even

after a quarter of an hour had passed.

Finally, only after he struck the same spot on the zombie's chest for the eighteenth time did the tall majestic undead fell into the swamp like a jade pillar¹, its entire body disintegrated after that.

When Xiao Chen once again grabbed the attention of another zombie, the three skeletons had already gained an overwhelming advantage. They displayed a strength that frightened even Xiao Chen, the three skeletons left behind white lights and afterimage in their trail. The six bony claws continuously hacked at the zombie's chest and eyes, they were simply too fast. Their attacks emitted waves of horrifying air shattering noises!

"Pop!" One bony claw penetrated through a zombie's chest.

"Snap!" Another bony claw snapped another zombie's neck.

.....

As a result of Xiao Chen joining the brawl, the five zombies suffered a crushing defeat. After half an hour, the fight finally came to a close. Xiao Chen took care of two zombies, and the three skeletons tore apart the other three. The scene was a bit cold-blooded and frightening, however this was simply the survival of the fittest.

The dawn was quickly approaching, the undead miasma almost completely faded away.

The three skeletons stood in front of Xiao Chen, their jaws made clacking

noises as they opened and closed it a few times. After that, they walked up to the five zombies in silence, they actually pulled out five crystals that shone with indistinct light from within the disintegrated corpses!

The five crystals were all gloomy green-colored, waves of cold aura were emitted. The eerie green radiance was somewhat frightening, especially when it was setting off from the hands of those snow white bony claws, it was even colder and more horrifying. However, the energy fluctuation that leaked out was extremely intense, they were more powerful than the dozen or so crystals that Xiao Chen had previously obtained.

Xiao Chen looked at them calmly, he never thought they would hand two of the eerie green crystals to him, and actually motioned for him to accept them! Such interesting group of skeletons! However, he waved his hands and refused their good intentions.

The radiance in their eye sockets flashed, the skeletons silently observed Xiao Chen briefly before they reclaimed the two crystals. After that, they evenly distributed the five crystals into three portions. They stuffed each portion into their eye sockets respectively as they began to assimilate the pure energy.

The gloomy green-colored radiance resembled a thick bright fog as it enveloped the body of the three skeletons. Their joints produced cracking noises, the radiance constantly circulated around, as if it was strengthening their bones.

After the green radiance faded away, the bones of the three skeletons obviously became much more glossy, they were even emitting a faint luster!

At this time, it was already at the crack of dawn, the color of the sky gradually became brighter. Xiao Chen wanted to find out just what kind of secret was

hidden in this mysterious swamp, he walked into the depths of the woodland.

At the beginning, the three skeletons followed behind Xiao Chen silently, however they suddenly grabbed his arm when he got close to the central region of the swamp. Xiao Chen was startled by the ice-cold bony claws.

The three skeletons didn't display any signs of hostility, but they seemed somewhat anxious. Pointing at the region in front of them that was filled with extremely thick negative energy, they exerted their strength to wave their bony claws, indicating that he shouldn't continue to go forward.

Xiao Chen could feel their horror-stricken state, it seemed that the King of Undead was ahead of them!

He did not persist and decided to turn back, however he did not leave the swamp. The sky started to brighten up, another day had arrived and he thought that this place was a pretty good defensive shelter. He decided to stay in this isolated place for the time being.

Xiao Chen believed that the 'clues' he had left could delay his pursuers by at least half a day, many of them might turn into the monster's food. If his pursuers were quick enough, maybe they would be able to get to the swamp before sundown. When the time came, this location could be used to his advantage.

Early in the morning, the waves rolled gently in the sea, the surface of the water reflected the golden sun ray.

The Eight-Clawed Tyrant Dragon weaved around in the ocean, its humongous body brought life to giant waves. Gu Luo furrowed his brows as he looked at the

terrifying ancient dragon. The ship sailed southwards from the north, thus it will show up in this region soon. If they landed on this part of the beach, they might be annihilated by the beast!

Although they had erected a giant bamboo pole on top of a tall coconut tree, with a huge blood-soaked beast pelt hanging on top of the pole, they were uncertain whether the crew would notice this eye-catching flag before it is too late.

When the sun rose high up in the sky, the Eight-Clawed Tyrant Dragon had already swum far away from the area, as if it had somehow disappeared into the ocean. Meanwhile, two ships were sailing straight towards the island.

References

1. It describe how a person was very noble but still get down on his knees.

Chapter 23 – Three Emperor of the Moon Palace

Gu Luo was feeling elated, the flag on top of the two ships belonged to their clan, they avoided the vicious beast just in time. However, his jubilation didn't last for long. A tremendous roar was transmitted from the depths of the ocean, causing the seawater to rumble. The ocean was cleaved in half as the colossal monster approached the ships!

The crews discovered the crisis and accelerated their ships, approaching the shore at high-speed. However, even though the ancient beast was far away, its speed was really too fast! It was already in front of them when their ships were still hundreds of meters away from the shore.

“BOOM!”

The enormous body collided with two big ships in a split second, the sharp horn, the sinister giant head, the sword-like teeth, and its body which was flickering with silvery light, it looked like a leviathan as it destroyed the ships.

Everyone was scared shitless!

Gu Luo's complexion paled to the extreme.

The Eight-Clawed Tyrant Dragon summoned a tsunami, two ships were destroyed in the blink of an eye, hundreds of crew perished in this vast body of water. The warriors sent by Gu Luo Clan to investigate the island was on the verge of destruction.

However, the ancient dragon didn't even bother take a second glance at the ant-like tiny life form. It doesn't even care about the crew after destroying the ships, it merely summoned huge waves unceasingly.

A lot of crews were sucked into the giant whirlpool and drowned in the seabed eternally. However, there were still around forty to fifty crews who successfully escaped to the seaside. It could even be said they gained a second life after the calamity.

In the end, only forty three people made it to the shore, the rest of them were completely annihilated, it was a tragic disaster. The survivors could be regarded as the strongest amongst them. Originally, Gu Luo was in despair, but he felt slightly relieved after seeing less than half of the survivors.

After taking enough time to rest and reorganize the crew, Gu Luo and Zhao Lin Er started to go after Xiao Chen.

Initially, it was as Xiao Chen had predicted, they tracked down the 'clues' he left behind on purpose.

Just when these people entered a damp and gloomy rocky hill, a three to four meter long silver centipede with body as thick as a bowl, lunged at them with lightning speed. It tore apart two of the frontmost warriors in a flash. Furthermore, three other warriors were corroded by the toxic and turned into bones!

The swords only generated countless sparks when they made contact with the silver centipede, it wasn't able to harm the giant centipede at all. Even when Gu Luo used the "Divine Sword Attack Scroll", the centipede did not receive any damage. Finally, only after a terrifying scroll with raging flames was unfolded did

the silver centipede flinched. It was able to escape from the numerous talented figures.

Zhao Lin Er and Gu Luo finally noticed that they were tricked by Xiao Chen, they started to calculate the precise location where Xiao Chen might have escaped.

The sun was scorching hot, but the murderous aura in the primitive forest makes one tremble in fear!

The deathly swamp was still as gloomy as before, the giant trees blocked the sunlight, and dense negative energies lingered on. Xiao Chen was sleeping on top of an ancient tree, he was severely frightened by the three human skeletons the moment he woke up. They were hanging upside down like a bat right in front of him!

How would someone who were just fast asleep react when the first thing they saw after opening their eyes were three skeletons hanging upside down?

Fortunately, he became clear-headed soon and didn't take any drastic action.

The sole of the skeletons' foot were stuck deeply in the tree trunk. When they noticed that Xiao Chen was awake, the radiance in their eye sockets started to flash. It seemed like they were also resting earlier.

"Snap! Snap!" The snapping sounds were generated by the joints. The three human skeletons fell on the tree trunk as they moved every parts of their joints unceasingly.

Xiao Chen felt somewhat speechless, his own kind in the distant place wanted to kill him, however the three human skeletons nearby wanted to get along with him instead..... that was indeed somewhat ridiculous!

He wanted to give these three human skeletons a name, that was when he suddenly thought of the Ten Emperor of Hades.

“You are called Qinguang Wang!”

“You are called Yanluo Wang!”

“You are called Lunhui Wang!”

Qinguang Wang, Yanluo Wang, Linhui Wang, these three names were among the Ten Emperor of Hades. Somehow, they ended up becoming the name of three human skeletons. Xiao Chen gave them those names intentionally, perhaps he was expecting something to happen.

It was right in the noon, the sun was scorching hot. Xiao Chen walked away from the swamp, but the three human skeletons were reluctant to leave the deathly swamp with extremely thick negative

energy. However, when they were hinted by Xiao Chen, they still came out of the swamp.

The blazing sunlight was covered up by tall trees, only in areas where the trees were thinly spread would there be sunlight. The three human skeletons extremely loathe the sunlight, they always walked in the shadows, this seemed to be their natural instinct.

It seemed like they rarely left the swamp, they were very curious regarding everything outside. When Xiao Chen charged towards a five meter long panther, the three skeletons also charged at it without any hesitation. Six powerful bony claws penetrated the panther's head fiercely, killing it on the spot!

Their fighting strength were indeed very formidable, even Xiao Chen was afraid of them!

“Ding!”

Xiao Chen dug out a translucent yellow crystal from the carcass of the panther, it emitted a clear sound when Xiao Chen used his finger to flick it. The eye sockets of the three skeletons immediately flashed, Xiao Chen chuckled and hand the crystal over to them.

Qinguang Wang, Yanluo Wang, and Lunhui Wang finally became interested in the outside world for the very first time. Naturally, they were enticed by the origin of the crystal core! Under the guidance of Xiao Chen, they left the jungle that was surrounding the deathly swamp and continued to pursue tracks of wild beasts they could handle.

However, it wasn't that easy to obtain a crystal, they were only able to collect up to four or five after half a day had passed. Xiao Chen thoroughly surveyed the surroundings, he intended to use the geographical advantages to handle the his enemies.

After they returned to the swamp, Xiao Chen meditated quietly, and the three skeletons were busy absorbing the energy contained in the crystal.

Before the sun sets in the West, Zhao Lin Er and Gu Luo finally found this place. It was much faster than Xiao Chen had expected!

The brown-haired man, Gu Luo, had a very sinister gaze. When they were fending off the silver centipede, they already lost five experts. Even though they had seen through Xiao Chen's scheme, they still attracted some savage beasts and lose another eight warriors on their way due to their sheer numbers. Now, including him and Zhao Lin Er, there were only thirty two people remaining.

Xiao Chen opened his eyes in the swamp as he felt the murderous aura, someone was approaching this area!

Seeing Xiao Chen preparing to enter combat, the three skeletons encircled him. Their intuition was also very sharp, they already realized there was a crowd of people approaching them.

Xiao Chen didn't want to face the opponent directly. After all, he was still not fully recovered. He must delay it until the sunset, when the undead miasma filled the entire area, it will bring about a devastating blow to the opponent. He instructed the three skeletons to hide themselves.

The action of the three skeletons was out of Xiao Chen's expectation. Qinguang Wang, Yanluo Wang, and Lunhui Wang conveniently lie on the swamp with their backs, skeletal remains were scattered all around them.

Xiao Chen was momentarily lost in thought, these three skeletons were much clever than he imagined. So much so that he could even feel something sinister from them.

Chapter 24 – Super Effective

The action of the three skeletons was out of Xiao Chen's expectation. Qinguang Wang, Yanluo Wang, and Lunhui Wang conveniently lie on the swamp with their backs, skeletal remains were scattered all around them. Xiao Chen was momentarily lost in thought, these three skeletons were much clever than he imagined. So much so that he could even feel something sinister from them.

Outside of the swamp, Zhao Lin Er's snowy skin, elegant body, and peerless beauty was especially outstanding. It could even be said her flesh was made out of ice and her bones were made out of jade, she was as pure as the snow that piled up on top of the flowers and trees. The title of the prettiest girl in the world was befitting of her, all the more in this dense jungle. ¹

Gu Luo waved his hand without making a sound, the dozen of people behind him quickly spread out and entered the swamp while concealing themselves. He and Zhao Lin Er followed closely behind.

The dense negative energy in the swamp make these people felt fearful. The dense aura pervaded in the forest make them realize the swamp was dangerous!

White skeletal remains could be seen everywhere, this was the genuine land of the death!

Thirty experts had already spread out in the depths of the swamp, the corner of Gu Luo's mouth curved up as they found all kinds of sign that showed Xiao Chen was in this swamp. Today is the day he die.

The setting sun dyed the sky bloody red, Gu Luo could feel something was

wrong, but he was unable to pinpoint the roots for his unease.

All of a sudden, his vision was filled with white light!

The human skeleton under his foot jumped high into the sky and penetrated his chest with its eerie bony claw!

This change of event was out of their expectation!

It was impossible to defend effectively against an enemy without live energy that was lying underneath him!

Gu Luo brandished his fists all of a sudden to block the bony claws, when he wanted to change his footing and get into battle formation, he was shocked to find that his legs were firmly locked by another human skeleton!

He frantically repelled the human skeleton in front of him, however he felt pain from his back. A bony white claw had penetrated deeply into his flesh!

There was one more skeleton behind him!

“Ah.....”

From the sudden ambush of Qinguang Wang, Yanluo Wang, and Lunhui Wang, until the Gu Luo screamed miserably. Though it took a while to describe, it happened in the blink of an eye.

The face of the charming Imperial Angel Zhao Lin Er turned pale when she saw the scene before her. She had never seen a skeleton killed a person before, however she was not an ordinary person after all, she grasped her longsword immediately and closed in at high speed.

“Undead creature!”

“It’s an undead creature who gained eternal life through unconventional means!”

The crowds in the distant place shouted loudly.

“Go protect the Master, quickly!”

.....

The swamp fell into utter chaos, all the experts that were scattered all over the place rushed towards that location at lightning speed.

Qinguang Wang, Yanluo Wang, and Lunhui Wang were aware of the dangers approaching. They retreated immediately without any reluctance, however they didn’t forget to ruthlessly attack Gu Luo with their claws before leaving. There were four bloody holes on Gu Luo’s chest, the blood gushed out unceasingly, filling the air with stinging smell of blood.

Zhao Lin Er supported Gu Luo who was about to fall into the pool of blood. Seven to Eight experts encircled them in a flash, the rest went after the three skeletons while bellowing in rage.

Xiao Chen who was lying low on top of a giant tree was extremely shocked!

According to Xiao Chen's perspective, the brown-haired man was a very formidable opponent! However, the three skeletons gave him an unexpected surprise! The three emperors actually launched a successful sneak attack against the brown-haired man, this huge bounty was indeed beyond his imagination!

Without wasting any time, Xiao Chen jumped down the huge tree, he exerted strength into his legs and trampled on the two people below. With a snapping sound, the sternum of the two caved in, blood gushed out of their mouths as their dead bodies fell to the ground.

Xiao Chen left a few afterimages in the swamp and quickly appeared in the midst of the panic-stricken crowds, then he started the massacre mercilessly!

The three skeletons also revealed their true strength around this time! Qinguang Wang, Yanluo Wang, and Lunhui Wang were so fast that only streak of lights could be seen as they travel back and forth. There were already three or four people who had their chests penetrated by them, every single strike of the bony white claws were intended to eliminate their enemies!

After these group of people gathered themselves from the confusion, they began to counterattack with an organized system.

"Sacred Flame, incinerate all that are unholy!"

One brown-haired practitioner chanted quickly. After that, he spread out the scroll in his hand as he tossed it over to where Xiao Chen and the three skeletons

were. Endless flames appeared in the sky as it burned the very air itself, turning it crimson red. It was as if an omnipotent meteor was plunging towards Xiao Chen and the three skeletons.

Xiao Chen continuously changed his position, and dodged that terrifying flame by a hair's breadth. The giant tree beside him was ignited and turned into ashes in a split second!

What a terrifying Sacred Flame! It seemed as if it could truly incinerate everything.

The three skeletons ran away in a sorry state, they extremely detest this kind of flame. Their speed were raised to the limit, leaving only a few streaks of light in the swamp. But they were still caught up by the flames in a flash.

Xiao Chen was in dismay!

However, the performance of the three emperor exceeded his expectation again. Although their bones were somewhat black, they didn't get incinerated! They rushed out of the flames in good condition. If one observed closely, one could see a layer of faint light retreating back to their skulls. Just now they were protected by a pure energy.

Xiao Chen quickly joined up with the three skeletons, and started to confront Zhao Lin Er's party. Just now they took advantage of the confusion to kill eight people from her party, it could be considered a favorable result.

The battlefield calmed down for a brief moment, both sides did not rashly took the initiative to attack.

The peerless Imperial Angel emitted an inexhaustible amount of murderous aura. She couldn't suppress her rage anymore after they encountered an ambush in a favorable situation, and suffered a disastrous loss. The appearance of the three skeletons were out of her expectation, causing her to think twice before she act.

Xiao Chen and the three skeletons also didn't move around randomly. After all, there were numerous people on the opponent's side, and they had control over the scrolls, it makes them somewhat hesitant.

At this time, an agonizing groan broke the silence.

Gu Luo who had his chest penetrated four times actually regained consciousness miraculously. However, blood started to gush out from the terrifying wounds again, the servants anxiously tighten the bandages once more.

Gu Luo stopped them as he leaned against the bosom of one female servant². He took a scroll out from his long sleeve, and chanted with slight difficulty, "The radiance of life, envelop my body!"

The scroll unfolded in that instant and emitted a dazzling radiance. The essence of life spread out in a split second, an endless amount of holy radiance enveloped Gu Luo.

Everyone on Gu Luo's side started to cheer, every one of them were very excited, because they knew they didn't have to worry about Gu Luo's life anymore.

During the time when they were in a state of excitement, Xiao Chen took the three skeletons along and started to attack. The moment a powerful life energy appeared, Xiao Chen surmised that Gu Luo was trying to heal himself. He absolutely couldn't let the opponent had this chance!

Qinguang Wang, Yanluo Wang, and Lunhui Wang were indeed very powerful, they were able to distract Zhao Lin Er momentarily by working together, giving Xiao Chen the golden opportunity. He enveloped his body with a hazy radiance and rushed into the crowds, sparing no efforts to kill Gu Luo who was recovering.

The experts in the vicinity put their lives on the line to ward off Xiao Chen's surprise attack, the brief moment of confrontation was cruel and cold-blooded!

Xiao Chen's palm was flickering with a divine light as it shattered seven or eight longsword. Furthermore, as the light spirit blade sliced a few people's flank, blood gushed out unceasingly! In the course of events, something bizarre happened, under the influence of the dazzling radiance of life, all the experts that were heavily injured by Xiao Chen healed immediately. They didn't have to worry about their life.

At the same time, Xiao Chen's wound was also healed at lightning speed under the influence of the divine radiance!

Translatoer Gossip :

References :

ED: Damn Chen Dong. Nonsense,wasting words.

TL: I know right..... he always took whatever chance he could to randomly praise Zhao Lin Er's beauty...

ED: How do you know its a female? Lol

TL: hohohohohohoho.... because Gu Luo is a man xD

But nay, seriously, I just added female because it seemed more appropriate
wink wink

Chapter 25 – Stalks of Bloody Flowers

Not long ago, he was heavily injured by Wang Zi Feng before he died. The heavy wounds caused him some complications, he never thought that the dazzling radiance of life would turn the situation around in just a split second!

Even though his wound was nearly healed, the opponent still had numerous people, Xiao Chen was stopped a few meters away from Gu Luo. Without any hesitation, he used the longsword he had seized to slash the scroll that was emitting glorious divine light. The blazing hot sword aura crushed the scroll in that instant, the radiance of light became dimmer and eventually fade away. At the same time, he threw the longsword, going straight for Gu Luo's heart!

Gu Luo finally made his moves at this time, he waved both of his hands to create a light screen that shattered the longsword. He separated from the servant's bosom and got up on his feet. Xiao Chen retreated at flying speed, as he got out of the encirclement, the three skeletons followed after him. Both parties stopped fighting and waited for another chance to strike back!

The first confrontation in the swamp could be considered a complete victory for Xiao Chen and the three skeletons! Not only was Gu Luo heavily injured, he also loss eight experts. The most important point was that Xiao Chen was completely healed by the radiance of life.

Gu Luo's complexion turned extremely pale, he stared at Xiao Chen intently with his malicious gaze. His gaze was as ice-cold as a poisonous snake. His heart was filled with resentment, he was very humiliated and angry that he nearly lost his life just then.

It couldn't be helped, that radiance of life was equivalent to divine light. The

four bloody cavity on Gu Luo's chest should have killed him, however under the embrace of the holy radiance, the four terrifying wounds were actually healed! Even though the excessive blood loss made him somewhat weak, his body was in peak condition.

"Mister Gu Luo, are you fine now?" Imperial Angel Zhao Lin Er asked.

"It shouldn't be a big problem."

The twenty plus experts stood beside Gu Luo to protect him, for they feared some accident to occur again.

"Go!" Gu Luo waved his hand without wasting his breath on any superfluous words, they could only rely on their military power now to decide their life or death.

A few people stayed at Gu Luo's side, the rest of them rushed forward quickly. Xiao Chen and the three skeletons faced their enemies head-on, a desperate fight was about to begin.

Gu Luo commanded the people beside him to go on the offensive, he also wanted to rush towards Xiao Chen to wipe off his disgrace! Zhao Lin Er followed soon after, Xiao Chen was originally her goal after all.

Xiao Chen and the three skeletons were surrounded, Qinguang Wang, Yanluo Wang, and Lunhui Wang attempted to stall Gu Luo, giving Xiao Chen to opportunity to exterminate those experts. The battlefield reeks of blood, the scene was very hideous, it is pointless to say anything now, only strength could determine the outcome!

Xiao Chen who was no longer hindered by the condition of his injuries fought without any qualms. With his secret technique at its pinnacle, he slaughtered them all mercilessly. Diminishing the raw power of the opponent was the most important task at the moment.

Although Zhao Lin Er's ability was not any inferior to his, Xiao Chen intentionally avoided her. He travelled back and forth from one experts to another, killing them without the slightest hesitation. His palm was emitting a bewitching radiance like a magic sword. By waving his palm vertically from top to bottom, he actually cleaved a man into two halves. The red blood, the white brain matter, and even the bright-colored liver overflowed on the ground, it was incomparably gruesome and nasty!

In this moment of life and death, one cannot show any kind of weakness, if the opponent didn't die then he will be doomed!

“Pop!”

Xiao Chen jumped and soared into the sky, he was surprised when one of his foot actually penetrated one of the man. His foot pierced through the man's chest easily, then he swept his leg around with the corpse still attached. Not only did the corpse burst open, he even forced Zhao Lin Er to retreat.

This was a genuine life and death struggle, Xiao Chen was covered in blood from head to toe. After killing a few opponents, he didn't relax his guard, because the strength of the other party was essentially more powerful than him and the three skeletons combined.

Gu Luo's gaze was as cold and gloomy as a poisonous snake, however as he

was temporarily stalled by the three skeletons, he couldn't get away to deal with Xiao Chen for the time being. In regards to these three undead creature, he held a bit of resentment towards them. If it wasn't because of their sneak attack, how would he nearly lose his life? He wasted one of the most precious Life Scroll for no apparent reason.

“Deep Blue Glacier, bestow me the power to seal the darkness!” Gu Luo suddenly shouted loudly, a scroll was unfolded in high-speed, releasing a water-blue light screen. After that, an intense energy fluctuation burst out from the light screen, a blue-colored giant bird threw itself towards the three skeletons. At the same time, endless amount of blue radiance also pounced on the skeletons, drowning them in the process.

The energy-converted giant blue bird could stretch up to five meter long, but it was still smashed to pieces by the three skeleton's formidable strength. However, after the endless blue radiance landed a hit on them, three ice sculptures appeared in the battlefield right away. Qinguang Wang, Yanluo Wang, and Lunhui Wang were frozen just like that!

Gu Luo sneered coldly, then he turned around and charge towards Xiao Chen without even looking back. He spread out another scroll quickly, the swamp was illuminated by the yellow radiance. A huge yellow lizard that was about eight meter long pounced at Xiao Chen violently, generating an energy storm at the same time.

Xiao Chen felt the situation was very disadvantageous, he killed one of the experts blocking his path and kept changing his position in the forest. However, the huge lizard seemed to possess intelligence, it kept going after Xiao Chen with the endless yellow radiance following closely.

The energy-converted lizard bumped into four or five giant trees, crushing

them in the process. The wood shavings filled the sky, broken branches and withered leaves flew everywhere, nothing could stop the yellow radiance!

It lasted until the tenth giant tree was destroyed, the energy-converted huge lizard finally got in front of Xiao Chen, blocking his path. He knew it was impossible to escape from it anymore, so he jumped high into the sky, he constructed a mysterious magic circle with both hands. The magic circle emitted shiny radiance similar to stars as they fell towards the huge yellow lizard.

A rumbling noise could be heard in the sky, as if the energy-converted huge lizard was made out of glass, huge cracks appeared all over its body. After that, the body of the lizard burst open and dissipated while it was still in the sky!

However, the yellow radiances were still the same as before as they surrounded Xiao Chen. Something astonishing happened around this time, the yellow radiance actually started to turn into rocks, turning Xiao Chen into a stone statue!

The Imperial Angel Zhao Lin Er was an outstanding beauty with peerless talent, after going through a big war like this, she seemed more valiant than ever, which increased her charm even more.

“As expected of Mister Gu Luo, you have many tricks up your sleeves. Such a splendid attack, it really makes one exclaim in admiration. Many thanks to Mister Gu Luo’s commitment!”

“Your Highness is too modest, I feel very honored to serve Your Highness.”

“Mister Gu Luo, it makes me feel very uneasy if you say it like that. In order to

handle Xiao Chen, you got yourself into a dangerous situation and lose a lot of your experts. I feel very sad and restless.”

After eliminating the powerful enemies, Gu Luo appeared much more humble and sincere. Then he said in a somewhat sorrowful voice, “You do not need to worry about me. But what happened to the deceased is truly unfortunate, they were like my brothers…….”

These words gave people some favorable impression of him, the surrounding experts felt a warm feeling in their hearts. As the successor of the clan, Gu Luo was well-versed in this kind of method.

“Crack!”

A cracking noise resounded, a huge crack appeared on Xiao Chen’s stone statue. After that, the stone statue burst into pieces with an explosive sound!

Chapter 26 – King of Undead

Xiao Chen was enveloped by a bright radiance from head to toe, as if he was donning a layer of divine armor. He actually came out unscathed! The Qi-Training Diagram on the Ancient Stone Tablet was indeed very mysterious, he didn't completely petrify due to the protection of the Mysterious Technique.

It was impossible to continue fighting under this kind of circumstances. His body was enveloped by a dim light as he soared into the sky like a bird. He landed on top of an ancient giant tree.

Zhao Lin Er and Gu Luo's reacting speed were fast, they charged towards Xiao Chen in that instant. The experts in the surrounding chased after them in a flock, they wanted to work together and kill the tenacious Xiao Chen.

Gu Luo and Zhao Lin Er fought with Xiao Chen while in mid-air, dazzling radiance exploded in the sky constantly as they exchanged one blow after another. The forest trees in the vicinity were severely damaged, the branches, the leaves and the wood shavings fluttered about everywhere. Xiao Chen borrowed the force behind their palms and conveniently landed on top of a giant tree. After that, he trod on the branches and leaped to another giant tree like an energetic monkey.

Gu Luo had a really ugly complexion on his face, even though he was healed by the Radiance of Life, he still lost an excessive amount of blood, which depleted his strength. As a result, he was forced back to the ground by Xiao Chen. He finally lost his patience and bellowed in rage, leading several people to chase after him.

Just about this time, a shattering noise once more resounded. The three ice

sculptures abruptly crumbled, the three skeletons actually did not get stranded to death! They broke out from the confinement, and regained their freedom. Moreover, they easily penetrated the three people next to them without any hesitation.

The forest immediately burst into a fit of chaos, the performance of the three undead creatures caused some of the servants to feel somewhat frightened. However, the three skeletons did not continue to massacre, they quickly flee towards the depths of the swamp like Xiao Chen did.

The setting sun already faded away a long time ago, the swamp was eerie and dark.

At this moment, Xiao Chen was holding his breath.

Gu Luo and Zhao Lin Er hastily led a group of people to pursue closely, they were unwilling to let Xiao Chen gain any more advantages. They must exterminate him in this woodland at all cost. However, they suddenly heard a “plop” sound around this time. Someone mysteriously fell in this dusky woodland.

“Plop!”

Another one fell to the ground, never to rise again!

“Not good, it’s miasma! Quickly retreat, it’s undead miasma!” The instant first person fell, Gu Luo raised his eyebrow and responded immediately.

With the help of the deathly pale moonlight, they could see faint layers of fog

rising from the swamp. The deathly swamp burst into a fit of chaos, all the people were terrified as they flee from the swamp. It was comparable to the day of the apocalypse.

Black fog was lingering around, the auras of death were fluctuating, the swamp had already changed into the Domain of Death!

With Zhao Lin Er and Gu Luo's talent, they were able to hold their breath for a long time. The undead miasma was unable to affect them for the time being. However, it was a different story for the rest of them, every one of them felt their heads were spinning, someone would fell to the ground occasionally.

When they got out of the swamp, only five other people got out along with Gu Luo and Zhao Lin Er. The rest of the people all fell in the Domain of Death behind them.

Gu Luo's face was deathly pale, his expression was very gloomy. If all those people died, he wouldn't have any underlings to use anymore. He gritted his teeth as he faced Zhao Lin Er and said, "May I request Your Highness help, to enter the swamp with me and carry those people out. I have an idea how to help them recover."

Zhao Lin Er felt a lingering fear, she felt that Xiao Chen was really difficult to deal with. She didn't say much and rushed into the deathly swamp along with Gu Luo to carry all those unconscious people out.

Outside of the swamp, there were plenty of figures lying on a wide expanse of the ground. These people were about to cease breathing, one black thread after another appeared on the surface of their skin, the undead poison had already spread throughout their entire body.

“Divine Purification” Following Gu Luo’s low howl, one scroll immediately spread out, a milky white radiance enveloped this vacant land like a light screen. Everyone who were heavily inflicted by the undead poison started to groan. Faint black mist leaked out from their body, then it generated a few “crackle” sound under the influence of the white radiance before it transformed into nothingness.

After the incomparably precious Purification Scroll had been used up, all the people were no longer in any life threatening danger.

Xiao Chen didn’t know Gu Luo would have this kind of life-saving tools. He already joined up with the three skeletons at the moment. They also walked out of the swamp, recovering their strength in the other direction.

“We can’t let him get away like this!” Gu Luo’s expression was really gloomy, he suffered a lot of damage today, he could feel the boiling rage deep in his heart.

Zhao Lin Er knitted her elegant eyebrow and said, “However, being hindered by this kind of natural undead miasma bring about a huge inconvenience for us.”

“No matter, I still have one scroll I haven’t used!”

Half an hour later, after everyone who were lying on the ground recovered, Gu Luo spread open a scroll and started to chant, “Disperse the evil and darkness, protect me with your divine radiance!”

As the scroll transformed into dust, half of the people were enveloped by a

holy radiance. Their body emitted a faint radiance, which seemed especially eye-catching in the dim light of night. The other half who were not in the area-of-effect did not receive the “Divine Protection”, thus they stayed outside of the swamp to provide support.

Xiao Chen was gobsmacked when these people appeared in front of him again. He led the three skeletons back into the swamp again. However, this time, the undead miasma no longer had any effect on those people. It automatically dissipated upon making contact with the holy radiance, all of them were no longer afraid of the deathly swamp.

Gu Luo and Zhao Lin Er led the army to chase and kill, they forced Xiao Chen and the three skeletons to flee in a sorry figure. They were caught up in the boundary of death quite a few times. At last, Xiao Chen rushed into the dark and gloomy central region of the swamp despite being stopped by the three skeletons. Of course, during the course of events, he slowed down his pace, trying hard to keep the distance between them in a deadlock.

“Screeeeeeeech!”

A very awe-inspiring and scary sharp screech suddenly resounded in the swamp. The screech of this netherworld ghost caused goosebumps to continuously emerge, the screech was extremely bizarre and scary.

The swamp ahead was incomparably dark, one could vaguely make out the figure of a huge undead creature that was about ten meters high, bellowing as it looked up to the sky. The aura of the death was fluctuating violently, it was as if they had just entered the eerie and terrifying underworld!

“Screeeeeeeech!”

And yet another bone-chilling whistle of the ghost resounded, endless amount of darkness surged up violently in the twinkling of an eye. That was actually a surge of raging deathly aura!

The army that pursued Xiao Chen found in their dismay, the holy radiance that enveloped their body was extinguished in a split second. The terrifying deathly aura bested their “Divine Protection”.

“Not good, quickly retreat! It’s the Undead Emperor!” Even though Gu Luo’s voice was shaky, he still shouted loudly.

Everyone’s courage was entirely shattered, they were so terrified that their souls spirited away!

The emperor of the undead creature had always only emerged in the legends, even a deity’s face would change color when facing one who had reached the peak state.

Every single person was running as if their life depended on it, everyone felt extreme fear in their heart. Why did they had to run into the emperor of the undead creature? In fear, Gu Luo was thinking about these angrily at the same time. However, once he recalled this big desolate ancient island was under a seal, he felt relieved.

Even though Xiao Chen had mentally prepared for this early on, he still felt a chill down his spine. He kept far away from the crowd and escaped at lightning speed. And just around this time, from who knows where, the three skeletons rushed over to Xiao Chen’s side and pulled him along as they ran in a zigzag formation in the dark swamp.

The inexhaustible deathly aura spread over a vast area, Gu Luo's subordinates fell in the swamp one after another. Behind them was the figure of a huge terrifying undead, following them casually as it reaped their life!

Xiao Chen took a quick glance from a distant place, he couldn't help but suck in a cold breathe. He could vaguely see the a pair of huge rotten wings on the back of the ten meter tall undead figure!

The deathly aura bubbled up [1], the inexhaustible darkness obstructed his line of sight, he couldn't see anything anymore.....

[tl: [1] = To rise or increase steadily in intensity.]

Chapter 27 – Slaughter Under The Moonlit Night

Xiao Chen was inwardly rejoicing that he broke away from the Undead Emperor's line of sight. Without turning back, he ran out of the swamp along with the three skeletons. From within the endless darkness behind them, a miserable shriek was transmitted outwards from time to time. The sorrowful voices were brimming with fear, just hearing it caused one's hair to stand on end.

He brought the three skeletons to circle around the deathly swamp, running quickly towards the direction where Gu Luo and his men were heading.

The Undead Emperor didn't chase after them beyond the eerie swamp, it seemed to be casually jogging and reaped some life as it passed by only.

When Xiao Chen finally arrived, he just happened to see Gu Luo and Zhao Lin Er carried two or three people out of the deathly swamp with weak and unstable footstep. They met up with the people who were providing support outside, and flee far away as if their life depended on it.

Xiao Chen turned around and took a quick glance at the swamp, an undead figure that was about ten meter tall, seemed to be grabbing a corpse and chewing it within the inexhaustible undead miasma. Two gloomy jade light emitted from the position of its pair of eyes. It was exceptionally frightening in the dark and eerie forest.

“Screeeeeeeech!”

An ear-splitting screech caused the mountain woods to shake, endless amount

of undead miasma soared into the sky, and covered the moon. One could vaguely see a pair of giant rotten wings stretched out.

Xiao Chen and the three skeletons ran after Gu Luo and his men in the same direction without turning back. Along the way, he found two corpse at the side of the road. They died in a very miserable state, their corpse had been corroded and completely deformed by the undead miasma. Eerie white bones were exposed on many parts of their body.

In only three or four miles, he caught up to Gu Luo and Zhao Lin Er's group. Evidently, Gu Luo and Zhao Lin Er were heavily affected by the undead miasma, their strength was much inferior to what it once was. Otherwise, it wouldn't be that easy to catch up to them.

Once they saw Xiao Chen was leading the three skeletons to chase after them, their expression became really ugly to behold.

Gu Luo lifted his eyebrows at once, today could be said to be his worst day ever, not only did he suffered a disastrous casualties, he was about to be completely wipe out at the moment. He felt incomparably angry and regretful, his strength declined greatly as time pass by. The undead miasma had invaded his body, if he didn't get rid of it soon, his life might be in danger.

Zhao Lin Er was devastatingly beautiful, even though she was in a really embarrassing state at the moment, it still wasn't enough to cover up her first-class charm. However, her water-like pupils were brimming with hostility as she looked at Xiao Chen. She never thought that under such a favorable condition, would they suffer such a miserable defeat.

"My lord, please retreat quickly, we will cut him off!"

Ten figures blocked Xiao Chen and the three skeletons' path, another three were protecting Gu Luo and Zhao Lin Er as they retreated at flying speed.

Xiao Chen and the three skeletons dashed forward without wasting any words, this was a one-sided slaughter!

The sword aura raged in the forest wildly, along with a wave of Xiao Chen's longsword, one head was decapitated. The headless corpse spurted out around two meter high of blood, then it collapsed on the ground.

Soon after, a miserable scream resounded, the three snow-white skeletons grabbed the hand and foot of one person as they ripped him apart. Before the scream came to a stop, the longsword on Xiao Chen's hand already found its target. Blood ray bursted forth, the corpse was chopped in half at the waist as it fell on the pool of blood.

There was a huge gap in their strength, Xiao Chen's merciless strategy, as well as the three bloodthirsty skeletons, caused the remaining few to tremble in fear. At this moment, they forgot about their loyalty towards Gu Luo. They didn't dare to think about stopping Xiao Chen anymore, all of them were terrified as they ran after Gu Luo's figure from behind.

This war a great hunt to the death!

Xiao Chen was like a blood-soaked Asura, every time he brandished his sword, one after another corpse would topple over. He body was completely soaked by blood.

“Plop!”

Blood splashed everywhere, one head came tumbling down.

“Plop!”

The heart was penetrated, one corpse collapsed.

“Plop!”

The shoulder was cut off at an angle, blood wildly rushed forth.

.....

The whole journey was filled with bloodshed!

When the last of them had their head cleaved, Xiao Chen was already thoroughly stained red by the watery blood. He was just like the Death God at the moment, together with the three skeletons, they intercepted Zhao Lin Er and Gu Luo’s path.

Several black veins had already emerged on Gu Luo and Zhao Lin Er’s arm. It originated from the undead miasma of the Undead Emperor, just one more step and it would spread throughout their body.

Now, there was only one expert left at Gu Luo’s side to protect him. That expert stared at Xiao Chen and the three skeletons coldly without saying a word.

With a “Psst!” sound, he pulled out a Blazing Sword with his hand. It appears very dazzling under the dim light of night, the sword possessed the scorching heat of the raging flames, and the sharpness of the cold blade.

At the moment, Xiao Chen need not to make his moves urgently, his opponent didn't even have the strength to fight back anymore. Right now they have the absolute advantage, he was rather interested in the Blazing Sword held by the expert. He asked, “How did you generate the flame on the sword?”

“Hmph!” He didn't answer and snorted coldly in return.

He didn't receive any favorable answer, but Xiao Chen didn't feel resentful at all. He turned around to face Zhao Lin Er and said, “I don't want to use my position as the victor to taunt you, but how do you think I should punish you?”

Feeling Xiao Chen's gaze was sweeping all over her body, Zhao Lin Er's exquisite, jewel-like body retreated one step backwards. She put away her icy and proud expression as she smiled charmingly. She said in a very calm and cool-headed manner, “I am awfully clear about the so-called winner takes all, but who would remain the final victor is hard to say!”

With beauty capable of overturning a city, or even an entire nation, the Imperial Angel was still as majestic as before even under such a dire situation.

“Who will be king, and who will be bandit, the result will be clear in a moment later.” Speaking until here, Xiao Chen turned his head to face the brown-haired Gu Luo. He asked with a tranquil expression, “I don't want to waste time on too much nonsense, it is impossible for me to let you keep on living, I don't want leave behind anything that would pose a danger to my life. However, before we settle this, I couldn't help but ask, what are those scrolls you released before?”

Out of Xiao Chen's expectation, Gu Luo actually answered his question, "Ancient Eastern and Western enchantment, fused together to form a Magic Technique to be used later."

"Then is the Blazing Sword also using this kind of Magic Technique?"

"Correct."

Once he got a definite answer, Xiao Chen nodded his head, the world of immortals was more mysterious than he imagined. Many things required him to experience it personally to comprehend it.

"Gu Luo, do you want to do it yourself, or do you want me to do it?" Xiao Chen pointed the longsword in his hand that radiated with cold light accurately in front of Gu Luo's chest.

Far away from the deathly swamp, the bright moonlight was exceptionally gentle. However, the forest was brimming with murderous aura, three skeletons appeared to be sparkling under the glow of the moonlight. They were opening and closing their jaw unceasingly, generating a clacking noise again and again. It was exceptionally frightening under the moonlit night.

28 - As Firm as Steel

Gu Luo chuckled grimly twice, then he suddenly got up and ran towards Xiao Chen. It was pointless to say anything more at the moment. Zhao Lin Er follow-up with Gu Luo, she knew it was already too late to fall back. The only way out of this predicament was to kill Xiao Chen while enduring the onslaught of the undead miasma.

Two longswords were swung towards Xiao Chen's chest in crisscrossed pattern. At the same time, the man who was holding the Blazing Sword also made his moves. The blazing hot longsword was swung towards Xiao Chen's neck with ferocious strength.

The longsword in Xiao Chen's hand also emitted a dazzling radiance, he swept the longsword across a wide area, and deflected the three's killing technique. At the same time, the three skeletons transformed into three rays of white light as they dashed over there to clash against the three powerful experts.

Quite obviously, Zhao Lin Er and Gu Luo were plagued by the undead miasma, their strength was many times weaker than before. Even if they worked together, they still couldn't gain any advantage.

The sword aura rose high into the sky from within the forest, Xiao Chen rotated his body as he brandished the sword. With a curved slash, the sword erupted with a glaring sword aura as it streaked across Zhao Lin Er's nape. Her fine black hair filled the sky, the Imperial Angel's long hair was neatly cut off. If she was one second slower, perhaps it would be her head that was detached!

Zhao Lin Er was breaking cold sweat from head to toe, she who was born in the

imperial household had never experienced this kind of treatment; To be forced by others close to the gate of the underworld.

Gu Luo was also extremely scared, in his eyes, Xiao Chen was a really dangerous individual. An individual with resolution as firm as steel, he didn't even hesitate when facing this kind of peerless beauty. He faced it with an indifferent attitude, what else would this kind of individual not dare to do? Originally, he thought that he could entice Xiao Chen with great benefits, and negotiate with him at the crucial moment. However, he completely dispelled this train of thoughts in his heart now.

During the time Gu Luo and Zhao Lin Er were feeling apprehensive, the longsword in Xiao Chen's hand had already broke the Blazing Sword into pieces. An incomparably bright sword descended from top to bottom, slashing the sword-wielding man's shoulder. The blood splashed everywhere, two chunks of body remains fell on the bloody ground of the forest.

Seeing Xiao Chen drew near while carrying the iron sword that's dripping with blood, as well as the three skeletons blocking their path from the flank, Gu Luo's complexion became despondent. Zhao Lin Er knitted her eyebrows, however she couldn't come up with any countermeasures. It was getting difficult to maintain her gorgeous complexion and remain calm at the moment.

"Alright, everything should come to an end now." When Xiao Chen said all these, he remained very calm. However, it makes Gu Luo and Zhao Lin Er feel even more frigid.

"Whoosh....."

"Roar....."

Just around this time, unhappy cries of the apes could be heard from a distant place. The terrain was slightly higher here, so they could clearly see dozens of powerful beastly figures were flying vertically on top of the tree. It was as if they were walking on the clouds, they could traverse eight to nine meters by only touching the branches or leaves slightly. They were seriously extremely nimble as they flew at lightning speed towards this location!

Zhao Lin Er's complexion abruptly changed, she recognized them in a flash. Those dozens of Gigantic Apes once protected Xiao Chen, and she killed one of them several days ago.

This place was not very far away from the habitat of the Gigantic Ape, the sound of battle had alarmed them.

In merely a short period of time, the dozens of Gigantic Apes arrived at this location. All of them were approximately three meter in height, with black fur covered their entire body, they seemed extremely scary under the moonlit night. As soon as they landed, they closely packed together as they surrounded both parties like huge stone tablets.

The four meter tall peculiar Four-Armed Ape stood in the middle, the blood-colored fur on its body was flickering with a bewitching radiance under the moonlit night. Two rays of light were emitted from its two eyes, like a pair of lightning, as it started at Zhao Lin Er coldly.

Xiao Chen recalled the three skeletons to his side. With the dozens of Gigantic Ape who showed up for vengeance, perhaps he don't even need to lift a finger. The conclusion of the fight was already set in the stone.

But all of a sudden, an extremely radiance burst out from the forest, the lightnings interweaves together as it enveloped the dozens of peculiar apes like a huge net. It wiped out all but the blood-colored peculiar ape, all the Gigantic Apes were knocked down by the lightning attack. They were twitching from head to toes, unable to even budge a muscle. Even the blood-colored Gigantic Ape's footstep was weak and unstable.

The fast change of scenario caused everyone to know not what to do. However, just around this time, a snow-white young unicorn with faint light flickering all over its body like a jade transformed into a ray of silver radiance as it got in front of Zhao Lin Er. The young unicorn carried Zhao Lin Er and ran far away in a split second.

This unforeseen event was too sudden!

The blood-colored Gigantic Ape bellowed in rage, it was like a sudden clap of thunder in the middle of a moonlit night. Its body generated electric sparks with crackling noise as it got out of paralysis state. Then it soared into the sky like a madman as it chased after the young unicorn.

After a short period of time, all the Gigantic Apes that were twitching on the ground recovered, and they chased after the young unicorn without even looking back.

Everything was too sudden!

At the moment, only Gu Luo remained standing all alone in that place. However, he was not in despair, on the contrary, the corners of his mouth curved up into a smiling expression.

Xiao Chen felt something was not right, he immediately left behind an afterimage as he dashed forward. However, he was still one-step too late, as Gu Luo unfolded a scroll, it actually carried him high up into the sky!

“I always thought this scroll was worthless, who would have thought I needed to use it to run for my life today.” As Gu Luo said these words, he directed all of his unsaid dissatisfaction and wrath at Xiao Chen as he stared at him fiercely.

Xiao Chen asked coldly, “Then why didn’t you use it to run away previously?”

“Because it can only carry one person! I believed that young unicorn will make an appearance, it is not good-looking if I used it hastily and run away by myself. Of course, if the young unicorn didn’t come, I would still run away during a life and death moment. Hey, everything that took place earlier just proved my calculation was right, leaving now is only more appropriate.” Gu Luo’s gaze was malicious as he firmly stared at Xiao Chen.

Xiao Chen did not feel exasperated, he only replied coldly, “You are playing with fire, not only since the beginning, even now!” Speaking until here, he stroked his hand in the empty air for a few times. A few brilliant light radiated, forming a huge palm in the sky as it engulfed several longswords beside the dead bodies.

After that, he jumped high into the sky, towards the crown of a huge tree. The distance between him and Gu Luo shrunk rapidly.

Gu Luo shouted “Not good!” loudly, then he directed the scroll capable of flight to fly towards the distant location. Xiao Chen left an afterimage on the crown of the tall tree as he jumped to the top of another even taller tree. He stepped on the tip of the trees, and transformed into light and shadow as he

chased for few dozen of meter in this kind of manner. And finally, he was at the top of the tallest ancient tree in this region.

He actually closed the distance between himself and Gu Luo greatly. His body was emitting a bright radiance, as if it was ignited due to his breakneck speed. The glowing light was throbbing on the surface of his body, like the raging flame of the hellfire! Just at this moment, he mercilessly tossed the first longsword from the giant hand!

Xiao Chen strengthened the longsword with the purest of power, transforming the ordinary iron into adamantine. The longsword was emitting light like a rainbow as it pierced the tranquil night sky!

“Plop!”

The blood splashed about in the sky, a large amount of blood overflowed. Gu Luo let out a sorrowful scream, the longsword actually penetrated his right arm. Not only that, his right arm was actually cut off! The severed arm fell down from the sky, the entire sky was filled with the rain of blood.....

29 - Bequeathing the Legend of God

Gu Luo's miserable scream resounded in the horizon, the sharp pain makes him unable to keep his balance in the sky. The scroll was wobbling as it carried him forward, it was actually losing altitude constantly.

Xiao Chen stepped on the tip of the tree, leaping from the crown of one tree to another, his body transformed into a blur. After chasing for a few dozens of meter, he launched the second sword!

The bright longsword emitted a dazzling radiance, like a meteor that glides through the sky, it left behind a trail of light as it hits Gu Luo!

"Plop!"

Watery blood sprinkled everywhere, the second sword hit the target again!

This sword directly pierced Gu Luo's chest, it nearly took his life! An earsplitting scream resounded in the sky, the blood flowed down from the sky like a waterfall. Gu Luo was heavily wounded and on the verge of dying, he directed the scroll with all his remaining strength to fly towards a distant location at high-speed.

Under the bright moonlight, Xiao Chen was standing on the highest point of the tree, he faced upwards and let out a long howl. His long hair danced about hysterically, his eyes were as sharp as the blade of a sword, he finally turned the entire situation around tonight. After clearing all the malice in his heart, he need not to flee anymore.

Qinguang Wang, Yanluo Wang, and Lunhui Wang climbed up the tree, and arrived at Xiao Chen's side. Under the moonlight, the three snow-white skeletons fixed their gaze on the bright moon in the sky. The spiritual light in their skull fluctuated, seemingly to recall something.....

.....

.....

.....

The latter half of the night, the roar of the beast was gone, it was especially calm in the mountain forest. The gentle moonlight spread throughout the entire forest, like a really huge feather of pure white. The mountain forest was harmonious and tranquil.

Xiao Chen seated cross-legged on the tree crown, he started to operate the mysterious technique of his to draw in the moonlight. The essence of the moonlight was flowing unhurriedly like the water ripples, a faint divine fog was circulating around the treetop, making this place appear especially auspicious and peaceful.

After an intense fight, Xiao Chen's body was already running out of gas [1], the essence of the pure moonlight energy was assimilated by his body unceasingly. The essence of the moonlight replenished the energy of his dried up body.

[tl: [1] = The original translation says 'empty' but that just sound weird...]

The three skeletons were also quietly refining the crystals Xiao Chen had provided them. Their snow-white framework gained another layer of luster, especially their skulls which were set off by the spiritual lights. Their skulls appeared crystal clear, as if they were transformed into jade.

This was a really peaceful and tranquil night.....

The light of the stars in the night sky gradually became weaker, a speck of red light gradually exposed itself from the East. The dawn approached, the bird was the first to get up in the peaceful primitive forest. The pleasing birdsong was melodious and sweet-sounding, after that the roar of the beast sounded unceasingly.

Xiao Chen's entire body was enveloped by a hazy radiance, a few birds were hopping around him and chirping happily. He already became one with nature. It last until he opened his pair of eyes, the forest birds were startled and flew off like rockets. He could feel a surge of qi-energy all over his body, the glorious radiance constantly circulated around the surface of his body.

He washed the bloodstains all over his body at a limpid streamlet [2] nearby. After eating a incomparably sumptuous breakfast, he led the three skeletons and be on their way.

[tl: [2] = Streamlet means a "small mountain stream" for those who didn't know.]

A group of huge elephants galloping, a divine panther with a pair of wings, a huge golden centipede with body as thick as a bucket, a three-headed tiger overlord that was as big as a small hill, the howl of huge and terrifying beasts could be heard during the whole journey. It echoed in the primitive ancient

forest unceasingly.

Passing through layer upon layers of mountain forest, Xiao Chen brought the three skeletons back to his previous dwelling place. Beside the sapphire-like small lake, the bluish-green bamboo house was still standing upright, emitting the sweet scent of plants. The wisterias meandering around the lake, discharging the fragrance of flowers and plants.

They didn't stop over here, they passed through the dense woodland and arrived at the coast. Xiao Chen began to bask the sea salt under the sun, he was preparing to go after Zhao Lin Er and Gu Luo after gathering enough.

The early morning sunlight was golden-bright and dazzling, the three skeletons hate the sunshine very much, they hid under the shade of the coconut grove nearby, unwilling to come out. Xiao Chen used the coconut shell to collect seawater to make the sea salt by himself. However, just around this time, he discovered a human figure in the ocean.

A white-clothed man was dashing towards him from the depths of the ocean at lightning speed, he was like a divine fish rending the sea waves! The most shocking thing was, the white-clothed man was not swimming across the ocean, he was standing above the sea level!

He could finally see clearly after the distance was shortened!

A white-clothed young monk was pedalling atop a wooden boat. His movement was carefree, as if he was an immortal who trod across the ocean waves, his unworldly gracefulness cannot be described with mere words.

The Light Weight Technique of Bodhidharma! The supreme technique that was lost in the human world for countless years!

Xiao Chen was rather astonished, that was obviously an expert. He couldn't help but raise his guard.

The slightly salty sea breeze brushed lightly against the white-clothed monk as he braved the waves and arrived at the coast. He was somewhat surprised when he looked at Xiao Chen, but he quickly calmed down, took a single step forward and moved on top of the beach.

"You are.....?" The white-clothed monk was different from the usual monk, he didn't recite the chant nor did he refer to common people as almsgiver, he inquired like an ordinary person.

Seeing that this young monk was out of the ordinary, Xiao Chen introduced himself briefly. If he was to continue living in this world of immortals, he should build a good relationship with the practitioners of this world.

The white-clothed monk was seemingly very astonished, he opened his mouth and starts to talk, "My religious name is Yizhen." Unlike an ordinary monk, he didn't claim "himself" as a "Wise Monk". [3]Even though he didn't speak like a Buddhist monk, he revealed a super-refined aura. Judging from his bearing alone, he seemed to be a senior monk who had achieved enlightenment.

[tl: [3] = The original translation is "Poor Monk (贫僧)" but it just doesn't make sense, so I looked into the synonym of Poor > Abysmal > Profound and then I settled with Wise Monk.]

The two chatted naturally as they walked towards the coconut grove automatically. The three skeletons could feel a stranger approaching so they stealthily retreated.

“Master Yizhen, is there anything bizarre on this island?” Xiao Chen had too much question in his heart, Wang Zi Feng, and even Gu Luo had come to this island in succession. They clearly have a main objective, even Yizhen has come to this island now. It further emphasized the distinction of this uninhabited island.

“This island is known as the Dragon Island. During the ancient barren era, this island was eternally subdued by the Heavenly Tablet. All the dragon race that were capable of oppressing the deities lost their magic power eternally, and was confined on this uninhabited island.”

Xiao Chen finally understood why the Eight-Clawed Tyrant Dragon that could fight toe-to-toe with Neptune, and the king of dragons, the Tyrannical Dragon, were demonstrating more brutality than divinity. They already lost their powerful Divine Ability on this eternally subdued island.

“Why did something like that happened?” Xiao Chen asked curiously.

Buddhist Yizhen understood Xiao Chen’s current way of thinking, he briefly explained all the important events of the past to him.

“Nobody knows for sure. After the dragon race was subdued, Suirensi, Youchaoshi, Emperor Fuxi, the rest of the ancestral god disappeared. Even powerful figures like Laozi, Yuanshi, Tongtian, Gautama, and so on, also disappeared. [4] Perhaps some unfortunate event occurred around that era. Those respectable deities all disappeared without a trace.”

[tl" [4] = Laozi (老子)、Yuanshi (原始)、Tongtian (通天)、Gautama (佛陀)]

“How did something like that happen.....” Xiao Chen couldn’t understand, he turned his head to face Buddhist Yizhen and said, “Don’t tell me, there is no more god in this world?”

“That is not exactly right, the world of immortal is immeasurably vast, there are many different kinds of race. The ancestral gods are no longer here, and even the powerful Laozi, Gautama and the others had also disappeared, the exotic tribes still continued to spread the legends of venerable gods. There are many things that cannot be explained clearly, only after you walk through the vast continent and experience it yourself would you truly understand.”

30 - Legend of Dragons

“Exotic tribe..... venerable gods?”

“Right, in the future you might see a giant as tall as twenty meter, a perfect entity that has life span of more than thousand years, as well as races that are born with a pair of wings.”

Xiao Chen suddenly asked, “How did the legendary Bodhidharma, Dugu Qiubai, Lang Fan Yun, and the rest fare with the god?”

Yizhen nodded his head and said, “These outstanding figures that broke the boundaries between life and death, perhaps they can already be considered gods a long time ago.”

“Master Yizhen, may I be a little bold to ask, do you have some important business on this Dragon Island?”

Yizhen laughed as he said, “I dare not to claim myself as a master, just call me Yizhen. I came here to try my luck, to see whether or not I can find the ancestral dragon.”

Xiao Chen exposed an astonished expression, he asked somewhat hesitantly, “Ancestral Dragon? Could you be referring to the totem of the human world? Aren’t those just an imaginary existence from the legend?”

The so-called Ancestral Dragon was the legendary Divine Dragon in the human world. Since the ancient time, the imperial household had always considered

oneself as the descendant of the Divine Dragon. However, the Divine Dragon had never made an appearance in the real world once. Unlike the Tyrannical Dragon, Winged Dragon, Thunder Dragon, and so on that once existed in this world. The later generation believed it was nothing more than a fictional existence.

Buddhist Yizhen said seriously, “The Ancestral Dragon really existed, but it seems like there can only be one in existence in a single era. There had never been two in existence at the same time. It is the king among dragons, perhaps it was given birth by the Tyrannical Dragon, or maybe the Saber Dragon..... any dragon had the possibility to give birth to it. Since it was an infant, it struggled amongst the group of young dragons, constantly transforming itself, changing its original form, until it defeated a great number of dragons, and transform into the Ancestral Five-Clawed Dragon.”

“If that is the case, then the Ancestral Dragon was not birthed from the nature. It was transformed from one of the thousands of dragon after it rise above the others in a continuous struggle?”

“That’s right, any young dragon have the possibility of transforming into the Ancestral Dragon! However, the real Ancestral Dragon was already determined since infancy. It possesses extraordinary gifts and is easy to identify.” Buddhist Yizhen gazed at the Dragon Island and continued, “The prophet from every clan in the mainland had predicted, an Ancestral Dragon will be born on the Dragon Island. The seal on the Dragon Island might possibly be broken by its existence.”

The Dragon Island, as the name implies, it was the dwelling of numerous dragons. Many ancient dragon races were sealed on this island, it met all the requirements to bring about the Ancestral Dragon.

If the ancient dragon race were not suppressed, they could even confront a god! Then that legendary Ancestral Dragon..... will be even more frightening! If

that was the case, it was easy to imagine why Wang Zi Feng and Gu Luo came to this island for. If they can subdue the Ancestral Dragon during its infancy period, it would be hard to imagine just what kind of future awaits!

Buddhist Yizhen smiled as he shook his head, then he said, “To track down the Ancestral Dragon is simply too unreasonable. As long as I can find a Syndicate Dragon King, it will be more than sufficient.”

“Syndicate Dragon King?”

“Whenever an Ancestral Dragon was born, a few Syndicate Dragon King will come into existence. Their strength is not much inferior to the Ancestral Dragon, they are the best whetstone for honing the Ancestral Dragon. They are gifted with extraordinary talents like the Ancestral Dragon since infancy period, it will be easy to identify them. They can also constantly transform in the middle of their fight. They are the Ancestral Dragon’s most powerful adversary and arch-enemy. There are even some legends of a young Syndicate Dragon King who killed the original Ancestral Dragon, and replaced its position as the most venerable dragon.”

“The path of the Ancestral Dragon is rather cruel!” Xiao Chen heaved a sigh.

“That’s right, it is very cruel. Otherwise it wouldn’t have to strength to combat the gods!”

Xiao Chen suddenly thought of something, since the Ancestral Dragon was so formidable, will those outstanding figures who had already achieved immortality come to seek for the young Ancestral Dragon? Regarding this question, Yizhen’s answer makes Xiao Chen feel that this Dragon Island was all the more bizarre.

After the Dragon Island had been sealed, not only the dragon race would lose their Divine Ability, even the gods who break into the island would meet the same fate. However, after the the venerable gods left the island, they can still recover after a long period of recuperation. The dragon race was not that lucky, therefore, the stronger they were, the lower the possibility of them entering the Dragon Island.

Besides, the surrounding thousand miles of sea area was also affected. It was a deathly region under normal circumstances, it was extremely difficult to get through. It was not called the Taboo Ocean just for show, only in the intervals of every few centuries would the deathly region around the Taboo Ocean disappear for a period of time. It just so happens to be one of the cycle now, one can go through the sea area unhindered for the time being.

“Master Yizhen, could it be that you crossed the ocean by yourself?”

Yizhen shook his head and said, “This island is a few thousand miles away from the mainland, even I do not have the ability to cross the ocean by myself. I embarked on this journey with a few other practitioners. We found out from the notes of the previous generation that the sea area around the island also have fierce dragons. Therefore, we started to move into action by the time we got close to the island. I am merely one step ahead of the others.”

As the two were talking, a few human figures appeared in the middle of the bluish green ocean. They were approaching this location from all directions, some were using secret technique to move the small boat at lightning speed, there were also some who were riding on a flying scroll. But what makes Xiao Chen the most surprised was that golden-haired youth who was flying in midair.

As if he could see through Xiao Chen’s amazement, Buddhist Yizhen explained, “That is a Divine Spell Master from the Western clan. It is said that they can

borrow the power of the venerable god they are devoted to.”

A few human figures quickly darted on top of the beach, they were very shocked when they saw Buddhist Yizhen standing together with a tall and heroic-looking youth.

Xiao Chen was also sizing them up, the few of them appeared to be quite distinguished amongst their generation. All of them had a noteworthy constitution.

A beautiful girl will always attract other people’s attention, and a captivating beauty who can even outshine the beauty of the bright moon, will always be people’s focal point. Among the four who got onto the beach, there was one particular beautiful girl who was just like this. Her beauty was not the slightest bit inferior to Zhao Lin Er.

“Yan Qing Cheng, the disciple of Undying Demon King.” The two were still a distance apart, Yizhen introduced them by himself in whispers.

It was a very special name, but that name was very fitting. [1] Her elegant jade-like body seemed like the most perfect masterpiece under the Heaven. If she was standing in a field of flower, it was likely that the hundreds of flowers would lose their splendor. The amethyst dress makes her snow-like skin appeared even more tender and lovely. Her long black hair naturally draped over her shoulders. Under her long, long eyelashes, her pair of eyes were brimming with intelligence. Her beautiful nose sticking up, her red moist lips, her jade-like teeth, and her unrivalled complexion make it seems like there was a thin layer of mist enveloping her, as if she was a hallucination from one’s wildest dream.

[tl: [1] = The Qing Cheng (倾城) in her name literally translates to ‘Gorgeous’.]

Yan Qing Cheng, it was almost impossible for people to forget about her, such a beautiful and exceptional woman will make anyone who laid their eyes on her for the first time to carve her appearance deep into their heart.

However, Xiao Chen felt the situation was not too encouraging. This girl might become his arch-enemy, Yan Qing Cheng was most likely the junior apprentice of Wang Zi Feng, who was killed by him personally!

Yan Qing Cheng was very breathtaking, and others couldn't help but pay attention to her. The last person who arrived on the beach cannot be said to be pretty or handsome, but it was just as hard not to pay attention to that individual.

This person was actually three meter tall, he was much taller than any ordinary person. His brownish-yellow long hair draped over his shoulders messily. He had thick eyebrows and leopard-like eyes, his appearance was rough. Moreover, he actually had a pair of wolf-like ears. In addition, he had a long, large and powerful tiger tail. This makes Xiao Chen incomparably shocked.

Buddhist Yizhen whispers to Xiao Chen, "Chaos [Kǎi ào], a young expert from the Barbarian Tribe. The population of the Barbarian Tribe is sparse, but they are natural born warriors. Their raw strength are tremendous, legend says there is an ancient and powerful Spiritual Beast sealed within their body. Therefore, they are also referred as the Beastman."

Xiao Chen looked at the three meter tall Chaos, imagining his powerful burst of strength, as well as his unknown terrifying Spiritual Beast. This kind of person was certainly incomparably fierce and bold.

The sound of the flowing sands reverberated from the beach, one after another green vines actually emerged from the underground. That was a really shocking scene, the vines revolved around the front of a youngster. Originally, he appeared to be very normal, just one of the four people who were walking on the beach. He was hardly eye-catching, but now he was actually the center of attention.

“There is a really bizarre power at work here, my Spiritual Power received interference!”

Hearing the verdict of the youngster, the few people on the scene creased their eyebrows. Buddhist Yizhen explained to Xiao Chen in a low voice, “Yaluo De, a young expert from the Jungle Tribe. Their tribe have the power to manipulate plants with Spiritual Power.”

Yaluo De had a long dark green hair, even his pupils were also light green in color. His appearance was very normal, his body seemed really frail, but Xiao Chen didn't dare to look down on him. In merely a split second, the beach was already overflowing with lush greenery. This youth from an exotic tribe had some extremely peculiar abilities. His attacking method should be just as special.

31 - Winged Dragon VS Demigod

The fourth person was a tall and handsome youngster. It was the young expert who was flying in the sky earlier. He seemed to be roughly twenty or so years old, his long golden hair was as bright and beautiful as a golden flame. And his skin was so pretty, it was as if it was finely crafted out of precious jade. His entire person emitted a noble aura, even if he was standing in a sea of people, it still wouldn't take a long time for people to start noticing him, because he was as bright as a golden sun.

Buddhist Yizhen whispered, "Lande, a young expert from the Western clan. He is a Divine Spell Master, this kind of practitioner is also known as Spell Master. It is said that they can borrow the power from their venerable god."

Xiao Chen was very envious of Spell Master Lande's ability to fly in the sky. As a Martial Artist himself, he wanted to ride the wind and fly in the sky. The path ahead is extremely long and complicated.

When both parties already gathered together, Buddhist Yizhen laughed as he introduced, "Allow me to introduce a new friend to everyone, this is Xiao Chen who came from the human world."

The four who just entered the coconut grove were astonished, they gazed at Xiao Chen with amazement.

Xiao Chen knew they have misunderstood, so he explained, "I didn't distort the dimension and come here by myself, it was only an accident that I was brought here."

As soon as the four heard the brief explanation, their expression loosened and no longer paying attention to Xiao Chen. Evidently, the four didn't care about Xiao Chen, they were not as friendly as Buddhist Yizhen. They didn't even bother to say as much as a single word to him.

Xiao Chen laughed at himself mockingly, the world of immortals was just like the human world. Without any background, nobody would pay much attention to you.

“Roar.....”

An ear-splitting dragon roar resounded from the depths of the ocean. That roar resembled the rumble of the thunder. The sea waves rise and fall violently, two distant big ships on the sea quickly fell apart. A huge draconic figure could be seen rampaging over there, it destroyed the ships as easily as breaking a dried up rotten stick.

“Those are our ships!” Chaos, the young expert from the Barbarian Tribe shouted angrily, the muscles on his entire body tightly packed together. He was emitting a dangerous beastly aura.

“The distance is too far, our people might not make it to the coast. It will be somewhat troublesome to leave this island hereafter.” The voice of the young expert from the Jungle Tribe, Yaluo De, was very easy-going. He doesn't seem to feel anxious at all.

Buddhist Yizhen looked at the huge draconic figure in the ocean and said, “Not long later, there will be even more practitioners coming to this Dragon Island. At that time, we can ask them to give us a ride.”

“Roar..... Roar.....”

Everyone slowly started to feel that something is fishy, the Eight-Clawed Tyrant Dragon already disappeared in the ocean a while ago, but the roar of a dragon could be heard from time to time. Moreover, the voice seemed a little different from that overlord of the ocean.

The white-clothed Buddhist Yizhen pointed his finger at a distant sky and shouted in surprise, “There’s an expert brawling with a dragon!”

The few young experts at the coast were incomparably shocked!

At a distant horizon, one dragon was spiralling in the sky while engaging in a fierce fight with a human figure. A dazzling divine radiance burst forth from time to time.

An expert capable of fighting against a dragon, even if one was not a god, they shouldn’t be too far behind!

The fight in the sky was very intense, one bright rays of light break out one after another. One man and one dragon gradually get closer to the island from the distant sky. They can see the battle progress clearly now.

That is a Winged Dragon, it could stretch up to fifteen meter. The dragon scales all over its body were flickering with glorious radiance. It was emitting an unearthly pressure, as soon as the Winged Dragon get close to the island, the beastly roar in borderline zone of the island immediately faded away.

This was absolutely one formidable beast, its pair of draconic wings could

stretch up to thirty meter when unfolded. Its wide shadow covered an extensive amount of land, the gale generated by its flapping wings could even be felt on the surface.

What makes Xiao Chen the most baffled was that, this silver dragon that emitted divine radiance was able to freely use its divine ability. It seemed like this dragon was different from the rest of the sealed dragon races.

One after another terrifying lightning shoot out from its mouth frenzily. The rumbling of the thunders resounded throughout the horizon, it was truly ear-splitting. The terrifying electric light interlinked in the sky, covering the entire sky with frightening lightning!

In addition, the Winged Dragon also discharged its sacred fire unceasingly, filling the entire sky with raging flames. The raging flames seemed like it would burn the void itself. The entire sky was transformed into a sea of flames, spreading a terrifying aura over a vast expanse!

“Master Yizhen, didn’t you say all the dragon races had been sealed? How come that Winged Dragon can use its divine ability freely?” Xiao Chen couldn’t help but ask.

“Winged Dragon? I haven’t heard that name in a long time, I nearly forget its name.” Yizhen explained while looking at the fight in the sky, “At present, on the vast and boundless mainland, they already become the trademark of the dragon races. The ordinary people just called it ‘dragon’. I forgot to tell you, they are the only dragon race that has not been sealed. They are one of the strongest creature on the mainland now. A fully grown Winged Dragon is as powerful as a Demigod. However, their population is really small, it is very rare to encounter them.”

According to Xiao Chen's knowledge, among the ancient dragon race, the Winged Dragon was far from the strongest species. And yet, they still possessed such unreasonable strength, then just how formidable would a genuine powerful ancient dragon race be? But the other dragon races had been sealed, the only Winged Dragon race that had been exempted turned into the 'dragon' in ordinary people's eyes.

Buddhist Yizhen continued, "The Winged Dragons can also be divided into a few type, such as the Black Dragon, the Sacred Dragon, the Golden Dragon, and so on. Apparently, they are originated from the Western Clan, you can inquire from Spell Master Lande. Surely, he should know more than me."

The golden-haired youth, Lande, was very handsome, he was as dazzling as a golden sun. His sapphire-colored eyes swept Xiao Chen a glance, whether it was because the fight in the sky was too fascinating, or he thought it was not worth the time explaining to Xiao Chen, his expression was somewhat cold.

"The human figure that is fighting with the Sacred Dragon is actually a Fallen Angel!" Yaluo De from the Jungle Tribe involuntarily shouted, "Fallen Angel didn't made an appearance in the world for more than a few centuries already, I didn't expect we could catch a glimpse of their figure here!"

The Sacred Dragon's huge body was flickering with holy radiance from beginning to end, and the human figure that was fighting with it was covered by a black fog. Only now did the few people on the ground see her true body clearly.

Her long jet-black hair fluttered like a waterfall, even though they could not see her appearance clearly, her devilish-like figure was really exceedingly enticing.

Half of her exquisite body was naked, and the other half was covered by an almost transparent black clothing. Her outstanding twin peaks, her slim waist, her perfectly round buttocks, her slender snow-white legs. Her beauty was out of the world, all living things who gazed her would turn upside down.

Of course, the thing that drew the most attention was that angel's elegant and delicate back. There was actually a pair of black wings growing from her back. As she emitted waves after waves of dark radiance, a powerful energy fluctuation raged in the sky. It actually extinguished the thunders and raging flames coming straight at her.

The Fallen Angel's strength was formidable, at the same time, her posture was very elegant. Even though she was in the middle of an intense fight, the way she linked up various kind of fighting styles was like a beautiful black swan dancing gracefully in the sky.

The huge Sacred Dragon actually didn't dominate the fight. On the contrary, it was being suppressed by the beautiful Fallen Angel. Her pair of slender lily-white hands were holding a huge ten meter long energy broadsword. A black fog drifted about, the sword ray suddenly exploded, illuminating the entire sky.

When I first translated World of Immortals, I translated the title of Chapter 1 as Shatter the Space with Martial Arts. Then I changed it to Shatter the Dimension with Martial Arts. But that still hardly make much sense so I finally decided to change it to Distort the Dimension with Martial Arts.

32 - The Genuine World of Immortals

The Sacred Dragon continuously fired off its spell, one after another dazzling radiance lit up in the sky. At the same time, its pair of wings were like two huge divine swords slashing vertically in the air, pitting itself against the Fallen Angel.

A terrifying power fluctuated violently, everyone on the ground could clearly feel that, this was definitely a spectacular battle!

After hearing Buddhist Yizhen's explanation in a low voice, Xiao Chen had roughly understood the circumstances of these Fallen Angel.

Fallen Angels were an ancient race whose strength almost rivalled that of the gods. Even though their population was as rare as phoenix feather and unicorn horn, their military power was incomparably strong. Some experts among them could even be considered an esteemed god!

Many of the weak races in the world of immortals treated them as if they were gods. This caused some dismay for the esteemed gods of some exotic tribes. Rumor has it that they were almost exterminated, it has already been a few centuries since they made an appearance in the mainland.

An ancient deity clan!

The more Xiao Chen learned, the more mysterious the world of immortals appeared to him.

“The fight between two demigod-like existence are actually this intense!”

Buddhist Yizhen was deeply moved.

Yaluo De, the young expert from Jungle Tribe, said in a surprise, “The Sacred Dragon is obviously no match for the Fallen Angel, her strategy is very cruel indeed. It was her who forced the Sacred Dragon here, perhaps she wanted to banish it to the Dragon Island!”

Chaos, the three meter tall young expert from Barbarian Tribe, nodded in agreement and said, “That must be it, even if the Winged Dragon race hasn’t been sealed. As long as they fell into the Dragon Island, they will also lose their divine ability eternally!”

“Roar.....” The Sacred Dragon growled unceasingly. In the end, it actually transform into a human body. Crossing the glittering fog that spiralled around the entire sky, it engaged in a fierce fight with the Fallen Angel within the bright fog. The terrifying fluctuation of energy encompassed every directions. It seems many of the dragons on the Dragon Island finally noticed the disturbance, the bellow of dragons could be heard from the depths of the island.

In the end, the Sacred Dragon was forced to revert back to its huge draconic body. It let out an extremely angry roar as it fell towards the Dragon Island. Its pair of wings were wounded by the huge energy broadsword of the Fallen Angel. At the same time, it received a large-scale dark energy attack on its body.

The fight was concluded with this, the few people who observed the fight knew, once the Sacred Dragon entered the Dragon Island, it will lose its divine ability forever. From now on, it will lose its divinity and exhibit more of its beastly nature.

The Fallen Angel also didn’t dare to approach the Dragon Island. After

achieving victory, she transformed into black light and disappeared beyond the horizon.

A long time later, there was still not a single sound to be heard from the coconut grove. This kind of fight between demigods clearly made the few onlookers incomparably shocked.

The tall and strong expert with a steel-like body from Barbarian Tribe, Chaos, was the first to speak, "Demigod is indeed demigod!" After that, he faced Yan Qing Cheng, Lande, and Yizhen, and said to the three of them, "Since everyone already reached the Dragon Island safe and sound, we will go our separate way from now on. I will go with Yaluo De."

The expert from Jungle Tribe, Yaluo De, nodded his head slightly as he faced Yan Qing Cheng and the other two. Then he took large strides towards the depths of the island with Chaos. One was three meter tall and looked as sturdy as a gigantic ape, while the other had a frail body that was as fragile as a willow tree. It was a very bizarre combination, but the Barbarian Tribe and Jungle Tribe had been close friends for many generations. Moreover, their ability have a huge compatibility. So it doesn't appear weird even if they walked together.

Xiao Chen laughed at himself mockingly, the two who just left seemed to have completely ignored him.

The Western Spell Master, Lande, who was as bright as a golden sun, faced Buddhist Yizhen and said with a faint smile, "Master Yizhen, I decided to form a party with Fairy Qing Cheng, will you join us?"

The peerless Yan Qing Cheng also revealed a smile that was sufficient to drive every living things crazy as she said, "Senior brother Yizhen, if you join us, the

three of us will certainly be benefited greatly.”

Buddhist Yizhen came from the Bodhidharma’s faction. Since Laozi, Gautama, and various other powerful experts disappeared, Bodhidharma had already become the most renowned expert in the East. Even the immortal Undying Demon King, Pavilion, doesn’t dare to rashly point his sword at Bodhidharma. The people from Bodhidharma’s faction would naturally be regarded as important as well.

“Heh heh, no need. One of my senior brother might come to Dragon Island too, I better wait for him at the coast for a few days first.”

“If that is the case, we will go ahead first.” Lande and Yan Qing Cheng waved at Yizhen, and disappeared in the depths of the coconut grove. They seemed to have forgotten about Xiao Chen’s existence.

Xiao Chen only laughed at himself without saying a single word. In reality, strength represented everything. If only he was a famous expert whose name has shaken the heavens, nobody would dare to act so disrespectful towards him. However, he will never indulge in self-pity. Only time will testify everything, it is hard to say who will become the invincible expert in the end.

After gathering enough sea salt, Xiao Chen parted with Buddhist Yizhen who was still waiting at the coast. He must dispose of Gu Luo and Zhao Lin Er as soon as possible, so as to avoid any unforeseen event to happen. Even demigod like the Fallen Angel and Sacred Dragon have appeared, one can imagine just how chaotic the Dragon Island will inevitably become. In just a few more days, there will certainly be a large quantities of experts hurried over in succession to fight over the Ancestral Dragon and Syndicate Dragon King. This place will turn into a war zone!

As soon as he got close to the deathly swamp, the three skeletons; Qinguang Wang, Yanluo Wang, and Lunhui Wang, came out of the jungle without making any sound. These three undead creatures had really taken Xiao Chen as their companion.

In his amazement, Xiao Chen discovered that the three skeletons seemed like they wanted to transmit some kind of message to him. Their jaws opened and closed, generating a clacking sound unceasingly. They used their snow-white bony claws to gestures simultaneously. At last, they even pulled him along a certain direction. Their speed were so fast, it was as if they were flying.

Could it be that they already found Zhao Lin Er and Gu Luo? Xiao Chen quickly thought about this kind of possibility.

Passing through the dense mountain forest, moving forward for roughly three miles, the three skeletons brought Xiao Chen before a valley. He had never come to this place previously. Relatively speaking, that was an unfamiliar place to him.

In the surrounding of the valley, even though the forest was very dense, there was rarely any ferocious beasts roaming about. Relying on his common sense, Xiao Chen concluded that a terrifying beast must be dwelling nearby. After carefully surveying his surrounding, he discovered quite a few claw prints outside of the valley. They seemed to be..... the claw prints of a dragon!

Within the valley was a wide expanse of stone forest, there was no hint of any vegetation. Apart from the entrance, all the other sides were all precipitous stone wall. Xiao Chen's sharp intuition perceived a formidable dragon aura.

Lunhui Wang used its bony claw to hint Xiao Chen to look forward. Within that

incomparably wide stone forest, a supreme huge silver monster was prostrating there!

That was..... a dragon!

Even though he cannot see the entire body, he felt a sense of déjà vu. Xiao Chen took a moment to recall, it might possibly be the Sacred Dragon that was fighting with the Fallen Angel earlier! He could hear the faintly discernible light snores of the dragon, that huge silver dragon seemed to be fast asleep.

33 - Seven-Colored Sacred Tree

Qinguang Wang was extremely daring, it actually hinted Xiao Chen to go forward together. Since they were already here, there was nothing else to be scared of. Xiao Chen advanced along with the three skeletons, walking into the stone forest.

It was really that Sacred Dragon, looking at this huge monster in close distance make one feels even more sure of its tyrannical strength. Its huge draconic body seemed as if it was made out of silver. Moreover, there was a layer of divine radiance lingering on its body, making this stone forest appear incomparably dazzling.

When the Sacred Dragon confronted the Fallen Angel, it transformed into a human body once. Except that time, the multicolored light filled the entire sky, Xiao Chen wasn't able to see its human figure and appearance clearly. When he looked at the huge silver draconic body now, it was very hard to link it together with that nimble human figure at the horizon.

The Sacred Dragon's posture was a bit strange, its draconic wings were tightly folded on its back, its rear legs were in a crouching position, its body was supported by the front claws. Instead of prostrating, it was more fitting to describe it as kowtowing. Its silver draconic head was hanging low on the ground, the shiny dragon horn was touching the ground.

And it actually fell asleep in this position. Judging from its expression, it seemed extremely zealous and satisfied!

What is going on here?

All of a sudden, Xiao Chen discovered in front of where the Sacred Dragon was crouching, a faint radiance circulating within the stone forest. He took a detour to go around the silver Sacred Dragon with the three skeletons, they arrived in the stone forest four or five meter ahead of the dragon head.

A sapling that was found growing within the stone forest. Its height was only as tall as the palm of a hand. However, seven-colored radiance was lingering on its only two leaves. The sapling emitted waves of powerful fluctuation.

It was a miraculous sapling!

Even though it was only as tall as a palm, anyone who laid eyes on it for the first time would thought it was a small tree, and not a flower! The “tree trunk” that was as thick as a thumb coiled around like a young dragon. It didn’t give people the feeling that it was an immature tree. On the contrary, it possessed an unyielding vibe like an ancient tree that has been through the vicissitudes of time!

In the middle of the crooked tree trunk, there was a black leaf, glittering with black light. It was sparkling and translucent, as if it was carved out of an inky jade. And on top of the tree trunk, there was a newly grown leaf. It was actually milky white, the leaf was crystal clear, as if it was carved out of a suet white jade [1]. A glittering luster was twirling around the sapling, no words can describe how magical it seemed.

[tl: [1] = http://www1.chinaculture.org/classics/2010-11/29/content_402843.htm]

The same trunk actually produced two divine leaves of different colors, it was

really bizarre. Moreover, there was other colorful radiance lingering around the sapling. One couldn't help but think, will there be a new colored-leaves if more were produced?

The sapling was really too mysterious, since it resembled a sproutling brimming with unlimited vitality, and yet it also resembled an ancient divine artifact that has been through endless vicissitudes of time.

The three skeletons looked at one another again and again, then they looked at Xiao Chen simultaneously, and they actually hinted him to..... scoop out the sapling!

Xiao Chen shook his head repeatedly, this sacred tree was extraordinary. If the rhizome was damaged during the excavation, that be the prime example of wasting natural resources recklessly. Besides, they are now on the Dragon Island, where could they have transplanted it?

Seeing that Xiao Chen was not moving, Lunhui Wang was about to go dig out the sapling carelessly. Qinguang Wang and Yanluo Wang was about to move their hands too.

Xiao Chen hastily stopped them from digging. In the end, he clenched his teeth and decided to dig! Rather than letting them degrade it, he might as well dig it himself. A sapling even the Sacred Dragon prostrated itself to worship shouldn't be an ordinary item. Let's dig it first and put off the discussion until later!

After an incomparably careful excavation, along with a big chunk of earth, Xiao Chen successfully excavated the beaming sapling. Then he turned around and dashed out of the valley without looking back.

The three skeletons were more like a thief, they followed after Xiao Chen and getaway without leaving any traces behind.



World of immortals, at the boundless south sea, the bluish-green wave shot towards the sky, and surging forward with great momentum.

Dragon Island, it was like a green pearl in the abyss of the ocean. The entire island was emerald-green, verdant and lush, brimming with unlimited vitality, the tall ancient trees and millennium old vines could be seen everywhere. The howling noise of the barbaric beasts rise and fall in succession. This is an ancient island that had been sealed for countless years.

Xiao Chen was holding the sacred tree that was the height of a palm on his head. He rushed out of the valley in high-speed, his body was enveloped by a glorious radiance, it was like a throbbing flame. His speed was extremely fast, he only left behind afterimages in the mountain forest. He arrived at the deathly swamp in only a few moment.

The three skeletons were also making their getaway without leaving a trace on the whole journey. As if they could feel something was about to happen, they turned their head to look around stealthily while running.

Sunlight was blocked by the dense ancient trees in the deathly swamp, making this place incomparably gloomy. Looking at the three skeletons who rushed over soon after, Xiao Chen felt somewhat suspicious. What were these three undead creatures so flustered about? Did something happened?

Even if he was suspicious, it was also not easy to communicate with the three skeletons. He attempted to inquire several times, but Qinguang Wang, Yanluo Wang, and Lunhui Wang, only answered by shaking their heads or waving their hands. After arriving at the deathly swamp, their nervousness faded away.

Xiao Chen did not believe the three skeletons were simple-minded. Since that time they pretended as dead bones to ambush Gu Luo, he already treated them as creatures with equal intelligent.

Seeing all kinds of expression on them today, it seemed like they already knew about the existence of the sacred tree long ago. But why are they only making their moves today? Suddenly, Xiao Chen couldn't help but shivers, could these three really be that sinister? Did they just shifted the blame onto that Sacred Dragon that just fell onto the Dragon Island today, and used it as a scapegoat? This sacred tree seemed..... to have a guardian!

Within the gloomy swamp, seven colored radiance curled around the palm sized mysterious sapling. The coiling "tree trunk" was as upright and strong as a young dragon. Two crystal clear jade leaves of different colors were gleaming with divine luster.

Now, the most crucial part is to find an appropriate place to plant this divine sproutling. If they let this kind of divine artifact wilt and die, that would truly be a sin. However, where would be a suitable spot? Xiao Chen found it was very difficult task to accomplish. The deathly swamp was filled with dense negative energy. Moreover, the miasma spread throughout the swamp when night fall. This place was very unsuitable.

The three skeletons gathered around Xiao Chen, they seemed to be very interested in this sacred tree. The bony claws stretched forward simultaneously, they actually wanted to pluck off the inky jade leaf. Xiao Chen hastily stopped

them, they really doesn't know how to use things sparingly. These three skeletons really make one feel somewhat speechless.

As if they knew Xiao Chen was worried about where to plant the sacred tree, Lunhui Wang pulled his sleeve and hinted Xiao Chen to follow it into the swamp. Walking until they arrived at a hidden location, the three skeletons casually pointed at a giant tree, then they pointed at the divine sproutling.

Seeing that Xiao Chen did not understand, Qinguang Wang simply pulled Xiao Chen's hand, making him stick the sacred tree onto the giant tree. Something amazing happened around this time, those crystal clear roots of the sapling automatically extended from the soil that Xiao Chen was holding. After that, it actually emitted a bright radiance, and take root in the tree trunk of the giant tree!

Now Xiao Chen knows for sure, these three skeletons must have seen this sapling before. Otherwise, how would they know so much regarding its magical properties.

Multicolored radiance curled up, the dense demonic aura was no longer present in the gloomy woodland. A palm-sized sapling actually made this place lighten up.

And just around this time, a burst of draconic roar could be heard from a few miles away. Xiao Chen jumped above the crown of an enormous ancient tree to survey the distant from an elevated position. He discovered the origin of the voice was really from the valley where they excavated the sapling earlier. It seemed like the Sacred Dragon ran into some trouble, the draconic roars pierced through the skies.

The three skeletons in the deathly swamp quickly separated from one another by mutual understanding. They conveniently lay beside a pile of white bones in the swamp, not even moving an inch, acting as if they were just ordinary skeletal remains.

Seeing all of these, Xiao Chen was dumbstruck, these three skeletons were actually playing dead. At the same time, it became obvious that his speculation was right on the mark. The three skeletons already knew about the existence of the divine sproutling, it seems like they really used the Sacred Dragon as a scapegoat this time..... these three sinister skeletons were really scheming.....

Chapter 34 – Miraculous

A deafening roar transmitted from the valley over there, even though the Sacred Dragon has lost its divine ability, it is still a powerful beast even on this island. If it seriously went berserk in the mountain forest, destroying the valley was an easy feat. It is hard to imagine its situation now.

A glorious silvery light soared into the sky, the Sacred Dragon flew out of the valley, and hover above the mountain forest while bellowing in rage. It seemed to be searching for something as it kept swooping down, casting its large shadow on the surface. Using its pair of huge dragon wings like divine swords, it swept across the mountain forest. A large area of forest was destroyed in an instant, causing all kind of creatures to flee and yelp in a frenzy.

In the end, it finally arrived above the deathly swamp. The bellow of rage rang out unceasingly, its huge draconic body generated a surge of gale. The gale shook the huge trees and caused the leaves in the swamp to dance about wildly. However, it didn't stop here for long and whizzed towards a distant place.

Xiao Chen exerted his strength to push Yanluo Wang and Qinguang Wang. However, they were still not moving an inch, the three skeletons which were playing dead on the ground seemed just like ordinary skeletal remains. Until a long time later, when this area finally reclaimed its former tranquility, did the three skeletons timidly sit up.

After stretching their joints, the three skeletons surrounded the huge tree and sat down. They raised their heads to gaze at the small sacred tree which has rooted to the huge tree. The spiritual lights in their skulls were pulsating unceasingly. In the end, the radiance emitted from the sacred tree actually flowed into their eye sockets.

There were seven colored-radiance lingering around divine sproutling. However, the three skeletons only absorbed the black radiance that was emitted by the crystal clear inky jade leaf. They are working hard to absorb the radiance circulating around the inky jade leaf.

That was indeed a sacred tree!

Xiao Chen was secretly surprised, he also started to operate his secret technique to try to absorb the dazzling radiance.

For a moment, the colorful radiance illuminated brilliantly, the glaring fog became denser, lighting up the gloomy swamp. Above the two jade leaves, the milky-white light beam and black light combined together, and entered every part of Xiao Chen's body like a water ripple. Two portion of gentle divine mist surrounded him, he felt comfortably warm from head to toe. His entire body felt incomparably relaxed, it felt as if his inner organs, flesh, and bones were going through a divine baptism. The purest of energy slowly circulated around his entire body.

Xiao Chen and the three skeletons immersed themselves in some kind of fantastic and mysterious boundary. They slowly and effectively drew the pure energy. It lasted until the radiance slowly dimmed, only after the water-like light wave gradually diminished did each of them wake up respectively.

The multicolored light was still revolving around the sapling. However, the giant tree that it take root on was already dead!

The giant tree requires at least five to six people to wrap their arms around it. Its originally upright tree trunk actually lost all of its vitality, small cracks

appeared all over the trunk. Its emerald green leaves also wilted, the yellow leaves were fluttering about as they were carried by the wind. In merely a moment, the originally vigorous ancient tree actually dried up completely!

Xiao Chen was gobsmacked, the three skeletons remained calm. Seems like they already knew this was going to happen, they easily plucked the sapling from the dried up giant tree, and then attached the sapling to the giant tree beside it. The glorious radiance go round and round.

One need not to think much to come to a conclusion, the tremendous energy from the sapling was actually absorbed from the ancient tree. Xiao Chen and the three skeletons just indirectly absorbed the ancient tree's essence.

Such a miraculous and scary sapling!

The three skeletons seemed like they still wanted to continue absorbing the black radiance from the inky jade leaf. Xiao Chen stopped them, he is now preparing to bring the three skeletons to carry out an operation. They cannot waste too much time regarding the affairs with Gu Luo and Zhao Lin Er, they must settle it as soon as possible.

Hiding the sapling in a dark place within the swamp, Xiao Chen set off with the three skeletons.

The cries of the apes resounded in the dense forest, ferocious beasts could be seen everywhere. This terrifying island was thoroughly filled with dangers. In accordance with the direction he surmised, Xiao Chen and the gang proceeded.

However, even after half a day later, they still didn't find a single clue.

In the afternoon, after they pass through a mountain range, the rumbling sound of water could be heard ahead of them. A big waterfall that resembled the milky way plunged down the mountain. A large amount of white water screen was hanging down, it generated an ear-splitting noise. Halfway up the mountain, a thick layer of mist pervaded the air. It was an extremely spectacular sight.

People couldn't help but exclaim in admiration, many landscapes on the sealed Dragon Island were exceptionally beautiful!

When they approached the waterfall, Xiao Chen saw two familiar figures.

The exceptionally charming Yan Qing Cheng was standing in front of the majestic waterfall. She was lightly dressed in amethyst clothes, it was indescribably stylish and elegant. It was as if her exceptionally beautiful figure came directly from a fantasy dream. And that Divine Spell Master, Lande, with a head full of glorious blonde hair, the whole person looked like a dazzling sun.

This could not be left unsaid, these two people's appearance were exceptional, their features were unworldly. They seemed to be a perfect pair.

The drizzle of water mist flowed down slowly. Xiao Chen halted his footsteps, the three skeletons were hiding in the woods behind him. Apparently, they could detect dangers ahead.

Evidently, Yan Qing Cheng who was standing on top of the precipice had noticed Xiao Chen already. She appeared exceedingly elegant under the flowing mist. However, as soon as she glimpsed at Xiao Chen, her face immediately distorted. She didn't do it deliberately, this was a reaction directly from her heart. In front of this waterfall with no strangers on the scene, she need not hide

her innermost impressions.

“Everyone ought to know their own place, only by staying within one’s bounds would one be able to survive. The Ancestral Dragon and Syndicate Dragon are not something everyone is capable to fight over!” The tone of Yan Qing Cheng’s voice was very beautiful. However, her voice was very cold.

Being despised by a world-class beauty, even Xiao Chen was not able to maintain his calm mood. The words from the opposing side contained a hint of killing intent. It makes him felt humiliated, if possible, he really wanted to push forward with his sword!

However, he was not an impertinent man, nor was he a hot-headed youngster. In the real world, even if you could not tolerate it anymore, you still had to endure! It is not the time to let emotions affect one’s decisions now. Since coming to the world of immortals, he shouldn’t be making one enemy after another. The most important thing was that he didn’t have the ability to fight two experts at once.

“I am not interested in the Ancestral Dragon nor the Syndicate Dragon, I am merely taking a look around the island. If there is a ship departing from this island, I will leave accordingly.”

Chapter 35 – Five Major Realms

The blonde-haired bishounen ¹, Lande, sneered faintly and said, “I advise you to leave the forest as soon as possible, if you lose your life due to curiosity, that is so not worth it!” This is the kind of attitude the experts used to “look down” on the weaklings, it was not as ineffective as the domineering aura of a conceited person, it was part of their instinct.

“Thanks for the reminder!” Xiao Chen immediately turned around and left. He was making supreme effort to contain his state of mind! Now is not the time to show off his strength, he believe some day in the future, everything will change when he get stronger.

If he didn’t suppress his power, and revealed his true strength, he could fight on equal ground with one person. However, he will certainly end up in defeat when facing two at once. Strength is everything! After getting far away from that area, Xiao Chen slowly calmed down, the fury in his heart already settled down. He knew, in the near future, they will inevitably fight!

Xiao Chen discovered many claw prints in the mountain woods nearby. It seemed like it was left behind by dragon claws. Moreover, it was a young dragon! Evidently, it was because of this, that Yan Qing Cheng and Lande turned this into a prohibited zone.

Not long later, Xiao Chen joined up with the three skeletons. They avoided the waterfall area and continued their journey.

After passing a small hill, Xiao Chen was able to smell the stench of blood in the woodland. A faint bloody mist was lingering in the forest, Xiao Chen and the three skeletons ran over there at high-speed. In the forest ahead of them, there

were five to six corpses lying flat on the pool of blood. They hadn't been dead for too long, it seems like a fierce fight was taking place here.

Evidently, more and more practitioners are coming ashore to this sealed Dragon Island!

Chasing after the tracks for some distance, Xiao Chen discovered a few traces of shadows in the forest. There were roughly a few dozens of people in the vicinity. Xiao Chen decided to keep away from here, he didn't want to be involved in other people's business.

However, just around this time, Xiao Chen felt a nonsensical fluctuation. He quickly turned around, and only saw a white-clothed monk approaching from the tip of a tree. His movement was fluid, and extremely graceful, it seemed as if he was just taking a stroll in the courtyard. However, his speed was very fast. That person was actually Buddhist Yizhen.

Clearly, Yizhen had also noticed Xiao Chen, he stopped slightly on the treetop, and then landed on the ground as light as a feather. When he saw the three skeletons, he shouted in astonishment, "Undead creatures."

"Master, I didn't expect we would encounter each other so soon."

"Just call me Yizhen, it is a small world indeed. I already left behind some marks for my senior brother. I decided to investigate the borderline zone of the Dragon Island first." Buddhist Yizhen turned his head to size up the three skeletons. After that, he faced Xiao Chen and said, "How did you end up with three undead creatures? Even though the practitioners on the mainland no longer treat them as a being that must be extinguished, it is still very hard for ordinary people and most of the experts to get buddy-buddy with the undead creatures. Staying

together with them might incur some inconvenience.”

“Many thanks for Brother Yizhen’s reminder. They saved my life a few times, there are not many people on this Dragon Island, I believe there shouldn’t be too much problem.”

“That is also true.” Yizhen nodded his head.

When the two were in the middle of a conversation, the three skeletons stood there like puppets with blank expressions. Only Xiao Chen who understood them knew, these three undead creatures were truly, too capable of acting! They were definitely putting on a facade deliberately.

Xiao Chen pointed at the corpses not far away and said, “Brother Yizhen, take a look.”

“I already noticed. When I was on the way, I saw a few corpses in other areas too. Right now, the numbers of practitioner on this Dragon Island should be as many as twenty people. This sealed ancient island is very vast, maybe there are many more.” Speaking until here, he turned his head around to face Xiao Chen and said, “Yan Qing Cheng and Lande are also in this area, it seems like they discovered the tracks of a young dragon. Maybe it might really be the Syndicate Dragon. You better not get too close to them, those two are dangerous figures. I also don’t plan to compete with them. I intend to leave here immediately.”

“Oh, just how powerful is their ability? Xiao Chen was relatively concerned about the two in question. He felt that sooner or later, he might have to fight against the two of them! Moreover, it seemed like the time will not be far away.

“Right now, they should be in the third or fourth celestial layer of ‘Exuvia’ realm.”

“Exuvia?” Xiao Chen did not understand.

“Yes.....”

After Buddhist Yizhen explained in detail, Xiao Chen gradually began to understand.

The world of immortals is vast and boundless, there are a great number of races, this also mean that there are many different kinds of training systems. Such as the Spell Master that draw the power from the venerable god, the ancient and mysterious Beast Soul Warrior ², a psychic with powerful innate Spiritual Power and exotic ability, the terrifying demigod that was born from some small clans close to extinction.....

If they didn’t have a power ranking to differentiate them, it would be really hard to tell just how powerful was an individual from a different training system. As a result, the power ranking was set up, but it didn’t include the ordinary practitioners. It divided the powerful experts into five major realms.

Most of the practitioners don’t have the qualifications to use these five realms to rank themselves. This was set up for the truly powerful experts, only when one delved into these five realms would they have the chance to challenge the legendary realm of immortality.

These five are: Exuvia, Historia, Zephyrus, Nirvana, and Immortalis! ³

There are untold numbers of practitioners out there, only after they delved into the realm of “exuvia” could they be considered to have grasped the true essence of meditation. It was like a moat around the heaven, preventing numerous practitioners from advancing!

Exuvia, anyone who entered this realm could be regarded as “transcendence”. They distinguished themselves from the others by leaping over the “moat” blocking their path to heaven. Along the path to immortality, the first step was the most crucial point. The worldly power, physique, and base power of the practitioners who entered the realm of exuvia will grow and multiply without end.

Historia, one who entered this realm will begin to touch upon the wisdom of god. Their Spiritual Power will increase drastically, and starts to realize that one’s own body is a big treasure. Comprehending the wisdom of god and strengthening the physical body at the same time, one would slowly discover their body’s hidden potential. All kinds of divine ability will be unearthed with the passage of time. Historia was precisely a process of “knowing thyself”, it was a process of “opening one’s own treasure chest”!

Zephyrus, the Spell Master could already fly before reaching this realm. When one’s ability reached this realm, regardless of whether one is a wise man, a martial artist, or a practitioner who trained in other systems, one will be able to resist gravity and fly in the sky freely. Naturally, Zephyrus really isn’t only limited to its superficial meaning, the practitioner at the level of Zephyrus signifies that they had already attained perfect control of the worldly essence, and powered up their divine ability one step further. The practitioners who reached this level had the rights to name themselves as a demigod!

Nirvana, one who reached this realm will become neither dead or alive, their body and mind will be trapped in the brink of death. They will linger around the boundary of life and death to comprehend the profound meaning between life

and death. If one thoroughly comprehended the secrets of life and death, they will become an immortal with one more step. However, if they failed, they might be consigned to eternal damnation, their body and soul will be entirely wiped out.

At the same time, the practitioners who are on this level, their ability are neither strong or weak. Their power is very unstable, when they are strong, they can unleash powers equivalent to Immortalis. When they are weak, their divine ability is even weaker than practitioners of Historia realm.

The realm of Nirvana was regarded by the practitioners as the greatest opportunity, but also the most ruthless one. Those who solved the riddles of life and death will break out of their cocoons and transform into butterflies. They will attain immortality and live on forever. Those who couldn't comprehend the secrets will be annihilated at this point, it is a cruel reality.

Immortalis, those who reached this realm will no longer be bound by the laws of the mortal world, they will live on for a lifetime. Many different kinds of profound mysteries will be self-taught, their Magic Power will rush forth from within, and divine ability will manifest from oneself.

Exuvia, Historia, Zephyrus, Nirvana, Immortalis, these five major realms clearly distinguished the strength of every experts in the world.

TI Notes :

1. Would you prefer bishounen, handsome youth or pretty boy?
2. TL: Reminds me of Elfman from Fairy Tail. ED: Reminds me of Dou Luo Da Lu.

1. 蜕凡、识藏、御空、涅槃、长生

TLN: Meh... I'm just getting whatever meaning in English I can get out of these and translate to latin with Google Translate.

Chapter 36 – Nine Celestial Layers

Exuvia, Historia, Zephyrus, Nirvana, Immortalis, these five major realm clearly distinguished the strength of every experts in the world.

Only people who entered these five realms could be considered a real expert. The realm of Exuvia was precisely a wall that divides the weak and the strong, it was like a heavenly wall that prevents overwhelming majority of the people from entering.

However, bottlenecks of Historia, Zephyrus, Nirvana, and Immortalis were not much easier to breakthrough! After entering the realm of Exuvia, and comprehended the true essence of meditation, there are still four more bottlenecks to breakthrough!

Thus, the gaps of strength between the five major realms were very huge. Very few could defeat an expert that was one rank higher. Moreover, the gaps between the same rank were also considerably big. Such as the junior of a certain realm vs the peak expert of the same realm, the differences between them were like heaven and earth.

Therefore, people made a subdivision, for every realm, they divided it into Nine Celestial Layers. Thus, Exuvia, Historia, Zephyrus, Nirvana, and Immortalis, these five major realms each possessed nine subcategories.

Five Major Realm! Every realms possessed Nine Celestial Layers!

The realm of the emperor, the peak of Immortalis! It is the ultimate realm that every practitioner yearns for! However, since ancient times, how many people

were able to achieve this goal?

According to the ranking system, Xiao Chen already stepped into the realm of Exuvia. After understanding the five major realms in details, he felt deeply moved.

Among these five major realms, the Immortalis rarely made an appearance. As far as the majority of people were concerned, they were simply a legendary existence. The practitioners of Nirvana were painstakingly overcoming death, it was even harder to encounter them. It was nearly impossible to find any traces of them.

The practitioners of the top two rank hardly appears on the mundane world. In a sense, the experts of Zephyrus were the really terrifying figures. They could resist gravity and fly freely, control the power of the worldly essence, and possessed various kinds of divine ability. It seemed like they could easily wipe out an entire region. As a result, they were revered as demigods!

Xiao Chen had seen the fight between the Fallen Angel and Sacred Dragon. They are precisely existences on this level! Without a doubt, even though they are as rare as phoenix feather and unicorn horn, the experts among them are not limited to this realm only. According to ancient legend, these ancient race were the offshoots of deities!

However, even though it is possible to see demigod level experts in the world of immortals, they would rarely get into a fight. After all, their power is too formidable, they could practically destroy everything in their path. When they really make their moves, it will inevitably cause a huge commotion on the mainland.

Demigod experts often intimidated their opponents, discouraging them from engaging in combats. On the contrary, Historia level experts were much closer to the ordinary people, so they had the chance to watch their fight. Therefore the practitioners of Historia were revered as war-god in the eyes of common people.

Among the experts of the five realms, the one that was most actively discussed was undoubtedly the practitioners of Exuvia. That is because some of the outstanding youths also stepped into this realm. With these group of youngsters among them, it would be hard not to enliven it. These experts are the closest to common people.

Yan Qing Cheng and Lande's abilities were around the third or fourth celestial layer of Exuvia realm, they already broke through the first bottleneck. They could be considered one of the few young experts, they indeed had the capability back up their arrogance.

"Immortalis, the dream of every practitioner!" Xiao Chen heaved a sigh.

"In our eyes, the Immortalis realm is a goal too high to reach. However, in the eyes of those immortals, it might be a new beginning." Buddhist Yizhen appeared to be rather moved, his expression seemed somewhat absent-minded, "Maybe they are pursuing the vast..... long forgotten..... ancient fairy tale world."

Xiao Chen did not know much about the history of the world of immortals, so he didn't pay much attention to these. What he wanted to know is, the fate of those historical figures that came from human world by distorting the dimension.

Dugu Qiubai, with a single sword, he looked at the whole world indifferently,

and destroyed everything under the sun. What level did he reach now? With limpid autumn waters to serve as her guise, and jade to serve as her bone, where did the Fairy Shi Feixuan go? With worldly intelligence, and quick thinking of the elves, where is the Sorceress Wan Wan nowadays?

And many more figures.....

Buddhist Yizhen already got out from the dazed state, the three skeletons were no longer acting foolishly. They lazily stretched their joints, Yanluo Wang even did a three hundred sixty degree somersault. There is not a single trace of foolishness left on their expression.

Originally, Xiao Chen wanted to leave this place, but his keen intuition detected several practitioners are currently closing in. They were carrying a hint of murderous aura, it seemed like someone wanted to kill him!

Everything was for the Syndicate Dragon, there were claw prints of a young dragon nearby. All the experts who entered this region wanted to fight over the legendary Dragon King, therefore they mutually slaughtered one another.

Xiao Chen laughed grimly, this kind of thing is not worthwhile for him to handle it himself. He retreated quickly with the three skeletons, trying to lure their pursuers to the waterfall. They planned to let Yan Qing Cheng and Lande handle them. The primitive jungle was verdant and lush, if one discovered that they were being tailed, it was very easy to break away from them. After they arrived at their destination, Xiao Chen and the three skeletons quickly changed direction, disappearing in the dense jungle.

The claw prints of the young dragon was even more concentrated in this area, the five practitioners quickly bumped into Yan Qing Cheng and Lande. Xiao Chen

stood at the tip of a tall ancient tree, he could vaguely see an energy-generated sword ray wrecking havoc in the forest. Soon after, a huge savage dragon created from condensed energy soared into the sky, producing a rumbling noise and entangled the sword ray.

This seemed like a battle between two Spell Master!

Xiao Chen didn't believe the power of Spell Masters originated from an esteemed god, he believed those ancient spell was a peculiar Heavenly Voice Regulation Technique that was capable of communicating with the worldly essence. Thus they were able to call upon the worldly essence and use it as they like. Naturally, this was merely Xiao Chen's wishful thinking.

The fight was very intense, rumbling noise echoed in the entire forest. A few purple lightning was actually dancing wildly in the woodland, many forest trees were destroyed by the lightning! Soon after, a light blade was moving back and forth in the woodland under the waterfall like a meteor. It caused the leaves in the mountain forest to flutter about, and countless forest trees to fall one after another.

The electric light flickered, more than half of the forest region was actually destroyed. A few human figures were faintly discernible, there were actually four to five people fighting against Lande, and Yan Qing Cheng haven't even made her moves yet.

The noise of the fight attracted several practitioners, they were like a tiger watching their prey at the side.

“Roooooar.....”

Not far away, a huge draconic sound was transmitted over. The ear-splitting sound wave caused the entire mountain forest to shake, and the dead leaves to swirl in the air, it was extremely terrifying. It frightened the mountain birds, causing them all to soar into the sky unceasingly. Many wild beasts flee in every directions, this region burst into a fit of chaos.

A vicious dragon was disturbed by the fight! It was very close to this area, it was in the valley only one mile away from here.

The fight in the vicinity of the waterfall ceased immediately, three party retreated in three different direction, quickly disappearing in the mountain forest. The vicious dragon didn't chase after them, it only bellowed for a few times and finally calmed down. The dangerous situation in their imagination didn't come to light.

However, Xiao Chen had a different ideas in mind, if he was to leave here, it just so happens that he needed to pass through that valley. He might as well go find out the situation of the vicious dragon, maybe there will be a nice surprise to be discovered.

The valley was not very wide, it was not even one square kilometer. The trees were very sparse in the valley, there were barely a few dozens of tall ancient trees. The other areas were flattened by the vicious dragon, not even a blade of grass grows.

Chapter 37 – Jasper Egg

A dark green vicious dragon emitted a fiendish aura, it walked around slowly in the valley. Its body length could stretch up to twenty meter, it was as tall as ten meter, its body seemed as heavy as an elephant. But of course, its body was much bigger than an elephant. Its neck was as long as a huge snake, it was about eight meter long. Its draconic head was also very similar to that of a snake, except there was an addition of an incomparably sharp horn. Its tail was also just as scary, it appeared similar to the tail of a huge lizard, it was about ten meter long.

Elephant-like body, snake-like head, its entire body was covered in dark green scales, glittering like frost and snow. it seemed very imposing and fierce, the baleful aura released by the vicious beast filled the entire valley. It caused all the birds and beasts to stay away from this area.

This is the legendary Elephants Draco! ¹ Even though it was not comparable to fierce dragons such as the Tyrannical Dragon and Eight-Clawed Tyrant Dragon, it was still as strong as the Sacred Dragon. However, on this sealed Dragon Island, it will never be able to use its legendary divine power anymore, it can only rely on its brute strength.

However, with its powerful body, as well as its tyrannical draconic strength, even if it lost all kinds of divine power, it was not affected much. It merely couldn't attack from a distance only, it is still as powerful as a demigod in close-combat! Perhaps, practitioners that haven't reached the level of demigods couldn't even leave a slightest scratch on it.

In the dead center of the valley, there is a woodland that was destroyed a long time ago. The forest trees that was destroyed were used to build a simple dragon

nest. Looking from the distant, there were actually several jade-like dragon eggs within the nest! The dragon eggs were as clear as green jade. Dazzling radiance was released by the eggs, a green mist lingered around, making that place glow with a divine radiance.

Xiao Chen and the three skeletons stood on top of the precipice at the side of the valley, they could see everything in the valley clearly. The Elephans Draco actually laid several dragon eggs. It was not a question of how many dragon eggs were laid, but rather how long ago did it lay the eggs. According to the legends, the Ancestral Dragon and Syndicate Dragon will make an appearance soon, it is hard to guarantee that it won't emerge from the later generations of the Elephans Draco!

“Bang! Bang! Bang!”

The quaking of earth was transmitted from the inner valley, the Elephans Draco walk with heavy steps towards the outside of the valley. After some time had passed, the wail of a wild elephant could be heard from the mountain forest. Not long later, the Elephans Draco dragged a huge elephant back to the valley. It lie on the valley and began to enjoy its food.

The scene was somewhat bloody, it makes one feel sick to watch it. Not far away from it, there were a big pile of bones. It must be the remains of the animals it hunted for food.

The vicious dragon was ruthless, in a short period of time, it swallowed the entire elephant. It seemed like it didn't have enough yet, it moved its enormous body and went out of the valley again.

Meanwhile, Xiao Chen noticed Yan Qing Cheng, Lande, and seven other

practitioners were attracted by the draconic roars. They were observing from the mountain forest just outside of the valley. It seemed like they wanted to make sure if this valley have any young dragon.

Xiao Chen tried to communicate with the three skeletons. Naturally, he needed to talk continuously, and using his hands to gesture. He couldn't hear the voice of the three skeletons.

“Get down from this cliff, each person carry one dragon egg!”

“Clack! Clack.....!” The three skeletons were puzzled as they open and closed their jaws.

“I am talking about those crystal clear thing that emitted divine radiance.” Xiao Chen used his finger to point those dragon egg within the dragon nest.

.....

He wanted them to go steal the dragon eggs, the three skeletons were very unwilling. They knew the Elephants Draco was not to be trifled with. However, they were still persuaded by Xiao Chen in the end. They nimbly climbed down from the cliff, Xiao Chen nervously watched the entrance of the valley, keeping a “lookout” for the three skeletons. Last time the three skeletons wanted Xiao Chen to dig the divine sproutling no matter what, this time can be considered to be even.

Qinguang Wang and the other two were extremely fast, they only left behind three stripes of white light in the valley. They rushed close to the dragon nest in an instant. The three skeletons did not hesitate, each of them carried a

millstone-sized jasper dragon egg, and make their getaway like a thief.

“Roar.....” The bellow of the Elephants Draco was transmitted from a distant mountain forest, it seemed like the Elephants Draco already killed its prey.

Xiao Chen nervously observed the surrounding on top of the precipice. Lunhui Wang and the other two skeletons were more like their ass had been set on fire, they increased their speed to the limit. Fortunately, the valley was not even one square kilometer, it was not very wide, three stripes of white light rushed to the bottom of the cliff at lightning speed.

The three skeletons were super strong, they carried the huge dragon egg with a single hand, and climbed up the cliff quickly. During the moment they rushed up the cliff, a “booming” sound was transmitted from the entrance of the valley. The earth quaked slightly, the imposing Elephants Draco dragged a huge tiger that was about five to six meter long back to the valley.

The three skeletons seemed to have lingering fears, Qinguang Wang was patting its chest like what a human would do. It doesn't resembled a skeleton at all, it was clearly a human with deep emotion.

Even though the differences between Elephants Draco and Eight-Clawed Tyrant Dragon were rather big, their dragon eggs was about the same size, both was as big as a millstone. The glorious brilliance illuminated the plants on top of the cliff, the crystal clear eggshell was as beautiful and bright as a jadeite. The splendid afterglow was slowly circulating around the mountain forest, words can't even begin to describe how miraculous it was.

Xiao Chen make the three skeletons move the dragon eggs to the rear of the mountain forest to prevent the Elephants Draco below to notice the multicolored

light. This was indeed a heaven-sent opportunity.

After tearing apart more than half of the huge tiger, the Elephans Draco felt something was not right. It attentively walked towards the dragon nest, a world-shaking roar suddenly break out from the valley. The terrifying dragon roar pierced through the skies.

There were originally five jasper dragon eggs, now they are only two remaining. The Elephans Draco went into berserk-mode, it ran around the valley at high-speed, almost causing the valley itself to shake. After an incomparably furious roar, it dashed out of the valley like a madman.

Outside of the valley was utter chaos, the Elephans Draco already rushed into the primitive jungle, all the trees blocking its path was toppled over and turned upside down, the leaves swirled in the air, thousands of beast fleeing in all directions. It was rare for the Elephans Draco to go berserk like this, it was the overlord of this area. All the beasts in the field and the birds in the air flee in disarray, including many fierce-looking exotic beasts.

All the practitioners that were prying into the valley in hope to find the Syndicate Dragon, had the urge to utter a curse. How did it come to this? Who was it that provoked the Elephans Draco, could it be that there was really a young Dragon King within the valley, someone entered the valley to seize it, and was caught by this vicious dragon?

At the moment, they didn't dare to think too much, they could only run with all their might. They wished that they had a pair of wings, this Elephans Draco was too terrifying. Everything in its path was destroyed, it was practically an enormous killing machine.

Yan Qing Cheng and Lande also suffered the same fate. At this moment, the two of them were also unable to keep their calm. Aside from the vicious dragon that was wrecking havoc, this area was also filled with many startled beasts. Their situation was extremely dangerous, the two of them mixed into the army of beasts to flee.

Chapter 38 – The Power of Elephans Draco

One could only describe the scenario before their eyes as total chaos, bellow of the beasts shook the heaven, the mountain forest quaking like never before, dead leaves swirling in the air, all kind of creatures running in every directions, if Yan Qing Cheng and the rest knew it was Xiao Chen who caused this mess, they will certainly vow to tear him into pieces. Right now, all of them were caught up in a dangerous situation.

The mountain forest on the other side was in total chaos, but the primitive forest behind the valley is still as peaceful as before. Xiao Chen let the three skeletons seize the opportunity to escape, he stayed behind to cover their retreat.

Yanluo Wang, Qinguang Wang, and Lunhui Wang were each carrying a dragon egg while making their escape without leaving a trace. They headed towards the deathly swamp at lightning speed. Seeing that everything is normal, Xiao Chen also retreated quickly, he didn't continue to observe whether the Elephans Draco could kill Yan Qing Cheng and the rest of them. The most important thing is to leave this chaotic mountain forest as soon as possible. After all, he was the main culprit.

In regards to Yan Qing Cheng, Lande, and the rest of them, today is an incomparably vexing day. However, for Xiao Chen, it is a very refreshing and incomparably carefree day. This could also be regarded as an indirect response to Yan Qing Cheng and Lande's taunt.

By the time Xiao Chen returned to the deathly swamp, the sunset glow was lingering on the Western horizon, a large number of clouds rendered the entire sky bright red. The day is already getting late.

The reason why he treated this deathly swamp as his temporary residence was because there is an Undead King here that will not move unless something big occurred. It can intimidate the monsters, making them not dare to approach. Moreover, the three skeletons are more familiar with this area, if they encounter any danger, this place can act as a pretty good buffer zone.

The three skeletons had returned a long time ago, three crystal clear jasper eggs were made to stay put in the swamp by them. They were actually treating the eggs as stools and sit on top of it. They are really..... unique.

Out of Xiao Chen's expectation, the giant tree that was rooted by the divine sproutling did not wilt and die. On the contrary, its leaves were emerald-green, it seemed as if a layer of faint green radiance was flickering. The surrounding was filled with dense spiritual energy. It makes the swamp around the giant tree full of vitality.

Xiao Chen understood in a moment, the divine sproutling was not scary at all. It didn't simply absorb the vitality of the giant tree, but rather gaining the benefits together. With its existence, the giant tree could draw the worldly essence at high-speed. Compared to the past, it is many fold faster!

Last time, the reason why the giant tree dried up was most likely because of Xiao Chen and the three skeletons. The four of them drew most of the energy, their demands exceeded the supply, which resulted in the decline of the ancient tree.

Lunhui Wang and the other two were sitting on the dragon eggs, the spiritual light in their eye sockets were throbbing. They were looking at the seven-colored radiance lingering around the sapling impatiently. Xiao Chen spent a lot of effort

to persuade them to take turns, they must not kill the goose that lays the golden eggs.

Three dragon eggs were glittering with green radiance, this was a really huge gain!

After the sunset glow faded away, Xiao Chen and the three skeletons arrived at the forest region around the edge of the swamp. Qinguang Wang and the others were not affected by the undead miasma, but if Xiao Chen was exposed to it for a long period of time, he would definitely be unable to endure it.

The shiny sacred tree, and the glittering dragon eggs, set each other off nicely. It caused the spiritual energy in the forest to become denser, the radiance was flowing like the ripples of the water.

The three skeletons could absorb the power of the crystal stone, and the pure energy lingering around the sacred tree. However, they could not absorb the life energy of the dragon egg. It was because the dragon egg contained enormous amount of life energy, they needed to refine it one step further to change it into the pure energy that they can absorb.

Yanluo Wang and the other two did a great job, Xiao Chen allowed them to absorb the energy from the tiny sacred tree one by one, and leave the divine sproutling some time to recover. He hoped that the tiny sacred tree could grow one step further after accumulating and refining enough worldly essence.

In addition, Xiao Chen gave the three skeletons all the remaining few dozens of high-class crystal stones that he was keeping. This made the three undead creatures so excited that they did a few somersault in succession. The more time Xiao Chen spent with these skeletons, he discovered that these three were not

lacking vigour at all. On the contrary, they are very lively.

Night time, a bright radiance was lingering around the woods. Xiao Chen split one of the dragon eggs. A boundless life energy spread over a large area in a split second, it transformed into a miniature Elephants Draco. It makes a threatening gesture and threw itself at Xiao Chen. It was quickly captured by Xiao Chen and brought into his body.

After experiencing it once, it was not as painful as the last time. While refining the life energy of the fierce dragon, he guided the boundless energy to circulate within his body.

One dragon egg doesn't seem to be very big, but the life energy contained within it was immeasurable. After all, it will grow into a vicious dragon in the future! An inexhaustible green divine radiance wrapped Xiao Chen within, it was throbbing like a searing divine flame. The fluctuation of life energy was very fierce, looking from the distant, it was like a lump of raging divine flame.

The three skeletons were a little amazed as they looked at Xiao Chen. They could vaguely see an Elephants Draco that was twinkling with green divine radiance coiling around Xiao Chen while making a threatening gesture. It was swallowing and nipping the life energy forcefully.

However, with the passage of time, the light and shadow of the Elephants Draco gradually dimmed. On the other hand, Xiao Chen's skin was flickering with crystal clear light. The "power" emitted from his entire person seemed much more powerful than before.

It lasted until the midnight, the searing divine flame throbbing outside of Xiao Chen's body finally died down and entered his body. His expression became

sharper, it was as he expected, the enormous life energy of the dragon did not merge with the pure energy he personally developed. On the contrary, all the them gathered in the “Center Palace Point”¹ to form into a tiny light speck. One more acupuncture point was divinized!

The “Center Palace Point” is located around the chest area, at the bottom most of the sternum. At the moment, the “Center Palace Point” was filled with a glorious speck of light, however it was not completely filled yet.

Elephans Draco could not resist the Eight-Clawed Tyrant Dragon, the life energy contained in the dragon egg it laid was also incomparable to the dragon egg of the Tyrant Dragon. One could clearly feel the differences between the vicious dragon from this. Fortunately, Xiao Chen still had two more dragon eggs, he was convinced that he will be able to completely transform the “Center Palace Point” today.

Today, after condensing the enormous dragon energy into his acupoint, he felt somewhat different from before. Apparently, his own life energy had increased tremendously, he could feel an indescribable amount of life energy.

Without thinking too much, Xiao Chen split the second dragon egg. The dazzling radiance of life once more lingered around the woods, a lump of raging divine flame wrapped Xiao Chen within it.

The three skeletons were no longer interested, they also started to concentrate on drawing the energy of the crystal stones. Dozens of high quality crystals were crushed by their spiritual light, refined into multicolored lights that slowly merged with the bones all over their body. After that, it entered their spiritual light again, their spiritual light were slowly expanding, the bones were gradually gaining another few layers of luster.....

Chapter 39 – Increase in Power

Early morning, the splendor of the morning radiance shine upon dewdrop on the leaves and flowers, making them seem like a crystal clear pearl. The fresh air was very refreshing.

Xiao Chen was already awake, he finally completely refined the enormous dragon energy contained within the second dragon egg. The “center palace point” at the tip of his chest was finally completely filled. The light speck and acupuncture point perfectly fused together. Compared to other acupuncture point, it was like a lantern in the dark of the night.

The third acupoint was transformed due to the contribution of two Elephants Draco eggs!

At this moment, Xiao Chen clearly felt somewhat different from before. The life energy from his body seemed much more powerful and abundant. The “Shang Hill Point” in his left and right foot, the “Center Palace Point” in his chest, these three acupoints seemed to be linked together by a slight trace of life energy! If one inspected closely, one was unable to see the traces of flowing life energy clearly. However, they could vaguely feel it.

Xiao Chen felt very delighted, what kind of abnormality would occur in the future, he didn't know. However, his life energy has now become abundant and powerful, the benefits will definitely be huge.

People said cats have nine lives, that is because the life energy they possessed was sufficiently abundant. As a result, even if they suffered heavy injury many times, they would still be able to live on. Xiao Chen did not count on becoming an undying cat with nine life, but if he sustained any injury again, his wounded

body will be healed by the abundance of life energy. The speed of recovery will inevitably become much faster.

The instant he got up, Xiao Chen felt his body was much lighter than before. Moreover, his strength also increased tremendously. By lightly waving his muscles and bones, he left behind a few afterimages in the woods, a few dazzling light blades were dispersed with a simple wave of both hands. All the giant trees in the way were chopped in half without resistance. With a rumbling sound, all the giant trees fell down and lie flat on the forest ground, dead leaves were swirling in the air.

His power increased tremendously! Only after a very long time did Xiao Chen finally calmed down, the transformed acupoints seemed to have exceeded his imagination.

Before he was only able to convince himself that his ability was around the second celestial layer of exuvia, or perhaps around the third celestial layer. He couldn't be sure, but now he is confident that he has reached the third or fourth celestial layer. In addition to his abundance of life energy, he believes he can handle experts around the level of fourth celestial layer, or maybe even opponents a little stronger than that!

Xiao Chen is looking forward to the day that all the three hundred and sixty-five acupoint completely transformed with high expectation!

So many tall ancient trees in the woods were cut down by the dazzling light blade dispersed by Xiao Chen. However, even with such a big disturbance, the three skeletons didn't react in the slightest. Qinguang Wang, Yanluo Wang, and Lunhui Wang encircled the last remaining dragon egg. It seemed like they were nervously watching something.

Since Xiao Chen woke up, he kept inspecting the changes in his own body, he didn't pay attention to his surrounding. He didn't took notice of the three skeletons, only now did he clearly feel something was out-of-place. He quickly walked towards there to look, the outcome made him feel dumbstruck.

The palm-sized rainbow-colored sacred tree rooted itself to the jasper-like dragon egg. The divine radiance circulated like ripples of water, the trunk of the sapling is even sturdier than before. The big inky jade leaf was glittering with black radiance, and that small crystal clear white jade leaf seemed to have grown much bigger!

Such a mystical sacred tree! It was actually able to absorb the essence of the dragon egg, capable of refining the enormous life energy of the dragon.

The eggshell that was flickering with green radiance gradually became dimmer. Then cracks began to form slowly, with a 'pop' sound, the egg was finally shattered into small pieces. Not even the slightest trace of life energy fluctuation was found in the egg, there was only a glistening yellow liquid that flowed all over the ground.

Xiao Chen held the divine sproutling with both hands, this is really such a mystical treasure! He didn't feel too bad regarding the lost of the dragon egg.

"The three of you put it on top of the dragon egg?"

The three skeletons shook their heads at the same time.

"I didn't blame you guys. On the contrary, you guys did a good job."

Qinguang Wang and the others still shook their heads, with their jaw generating clacking sounds, and gesturing with their body claws unceasingly, they spent a lot of effort to make Xiao Chen understand what they were implying. The small sacred tree actually rooted onto the dragon egg all by itself.

How is this possible? How could it move by itself! However, it was impossible for the three skeletons to lie. It seems like the tiny sacred tree really did fell from the giant tree and attach to the dragon egg by itself.

It was a very strange phenomenon, Xiao Chen was somewhat puzzled.

Xiao Chen could vaguely feel that his body was transforming. The essence of training was to continuously break the shackles of the human body, to achieve the constant transformation and promotion of oneself. He clearly felt that his body was slowly changing.

The three skeletons as well, after refining dozens of highest quality crystal stones, and using the tiny sacred tree to aid training, they seemed different compared to before. The spiritual light in their skulls became a little brighter, the traces of luster on their bones was much smoother than before. They are becoming more and more lustrous.

Xiao Chen decided that no matter how much crystal stones he earned in the future, he will give them to the three skeletons immediately. So as to let them transform constantly and advance towards a higher evolution. What he wanted was to transform his acupoint, which needed an enormous amount of energy. An ordinary crystal stone will not be able to satisfy him, unless it was a Dragon Crystal. Otherwise it will be like a cup of water on a burning cart of firewood, it will never be able to satisfy him.

After the tiny sacred tree absorbed the essence within the Elephans Draco egg, the seven-colored radiance lingering around became even more magical. The white jade leaf might become as big as the inky jade leaf very soon.

After carefully placing the divine sproutling in the depths of the swamp, and burying the pieces of jasper-like Elephans Draco eggshell, Xiao Chen and the three skeletons began their journey again. He must resolve the problem with Zhao Lin Er and Gu Luo as soon as possible.

At the time of setting off, Xiao Chen suddenly recalled those group of Mystical Giant Ape. When Zhao Lin Er was saved by the young unicorn, that four-armed crimson ape led a group of apes to go after them. Maybe they can get some important clues from that place.

Not long later, Xiao Chen and the three skeletons showed up in the vicinity of the Stone Forest where the giant apes were dwelling. Unlike the other region, this place is very peaceful. The constant bellow of the beasts could not be heard in this region. The fragrant of flowers and plants around the Stone Forest pervaded the air, the lovely birdsong was pleasant to listen to, many vines twisted around the Stone Forest.

“Roar.....” A bellow of rage was transmitted over, a three meter tall elderly ape flashed out from the Stone Forest. It kept releasing a low growl as it rushed towards Xiao Chen and the gang. It exposed extreme hostility towards Xiao Chen, this group of giant ape was in a friendly relationship with Xiao Chen for several days. However, because of the death of a single ape, their relationship fell apart.

Xiao Chen already knew these group of giant apes possessed intelligence, he

patiently gestured to explain, he wish they could provide any clues regarding Zhao Lin Er.

The cries of the young apes transmitted from the Stone Forest, a few immature apes leaped out of the Stone Forest. There was also one elderly ape following after them. Apparently, the fully grown giant apes are not around, only two elderly apes remained to look after the young apes, and watch over their dwelling. It was easy to tell the two elderly apes were somewhat nervous.

By means of constant gesturing, and explaining over and over again, the elderly apes seemed to have understood what Xiao Chen was implying to some degree. One of them leapt into the depths of the jungle as if it was flying, it went in search of the other giant apes.

After at least half an hour later, a few dozens of long cries was transmitted from a distant location. The crimson ape led dozens of giant apes over here and surrounded Xiao Chen, each and every one of them were growling unceasingly. They seemed very hostile.

Xiao Chen knew he couldn't come to this place anymore in the future. The little bit of friendship they had before was completely shattered. He tried to get through to them by explaining repeatedly, and constantly using his hands to make a gesture. He even went as far as drawing Zhao Lin Er and the young unicorn's portrait on the ground. The crimson ape was an intelligent beast after all, it finally understood and snarled at the other apes. After that, it brought Xiao Chen and the three skeletons by itself towards a certain direction of the ancient primitive forest, it left by jumping into the dense forest first.

Instead of going into the depths of the island, they were led towards the west. One couldn't help but feel that the crimson ape was extraordinary, its body and hands were incomparably strong. It was impossible for Xiao Chen and the three

skeletons to leap over the branches and leaves for a long period of time. However, at least they could still keep up with the crimson ape in the woods, it was unlikely for them to be left behind and lost track of the crimson ape.

After passing through a few mountain range, the crimson ape finally stopped. The ape pointed at the ancient primitive forest in the mountain range ahead of them, and let out a few growls. It didn't continue to advance, it seemed like the region in front of them is filled with dangers. Even the crimson ape doesn't dare to approach.

Chapter 40 – No Need to Endure!

Xiao Chen knitted his eyebrows, judging from the crimson ape's behavior, this matter will not be easy to deal with. Even this kind of monstrous beast doesn't dare to go further than this. The mountain range is clearly not a merciful land.

"Roar....." The crimson ape let out a low growl, then it left without even turning back, heading towards the depths of the jungle.

Xiao Chen pondered for a while, then he decided to move forward. He started his journey along with the three skeletons.

After trekking through two mountain ranges, one after another deep and low beastly howls could be heard from the front. Even though the sound was not loud, it gives people an extremely dangerous oppressive feeling.

After passing through a dense shrubbery, Xiao Chen and the three skeletons headed towards the origin of those beastly howls. Along the way, they actually discovered quite a few corpses that belong to some unfamiliar practitioners. They died in an extremely nasty state, it seems like they were ripped apart alive. It was obvious to see that they haven't been killed too long ago. A bloody mist is still lingering in the forest, the stench of blood is extremely pungent.

The people getting on this Dragon Island is obviously growing in number. These people most likely encountered a vicious beast. But as Xiao Chen drew near to the origin of the beastly howls, his speculation from a moment ago was overthrown. Those practitioners weren't killed by the vicious beasts!

In front of him, the atrocity is still taking place, he clearly saw the truth before

him. A tall demonic figure is currently slaughtering in the forest, the moment it brandished its huge claw, bright-red blood rushed forth. It tore apart the body of a practitioner with bare hands, the liver and other internal organs spilled all over the ground. The blood splashed all over the place, the scene was extremely ruthless.

The demonic figure was tall and majestic, it was about three meter tall, it possessed a pair of wolf-like ears. Moreover, it also possessed a long and powerful tiger-like tail. It was actually someone Xiao Chen had met before — the young expert from Barbarian Tribe, Chaos.

Even though he possessed the body and appearance of a human, he looked as if he was just a human-shaped beast at the moment. He was heartless and cruel, two terrifying green lights emitted from his pair of eyes. The aura released by him was the same as that of a wild beast.

“Ah.....”

A miserable shriek transmitted here again, Chaos turned around with all his might, that long and powerful tiger tail of his was like an incomparably sharp magic sword. It emitted a terrifying and bewitching radiance, it actually snapped the body of the last practitioner beside him in half!

“Roar.....”

Chaos let out a deep and low beastly howl, the terrifying green light in his eyes gradually dimmed. The persona of a ferocious beast slowly faded away, the powerful young expert of the Barbarian Tribe, his strength was unquestionable. His atrocious personality was somewhat frightening, it was not an exaggeration to call him a human-shaped beast.

The young expert from the Jungle Tribe, Yaluo De, who was together with Chaos, was standing not far away from here. He was just watching everything unfolding before his eyes with a tranquil expression.

“Come out!” Chaos was as keen as a wild beast, he turned his head and look towards Xiao Chen’s direction in an instant.

At the same time, the vegetation behind Xiao Chen and the three skeletons danced about wildly. Many vines grew at ridiculous speed, leaving them with no path to escape. It was clearly the doings of Yaluo De who was capable of controlling the vegetation.

“Are you!” Seeing Xiao Chen revealed himself, Chaos released a dangerous beastly aura from his entire body, and asked, “You are tailing us?”

“No, please do not misunderstand.”

Yaluo De focused his gaze on the three skeletons, even though his body was very frail, his aura was not weak. He said in a heavy tone, “It’s actually undead creatures. Hey!”

The ominous glint in Chaos’ eyes flickered, he took large strides forward, and gave people a powerful oppressive feeling.

Yaluo De didn’t lack behind, he moved towards Xiao Chen and said with a neutral voice that was filled with murderous intent, “A little bird shouldn’t flutter about in front of a dragon, otherwise they will only face self-destruction!” His body emitted a faint green radiance, the green vegetation in front of him

separated automatically, creating a green tunnel for him.

Even though his body is frail, his aura at the moment is on par with Chaos. He emitted a killing intent, it goes without saying that he compared Xiao Chen to a little bird, and himself as a huge dragon. This is an arrogance founded from one's self-confidence, and also a type of humiliation.

Xiao Chen was furious, however he only deflected their attacks and left without saying a word. He already conceded, if Yaluo De and Chaos still wanted to block him, then he will have no choice but to fight!

Bypassing the blockage of the vines, Xiao Chen and the three skeletons gradually disappeared in the woods.

Chaos looked at Xiao Chen's figure from behind, his pair of eyes were still flickering with the beastly radiance, and said, "He is really so weak....."

Yaluo De watched the woods attentively, he laughed faintly and said, "He is suppressing his own power, just now I felt his ability cannot be regarded as too weak. However..... hmph! Anyone who entered the Dragon Island, if they are not from our alliance, then they are our competitor. I wanted to find a good reason to eliminate any unexpected elements. But he was actually able to endure silently, for the time being, we will let him off. Don't say we didn't give Buddhist Yizhen any face."

"Is that so, I didn't have that much to worry about, just let me dispose of him!" Chaos had a really sturdy body, as soon as he finished his sentence, he left behind an afterimage in the place he was just standing. His tall body soared into the sky, he grabbed the branches of the tree with his huge hands like a monkey, and disappeared from that ancient tree in the twinkling of an eye.

Xiao Chen had merely distanced himself for a few hundred meter only. Suddenly, he felt the presence of a ferocious beast closing in at lightning speed. Just when he turned his head around, he discovered the treetop of a huge tree behind him snapped off with an explosive sound. It fell down along with a tall silhouette, the moment he landed on the ground, branches below him instantly disintegrated!

Chaos was practically like a wild beast, he destroyed everything that was in his path. All the trees and branches in his way were crushed by his body that emitted yellow radiance. He threw himself at Xiao Chen like a demonic ape, he was practically a human-shaped beast!

If it was impossible to avert the situation, then the only choice was to fight to the death! This is Xiao Chen's bottom line and principle.

He already made quite a few enemies on this Dragon Island, he wanted to avoid offending others as much as possible. However, it seems like that was just his own wishful thinking. Each and every person on the Dragon Island are fighting over the Ancestral Dragon and Syndicate Dragon King, they will mutually kill each other without question. It is impossible even if one wanted to settle the dispute peacefully!

As long as one is on the Dragon Island, it is impossible to avoid getting caught up in mass massacre.

Xiao Chen wanted to avoid offending them previously, but that doesn't mean he is a coward. On the contrary, he is a man who can kill without blinking an eye. Since the other side is being so forceful, and passed the bottom line he set in his heart, there is no need for any more words to be said, it's either kill or be killed!

Chapter 41 – Use Violence To Curb Violence

Xiao Chen unceasingly formed a seal with both hands ¹, he formed one after another mysterious life and death magic circles. Specks of radiance flickered unsteadily, then it become brighter and brighter, until it finally become as bright as a star. Finally, along with the wave of both hands, the glorious stars soared into the sky, it was as if the starry sky had suddenly covered the sky of the woodland.

Chaos, who were throwing himself at Xiao Chen, clearly felt the threat of death. After a hysterical howl, a greenish-yellow radiance burst out from his body, one could vaguely see a large wolf and fierce tiger floating beside him. They emitted two extremely oppressive roars that frightened all the creatures in the vicinity, causing them unable to hold back their wail!

The two faintly discernible beasts were incomparably mystical and tyrannical. They actually opened their huge mouth and gobble up the mysterious star diagram. Xiao Chen was a little surprised, the legend was really true, some of the Barbarian Tribe experts have ancient beast soul sealed within their body. They possessed astounding potential!

The three meter tall Chaos ² landed in the woods, his yellow-brownish long hair messily draped over his shoulders. His pair of eyes were brimming with brutal radiance. Right now, he seemed like an incomparably terrifying king of the beasts. He emitted an extremely powerful fiendish aura.

“I never thought you were this powerful, I always neglected you until now. Not only me, I guess Yan Qing Cheng and Lande were also the same!” Saying until here, Chaos let out a deep and low beastly howl, “People like you are very dangerous, it would be better to completely exterminate you today!”

At the moment, it is hard to tell whether Chaos is a man or a beast, he snarled as he dashed towards Xiao Chen.

Xiao Chen was at the end of his patience, he really couldn't tolerate it anymore!

Xiao Chen raised his aura to the peak, he was so fast that an afterimage was left in his original position. He emitted an earth-shattering aura to welcome the young expert from Barbarian Tribe, Chaos. An unparalleled burst of power shook the forest trees in the vicinity, causing them to collapse one after another.

Without any trickery, he just directly met Chaos' attack head on. With a loud explosive sound, incomparably dazzling radiance charged towards the heaven like a huge tsunami. The collision against the divine wolf and fierce tiger that wildly threw themselves from Chaos' body caused boundless energy to burst out. The dazzling radiance was like a great waves that engulfed everything in all directions.

With a banging and rumbling noise, a large amount of forest trees were destroyed, the withered leaves fluttered about hysterically. The huge trees even further away collapsed one after another, it was as if there were ancient monsters battling here. A tiny piece of woodland perished immediately.

A turbulent aura pervaded the entire area, the young expert from Barbarian Tribe, Chaos, whose body was made up of powerful energy, was actually sent flying backwards uncontrollably. His three meter tall physique emitted greenish-yellow radiance, a row of huge trees snapped off from the impact! He was actually pushed back by pure energy!

It seemed as if there was a raging flame outside of Xiao Chen's body. At the moment, he resembled an incomparably tyrannical Barbarian Tribesman. His pair of eyes emitted a raging radiance, his black long hair brushed lightly by the wind, he took large strides forward, every step he took, the mountain woods quaked along. It was as if a giant was moving, he emitted an incomparably terrifying pressure that caused people to feel fearful.

The mountain forest is unusually quiet at this moment, all the wild beasts had ceased yelling. The only sound that could be heard was the footsteps of the raging Xiao Chen.

In the mountain woods a distant away, seven to eight practitioners who were concealing their presence exposed an astonished expression. Nobody other than them knew just how formidable Chaos is. Not long ago, they saw Chaos tore apart the body of one practitioner after another with their own eyes. He was practically an unstoppable vicious beast.

However, at the moment, a youngster actually suppressed him by using pure power, forcing him to flit backwards uncontrollably. This is really unfathomable, one must know that the specialty of a Barbarian Tribe lies in their raw strength!

At this moment, the few experts who were observing from a distant place engraved Xiao Chen's tyrannical figure deeply in their mind. This is a wild and terrifying young expert!

"Roar....." Chaos was furious, his hysterical howl was like that of a wounded beast. He was finally able to control his body and landed on the ground. Everything that happened earlier was like a humiliation to him, there are people who actually dared to use raw strength to challenge him. He induced an incomparably ferocious aura, and dashed towards the young antagonist in front of him in a fit of rage. The terrifying greenish-yellow radiance swept away every

obstruction, that huge divine wolf and fierce tiger became more distinct. They were accompanying him by his side, and dashed forward along with him! Waves of catastrophic baleful aura pervaded every directions.

“Rawr.....” Xiao Chen also let out a low howl, it was as if his tall and mighty figure was made out of steel. It gave people a feeling that his powerful strength was insurmountable. His black long hair danced about hysterically, both of his hand dispersed one after another dazzling radiance, a terrifying energy rushed forth in a frenzy, like a blast of raging sea.

This time, the two powerful young experts moved as fast as lightning, they only left behind afterimages in the woodland. The incomparably powerful energy gave rise to a storm that destroyed one after another forest trees. It was as if this place was struck by terrifying thunderbolt, the branches and withered leaves fluttered about everywhere. The woodland within the glaring radiance was completely destroyed.

A terrifying fluctuation rumbled violently, the dazzling radiance was incomparably fearsome! The faces of few experts that were observing from a distant place instantly turned pale. This battle is extremely intense, they come to a conclusion that they would not have the power to resist.

“Roar.....”

The three meter tall Chaos let out a furious roar. During the intense fight, when he swept his unstoppable long leg towards Xiao Chen’s chest, his leg was actually firmly grabbed by Xiao Chen’s hands. Xiao Chen firmly hold on to Chaos’ right leg, not giving him any chance to get free. As if he was swinging a scarecrow, Xiao Chen flung Chaos with powerful force.

“Snap!”

Within the interval that the sound of a huge tree snapped off, Chaos was being swung around like a huge stick. Xiao Chen hacked his body against a tall ancient tree, directly chopping it in half. After that, as if Xiao Chen had gone crazy, he kept swinging the three meter tall Chaos like this. He swung Chaos around hysterically in the mountain woods, smashing against the ground, and hack the giant trees.

With loud rumbling sound, the giant trees fell unceasingly, countless ancient trees disintegrated into nothingness. Chaos is being treated as a human-shaped weapon by Xiao Chen!

This is an incomparably brutish scene, the experts at the distant place simply couldn't believe their own eyes. At this moment, they treated Xiao Chen as a “beast” more dangerous than Chaos. He is really too violent and ruthless.

Chapter 42 – Retreat

Everything was as Xiao Chen intended, it is not that he did not comprehend the exquisite style. However, if he wants to thoroughly break this imposing Barbarian Tribe expert, it is necessary to use his own specialty against him. Even if he cannot kill him like this, at least it will leave a shadow that cannot be obliterated deep in his heart!

One cannot show any kindness towards their enemy, he wanted to leave a deep scar deep in his heart eternally!

Xiao Chen really wanted to break Chaos into pieces, he didn't want to leave behind anything that will endanger him. Since they already become enemies, in order to secure his safety in the future, the most effective method is to completely exterminate your opponent.

However, the divine wolf and fierce tiger beside Chaos were growling unceasingly, they emitted burst after burst of terrifying fluctuation. They were like an unbreakable divine armor that protected Chaos' body. Moreover, a boundless energy constantly rushed towards Chaos' right leg, trying to force Xiao Chen to release him.

When Xiao Chen and Chaos were in the middle of their fight, the young expert from the Jungle Tribe, Yaluo De, who was several hundreds of meter away, was also in the middle of a battle. An expert whose entire body was covered in a dim radiance stopped Yaluo De's path in the most crucial moment. He prevented Yaluo De from saving Chaos, he clearly wanted to help Xiao Chen in his quest to kill Chaos.

That was a mysterious Spell Master, he kept executing killing moves against

Yaluo De. Only until Chaos sunk into the most dangerous moment did he finally injure the opponent, and rushed over in a hurry. However, he also sustained some minor injuries.

Endless amount of vines stretched at high-speed in the woodland, it spun towards Xiao Chen like a green furious wave. After they saw someone crashed their way through the forest to participate in the battle, the three skeletons that were observing the fight at the sideline all along transformed into three streaks of light, and dash towards Yaluo De.

The terrifying venomous thorns, and those tenacious vines gave Xiao Chen some inconvenience for a moment. However, he was not afraid, he used Chaos' body as a weapon to smash the venomous thorns and vines.

The venomous thorns shrink back, the vines rush forth crazily, it actually submerged Chaos' body within. One after another green radiance were emitted by those long vines. It contained an inexhaustible Spiritual Power, those power originated from Yaluo De.

When Yaluo De and Chaos' power combined, they finally forced Xiao Chen to loosen his hands. It was only natural that Xiao Chen would exert his strength to ruthlessly smash the vines that enveloped Chaos the moment his hands were loose. It caused Chaos' body to stick so close to the solid ground that even the woodland quaked violently.

When Chaos was saved, he didn't rush forward recklessly. He quickly retreated along with the vines.

On the other side, the three skeletons actually got in front of Yaluo De. Just then, Yaluo De sent most of his Spiritual Power towards the vines close to Xiao

Chen, in this process, he nearly let himself get heavily injured by the three skeletons.

Qinguang Wang, Yanluo Wang, and Lunhui Wang, actually summoned the Dark Underworld Flame, the terrifying underworld flame burned most of the vegetation that was laid out to defend. Now that his Spiritual Power is back, he easily trapped the three skeletons. However, just around this time, Xiao Chen pressed his way here. Yaluo De couldn't help but hurriedly retreat after joining up with Chaos.

A brief moment of calmness, both sides were standing opposite of each other in the mountain woods. All the observers in the distant held their breath as they watched nervously.

Chaos let out a furious howl softly, his pair of eyes send out an indistinct green radiance. This is the awakening of a beast, he felt that he received the greatest humiliation today, his ego suffered a critical hit, he wanted to press on together with Yaluo De.

However, Yaluo De stopped him, and softly transmitted, "We look down on him too much, let this be a lesson! We cannot continue to fight with him now, there are people glaring at us like a tiger watching his prey. Just then, I was being hindered by someone, that's why I was not able to come rescue you immediately. Right now, we already sustained some injuries, we must not sustain more injuries because of our fight with him. If that is the case, the people hiding in the dark might make their moves on us. Let us temporarily retreat for today."

If Xiao Chen and the three skeletons join forces to confront the two young experts in front of them, he knew the odds of success is very low. After all, the two before him were not much weaker than himself. His three skeletal partners are not as powerful as them. He has nothing to fear if it is one on one, but a

battle royal will be dangerous.

Right at this moment, Xiao Chen gradually retracted his tyrannical aura. He just stood there motionlessly without saying a word, his tall body gradually exudes a majestic spiritual aura.

Yaluo De's complexion changed slightly, it was very obvious that the opposing side did not only possess incomparably tyrannical strength. Judging from the aura he emitted now, "strength" was merely one aspect of his power.

"Let's put down the matter today for the time being!" As soon as Yaluo De finish saying these words, he pulled Chaos who was unwilling to leave along.

Xiao Chen didn't say anything, he only stood there calmly and watch them leave attentively. If people do not disturb him, he will not go find trouble for them. However, if they wanted to take advantage of him, he will counterattack with the most appropriate method. This is his living standard.

This battle completely overturned Chaos and Yaluo De's view on Xiao Chen, they never thought this opponent was powerful to this kind of degree. In his fit of rage, Chaos felt his ego had been completely trampled on.

Never mock your enemy! Yaluo De was a little vexed to come to this conclusion. At the same time, he maliciously hoped Yan Qing Cheng and Lande will also make the same mistake.

Xiao Chen stood there calmly for a long while, only until all the gazes that were secretly spying on him disappeared did he finally let out a breath of relief. He sustained some light injuries, but it doesn't matter. He possessed an exuberant

life energy now, it will be recovered very quickly.

Using violence to curb violence, this is a genuine confrontation of strength. If it was not because his “Center Palace Point” had divinized and promoted his ability by several folds, it might become dangerous today.

Xiao Chen and the three skeletons took a short rest before they continue their journey. After advancing for several hundred meter, he finally found out why Yaluo De didn't come to the rescue on time. In this region, he discovered traces of a fierce battle between Yaluo De and someone else.

There was an expert hiding in the vicinity that wanted to use him to eliminate Chaos. Xiao Chen knitted his eyebrows slightly, it seems like the circumstances on the Dragon Island is getting more complicated. Clearly, the chaotic battle had already begun.

The strong survives, the weak dies, this is the survival of the fittest on the Dragon Island!

The mountain range moved up and down, after Xiao Chen and the three skeletons pass through a small mountain, a valley showed up in front of them. Since they arrived here, the tracks of the beasts clearly become a lot fewer. The surrounding gradually become extremely quiet.

Xiao Chen began to scan his surrounding carefully. After all, even the crimson ape was unwilling to approach this area, it proved that this place is definitely filled with dangers. Sure enough, he discovered many huge footprints in the valley ahead, each of them was at least one meter long!

Chapter 43 – Treant

There are quite a few huge footprints in the valley ahead of them. The footprints are around 1 meter long, the shape is actually not that different from a human's footprint. Could it be a giant? In the human world, he once heard of legends regarding some ancient extinct race. Their figure was incomparably huge, just like that of a giant.

This ought to be the reason why the crimson ape was unwilling to come here. It should be related to the giant that lives here. But..... could Zhao Lin Er really be living in the giant's territory?

Xiao Chen and the three skeletons advanced carefully, they wanted to get to the bottom of this matter.

The valley appears emerald-green, and full of thick foliage, one could see many tall ancient trees standing upright from the distant. The entrance to the valley is not very wide, it is only around ten meter wide. The valley wall on both sides are somewhat steep, many huge trees are growing there too. All the green vegetation make this place appear so full of life.

Xiao Chen found a lot of traces around the entrance of the valley, the one meter long giant footprint seriously make someone feel agitated. Xiao Chen could vaguely feel dangers approaching, he and the three skeletons cautiously stopped at the entrance of the valley.

Looking at a few miles from the entrance of the valley, it looked very auspicious and peaceful, the pleasant cries of the birds, the fragrance of the beautiful flowers drifted along with the wind, there is even a streamlet gathered together by spring water meandering between the plants, it was like a crystal

clear ribbon made out of jade. There are no evil beasts roaming about at this place, it could be considered safe and blissful land.

However, precisely because of this auspicious and peaceful land, Xiao Chen suddenly felt as if a great danger is about to descend. He quickly bring the three skeletons to turn around and run, he didn't care whether his feeling was accurate or not, they should escape from this place first before anything else.

As soon as they get away from the entrance, a loud rumbling noise resounded. A few boulders rolled down from the walls on both side of the valley. The rumbling noise resembled ten thousands of stampeding horses, the valley wall trembled. Meanwhile, an eight to nine meter tall green-colored giant landed heavily on the entrance of the valley after the boulders. The earth quaked violently, one after another huge cracks were formed underneath the giant. If Xiao Chen and the gang tarry for a bit longer, they might already be crushed under the boulders.

An eight to nine meter tall green-colored giant!

Xiao Chen is very startled, he turned around to behold the giant.

And just around this time, he saw an even more freakish scene.

On top of the valley wall, an inconceivable transformation happened to one of the tall ancient trees in that instant. The huge branches swayed around unceasingly, the glistening green leaves produced a crashing noise, the sturdy dragon-like stolons quickly uprooted from the ground, the entire ancient tree burst forth with a glorious green radiance. A series of transformation took place and changed the form of the tree instantly, the branches are rapidly retracting, the rhizomes are also deforming at lightning speed. Under the influence of the

incomparably dazzling green radiance, the tall ancient tree actually shrunk. After that, it actually transformed into a green-colored giant! 1

With a rumbling sound, the giant landed on the entrance of the valley, standing side by side with the giant that descended earlier. Faint green radiance was circulating all over the body of both the eight to nine meter tall green giants. It gives people a powerful oppressive force.

This is simply too unbelievable!

A ten meter plus ancient tree that was rooted above the valley wall like a huge umbrella, how did it transform into a green giant now?

Treant! 2

Are these the tree monster who achieved enlightenment?

Xiao Chen is unable to find out, and he didn't have the time to think. Two green treant took large strides and prepared to attack him at any moment. Meanwhile, on the precipice above the valley, an exquisite human figure appeared. It is indeed the devastatingly beautiful Zhao Lin Er, and standing by her side is a treant. 3

What is going on? She is actually together with the mysterious treant. Xiao Chen didn't have a chance to think too much, he escaped with the three skeletons at high-speed.

"Don't let him get away!" Zhao Lin Er's white dress is as beautiful as snow, she is incomparably attractive, she looked exceptionally charming on top of the

precipice. People could seriously confuse her with a fairy that descended from the Ninth Heaven.

“Bang! Bang! Bang.....!” The eight to nine meter tall green giants run as fast as the wind, their body weight is as heavy as a mountain. Every time they stamp on the ground, it was like a huge hammer rammed into the ground. The earth shook violently.

At the same time, on top of the precipice, the Imperial Angel Zhao Lin Er immediately jumped onto the shoulder of the treant beside her. That treant nimbly leap down the cliff, his body emitted a faint green radiance. After pushing the other two giant away, it chased after Xiao Chen at lightning speed.

Three colossus are catching up from behind, it gives Xiao Chen a powerful oppressive force. The three skeletons and Xiao Chen ran so fast in the mountain woods that they transformed into four rays of light.

The ancient primitive forest is very crowded, even though those three green treant ran as fast as the wind, and each step they took was wide, it is still very difficult for them to catch up to Xiao Chen as they were blocked by the mountain woods again and again.

Zhao Lin Er stood on the treant’s shoulder, her figure was very outstanding. The divine radiance in her eyes were deep and clear, she already waited for Xiao Chen here for a long time. She knew he will eventually find this place, it is finally time to strike back today. She is glad that she received the good graces of the young unicorn, this young divine beast is the nature’s dearest one. It has a good relationship with the exotic treants in the Treant’s Valley. It gave her the opportunity to befriend the treants.

Even though there are only a finite amount of treants, all of them are super strong. All of them are evolved from a thousand years old ancient tree. They are spiritual being nurtured by the nature, they could understand the power of nature. That is why the savage monster don't dare to get near the Treant's Valley. 4

Other than the most ancient treant, the other treants seem to have gained sentience not long ago. Their minds are not that bright yet, by using her relationship with the young unicorn, she was able to easily earn their support.

"Xiao Chen, you never anticipated this to happen today right? The one who gets the last laugh is the real winner!" Even though Zhao Lin Er's tone is very beautiful, her speech contained the desire to kill.

"Hmph, laugh after you catch me, maybe one of these day, a high and mighty Imperial Angel like you, will become my female slave!"

Zhao Lin Er remained calm, she didn't get angry at all. She command the three treants to outflank Xiao Chen. The forest tree swayed with a crashing sound, three treants ran at high-speed in the mountain woods, they split up the dense ancient forest one after another. A faint green radiance circulated around their body, that is the power of nature they possessed the moment they were born. With the assistance of those power, they pushed away all the huge trees and branches in their way.

The noise generated by the treants' stampede could even be said to be incomparably loud. Even the mountain forest trembled slightly, the wild beasts were startled and ran in every direction. After that, a few monsters appeared and when they see the three giants, they also stopped their footsteps.

And around this time, the banging noise alarmed the practitioners in this region. A lot of people swiftly jumped on top of a huge tree upon hearing the sound, or climbed on top of the cliff to peer at this location.

Chapter 44 – Mysterious Little Critter

The moment they saw three bluish-green giant, all the practitioners were startled, especially after they saw who were being chased. Some practitioners who saw the fight between Xiao Chen and Chaos before, become even more interested. Moreover, it was impossible not to notice the magnificent beauty of Zhao Ling Er who is currently perched on the green treant's shoulder. All the practitioners in the vicinity chased after their tracks momentarily to look at the development.

There are already many practitioners on the Dragon Island now. All of them came for the Ancestral Dragon and Syndicate Dragon King, many battles had already taken place, and even more had lost their lives.

When the enormous treant engage in battle, they chased from one region to another, this is one of the most captivating skirmish. It alarmed most of the practitioners at the surrounding of the island, a lot of people are paying close attention to this fight.

A lot of people even gave birth to a plan to get close to Zhao Lin Er. They could guess the origin of the treants, it is impossible for an ancient tree that is not even thousand years old yet to successfully evolve. They were probably born on the Dragon Island, if they could entice Zhao Lin Er, not only would they get an outstanding beauty by their side, they would also gain an unimaginable power!

In front of the waterfall with a faintly discernible mist, Yan Qing Cheng's figure seemed as if it came out directly from one's wildest dream. She stood on top of the precipice, and when saw a few giants passed by, she frowned slightly.

Lande the golden-haired pretty boy was also startled, and said, "There are

actually treants on the Dragon Island. This require ancient trees of over ten thousand years, they are the crystallization of nature. Yaluo De is the people of Jungle Tribe, if he can find a way to tame one of the treants, I'm afraid his strength will increase several folds and surpass us!"

At the time they were watching the event unfold, Yaluo De and Chaos were also watching everything at a mountain range not far away. Yaluo De is very excited, his said in a shaky voice, "It is actually treant transformed from millennium ancient tree. Moreover, three of them appeared all at once!"

.....

Even though Xiao Chen had broken through his former level of strength, when facing these three colossi, he still feel a bit troubled. He separated with the three undead creatures, but under the orders of Zhao Lin Er, the treants all went after him.

Until now, they had already passed over a dozen of mountain ranges in succession. Many vicious beasts were alarmed, but the tree green treants still followed relentlessly. It was impossible to break away from them. Furthermore, he eventually got outflanked by them!

"Bang!"

One enormous foot trampled the forest trees, faint green radiance circulated around the foot, it attempted to step on Xiao Chen with sudden force. Xiao Chen left an afterimage in his original position, and dodged at lightning speed. The giant foot stamped violently on the ground, one after another cracks immediately emerged. The forest trees in the vicinity swayed hysterically.

Soon after, a few giant arms swept across the horizon, the arms emitted incomparably dazzling green radiance, this is the treant's natural power. It was as if their arms were made out of steel. With a rumbling noise, a row of huge trees were snapped. The falling trees nearly buried Xiao Chen alive.

Six giant hands tried to seize him at the same time, cold sweats broke out from Xiao Chen's back. He changed his position continuously, it was as if his body was ignited. Dazzling radiance that resembles searing divine flame burst forth. He left behind one after another afterimages in the mountain woods, dodging the enormous treants' relentless assault.

All the practitioners who were secretly spying this area turned pale with fright. The treants are indeed very terrifying, they were secretly shocked.

"Xiao Chen, I want to see how you can escape today!" The Imperial Angel stood on the shoulder of one treant, her exquisite face gradually revealed a hint of smile, it caused all kinds of flowers in the mountain woods to lose their splendor.

The radiance on one of the giant's green arm is brilliant, the giant hand swept away everything in its path. After it fell seven to eight giant trees in succession, it finally trapped Xiao Chen in the front, giving him nowhere to escape.

"Bang!"

The enormous bluish-green palm that is two times taller than Xiao Chen slammed forward with all its might. Unable to dodge, Xiao Chen could only raise his power to the limit, and brace himself to receive the impact.

Both of his hands moved to draw a mysterious magic circle one after another. Under the bright radiance, a dazzling star diagram floated in front of Xiao Chen. It resembled a mysterious ancient shield that helped him resist the powerful strike of the giant hand.

The jade green giant palm shine with a dazzling radiance, with a loud rumbling sound, it strikes the star diagram. When the light curtain in front of Xiao Chen disintegrated, one star after another lose their radiance. Xiao Chen was sent flying by an enormous strength. The noise of falling trees resounded unceasingly, Xiao Chen's body was emitting an incomparably bright radiance, he bumped into a few dozen of tall ancient trees and break them in succession. He fell among the broken branches and withered leaves.

Xiao Chen could now feel the suffering of Chaos. He once treated Chaos like this, he didn't expect he would personally experience the same feeling not long later.

“Bang!”

One giant foot stamped beside Xiao Chen's body, if he didn't roll away fast enough, he might have turned into a mincemeat by now. Xiao Chen quickly jumped up, his body emitted a bright radiance. Under the circumstances that he is unable to escape, he can only choose to fight.

Only... the treants are not only tall, they also possess the power of nature. Every time they attacked, they will emit a green radiance. Xiao Chen felt as if he was hit by a huge mountain, the powerful impact always made him feel acute pain from head to toe.

Even if his life energy is exuberant, and already transformed into a medium-like

divine flame that is similar to the raging outside of his body, he is still unable to withstand the treant's bombardment. After all, the treants are too big.

Xiao Chen was sent flying in the mountain woods again and again, row after rows of huge trees were snapped in half. Facing the treants, Xiao Chen felt so powerless.

There is a flowing river in front of the ancient primitive forest, Xiao Chen finally saw a hint of hope. He clashed a few more times with the treants, and ran towards the river with all his might.

"Stop him, don't let him get away!" Zhao Lin Er hastily shouted.

The mountain forest is too dense, even though this river is very wide, it is very gentle, the sound of flowing water couldn't even be heard. Therefore, they didn't discover it beforehand. This wide river is like an angelic river to Xiao Chen. Without any hesitation, he jumped into the river with a plop sound, leaving behind a splash on the water surface and disappeared without a trace.

Everything is always unpredictable, Zhao Lin Er felt incomparably dispirited. Victory was already in sight, she didn't expect she would fail at the last-minute.

She really wanted to go along with the river to chase after him, but once she saw the terrain in the vicinity, she didn't dare to let the treants forge ahead. Without paying attention, they actually already arrived at the edge of the Tyrannical Dragon's territory. That is one violent sovereign king, don't say three treants, even if a few more were to come, they would still be ripped apart by the Tyrannical Dragon instantly.

The Tyrannical Dragon is the most savage ones amongst the ruler of the dragon race. They were reputable as a powerful dragon-kind that has the power to stand off against the deities!

After a long time later, the spindrift [1] rolled over and over, Xiao Chen finally emerged from the water surface. There are bloodstains on the corner of the mouth, the eight to nine meter tall treants are super strong, the injuries he sustained are not light.

[tl: [1] = Spray blown from the crests of waves by the wind.]

In this half an hour, he didn't go along with the flow of the river. Since he dived into the water, he swam against the stream and advanced for a few dozen meter. After that, he concealed himself within the river, not moving an inch. He struggled to climb up to the river bank, he walked in a staggering manner for dozens of meter. Xiao Chen sat on the ground with a plop sound, then he lie in the underbrush to breath in a big mouthful of fresh air.

All of a sudden, Xiao Chen felt a dangerous aura, someone is secretly spying on him. Xiao Chen stood up immediately, the rich and powerful life energy surged up violently like a divine flame. The glaring radiance instantly evaporated the water droplets on his clothes. It seemed as if he was wearing a layer of bright divine armor, it was as lively as a dragon and as vigorous as a tiger.

He knew very clearly that the practitioners who entered the Dragon Island increased by many fold. There were many people who were secretly observing the event where he was being chased by the green giant earlier. There is a possibility that the people in the vicinity will make a move against him, so that they can get rid of one powerful competitor.

He had no choice but to let off a powerful aura to give a warning to them.

As expected, the dangerous aura seemed to have been reduced by many fold. However, there are still some people fixing their gaze on him attentively, he could feel a viper-like cold radiance penetrated him from the mountain woods behind him. Some people firmly believe he already received a heavy injury, and thought that this is the best opportunity to eliminate him.

On this Dragon Island now, only the strong can survive and the weak will fall, it is a very cruel reality!

Xiao Chen restrained the glorious radiance outside of his body, otherwise the experts might think that he is not confident. He walked towards the territory of the Tyrannical Dragon unhurriedly. Sure enough, he was being followed! The murderous aura is getting closer, it seems like some expert firmly locked onto him!

The danger is getting closer and closer, the people who concealed themselves are about to attack. This is definitely a powerful expert, perhaps the following attack will be very intense.

Xiao Chen wrinkled his eyebrows, the condition of his body is really terrible at the moment. Being bombarded by the eight to nine meter tall green giant, even if one have an adamantine body, it will also be just as hard to endure. To engage in another big battle now is simply a nightmare for him!

“Roar.....”

The roar of a tiger resounded from the front, Xiao Chen could see three

familiar figure there. Qinguang Wang, Yanluo Wang, and Lunhui Wang, tore the huge tiger blocking their path, and make their way here by transforming into three rays of light.

At this moment, the three snow-white skeletons in Xiao Chen's eyes looked like three angels instead of skeletons. They arrived just in time!

The dangerous aura that locked onto Xiao Chen in the dark hesitated slightly, and finally dwindled at high-speed.

If the three skeletons didn't arrive in time, then it will really turn into a fight. Xiao Chen can finally loosen his guard, but he cannot stop here now. Together with the three skeletons, they follow along the river into the Tyrannical Dragon's territory ahead.

If they wanted to get back to the deathly swamp, they must go through this region first. And this area is the atrocious sovereign king's territory. Most of the ordinary practitioners wouldn't dare to get close to this area, after they travelled for two meter, Xiao Chen no longer worried about the onslaught of the monsters, nor the sneak attack of the practitioners. Other than staying on guard against the Tyrannical Dragon that might show up at any time.

After finding a safe desolate location, Xiao Chen lie down in the underbrush all of a sudden. He really is too exhausted and cannot bear it anymore. Acute pain assaulted his entire body, he didn't even move a single muscle for half an hour. He just silently operated his secret technique to treat his injuries and restore his strength. A wave-like radiance slowly circulate around his entire body.

Finally, Xiao Chen enjoyed the service of the three skeletons. Qinguang Wang, Yanluo Wang, and Lunhui Wang, these three carried Xiao Chen and pushed their

way through the mountain woods at lightning speed, heading towards the swamp.

A small number of practitioners who this bizarre scene, among them are some practitioners who doesn't have deep understanding of the undead creatures. They felt as if they just saw a ghost, three snow-white skeletons were actually carrying a man while running away.....

There are also some people who wanted to follow their tracks. However, the distance between them is too great, and the ancient primitive forest is too concentrated. The skeletons disappeared with just a few vertical flash.

Even though Xiao Chen is being carried by the three skeletons, he kept an attentive watch of his surrounding. When they get close to the swamp, he unexpectedly found a hairy little critter.

Even if some people were standing in a sea of people, they appear to stand out from the masses, and attracts a great number of gazes. This kind of situation can also be applied to animals, the hairy little critter looks just like a pure white pompom. It emitted an indescribable intelligence in animals.

It looked like a small tiger, and also like a small lion, but it looked even more like a kitten. However, it is much more beautiful than those three combined, the fluffy long fur is white and soft, pure white without other colors, and at the same time, as bright as a silk fabric. It is flickering with a milky white splendor.

It is only half a foot tall, but it is brimming with intelligence. Its pair of big eyes are as bright as a black gem. It made a clear distinction in contrast with its snow-white body. Its eyes sparkled every time it blinked, brimming with spiritual energy.

At the moment, it is curling up on the ground, it appears unusually humane. Its pair of bright huge eyes gazed at Xiao Chen miserably. One snow-white tiny claw was placed at the side of its mouth, it seemed to be sucking it. It looked like a famished child.

Xiao Chen didn't know what kind of animal is this, but he knew it was a little critter brimming with intelligence. It gives people a really unique feeling, even though it looks like a cute little beast, it is brimming with intelligence like that of an elf. Fortunately, Xiao Chen is a guy, if it was a girl, they might not be able to bear it anymore and pull the little critter into their embrace. This intelligent little critter is the epitome of cuteness.

"Squeak! Squeak.....!" The voice let out by the little critter doesn't sound like that of an animal at all. It is just like that of an infant who just started to learn how to speak. It keeps squeaking unceasingly, and gazed at Xiao Chen miserably.

Even if Xiao Chen had a firm will, his heart still felt slightly touched by the little critter. He decided to prepare something for this little critter to eat, and he can temporarily keep it at his side.

However, just around this time, the three skeletons seemed as if they had just seen a ghost. While Xiao Chen still did not understand anything, all of them loosen their grips simultaneously. With a plop sound, they dropped Xiao Chen on the ground. Xiao Chen was completely off-guard, he fell heavily onto the ground. A few solid rocks are just directly below him, he immediately jump up due to the pain. At this moment, Xiao Chen had the impulse to tear the three skeletons apart.

Just around this time, Qinguang Wang, Yanluo Wang, and Lunhui Wang rushed

into the swamp in a panic. After that, they parted from one another, and lie down motionlessly in the pile of bones. They actually started to play-dead!

Chapter 45 – Inconceivable

Xiao Chen embraced the little critter that looked like a melted snowball from the ground. The miserable little thing blinked its big eyes, it didn't resist in the slightest. Xiao Chen embraced the hairy little critter and entered the swamp. He looked at the three stiff skeletons suspiciously. What happened to them, what are they afraid of? However, there are no other ferocious creatures in front of him, could it be this intelligent little snowball? How can that be!

Paying no heed to them, Xiao Chen went to watch the small sacred tree excitedly. The reason he came back to this swamp after getting ambushed by the Imperial Angel Zhao Lin Er was mainly because the divine sproutling is still rooted here.

Multicolored radiance circulated around the palm-sized sacred tree, the dense bright fog make the surrounding full of vitality. And the ancient tree which was rooted by the divine sapling also gained as much benefits from it. Its leaves turned emerald-green, and the spiritual aura seems much denser.

The glittering big eyes of the miserable snow-white pompom in Xiao Chen's embrace suddenly emitted a radiance different from before. Before Xiao Chen even had the time to react, it already transformed into a streak of white light, and rushed towards the ancient tree with a swish. It exerted its strength to pull the small sacred tree from the ancient tree.

In this instant, Xiao Chen's heart rate increased, and he shouted loudly at the misdeed. The stolons of the small sacred tree might break if it is being pulled so roughly!

What makes him the most uneasy is what happens afterward, the tiger and

lion-like snow-white tiny beast embraced the small sacred tree in its bosom firmly. It is rolling on the forest ground happily and excitedly, it looked like a child who just receive a candy. After that, it actually nipped the jade leaf of the divine sapling!

Everything happened so fast that Xiao Chen didn't had the chance to stop it. Only until he heard the squeaking sound of the tiny beast, and saw the tiny beast nibbling at the jade leaf did he hastily rush forward to seize the tiny beast.

The snow-white pompom embraced the sapling in its bosom tightly, it was not willing to let go. However, what makes Xiao Chen felt a bit relieved was that the stolons of the sapling did not break. The sparkling clear jade leaf is also undamaged, it seems like the little guy did not nibble the jade leaf, but was sucking it instead.

Luckily it was just a false alarm!

This little critter is too reckless, Xiao Chen wanted to separate it from the sapling, but he found that the little critter was hugging so tightly that it was impossible to separate them. It was as if the little critter was protecting its food, it actually let out a few low growls.

Xiao Chen also didn't want to harm it, so he carried it and walked towards the three skeletons. The three skeletons are currently peeping through a crack, when they saw Xiao Chen approaching, they immediately lie on the pile of bones. Xiao Chen didn't know whether he should get angry or laugh.

After arranging the three skeletons side by side, Xiao Chen put the snow-white pompom at their side, then he watched calmly.

The tiny beast looked as if it was starving to death, it sucked at the two jade leaves and produced a sucking sound. What makes Xiao Chen the most surprised was that, along with the sucking of the tiny beast, ripple-like radiance was flowing out from the sparkling clear jade leaves, and rushed towards the mouth of the little critter unceasingly.

It is actually sucking in the energy of the seven-colored sacred tree rapidly! Its pair of glittering big eyes were brimming with a contented look, it did not appear as miserable as it was since the beginning. Its expression is too much like that of a human.

Xiao Chen had a feeling that this little critter is very extraordinary! However, he didn't think too much upon it. After all, it is still too young, he didn't believe the three skeletons are scared of this little critter.

The sun was already setting on the west, Xiao Chen also started to feel a bit hungry. He hunted for a Mongolian Gazelle in the mountain woods nearby. He started to roast the Mongolian gazelle's leg in the swamp, an alluring aroma spread through the swamp not long later. The glossy Mongolian gazelle's leg, paired together with pineapples and various kinds of delicious fruits, immediately improved Xiao Chen's appetite. He then begins to enjoy his dinner.

Just around this time, it seems like the little critter had enough, it is no long sucking the small sacred tree. It just randomly throw the divine sapling on the ground, letting the sapling root itself in the swamp by itself. Xiao Chen shook his head when he saw it, this little critter is really such a kid.

However, the next action taken by the little critter scared Xiao Chen tremendously. The snow-white pompom rolled around the three skeletons, its glittering big eyes seemed to show that it is in deep thoughts. After that, it suddenly stood upright like a little monkey, stretching out its two paws to tear

apart the three skeletons with a “Click-clack!” sound.

Xiao Chen was stupefied, originally he was still wondering. But this tiger-like and lion-like little critter can actually stand upright like a little monkey. Now with this violent incident as well, it made him feel completely dumbfounded, it was too unexpected.

Fortunately, only the joints of the three skeletons were separated. They were only being dismantled, and were not really crushed.

“Squeak! Squeak.....!” The snow-white little critter exerted its strength to shake the three skeletons’ skull. Then it pointed at the sapling not far away with the other paw. It seemed to be questioning them something angrily.

That’s right, it is angry! Even though it is still a little critter, its expression is very vivid. It is completely possible for people to tell how it is feeling.

The snow-white little critter was squeaking, and tearing apart Qinguang Wang’s tiny arm at the same time. It grabbed the bone with its tiny paw, and using it like a big stick to hit the three skeletons’ skull continuously. It seemed to be punishing them, this series of action is indeed simulating, it gives people a very amusing feeling.

The three skeletons were not longer playing dead, the lower half of their body, and breastbone were torn into bits and pieces. They used their arms to prop themselves up, they appeared as listless as a crystallized leaf.

“Thonk! Thonk! Thonk.....!”

The snow-white little critter was using that tiny arm bone to hit their skulls. It pointed at the small sacred tree not far away, and continued to question them with a “Squeak! Squeak!” sound. The three skeletons were forced to their wit’s end. They looked at each other face to face, then they lifted their arms simultaneously to point at Xiao Chen.

My god!

These three skeletons were too unfaithful, being forced to make a confession by a hairy little critter, they already seemed like a loser, but now they actually didn’t have the backbone to admit it, and set him up as the perpetrator. Xiao Chen was completely speechless.

“Swish!”

A streak of white radiance flashed through, Xiao Chen felt as if he had soared into the sky and riding on the clouds. He was actually thrown into the air mysteriously. Only now did he feel overwhelmed with shock, this little critter is more than just extraordinary, it exceeded his expectation dramatically!

He hastily adjust his body in midair, and took a battle stance. His entire body burst forth with one after another dazzling radiance, then he descended towards the ground. However, before he descended onto the ground, the little critter below blinked its huge eyes, and exerted its strength to wave one of its paw. A white radiance enveloped Xiao Chen in a flash, with a “Swish!” sound, Xiao Chen was once again thrown into midair.

Chapter 46 – The Sacred Tree’s Master

A divine ability that shocks the world!

This little critter mastered a bizarre divine ability, this is really incomparably astounding. Xiao Chen was being thrown up and down, one moment to the east, the next moment to the west. He was actually being treated as a toy by this little critter.

“Hehe.....” The snow-white pompom actually let out a laughter similar to that of a human child. Its pair of bright big eyes were blinking unceasingly.

Goodness gracious!

Xiao Chen had a feeling as if he wanted to cough up blood, just what kind of situation is this! He felt somewhat preposterous, this is his first time seeing this kind of strange spiritual beast. His ability can already be considered outstanding, even Chaos was unable to stand up against him. However, he felt completely helpless against the little critter below him.

That little critter knows some strange confinement method, it doesn’t appear to be some effective killing technique. However, it is enough to keep itself safe from the prosecutor. Xiao Chen is trapped within a ball of white radiance, it is absolutely impossible to break out. He was being flung left and right by the little critter.

It really gives people the impulse to cough up blood!

“Squeak! Squeak.....!”

When Xiao Chen looked down, he saw the snow-white little critter grabbed the Mongolian gazelle’s leg he roasted, and is currently eating it with gusto. At the same time, its big black eyes looked at Xiao Chen from time to time, and reinforced the confinement technique continuously. It didn’t want to let Xiao Chen get down no matter what, this is somehow driving Xiao Chen mad.

Not far away, the three skeletons carefully attached the bones that were torn apart by the little critter back to their original position. After that, they looked at Xiao Chen who was being thrown up and down in the sky. The three skeletons were very unfaithful, they escaped without a trace like the thieves.

“Squeak! Squeak.....!” The snow-white little critter burst into a fit of rage, the three skeletons were incomparably unnerved, they slowly turned around.

Perhaps the little critter never ate food that was sprinkled with sea salt before, more than half of the glossy goat leg were eaten by that little critter. Its small belly is as round as a ball, it is lying down on the ground, and is having a hard time moving, however it is perfectly contented. It blinked its big eyes, and released Xiao Chen from the midair.

Xiao Chen was tossed from side to side for half an hour, his spirit and strength were completely exhausted. In the end, he actually didn’t manage to break out from the ball of white radiance, it was the little critter who released him. This kind of confinement technique is really too powerful.

Without waiting for Xiao Chen to adjust himself, the snow-white little critter actually held on to the small sacred tree, and slept soundly.

Seeing Xiao Chen walked over, the three skeletons gestured with their six bony claws, the jaws also moved up and down repeatedly to generate, “Clack! Clack!” sound. Apparently, they are trying to explain something, it seemed like they wanted to say that it is not their fault for being unfaithful.

“What is going on with this little critter?”

“Clack! Clack.....!”

“Is the little critter related to the small sacred tree?”

“Clack! Clack.....!”

“Are you guys saying, this little critter is the original master of the small sacred tree?”

“Clack! Clack.....!” The three skeletons nodded their heads vigorously.

Merely this information is sufficient to explain everything, so it was actually the real master who came to their door. However, this snow-white little critter is really somewhat terrifying. It seemed harmless at first, but it actually possessed a terrifying confinement technique. Who knows whether it is in possession of other divine ability or not.

Night time, the flame throbbed in the woods, that snow-white little critter embraced the small sacred tree that rooted itself on an ancient tree tightly. It is fast asleep and smacked its lips from time to time, it was just like an adorable little baby.

What kind of intellectual beast is this? It actually possessed an extraordinary divine ability, if it is not covered in fur all over its body, Xiao Chen might really mistook it for a Syndicate Dragon King.

Recalling the day when he dig out the divine sproutling, the Sacred Dragon was disturbed and unsettled, it roared unceasingly. Even though he didn't see what was going on specifically, he could assume that this snow-white little critter was tormenting the dragon. From that one can imagine just how extraordinary is this little critter! Just that we do not know how does it compare to those Syndicate Dragon King.

Even though he can't bear being tossed from side to side by the little critter, it didn't harm him at all. Moreover, it was them who stole the little critter's treasure tree in the first place, Xiao Chen didn't have any resentment, nor murderous intent in his heart.

Against his enemy, he can be cruel and unfeeling, but it is impossible for him to attack that defenseless little critter that is sleeping so peacefully like an infant.

Xiao Chen is not an inflexible guy, he isn't like those gentleman who wouldn't do anything when a beautiful women is in his embrace, he is an ordinary man. Power, beauty, and treasure..... he is equally enticed by these humanly desires. However, he has his own standard, he can tell what is right and what is wrong, there is no such thing as absolute justice nor evil, as long as he has this kind of mindset, he feel that he can still be considered a "good person".

Early morning, the snow-white little critter opened its big glittering eyes. When it smelled the aroma of the roasted meat, its little belly makes a grumbling sound. It got up quickly while embracing the precious tree. With a swish sound,

it sat beside Xiao Chen, and impatiently gaze at the golden-colored deer meat.

When Xiao Chen passed the tasty deer meat to the little critter, it exerted itself physically to open and close its little nose. After that, it cheerfully received the deer meat. During the time that the little critter was eating the meat, Xiao Chen discovered that the stolons of the small sacred tree was exposed to air for a long period of time. Due to that, the seven-colored radiance gradually dimmed. In the end, the luster was actually gone, it seemed like nothing more than a common sapling now.

Regardless of whether the little critter can understand him or not, Xiao Chen spoke in an organized language. He said everything he wanted to say to the little critter. As a result, the little critter curiously looked at him up and down. After that, it stamped on the sapling and tried to tear it apart in the face of Xiao Chen. Then it embraced the sapling, and as if it was presenting a treasure, it lifted the sapling to let Xiao Chen see.

Xiao Chen was seriously scared out of his wits, this little critter is seriously treating this precious tree too roughly, it is such a waste of natural resources! However, beyond his expectation, the precious tree did not get damaged in the slightest amount. No matter if it is the tree trunk, the leaves, or the stolen, they all appeared exceptionally tough and durable, it is incomparably miraculous.

The little critter seemed to understand what Xiao Chen was thinking, so it trampled on the small sacred tree to demonstrate to him. After that it planted the sapling near the stolons of one ancient tree. Very soon, the small sacred tree once again let off a dazzling multi-colored radiance.

Xiao Chen finally understand, this is tree is really a treasure, its vitality is incomparably tenacious. It is unnecessary to worry about damaging it, he also attempted to pull one of the stolons, increasing his strength over time. In the

end, he discovered that it was impossible to pull it apart, this sapling is as tough and durable as adamantite.

No wonder the little critter was not very anxious about the sacred tree, no wonder it threw away the sacred tree after using it up. So it turns out the vitality of the sapling is actually very tenacious.

After welcoming the morning radiance, Xiao Chen and the three skeletons begin their journey. The little critter grabbed its own precious tree, and it is reluctant to wave its paw to bid them farewell. It is very humane, it seemed to have a bit of favorable impression regarding these few robbers.

Xiao Chen's wounded body is almost fully recovered, he decided to go to the treant's valley and dispose of them ruthlessly. Even though those few treants are super strong, they are still transformed from ancient trees. If he set the valley on a merciless conflagration, he don't believe the treants wouldn't be afraid of the sea of flames.

When confronting his enemies, his killing method is very ruthless, he will not be merciful.

Along the sides of the road, he discovered the tracks of many practitioners. The dragons and snakes have mingled together on this island now, the situation is getting more and more complicated.

Xiao Chen already found the corpses of some practitioners in several places. Some of them didn't turn cold yet, the watery blood dyed the woodland red. Entering the Dragon Island is equivalent to participating in a life and death game.

A demigod expert already carried the name of “god”, from the behavior of the Fallen Angel last time, she seemed to be avoiding the Dragon Island. After she forced the Sacred Dragon into the Dragon Island, she left at lightning speed. The Dragon Island sealed by a bizarre power seemed to possess a great influence on those demigod level expert, it make them no dare to approach.

Then what about the Historia level expert? He might encounter one sooner or later. Xiao Chen decided to keep away from the other practitioners on the Dragon Island, so as to avoid needless clash and dangers.

During the time they are advancing, Xiao Chen could feel someone following them from beginning to end. After he used the secret technique to scare away a Spell Master that is flying low in the sky, he still felt the presence of someone behind them. Until he suddenly dashed backwards for the Nth times, he finally found out who were trailing them. It was actually that little critter that resembles a snow-white pompom.

The little critter’s appearance was a little bit funny, it actually treated the sacred tree as a hat and wear it. The stolons twisted around both of its ears, without any radiance circulating around the sproutling, it seemed like an ordinary plant. People wouldn’t even be able to see anything miraculous about this sproutling. The little critter blinked its pair of big eyes, looking at Xiao Chen face to face. The little critter is brimming with intelligence.

So it was this little critter, Xiao Chen only laughed, and then continued their journey. The little critter is no longer concealing itself, it follow after them brazenly. In the end, it jumped on top of Lunhui Wang’s head, and crouched on top of its head. This caused Lunhui Wang to turn blue in the face.

Chapter 47 – Chance Upon an Irresponsible Beast

“Hehe!” On the whole journey, the little critter giggled unceasingly, it was very unusual. Its laughing sound is almost the same as an infant. The little critter was in high spirit during the whole journey, it brimmed with curiosity regarding everything. Apparently, the little critter never entered this region before. When they encountered a large monster every once in a while, the little critter was not scared in the slightest. The little critter even tried to approach them several times, but it was stopped by Xiao Chen.

They arrived at the treant’s valley again, but this time they didn’t proceed towards the valley entrance. Xiao Chen and the three skeletons climbed up the precipitous valley wall, and look towards the wide valley underneath.

The inside of the valley is emerald-green, full of vitality, and possesses a large amount of rarely seen vegetation. The fragrance of flowers are wafting in the air, the bundles of flowers are swaying with the wind, creating stunning ripple like the waves. In addition to the spellbinding waterfalls, the scenery in this valley is exceptionally stunning. Only this kind of spiritual land could produce countless of ancient trees, and gave birth to the treants.

It is really such a pity to set this place of fire, but Xiao Chen also didn’t have a better idea.

And just around this time, Xiao Chen discovered a few practitioners are roaming around the vicinity of the valley. It seems like he is not the only one observing the treants valley, the reason he came here was due to his enmity against Zhao Lin Er. However, the other practitioners came here in hope of getting close to Zhao Lin Er, seeking for her beauty and the few powerful treants behind her. This make Xiao Chen felt a little troublesome.

One can see a treant guarding the entrance, the other two fellas are walking around in the valley. A faint green radiance circulated around their huge bluish-green figures. They appeared very mystical and incomparably powerful, those practitioners who were peeping into the valley didn't dare to rashly approach. Each and every one of them calmly wait for a chance outside of the valley.

Just when Xiao Chen was in deep thoughts, there was a movement near the entrance of the valley. The peerless Zhao Lin Er made her appearance, she calmly stood on the shoulder of one treant, and put up a banner made out of animal skin in front of the entrance.

The banner is very eye-catching, she used the blood of the beasts to write a few big letters: If you wish to form an alliance with the treants, you must bring me the head of this person to show your sincerity.

The image of Xiao Chen is portrayed below the bloody letters, Zhao Lin Er is very skillful with her hands, the image of Xiao Chen is imitated to perfection.

Immediately, seven to eight practitioners revealed themselves, and gathered together in front of the entrance. Xiao Chen is not very far away from there, he is able to see everything clearly. It is hard for him remain calm in a situation like this, this move of Zhao Lin Er is way too brutal.

The peerless beauty of the Imperial Angel, plus the formidable strength of the treants, are indeed very enticing! Regardless of whether they are after her beauty, or want to subdue the treants, they will all gather around her. Naturally, in regards to Xiao Chen, this move might turn into his worst nightmare. His life will be put on the line!

One can easily imagine just how much power will Zhao Lin Er be able to gather. This will be the first alliance to be formed on this Dragon Island, Xiao Chen never thought Zhao Lin Er would come up with this kind of strategy. No wonder she looked like she already had victory within her grasp. No wonder she didn't impatiently leads the treants to pursue and eliminate him immediately.

Xiao Chen could feel a great danger approaching, he lie on top of the valley wall quietly to observe the development, he did not even move an inch away from that spot.

All the practitioners around this area were alarmed, when the treants made an appearance for the first time yesterday, this area has become the focal point of many practitioners. Now, after Zhao Lin Er put up the blood-colored banner to attract people's attention, many practitioners responded instantly.

Merely half a day later, thirteen people already joined the treant's valley. Among them are Spell Masters, Psychics, and Martial Artists, all of them were in teams of two or three. All of them had the capability to survive by themselves, after combining their strength together, one can say they have suddenly become an incomparably powerful force!

Right now, the first alliance in the Dragon Island had just been formed in the treant's valley. Their most important task is not to seek for the Ancestral Dragon, nor the Syndicate Dragon King, but to exterminate Xiao Chen.

An alliance formed by experts could be considered a major event. Due to that, the information spread around at high-speed. Xiao Chen's name was exposed to numerous experts for the first time. In only half a day, his name has been spread all over the surrounding of the Dragon Island. He could already be considered a "celebrity" now.

Until the afternoon, no one else joined the treant's valley. Most of the practitioners concealed themselves in the dark to wait and observe the development. Lasting until the dusk, two more people joined them, they were actually Yaluo De and Chaos.

The strength of the treant's valley undoubtedly increased tremendously. Xiao Chen felt the pressure and danger became increasingly heavy.

On a mountain range far far away, the exceptionally beautiful Yan Qing Cheng saw Yaluo De and Chaos entered the treant's valley, she started, "Yaluo De wanted to subdue the treant."

The golden-haired pretty boy, Lande, nodded his head and say, "He finally make his moves, but whether the natural spirit power he developed himself is sufficient or not is hard to say. Otherwise it will be as futile as drawing water with wicker basket."

"This Xiao Chen is in for a trouble....."

"How about we make our moves and present our sincerity to them?"

.....

Xiao Chen had already hid himself on top of the valley wall for an entire day. He watched everything that is taking place calmly, the three skeletons were also motionless, it seemed like they were refining their spiritual light. As for the snow-white little critter, it was blinking its glittering big eyes in the beginning, sizing up everything curiously. In the end, seeing that Xiao Chen and the rest remained

motionless, it gradually started to lose interest. It actually curled into a ball and fell into a deep sleep beside Xiao Chen.

After sleeping for half a day, when the afterglow dyed the horizon red on that evening, the little critter finally opened its big eyes. Rubbing its little belly that is making a grumbling sound, the little critter faced Xiao Chen and let out a few squeaks. Seeing that Xiao Chen remained motionless, the little critter resentfully groaned a few times. With the precious tree that has lost its luster on its head, the little critter turned into a streak of white light as it entered the treant's valley.

As if the three skeletons had just come to life, they recovered from the deathly stillness state, and exercised their joints actively.

Xiao Chen is still waiting, waiting for the late night to approach.

The moon rose to the sky, the stars emerged, the nocturnal birds hooted, and the bonfire flickered in the valley. Zhao Lin Er is together with few of the treants, the dozens of practitioners split into several groups, and encircled the bonfire to discuss a few matters.

Only until very late at night did the speck of flame extinguish. With so many practitioners gathered together, they are not afraid of anyone mounting a sneak attack on them.

Xiao Chen waited for another half an hour, he is finally about to move into action. He knew even if this valley turned into a sea of fire, it will be ineffective against most of the practitioners. It is not necessarily effective against the treants either. He decided to retreat immediately after making his moves, then seeking a hiding place to continue his training. This time can be considered some

kind of warning. Even if he cannot defeat them, at the very least, he wanted to put his opponent in a difficult situation.

And just when Xiao Chen was about to make his move, the little critter finally returned. Who knows what the little critter just ate, its little belly is so plump that it can't even walk steadily.

“Urp……” The little critter is actually burping, its mouth is actually glittering bright. There is a hint of something that resembles fairy dew hanging on its mouth, those crystal clear liquid droplet actually possessed a hint of splendid radiance.

Xiao Chen was gobsmacked, this snow-white little critter is too miraculous, could it be that it found a spiritual spring or fairy extract? The liquid hanging on its mouth is flickering with splendor, it is definitely not an ordinary item!

“What did you eat?” Xiao Chen looked at the little critter with amazement. The three skeletons also surrounded the little critter.

The little critter looked extremely satisfied, it rubbed its plump little belly, and expressed its satisfaction with a humming sound.

“Eh, where is your precious tree?” Xiao Chen was shocked to find that the sapling is gone.

The little critter reclined on the flowers and plants comfortably, using its little paw to point at the valley. Hinting that it left the precious tree in that place.

Xiao Chen was completely speechless, this little critter is too thoughtless [1]. It

completely neglected the precious tree, discarding this kind of divine sproutling as it pleased. If the precious tree has a soul, it will definitely complain about meeting such an irresponsible beast.

[tl: [1] = Although it is translated as “thoughtless”, the Chinese characters are “大條”, which literally means “poop”. But, it can mean 2 things, either “consider everyone else beneath oneself”, or just doing things without thinking. In this case, I would assume the latter would be more fitting.]

Chapter 48 – Sweet Dew of Life

Now, Xiao Chen finally know how he could dig out the small sacred tree so smoothly. Surely it was because the little critter tossed it around at random, leaving the precious tree behind at that place. And the three skeletons already knew about the existence of the sacred tree and the little critter at a much earlier time. Maybe because it tossed the sacred tree in the deathly swamp before.

Xiao Chen seriously wanted to hit its head strongly!

The little critter lazily reclined on top of the flowers and plants, it seemed to be reflecting on the aftertaste of the delicacy. It actually smacked its lips with an “onom-onom” sound.

Xiao Chen prepared himself to set this place on fire in a moment, but just around this time, the little critter seemed like it had enough rest, it actually rolled over to Xiao Chen’s side with a “Guruguru!” sound. The little critter pulled the corner of the lower hem of his shirt to hint Xiao Chen to follow it. Recalling that the small sacred tree is still within the valley, Xiao Chen didn’t have the heart to let it be destroyed in the conflagration. Thus, he followed after the little critter, at the same time he also wanted to see just what did the little critter ate earlier.

The three skeletons were raising the back of their heels and walked lightly like a thief. However, with three skeletons walking in such a way, it is actually somewhat amusing.

The clung to a forest tree and climbed down along the valley wall. After entering the valley, the little critter leads them to turn left and right, getting

further and further away from the area that was once flickering with flame. After that, they narrowly avoided detection from two treants. The little critter bring them to the depths of the valley.

In the depths of the valley, the forest trees are very scarce, each ancient tree require at least more than ten people to wrap their arms around it. They looked like huge umbrellas, some of the ancient trees have a great number of branches, and luxuriant leaves. The crown of a single tree can occupy up to almost one square kilometer, it can be said to be an extremely flourishing forest.

After advancing for roughly several miles, they finally arrived at the deepest part of the valley.

There are specks of radiance flickering in front of them, it appears a little strange in this quiet valley. After they looked at the light source clearly, Xiao Chen and the three skeletons stopped their footsteps in shock.

A bluish-green giant, flickering with specks of green radiance, seemed to be suffering from intense pain. It stood there with a crooked body, it is much taller compared to the other three treants before. Its height is no less than twenty meter tall, this is an old treant. The wrinkles are piled up on its face, the long green whiskers hanged down until its chest.

What makes Xiao Chen and the rest startled the most was not the especially lofty old treant. But rather the small crack on the treant's chest, there is a two meter tall naked man inside the crack struggling to get out!

The man has a corporeal body, he doesn't look that much different from any normal human kind. However, even though he looks like a youth, he has the same appearance as that of the treant. Moreover, once you look at him

carefully, a faint green radiance is circulating around his body.

Xiao Chen was incomparably shocked, the man seemed to be trying hard to evolve from the old treant!

As the man struggled to get out from the crack a little by little, the twenty meter tall old treant slowly started to wither. Its vitality diminished quickly, and the specks of radiance constantly gathered around the naked man.

An alternative evolution! Xiao Chen was shocked to the extreme.

The millennium ancient tree can evolve into treant, and the treant can completely transform into human!

He felt a really powerful energy fluctuation from the body of the naked man, it doesn't feel any inferior to a vicious dragon! The evolving process of the man seemed to be exceptionally painful. Who knows how long this process had persisted, only half of his body had undergo transformation.

The snow-white little critter blinked its big eyes, and pulled Xiao Chen's trouser to indicate him to continue moving forward. However, they steadily distanced themselves from the currently evolving treant.

After bypassing the old treant, only a few hundred meter away, an area filled with the fragrant of flowers and plants appeared in front of them. All of the flowers and plants are brimming with spiritual aura. The divine radiance located at the center of the area is even more brilliant, it is especially gorgeous under the dim light of night.

Right in the center of the flowers and plants, there is a half square foot tiny puddle. The bright radiance is precisely emitted from that place, there is an endless amount of life aura circulating around the little puddle. And the little critter's precious tree is rooted right in the center of that little puddle. The seven-colored radiance is extremely dense, the entire tree is very dazzling, and the liquid in the small puddle is almost dried up.

Xiao Chen was dumbstruck, even though he never heard of the treants in the human world, he had heard of the sparkling clear liquid in the little puddle. That seemed like..... the Sweet Dew of Life!

That is the crystallization of nature. According to legend, only an incomparably vast ancient forest can produce a few drops over the countless years. This thing has the effect of bringing the death back to life, but ordinary people can never hope to find it. This is a genuine Sweet Dew of Life.

And this place..... actually had a half square foot worth of dew!

However, no matter how startled Xiao Chen felt, it is already too late. Most of the Sweet Dew of Life had already entered the plump little belly of the little critter. And the remaining dew had been absorbed by the sacred tree, it is truly regretful. This little critter is really too miraculous, it is actually able to find the sweet dew.

An astonishing transformation had already occurred to the palm sized sapling. That sparkling clear white jade leaf already completely grow up, it is now as big as the black jade leaf. Moreover, it sprouted another piece of jasper-like leaf, a glorious green radiance roam around the sapling.

In contrast to discovering the Sweet Dew of Life, Xiao Chen is more surprised

at the state of the little critter and the precious tree. Who knows how much sweet dew was drank by the little critter, even though its little belly is as round as a ball now, it didn't undergo any transformation. This is really too startling, even if a huge dragon drink this much Sweet Dew of Life, it should at least have some bizarre transformation.

This little critter is too mysterious!

And even after the sapling absorbed the other half Sweet Dew of Life, it was only enough for it to grow a piece of new leaf. This is also a very startling situation, could it be that one piece of new leaf is even more dominant compared to a half puddle of dew?

All humans are selfish creatures, Xiao Chen is not a saint either, he decided to use any means to keep the little critter and the precious tree by his side. This little critter is too inconceivable.

The snow-white little critter pulled up the precious tree, and placed the tree on top of its head without a care in the world.

“Crash!”

After the sapling was pulled up, a noise was transmitted from the dried up tiny pond. Three sparkling clear crystal appeared in the pond. The little critter grabbed the crystals suspiciously, then it throw one of them into its mouth as if it was a candy and chew it with crackling sounds. After breaking it down into small pieces, the little critter swallowed it. Using that opportunity, it passed one of the remaining crystals to Xiao Chen.

All of this happened too quick, Xiao Chen didn't had the chance to stop the little critter. He didn't expect there would be a crystallization of the sweet dew in the puddle. The little critter is wasting the natural resources way too recklessly. Just a moment ago, it drank a bellyful of the Sweet Dew of Life, now it even swallowed the crystal whole!

Such a waste! It is such a waste!

Apparently, it doesn't taste so good, so the little critter tossed the last remaining crystal to Qinguang Wang. This kind of carefree action is seriously driving Xiao Chen mad, could it be that this little critter grew up from the divine spring? Xiao Chen was completely speechless!

Chapter 49 – Setting the Valley on Fire

Only a valley that could produce the Sweet Dew of Life had enough capability to nurture these kind of spiritual beast such as the treant.

They cannot stay in this place for too long, Xiao Chen recalled that treant who is currently evolving not far from here. That is definitely an existence as powerful as a fierce dragon, he is not very far away from this place, maybe it was in order to protect this Sweet Dew of Life. However, he is not able to attend to this place due to the evolution.

Xiao Chen and the rest of them quickly withdraw from the depths of the valley, they carefully avoided the detection of two treants along the way. It seems like the little critter also know it should not startle those big fella. It remains especially quiet on the way back, it even relied on its instinct once to avoid a treant that had transformed into a tall ancient tree. If one is not careful under the dim light of night, it will be very hard to imagine that is transformed from a mobile green giant.

Including the currently evolving old treant, they have already discovered five treant in this valley. This is absolutely an extremely powerful force, especially when that old treant might possess an inconceivable level of strength.

Xiao Chen don't believe Zhao Lin Er and the rest of them could drive that old treant who is currently undergoing an evolution into action. He who has already taken the form of mankind should possess wisdom incomparable from the other treants. Furthermore, he possessed strength beyond comparison, there is no way he could let other people order him around!

Since they already had a plan to find a place to hide and train after the uproar,

Xiao Chen decided to make his move one last time before he leave. This can be considered a warning and his counterattack against all the people in the treant's valley. Xiao Chen and the three skeletons transformed into four glints of light, they roamed around the surrounding of the treant's valley to set up the fire all over the place.

Most of the vegetation on the Dragon Island are oily in nature. One they are ignited, they will immediately burst into a huge conflagration. Xiao Chen need a torch to ignite the forest, and the three skeletons possessed powerful Spiritual Power. Their spiritual light pulsated unceasingly, they send out their Netherworld Flames as they passed through the forest. In only a short period of time, the flame soared into the sky all around the treant's valley. The raging flames cannot be stopped as they spread towards the interior of the valley.

Xiao Chen and the three skeletons didn't dare to stay here for much longer, they immediately distanced themselves at lightning speed. It is impossible to return to the deathly swamp anymore. Moreover, it is also impossible to return to that direction. Xiao Chen and the three skeletons dash towards the West side of the Dragon Island as if they were flying. That is an unfamiliar region that they have never explored before.

Behind them, the flame soared into the sky, it is exceptionally dazzling this late at night. Half of the sky was heated until red, only after running for more than ten miles away did Xiao Chen and the three skeletons stopped their footsteps to turn around and watch. There are no people pursuing them, there are no other sounds other than the wailing of the beasts all around them.

The snow-white little critter also followed after them. When they were setting the forest on fire earlier, the little critter followed after them excitedly, then it escaped along with them in the end.

Standing on top of a mountain range, Xiao Chen looked at the crimson-colored valley. He could vaguely hear the clamor and chaos in that place, Xiao Chen can guess what kind of expression is on Zhao Lin Er's face now. Even if they did not receive any damage, this can also be considered a big blow in regards to all the people in the valley. Their alliance had just been formed, and the treant's valley had already been ignited by others on the very first day of their alliance. This is the contempt of the enemy, and their disgrace!

Xiao Chen didn't stay behind to watch any longer, he pushed his way through the woods at lightning speed along with the three skeletons. They keep going westward while avoiding the monsters in the woods. Only after traveling for a few dozens of miles that very night did they finally stop. It should be mentioned that this Dragon Island is apparently very big. After traveling for dozens of miles, this area still belong to the outer part of the Dragon Island. This can be considered a really big island.

Let the others go crazy and massacre by themselves, Xiao Chen did not want to get caught up in the maelström of contest over a Syndicate Dragon King. He wanted to spend the rest of his time training in secret, waiting for someone to find the Syndicate Dragon King quietly, and then board the ship of those people to leave the Dragon Island. After that, he will finally enter the vast continent of the world of immortals.

Perhaps it was a coincidence, or perhaps there really was a mysterious power at work here, after the conflagration burned the treant's valley for an hour, and destroyed half of the valley, a black cloud suddenly covered the cloudless starry sky. A downpour fell at high-speed, extinguishing the raging flame soon after.

There is no casualty in the valley, but everyone had a really ugly expression on their face. It was very obvious that this conflagration was set up by someone. Zhao Lin Er stood on top of the treant's shoulder, her entire body was surrounded by a glittering radiance that blocked the rainwater. The water

vapour formed a thin layer of mist around her, which makes her seem like an illusion.

However, the mood of the Imperial Angel was not as ethereal as her fairy-like body. She felt extremely angry in her heart, she once thought it might be other people who attacked their alliance, but she ruled them out very fast. She discovered distinctive claw marks that belongs to the three skeletons. All of this was undoubtedly Xiao Chen's doing.

This is indeed a tit for tat, she just recently gathered a formidable force, and Xiao Chen immediately sweep their face ruthlessly. This will no doubt make them an object of ridicule among the other practitioners on this island.

Among the crowds, Chaos let out a low beastly howl. Being forced to leave the treant's valley by Xiao Chen in such a sorry figure, it makes him incomparably angry. His companion, Yaluo De, was very calm. He watched the three treants attentively from time to time. There were five treants in the valley, there were two in the depths of the valley that were not affected by the conflagration. The remaining three, only one of them sustained an injury on its left arm, the other two were in excellent shape. This is indeed a really powerful force, Yaluo De felt extremely moved.

The rests were also very angry, more than ten awe-inspiring experts were actually stuck in a dilemma due to one person setting the valley on fire.

Most of the practitioners at the outer region of the Dragon Island were startled. Some of them stood on top of the mountain range to survey the surrounding from an elevated position, some of them jumped on top of a lofty treetop to gaze afar, some Spell Master and Psychic even flew over there to watch in close distant.

Yan Qing Cheng stood on top of a precipice not far away, gazing at the glorious starlight far far away. When she noticed that the black clouds only covered the treant's valley, it seems like she thought of something and said, "This power is originated from the Dragon Island!"

.....

This is a very chaotic night.

The second day, the news regarding the conflagration at the treant's valley caused a sensation as expected.

Xiao Chen, that name once more become the focal point of every practitioners. However, no one can find a single trace of him, it seems as if he disappeared from the Dragon Island. Many people guess he must have escaped into the depths of the Dragon Island.

However, the disturbance this time didn't last for long, it was diluted by what was about to happen later. Three days after the event in the treant's valley, a big event occurred on the Dragon Island. Somebody has found the Syndicate Dragon King!

"Roar....."

The sound of the dragon roar resonated in the earth and heaven, a great number of beasts were completely terrified. And the creature that produced the dragon roar was only a one meter long little dragon! The enormous sound wave produced by it was like a tempestuous storm, it even caused the mountain

woods to sway violently. Judging by the power of its roar, it should be comparable to the Tyrannical Dragon and Eight-Clawed Tyrant Dragon!

Chapter 50 – Sacred Light Seal the Island

This is a violent-colored young dragon, even though it is merely one meter long, it possesses a powerful draconic aura that caused those huge monsters in the mountain woods not dare to provoke it. This is a powerful pressure inherent in the king of the beasts.

Its appearance resembled the legendary Qilin, its body looked like both a deer and a horse, with wolf-like hoofs, and dragon scales. However, there are also some parts are obviously different from the legendary Qilin, it has a crocodile-shaped divine tail. Its entire body is flickering with bright violet radiance, the scales are densely packed together. Moreover, there are a pair of horns on top of its head, the violet-gold horns look exactly like antlers. Its head has a huge resemblance with the legendary Ancestral Dragon!

Moreover, judging from its imposing manner, it is essentially different from Qilin. Qilin is a legendary auspicious beast, but this violet-colored Syndicate Dragon King is brimming with a beast-like pressure. Even though it is very small, it gives people a really powerful oppressive feeling!

This Syndicate Dragon King was discovered by Yan Qing Cheng and Lande near the waterfall. They kept watching over that region, because they had already discovered a young dragon seemed to be roaming around that place very frequently. However, only today did they finally find the traces of the young dragon.

But the young violet Dragon King was too powerful! Its world-shaking draconic roar could produce a surge of sound wave that possess an unmatched killing power. It even caused all the leaves of the forest trees nearby to wither. Yan Qing Cheng and Lande had no choice but to retreat in the face of its sheer

power.

Only from the power of the sound wave alone, it should be comparable to the sound technique of a Historia level expert!

The Ancestral Dragon and Syndicate Dragon King will undergo an evolution not long after they were born. After that, they will take the initiative to leave their mother's side to begin their own unique evolution. Even though it is not under the protection of a fully grown dragon, Yan Qing Cheng and Lande discovered that they still have a hard time subduing this young dragon!

The power of the Syndicate Dragon King far exceeded their expectation!

According to legend, after the dragon race had been sealed on this uncivilized island, they will lose their divine power for life. However, it didn't have any effect on this young Dragon King, it was actually capable of shooting a glaring violet divine radiance that turned the mountain in front of Yan Qing Cheng [1] and Lande into dust.

[tl: [1] = the author actually wrote "Zhao Lin Er" here.]

The young Dragon King was very sharp-witted and ran away immediately. Its entire body was covered in a violet divine flame, and disappeared in the woods like a streak of purple lightning. Its speed was really too fast, even when Lande was flying in the sky, he was not able to catch up.

The loud roar of the Syndicate Dragon King alarmed all the people on this Dragon Island. All the practitioners immediately rushed over to this place, but by the time they arrive, they can only find a few traces. The young Dragon King

already disappeared from this place long ago.

This is the first Syndicate Dragon found on this Dragon Island, people addressed it as the Amethyst Dragon King.

In the next few days, majority of the practitioners gathered in this area to track down the whereabouts of the Amethyst Dragon King. Yan Qing Cheng felt a bit vexed, she never thought a young dragon would be so powerful, which caused them to let it get away regretfully.

Without a doubt, the appearance of the Amethyst Dragon King had an extremely huge influence on every practitioner here, everyone wanted to subdue it. If they can subdue it and raise it until adulthood, that will become a terrifying existence that even the deities doesn't dare to provoke!

Even the alliance in the treant's valley was no longer searching for Xiao Chen's whereabouts. All of them were absorbed in seeking for clues regarding the Amethyst Dragon King. Subsequently, this dispelled any crisis Xiao Chen was about to face, the Imperial Angel Zhao Lin Er was also unable to keep them on track of finding Xiao Chen.

However, even after half a month had passed, nobody found a single trace of the young dragon, it was as if the Amethyst Dragon King had evaporated. They were unable to find any more traces, everyone couldn't help but heave a sigh. The Amethyst Dragon King possessed high intelligence, as if it knew dangers were approaching, it successfully avoided everyone's detection.

All the practitioners came up with one after another speculation, some thought it might be hiding in a dark cave, others thought it might have entered the depths of the Dragon Island. Because of this, some continued to search the

outer region of the Dragon Island, and some who were willing to take the risks went to explore the depths of the Dragon Island.

During the search for the Amethyst Dragon King, it was also a battle royal. Due to this, many people lost their life!

After the appearance of the Amethyst Dragon King, twenty days had passed. A big event once more occurred on the Dragon Island! This time, it is truly terrifying, the fate of everyone had closely bound up by this.

Until today, a large number of practitioners had already gathered on the vast Dragon Island, all of them are powerful experts, there are no longer any ships coming to this island.

However, waves of terrifying divine radiance suddenly appeared above the Dragon Island today. In that instant, everyone was blinded by that brilliant light. The entire Dragon Island seemed like a resplendent divine pearl in the boundless ocean. It was incomparably dazzling, the bright glow rise straight into the heavens above.

On the Dragon Island, a great number of beasts and dragons roar simultaneously. As if the heaven had fallen and the earth was split apart, the entirety of the enormous Dragon Island was shaking wildly. It was just like the end of the world is approaching, all the practitioners were incomparably frightened, they didn't know what is going on. Everyone were shaken to their core, they all had an incomparably terrified feeling.

The dazzling divine radiance lasted for a little more than an hour. After that, the radiance gradually become dimmer. The practitioners at the outer region of the island were shocked to discover the astonishing changes to the sea area

around the Dragon Island. A glorious divine radiance appeared in the boundless ocean, a monstrous wave appeared on the originally tranquil ocean, it was as if the waves wanted to engulf the clouds on top of the sky.

Numerous practitioners could vaguely feel an incomparably terrifying energy surging up from the great waves.

Soon after, they saw a terrifying scene that confirmed the fear in their hearts. A big ship that came late was caught up in the ocean waves, and break up in a split second. As if it was a melting snowflake, the ship completely disappeared in the ocean waves!

The Taboo Ocean around the Dragon Island already reverted back to the impassable region. Nobody will be able to leave the island now! The seal restored ahead of time!

This is a huge event that exceeded everyone's expectation!

According to the written records, after the Taboo Ocean open up in the past, it should at least take half a year before the seal was restored. However, the duration this time is too short, it's not even two months yet!

After the practitioners at the outer region of the island saw the situation before them, all of them was about to fall apart! This means that they will never be able to leave this Dragon Island ever again. Their only option is to wait till the next cycle a few hundred years later. However, who is capable of living that long? This mysterious and terrifying Dragon Island suppressed the power of the deities, nobody can breakthrough the bounds of Immortalis on this island. Nobody can wait till the day when the seal open up again!

The majority of the people who came to this Dragon Island are young experts. They are the representatives of various powers in the mainland. All of them are heroes that were selected very carefully. In order to maintain a balance, a very few powerful experts from the previous generation will enter the Dragon Island, this is a form of equilibrium taken shape due to some kind of mutual understanding from the various powers.

Of course, even if they do not enter the Dragon Island, it doesn't mean they will not make their move. The Dragon Island is located in the boundless ocean, it is very far away from the mainland, even if one successfully subdued a Syndicate Dragon King, leaving this sea area is also very dangerous. They might even be plundered along the way back to the mainland.

The previous generation experts from various clans were all waiting along the way to provide support. They are located thousands of miles away in the boundless sea, each at their own designated spot. There are even some demigod among them, that is an existence close to the venerable god!

The young experts on the island fell into despair, they will be trapped on this Dragon Island for all eternity. And just around this time, they saw another terrifying scene, in the boundless huge waves, a Fallen Angel was struggling to get free. However, in a very short period of time, her entire body fell apart, her body was twisted and crushed by the surging divine radiance.

Chapter 51 – Big Purge

Such a dreadful Taboo Ocean, even the sky was already enclosed!

Fallen Angels have ability comparable to the demigods, they were revered as an ancient deity clan by some weaker races! And this kind of existence..... was also unable to resist the sealing power of the Taboo Ocean.

And not far away, a human Martial Artist who is capable of flying, also perished within that divine light at high-speed. That was a demigod level expert who was keeping watch at the outer region of the island, to wait and provide support for the young experts from their own side. That was an extremely powerful figure in the world of immortals.

Immortalis and Nirvana level practitioners normally don't tread on the mundane world, the demigod level expert from Zephyrus realm could be considered a figure that is already at the top of the pyramid in this secular world. They can contend against the legendary ancient Fallen Angel race, and strive against the Sacred Dragon. However, they are also unable to resist the sealing power of the Taboo Ocean.

All the young experts at the outer region of the island completely fell apart. Even demigods can't break out of the Taboo Ocean, how will they ever leave? They will be trapped here for eternity. This day, the panic spread over the entire Dragon Island. To them, this sudden unforeseen event was like the end of the world.

There are no hope on the Dragon Island, only despair awaits on this island!

The divine radiance above the Dragon Island finally diminished, everything slowly returned to normal, the sea area in the vicinity gradually calmed down. The divine radiance is already gone, but one can clearly feel, there is a mysterious power in the seawater separating this Dragon Island from the outside world.

For close to one month, Xiao Chen was indulged in training, strength is everything!

Only until the big event that occurred on Dragon Island today did he finally stop. Very soon, he found out what was happening, this is also a shocking news to him! However, it is pointless to indulge oneself in despair. Right now, he can only consider the problem at present, panic will surely ensue on this Dragon Island. If they were given a push by some people who use their heads, the next few days will be an incomparably dangerous period!

Xiao Chen confined himself in between a rocky precipice, he must not get caught up in the starting point of this dark period. The most important task at the moment is to stay alive.

As a matter of fact, in the next three days, everything was as Xiao Chen had expected. A bloody storm blew across the island, a cruel purge was conducted!

It was definitely not only one or two person pushing their back, there ought to be many people who add fuel to the fire. It caused the desperate people to feel apprehensive, the battle royal and slaughter caused many young experts to fall!

No matter where, there are always some schemers, this is the first purge on the Dragon Island. It is impossible to tell who was the driving force behind the scenes now, only after the island has calmed down would there be some clues.

In the following three days, many practitioners were on the verge of despair, they practically went crazy. Many of the female practitioners among them faced a disaster due to their charm. The beastly nature of the despaired crowd completely broke out, what they didn't dare to do in the past, what else do they have to worry about now?

For a period of time, everyone committed a sin, the strong survives, the weak dies, that became the only truth on the Dragon Island. In merely three days, nearly half of the practitioners on the Dragon Island are dead, several hundreds of people had lost their life! The monsters fully enjoyed the meal.

This is an awful disaster, this is a big purge initiated by others!

In those incomparably dark, and chaotic three days, some truly terrifying experts also fell. They are the enemies of those driving force behind the scenes. Everything finally come to an end now.

After the cruel purge had come to a pass, the island gradually regained its former tranquility. Everyone was already on high alert, all of them started to think about their own survival in the future.

Originally, everyone who entered the Dragon Island was a representative for their own clan. It could be said that they should all be opposing each other, but forming an alliance now will become a trend! If they want to live on, they must come together, and expand their strength.

The treant's valley is a good example, during the three days of purge, it is not that there are no people pushing them to go wipe out the treant's valley, many people have a voracious desire for Zhao Lin Er's peerless charm, some people

went to attack in despair from time to time. However, only more corpses piled up in front of the treant's valley, the besiegers suffered a disastrous death. They were unable to seize the treant's valley, this made people notice the importance of forming an alliance. Only when they come together would they have the power to survive.

However, only the people inside the treant's valley know, they were only able to preserve the treant's valley by mere luck. Even though there were a few powerful treants who participated in the battle, they were still incapable of stopping the practitioners who attacked them crazily every now and then. If the terrifying youth did not come out from the depths of the treant's valley in the most crucial moment, they would have lost the battle.

That youth was around two meter tall, he has a long dark green hair, his strength was practically as powerful as a fierce dragon. Most of the practitioners who rushed into the treant's valley were finished off by him.

As soon as the battle in the treant's valley concluded, Yaluo De and Chaos left immediately. It was because Yaluo De already knew that he wouldn't be able to subdue the treant in that valley. He set out with Chaos in order to form an alliance of their own.

Not long after the purge ended, a few dozen alliances appeared at once. Among them are the "Nature Alliance" set up by Yaluo De and Chaos, the "Dharma Alliance" set up by Buddhist Yizhen and his senior apprentice, the "Undying Alliance" set up by Yan Qing Cheng and Lande, the "Radiance Alliance" set up by Light Spell Master Schroder, the "Blue Rain Alliance" set up by female psychic Lanyu.....

No matter what, the treant's valley is still considered the first alliance, after the big purge, all the powerful experts formed their own alliance one after

another, all in order to expand their strength. Forming an alliance already become a huge trend, only in this way will they have enough strength to survive.

Obviously, the founder of some alliance are those driving force behind the purge. They are now beginning to recruit soldiers to expand their forces.

In about two to three days, some alliance already recruited forty to fifty people. And right now, there are only six to seven hundred people on this Dragon Island. For an alliance to have a few dozens of people could already be considered very terrifying. If they keep this up, they will inevitably become the overlord of this Dragon Island.

There are no lack of schemers within the weaker alliance, and those practitioners who didn't join an alliance, many people united together to spread the news, they do not want an overlord on this Dragon Island, they don't want an emperor, they want freedom and equality!

To prevent a super-alliance from emerging, a harsh regulation had gradually been accepted by the majority. That is: One alliance can't have more than ten people, otherwise all the other alliance will combine forces to eliminate that them.

Thereby suppressing the appearance of a powerful force.

This regulation is supported by the majority of the people, because they clearly know what does this imply. They were able to avoid a dreadful outcome. Otherwise, someone might become the "emperor" of this Dragon Island, someone might become the overlord, and many more people would be enslaved. They will have no choice but turn into an obedient pawn.

This is what the schemers didn't foresee, all the people who entered the Dragon Island are elites, the schemers were only the first to rise in revolt. After the rest have calmed down, their wisdom are not much lower than them.

Chapter 52 – The End of Secret Training

Many restrictions were slowly put into place.

In order to prevent themselves from killing each other mutually, to prevent another disaster from taking place, to prevent the actions of the schemer, another new rule was put into place. If there are any conflicting views between any two alliances, they cannot conduct a battle royal with more than three alliances. Only when ten alliances agreed upon it will the two alliances be able to settle their conflict with military force.

Thereby preventing the alliance from joining forces.

And the conflict between two individuals only require the consent from three alliances.

On the surface, preventing an alliance from growing too much seemed to have prevented the appearance of a king. However, the situation right now is still brimming with all kinds of malpractice. A battle would still break out from time to time, even though it had already been legalized.

In the end, all the people capable of entering the Dragon Island are the representatives of various clans, they are all distinguished figures from somewhere. All of them are very conceited and proud, they are rather happy to see these kind of rules were put into place. They have already put a restriction on the powerful forces, and now they can show off their powers in a battle legitimately.

In a short few days, many secret dealings were taking place on the Dragon

Island, thus a few dozen alliances were formed very quickly. The people who did not join any alliance are very rarely seen. Of course, it is natural for there to be some special case. Rumor has it that someone with immeasurable strength had already entered the depths of the Dragon Island.

Xiao Chen walked out from a hidden cliff, arriving at a brightly colored valley. There are various kind of exotic flowers in full bloom here, the jade-like grass spread as far as the eyes can see, the green bamboos were emerald-green, there are even waterfalls, jade-like streamlet, and bluish-green tiny lake, the landscape is very beautiful.

The snow-white little critter lazily and helplessly recline on the flowers and plants. The little guy felt incomparably distressed since many days ago, every day it was enticed by the fragrance of Xiao Chen's roasted meat, so much that even its drool is flowing out. However, it was unable to enjoy it, the little critter drank too much Sweet Dew of Life last time, even its little belly had turned as round as a ball. After a month had passed, not much of it has been digested yet. In the face of such a delicious food, it can only watch and sigh in admiration.

Seeing the appearance of the little critter drooling, Xiao Chen felt it was especially funny. During this period of training, Xiao Chen gave the little critter a name called Keke. He originally wanted to call it "Hehe", because when the little critter is happy, it will always giggled incessantly. In the end, he chose a name with similar pronunciation.

The three skeletons made a considerable breakthrough in this period of time, it was due to the crystallization of the sweet dew given to them by the little critter. In the beginning, Xiao Chen was a little anxious seeing the three skeletons absorb the crystal. After all, they are undead creatures, he was afraid that there would be a conflict due to different properties of energy.

However, after a throughout observation, he found that it was a needless worry. They are not really those kind of departed spirit in one's imagination. Their spiritual light did not extinguish. In a sense, their souls are not that much different from a human's soul. In fact, their souls are much stronger than an average person's soul!

A crystallized Sweet Dew of Life was only about the size of a little finger, but the pure energy it contained was unimaginable. It was almost comparable to a dragon crystal, and precisely because of this crystal, the three skeletons finally breakthrough one of the bottleneck.

Originally, they were around the realm of Exuvia, but they were very unstable. Sometimes, after a fierce battle, they will drop from this level. And now they finally entered the Second Celestial Layer of Exuvia. Their white frameworks are much shinier now, they appear as smooth as jade.

The most important thing is the bizarre changes of the three skeletons, on their foreheads appeared a lotus-shaped insignia that can produce divine light.

Xiao Chen could vaguely feel the formation of that insignia will be very beneficial for the three skeletons. Perhaps most of the essence from the crystal gathered there.

One can say they have finally become a real expert, they can finally contend against powerful enemy alongside Xiao Chen.

What kind of changes happened in the outside world for the past few days, Xiao Chen did not know. He decided to go out and roam around, but this time he didn't bring the three skeletons along, they are too eye-catching.

Pushing his way through the dense jungle alone, he returned to the familiar zone. He quickly discovered many abnormal location.

Not long later, Xiao Chen finally found out what happened recently, regarding the alliance, and the regulations drawn up for their own survival. He accurately identified the benefits and disadvantages among the regulations. On the surface, it seems that there are some constraints on the Dragon Island, but the battles are completely legalized!

He tried to move stealthily, but there are too many practitioners in this area. He is still discovered before long, his portrait was once painted on a banner, some people have seen it before, there are even more people who have heard of him. He once set fire on the treant's valley ruthlessly and destroyed half of the area. Xiao Chen can be regarded as a celebrity now.

It is fortunate that Xiao Chen is no longer in his hideout. Since he has already been discovered, he openly walked towards the mountain forest. Since the battle has already been legalized, they cannot voluntarily provoke someone. Xiao Chen is actually looking forward to the day Zhao Lin Er come to challenge him legally.

Very soon, some people approached him, but it was not Zhao Lin Er. They wanted to pull Xiao Chen into their alliance, only to be indirectly rejected by him. After this, someone appeared every now and then, a few alliances extended their goodwill. However, they were all turned down gracefully by Xiao Chen, he didn't want to bind himself to a certain alliance yet.

Until he finally arrived not far away from the dwelling of the Elephants Draco, Xiao Chen had no choice but to stop his footstep. It was because someone with an ill complexion blocked his way, it was actually Chaos.

“What a coincidence, we meet again.” Xiao Chen wear a faint smile.

Chaos had an extremely gloomy look, the battle last time was considered a humiliation to him. When he heard Xiao Chen had entered this region just now, he immediately rushed over here. Even though he suffered a crushing defeat last time, the ancient beast soul within his body started to fuse with his body. While this made him feel extremely vexed, he gradually regained self-confidence. He wanted to fight with Xiao Chen again to clear up the past humiliation.

Today is a rare opportunity!

“I will rip you apart this time!” Chaos let out a growl, his three meter tall body, appeared exceptionally terrifying under the shadow of the woods.

“I heard, the battles are already legalized. Should we not find someone to be the witness?” Xiao Chen was completely fearless, he even appeared somewhat easygoing.

“Of course!” Even though Chaos had an inherent beastly nature, he also didn’t dare to mess around by himself. After all, the regulations are set just recently, he didn’t want to be the first to break the rules. Perhaps he might really be used as an example by those ambitious people, and invite his own doom.

There are a lot of practitioners in this area, the news spread out immediately, three alliances founder showed up on the spot right away. They unanimously approved the showdown, but the arena need to be picked by them. This area is too close to the Elephants Draco’s territory, in order to avoid alarming the fierce dragon, they need to keep far away from here.

The news spread at lightning speed. After all, since the formation of the alliance, this is the first legal battle after all kinds of regulations were put in place, it is a huge attraction! Not long later, hundreds of people gathered on the newly determined arena. A few dozen alliances had already arrived, and there are even more people rushing over here.

Chapter 53 – Fierce Battle

“Wait a moment!” After receiving the news, Yaluo De finally arrived before the start of the battle. Behind him are the members of the Nature Alliance which Yaluo De and Chaos established. Yaluo De had a really ugly expression, he didn’t want something unexpected to happen to Chaos, so he shouted loudly, “Someone else wanted to fight with Xiao Chen first!”

Among the hundreds of practitioners on the scene, many of them sneered at Yaluo De. Some people remain indifferent, since it is a matter of no concern to them, they are fine as long as they can see a worthy life and death battle.

Chaos’ complexion turned pale, even though he knew Yaluo De was worried about him, he was still very angry. He felt extremely shameful in front of so many audience.

“There is someone else who wants to challenge me, what do you think Chaos? If you want to challenge me in a two vs one battle, I can even let him work together with you to battle me.” Xiao Chen knew it was impossible for Chaos to consent. However, with Yaluo De’s signal, a Spell Master flew out from the Nature Alliance. He accepted Xiao Chen’s proposal, and said loudly to the audience, “Good, since Xiao Chen had already agreed, then I will also challenge him.”

This is simply too shameless, they are too thick-skinned! Xiao Chen never thought, Yaluo De would incite someone to do this. They have completely threw away all their faces.

As the founder of the Nature Alliance, Yaluo De represented his own alliance to take the initiative to approve the battle. And the second to approve was the

alliance from treant's valley, Zhao Lin Er had also just arrived a moment ago. The third to express their approval was an alliance called "Fluttering Cloud", the founder is a beautiful girl called Limeow. Xiao Chen don't remember ever offending this kind of woman before. But after seeing that she is standing not far away from Yaluo De, he immediately understood, the two alliance seemed to come from the same branch.

Many people were sneering at them, this is really too excessive. Chaos let out a snarl, he faced the Spell Master flying towards him, and shouted, "Step down! If you dare to disturb the battle between me and Xiao Chen, I will tear you apart first!"

The golden-haired Spell Master was called Damian, he was unnerved, and his face turned pale. Originally, when he wanted to rush over to lend Chaos a helping hand, he was already ridiculed by others. And now he even got reprimanded by Chaos, his complexion changed right away. He tucked his sleeves angrily and left the arena.

"I swear in my name, if anyone dare to disturb our battle, I will not let you go until either of us is dead!" The deep and low beastly howl resounded within the woods, it was overflowing with fiendish aura.

Yaluo De felt helpless, Damian the golden-haired Spell Master's complexion turned pale, the little incident before the battle ended like this.

Chaos let out a huge roar that shook the forest trees, he appear extremely brutal, green ominous glint gradually emitted from his pair of eyes, without wasting any more time on superfluous words, his three meter tall demonic body emitted a tyrannical aura. A full head of long brownish-yellow hair danced about hysterically, he appears incomparably ferocious.

Two huge monsters, approximately ten meter tall, were completely made up of divine radiance. They released a fiendish aura that would even shake the soul, the monsters are now floating behind Chaos. One is an energy-converted green divine wolf, the other one is an energy-converted yellow tiger, from their huge figures emitted waves of faintly discernible snarl that make people nervous. They make Chaos appear very frightening.

The vicious beasts are protecting him! Chaos seemed like the king of the beasts, a divine radiance lingered all around his body. He bellowed hysterically and dashed towards Xiao Chen, his pair of huge claws almost tore the space apart, the greenish-yellow dazzling radiance caused a distortion in space.

Xiao Chen was also as imposing as Chaos, his entire person resembled a huge mountain, he emitted an incomparably imposing and powerful aura. His entire body was shrouded in brilliant rays, the searing divine flame throbbed, he took a single step forward, and the earth trembled along with his footsteps.

A merciless blow, Xiao Chen released a bright divine radiance from his two hands over and over again, they are like divine blades that covered the entire sky. There are practically no opening in between the dazzling radiance. The nearby space is completely submerged by the dazzling radiance.

Within the terrifying energy radiance, one can vaguely see a divine radiance. It constantly clashed with the two vicious beasts, a terrifying aura spread over the entire mountain ridge.

Numerous alliance members are outside of the arena, a lot of people immediately turned pale after watching the battle.

Even the earth already started to tremble, the forest tree swayed hysterically, the dead leaves fluttered about in the air, the area in the vicinity is overflowing with powerful energy from the aftermath. The two people in the arena are moving like lightning within the dazzling radiance. They left one after another afterimages in the glaring radiance. They are exchanging blows after blows at lightning speed.

All kinds of exquisite killing techniques would be unveiled in a flash, the fight has exceeded the visual reaction of most of the people. This is a life and death confrontation between two experts!

Divine radiance, afterimages, demonic claws, beast soul, divine blade..... every time they intersected, a terrifying energy would spread all over the direction! The surrounding forest trees fell one after another, even if it was just the aftermath of the battle, those tall ancient trees were also unable to withstand it. The branches and withered leaves filled the sky, the wood shavings danced in the air like the snowflakes.

The two individuals emitted dazzling radiance from their entire body, it was like a raging divine flame. As a result of their extreme speed, their movement in the arena seemed like one after another lightning brandishing wildly.

“Roar.....” Chaos bellowed in rage, he jumped high into the sky, and swooped down like a Northern Goshawk [1]. Xiao Chen jumped after him and had his right arm grabbed firmly by Chaos. Just when Chaos wanted to turn his body around, he found that Xiao Chen was like an insurmountable mountain, he was not able to make Xiao Chen move the slightest bit. On the contrary, Xiao Chen twisted his wrist and grabbed Chaos’ left wrist, he turned his back to Chaos and violently throw his three meter tall body.

[tl: [1] = https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Northern_goshawk]

Divine radiance rushed forth, Chaos continuously knocked down eleven ancient trees before he fell among the broken branches and withered leaves. He dashed forward one more time while bellowing in rage. Only, he knew that he is no match for Xiao Chen, recalling the crushing defeat from last time, his self-confidence was swayed.

Xiao Chen soared into the sky one more time, he continuously sweep across both of his legs in the sky. The dazzling radiance fly towards Chaos, he used both arms to defend. Withstanding the attacks that weighed as much as ten thousand catties.

“Bang!”

Chaos was swept away by Xiao Chen who was in midair. A dazzling radiance burst out, destroying a wide expanse of forest trees.

All the audience here are the heroes of the new generation, but after looking at this match, the color of their faces couldn't help but change.

“Roar.....” Chaos bellowed in rage, but as soon as he stood up, his left arm was grabbed by Xiao Chen who got over here with lightning speed, and was tossed into the sky. After that, Xiao Chen rotated his right leg high up in the sky, and firmly smashed Chaos towards the ground.

Soon after, he left another afterimage in the sky. His two legs firmly locked onto Chaos' chest, if that attack didn't miss the target, his body will inevitably burst open. Chaos could feel an unprecedented fear, the battle last time already left a shadow in his heart, and to suffer another crushing defeat this time, he had lost all his drive. He hastily rolled his body in order to survive.

Xiao Chen's two legs stamped firmly on the ground, the earth trembled violently. One after another terrifying huge cracks appeared on the ground, the cracks extended over a long distant.

“Snap!”

Xiao Chen stamped one more time, with a bone snapping noise, Chaos' two legs were snapped off. A miserable shriek rang out in the forest, Xiao Chen swept his right foot with sudden force, kicking Chaos into the midair. A glorious radiance lingered all over his body, Xiao Chen soared into the sky and grabbed Chaos' arms with his two hands. He snapped off Chaos' arms with two brittle cracking sound.

Chapter 54 – Trample the Spell Master

“Stop it!” Damian flew over at high-speed, like a streak of golden lightning. From his mouth transmitted an eccentric sound, then with the wave of both hands, his spell was released. A several meter long energy-converted giant serpent swept towards Xiao Chen with its huge body.

“Shameless!”

“Despicable!”

.....

The audiences are unable to put up with it any longer, Damian grabbed Xiao Chen’s speech before, and disgracefully obtained the rights to challenge him, but he was already forced by Chaos to withdraw. However, just now he actually dashed over here, and launched an attack. It must be Yaluo De who gave him the command, he was afraid that Chaos will be killed. They didn’t even care about their faces now.

“Hmph!” Xiao Chen snorted coldly, he grabbed the heavily injured Chaos, and violently swing him against the energy-converted giant serpent.

“Boom!”

The energy-converted serpent was routed in the sky, and Chaos had more fractures on his body. Xiao Chen landed on the ground while swinging Chaos’ body around. After that he fling Chaos into the sky, and brandished his fist to

strike Chaos' chest with all his might!

The aura of the fist is as bright as a star, it is as if a comet had streak through the sky. A dazzling divine radiance burst forth, and violently strike on Chaos' chest. At the same time, a glaring divine blade chopped towards Chaos' neck, causing him to fly twenty meter away. Within that interval, a few dozen of ancient trees were snapped in a row.

Chaos is a praise-worthy opponent, but an enemy is still an enemy, regardless of his honor as a Martial Artist, they are still enemy in the end. It is impossible for them to sit down to drink and chat merrily every time they come across each other, they can only face each other in a life and death battle. Thus, Xiao Chen didn't even think twice, he directly used the most effective method to kill him!

However, unexpected thing happens frequently, he actually didn't manage to kill Chaos.

Chaos heed from the Barbarian Tribe, many experts in this tribe had ancient beast soul sealed within their body! Without a doubt, Chaos possesses ancient beast soul within his body. Moreover, he actually had two beast souls in addition to his body. The difference is that one is the soul of a divine wolf, while the other is of a fierce tiger. Just at this time, the hidden potential of the ancient beast souls were triggered. A dazzling radiance burst forth, and blocked most of the power behind Xiao Chen's attack, they were able to preserve the life of Chaos.

However, a majority of Chaos' bones were fractured, he sustained an unimaginable damage. He would remain a handicapped person until half a year later, he will not be able to threaten Xiao Chen again.

The audience from every alliances began to clamor, Xiao Chen's strength gave

them a really profound impression. Many of them were incomparably shocked.

In a distant place, Yaluo De bellowed in rage, he caught Chaos who was falling from the sky. He was filled with murderous intent when he looked at Xiao Chen.

On the other side, Spell Master Damian already engaged in a battle with Xiao Chen. Spells were constantly dispatched, purple lightning, black underworld flame, energy giant serpent, and blazing divine blade..... were brandished around unceasingly. Damian was attacking Xiao Chen like a madman.

However, under the glorious aura of Xiao Chen's fist, every spell completely crumbled apart, unable to injure his body. Damian gradually lost his patience, he was already ridiculed by others when he just entered the arena, and now he is actually losing ground against someone who had just went through a life and death battle. He felt even more irritated in his heart.

Damian's flying altitude is getting closer and closer to the ground, he had no choice but to slowly approach Xiao Chen. It was because Xiao Chen is too strong, spells dispatched from long distance were unable to do anything to Xiao Chen.

But doing this didn't bear any result, it only help Xiao Chen accomplish his aim.

Xiao Chen keenly grasped the opportunity in the battle, as if his tall and straight body was taken over by a fleeting light, he left behind an afterimage in the woodland. Xiao Chen transformed into a streak of light, and dashed above a tall ancient tree. Soon after, he soared into the sky.

Under the inconceivable gazes of numerous audience, Xiao Chen trod on the empty sky, he ran at high-speed in the sky, transforming into a streak of light,

and left behind a few afterimages. It lasted until he finally stepped on Damian's body, then he exerted strength on both legs to stamp on Damian, causing him to let out a miserable shriek. Damian fell from the sky while bearing the weight of Xiao Chen's body.

"Boom!"

After they landed on the ground, more than half of Damian's bones were fractured. Xiao Chen lightly waved his right hand backwards, he left with large strides without even looking back. A dazzling divine radiance swept past, Damian's head tumble down from his neck, fresh blood gushed out.

This is really too shocking, it can even be rated as a classic battle! A Spell Master capable of flying, was actually trampled by a Martial Artist. This is simply inconceivable, this will definitely become the perfect teaching material for when one is confronting a Spell Master!

Many of the audience could not endure it any longer and they let out a cheer. The intention of recruiting Xiao Chen had arisen in the minds of many alliances, quite a few people wanted to discuss this matter with him.

The curtains of the splendid match closed with this, a lot of people are talking about it. This is the first legal battle after the establishment of the alliances. It was also an extremely marvelous fight, Xiao Chen had inevitably become famous on this Dragon Island.

Many people extended their goodwill towards Xiao Chen, but they were all indirectly rejected by Xiao Chen. He didn't want to bind himself in a certain alliance.

As for what had happened recently, he already knows. He knew that the Dragon Island will become very interesting, and also very cruel. In his opinion, if one had enough strength, they might obtain everything, otherwise they might encounter all kinds of danger.

He had already heard, some of the beautiful female practitioners invited the founder of a certain alliances to their bed. And today, he finally experienced this personally, there is actually a sexy and charming female practitioner extending a “pink flag” towards him.

Xiao Chen is an ordinary man, he is equally attracted to a beautiful woman, but he still rejected in the end. He clearly knows what he should be doing now, the most important thing is to work hard to become stronger on this dangerous Dragon Island. As for the rest, there are plenty of opportunity in the future.

Xiao Chen was very calm after the big battle. The dangerous and exciting Dragon Island is not that terrifying in regards to Xiao Chen. On the contrary, he felt this island might be brimming with opportunities and challenges.

Some people felt delighted, naturally there were also some who were not happy. At the moment, the Nature Alliance established by Yaluo De was furious. And it was the same for the treant’s valley, how could Zhao Lin Er be happy with the result!

Within the Undying Alliance, Lande was astonished after he got wind of the news. Both he and Yan Qing Cheng did not go watch the battle. He could not believe Chaos would suffer a crushing defeat in Xiao Chen’s hand. The exceptionally beautiful Yan Qing Cheng, stood in front of the spectacular waterfall, also exposed a slight color of astonishment. Xiao Chen’s strength had far exceeded her expectation.

An ice-cold smile gradually emerged on Lande's face, then he said, "Such an interesting guy, I will personally go test his skill!"

"Don't act rashly, according to the rumor, it will be very difficult to win even if you are stronger than him. He knows how to conceal his own ability." Yan Qing Cheng had an exceptional bearing, as if she emerged from one's wildest dream.

"Hmph, so what if he is concealing his true strength, I was also holding back to some extent!"

Chapter 55 – Befriended in Private

There are many alliances on the Dragon Island, Xiao Chen also didn't want to go on without any support. It is not a must to join a certain alliance, but he wanted to befriend with some people at the very least. So that they can help each other out in the future.

He wanted to go visit Buddhist Yizhen secretly, he is especially careful this time, he didn't get caught by anyone while passing through the dense ancient forest. He emerged on a mountain range with beautiful landscape.

This is precisely the location of the Dharma Alliance, next to the breathtaking landscape of the mountain range, there are as many tree houses as they are stars in the sky. They are leaning upon the forest mountain, it is a very creative concept. It is truly an unconventional world where the true experts live in seclusion.

Completely relying on some kind of instinct, Xiao Chen walked towards a tree house. When he was still a few dozen meter away from that place, the door to one of the tree house had opened, Buddhist Yizhen had a really sharp intuition. Meanwhile, the door to another tree house not far away was also pushed open, the other young monk was leaning on the door.

Xiao Chen knew, that must be the senior apprentice that Buddhist Yizhen always mentioned.

"Xiao Chen, I knew you will come to find me eventually." Buddhist Yizhen smiled brightly.

The gray-clothed monk who is approaching is indeed Buddhist Yizhen's senior apprentice. His religious name is Yichi, and just like Buddhist Yizhen, he didn't refer to Xiao Chen as an almsgiver, he also didn't refer to himself as a wise monk. Even though they are Buddhist monks, their etiquette is not much different from an ordinary person.

The two young monks are very amiable, Yizhen laughed and said, "You are a celebrity now!"

All of Xiao Chen's "self-defense" had really turned him into a "celebrity", he set up a huge conflagration to burn the treant's valley, causing Zhao Lin Er's team to gnash their teeth. And the confrontation with Chaos today was the first legal battle, it was very eye-catching. After that, he even went as far as trampling Damian the Spell Master down from the empty sky. A few dozens of alliances were startled by him.

"How about joining our alliance?"

"Are you not afraid that I will stir up big problem for you?" Xiao Chen laughed and said, "You must know that I have offended a lot of people. Those people from the treant's valley harbor a hatred for me. There's also the situation between me, Yaluo De and Chaos, we are just like the fire and water."

Buddhist Yichi who was at the side laughed, and said, "We heard the rumor, today you pushed down Chaos with brute strength, beating that madman from the Barbarian Tribe until he felt fearful, and you even trampled Damian the Spell Master. You achieved complete victory effortlessly, you are indeed a true expert."

Yizhen laughed and said, "I didn't expect there would come a time where I

would also make an error of judgment, I was even worried about you before. I didn't expect you can completely suppress Chaos, you don't need to worry as much if you join us."

Xiao Chen smiled and shook his head, then he said, "I don't want to bring you guys too much trouble, though I do appreciate your kindness."

"We didn't offer to shelter you out of kindness, it was because you had sufficient strength and qualification to join us." The two of them were very frank, they didn't try to hide anything, they stated very clearly that they were only interested in his strength.

Xiao Chen likes to make a deal with this kind of people, he talked bluntly, "The trouble I caused far exceeded what you know of, if you guys don't mind, we can help each other out in private. Even though I didn't join your alliance on the surface, if you guys are facing a crisis, I will certainly come to help. Similarly, if I run into trouble, I wish you guys will come to assist me. This way, we will have formed an alliance, but you guys won't incur any trouble due to me.

Buddhist Yizhen and Yichi laughed heartily at the same time, they accepted the proposal jubilantly, this proposal was just too good for them.

There is one thing that Xiao Chen must confirm no matter what, otherwise he will be extremely worried and troubled. He wanted to know, if that youth evolved from the treant in the valley is together with Zhao Lin Er and her gang or not. Xiao Chen had a deep feeling of foreboding regarding that treant which had an aura as powerful as that of a fierce dragon.

Buddhist Yizhen actually know about the existence of that treant, it was the news spread by Yaluo De. He claimed that he was unable to see the limits of that

treant. Due to this, many alliances are fearful of the treant's valley.

However, according to rumor, that powerful treant is currently training by itself, no one is permitted to enter the depths of the valley. Moreover, under his constrain, the treants are not allowed to leave the valley without his authority.

After hearing this news, the uneasiness in Xiao Chen's heart disappeared.

"Brother Yizhen, I want to know, how is the relationship between Yan Qing Cheng and her fellow apprentices?" There is a reason why Xiao Chen asked this kind of question, a strife existed even among the foundation left behind in the human world by the Undying King. There were always competing with one another, many fellow apprentices were just like the fire and water.

He really wanted to know whether or not this kind of situation is also true in the world of immortals. If that is the case, maybe he can finally expose the matter regarding Wang Zi Feng and Liew Yue at this point.

"They don't seem to get along well, there were always internal strives among them. Otherwise Yan Qing Cheng also wouldn't team up with Lande, and abandon the rest of their fellow apprentices." Buddhist Yizhen answered his question, but he felt a little puzzled, so he asked, "Why are you asking these?"

"It is hard to explain in a few words, since two brothers have inquired, I also wouldn't conceal anything, I have complete trust in the both of you." Regardless of whether he trust them or not, Xiao Chen must use his speech to make himself clear.

"I previously killed Wang Zi Feng and Liew Yue....."

“What?!”

“Seriously?!”

Buddhist Yizhen and Buddhist Yichi were very startled.

Xiao Chen briefly go through the entire situation once, if not because Zhao Lin Er also know of this matter, he could have left this case completely unresolved. Now, he must make some preparation in advance. Otherwise, he is bound to meet an unfortunate end if Zhao Lin Er had informed Yan Qing Cheng.

Since Yan Qing Cheng doesn't get along well with her fellow apprentices, he wanted to dissolve the misunderstanding by means of Buddhist Yizhen. It is not because Xiao Chen is weak and timid, against those who are clearly his enemy, he will never compromise. But for those people who seem likely to become his enemy, he want to try to resolve it peacefully. Nobody likes to make enemies all over the place willingly.

Xiao Chen is not that kind of madman who only knows how to kill. The situation now is very complicated, he wants to reduce his enemy as much as possible. However, if they failed to resolve it peacefully, and categorized as an enemy, he will inevitably treat them the way he treated Chaos, he will absolutely not go easy on them.

In reality, Xiao Chen really wanted to have a decisive battle with Yan Qing Cheng and Lande. He was totally scorned by the two in question before, he really wanted to use absolute strength to suppress the two individual, and smash their arrogant attitude into pieces.

After listening to the brief story, Buddhist Yichi heaved a sigh and said, “You make your move when the time is right, brother Xiao Chen is indeed decisive. Otherwise you might have a hard time against those two.”

Yichi is not making an empty talk, Wang Zi Feng and Liew Yue were both very strong, if Xiao Chen did not take advantage of the Tyrannical Dragon’s ear-piercing roar, the consequences will be very hard to predict.

Yizhen understood Xiao Chen’s idea, he laughed and said, “I will give it a try, but Yan Qing Cheng is very stubborn, it is very hard for other people to influence her way of thinking. Even if she is hostile towards her fellow apprentices, they are from the same faction. This involves the problem of their faction’s honor.....”

“Thank you for your trouble, brother Yizhen.” Xiao Chen also didn’t expect this to thoroughly resolve the conflict, if it is impossible after all, then a battle it is. Withdrawing is always the worst method to settle a dispute. The more effective way is to fight until the opposing side is afraid of you. Of course, that is only if you have that kind of strength.

After Xiao Chen bid farewell to Yizhen and his fellow apprentices, he walked past an area with a great number of people. A few practitioners are currently discussing something in this spacious woodland. It seems like there is an alliance that wants to challenge Xiao Chen! All ten people from the alliance will challenge one person, this is really too domineering.

Chapter 56 – Breakthrough to Fifth Celestial Layer

Few of the people on the woods recognized Xiao Chen, they encircled him to inform him about this news. Xiao Chen said without thinking twice, “I refuse to battle that shameless alliance.” Xiao Chen left in a hurry, throwing off a few pursuer, and rushed all the way to the west, back to his secret training place.

Keke curled up into a snow-white pompom, and slept among the flowers and plants. The divine sproutling is rooted among the cluster of flowers right beside it, seven-colored splendor is lingering on the sproutling. It set off the laziness of the hairy Keke in contrast. The three skeletons are quietly meditating in the cave, the lotus insignia on the foreheads shine with a glorious radiance.

Xiao Chen didn't disturb them, he is carving something by himself in the spacious and empty area of the valley. He carved the topographic map of the Dragon Island's outer region on the ground. The Tyrannical Dragon's territory, the Tyrant Dragon's Beach, the Elephants Draco's Valley, one should not provoke the vicious dragon in these area.

Soon after, he included the deathly swamp, there is an Undead Emperor within the swamp, it is also not a monster he can provoke. After that, he also included the treant's valley, there is an old treant in the depths of that valley that already evolved into mankind. That is a being as powerful as a vicious dragon, it is not someone he can provoke.

These are the few prohibited areas at the outer region of the Dragon Island that one should not offend. And the dozens of alliances are distributed right between these areas. No one has entered the depths of the island.

Xiao Chen calmly ponder for a long time, the Dragon Island brimming with

dangers and challenges, but it is also overflowing with all kinds of opportunities!

Maybe he should set off for the depths of the island, perhaps he can acquire more dragon eggs, maybe he should establish an alliance, and gather a group of experts; Maybe.....

Xiao Chen fetched the crystallization of the Sweet Dew of Life that he hid in the valley, a glorious life energy circulated around his palm. The sparkling clear crystal contains an endless amount of life essence. He originally planned to keep it as a life saving item, if he used it after he sustained a serious injury, it is certain to have an abrupt effect. But now he feel that he should assimilate it as soon as possible, and heighten his own strength.

On the Dragon Island filled with dangers, only strength can determine everything!

Xiao Chen grabbed the sparkling clear crystal within his palm. When he operated the secret technique, the crystal transformed into a glorious splendor and wrapped him within. One after another resplendent life energy seeped into his body, this is the purest life energy, not a trace of impurity could be found. It fused with his body like water and milk mixing together.

Looking from a distant, his figure was submerged in the dazzling divine radiance. The glaring radiance caused the spiritual aura within the valley to fluctuate intensely. Keke was aroused from deep slumber, it curiously ran over here, and wander around Xiao Chen repeatedly. The three skeletons walked out from the distant cavern, they also got in front of Xiao Chen who was submerged in the multi colored radiance.

Since the sun sets in the west, it persisted until the entire sky is filled with

glittering stars, and then it continued until the midnight. Xiao Chen's body was continuously enveloped by the bright radiance. Keke yawned again and again, it turned its chubby little body, and curled up among the flowers and plants, it fell soundly asleep again.

The three skeletons seated around in the vicinity, and meditated quietly. They seemed to be guarding Xiao Chen.

Only until the latter half of the night did all the divine radiance outside of Xiao Chen's body dissipated. The glittering starlight, and the moonlight is as hazy as the water.

The tremendous life energy was deprived once more, the majority of it gathered in the "Shoulder Well Acupoint" [1] at Xiao Chen's left shoulder. He slowly attempted to try something, he felt the life energy really did gather in his flesh and internal organs in the beginning, so he operated the secret technique at full strength to absorb as much essence of the crystal as possible.

[tl: [1] = <https://theory.yinyanghouse.com/acupuncturepoints/gb21>]

Only that, the speed of the secret technique become faster and faster, until he finally lost control of it. The left "Shoulder Well Acupoint" is like a bottomless pit, it automatically deprived a huge amount of life essence. In the end, most of the life essence ended up in the "Shoulder Well Acupoint". The essence condensed into a speck of glorious radiance, the left "Shoulder Well Acupoint" had been divinized!

He can only say, the Qi-Training Technique on the ancient divine monolith is too mysterious and tyrannical!

However, a portion of the enormous life energy was still assimilated by Xiao Chen's flesh. He clearly felt the promotion of his ability, his skin is flickering with a sparkling splendor, it felt as if his body had just went through a fortification. Every inch of his skin contained a powerful strength, and his body seemed to feel much lighter.

Xiao Chen lightly waved his hand, a dazzling radiance soared into the sky. It seems as if the radiance was linked to the starlight in the sky. The glorious sword radiance is especially bright under the night sky! He knew that he has just broken through the Fifth Celestial Layer of Exuvia! He has advanced a big step forward in his path of training.

Xiao Chen slowly calmed down, this is a very beneficial night, other than breaking through the Fifth Celestial Layer, the Center Palace Acupoint in his left foot, the Center Palace Acupoint in his right foot, the Shang Hill Acupoint in his chest, and the Shoulder Well Acupoint in his left shoulder, four acupuncture points have already divinized. He is looking forward to the divinization of much more acupuncture points.

After breaking through to the Fifth Celestial Layer of Exuvia, and in addition of the exuberant life energy, Xiao Chen is brimming with self-confidence. On this dangerous Dragon Island, only with enough strength will they have nothing to fear!

The morning sunshine is very gentle, Keke who had abundance of sleep woke up early in the morning. It is rolling here and there among the flowers and plants. Its snow-white fur is flickering with a faint radiance, its pair of glittering big eyes are brimming with spiritual aura.

Only that, when the fragrance of the roasted meat started to permeate in this valley, Keke revealed a miserable expression. It used its tiny paw to rub its plump

little belly while watching Xiao Chen who is currently enjoying his breakfast from a distant. Its saliva almost flow out due to the craving.

It painfully used its pair of paws to cover its glittering big eyes. After that it strives hard to bury itself among the flowers and plants, no longer looking at that golden, and glossy delicacy that make it drool with desire.

“Keke, come over here, eat a little.” Xiao Chen felt the scene was really amusing, so he teased it on purpose.

“Squeak, squeak!” Keke waved its snow-white little paws to protest fiercely.

Xiao Chen smiled, this little critter is really too amusing.

The three skeletons are meditating in a cavern nearby. After they make a breakthrough recently, they seemed to have grasped the essence of meditation. The lotus insignia on the foreheads shone brightly, the insignia is able to guide the worldly essence towards them.

After finishing up his breakfast, Xiao Chen left the valley, and go exploring by himself again.

Passing through the dense ancient forest, Xiao Chen arrived at the Dharma Alliance one more time. Atop the beautiful mountain range, the tree houses, morning sun, fresh flowers, and morning dews..... everything is in harmony.

Only that, after seeing two young monk eating a roasted goat leg, the feeling earlier disappeared in a short while.

After they saw Xiao Chen's shocked expression, Buddhist Yizhen and Buddhist Yichi laughed heartily. Yizhen said, "The world of immortals is different from the mortal world, you should have already perceived it. Even though we are buddhist, we are not that much different from an ordinary person. In the world of immortals, we put more importance in training than our creed."

Xiao Chen nodded, and he laughed without saying a single word.

When the two young monks washed their hands in the clear spring nearby, they gives people a transcendental feeling again. The two were hardly putting on an act, it seems like everything stem from their hearts. They are eating meat without apprehension, and openly said their creed means nothing to them, perhaps this is already some kind of meditation in itself.

Chapter 57 – The Avenger

Buddhist Yizhen said, “Last night, I had a meeting with Yan Qing Cheng, whenever I tried to bring up the matter regarding Wang Zi Feng and Liew Yue, she would skillfully divert the topic for some reason. She didn’t even give me a chance to explain.”

“Is that so.” Xiao Chen had some idea in mind, so he said, “It seems like she already knows, she didn’t want you to get caught up in between.”

“Maybe that is the case, but when we talk about you, she didn’t display any excessive hostility, she seemed very normal. Right now, we can’t be sure if she is planning to make her move against you or not, everything is very subtle.”

“Many thanks to brother Yizhen, I already know. The situation on the Dragon Island at the present time is very complicated, many things need to wait and see.”

Xiao Chen and Yizhen are not stupid either, many things need not to be said too openly.

There is a human figure swaying in a distant tree house, that is a member of the Dharma Alliance, someone is training in the forest.

Buddhist Yichi seemed to have recalled something, and warned Xiao Chen, “You have to be careful, there is an alliance that wants to challenge you, they seem very crazy.”

“What alliance?” Xiao Chen had heard of this yesterday, but he didn’t ask which group of people.

“The Avenger.”

“What? The Avenger?” Xiao Chen felt somewhat baffled, could they be seeking vengeance on him? He couldn’t help but ask, “Who is their founder?”

“He seems to be called Gu Luo, he is a one-armed man.” Buddhist Yichi said.

It really is him! When Xiao Chen heard of the alliance name, he already had a feeling that it might be Gu Luo.

Last time, during the battle at the deathly swamp, Xiao Chen threw a sword to cut off one of Gu Luo’s arm just before he could escape. He suffered a heavy injury, yet he was able to survive in good health during the three days of big purge. Now he even established an alliance, called “The Avenger”, pointing their spears at him.

“May I ask if the two brothers here know how powerful the alliance is, do they have some incredible figure among them?”

Buddhist Yizhen who was at the side recollected the information from the back of his head, and said, “Founder Gu Luo, possess ability equivalent to Third Celestial Layer of Exuvia. But due to the lack of one arm, his actual ability might not be up to par. Other than that, Psychic Li Ling Feng, and Spell Master Carter, are experts at the Third Celestial Layer of Exuvia. As for the other seven, three of them are barely at the level of Exuvia, two of them are at the First Celestial Layer of Exuvia, and the other two is at the Second Celestial Layer of Exuvia.”

“Excluding Gu Luo, there are actually two experts at the Third Celestial Layer of Exuvia?” This is indeed a very powerful military strength. At the same time, Xiao Chen felt somewhat amazed, how could people be willing to work under him. Gu Luo is already handicapped, why would those two experts at the Third Celestial Layer be willing to join the alliance he founded. And if Gu Luo wants to seek vengeance, those people have no reason to get involved.

Yizhen laughed and said, “The Avenger is a temporary alliance, Psychic Li Ling Feng come from the treant’s valley, Spell Master Carter come from the Nature Alliance established by Yaluo De. After these two withdraw from their former alliance, they temporarily joined The Avenger.”

Everything is very easy to understand, The Avenger is founded with Xiao Chen as their target. Those two experts were transferred over there.

Xiao Chen started to ponder seriously, he is already at the Fifth Celestial Layer of Exuvia now, would he be able to go berserk for once? If he can get rid of a single alliance in one move, his influence will inevitably increase rapidly. If he wants to establish an alliance in the future, he will definitely attract a group of true expert! This way, he will finally possess a powerful military force.

“What are you thinking, are you going to take the risks?” It seems like Buddhist Yizhen could see what he was thinking.

“I really want to give it a try, a battle to establish my might, otherwise people would always come make trouble for me.” Xiao Chen explained in this way, even though he has the intention of establishing an alliance in his heart, he didn’t want to reveal it now.

“You are going to be facing ten experts at once, this is too risky, you have the rights to refuse!” Buddhist Yichi also discouraged him.

“No, I will take my chance!” Xiao Chen has made up his mind.

The Avenger and Xiao Chen shall fight!

Xiao Chen will challenge an alliance single-handedly!

The news spread at lightning speed, this news gave rise to a maelström of chaos, it attracted the attention of all the practitioners in this area. A lot of alliances from the distant place also rushed over here at high-speed after receiving the news.

After all, this is really too astonishing, to rely on the strength of a single person to challenge an alliance, if it is not because he is confident in his own strength, then he is an arrogant lunatic. The startling news quickly spread to numerous alliances, it is impossible for anyone on this Dragon Island to not remember the name of Xiao Chen.

Gu Luo finally appeared, he only has one left arm remaining, his complexion is somewhat pale, his gaze is much gloomier than before, his expression is incomparably cold. There are nine people following behind him, two people among them are clearly different from the rest. They seemed to despise Gu Luo, those who knows the inside story can easily guess, those two are precisely the Psychic Li Ling Feng, and the Spell Master Carter. They hail from the Treant's Valley and Nature Alliance respectively, they are the temporary member of The Avenger.

Soon after, Xiao Chen also appeared, he didn't seem nervous the slightest bit. Under the attentive gaze of numerous experts, he walked in front of Gu Luo and the rest as if he was taking a stroll in the garden.

At present, the majority of the people on the Dragon Island are youngster around the age of twenty. There are no lack of beautiful woman among them, there are even a few with peerless talent, and devastatingly beautiful. Right now, there are at least twenty alliances that arrived at the designated spot. There are no less than two hundred people, almost one-third of the entire population on the Dragon Island have arrived. There are even more people making their way over here.

“So he is Xiao Chen?”

“I heard of his name frequently!”

“This is that Dragon Island celebrity?”

“I finally meet this madman!”

“This guy is really a lunatic, he actually dares to challenge an alliance single-handedly!”

“Tall and heroic, he looks quite handsome.”

“Stop gawking at him!”

Everyone was discussing spiritedly, regardless of male or female practitioners,

everyone focused their gaze on Xiao Chen, and made all kind of comments regarding him.

The battle with Chaos last time, there were only hundreds of people on the scene. And this time there are two hundred plus people before it even begin, and it finally break through three hundred people in the end. The reason why several hundreds of other people did not show up is because they are either too far away from here, didn't hear the news yet, or they didn't have enough time.

“Hmph!” Gu Luo snorted coldly, his eyes were filled with undisguised resentment.

Xiao Chen is very calm, and said, “Don't think of yourself as the victim, you should be very clear, it was you who forced my hand first. When you go the wrong way, and make an error, you have to pay the price!”

Chapter 58 – Challenging an Alliance

Gu Luo had a malicious gaze, he looked at Xiao Chen with bitter resentment, and said, “Since you already agreed to fight, we will face each other in a life and death battle when the time comes!”

It is meaningless to say more than this, Xiao Chen only nodded his head. After that, he seemed to have thought of something, and said, “I am facing ten people individually, it is impossible for me to have a direct confrontation with all of you. If we make the entire Dragon Island into the war zone, the battlefield seems a little too big. How about this, let us compromise a little, and choose a sealed up valley to start the war. What do you think?” However, only god knows if he really don't have to guts to face them head on.

Gu Luo was originally planning to fight Xiao Chen head on, but after hearing his opinion, it seems like he wants to use the hit-and-run tactics. This make him feel very inappropriate, but after hearing that kind of compromise, he immediately consented. In a sealed up valley, he is but an easy target for The Avenger.

Xiao Chen turned around to face the audiences, and exclaimed, “We will select a sealed up valley to do battle, the kind that is not too big nor too small.....” He quickly expressed his opinion to the audiences.

The mountain range moved up and down within the Dragon Island, there is no shortage of valley. They quickly found a suitable location, the horizontal and vertical length within the valley is about three to four miles. Dense jungle covered the entire valley, it is full of vitality, it is a pretty good place to conduct a life and death battle here.

Many alliances chose this valley because the trees are not very crowded, they

do not want to miss an interesting battle due to the exuberant forest trees. Standing on top of the valley, they can see everything that is happening inside. However, this is a little bit unfair to Xiao Chen who did not want to fight recklessly. After all, the cover provided by a reasonable terrain is more important for a single person.

The battle is finally beginning, Xiao Chen's performance caused everyone to drop their jaws. He didn't adopt the guerrilla warfare tactics, he actually dashed towards Gu Luo and the rest as soon as it began.

At present, Xiao Chen's body is enveloped by a bright divine radiance that looked just like a raging flame. His entire person is filled with an outrageous battle intent. The murderous aura pervaded the entire forest, the tree leaves were ravaged by an invisible murderous aura and withered one after another. The green leaves fell gently as far as the eyes can see!

A powerful intimidating aura! The scene that shatters the will of the people!

Both sides clashed with one another, when they were still a few meter away, Xiao Chen violently brandished both hands like a blade. Two incomparably sharp point slashed through the air like the resplendent rainbow light. In that instant, it swept past the neck of one member from The Avenger. The head rose high up into the sky, it flew ten meter away from the body, surge of blood spurted up to three meter high.

Absolutely shocking!

As soon as Xiao Chen approached them, he killed one of the experts among their group right away. He is like a un-defeatable Demon Lord, his long black hair swayed with the wind, and danced about hysterically.

Gu Luo, Psychic Li Ling Feng, and Spell Master Carter, launched their attacks continuously. An endless stream of berserking energy filled with killing intent were executed one after another. Their target is undoubtedly Xiao Chen. He left an afterimage in his original position, and disappeared in an instant. After that, he ambushed them with a dazzling radiance from the other side, a wide expanse of forest trees were destroyed in an instant, the terrifying radiance had submerged that area!

The Fifth Celestial Layer of Exuvia! This is an overwhelming dominance, it makes Xiao Chen as terrifying as a war-god!

Two experts in the frontmost position of Gu Luo's party throw up blood, and retreat in defeat. Just when one of them moved five steps backward, his entire body suddenly split up into pieces, he actually collapsed in that instant! As for the other person, he also met the same fate after retreating for seven steps. Their eyes were brimming with a frightened look even after their death!

Everything happened too quickly, the battle has only just began, and Gu Luo's party already lost three people. This is a terrifying result, one person picking a fight with an alliance, and he is actually capable of dominating everyone!

A commotion break out on top of the valley, everyone was very shocked, Xiao Chen is practically a killing machine, he possessed an overwhelming strength!

Within the valley, Xiao Chen restrained his own power, and very naturally exhibit power up to the Fourth Celestial Layer. Almost no one discovered this kind of power shift, since Xiao Chen had only been using power up to the Fourth Celestial Layer of Exuvia all along.

“Everyone gather together, don’t separate!” Gu Luo shouted loudly. At this moment, he felt cold sweat rolling down from his spine. Xiao Chen is too terrifying, picking a valley to do battle was part of his plot!

Who says Xiao Chen is afraid to face them head on, the reason he chose to fight in a valley is because he is afraid that Gu Luo and the rest will run away due to fear after he exposed his true strength. At the moment, the audiences on top of the valley guessed the reason why Xiao Chen chose to fight here.

This is indeed the case in reality, Xiao Chen possessed the strength of Fifth Celestial Layer, he is not afraid of this alliance at all! However, he only revealed the strength of Fourth Celestial Layer at this time, he wanted to keep this a secret, so that he can give his opponent a “pleasant surprise” when the time is right.

Gu Luo propped himself with the double-edged sword, the sword aura fluctuated indefinitely. He didn’t have any scrolls left, he could only rely on his base power to fight. Psychic Li Ling Feng floated in the sky, a green radiance rushed forth from his entire body, raising his Spiritual Power to the limit. Spell Master Carter was also in midair, chanting an incantation unceasingly, a ferocious magic attack is about to descend.

And just at this time, Xiao Chen disappeared immediately, he is changing his position in the woods unceasingly, and began to slaughter everyone apart from these three experts. He decided to dispose of the weaker practitioners first, and then go all-out to defeat Carter and Li Ling Feng that are capable of flying.

Gu Luo, Carter, and Li Ling Feng, began their all-out assault. They didn’t want to let Xiao Chen exterminate them one by one. Carter finished his incantation, one after another terrifying lightning hacked downwards in a frenzy, chasing after Xiao Chen. At the same time, one after another energy blade fell like a

meteor shower.

Xiao Chen kept changing his position, leaving one after another afterimages on the ground. He dodged endless stream of magic attack, and went after the few remaining practitioners.

Psychic possessed innate Spiritual Power, after fostering that Spiritual Power for innumerable days, all kinds of exotic ability could take shape. Now, Li Ling Feng is trying to use that powerful exotic ability to confine Xiao Chen.

Xiao Chen was indeed restrained, he felt his body gradually become as heavy as a mountain. It is difficult to even move a single step, his movement become very sluggish. If not for the searing divine flame throbbing outside of his body, he might have been ripped apart by the energy blades dropped by Carter.

“Ah.....!” [1] Xiao Chen howled loudly, his entire body shook, and broke the mysterious energy that was confining him. And Psychic Li Ling Feng who was in midair suffered a recoil, he spit out a big mouthful of blood. His strength is truly powerful, but the person he is attacking, is actually a practitioner at the Fifth Celestial Layer of Exuvia. He is two level stronger than him.

[tl: [1] = Original Chinese word literally translates to “Ah”, translator changed to “Hah!!!!” so i Neji changed to original.]

In a short period of time, Xiao Chen killed six practitioners from The Avenger. Except Gu Luo, Li Ling Feng, and Carter, only one more practitioner who ran into the depths of the valley is left from the opposing side.

Now is the time to settle the dispute between Gu Luo and him.

Chapter 59 – The Last One

Xiao Chen pressed forwards with large strides, the entire mountain woods shook along with his movement. He was as heavy as a giant, the powerful pressure caused Gu Luo and the other two to feel agitated. They were almost unable to breathe.

Gu Luo was scared stiff, he can already predict the outcome of this match, but he still had no other choice but to struggle like a cornered beast!

Xiao Chen's body emitted a bright divine radiance, he left behind one after another afterimages in the woods, evading Psychic Li Ling Feng and Spell Master Carter's attack. He kept appearing around Gu Luo, and bombarding him with the dazzling radiance on both hands until he spit out a mouthful of blood again and again. Gu Luo could barely stand up anymore.

"Hah.....!" Gu Luo howled loudly, and threw himself at Xiao Chen. The forest trees in the surrounding were destroyed in that instant, he raised his power to the limit, hoping to inflict a heavy injury on Xiao Chen.

However, Gu Luo's effort was put to waste when a resplendent divine radiance soared into the sky. Xiao Chen waved his left arm with all his might like a heavenly blade, the several meter long glorious divine radiance slashed across the sky. It swept past Gu Luo's body in that instant, he was diagonally cut off from the shoulder! The top half flew no less than ten meter away, splashing a large amount of blood everywhere. The two halves of the corpse finally fell on top of the broken branches and withered leaves.

Gu Luo's life had come to an end! The founder of The Avenger had fallen, this means that Xiao Chen had won against an alliance single-handedly!

A commotion break out on top of the valley, this is a cruel and intense battle, everyone could feel Xiao Chen's superiority and dreadfulness, they couldn't help but let out an applause.

But the fight did not end there, Xiao Chen and Psychic Li Ling Feng, as well as Spell Master Carter, are still fighting fiercely.

Dazzling radiance fell down from above the woodland unceasingly, lightning, energy blade, Netherworld Flame..... all kinds of magic attack were unleashed, Carter exhausted himself to frantically conjure one spell after another.

Psychic Li Ling Feng also unleashed his exotic abilities unceasingly, since the confinement technique had failed, he used his powerful Spiritual Power to build all kinds of illusion in the valley. He wanted to draw Xiao Chen into the dangerous territory. He even used his Spiritual Power to form a huge energy blade, and controlled it to hack and slash in the valley.

This battle persisted for a really long time, Xiao Chen formed one after another mysterious magic circle with both hands, glorious starlight glittered all around his body, the glorious light screen formed by the star diagram is very sturdy, it completely blocked all the attacks that come from the sky.

As for all kinds of spiritual illusion, it didn't have too much effects on Xiao Chen due to his strong willpower.

After Xiao Chen raised his power from the Fourth Celestial Layer of Exuvia, to the Fifth Celestial Layer, a dazzling sword radiance soared into the sky. Both of Xiao Chen's hands emitted glorious divine radiance, the peerless sword radiance penetrated Spell Master Carter's body in that instant. As for the other

resplendent sword radiance, it directly chop Psychic Li Ling Feng's body into half. Two corpse fell from the sky, the intense battle have finally come to a conclusion.

The power of the Fifth Celestial Layer of Exuvia have overwhelming dominance. When they want to kill, nobody can stop them. The moment he disposed of two powerful enemy at the same time, numerous practitioners on top of the valley remained silent in shock, then they burst into a clamor.

Xiao Chen won a duel against an entire alliance!

This caused a lot of alliances on top of the valley to feel shocked endlessly, there are even more people who are immersed in the fight, their blood are boiling, as if they personally went through a bloody war. A single person challenging an entire alliance!

There are sounds of cheering, whistling, and shouting..... the top layer of the valley became very noisy.

Xiao Chen did not leave the valley, he walked into the depths of the valley instead. A lot of alliances were paying close attention from the top of the valley, everyone felt something was not right. However, they quickly recalled there is still one survival from The Avenger who entered the depths of the valley.

He's just a pawn, is it necessary to kill him?

Very soon, everyone was shocked to discover that they were very wrong, it was impossible for that survival to be a pawn!

An intense battle finally break out!

Since Xiao Chen entered this valley and battled with Gu Luo's party, he discovered this person is different from the rest. He killed the other weaker practitioners, but only this person was able to escape.

Sure enough, after he disposed of everyone else, and entered the depths of the valley, he discovered this person was already waiting for him a long time ago.

Without saying as much as a single word, the fierce battle break out. That person is actually a terrifying Spell Master! Soon after, Xiao Chen discovered to his surprise, that man who is covering half of his face with the disheveled hair is actually Lande, the guy who was together with Yan Qing Cheng.

He already used a charcoal ash to dye his blond hair black, his jade-like cheeks were also dyed red with grass juice. In addition, he covered his face with the disheveled hair, even Xiao Chen did not notice it was him before. Moreover, he never thought that he would make his move.

A golden-haired pretty boy who was as dazzling as the blazing sun, would actually go as far as disguising himself like this.

"Lande, why are you attacking me?"

"I'm willing to risk it! I have no regrets!" Lande is still as arrogant as before, he is extremely conceited, and didn't want to bother explaining.

"Hmph, I wish you won't be as conceited as you are now after the battle!"

Xiao Chen didn't have anything to be scared of, since Lande had come to find trouble by himself, and is still as conceited as before, then there is nothing else to say. The only thing to do, is to use absolute strength to suppress him, and smash his arrogant attitude into pieces.

A bright divine radiance burst out from the woodland, the dazzling radiance is like a raging ocean waves rolling over and over. A large expanse of mountain woods were destroyed instantly, endless amount of radiance submerged that place.

That energy fluctuation is not something a practitioner at the Third Celestial Layer of Exuvia is capable of!

This is a battle between two experts beyond the Fourth Celestial Layer of Exuvia!

Each and every experts from the alliances were incomparably shocked.

This battle is extremely intense!

The stones bore through the sky in the valley, huge trees fell constantly, dazzling radiance burst out in succession, the huge trees were even uprooted from time to time, defying the gravity and rose into the sky, and then was destroyed in midair!

The last person from The Avenger is actually the true key figure, he is actually the most terrifying expert, he is actually able to fight on equal ground with Xiao Chen. This make every audience here lose their composure.

However, Lande is too careless, when the battle entered a stalemate, he would voluntarily swoop down from the sky, and bombard Xiao Chen with his spell in close range. The entire sky is filled with bright radiance, terrifying energy descended in a grandiose manner, this entire woodland is enveloped by a divine radiance. The forest tree in this area were almost entirely wrecked!

And just around this time, Xiao Chen finally revealed his true strength. He raised his power to the Fifth Celestial Layer, a tyrannical blast of light rose into the sky, the dazzling radiance actually engulfed Lande!

Chapter 60 – Absolute Strength!

Lande shouted not good, and continue to chant his incantation. A terrifying purple lightning and black flame covered the entire sky. He wanted to get free from Xiao Chen's binding. However, he found out to his surprise that is the power of a Fifth Celestial Layer! It steadily suppressed his Fourth Celestial Layer magic power, it possessed an overwhelming dominance!

In regards to the Spell Master, it is a catastrophe to be captured by a Martial Artist. Their close combat ability is very inferior, their physical body is too weak compared to a Martial Artist. Long distant attack is their optimum attack style.

Lande don't want to die, he knew Xiao Chen was very ruthless when he executed his attack. Right now, he couldn't help but consume his own life force to cast a life saving spell.

“Divine Armor, protect myself!”

Dazzling radiance burst out from Lande's body, the bright radiance condensed into a divine armor, covering up his entire body, and protecting him from any harm.

At the same time, Xiao Chen swept him down onto the ground, with the most extreme method, he performed a roundhouse kick, and firmly kicked his head.

Even if he was protected by the divine armor, Lande still let out a painful groan. He was sent rolling away for ten meter by the fierce roundhouse kick. It makes Lande felt a bit dizzy, he nearly fell down among the broken branches and withered leaves.

Not giving him the chance to soar into the sky, Xiao Chen already trod on the empty sky, and followed up with a drop kick. He directly smashed Lande onto the ground, then Xiao Chen exerted his strength to stamp on his stomach, and kick him until he was rolling on the ground.

The divine armor was almost shattered by the kicks, the light energy flickered violently. Lande felt as if two of his ribs had been broken, the pain almost caused him to scream. A majestic blond-haired pretty boy with strength to match, he had never been treated like this before, this is no longer a match, this is practically a one-sided thrashing. This is a huge disgrace in regards to him.

Xiao Chen is going wild!

A terrifying radiance is lingering all over his body, his long hair danced hysterically, he is releasing a powerful aura. He pulled Lande up from the ground with one hand. After that, a Straight Punch, Hook Punch, Feint Punch, Slashing Punch, Sewer Punch..... a set of ferocious combo attack followed one after another. Lande was already sent flying more than twenty meter away, Xiao Chen followed closely in this entire process, and executed his combo attack!

If not for the divine armor, Lande might already be crushed a long time ago. Even his flesh might turn into a muddy blood! Even if that was the case, the incomparably powerful force still penetrated the light armor, breaking at least fifteen of his bones.

This is a frenzied thrashing. No, this already exceeded simple thrashing, this is a merciless trouncing!

The once conceited Lande is starting to become frantic, everything was

brought onto him by himself. It is him who wanted to test Xiao Chen's "ability", the end result does not only end in his defeat, he was even beaten to a pulp.

His dignity was completely trampled upon!

Lande is ashamed to the extreme, he was once high up on top, looking down on Xiao Chen, but now he got wildly thrashed by the person in question. Their position had now switched, it almost made him pass out from anger.

He was kicked high up in the sky, followed up by a roundhouse kick towards the ground, and then another kick lifted him up before he even touched the ground..... In the end, Xiao Chen stepped on Lande's stomach, he lightly waved one of his hand to show Lande who is beneath him, then he said with a bit of contempt, "You... are not... worthy!"

Xiao Chen used the same attitude to talk to Lande, which makes him want to smash his head against the ground. He felt embarrassed, upset, and furious all at the same time..... His ego had been completely trampled, he was thoroughly defeated.

Xiao Chen decided to kill him, he don't believe that he wouldn't be able to shatter the divine armor. If Yan Qing Cheng wants to avenge Lande in the future, then bring it on! Right now, he didn't want to let a powerful enemy keep on living, since they have already fought until this extend today, if he let Lande go, they will inevitably become mortal enemy in the future.

Lande didn't want to die, in the most crucial point, everyone possessed a strong will to live. He didn't hesitate to risk half of his life in order to escape from here. He fully executed the forbidden spell, forcefully extracting his life force to replenish the divine armor. A dazzling divine radiance burst out from his body!

His body is as dazzling as the golden sun, he struggled violently to get free from under Xiao Chen's foot.

Xiao Chen is determined to kill him, he vowed to kill Lande no matter what. He violently landed a punched, directly blasting Lande into the crumbled ground. However, this method didn't manage to smash Lande into pieces, it was as if he was wearing a divine turtle's shell. The dense radiance around his body is unimaginably tough.

Another hit!

Show no mercy! Even though Xiao Chen cannot break the light screen, he still kept attacking. Both of his legs were buried deep into the ground, a terrifying energy kept penetrating through the light screen, a few more of Lande's bones were snapped off.

Lande was furious, he wished he could commit suicide! In the end, he burned his own life force, and voluntarily entered the depths of the ground. After that he bore through the underground, and emerged from the surface not far away, he flew towards the sky like a meteor. He streak across the vast sky to escape from here, he used his life force as a source of energy!

Unable to catch up to him, Xiao Chen didn't make much effort to go after him. He just calmly watch him disappear in the distant sky. He knew that even if Lande escaped, he will still be a useless person within half a year later. Too much bones in his body had shattered into small pieces, there is nothing much to worry about.

The disabled Lande will inevitably taste the suffering of the loser, this kind of mental trauma will be even more effective than killing these kind of arrogant

practitioners. This might be the biggest punishment for his haughty and conceited attitude before.

Many alliances are on top of the valley, all the audiences started to shout in excitement, everyone was flaring up with respect. This was a marvelous battle.

Xiao Chen challenged The Avenger, and achieved complete victory!

Many alliances started to make their move, they wanted to pull Xiao Chen into their group. This kind of powerful expert on the Dragon Island is definitely a sharp sword worth fighting for.

Xiao Chen didn't even turn back and took large strides to walk out of the valley.

As soon as he arrived at the valley's entrance, he left a few afterimages in the woods, and disappeared in front of everyone. He wanted to avoid the alliances that might try to recruit him. However, the founder of many alliances already knew this was going to happen, so they send out people to stop him in the distant mountain forest, hoping that he will accept their invitation.

Among them are some abnormally powerful alliances, such as the "Invincible Alliance" founded by Dugu Qiubai's descendant, or the "Throwing Knife Alliance" founded by the descendant of Li Xunhuan, *etc.*

There was also no lack of alliances filled with beautiful girls, such as the "Blue Rain Alliance". The founder Lanyu left a profound impression in Xiao Chen's mind. She is a gentle and sweet-tempered beauty, she is the complete opposite of Zhao Lin Er and Yan Qing Cheng. She is as gentle and beautiful as the water.

There was also the “Red Powder Alliance”

Xiao Chen didn't want to offend anyone, so he expressed his gratitude for their invitation first, and then indirectly rejected.

In the end, Xiao Chen finally break away from all the people, he wanted to return to the secret hiding place. He consumed too much energy in this battle, if he stay in this area for too long, he might be in danger.

On the way he was stopped by a devastatingly beautiful, and well-developed girl. Her purple dress was fluttering about in the breeze, her entire person seemed like a goblet of intelligence, she was overflowing with a graceful aura. That person was actually Yan Qing Cheng!

新的一周開始了,沖榜中,兄弟姐妹們請點擊,投票支持長生界,拜謝,書評區發布精華中,可以發言領取. [1]

[tl: [1] = the author asking for votes and red envelope.]

Chapter 61 – Divine Tree Infiltrate the Body

Xiao Chen looked at her quietly, he didn't say a single word. Two glints of divine light emitted from within Yan Qing Cheng's pupils. An incomparably powerful pressure charge over here at high-speed, this power originated from the spirit, it clashed with Xiao Chen's powerful soul. This is a clash between two souls, this is a confrontation between Spiritual Powers.

The forest trees between the two were like ice under the scorching sun, they melted at lightning speed.

“Boom!”

Their soul power retreated as smoothly as the tide, Xiao Chen was looking a bit pale. After all, he just had a big battle a moment ago, he is not in his peak state to engage in another fight.

Yan Qing Cheng started to talk, “Since all kinds of rules are already set up on the Dragon Island, we will do everything in accordance with the rules. From tomorrow onwards, we will play a game, if you can survive after ten days of continuous assault from the Undying Alliance, I will forget about all our previous grudges.”

Xiao Chen knew she already learn about the death of Wang Zi Feng and Liew Yue, Even though the relationship between the apprentices is like water and fire, they are still from the same faction. Their senior brother and sister had been killed, this problem involves their school's dignity.

As soon as she finish what she wants to say, Yan Qing Cheng fluttered

gracefully, and disappeared within the woods.

A game of hide and seek, to hell with it! Xiao Chen quickly returned to his own hiding place.

The first thing Xiao Chen did when he returned to his dwelling was to borrow the precious tree from Keke. The little critter couldn't care less and threw it towards him, Xiao Chen let the precious tree take root in a woodland. He sat in front of the precious tree, and began to operate the secret technique to absorb the spiritual aura of the precious tree, quickly recovering his own strength.

For who knows how long later, when Xiao Chen opened his pair of eyes, he discovered to his surprise that the divine tree is missing! He could vaguely feel something is not right around his chest. Xiao Chen was gobsmacked when he inspected his internal organs, the divine sproutling actually mysteriously entered his body! It emitted a glorious bright radiance within his body, it didn't have any conflict with his internal organs.

The Shang Hill Acupoint at the left foot, and the right foot, the Center Palace Acupoint at the chest, and the left Shoulder Well Acupoint, it seems like there is a light energy linking the four divinized acupuncture points and divine tree together. Apparently, they have formed some kind of subtle equilibrium in between them, the worldly energy is being sucked into his body unceasingly.

Xiao Chen had already recovered his strength, but now he felt fear and trepidation in the face of disaster. After all, a sproutling had just entered his body! However, when he started to feel nervous and stopped operating the secret technique, the divine sproutling actually exited from his body, and rooted itself on the ground.

Too miraculous!

Xiao Chen was very astonished.

Tonight, no matter how many times he tried again, he did not successfully draw the divine tree into his body.

After a few big battle, it is time to time to lay low and start training. Xiao Chen decided to enter the depths of the Dragon Island to train, perhaps he might come across some stroke of luck, such as acquiring some dragon eggs. He treated Yan Qing Cheng's words like wind past his ears. The next morning, he begin his new journey with the three skeletons, Keke also followed them lazily.

The beautiful Yan Qing Cheng had a really sour expression, she was actually ditched by others. Xiao Chen didn't take her words seriously at all, he already disappeared for three days.

Yan Qing Cheng stood in front of a waterfall, she revealed a faint smile. After that she walked in front of an alliance member, and gave him some instruction. Soon after she also left the waterfall, and begin to put everything into order.

On this day, a lot of alliance already learn about the "Hide and Seek" game between Xiao Chen and the Undying Alliance. It last for one month, everything was set up by Yan Qing Cheng, some people testify that this is all real. One can easily see Yan Qing Cheng's influence from this, she forged all the deception and completely legalized this game.

At the moment, Xiao Chen already entered the depths of the island, but he didn't reach the heart yet. The Dragon Island is extremely vast, on the way he

saw plenty of exotic birds and monsters, he even discovered twenty plus Sacred Dragon, and all of them came from a different breed! He ran into danger many times, and encountered even more terrifying monsters.

At this time, he still didn't know that Yan Qing Cheng had led a group of people to chase after him.

On the fourth morning, the mist is lingering on the woods, it was covering the mountain forest like a layer of translucent silk. Along with the rise of the sun, the vapor-like mist was like a multicolored cloud, it actually radiated an extraordinary splendor.

However, this kind of beautiful scenery did not last for long, the glittering mist dissipated slowly along with the light breeze.

A new day is about to begin, under the morning sun, hundreds of birds are singing in the woods. The fresh fragrance of flowers and plants filled the air, this place seemed exceptionally auspicious and peaceful at first sight. However, Xiao Chen knew that great dangers are lurking around in the endless mountain forest. Many unknown monsters could appear at any given time.

After enjoying the sumptuous breakfast, Xiao Chen started his journey again, heading towards the heart of the island.

In the afternoon, Xiao Chen discovered a river in the mountain forest. He advanced towards the depths of the island by going along with the river. After advancing for approximately ten miles, there are more and more ancient trees on both side of the shores. Each tree requires seven to eight people to wrap their arm around it. The further he went, the more ancient the trees are.

After advancing for a few miles, the course of the river changed direction, Xiao Chen still continued forging ahead. The ancient trees reached great heights, at this place, each ancient tree requires more than ten people to wrap their arm around it. They are not inferior in any aspects when compared with those ancient trees in the treant's valley.

This is an exuberant green ocean, Xiao Chen reckon that he should be getting close to the heart of the Dragon Island.

Keke curiously sized up the condition of its immediate surrounding. Its pair of glittering big eyes blinked unceasingly, the three skeletons also seemed to have felt something. They became very uneasy since entering this region.

Xiao Chen also sensed something is not right a long time ago, this forest area is very abnormal, this place is full of tall ancient trees, it is a sea of forest as far as the eyes can see. But not a single bird and beast roam around this area, this place is very quiet, deathly quiet. There is not even a trace of wind!

The deathly still ancient tree, each and every one of them are a millennium old. After advancing for roughly ten miles, Xiao Chen felt as if they almost reached the exit. Sure enough, advancing for not more than one miles later, they walked out from the sea of forest.

When he saw the scene right before him, Xiao Chen was immediately dumbstruck!

In front of his vision is a sea of white bones, human skeletons without arms and legs, ten meter long dried up bones of giant birds, fifty to sixty meter long dragon bones, the skeletal remains resembled the pure white snow as far as the eyes can see. This seemed like an ancient battlefield that was kept in good

condition! In the depths of the sea of bones, a huge and majestic stone monolith stood there, with belt-shaped black cloud lingering around.....

What make people most astonished is not only limited to these, on the west side of the boundless sea of bones, there is actually a big snow mountain. The snowflakes are dancing in the breeze, the mountain is covered by a haze. There is actually a snow mountain on this tropical island, this is really too unbelievable.

Chapter 62 – Divine Monolith in the Sea of Bones

Xiao Chen picked a fight with The Avenger, and came out as the victor, he became the hottest celebrity on the Dragon Island. And now the news regarding his “Hide and Seek” game with the Undying Alliance led by Yan Qing Cheng attracted the attention of many alliances. Many practitioners are looking forward to the following “game”!

Many alliances started to march towards the inner part of the island, since they are destined to spend a lifetime on the Dragon Island, after everyone gradually calmed down, they started to think about their future. They wanted to search for a suitable training ground on the Dragon Island.

However, Xiao Chen had no idea what is happening at the border zone of the island right now, as he had already entered the heart of the Dragon Island. He didn't consider what Yan Qing Cheng said as anything important and completely ditched her. If she wants to play so much, let her play by herself.

The vast sea of bones caused his entire person to stare dumbfoundedly. Human-shaped skeletons, dried up bones of the giant bird, skeletal remains of the monster, divine dragon bones..... they resemble a pure white snow as far as the eyes can see. There are skeletal remains as small as two meter, or as big as fifty to sixty meter, there are even some up to a hundred meter! The endless bones of the dead filled the entirety of this land.

There is a thick baleful aura leaking from the sea of bones, it gave rise to a bone-chilling fear. Everything before his eyes is too inconceivable, it gives people an extreme fear!

Even though it is exactly midday now, it is extremely cold and gloomy here.

Even the sunshine appear deathly pale in this area, it doesn't feel warm in the slightest. Not even a single sound could be heard, this area is deathly silent. This is a genuine sea of death!

Even though the tall ancient trees behind him are incomparably lush and flourishing, they are also deathly still, no wind blew past this area at all, it is extremely unnatural. In addition to the hazy snow mountain at a distant place, words can't even begin describe how terrifying this place actually is!

“Snap! Snap.....!”

Qinguang Wang, Yanluo Wang, and Lunhui Wang seemed to be very uneasy, they keep moving their joints unceasingly. The Spiritual Light within their skulls are flickering constantly, and the lotus insignia on their foreheads keep producing glorious divine radiance, they keep throbbing again and again like the fireworks.

Keke curled into a snow-white pompom, and lie on top of Lunhui Wang's head. It blinked its pair of glittering big eyes, and curiously sized up this world of white bones. Lastly, it extended one of its tiny paw, and point at the majestic stone monolith in the depths of the sea of bones. It let out a “Squeak! Squeak!” sound from its mouth.

Xiao Chen had naturally noticed that awe-inspiring and frightening stone monolith a long time ago. That stone monolith gave him a bone-chilling fear, it seems as if there is a strange power affecting his state of mind from that stone monolith.

“Let's go and take a look!” Xiao Chen decided to forge ahead, since they already entered this sea of bones anyway, there is nothing else to be afraid of,

they might as well get to the bottom of the matter.

The endless skeletal remains filled the entire area, they let out a creaking sound when one stepped on top of them. Just listening to this sound make one's hair stand on end. Who knows how many years had already passed, many bones were already disintegrated, the ground is filled with a thick layer of snow-white ash, it make the endless remains appear even more terrifying!

Every inch of land is white in color, there is not a single vegetation in sight, waves of baleful aura leaked from the bony ground. The deeper they go, the denser the baleful aura become. In the end, hazy black clouds emerged from the bony ground, it make this eerie sea of death extremely terrifying.

They finally arrived next to the huge stone monolith after going forward for a few miles. Xiao Chen stopped his footstep as soon as they got here, he did not stop due to fear, it was due to the black fog, it seemed to have transformed into an energy vortex within the bones of the dead. Xiao Chen grabbed a piece of bone and toss it in front, and it was crushed in a split second!

They are still one mile away from the ancient stone monolith, a bizarre energy flow is preventing them from going forward! The black cloud is like the very image of a ghost, it keeps rolling over and over in front of them. It would even produce a mournful screech from time to time, the screech resembled cry of an evil spirit.

The spiritual light of Qinguang Wang, Yanluo Wang, and Lunhui Wang are flashing on and off with an indefinite frequency, one can see that they seemed to be very uneasy.

“Screech.....!” A bone-chilling screech resounded, one five meter tall sinister

skeleton is struggling within the black cloud, and then it collapsed in an instant.

“Shriek.....!” A girl with disheveled hair is struggling and howling in grief, her upper body is seven to eight meter long, and it was covered with green-colored scales. The lower half of her body is actually a ten meter long snake tail! Even though her appearance is very pretty, and incomparably beautiful, she seemed very sinister at the moment. Along with her screech, all of the green-colored scales on her body are peeled off, scarlet blood are flowing out, after that her entire body exploded, leaving behind a wide expanse of bloody mist in the sky.

Soon after, a fifty meter long purple Tyrannical Dragon let out a world shaking roar. It is turning over and over in the thundering black cloud, it is swallowing and spewing out waves after waves of terrifying radiance that almost tore the space apart. It is indeed earth-shattering, it possessed abundant of tyrannical strength, but in the end it still crumbled with a loud bang, transforming into endless rain of blood!

“Everything’s an illusion!” When Xiao Chen shut his pair of eyes, and opened it again, that terrifying scene before him faded away. The thundering black cloud really possesses a bizarre power.

“Perhaps it is replaying the history!” Xiao Chen didn’t dare to push forward, after all that black vortex is real. It is capable of crushing the skeletons, he’s afraid that even his body is not strong enough to resist.

“This island is known as Dragon Island, it is an uncultivated era, the Heavenly Monolith had eternally sealed the island! It is capable of sealing the Magic Power of the Dragon race that is as powerful as the deities, and confine them on this uninhabited island forever.”

Yizhen's word reverberated in Xiao Chen's mind, he knew that the hundred meter tall ancient monolith in front of him should be the terrifying divine monolith that sealed the Dragon Island!

Separated by one mile, they are unable to see the ancient monolith clearly. One after another belt-like magical cloud is lingering around, they can only make out the figure of the tall and majestic monolith.

This make Xiao Chen feel incomparably regretful! Since he heard the Dragon Island was sealed by a divine monolith, he had this outrageous mental association. Heavenly Monolith, Eternal Restrain: Yellow River..... and this Heavenly Monolith, Eternal Restrain: Dragon Island! Could they have some sort of connection? Could they have a common origin?

Xiao Chen had a pressing desire, he wanted to see the real face of the ancient monolith. To see if there is a similar Qi-Training Diagram behind the monolith! However, he was blocked off by the black cloud, he is unable to push his way through.

It seems like this place has a great influence on the three skeletons, they stood motionless in their original place. And Keke on the other hand seems to be very interested in this place. It climbed on top of a ten meter tall skeleton, and watch the ancient monolith in front of it attentively.

Xiao Chen stood in his original position for a good while, then he started to move, and begin to go around the stone monolith. He found out the area around the ancient monolith is a forbidden region. It is impossible to enter, he picked up a few meter long giant bone, and threw it for not more than ten meter into the black cloud, but it melted instantly like a snowflake under the scorching sun!

One can do naught but retreat after seeing such a devastating power!

When Xiao Chen arrived at the west side of the ancient monolith, the hair on his entire body suddenly stand on end, he could sense danger approaching! In that instant, he suddenly found a fossil-like figure standing within the forbidden black cloud region. It is very close to him, and it's definitely not an illusion!

Reviewing Character——Zhao Lin Er

Translator notes :

There are many controversy regarding the character called Zhao Lin Er. Below is the review from one of the readers: Order of Ocean. We also welcome other readers to share their opinion, you can discuss about the character, disclose some rumors, or predict the future plots.

Source:

<http://www.xs8.cn/book/244088/447750.html>

【Reviewing Character——Zhao Lin Er】Author: Order of Ocean

Zhao Lin Er, an Imperial Princess, she possessed peerless beauty and appearance, exceptional background, and also a world-shaking martial art skill. She is exceedingly intelligent, the rest of the story regarding Xiao Chen could be said to be caused by her. Then we will take our time today to review this character.

All the stories regarding the protagonist starts from her, I have seen a lot of readers discussing and assessing her recently. Then just what kind of person is she really like? Why were there so many contradictions with her action? Just what kind of profound theory was behind the different impression she gave to various people? Everything starts from the beginning of the story.

From Chapter 3 we already know the origin of the grudges between her and the protagonist, it was all triggered by her imperial bodyguard. Since it was her

imperial bodyguard that insulted the protagonist first, then we can propose a few assumption according to this point: First, Zhao Lin Er is that kind person who is rude and unreasonable. Someone who had been spoiled by their parents since childhood. As they say, if there are that kind of servant, the master is also the same. Since her imperial bodyguard is that kind of person, the master is just as bad. Second, Zhao Lin Er is a blockhead that won't acknowledge other people, she didn't even know how her imperial bodyguard are conducting themselves. Third, Zhao Lin Er is peerless, beautiful, and in addition to her strength and power behind her, she had developed a superiority complex. She is already accustomed to being arrogant and haughty, that's why even her underlings had been influenced by her, giving rise to an attitude that doesn't care about other people.

According to the development of the story, we can directly negate point 1. Point 2 is a possibility, then there is only point 3 left. Good, since that's the case, that leads to our first contradiction. According to Zhao Lin Er's attitude towards success or failure, we can already see that she is a very reasonable and mature person. The way she look upon other things is also very deep, then how could she allow her underling to make this kind of stupid mistake? In order to simply insult the others, and anger an opponent that is as powerful as herself, is it worth it?

Then the next thing, under the situation where her underling insulted the other person first, and gave rise to a conflict, I guess the protagonist must have killed Zhao Lin Er's underling or at least heavily injured them; which caused the conflict to move one step further. The conflict eventually developed into the chase later. Doesn't this make one unable to distinguish between right and wrong? Don't you feel the reason is very unclear?

We can discuss more regarding this, there are two possibilities. Either she cherished her underlings very much, and don't want to let them be harmed in any way, so she is trying to cover up their error; Or it is because of her

arrogance. As they say, a dog reflects their master's personality. Is my imperial dog some mountain boy like you can simply touch, you are courting death! I personally think the 2nd possibility is higher.

The last matter is what every readers debated and complaint about the most. That is the action she took, as well as the series of events later when they bump into each other in the world of immortals. At a time when the protagonist was heavily injured, if he expressed his goodwill under that kind of circumstances, it doesn't seem all that convincing. Therefore, a lot of readers say it is not wrong for Zhao Lin Er to want to kill the protagonist. After all, once he had fully recovered, and come to find her, wouldn't that be bad?

But if we are to look carefully into this, we can find a few contradiction. First of all, the reason why she ended up here unwillingly, Zhao Lin Er pushed all the blame to the protagonist. Her resentment, helplessness, loneliness, and pain, she pushed all her negative feelings onto the protagonist, she didn't take her time reflect upon herself. At least this proved that she did not have the guts to accept this reality.

Good, since we are already at this point, those thing from before and these thing now already divided into two. Then the things she possessed before, such as her imperial bodyguard, and identity do not have much value in this world anymore. At this time, why can't she abandon everything, and face the reality. Why not give herself and the protagonist one more chance, and start anew?

This proved that the Imperial Angel is narrow-minded and do not have any aspiration. Good, let's take one step backwards, we will try to stand on Zhao Lin Er's standpoint as much as possible. Let's put ourselves in her shoes to understand her feeling, we can't lay it down just because we don't want to. Zhao Lin Er can continue to hate the protagonist, but the question is, it depends on the surroundings, the condition, and the circumstances.

Even if she wanted to take revenge, and expunge a disgrace, it can always wait till a later time. When everything had been made clear, when she is no longer in danger, it is still not too late to kill the protagonist at that time. But now the circumstances is unclear, the surroundings are dangerous, she is also unfamiliar with this world, she can't even guarantee her own life, yet she still wants to take the other's life. This is simply unfathomable.

At a time like this, I think having a friend who come from the same homeland would be better than having one more enemy no? Some readers will definitely say once the protagonist fully recovered, he will surely attack Zhao Lin Er first. Regarding this question, I have two points: At that time, it was Zhao Lin Er's people who provoked the protagonist first. It is not the protagonist who provoked her; Moreover, the development later resulted in the death of many people under Zhao Lin Er; Even though the protagonist suffered some injury, he didn't die, and didn't lose anything else.

From this point, we can see that the protagonist had no reason to kill her. Especially at a time like this, this enmity can be completely laid down.

The next point is that after chasing the protagonist for so long, Zhao Lin Er should have understood the protagonist's personality. The protagonist is not that kind of bloodthirsty madman, nor that kind of despicable man; Since that is the case, why can't she at least let go of their past enmity temporarily. [1]

[tl: [1] = I thought you said you were going to stand on Zhao Lin Er's side and understand how she feel? Why are you questioning her now? You are contradicting yourself bastard!]

Let us take a look at another point, even if Zhao Lin Er killed the protagonist,

his last attack before death's door could at least make her sustain a serious injury. If she was to encounter any dangers at time like this, then wouldn't she meet the same fate as him?

If she didn't manage to kill him at that time, then they will inevitably not stop until one of them is dead. In other words, they will become a lifetime enemy. But if she temporarily lay down her grudges, and cooperate for the time being, even if they were to quarrel in the future, it is still better than the two circumstances stated above. So if we look at it from a realistic point of view, killing the protagonist now is not worth it.

To summarize, there is only one conclusion: Zhao Lin Er did not look at the present situation, and do not know how to judge the situation. Narrow-minded, and do not know how to think calmly. She only relied on her desire and feeling to get things done. Even if she has wisdom, she used it on the wrong side. Her ending is obvious at a glance. She already walked in the wrong direction, therefore her peerless beauty, strength, and wisdom would only make her go further down the wrong path. The ending is certain to be a crushing defeat, this is a typical case of acting in a way that defeats one's purpose.

The reason why we started with Zhao Lin Er is because she is one of the main characters, one of the protagonist's most direct, most obvious, and most stubborn enemy. The review for other characters will have to wait for the development of the story.

Lastly I would advice the author to give the Ancestral Dragon to the protagonist, not the snow-white little critter. The reason is very simple, the Ancestral Dragon is more fitting for the protagonist. Its killing method, its temperament, its environment, and even its aura are the same as the protagonist's. This is hundred times much better compared to a cute little critter.

As for the snow-white pompom, we can let it become a friend of the protagonist, or even an independent character is also fine. I welcome all the reader's opinions regarding my review, perhaps we can take the deduction to the next level.

Chapter 63 – Void Master

A humanoid figure that resembles stone statue!

A green radiance swept across from within the black cloud, Xiao Chen instantly jumped backwards, and dodged that dangerous attack. He braced his muscles, bright aura emitted from his fingertips, the glorious radiance caused both palms to look almost transparent. He already finished his preparation to battle.

The black cloud rose with a bubbling motion, that fossil-like figure slowly turned its body around, the originally lifeless body is now gradually emitting life energy. This is a twenty plus years old youngster, his stature is tall and slim, as if he wasn't exposed to much sunshine, his complexion is somewhat pale, it gives people a gruesome feeling.

“Who are you?” Xiao Chen asked.

“And who-are you?” The ghastly youth returned the question.

Xiao Chen regained his composure. This tall, and somewhat ghastly youth should be a human. Just now he was most likely training, the unusual training method caused his life energy to slow down, thus it seemed as if he had severed his life force.

“Xiao Chen!” Xiao Chen introduced himself, then he sized up the ghastly youth before his eyes and asked, “Why did you attack me?” Xiao Chen could tell from the opposing side's attire, he should be one of the young experts that is trapped on this Dragon Island. However, he arrived at the heart of the island much earlier than him. In order to develop his own ability, it seemed like the opposing side

picked this place to train intentionally.

“Hmph!”

The ghastly youth snorted coldly, as if gravity does not affect him, he floated out from the black cloud like a ghost. Green radiance suddenly burst out from his entire body. In that instant, Xiao Chen felt the sky spins and the earth goes round, it felt as if the spacetime is distorted!

However, Xiao Chen had already prepared to engage in battle a long time ago, he did not panic, like a divine falcon who soared above the gorge, he quickly balanced his body even under critical circumstances. The scene before his eyes already undergo huge changes, Xiao Chen discovered that he had entered some unknown space. Drizzle of green light encompassed his surroundings, it seems like he has entered some kind of chaotic space.

This is a hundred meter square of bizarre space, the blue sky and white clouds does not exist in this space, and so is the ground. The only thing all around him is the hazy radiance. Under his foot is also the same, the green radiance is flickering everywhere.

The ghastly youth stood in front of him, he seemed very easy-going and calm as he observed Xiao Chen. This is not an illusion, it is a genuine space, Xiao Chen felt extremely shocked. The instant he was trapped in this space, he raised his right hand high into the sky, a brilliant radiance circulated around his arm, it was as if his flesh had turned transparent, the veins and bones can actually be seen clearly with naked eyes, the powerful energy circulating around his arm can be seen clearly. After that the divine radiance exploded, he dropped his arm down from the sky, the glaring radiance violently slashed one side of the sealed-space.

The terrifying attack slashed the green-colored light wall on one side of the sealed-space, it caused this space to shake violently. Many small cracks appeared on the light wall, but they were restored immediately. Xiao Chen and the ghastly youth almost fell down on the ground.

“Very strong!” The ghastly youth started to talk, “You are an expert among the younger generation!”

“Just who are you, why are you doing this to me?” Xiao Chen had attempted to break out, but it seems this sealed-space is not that easy to break out. He no longer try to attack the ghastly youth impatiently, he wanted to understand the situation first.

“Void Master Lawrence.” After the ghastly youth introduced himself, he continued, “Recently, a lot of new face show up close to the Divine Monolith. One can’t train peacefully here, some people do not deserve to be here.”

Xiao Chen find out from his speech, there are already some other people who had entered the depths of the Dragon Island. And it seems like some people frequently show up here. One can tell, Lawrence does not know about Xiao Chen, he must have entered the depths of the Dragon Island a long time ago, and does not know about the things that happened at the border recently.

“I don’t want to randomly engage in battle!” Xiao Chen said indifferently.

“I’m afraid you don’t have a choice, you can leave if you beat me, otherwise I will personally send you to the sea of bones.” Lawrence is very calm, even though he gives people a gruesome feeling, he seemed to possess an unquestionable strength. However, one can see that he did not have any murderous intent, it seems like he merely wished there won’t be too many

people here, so they won't disturb his training.

"Alright, fine, let me give it a try and see how strong I really am!" Xiao Chen did not waste time on words, some matter can only be settled with action.

"Swoosh!"

The rays of light flashed, Lawrence emitted one after another green radiance. Following that, this sealed-space become much brighter. Xiao Chen felt as if he was confined, the hazy radiance enveloped his body like a tide, it makes him unable to move a muscle. There is a powerful compression force, it makes him feel suffocated.

A Psychic is truly terrifying, their unique ability are inherent, Lawrence clearly possessed the innate ability to control space. Xiao Chen feel this opponent is very terrifying.

If other people find out that there is a Void Master here, they will certainly be incomparably shocked, because this kind of people is the most terrifying! This kind of people is the king among their peers, they possessed an incomparably powerful ability the moment they were born. If they make use of the space around them appropriately, they can grasp their opponent's fate! Everyone lives within the space, if the opponent is trapped in the space they controlled, the Void Master will be invincible!

The Void Master is as rare as the phoenix feather and unicorn horn, legend says when they trained until a certain level, the space they can control will keep expanding, from a few meter to a few hundred meter..... And when they reached a certain realm, they will directly ascend to godhood!

The space Lawrence controlled is merely a hundred meter square, it is a sealed-space. Even though the encirclement is limited, he possessed absolute authority within this space.

Xiao Chen's body is compressed by the powerful space, even if his physical body is strong, he is still suppressed by the terrifying force until his bones started to make a creaking sound. The space is tearing his body apart with powerful force!

"Do not resist, I will send you off to the sea of bones." Lawrence said with a tranquil expression.

"Hmph!" Xiao Chen snorted coldly, searing divine flame throbbed all over his body. His entire person looked like a dazzling sun, his tall and straight body emitted endless amount of divine radiance. Even though not much time had passed within this space, Xiao Chen felt as if this will be his most difficult fight to date. He spared no effort to resist the powerful tearing force of the space, as if his physical body had divinized, it radiated an incomparably glaring radiance. He utilized his secret technique to the limit, continuously emitting divine radiance that resemble a raging sacred flame.

Lawrence's expression changed, his originally ghastly complexion, appear even paler now. Sweat started to seep out from his forehead, controlling this space to trap an expert like Xiao Chen require him to consume a lot of Spiritual Power. At this moment he felt extremely strenuous.

Just around this time, Xiao Chen finally moved with difficulty, he walked unsteadily. He walked over to Lawrence one step at a time, it was as if he was carrying a heavy mountain on his back. The space shook violently with every step he took, at the same time Xiao Chen was also swaying left and right. His bones keep producing a creaking noise unceasingly, there is a possibility that his body

might collapse at any given time.

Chapter 64 – God of the North Star

Lawrence's complexion turned pale, the sweat soaked his long hair, causing the tuft of hairs to stick together. He floated up with difficulty, and dodged to one side of this space.

Xiao Chen is currently suffering from extreme pain, it seems as if his body is really going to collapse at any give time, but he is unable to figure out how to get out of the space controlled by Lawrence. He lifted up his right hand with difficulty, the terrifying power of space caused his right hand to shudder, the nerves are palpitating violently, he exhausted a lot of strength just to lift his right hand, he pointed it at Lawrence and shoot a resplendent sword aura to towards him, in hope of penetrating him.

Right now Lawrence had also lost his composure, he is soaked by sweat from head to toe, the sweat had already evaporated into mist and concealed him. Seeing that resplendent sword aura charging towards him, he lay out a green radiance in the mid-air with difficulty, and then the charging divine radiance faded away with a "Clang!" The green radiance also break into pieces in midair, the power originated from the space had stopped the attack!

Since the beginning until now, only a short time had passed, but for the two in question, it feels like a century had already passed, they already feel like falling apart.

Lawrence felt extremely exhausted, he didn't think he would encounter this kind of powerful enemy, the Space Shattering Technique was actually unable to deal with the opponent. At last, he gritted his teeth and moved both hands with difficulty to perform a complicated manoeuvre. He emitted one after another green divine radiance, and formed multitudes of divine blades which whirled

towards Xiao Chen!

This is a rain of swords formed by the Spiritual Power of the Space! If the Spiritual Power is strong enough, it is completely capable of shattering the space! Even though Lawrence did not have enough power to shatter the space, this kind of powerful void sword is enough to one up experts of the same level!

At this moment, Xiao Chen could really feel death approaching, the frail looking Lawrence is really too powerful, he is the most terrifying opponent he had come across!

Xiao Chen never thought of giving up, even if he was right before death's door, he will also do his utmost to struggle, that is his personality.

His arms turned translucent, one can clearly see the flow of blood, his trembling arm bones, and the circulation of energy. There is a possibility that he will collapse at any time, but in this moment, Xiao Chen had no other choice. He raised his Exuvia Fifth Celestial Layer power to the limit, both of his hands actually break through the confinement of the space. Even if his body might collapse, Xiao Chen still waved his arms without hesitation. He drew one after another mysterious magic circle in succession.

Brilliant starlight appeared in this space, and seven of the brightest stars appeared in front of Xiao Chen. The North Star Constellation rotated rapidly to protect him, they formed a piece of gorgeous light screen! The entire space was set off by the dazzling divine radiance!

Xiao Chen felt rather excited, he dubbed this North Star Constellation light screen as a "Sealed God". Originally, it was very hard to successfully draw up this kind of magic circle, but when his life is at stake here, his hidden potential has

awaken, he actually successfully drew up this “God of the North Star”.

After reaching a certain level, the void sword created from the Spiritual Power of the space is claimed to be unstoppable. Even deities are not able to stop it once it reached the highest level! Even though Lawrence is not that powerful yet, this kind of terrifying rain of swords is also astonishing enough.

“Rip! Rip!” The sound of space getting ripped apart resembled the demonic sound of death! However, something unexpected happen, the layer upon layer of sword rain actually resemble the rainwater going back to the ocean when they make contact with the “Sealed God Light Screen”. All of them were melted and absorbed by the resplendent light screen!

The glaring radiance in front of Xiao Chen is like ten brilliant suns shining upon the world at the same time. It makes people unable to open their eyes, the sword rain transformed into a pure Spiritual Power in the “scoop” of the North Star Constellation. [1]After that it actually lost its way in the “spoon handle” of the North Star Constellation!

[tl: [1] = References for those who are confused with the scoop, this is how the constellation looks like:

<http://www.rocketmime.com/astronomy/fig/BigDipper.gif>]

Xiao Chen keep waving his hands unceasingly, performing one after another mysterious manoeuvre, as if he was attempting to rip the space apart! The North Star Constellation Diagram become incomparably hazy, then it actually emitted a terrifying energy fluctuation in that instant. It fused with the Void Spiritual Power from before, and was launched from one end of the spoon handle!

Xiao Chen fused his own power and Lawrence’s power together! The

resplendent light beam is like an unstoppable divine sword, it swept past Lawrence's ear, and then firmly clashed with the light wall behind him.

With a loud rumbling sound, the hundred meter square of bizarre space collapsed, it faded away into nothingness. When everything returned to normal, Xiao Chen appeared in the middle of the sea of bones. The bones all over his body are echoing with "Prick! Prick! Pluck! Pluck!" sound. His body endured until the end, and didn't collapse, his entire person is like the cutting edge of a sword as he looked at the opponent in front of him.

Lawrence's body swayed for a few times, then he firmly fixed his gaze on the ground, he also fixed his eyes on Xiao Chen. After a long time he finally opened his mouth to talk, "You win, didn't expect an Exuvia Fifth Celestial Layer Void Master, would actually lose to an Exuvia Fifth Celestial Layer Martial Artist." However, he was not dejected, and continued, "Actually, I am not much weaker than you!"

"Is Void Master that special?" Xiao Chen feel that the somewhat ghastly Lawrence is a bit too conceited.

Lawrence laughed bitterly, since he lost after all, he could only mock himself, "I admit I lose to you, but you need not to mock me. Void Master is reputed to be unparalleled among practitioners of the same level. We are the king among the king, both of us are Exuvia Fifth Celestial Layer, and yet..... I lost to you today, it makes me feel really ashamed."

"I am not mocking you, up until now I have never heard that a Void Master is the king among practitioners of the same level. Because, I come from the human world....."

Xiao Chen could see that Lawrence did not give rise to any resentment due to his loss. He did not label Xiao Chen as an enemy due to this, so he also gradually become more mild. If one is not forced into something, who would willingly want to make an enemy out of somebody?

“You are actually from the mortal world.....”

After a few simple discussion, Xiao Chen finally understand what does a Void Master represent. They are indeed the king among the practitioners, and they are as rare as the phoenix feather and unicorn horn. However, he beat a Void Master who are reputed to be unparalleled on the same level today, he is overflowing with confidence, it is possible to break a legend!

At the same time, Lawrence also heard about many things that happened on the Dragon Island recently from Xiao Chen. He entered the depths of the Dragon Island a very long time ago, since the island had been sealed, he has been training close to the divine monolith all along.

“Alliance? Restriction? There will still be a bloody battle sooner or later, the majority of the people might not live for long on the Dragon Island!”

“Since brother Law has already guessed, how about to look out for each other in the future?”

“Very well, I also don’t want to make an enemy out of you.” After a big battle, the complexion of Lawrence became even paler.

“I also did not wish to make a terrifying enemy such as you.” What Xiao Chen said is the truth, the Void Master is the most powerful enemy he had ever come

across.

Chapter 65 – Taking the Initiative

Xiao Chen and Lawrence were completely exhausted, after having sufficient rest, Lawrence entered the black cloud again to continue training in the vile environment. The Spiritual Power of the Void protected his body, his entire person is as motionless as a fossil. And Xiao Chen on the other hand continued to roam around the enchanted black cloud.

The battle earlier was fast and brief, and it was carried out in the sealed-space, so the three skeletons and Keke were not alarmed. Qinguang Wang, Yanluo Wang, and Lunhui Wang didn't follow after Xiao Chen. The restricted area where the divine monolith is located seems to have a great influence on them, it caused their state of mind to be very uneasy. Keke also didn't follow Xiao Chen, it is pacing back and forth all alone at a distant place.

After circling around the divine monolith, Xiao Chen discovered that it is not possible to enter the restricted area. At most they can only enter a few meter like Lawrence, and would be stopped by a terrifying destructive aura!

When Xiao Chen returned, Keke approached while squeaking unceasingly. It pointed at the hundred meter tall divine monolith in front of it, and keep gesturing non-stop, it seems to have found something.

“Clatter! Clatter!”

Keke seemed to be very dissatisfied that Xiao Chen did not understand what it means. It actually started to throw a tantrum, it stubbornly broke the ten meter tall skeleton beside it. In the end, it even waved its snow-white little paws fiercely, but it didn't possess the slightest bit of violent nature. Xiao Chen couldn't help but chuckle at this laughable scene, then he stroked the little guy's

hairy body.

Five days passed in the blink of an eye, Xiao Chen continuously roam around the sea of bones, searching for the secrets of this place. But of course, he spent the majority of his time training around the vicinity of the divine monolith, using the destructive aura emitted by the divine monolith to arouse his hidden potential. The surrounding of the restricted area is indeed a great place to train.

During these past few days, Xiao Chen discovered that there are indeed practitioners other than Lawrence in this area. He knew that they must be true experts that entered the depths of the island since a long time ago. They must be very confident with their own ability.

Keke did not really follow Xiao Chen, it is merely brimming with curiosity regarding all the fresh experience. These past few days it keeps wandering around the divine monolith, letting out a “Squeak! Squeak!” sound from its mouth unceasingly, it seems to be thinking about something aloud. Xiao Chen just let it be, this exotic little critter is not something that can be subdued with brute strength.

And the three skeletons seem very unwilling to get close to the divine monolith, they are even unwilling to enter this sea of bones. They chose to meditate in the deathly still forest neighboring the sea of bones. The lotus insignia on the foreheads are getting brighter and brighter, one can clearly see the sign that they are about to make a breakthrough.

On the eighth day, a few more humanoid figures could be seen within the sea of bones, and a few dozen practitioners also appeared in the deathly still forest, filling this incomparably quiet and deathly region with more vitality.

The people from the outer region finally arrived!

Within a mountain forest a few dozen miles from here, there are even more humanoid figures roaming about. Many people had found a suitable base to train and built wooden houses at the mountain woods. The people from the outer region actually migrated to the depths of the Dragon Island!

Actually, this is something very obvious, since all of them had been trapped on the Dragon Island, this signify that they had no choice but to spend the rest of their life here. And there are plenty of monsters running amuck on the island, only by gathering together in the same region would they be able to guarantee their own safety.

The Dragon Island is vast, they needed to explore all the area sooner or later, it is impossible for them to only limit themselves to the outer region of the island. This time, they marched to the heart of the island, it was what everyone had decided. In the future, they plan to explore all the area one after another.

Of course, it is impossible for every practitioners to follow the masses, quite a few people had already departed by themselves.

Several hundred people scattered over more than ten mountain ranges, each and every alliance is separated by quite a few distance. This area is close neighbor of the deathly still forest, it is a few dozen miles away from the sea of bones. When Xiao Chen made an appearance, it immediately aroused everyone's attention. Since the battle last time, every alliances became aware of his formidable strength. He is a "sharp sword" not to be trifled with.

Xiao Chen discovered all the practitioners that he came across had a peculiar expression in their eyes. Later, he found out from the mouth of an alliance

founder who wanted to recruit him, that Yan Qing Cheng had declared she will lead the Undying Alliance to play a “Hide and Seek” game with him that last for a month. And after disappearing for so many days, he actually came here openly, people couldn’t help but feel perplexed.

Xiao Chen felt really shocked when he received the news, the thing he was worried about is finally happening. The restrictions were set up by various alliances to prevent someone to rise as the king, but it is still heading towards a bad direction. Even though it seems like the alliance is being restricted on the surface, as long as one has enough power, they can still control everything in the dark!

It is only because the rules had just been set, nobody wants to be the first to break the rules. But now that something like this had happened, it will be unavoidable in the future, everything will be controlled in the dark. This is the main reason why Xiao Chen chose to leave immediately after the battle, he already expected this to happen sooner or later.

He had already speculated, all kinds of restrictions from before are only effective for a period of time only. It will eventually be broken by various schemers behind the scenes, the Dragon Island will be extremely cruel in the future! The people who are brimming with desires, and the schemers who are unwilling to remain idle, will eventually gather some alliances together in secret to form a powerful force.

It is very obvious that once they have ascertained the situation on the Dragon Island, there will inevitably be another terrifying big purge, the powerful forces will lit the fire in the dark. When that time comes, half of the six to seven hundred people now will probably lose their life in the uproar!

Xiao Chen became aware of the upcoming crisis, he felt that it might finally be

the time to establish an alliance. But all the genuine experts had long been fished by other people. After carefully reflecting upon it, he felt that it might not be necessary to establish an alliance. As long as he can pull a few experts as powerful as Lawrence to look out for each other, it will be much better than forming an alliance!

Lawrence definitely had the strength to single-handedly fight with an average alliance. If three or five experts of this level come together, nobody will dare to provoke them.

Xiao Chen's appearance aroused the attention of many people, but in order to prevent needless inconvenience, he immediately disappeared in front of everyone. He spent a lot of time to locate the site of Yizhen and Yichi's Dharma Alliance.

Two monks with transcendental auras are currently enjoying their lunch. Without a doubt, it is dishes with generous amounts of meat and fish. It is really not in harmony with their transcendental auras, every time Xiao Chen see them like this, he couldn't help but laugh.

"What a rare guest."

"Come and eat some vegetarian food with us."

The two monks are very passionate, Xiao Chen felt a bit dumbfounded. Before them is such a sumptuous meat feast, yet they are able to say vegetarian food, these two monks are really carefree. Having a lunch with them, Xiao Chen was able to get many information from these two monks. As expected, Yan Qing Cheng led a group of people to track down Xiao Chen, but it seems like they chase after the wrong direction, they actually didn't come to the depths of the

Dragon Island, they entered a primitive mountain range halfway on the road.

Buddhist Yichi speculated that Yan Qing Cheng and the rest most likely discovered the tracks of a young Syndicate Dragon King, and wanted to capture it. Even though they are unable to leave the Dragon Island now, if they can subdue a Syndicate Dragon King, who would dare to go make trouble for them when the young dragon completely evolved? As long as the Ancestral Dragon doesn't make an appearance, the Syndicate Dragon will become an extremely terrifying king without a rival.

After finishing their meal, Xiao Chen sipped a cup of coconut juice, and inquired Buddhist Yizhen, "Will the Undying Alliance be going all out?"

"Are you going to....." Buddhist Yizhen quickly understood what Xiao Chen was thinking.

"Since they already make their moves against me, why should I be polite with them?! I have already inflicted a serious injury on Lande, he wouldn't be able to team up with Yan Qing Cheng anymore, I want to dispose of their remaining troops."

Notes :

The author actually mistook Yan Qing Cheng as Zhao Lin Er in this chapter!

Chapter 66 – Cannot be Stopped

Yizhen and Yichi took a quick glance at each other, Xiao Chen is really daring, they admire this kind of person. Buddhist Yizhen faced him, and said, “Including Lande, there are three people who are not dispatched from the Undying Alliance. But you have to be careful, the Phantom Alliance and Throwing Knife Alliance which are on good terms with them, are stationed near the Undying Alliance.”

After pressing on for more details, Xiao Chen found out the Phantom Alliance was founded by a Psychic named Carlos. His innate ability is a secretive and unpredictable Illusion Technique. It is hard to differentiate what is real and what is not, it is impossible to defend effectively. According to Buddhist Yizhen, Carlos is very powerful, he is one of the well-known figure in the West. Perhaps not much youngster on the Dragon Island can match up to him.

As for the founder of the Throwing Knife Alliance, Wharton, his background is just as great. He is actually the successor of the legendary figure, Li Xunhuan. Who have never heard of Li Xunhuan, who doesn't know of him? Xiao Li the Flying Dagger, never missed a target throughout his entire life. In the end, he shattered the space with his throwing knife, and entered the world of immortals, leaving behind a legend for all eternity.

Even in the world of immortals, it is hard to imagine anyone capable of evading Xiao Li's Flying Dagger. According to legend, when he just entered the world of immortals, he shocked the world by eliminating an esteemed god with his throwing knife! As the successor of Li Xunhuan, no practitioners dare to treat Wharton lightly. After all, Xiao Li's Flying Dagger never missed the target, he had terrified several generations of practitioners!

Xiao Chen knitted his brows, and think aloud, “Carlos, the founder of Phantom Alliance, a talented Psychic. Wharton, successor of Xiao Li the Flying Dagger, it is impossible to guard against it.”

Buddhist Yichi suddenly recalled something important, and said, “Strangely, all traces of Carlos and Wharton have disappeared for the past few days.”

The three suddenly thought of something at the same time, Buddhist Yizhen said, “Don’t move around rashly, I will send some people to probe around.”

Two hours later, Buddhist Yizhen received the news, Carlos and Wharton had indeed disappeared for a few days.

“Hey, maybe they are together with Yan Qing Cheng.” Xiao Chen sneered coldly, and said, “They really regard me too highly!”

“Don’t act rashly, I will send some people to find out more.” Buddhist Yizhen once more send someone from Dharma Alliance to investigate.

When the night fell, they finally received some definite news, someone saw Carlos and Wharton brought some people along with them, and entered the same mountain range together with the Undying Alliance.

“They really wanted to eliminate me by acting together!” Xiao Chen stood in front of the window of a tree house, looking at the remaining sunshine of the setting sun. Then he said, “If that is the case, I also don’t need to be humble, since they have already set out simultaneously, then I will dispose of their remaining troops!”

“Don’t be impatient, maybe Carlos and Wharton were only going after the Syndicate Dragon King. Your rash action might induce more enemy upon yourself.” Yizhen advised against it.

“I know what to do, the Undying Alliance will surely come to find me, I don’t like to wait till the last moment to retaliate. If the remaining members of the Phantom Alliance and Throwing Knife Alliance did not get involved, then I wouldn’t go find trouble for them either. If they did, then don’t blame me for being ruthless.” Xiao Chen is very decisive, especially regarding this kind of life and death matter, he will never show his enemy any mercy.

Nightfall, a vast sky full of stars

The sea of forest is still as chaotic as before, the howl of all kinds of monsters are rising and falling in succession within the mountain woods. There are even some unknown giant monsters causing the earth to shake while they chased after their prey. One after another bloody scene is laid out in the mountain woods.

Xiao Chen brought the three skeletons into the ancient forest and quietly moved along, they entered the mountain range without catching the attention of numerous alliances. After that they discovered the traces of the Undying Alliance.

A few black clouds were slowly floating over here, the starlight was blocked off, the ancient forest sink into darkness. Seems like there will be a heavy rain tonight. And just at this time, Xiao Chen and the three skeletons already arrived at the Undying Alliance’s location.

“Rumble, rumble!”

The lightning fell from the sky, streaking across the darkness, lighting up the night sky. Xiao Chen took large strides forward, he waved the substitute sword in his hand, the dazzling sword aura immediately illuminated the mountainous region while also simultaneously reflecting off of the lightning. The huge sword aura instantly cut the tree house ahead into half!

“Who the hell?!”

Two humanoid figures quickly rushed out, Xiao Chen gazed at them coldly. He didn't find Lande's figure among them, he took large strides and searched in the vicinity. He left the two practitioners to the three skeletons that are about to breakthrough to the Third Celestial Layer of Exuvia.

“You are..... Somebody help!” The two members of the Undying Alliance felt extremely terrified. They never thought the fiendish star would come and find them himself. They shouted in terror, hoping the Phantom Alliance and Throwing Knife Alliance would come and help them.

The cry alarmed the alliances in the vicinity, quite a few people are surveying the scene from a distant place. Among the Phantom Alliance and Throwing Knife Alliance, some members who stayed behind rushed over here at lightning speed.

“Argh.....!” The miserable shriek was transmitted through a long distance in the night. Even if the sound of thunder echoes from time to time, it is also hard to conceal the scream.

Qinguang Wang, Yanluo Wang, and Lunhui Wang are already close to the boundary of Exuvia Third Celestial Layer, killing two members of the Undying Alliance who are at best, the Second Celestial Layer of Exuvia, is as easy as

stealing candy from an infant. In a short period of time, they directly rip one of the practitioners into half.

“Rumble, rumble!”

The lightning danced wildly, the electric light make the three skeletons seemed even paler in contrast, many people could clearly see their figures from a distant place. The deathly pale skeletons, in addition to the miserable shriek, were incomparably terrifying!

The lightning flickered, heavy rain started to fall.

When the members of Phantom Alliance and Throwing Knife Alliance 1 arrived on the scene, the pouring rain make it hard to cover up the stench of blood. Under the illumination of the wildly brandishing lightning, they can see two corpses that had been ripped apart under the foot of the three snow-white skeletons. The blood mixed with the rain water, staining the ground red. And not far away..... there is a tall and straight demonic figure behind them!

Xiao Chen suddenly turned around, and said with an incomparably cold voice, “You guys want to eliminate me?!” His right hand is like a blade, the moment he waved it forward, the bright sword aura seemed as if it had fused with the lightning in the sky. Under the glaring rays of light, the entire mountain woods started to tremble! Xiao Chen is like a death god!

“Ah!!!”

“Ah!!!”

.....

The miserable shriek echoes constantly, Exuvia Fifth Celestial Layer, it is unstoppable, it cannot be stopped!

Under the dark rainy night, under the flashes of lightning and heavy rain, Xiao Chen's tall and straight figures had been deeply carved in the hearts of all the onlookers. This is a one-sided massacre!

After that, Xiao Chen walked over to the Phantom Alliance with large strides. The terrifying sword aura had fused with the lightning in the sky, Xiao Chen seemed like a demon god under the rainy night! The sword light flashed, everywhere it passed through, the mountain trees would collapse and lie flat on the ground, the tree house would break into pieces, and blood would burst forth. After that, he headed towards the Throwing Knife Alliance, with as much murderous aura as before, the light of blood spurted everywhere!

This dark rainy night is filled with the pungent smell of blood, even the rain water cannot erase the smell. This piece of mountain range is pervaded by the stench of blood, one could even smell it at a distance from here. Many alliances are in the vicinity, there are many onlookers, the demonic figure that appeared under the flashes of the lightning left an indelible impression in their heart.

Under this rainy night, the Undying Alliance, Phantom Alliance, and the Throwing Knife Alliance are annihilated!

Notes :

The author really is drunk, not only did he mistook Yan Qing Cheng as Zhao Lin Er in the previous chapter, and now he mistook the Throwing Knife Alliance as The Avenger

Chapter 67 – Stunning Beauty

The next day, most of the alliance had received the news, everyone was incomparably shocked.

They could not make out Xiao Chen's appearance clearly on the dark rainy night, but with that tall and straight figure, as well as that terrifying strength, the first thing that came to people's mind was him.

When the news spread out, the founder of the Phantom Alliance, Carlos, and the founder of the Throwing Knife Alliance, Wharton, will definitely bring a few experts to join up with Yan Qing Cheng. It was very easy to guess that Xiao Chen did this on purpose.

This time, Xiao Chen's terrifying strength really caused many people to shake in their boots incessantly.

Xiao Chen is taking a stroll in the mountain forest after the rain, and breathing in the fresh air. He let the three skeletons return to the deathly still forest to continue their training. He continued to search for Spell Master Lande in the area where many of the alliances are gathering together, all in accordance to the information leaked by one practitioner at death door. Unfortunately, he was unable to find any clue.

This important figure from the Undying Alliance, even though he had suffered a serious injury from the battle last time, he was still able to escape last night's massacre. From start to finish, Xiao Chen was never able to find any traces of him.

The sun already rose a long time ago, the torrential rain last night made the sky appear even brighter. The cries of the beasts resounded in the ancient forest, hundreds of birds are singing among the exquisite flowers and trees, different areas have different scenery.

Even though he was roaming around an area where a lot of alliances are gathering together, Xiao Chen painstakingly concealed his tracks, so he was not discovered. It lasted until he was enjoying his lunch beside a jasper-like streamlet, the others only realized he was here due to the smoke raised by the bonfire.

An elegant and lovely figure passed through the emerald-green forest with graceful steps. She walked past the fragrant flowering shrub, she arrived at the flowing streamlet, and appeared before Xiao Chen.

This extremely heavenly and lovely woman possesses an irresistible temperament and charm, the word “beautiful” and “charming” can’t even begin to describe how truly enchanting she is. Her flirtatious expression, her gentle and lovely bearing, it was as if she was the incarnation of spring water itself, she can be said to be the most beautiful woman of her generation.

Her delicate and exquisite body was faintly discernible under the almost translucent silky black long skirt. Her curvy body, as well as her exposed skin are flickering with an enticing luster, people couldn’t help but be lost in fanciful thoughts.

“Brother Xiao, move aside. Sitting beside a creek alone, are you not going to welcome me?” Her pair of lips are rosy and seductive, her jade-like teeth were exposed when she smiled. Her mesmerizing eyes under the long long eyelashes contain an irresistible charm.

So what if she is the most beautiful woman under the heaven, with Xiao Chen's personality, it is impossible to entice him with charisma. Xiao Chen smiled as he looked at her, and said, "You must be the founder of Red Powder Alliance, Rowena, correct?"

Rowena smiled gently, it was truly enticing, that tender and loving face was like a combination of the spring water's tranquility and beauty, she was extremely lovable. Her delicate and charming face was so beautiful that it was practically a beauty extract.

"I didn't expect Brother Xiao actually knows my name."

"Each and every member of the Red Powder Alliance is graceful and beautiful, and the beauty of founder Rowena can even turn all living things upside down, how could I not know."

The breeze gently brushed past, and the rippling of the creek-side flowers created waves of fragrance. Rowena's silk dress fluttered in the wind, clearly revealing and outlining her beautiful and sexy figure. Her slender jade-like legs seemed to be completely made out of gold. Her round and full buttocks provoked countless wild and fanciful thoughts from afar. Her small waist was slender and soft. Her well-rounded and plump boobs were sticking up on one end, it let one's imagination roam wildly.

Rowena smiled charmingly and said, "Turning all living things upside down..... Is Brother Xiao secretly mocking us as vixen?"

"No way, I am honestly praising you."

“Hehe.....” Rowena laughed cutely, her exquisite body is like a delicate willow brushed by a light breeze, “We sent someone to invite Brother Xiao before, but Brother Xiao looked down on weak woman like us, and didn’t take notice of us. Therefore, I came to find you personally today.”

“Lord Rowena, you are making things difficult for me. Your union is full of beautiful woman, how can a lone man like me join?”

“Brother Xiao, you are not frank enough. Last time we obviously did not request you to join Red Powder Alliance, we only want to ally ourselves with you. You cannot pull out like this.”

“If that is the case, then it must be my negligence, that was wrong of me.” Xiao Chen nodded his head and laughed, then he said, “If we form an alliance in the dark, then I have no qualms about it. One more friend, one more route to take. Since we are trapped on the Dragon Island, we ought to be looking out for each other. However, I am a trouble maker, some people always come to find trouble for me, are you not worried that they will bring some inconvenience for you?”

“How could I not.” Rowena cast a glance at Xiao Chen shyly, it was a bewitching and amorous glance. Any average person would have their heart stolen at that moment, “Those people you offended all have great influence. The Undying disciple Yan Qing Cheng. The young expert from the Barbarian Tribe, Chaos. The young expert from the Jungle Tribe, Yaluo De. And now you even offended the genius Illusion Master Carlos, as well as the successor of Xiao Li the Flying Dagger, Wharton. One after another harder to deal with.”

“Since you knew, you still want to form an alliance with me?”

“Wouldn’t it be better to provide help in somebody’s hour of need instead of decorating something that is already perfect? If we extend our goodwill after you have overcome your adversity, you might not have good impression of us. And since your circumstances is not favorable at the moment, if I form an alliance with you, and help you in a desperate situation, I presume you wouldn’t not do anything when I run into trouble in the future?” These words from Rowena are very “practical”, but only in this way could they show their sincerity. If they tried to deceive Xiao Chen, it will only earn his disdain. Both of them are intelligent people, they knew this method is the most effective to earn one’s trust.

“Oh? That means you want to form an alliance with me now, stand on the same battlefield, and make an enemy out of Yan Qing Cheng and the rest?” Xiao Chen repressed his smile and looked at Rowena.

“Hehe, I suspect I won’t have a long life.” Rowena laughed gently, then she said, “We will form an alliance in secret, unless one of us get caught up in a life or death situation, we need not help each other. I am serious, if one day, you really are at death’s door, I will come to help you.”

Xiao Chen finally laughed, she is a practical diplomat who loves to gamble. Rowena evaluated his formidable strength, she doubt Xiao Chen will get caught up in a sticky situation during this time of crisis. She might not even need to help him, and forming an alliance with him now is most ideal. She wouldn’t have to waste any resources, and would gain a formidable ally in the future, she has hit a jackpot!

“Very well, then we will form an alliance in secret. Who knows in a few days later, Yan Qing Cheng, Carlos, and Wharton might push me to the brink of death. I might need to come and seek asylum from you.”

Rowena's lovely expression flipped for a moment, but she quickly recovered, and smiled, "I believe in your strength, you will certainly come out unscathed."

Xiao Chen smiled, and didn't say what he was thinking of. This exceptionally beautiful girl has most likely formed an alliance with many people in secret. But it is not possible for him to point it out so bluntly, he still had to "sincerely" cope with it on the surface.

The fishes are swimming here and there in the clear streamlet. The fragrance of the flowers and plants on both sides of the shores pervaded the air. This place is peaceful and lively.

The bare arms of Rowena are as delicate as clear water, they are suffused with an enticing luster, revealing her incomparably appealing youthfulness. Her neck is as white and smooth as a swan, the color of her lovely face is like a flower in full bloom, she laughed and said, "From henceforth we are allies, but this is a secret only between you and me, you cannot let anyone else know."

"Of course, this is a secret between you and me, but it is not really necessary for you to form an alliance with me. An incomparably beautiful woman like you, nobody would have the heart to kill you."

"Woman like me. Hehe. Is in more dangers than you could imagine. I always feel like I am surrounded by a flock of wolf, who knows when I will be swallowed." Rowena started to giggle, and said, "That's why I need to get ready as soon as possible. Hehe. Who knows when will I be forced to find a backer to support me soon."

Of course Xiao Chen knows what she meant by backer. Among the beautiful girls who delved into the Dragon Island, perhaps a majority of them will meet

this kind of fate.

Rowena smiled gently and said, “Xiao Chen, I wish you will become stronger and stronger. I might come and find you to be my backer.”

Chapter 68 – Movement in the East

“Is it not possible now?” Xiao Chen laughed.

“Hehe, so it turns out you are actually not honest. I always thought you were a decisive, and cold-blooded expert.” Rowena is absolutely a beauty through and through, her flirtatious expression emitted a peculiar charm. Even if Xiao Chen had willpower as strong as steel, his heart couldn’t help but waver.

Rowena left with a flirtatious expressions, she walked as leisurely as a lotus, graceful and elegant, her slender leg, perfectly round buttocks, delicate waist, and indistinct curve, gave Xiao Chen an incomparably sexy view of her back.

That was indeed an extraordinary beautiful woman with unlimited charm. Her lovely side already far surpassed her own beauty, even though her appearance is not comparable to Zhao Lin Er and Yang Qing Cheng, her enticing ability already far surpasses them.

Xiao Chen looked at his own heroic figure reflected on the creek, and quickly calmed down. The both of them were only trying to use each other, their alliance is nothing but for show.

The news of Xiao Chen destroying three alliances in a single night gave rise to a huge wave. His strength makes everyone realize that this youth who did not join any alliance is not to be trifled with, he is not someone they should provoke! Speaking from a certain point of view, Xiao Chen’s name had already been carved deeply into everyone’s heart, he had already become the main topic discussed by everyone.

Many people are aware that when Yan Qing Cheng, Carlos, and Wharton return, there will inevitably be a big storm. They will definitely not leave the matter at that, a lot of people are expecting a battle from breaking out, it will certainly be a showdown of the highest level.

Undoubtedly, Xiao Chen had already become a well-known figure on the Dragon Island. It caused many alliances to pay close attention to his action, and he attracted the sights of every young practitioners, male and female alike.

Xiao Chen naturally knew people were talking about him. These past two days, he kept roaming around the assembly point of the alliances. He was closely paying attention to the current situation. And then, after having a meat feast with Yizhen and Yichi to his heart's content, he left this place.

Yan Qing Cheng and the rest should be back soon, Xiao Chen decided to disappear for a period of time, seizing every moment to train, and let them be driven to madness by themselves first. After finding the three skeletons in the deathly still forest, they went to the sea of bones. Xiao Chen wanted to go give Lawrence a greeting first, but he found that Lawrence had already left this place.

And the other practitioners who were the first to enter the depths of the Dragon Island had also disappeared without a trace. It is probably due to the practitioners from the outer region moving here, more and more people are showing up here frequently, this is no longer a good place to train quietly.

The figures around the vicinity of the divine monolith are mostly practitioners that entered afterwards.

Xiao Chen retrieved Keke, who was fast asleep, from within a pile of the Tyrannical Dragon's skeleton that was close to the divine monolith.

“Squeak! Squeak.....!” Since its good night sleep was disturbed, Keke fiercely waved its little paw, and squeaked resentfully.

“Keke, how about I bring you to eat something good?” Xiao Chen began to release an “aromatic bait” in order to take Keke away. This snow-white, hairy tiger-like, and lion-like exotic little critter, is really too marvelous. Xiao Chen wanted to keep it beside him no matter what.

This is something that cannot be helped, this little critter was not really following him all along, it only followed him due to curiosity. He must constantly let this little critter experience something new.

Hearing that it can enjoy some delicious food, Keke’s big glittering eyes immediately flickered with one after another tiny stars. It keeps blinking its eyes incessantly, it couldn’t help but swallow its saliva with a “gulp”.

Xiao Chen couldn’t help but smile all of a sudden, this little critter is really too funny. But just at this time, Keke lowered its head dejectedly, stroking its plump little belly in agony. At that time, it devoured too much Sweet Dew of Life, it is still not completely digested yet, so it is unable to enjoy the delicacy.

“I have a way to help you get rid of your sufferings, but it will certainly take some time.”

The light immediately returned to Keke’s eyes, it keeps squeaking, as if it was questioning whether Xiao Chen really had the ability to do it.

“Don’t worry, I can definitely help you resolves your problem. But of course, I

need your precious tree.” Xiao Chen pointed at the ‘precious tree hat’ that Keke wore on its head.

Keke immediately took off the precious tree, and tossed it over to Xiao Chen without a care in the world. If the divine sapling had intelligence, it will inevitably wish to cry, the little critter doesn’t seem to care about it at all.

“We cannot do it here, we need to find a quiet place so we won’t be disturbed. Besides, I also need some time to think.”

Just like that, Xiao Chen and his party began their journey. The little critter would turn around to look at the divine monolith from time to time, but it still left this place in the end. In the depths of the island, they can hear the dragon’s roar from time to time, Xiao Chen wanted to try his luck, and see if he can retrieve a few dragon eggs.

While they are making their way through the deathly still forest, Xiao Chen felt extremely baffled. This place is so exuberant, yet it is so quiet, not even a bird could be seen, could it be because it is close to the sea of bones?

The tall ancient trees in this area require a few dozen people to wrap their arms around it. The trees are definitely a few millennium old, they are not one bit inferior to the trees in the treant’s valley. But not a single treant is roaming around, evidently no treant had ever successfully evolve from here.

This time, Xiao Chen did not go to the northern side, towards where the alliances are inhabiting. They left from the other side of the deathly still forest, on the east side. They walked for a few dozen miles before they finally left this incomparably quiet forest.

Arriving at the outside world brimming with vitality, one could feel the differences right away. A small stream is flowing with “Drip! Drip! Plop! Plop!” sound, the heavily scented fragrance of flowers, the cheerful birdsong, as well as the roar of the beasts, all of them make this world appear full of vitality.

Even though they could hear the roar of the dragons resounding from the mountains from time to time, they still couldn't pinpoint the exact location after walking for dozen of miles. Terrifying beasts on the other hand, they encountered a lot of them. Most of them are some kind of ancient beasts, Xiao Chen suspect some of them could even contend against a fierce dragon!

Soon after, Xiao Chen discovered a river in the mountain woods, he followed the river eastwards. The green bamboo gradually become more on both sides of the shore, while the other forest trees gradually become lesser.

It lasted until they advanced for another few miles, their surroundings already turned into a wide expanse of bamboo forest. In this area, the monsters have become lesser, while there are more herbivorous animals.

The green bamboo, bluish-green river, and low shrubs. In addition to the melodious birdsong, and the moose-like animals that are not frightened by human, all of them make this place seem very harmonious and peaceful. On this Dragon Island filled with monsters, it is very rare to find this kind of peaceful zone.

There are twenty plus wild elephants on the other side of the riverbank drinking water, their pure white tusks are flickering with a faint luster. The sturdy body of the elephants lining up in a row resembled a lofty wall.

But just at this time, the pack of elephants suddenly become restless, it seems

like the wild elephants had been frightened by something, all of them released a long trumpet as they turned around to flee right away.

Xiao Chen clearly felt something abnormal, he could feel a fishy smell assaulting his nostrils. A gale suddenly blew from the bamboo forest in front, a path actually appeared in the middle of the bamboo forest, all the bamboo automatically fell towards both sides, it appears incomparably bizarre.

Chapter 69 – Approaching Keke's Old Home

A monster capable of controlling the gale! Xiao Chen shouted in dismay loudly, if his conjecture was not wrong, this is undoubtedly a huge snake! According to legend, a divine snake who had reached enlightenment was capable of separating the plants, and made a path for itself.

Xiao Chen embraced Keke and ran away as soon as he turned around, the three skeletons followed closely behind. Like a few streak of light smoke, they escaped from that area in the blink of an eye. Through the dancing tree shadows, he turned his head around to watch, he could only see a huge green snake rushing out from the bamboo forest, with body as thick as a house!

The part of its body that was raised high up into the sky was already ten meter tall, the green scales were flickering with a terrifying light, each scale was as big as a palm-leaf, its huge head in the sky was looking down on the herd of wild elephants. Its washbowl sized bloody-red eyes were emitting a terrifying fiendish ray. The thick venomous fangs in its wide mouth were all about half a meter long, all of them looked like an incredibly sharp sword. Its scarlet forked tongue was about four to five meter long, extending and retracting indefinitely, it was incomparably terrifying!

It directly throw its long body across the bamboo forest to the other side of the river bank, it resembled a huge dam blocking the path of the wild elephants. And around the huge snake, on the tip of the bamboo branches, and among the underbrush, there are infinite numbers of tiny green shadows wiggling around, there are actually so many tiny green snakes!

In a distant place, Xiao Chen couldn't help but suck in a mouthful of cold air, this giant green snake is actually a *Trimeresurus*!

Viper Trimeresurus, they are normally only half a meter long. Even though they are very small, they are extremely poisonous. It is very rare for them to grow up to two meter long, and now this enormous Trimeresurus is actually as thick as a house, and its huge body is hidden from view by the bamboo forest, who knows just how long it actually is!

This is really too frightening, it is very hard to imagine just how long it had lived!

This is most likely a monster that had lived on since the ancient times! It definitely have enough strength to confront some of the fierce dragons!

Having their escape route completely blocked off, the wild elephants' sad calls penetrated this entire area. In the end, half of the herd turned around and rushed towards the river. At the same time, the huge Trimeresurus also started to move.

As soon as its head stretched forward, the five meter long forked tongue immediately caught a wild elephant. After that, it opened its huge mouth to the extreme, the thick and sharp venomous fangs flickered with terrifying rays, and swallowed the entire elephant head in a single bite.

The scene is extremely bloody and scary, the huge snake's venomous fangs immediately paralyzed the wild elephant's body, making it lose its ability to struggle in an instant. After that, it devoured the fresh elephant bit by bit!

A snake devouring an elephant!

The huge Trimeresurus that lived since the ancient times, actually devoured a wild elephant, this is really too shocking and terrifying!

The herd of elephants ran away in a panic, some of them fled into the river, and was carried downstream, some of them rammed against the dam-like body that was blocking their path, they wanted to force their way through and get away from here.

When the huge green shadow flipped over, a gale rushed forth from the bamboo forest, carrying with it a fishy smell that made people want to vomit. The earth trembled constantly, the bamboo forest swayed hysterically, endless amount of bamboo leaves fluttered in the air. The huge snake winded its body around four wild elephants in a flash.

The wild elephants uttered a sad call, they struggled to get free, but in the end they lost their strength, and became motionless.

That huge bloody mouth once more open up to the limit, devouring the four elephants one after another. This bloody and cruel scene caused the other elephants to feel incomparably frightened, all of them were trembling in fear. In the end, they crouched down on the ground, and wailed unceasingly.

The ancient snake, Trimeresurus, seemed like it didn't want to completely exterminate them, five elephants were already enough to satisfy its hunger. Its huge body slowly moved towards the depths of the bamboo forest, gradually disappearing in the shadow of the woods.

It was as if the herd of elephants had been granted an amnesty, they ran for their life in a panicked state. The earth started to tremble, the forest trees on the riverside swayed hysterically, the dead leaves filled the whole sky!

Xiao Chen's entire body was shaking to the core, after this event he finally knows, even if an area seemed tranquil and peaceful, it is still just as dangerous. One couldn't help but be cautious on this island, there are too many ancient beasts concealing themselves in the endless mountain woods!

Keke struggled free from Xiao Chen's both hands, it climbed up the top of a green bamboo like an agile monkey to look at the giant snake. Regarding this, Xiao Chen was already used to it. Even though Keke looked like a lion and a tiger, it was capable of walking upright. Sometimes it even resembled a little monkey, this little critter is really such a freak.

"Squeak! Squeak....." It mumbled to itself excitedly, as if it was trying to express its happy mood.

"What's going on, Keke?" Xiao Chen looked towards it in amazement.

Keke nimbly jumped down, it pointed at itself and the divine sapling, and then towards the mountain woods in front. This made Xiao Chen feel completely puzzled, he spent a lot of time to get the rough idea, ahead of them should most likely be the divine sapling and Keke's old home!

"Keke, you were born from here?" Xiao Chen looked at it in amazement, he always wanted to know the origin of this little critter. Who knows, maybe the secrets surrounding Keke would come to light if they went to explore its place of origin.

Keke blinked its glittering big eyes, and nodded its head strongly. At the same time, it is also pointing at the divine sapling. One can see that it is very excited.

Xiao Chen also felt a little happy, if the divine sapling really originated from Keke's native place, then could there be some more precious trees there? The three skeletons also surrounded them, it seemed like they also hope to visit Keke's place of origin.

"Squeak! Squeak.....!" This time, Keke walked in the front. It seems like it wants to lead the way.

Xiao Chen laughed out loud, seeing how this little critter is so eager to get home. Most likely it lost its way at that time, that's how it ended up in the outer region of the Dragon Island. This little critter is really such a muddle-headed.

Keke is simply too fearless, it actually wanted to directly push its way through the ancient snake's habitat. Xiao Chen hastily blocked its path, and then they took a detour. This make the little critter keeps squeaking unhappily. He really can't figure out if this little critter is not scared of the vicious snake, or is it really a little muddle-head.

The vicious beasts are increasing in numbers as they keep going, Xiao Chen couldn't help but doubt, did Keke come from the nest of a vicious beast? On the way, they discover many terrifying monsters, some of them are even bigger than ancient dragon. They are absolutely capable of striving against the vicious dragon!

Suddenly, a gale was raised abruptly, the giant trees in the mountain woods trembled, the leaves swirled in the air, many beasts ran away in a frenzy. Xiao Chen raised his head to see, only to discover a huge bird flying past at high-speed while sticking close to the mountain woods. It is covered by bright fiery feathers from head to toe, its body is actually about the same as the Sacred Dragon, its

body is about ten meter long, and its pair of wings could stretch up to thirty meter long! [1]

[tl: [1] = phoenix.]

Keke is not scared in the slightest, it is curling up like a snow-white pompom and rolling on the lawn excitedly. This shows that they should be close to its home now.

After advancing for another mile, when they pushed their way through a gloomy swamp, they found a ten meter long golden centipede with body as thick as a water bucket. It is currently curling up in the gloomy woodland. This is really too shocking, a centipede can actually grow up to this extent, this is simply inconceivable! This is definitely a terrifying poisonous insect that had lived since the ancient times. Perhaps even a vicious dragon would take a detour once they encountered it!

The woodland is extremely gloomy, the huge centipede is flickering with a bizarre golden luster. Its outer shell is as hard as steel, Xiao Chen saw how it easily snapped a giant ancient tree, it is like an unstoppable giant metallic creature! Its several hundred pairs of insectoid legs were as sharp as knife, it just lightly wiggle around, and the rocks in the swamp were chopped into pieces.

Xiao Chen was convinced, that Keke's old home should be a den of monsters, there were more and more ancient beasts around here.

Chapter 70 – Heavenly Tree

After pushing their way through a wide expanse of primitive mountain woods, Xiao Chen and the rest are gradually getting close to their destination.

“Squeak! Squeak……!” Keke jumped on top of Xiao Chen’s shoulder, and pointed at a mountain range in front of him.

“Roar……”

“Yelp……”

……

Suddenly, a draconic roar was transmitted from that mountain range. It caused the entire mountain to shake, the forest trees to wave around hysterically, and dead leaves to swirl in the air.

There are definitely more than one ancient dragon there, judging from the sound, there are actually around seven to eight dragons!

Xiao Chen grumbled inwardly, it seems like he really walked into the den of monsters. Keke’s origin appeared to be extremely big!

The lotus insignia on the foreheads of the three skeletons suddenly flickered, they vigilantly watched their surroundings. Their joints were producing creaking sounds, they clearly felt the dangers ahead.

“Keke, you really lived in a den of monsters before? Just what kind of little monster are you?”

Keke seemed extremely dissatisfied that Xiao Chen called it a little monster, it angrily jumped onto Xiao Chen’s head, and then it scratched his head frantically, causing Xiao Chen’s long hair to become a complete mess.

“Alright, alright, you win.” Xiao Chen hastily grabbed the little critter, and put it on the ground.

After they entered the mountainous region, they could clearly make out a lot of huge paw prints. Without a doubt, all of them belong to the fierce dragons! After passing through a mountain range, Xiao Chen saw a very shocking scene, there was a black mountain ridge flickering with black radiance continuously cut across a few mountain range! The entire mountain ridge is flickering with specks of light, it is actually as sparkling and translucent as a black jade.

Keke cheerfully jumped back and forth between Qinguang Wang, Yanluo Wang, and Lunhui Wang’s head. It seems like they have already arrived at its place of origin. After that, it jumped down joyfully, and ran towards the black jade mountain ridge. Xiao Chen and the three skeletons followed closely behind, since they are already here anyway, it is impossible to stop now due to the roar of dragons in the vicinity.

But, when they get close to that black jade mountain ridge, Xiao Chen was completely dumbfounded. He found that the so-called black mountain ridge actually looked like..... a tree trunk! A chunk of it was lying flat on the mountains, it was actually a huge tree trunk flickering with black radiance!

After they got nearer to the mountain ridge, Xiao Chen was shocked to find that the black mountain ridge was really a tree trunk. One can find several huge twigs separating from the trunk along the way.

This is simply inconceivable!

The tree trunk is actually as bulky as a mountain ridge, if this huge tree that is flickering with black radiance is still alive, if it is still standing, just how tall would it be? Perhaps it might even pierce through the skies! This can be rated as a Heavenly Tree!

Not far ahead from here is a piece of collapsed mountain region, it seems like a terrifying earthquake occurred here. Almost all the mountain peaks had already crumbled, even the towering rocky mountains were full of huge cracks, most of the area already sank down. If not for those crumbled rocky mountains, this place can be considered an extremely big basin. It is very bizarre within the basin, although it is filled with rocks, and even if there are soil, no plant is growing at all, it is a piece of dead land.

And the Heavenly Tree only extended until here, any traces of that incomparably big treetop were already gone a long time ago. It seems like it was buried along with the collapsed mountain region ahead. People couldn't help but be lost in thoughts, and suspect if some kind of big disaster had broken out in this place before. Something big enough that could cause endless amount of mountain peaks to collapse and the Heavenly Tree to fall.

"Eh, where did Keke go?" Xiao Chen suddenly found that Keke had disappeared.

"Clack! Clack.....!" Lunhui Wang moved its lower jaw up and down, and

pointed at the other side of the divine tree, hinting that Keke had rushed to the direction of the tree roots.

“Let’s go, we also go take a look.” Xiao Chen and the three skeletons quickly ran after Keke.

Even though that black jade-like Heavenly Tree already dried up a long time ago, and toppled over the mountain range, it is still as high as the mountain peak, it really is too humongous. It is like a mountain ridge across the horizon, it is even more imposing than most of the mountain range here.

Xiao Chen and the others make their way through the dense mountain woods, they advanced for no less than eight to nine miles before they finally arrived near the ancient tree’s roots. And this eight to nine miles does not represent the entirety of the tree trunk. After all, there are still the trunk, and the crown that was completely destroyed.

The Heavenly Tree’s roots are just as stunning, the stump on the surface is actually as majestic as a mountain. Regardless of the thickness and height, it is comparable to the mountain range in the vicinity, it is a truly shocking scene! Few enormous roots that are exposed on the ground practically looked like one after another mountain ridges, they didn’t even enter the underground at the distant mountain, one couldn’t help but feel flabbergasted looking at this scene.

“Roar.....”

“Yelp.....”

The draconic roar transmitted from nearby, it seems to come from seven to

eight fierce dragons. Not only that, there were also the shriek of other monsters, it is as ear-splitting as the heavenly thunder. They dared to make a sound in the dragon's territory, they must be some ancient beasts not inferior to the fierce dragon!

This place is really as Xiao Chen had expected, it really is the den of monsters!

“What about Keke, where did it go?” Xiao Chen looked everywhere, he was truly worried that Keke had entered the mountain range, into the territory of the vicious beasts.

“Clack! Clack.....” Qinguang Wang moved its lower jaw, and pointed at the Heavenly Tree's stump.

The divine tree's stump emits the same black radiance, it is as crystal clear as a black jade. Xiao Chen raised his head to look, only to discover Keke is climbing up the smooth mountain-like tree trunk like an agile monkey. It already climbed close to one kilometer.

The three skeletons were also eager to give it a try, they wanted to climb up and get to the bottom of this matter. Xiao Chen laughed and said, “Alright, let us go up and take a look at this little monster's nest.”

Only someone with their ability would be able to climb up the tree trunk, normal people wouldn't be able to do it. That is because the tree trunk is as sleek as a jade, it is hard to exert any strength.

The divine tree's stump is about one thousand five hundred meter high, and most of the mountain range on the Dragon Island are lower than one thousand

three hundred meter. The tree stump is a little taller than all the one thousand meter tall mountain range nearby. When Xiao Chen and the rest climbed up the tree trunk, they were shocked once again. He found that the peak of the stump is incomparably smooth, as if it was cut off by a sharp weapon. There can't be any other reason!

The divine tree's trunk is as thick as a mountain, it was chopped off in half, this is really too inconceivable. People couldn't help but associate it with many many things.....

The surface is extraordinary wide, and is also flickering with black radiance similar to the color of the tree trunk, it resembles a tall mountain with flat roof. Keke seems overwhelmed in the distant place, it is moving around without an aim. Xiao Chen walked over, and found its glittering big eyes were filled with a perplexed look. It looked just like a child who lost its way home, it is somewhat delicate and charming.

“Keke, what is going on?”

There was hardly a time where Keke was not mischievous, but now it is quietly leaning down, and curled up into a ball, it actually started to make a sobbing sound. It resembles a lonely child who had just lost its mother. It is just lying there motionlessly, tears are actually rolling down from its big eyes.

Chapter 71 – Den of Vicious Beast

Seeing Keke act like this, Xiao Chen also felt a bit sour, the three skeletons squatted around the little critter. In their eyes, the way the reckless little devil acted was very strange.

“Wuwu.....” As if Keke had been wounded, it curled into a snow-white pompom and started to whimper.

Xiao Chen may treat his enemy as cold as steel, but he was still sincere to the people around him. Even though Keke was a little critter, they had spent a long time together, he had already thought of it as a fantastic “child”.

“Keke, don’t be scared.....” Xiao Chen crouched down, and pulled Keke into his embrace.

As if Keke had found something to rely on, it sobbed incessantly, and buried its head deep within Xiao Chen’s embrace. It appeared as miserable as the first time Xiao Chen saw this little critter, resembling a child that had been abandoned.

“Clack! Clack.....!” The three skeletons looked at each other in dismay, they were always wary of this little critter, but the scene before their eyes made them incomparably astounded.

Xiao Chen attempted to inquire over and over again, after spending a great amount of time, he could more or less figure out what was going on. Keke seemed like an “abandoned child”. It knew that it was born from here, but it had never met its parent before. As soon as the pitiful thing was born, it climbed down the divine tree and lost its way in the mountains. After that, it wandered

to the border zone of the island.

And today it had found its way back, but it never thought it still wouldn't be able to see its parent at this place. This made the little critter, with abundance of emotion, to feel very disappointed, that's why it felt so wronged.

"Keke, don't be disappointed....." Xiao Chen smiled, and said, "I am the same as you, I can never be together with my family again. We will be a family from now on. You are one valiant little monster, you must not feel aggrieved like this, you must be strong."

"Squeak....."

Xiao Chen's words immediately changed Keke's mood as expected, it furiously brandished its little paws, baring its fangs and claws to threaten Xiao Chen. Apparently, it was very dissatisfied to be addressed as a "little monster". Xiao Chen found this method to be very effective, it immediately shifted Keke's attention.

"Let's go and take a look at the nest of the little monster, and also the origin of the divine sapling." Xiao Chen carried Keke, and wandered around the broken tree with the three skeletons.

Keke furiously jumped down from Xiao Chen's body, then it happily ran towards the heart of the broken tree like a wild colt. It really was a child, it recovered from its disappointment so quickly.

The surface of the broken Heavenly Tree was incomparably flat and smooth. Xiao Chen was shocked to discover that there were some shattered eggshells in

the heart of the stump. It was as crystal clear as seven-colored divine jade, a faint multicolored radiance was lingering on the eggshells.

Keke was a little reluctant to leave and mischievously rolled around the broken jade-like shell. Xiao Chen couldn't help but open his mouth widely in shock, Keke was actually born from a divine jade-like colored egg!

Keke looked like a little lion, and also somewhat like a little tiger, it was covered in a snow-white fur that was as bright as jade from top to bottom. No matter how you see it, the little critter doesn't seem like it was born from a colored egg. It would make sense if it was covered in scales from head to toe, but the fact really isn't so.

It has such an impressive origin! Xiao Chen believed Keke's origin wouldn't be so simple. It might be the descendant of some super powerful monster. Otherwise how could it be born in a nest full of dragons and ancient beasts around! The roar of dragons and beasts kept resounding in the vicinity.

Keke who was rolling around the broken jade-like shell suddenly recalled something. It took off the "precious tree" from its head, and planted it beside the broken shell. The divine sapling immediately rooted itself on the surface of the black jade-like stump.

"Are you telling me, the divine sproutling was excavated from here?" Xiao Chen looked at Keke in awe.

Keke nodded its head strongly, its big glittering eyes blinked a few times.

The Heavenly Tree was already dried up and dead, the divine sproutling was

unable to draw out any life energy from it. Xiao Chen was immediately dumbfounded when he saw the divine sproutling, this..... divine sproutling was born from the stump, it was as if the spring had comes upon a withered tree, it seemed to have evolved and entered a different stage of Nirvana. This divine sapling seemed like a different tree species from the ancient Heavenly Tree! This is a genuine divine tree not only in name, but also in reality, no wonder it did not die even after it had been uprooted.

However, the sapling was a little unfortunate, it became the “ration” of this abandoned child in the end. After Keke was born, it survived by sucking the energy from these jade leaves. After roughly understanding everything, Xiao Chen couldn’t help but heave a sigh, could it be that Keke’s parents deliberately left this “ration” behind for it?

A mysterious little beast, it most likely wouldn’t be much weaker than those legendary Syndicate Dragon King. Xiao Chen thought of that kind of thing.

“Hehe.....” Keke was rolling back and forth between the broken shell. It seemed like it had completely got over its disappointment, it giggled in a cheerful mood like it always did in the past.

“Time to get up, don’t roll around anymore.” Xiao Chen pulled Keke up from the ground, then he gathered the pile of colored shells in the same place, and said, “This is your identification, I will keep them for you.” He tore a piece of cloth, and wrapped the eggshell within before he attached the cloth to his back.

“Roar.....” The powerful dragon roar caused the mountain ridge in the vicinity to shake. High up in the sky, the burst of sound wave was especially great, they could clearly feel the quiver in the stream of air.

“Let’s go over there and take a look.”

The dragon roar came from the mountain range in the East, Xiao Chen and the gang walked over on the surface of the ancient Heavenly Tree’s stump. When they arrived at the edge, they surveyed the scene from an elevated position.

A few huge monsters with scales all over their body, flickering with hazy divine radiance, are currently moving about at the mountain range in a not so distant place. They are only a few hundred meter apart from one another, but they didn’t get into a strive, this is a very abnormal scene. Those are but a few vicious dragons! They are normally very tyrannical and won’t let other ancient beasts enter their territory.

Xiao Chen was incomparably shocked, he already saw that greenish Tyrannical Dragon clearly, its huge draconic body could extend up to fifty meter long, the indistinct green divine radiance made it appear especially terrifying.

Not far away from the green Tyrannical Dragon, there was a huge monster just as big. Its imposing demeanour was not inferior to the Tyrannical Dragon, as if it was made out of brass, it was flickering with a light yellow radiance from head to toe.

It looked exactly like a mighty lion, but it couldn’t be a lion, it was covered in dragon scales that were flickering with yellow radiance from head to toe. Its lion head was very fierce, the pair of blue eyes were as imposing as the will-o’-wisp. Its “lion’s mane” was completely made up of huge bony outgrowths!

Four of its thick and powerful claws were like four huge pillars, each one required seven to eight people to wrap their arms around it. From its entire body, except for the glittering yellow scales, and that crocodile-like giant tail, this

vicious dragon looked exactly like a gigantic lion.

Xiao Chen recognized it at a single glance, that was the legendary Monarch Lion Dragon, it was absolutely not weaker than the Tyrannical Dragon. It was uncommon even among the powerful dragon race.

The Tyrannical Dragon and Monarch Lion Dragon were very close to one another, but they actually did not start a strive. What made people even more amazed was that there was still another powerful dragon nearby. A Saber Dragon that looked like a green jade mountain was standing on an elevated position, and roaring while facing the sky.

Chapter 72 – Sacred Mountain

The Tyrannical Dragon and Monarch Lion Dragon were very close to one another, but they actually did not start a strife. What made people even more amazed was that there was still another powerful dragon nearby. A Saber Dragon that looked like a green jade mountain was standing on an elevated position, and roaring while facing the sky.

It could extend up to forty meter long, to describe its appearance more accurately, it looked like a huge crocodile with half of its body upright. But of course, there was a really big difference, on top of its head was a really sharp jasper horn of about ten meter long. This was the divine sword that it was born with, it could even be said that nothing can bar its path. This was also the origin of its name, the Saber Dragon.

Moreover, on both sides of its body, there were rows of sharp bony outgrowth. Each and every one of them was a few meter long, it could prevent a powerful enemy from getting close. If necessary, it could even be used to clash against the enemy, it was a formidable weapon! Even though the Saber Dragon's size fall short of the Tyrannical Dragon and Monarch Lion Dragon, with so many sharp horns all over its body, it still wouldn't fall behind the other two if they were to fight.

These three dragons were the kings among the dragon race, and there were still a few more dragons snarling in the mountain range nearby. It indicated that they were most likely not weaker than these three dragons. Moreover, there were clearly other ancient beasts here that were capable of standing off against the fierce dragon. Xiao Chen could vaguely see a few monsters already.

“What are they doing? Why are they all gathering here.....” Xiao Chen's mind

was filled with questions.

“Squeak.....!” Keke jumped on top of Xiao Chen’s shoulder, and used one tiny paw to point ahead, seemingly trying to express its opinion.

Xiao Chen found that it was actually pointing at midair, he felt incomparably astonished, and asked, “Keke, why are you pointing at the sky, there are no giant birds nor Winged Dragons there?”

Keke blinked its glittering big eyes, and kept squeaking while pointing at the midair.

“Keke, what are you doing?” Xiao Chen was puzzled.

Keke felt like it wasted its energy, it angrily used its tiny paws to pull Xiao Chen’s hair, and then jumped down from his shoulder. It ran towards the direction of the three skeletons.

Xiao Chen shook his head in puzzlement, but just at this time, he suddenly found an incomparably magnificent mountain in midair. It was a breathtaking and ancient sacred mountain.

Xiao Chen was gobsmacked, how did this happen? However, when he stood straight and raised his head to watch, that huge mountain suddenly disappeared.

“The angle of view?!” Xiao Chen started to move his footstep, changing his position continuously. After a dozen of tries, he finally saw that hazy sacred mountain again.

“Strange, could there be some kind of divine formation at work? Otherwise, how could it bring about this kind of result. The same region could actually only be seen in a few spots.”

That sacred mountain left a deep impression in Xiao Chen’s heart, it was really too magnificent. Even on the one thousand five hundred meter tall Heavenly Tree’s stump, they had to raise their head to watch.

The mist was very cloudy there, not a single vegetation nor birds and beasts could be seen. One could already feel it from a distant, that place was deathly still. One could see many broken historic sites, such as the majestic palaces, but due to the vicissitudes of time, some of the magnificent buildings were already collapsing.

The sacred mountain was grand and lofty, it possessed a majestic aura. From halfway up the mountain until the top were filled with the ancient ruins, it emitted an awe-inspiring and deathly still aura, making that place seems incomparably mysterious.

And those vicious dragon as well as the ancient beasts, were located at the foot of the sacred mountain.

It was very obvious, the reason they gathered here must be due to the sacred mountain.

The dense fog sealed the sacred mountain, the roar of the dragons and beasts made people feel demoralized.

Xiao Chen kept moving around on the surface of the broken ancient tree. He only found three spots where he could see the sacred mountain within hundred meter square. This was very miraculous, according to his speculation, there must be a divine formation sealing that place.

“Keke, you seen that sacred mountain before?”

Keke shook its head, it jumped on top of Lunhui Wang’s skull with a swift sound, and once again sized up the sacred mountain curiously.

“Were those monsters always there before?” Xiao Chen asked one more time, he really wanted to know if those ancient beasts just recently got here, or were they always pacing back and forth around the sacred mountain.

Keke nodded its head, that means to say this region had always been the settlement of the ancient beasts.

“It seems like that sacred mountain did not just appear recently, those ancient beasts must have known about it a long time ago.” Xiao Chen couldn’t help but think, this is a sealed dragon island, countless years ago, those dragon race were capable of flaunting their strength before the deities! If that was the case, those ancient and mysterious palace on top of the majestic sacred mountain, if they were not built by the dragon race, then they must be the palace of the ancient deities!

And there was a Heavenly Tree in front of the sacred mountain, one couldn’t help but be lost in boundless fanciful thoughts. The dragons were sealed on this island most likely had something to do with the Heavenly Ancient Tree.

Xiao Chen's party climbed down from the Heavenly Ancient Tree, they stealthily moved towards the direction of the sacred mountain. Naturally, they took the long way around those ancient beasts, they had no choice but to avoid those vicious dragons and beasts.

Only, after they circled around a large area, and once again got close to the sacred mountain that was concealed in the empty sky, they found that there were vicious beasts around no matter from which direction. Looking from a distant, the shadow of a huge monster could be seen swaying in the mountain woods. A cruel fiendish aura pervaded in the woods, that must be a terrifying beast that had killed myriads of living things.

Xiao Chen grudgingly become aware that they were unable to get near the sacred mountain. There were monsters roaming around in all direction. Whether Keke was really a muddle-head, or it really had nothing to fear in Heaven or Earth, it actually wanted to force its way through. If not for Xiao Chen who pulled it tenaciously, this little critter would already run over there like a wisp of smoke.

It was already nightfall, the beastly roar had become much fewer, the mountain range trembled violently, many monsters had left that place while letting out a snarl. Each and every one of them returned to their nest respectively.

The moonlight was as gentle as the water, Xiao Chen and the gang decided to make their move, they would seldomly get this kind of opportunity. He decided to get close to the sacred mountain during the night. The forest trees were very sparse in this mountain range, the area without any vegetation was stepped on by the monsters until it became as hard as the rock. Those were the path of the ancient beasts.

The imposing sacred mountain in front of them was intermittently visible. The bright moonlight lit up the area, the mountain ranges in the vicinity seemed as if they were covered by a layer of hazy veil.

“Roar.....!” A loud roar suddenly resounded, it almost caused Xiao Chen to go deaf. The leaves flew about everywhere in the mountain range, the inexhaustible fiendish aura spread over a large area. That Monarch Lion Dragon was actually still here. It was facing the moon and letting out a roar while facing the direction of the sacred mountain. Almost all the faint yellow radiance from its head to toe had transformed into a dazzling golden light. An inexhaustible bloody odor pervaded the air, it was clearly the evil aura that comes together with a killing machine.

It seemed like it wanted to dash up the sacred mountain. After the series of roar, it suddenly scuttled across the ground, it truly felt as if the heaven and earth were shaking, even the mountain ranges in the vicinity were trembling. The mountain-like Monarch Lion Dragon knocked down endless amount of forest trees. It emitted a resplendent golden light, and dashed up the sacred mountain. However, the draconic roar suddenly faded away, the presence of the Monarch Lion Dragon was gone in a short while.

A fifty meter long dragon just evaporated in the thin air!

Not even a single sound could be heard, it was deathly silent!

The Monarch Lion Dragon disappeared without a trace, it was as if it had charged into an unknown world.

Chapter 73 – A Glimpse of Hell

Everything seemed so strange and terrifying, one must know that the Monarch Lion Dragon possess unmatched strength. It actually disappeared wordlessly like that, it did not seem like it even had the time to struggle.

It seemed like the three skeletons could feel something, divine radiance started to lit up like a throbbing flame from the lotus insignia on their foreheads. They vigilantly swept their eyes all over the place, and got into battle position.

Keke directly jumped on top of Qinguang Wang's skull, its snow-white body actually emitted waves after waves of multicolored radiance. It stared at the sacred mountain without even blinking its glittering big eyes.

An incomparably bizarre aura spread out from the sacred mountain, enveloping the endless mountain woods. The sacred mountain become even more indistinguishable, even if one was standing on the right spot, even if the moonlight was bright, the imposing sacred mountain in front still become fuzzier, it was as if it was enveloped by a thick fog that could never be lifted.

The aura emitted by the sacred mountain makes one feel very uneasy. It seemed like an eerie field with floating corpses everywhere, it made people feel a chill down their spine.

The snow-white fur all over Keke's body was standing on end, with a "swish" it actually dashed forward. Its target was actually the terrifying sacred mountain ahead. Xiao Chen hastily went after it, the three skeletons looked at each other in dismay, and also followed after them. However, Keke was really too fast, Xiao Chen was actually unable to catch up to it immediately.

But fortunately, Keke stopped right before the sacred mountain's foot. Xiao Chen immediately grabbed this hairy "little snowball", it was rare for it to not make a threatening gesture, it just quietly stared at the sacred mountain before its eyes.

Seven to eight huge monolith are standing tall and upright at the foot of the mountain, each measuring up to fifty or sixty meter tall. They casted huge shadows on the ground, it was extremely frightening. The diagram of the vicious dragons were carved on the face of the lifeless monolith, the craftsmanship is remarkable, the carvings seemed incomparably realistic, the Tyrannical Dragon, Monarch Lion Dragon, Saber Dragon, Thunder Dragon..... they were all here!

After arriving at the foot of the mountain, they did not need to change their position anymore, they could see the sacred mountain from every spot. After getting here, Xiao Chen was unable to stop himself from moving forward. Even though he knew it was going to be very dangerous, his desire to explore the unknown was much stronger.

"I will come back after twenty meter." He reminded himself like this, he very much wanted to know why the Monarch Lion Dragon became soundless in the twinkling of an eye. He wanted to see what kind of secret this sacred mountain was hiding.

One meter, two meter..... ten meter.....

Xiao Chen kept going until twenty meter, but nothing had happened. But of course, twenty meter is nothing to the sacred mountain, it was but only a little higher than the foot of the mountain.

There was literally no plants on the sacred mountain, its entire body was dark red in color, as if it had been contaminated by watery blood. In front appeared the first ancient and mysterious palace. It just stood there majestically, the damages from the passage of time was clearly visible, it gave people a really bizarre feeling.

At the same time, due to the deathly silence on the sacred mountain, as well as the indescribable sensation, it made the huge palace seem somewhat bizarre.

Twenty meter, twenty five meter..... thirty meter!

Xiao Chen was already completely mesmerized, he forgot the twenty meter bottom line he set upon himself, he really wanted to enter that ancient palace that seemed like it might collapse any given time to take a good look.

Just when he was about twenty meter away from that magnificent palace, Xiao Chen felt as if he had suddenly been thrown into a bottomless abyss. The moonlight in his immediate surrounding disappeared instantly, he was surrounded by deathly stillness in a flash. He felt as if he was falling into the underworld!

However, for a brief moment, dazzling rays of light suddenly burst forth in the endless darkness. Xiao Chen was wrapped up by the resplendent radiance, and then he got pulled into the light.

Xiao Chen immediately broke out in cold sweat, he returned to the moonlit sacred mountain in the blink of an eye. What happened just now?

He noticed that the hazy radiance is still enveloping his body, and not far

behind him, Keke who is on top of Qinguang Wang's skull, is currently waving its little paws, and used the divine radiance to pull him back.

It was Keke who saved him!

After retreating for five to six meter, Xiao Chen arrived next to the three skeletons and Keke. He already calmed down, but he still didn't know what happened just now, why did he suddenly feel like falling into a bottomless abyss?

"Keke, what did you guys see just now?"

Keke is making a threatening gesture on top of Qinguang Wang's skull, seemingly trying to describe something. Xiao Chen was unable to make head and tail out of it, he failed to understand what Keke was trying to say.

"Let me try it again, if something happens, you need to be swift." Even though Xiao Chen felt this place was incomparably mind-boggling, he didn't feel extreme fear. He walked forward one more time, but nothing happened this time. Keke also curiously walked over there, it was jumping and hopping all over the place, but nothing happened at all.

Xiao Chen once again tried to make his way towards the ancient palace. This time, he suddenly felt his blood run cold after advancing ten meter. In that instant, he felt like he had entered the bottomless abyss again. The soundless abyss is somewhat frightening, not a single trace of light could be seen, he was falling towards the underworld brimming with the aura of death!

However, the divine radiance is one step faster, Xiao Chen was once again pulled back under the moonlit night by Keke.

Cold sweat rolled down from Xiao Chen's face, he felt a slight chill down his spine. It felt as if he really made a trip to the underworld just now, he didn't dare to try it one more time. He backed away slowly, and took a quick glance at the ancient palace that was almost within reach before he left with large strides.

"Let's go, this place is too bizarre, we cannot stay here much longer!" Xiao Chen made a firm decision to retreat.

There are not many ancient palace at the bottom of the sacred mountain, only from halfway up the mountain did it gradually starts to increase in number. If in the vicinity of every palace is this bizarre and frightening, then this sacred mountain is a really ominous place!

The dense aura pervaded in the vicinity of the sacred mountain, Xiao Chen and the gang already arrived at the foot of the mountain. Even though Keke seemed very interested in this huge mountain, it was rather quiet and didn't try to charge in.

Just at this time, a sky-piercing dragon roar sudden break out, the forest tree swayed hysterically! For such an ear-piercing dragon roar to break out in the middle of a quiet night all of a sudden, it was somewhat frightening. Xiao Chen hastily block up his ears, so as to avoid his eardrum from rupturing. He turned his head around to watch, and only saw the Monarch Lion Dragon that disappeared at the sacred mountain earlier suddenly reappeared!

It reappeared in the thin air close to the palace just now, the brilliant golden light flickered all over its body. It immediately scuttled down from that place, its fifty meter long huge body was like a small hill. The moment it landed at the foot of the mountain, many small cracks appeared.

The Monarch Lion Dragon appear somewhat dispirited and listless. It didn't stay in place for too long, an incomparably menacing fiendish aura rushed forth, and gave rise to a bloody gale. It immediately dashed out of this mountainous region, causing the earth the tremble endlessly.

Keke seemed very discontent with the Monarch Lion Dragon's roar, it seemed like a very upset little critter. It let out a few snarl towards the back of the Monarch Lion Dragon, it even crouched low and bend its body forward, like it wanted to chase after the dragon.

This make Xiao Chen feel endlessly amazed, this little muddle-head is really mysterious. It was not fearful even under the formidable might of the Monarch Lion Dragon, if it was any ordinary beasts, they would already be crouching on the ground, and trembling in fear. After all, even if the dragons had lost their Magic Power, they are still the king of beasts. Moreover, that was the Monarch Lion Dragon, one of the overlords among the dragon race!

Chapter 74 – The Dragon Egg of the King

Clearly, it is highly possible that Keke come from an uncommon race that is not fearful of dragons. However, Xiao Chen pressed it down in a hurry, he must not let this reckless little devil act arbitrarily. Even if it is a miraculous beast, it is still but a cub, how can it confront a Monarch Lion Dragon?

Keke resentfully snorted a few times before it jumped on top of Yanluo Wang's head.

“You cannot act like that anymore, just how long ago were you born? That was an ancient beast, mind you. You wouldn't even fit in the gap between its teeth! Wait until you grow up before you go show off your power, but now you cannot be reckless.”

“Squeak! Squeak.....!” Keke waved its little paws fiercely to protest in anger. However, it appears more adorable instead, its glittering big eyes blinked a few times, its hairy body is flickering with a jade light, this little critter could even be said to be a goblet of spiritual energy.

It is impossible to continue explore this place anymore, the ancient palace on the sacred mountain is far from only this building. That place is too bizarre, Xiao Chen didn't want to throw his life at this place. He turned around to look at the majestic sacred mountain that was shrouded by a dense fog, as well as that faintly discernible deathly aura around the mysterious palace, then they walked towards the opposite direction.

All of a sudden, Xiao Chen could hear a “rustling” noise from the distant mountain woods. A fishy smell assaulted his nostrils, he hurriedly ran towards the mountain woods nearby with Keke and the three skeletons.

Under the bright moonlight, a terrifying huge monster got here at high-speed. It was flickering with golden-bright radiance under the moonlight, it was actually a ten meter long golden centipede! Its body might possibly be as thick as a water bucket, poisonous gas spread out in its immediate surrounding.

Not long ago, Xiao Chen saw this centipede in a swamp once, he didn't expect it would also be attracted by the historical sites on the sacred mountain. Xiao Chen didn't want to come into contact with that monster, perhaps even a fierce dragon would take a detour once they encountered this centipede.

“Snap! Snap.....!”

When that terrifying poisonous insect moved, hundred pair of legs moved simultaneously. The place that it passed, regardless of the ground, or the solid rock, all of them would be cut apart by its incomparably sharp legs.

“Rustle.....”

In another mountain woods not far away, a similar noise could be heard, Xiao Chen felt goose bumps rising on his body. If there are still other poisonous insects such as this one, then this place is really too dangerous!

“Go! Quickly!” Xiao Chen took the lead and ran far away.

Poisonous insects like to roam about at night-time, god knows when will a huge ancient scorpion eventually show up at this place. Even though the strength of fierce insects such as the ancient centipede and so on are not comparable to the dragons, their toxicity is incomparably frightening, and very

hard to deal with.

Xiao Chen and the gang covered several miles in a short time, only when they arrived at the root of the Heavenly Tree did they stop for a rest. After arriving at this place, they no longer have that kind of bizarre feeling. Moreover, they actually didn't hear the roar of the wild beasts at night, the splendor of the hazy moonlight make this place seems harmonious and peaceful.

Early morning, the birds started to sing, the refreshing fragrance of flowers was carried by the wind, the specks of morning radiance seemed to have embedded this exuberant mountain woods with one after another golden edge, the silk-like mist gradually dispersed.

This is a morning with fine sunny weather, the mountain range is thriving with life.

After Xiao Chen washed his face beside a clear spring, he started to prepare breakfast for himself. At the same time, he was also thinking what to do next. There are too many ancient beasts in the vicinity of the sacred mountain, but how could they just return from the rare mountain empty-handed? He felt that at the very least, he must acquire at least one dragon egg.

Seeing Xiao Chen eat the tender-grill meat, Keke slipped away as if it had never seen anything, what the eye doesn't see, the heart doesn't grieve over. It left this place that was filled with the alluring aroma of the meat. The three skeletons are still meditating as usual, the lotus insignia on their foreheads emitted a glorious radiance, their bones are looking more and more like white jade.

Xiao Chen bring the three skeletons to roam about in the vicinity of the mountain range early in the morning. They unexpectedly discovered seven to

eight dragon's nest, and within each and every one of those valley, there are dragon eggs! Could it be that this is the breeding season of the dragons? Then he suddenly recalled that the Syndicate Dragon King and Ancestral Dragon will show up soon, and the dragons in this place are obviously those kind of uncommon greater dragon. Perhaps a Syndicate Dragon King will arise from among these eggs.

For the entire morning, regardless of the vicious dragons or the ancient beasts, none of them showed up in front of the sacred mountain. After Xiao Chen finish exploring, he returned to the roots of the Heavenly Tree to train. Only until the noon did they hear the dragon roars resounded from that huge and mysterious mountain. Xiao Chen decided to make his move now.

“We will leave this place soon.”

According to the plan, each skeletons had received their respective mission from Xiao Chen. They will split into three groups, and steal one dragon egg from each valley respectively. Xiao Chen will personally go to the Monarch Lion Dragon's nest to steal one golden dragon egg. After that, they will assemble at the root of the Heavenly Tree.

“The uncommon greater dragon, their eggs are highly valuable. Even though there are two to three eggs in each nest, one is more than enough, don't take more than that. It is important to leave some behind, we must not let the kings of dragon race go extinct.”

The spiritual flame of the three skeletons were pulsing unceasingly in their eye sockets. If they had eyeballs, he reckon they would already roll their eyes a long time ago. Want to steal dragon eggs say what “leave some behind”, seriously.....

After that they moved to their respective location, and entered the mountain woods in succession.

The Monarch Lion Dragon's nest is build within an exuberant valley, apart from its area of activity, other places are not damaged, the plants are easily distinguishable, and it is full of vitality. Two golden dragon eggs are hidden among the flowers and trees, they are perfectly concealed.

It is not necessary for a female dragon to breed the dragon eggs. The rich vegetation in this place haven't been destroyed, the golden dragon eggs about the size of a millstone have crystal clear eggshell. They are flickering with glorious radiance, they appear especially mystical among the fragrant flowers and plants. Due to the existence of the dragon eggs, brilliant radiance lingered on the surrounding flowers and plants, and they seemed out of the ordinary.

These are but the dragon eggs of the most powerful Monarch Lion Dragon, Xiao Chen believe among these two dragon eggs, a Syndicate Dragon King will most likely emerge from one of them! Or perhaps both of them will be Dragon Kings! He lifted up one of the golden dragon eggs that flickered with divine radiance, raised his speed to the limit, and ran away from this valley. If by any chance the Monarch Lion Dragon was to return, even having ten lives will not be enough.

Very soon, the three skeletons also returned with results to show, the mystical dragon eggs shone with resplendent radiance.

How could the vicious dragon ever thought someone would be so extremely daring, normally not even the beasts would dare to approach their nest, even the birds do not dare to fly over. Their nests are like the forbidden areas to all lower life forms, they had nothing to worry about.

The one Qinguang Wang carried back is the egg of the Tyrannical Dragon, the crystal clear green dragon egg flickered with divine radiance, it is as eye-catching as a green moon. The one Yanluo Wang carried back is the egg of the Saber Dragon, an intoxicating radiance lingered on the jasper-like eggshell, it looks exactly like a spiritual jadeite. The one Lunhui Wang carried back is the egg of the Thunder Dragon, it is enveloped by a purple radiance, the huge egg is extraordinary beautiful, it was as if the egg was carved out of an amethyst.

In addition to the golden dragon egg brought back by Xiao Chen, they have four dragon eggs in total. When the four dragon eggs are laid out together, they are truly dazzling. The divine splendor set this place bright in contrast to the surrounding, there are ten thousand rays of multicolored radiance, and thousands of colorful ray. It was so dazzling one could barely open their eyes.

Chapter 75 – Entering the Snow Mountain

Keke also gathered over here, its glittering big eyes blinked a few times. It seemed to have understood something, so it lifted a huge tree that was much bigger than its body to chase and beat the three skeletons unceasingly.

“Hey, Keke, stop fooling around.” Xiao Chen hastily put a stop to it.

Keke discarded the huge tree, and took off the “treasured tree hat”, then it extended one tiny paw to point at the three skeletons. It seemed like it was silently denouncing their crime, the three skeletons stole its treasured tree once, and caused it to starve for several days after all.

The three skeletons open and shut their jaws with a “Clack! Clack!” sound, they never thought stealing the dragon eggs today would evoke Keke’s memories. In the end, they unanimously pointed their bony hands at Xiao Chen.

“Alright, if you want to vent your anger on them, we can put that off until later. For now, we need to get out of here as soon as possible.” Xiao Chen didn’t want to invite trouble upon himself, he lifted the golden dragon egg and left first.

In the dense primitive forest, Xiao Chen’s party bore through the mountains and climbed over the ridge, they cautiously avoided all kinds of vicious beasts, their speed was already raised to the limit.

Xiao Chen knew, not long later, the vicinity of the sacred mountain will inevitably become very chaotic. Four greater dragons will surely go berserk, perhaps it wouldn’t be safe even within the circumferences of ten miles.

While they were running at high-speed, Keke was the most relaxed, it just leisurely jumped from one crystal clear dragon eggs to another. The dazzling divine splendor caused it to shine with an even brilliant luster.

Xiao Chen and the gang didn't dare to stop for a moment, they keep running westward until they pass through the deathly still forest. They only stopped to rest when they get close to the sea of bones. Within the quiet forest, four dragon eggs were flickering with a misty splendor. Only Keke was in high spirit, still hopping and skipping from one dragon egg to another like before.

“Roar.....!”

A faintly discernible dragon roar was transmitted over here, following that, the roar of dragons and beasts resounded in succession from the direction of the sacred mountain. Even though they very far away from the sacred mountain, they could vaguely hear the uproar. One can easily imagine just what is going on at the vicinity of the sacred mountain, the sky and earth must be turning upside down by now.

“We cannot stay here!” Xiao Chen was scared that a few vicious dragons would chase after them, the second reason was that there were other practitioners roaming around the sea of bones. He decided to keep going westward.

When they are passing through the deathly sea of bones with thick baleful aura, Xiao Chen and the gang did not stop, they keep pushing their way through from the deathly still forest at the side. They keep going westward at lightning speed. At the west side is a piece of unending snow mountain, they can see it clearly from this place, it is simply a miracle for a snow mountain to exist on this hot and humid dragon island! Using this chance, Xiao Chen might as well go and

explore the snow mountain.

“Quick, we will enter that mysterious snow mountain, it should be safest there.”

The unending snow mountain at the West, with the sea of bones at the center, and the mysterious sacred mountain at the East, the three location formed a straight line, they were only separated by the deathly still forest in between.

After passing through the deathly still and noiseless ancient forest, they passed through another few mountain woods full of vitality, Xiao Chen and the gang finally arrived in front of the snow mountain. This is absolutely not a hallucination, there really is a perpetual snow mountain in front of them. The spotlessly white snowflake danced in the air along with the wind, a chilly aura directly assaulted them.

Keke is brimming with curiosity regarding the snow mountain, seeing that snow-white world, it let out a cheer. It was the first to dash towards the snow mountain, it cheerfully rolled here and there on the snowy ground. With its hairy snow-white body, it could most likely camouflage itself within the pile of snow, and won't be discovered.

Xiao Chen and the gang carried the dragon eggs and took large strides onto the snowy ground, the temperature rapidly decreased, the gas he breathed out from the mouth already became white, the chilly wind that carried the snowflakes directly breezed through the skin. Turning back to look at the hundred meter of grass-covered world out there, it really gives people a pensive feeling. The climate defies all common sense, this doesn't seem like something that was formed with the power of nature!

On the surrounding of the deathly still forest, many alliances gathered there.

On the beautiful mountain peak with dense spiritual energy, even in front of the waterfall or ancient cave with lingering worldly essence, there are young experts training there. On this uncivilized dragon island, strength is everything. Only with enough strength would they be able live a peaceful life.

Today, Yan Qing Cheng, Carlos, and Wharton who had disappeared for many days finally returned, the peace that lasted for many days was finally broken. All the experts they took with them at that time were all gone, only the three of them returned, which led to another uproar, could they have fought with Xiao Chen?

At the moment, Yan Qing Cheng secluded herself in a flowery valley, the entire valley is filled with unknown flowers. The glistening green leaves emphasized the beauty of the multicolored flowers even further. The flower buds brimmed with an intoxicating fragrance.

Yan Qing Cheng was adorned with a purple dress, words can't even begin to describe her beauty and elegance in this field of flowers. Her entire person was as hazy as an illusion, as if she was a fairy descended from the heavens. Her entire body was brimming with spiritual energy, with an appearance that could hide the moon and shame the flowers, the previously tender and beautiful flowers seemed to have lost their splendor.

Not far away from her, Spell Master Lande is sitting on top of a bluestone. His long golden hair is somewhat messy, the originally beautiful man is not as arrogant as before. After suffering a crushing defeat after that battle with Xiao Chen, he received a very heavy blow. However, he did not indulge himself in despair, in the course of recuperating, he also diligently trained hard. He attempted to condense the spiritual knowledge, hoping to become much

stronger. He slowly described how Xiao Chen extinguished three powerful alliances a few days ago.

“What?!” Yan Qing Cheng’s jade-like body emitted one after another divine radiance, it caused the flower trees nearby to disintegrate into pieces. Her beautiful face was brimming with anger, her towering twin peaks violently jumped up and down.

“Xiao Chen actually eliminated everyone who left behind in the big three alliances in a single night?”

Lande bitterly nodded his head, and said, “That’s right, apart from me who hid myself in the flowery valley to recuperate, no one else is left.”

After quite a while, Yan Qing Cheng helplessly heaved a sigh, and said, “Seriously, this time..... Carlos, Wharton, and I encountered the Amethyst Dragon King again. Unfortunately, we suffered a disastrous loss, and still were unable to retain it.”

All the troops that were sent away were completely wiped out, and the alliance members that left behind in the camp were eliminated by Xiao Chen. This could really drive one crazy.

“It was that Qilin-like Amethyst Dragon King?” Lande’s thought’s stirred, when the Amethyst Dragon King appeared for the first time, it caused quite an uproar, but soon after, something big happened on the dragon island, the divine radiance sealed the island, which shifted everyone’s attention.

“That’s right.”

“That was but only a young dragon king, even three powerful experts like you guys were unable to capture it.....” Lande was very shocked, his handsome yet pale complexion gradually regained some colors, he was somewhat excited, and said, “The legend was true, after they grow up, even deities would shrink back. If we can somehow subdue it.....”

“If Carlos, Wharton, and I were to breakthrough another two Celestial Layers, then perhaps we would have a chance to force it into submission.” Yan Qing Cheng was feeling very regretful.

“There will be plenty of opportunity in the future!” Lande said while brimming with hope.

When Carlos and Wharton returned, they were unable to find any people from their own alliances. After they learned about the situation from other people, they almost went crazy. Xiao Chen is really too strong, he actually cleaned up their remaining troops, he is truly firm and decisive!

On this day, all the experts in this area could hear the bellow of rage, that was the bellow of someone who's driven to the brink of madness.

Chapter 76 – Crisis

This area in the heart of the island were teeming with noise and excitement right away. Many alliances were very expectant, they knew a war was now unavoidable, Carlos and Wharton will definitely not let Xiao Chen get away with this.

Before Carlos came to the dragon island, he was already quite famous in the West, he was a young and talented Illusion Master in the West. And Wharton, he is the successor of Xiao Li the Flying Dagger, whose name would cause many people to turn pale. Their backgrounds are equally amazing. As for Xiao Chen, even though his name was never heard of before, his recent display of strength on the dragon island could only be described as strong and formidable. Their next confrontation will definitely be strife between dragon and tiger.

Regarding Yan Qing Cheng, her game of “Hide and Seek” with Xiao Chen was already in full swing, and with her identity as the Undying disciple, no one dare to underestimate her.

The unseen forces have begun to move!

And just at this day, the news regarding the Amethyst Dragon King spread out. Yan Qing Cheng, Carlos, and Wharton led a group to surround the young Amethyst Dragon King, but they were met with an intense counterattack. The young Syndicate Dragon King was incomparably mystical, all the weaker practitioners were killed during the break out. Even after Yan Qing Cheng, Carlos, and Wharton exhausted all their strength to inflict a fatal hit on the young Amethyst Dragon King, they were still unable to restrain it.

This news gave rise to a huge commotion, everyone’s purpose for coming to

this island was to fight over the Dragon King, one must know after they mature, even deities will shrink back! If they can subdue the Dragon King while it was still young, then their future will be as easy as living in a fantasy.

But of course, the most powerful of them all is still the Ancestral Dragon, it is the emperor among the kings! The young experts once heard this before they came to the dragon island, the seal on the dragon island might be broken by the Ancestral Dragon. Without a doubt, that is something that will only happen several hundred years later. For a young Dragon King to grow up, at least a few dozen years are required, but for the king of kings, it requires ten times as much time.

All the practitioners on the dragon island are young men and women, even though it is impossible for them to leave now, if they can obtain a young Dragon King now, they will be an invincible force on this uncivilized island for many years to come. Everyone was boiling with desires.

Just at this sensitive moment, someone leaked out information regarding Xiao Chen, about how they saw Xiao Chen and the three skeletons making their way through the deathly still forest all the way to the West while carrying one multicolored dragon egg each. This news undoubtedly caused everyone to feel startled, just what is Xiao Chen planning to do now? He actually dared to steal the dragon eggs!

The recent news regarding Yan Qing Cheng's ambush on the Amethyst Dragon King caused many alliances to pay close attention to any related news. Very soon, many people suddenly understood, the reason Xiao Chen stole the dragon eggs was to obtain a Syndicate Dragon King!

Immediately after a Syndicate Dragon King is born, they are already very powerful despite being an infant. It is very difficult to subdue them, the failure of

Yan Qing Cheng, Carlos, and the rest was a valuable lesson to learn from. Many people speculated that Xiao Chen might be executing the Dragon Cultivating Plan! It is unnecessary for a female dragon to breed the egg, the mystical dragon egg will hatch by itself under the bath of the worldly essence.

Many practitioners unanimously came to this conclusion, this is a very crazy plan! If Xiao Chen knew he was being misunderstood like this, he would certainly be dumbstruck. Raising dragons? More like eating dragons instead!

Many young practitioners couldn't sit around anymore, each and every one of their hearts are burning with desires. Many wished they could go find Xiao Chen to understand the situation. There are even some who wanted to imitate Xiao Chen to go and steal some dragon eggs. However, this is tantamount to seeking their own death, after the dragon eggs of the Eight-Clawed Tyrant Dragon and Elephants Draco were stolen, all the dragons at the border region of the dragon island already raised their vigilance. And the incident just happened at the inner region recently, all the dragons are already on guard. Just at this day, many practitioners lost their life in an attempt to steal the dragon egg. This make the dragons to be more vigilant than ever. It was very obvious that Xiao Chen's three times attempt had already sealed everyone's opportunity.

Nobody dare to ransack the dragon nest anymore. However, humans are selfish creature, just thinking about the power of the Dragon King, they are unable to lay down their desires. All of them began to change their attention, some eventually thought of..... plundering Xiao Chen. The danger will be relatively smaller, and they would still achieve their goal.

Their heart couldn't settle down for a moment.

Buddhist Yizhen was somewhat anxious, he wanted to send words to Xiao Chen, yet he was unable to find him. Buddhist Yizhen knew if someone was to

instigate the search, most likely a huge group of people will go find him in order to plunder the dragon eggs. If that were to happen, even someone as strong as Xiao Chen would get caught up in a crisis.

The next day, what Yizhen was worried about came true. Many people were already instigating the search, they wanted to track down Xiao Chen and seize the dragon eggs. Yaluo De, the young expert from Jungle Tribe, was among them, he played an important role, he was the one who added fuel to the fire behind the scene. Yizhen suspected that Yan Qing Cheng, Carlos, and Wharton were also the driving force behind the scenes. After all, they just recently suffered a heavy loss.

However, each and every practitioners who come to the dragon island were not simple-minded, how could they not know someone was pushing them in the dark. As a result, many people proposed; Since the battle between Carlos, Wharton, Xiao Chen, and the rest is unavoidable now, why not just initiate the battle now? Many people will go with them to witness how they settle the dispute fair and square.

Many people lusted after the dragon eggs possessed by Xiao Chen. They wanted to take advantage of a crisis for personal gain, so they pushed Carlos, Wharton, and the rest to the front. This could be said to be a pretty good move.

Carlos, Wharton, and the rest were not really worried, since they planned to go after Xiao Chen in the first place. To be able to mobilize so many practitioners, this completely boosted their morale. Using these people's desire to create such a powerful force will inevitably give Xiao Chen a huge pressure. In the end, even if they didn't make their move, despite how these people seem to be upright now, they will still go after Xiao Chen's dragon egg on their own accord.

Some practitioners from many alliances are secretly participating in this

operation. Even if they look like they don't care on the surface, saying everyone will go witness the decisive battle, many of them have ulterior motive.

Everyone passed through the deathly still ancient forest, and arrived in front of the snowy mountain very quickly. This spectacular sight caused everyone to feel endlessly surprised, they couldn't help but stop their footstep in front of the snowy mountain temporarily.

At this time, hundreds of people gathered in front of the snowy mountain, and even more are still rushing over here. Of course, those who had a greedy mindset were only the minority, most of the people who came afterwards purely wanted to watch the battle. That was because Xiao Chen's recent achievements were too magnificent, almost all the alliances who received the news were rushing over here.

Early morning at the snowy mountain, although there was sunlight, it was still very cold.

On a snowy peak, Keke was happily rolling around, it was not afraid of the cold, the snow felt as comfortable as a soft bed for the little critter. The three skeletons and Xiao Chen secluded themselves in an icy cave, and devoted themselves to meditate wholeheartedly.

The golden radiance caused this icy cave to dazzle the eyes, due to the refraction, brilliant lights and vibrant colors spilled on the snowy ground outside of the cave. It caused multicolored light to linger on this snowy world, and it appeared incomparably beautiful.

The life essence contained within the Monarch Lion Dragon's egg was indeed incomparably dominating, the dazzling golden light steadily flowed into Xiao

Chen's body like a water ripple. Only after assimilating it for an entire night did the golden radiance gradually become dimmer.

The Shoulder Well Acupoint in Xiao Chen's right shoulder was like a bottomless pit, it keeps depriving that tremendous life essence like it was nothing. All the dazzling golden radiance resembled rivers flowing into the ocean, all of them gathered at a single point! At last, they condensed into a resplendent light speck, the Shoulder Well Acupoint in the right shoulder had been divinized!

This result was not out of Xiao Chen's expectation.

The Shang Hill Acupoint in the left foot and right foot, the Central Palace Acupoint in the chest, the Shoulder Well Acupoint in the left shoulder and right shoulder, five major acupoints in Xiao Chen's whole body had already transformed into resplendent light specks, and were completely divinized!

Between the five major divine acupoint, some kind of connection seemed to have formed. A faintly discernible life energy was slowly circulating between the five acupoint. Xiao Chen could clearly feel the boundless life energy in his body.

Xiao Chen felt as if he had two lives at the moment! The exuberant life energy made his skin circulate with a glorious splendor. After a quick inspection, he found that even his flesh and bones were filled with plentiful of multicolored radiance. His body was flickering with the splendor of life, as if he was a gem that had been refined.

Every inch of his skin were brimming with power, it seemed as if his body was made out of adamantite. Xiao Chen could vaguely feel like he had a completely different body.

Chapter 77 – Realization

Right now, Xiao Chen felt as if his body was indestructible. With his every movement filled with power, he felt unstoppable. His body was also even more agile and nimble than before, any casual movements he made were as fast as lightning, he left behind one after another afterimages in the icy cave.

However, Xiao Chen heaved a sigh instead, he had reached the peak of Exuvia Fifth Celestial Layer, but it seemed like he was at the bottleneck. It was very difficult to step over this barrier, the most visible gain this time was the increase in strength and speed.

Xiao Chen had come to realize, in order to make a breakthrough, he had to train hard by himself, everything else could only be considered as assistance.

Xiao Chen walked out of the icy cave, he stood on top of the snowy summit to welcome the morning sun. The tranquil world of ice and snow made Xiao Chen feels extremely at peace. Ten million rays of multicolored sunlight shone on the snowy field, vivid colors circulated on the summit, and just at this moment, Xiao Chen suddenly had an epiphany.

Sunrise and sunset, the cycle of yin and yang, the dazzling morning sun, thriving with life force, burning fiercely, and extremely flourishing. Past its prime time, everything starts to decline, this is a cycle.

But after sunset, it didn't completely come to an end yet, the sun will rise again after the darkness, and a new cycle will begin. Xiao Chen received a never-ending enlightenment, the flourish and decline of life force is an everlasting cycle.

Lately, Xiao Chen's heartstring was tied very tightly, he always demanded himself to make a breakthrough, giving himself an immense pressure. This is already no longer the driving force that can push him forward, it is just like entering the declining phase after the golden age. The pressure has already become a shackle that's preventing him from growing.

All living things under the heavens are composite of yin and yang, one cannot flourish for eternity. He had put a shackle on himself, this was obviously the reason why he was unable to make a breakthrough from the peak of Exuvia Fifth Celestial Layer. He must completely relax himself, let the darkness past as quickly as possible, and begin a new cycle full of vitality. He should not be resisting the darkness.

Just at this time, it seemed as if Xiao Chen had achieved supreme enlightenment. He completely relaxed, and freed himself from all worries. He lets his mind wandered in the void, passing through the four ocean and five sacred mountains, soaring to the Ninth Heaven and arrived in front of a palace. He discarded all train of thoughts in regards to training, his complicated mind had turned very simple. The dense fog gradually dispersed, allowing the tower of wisdom to let off brilliant rays..... At this moment, Xiao Chen's entire person seemed very ethereal. He stood at the summit of the snowy mountain to welcome to morning sun, he had already blended with the nature.

The worldly essence entered from the crown of his head, and exited from the body. Endless amount of spiritual energy blended with Xiao Chen's relaxed body, he found himself submerged in a fantastic state. Soon after, his body shook violently, it actually produced rumbling sounds, and burst forth with a dazzling radiance.

Even though Xiao Chen's mind was wandering in the void, he could still clearly

felt the transformation of his body. He actually made a breakthrough under this kind of circumstances!

He trained strenuously, yet he was unable to make any progress. However, as he was turning back leisurely, he actually made a breakthrough and entered a new domain.

He successfully advanced to Exuvia Sixth Celestial Layer!

The radiance on his body gradually vanished.

Xiao Chen's heart was at peace, like a well without a ripple. He still maintained that kind of ethereal state, but he could already comprehend to some extent. The dazzling morning sun is burning fiercely, but will decline once past its prime time, the flourish and decline of life force were not only limited to the changes of nature and meditation, it was applicable for everything..... One's life is like a dream, joys and sorrows come hand-in-hand, who could live on happily in their whole life? The transformation of the world, the changes of time, who could ever hope to stop them?

A flash of insight is better than several years of bitter training. The transformation this time has a really big meaning for Xiao Chen. This was an understanding of the spirit, he has gained an all new understanding in the path of training.

Many alliances gathered in front of the snowy mountain, there were actually more than four hundred people here. The majority of them came to witness the battle, but there were also quite a few who came for the dragon eggs. Everyone entered the snowy mountain, and finally discovered the traces of Xiao Chen. Raising their heads to look at Xiao Chen who was on the summit of the snowy

mountain, their face colors changed due to amazement.

Under the morning sun, Xiao Chen's entire person was surrounded by a faint radiance. It made him look incomparably holy and auspicious in contrast. He practically looked like a deity who was about to split the dimension!

Some people were unable to remain calm, they shouted as soon as they saw Xiao Chen's back.

"Xiao Chen, where are the dragon eggs you stole secretly?"

"The dragon eggs on this island belong to everyone!"

.....

This kind of clumsy excuse made many of the audiences feel embarrassed for them, but the few dozen people in front did not feel as such. Many of them were already running towards the snowy peak.

Yan Qing Cheng, Carlos, and Wharton haven't make their move, yet these people were already making their move. They feared to be outdone by others, they feared other people would get their hands on the dragon egg first. Dozen of practitioners shouted at the same time, they ran halfway up the snowy mountain very quickly.

Hundreds of people far behind the front line felt these people who are lusting for the dragon eggs were too shameless, they started discussing spiritedly at the back.

“How can people be so shameless!”

“Alas, this is the true nature of human!”

“This is nothing, they might do something even more excessive in the future!”

“No matter how powerful Xiao Chen is, fighting against this many is impossible!”

.....

The yell coming from below made Xiao Chen awoke from the ethereal state. After understanding what was going on, he felt very angry, he just advanced to Exuvia Sixth Celestial Layer, what was there to be afraid of? If they want to die, then come and get it!

Suddenly, Xiao Chen’s body emitted five dazzling rays of light that seemed to form a linkage with the morning sun at the East.

A few enormous dragon shadows emerged from his divinized acupoints. They were completely made out of resplendent divine radiance. The rays of light were incomparably glaring, the silver-colored Eight-Clawed Tyrant Dragon, the dark green Elephants Draco, the jasper-like Saber Dragon, and the golden Monarch Lion Dragon. With Xiao Chen as the center, the dragon shadows revolved around him, and let out an ear-splitting dragon roar!

They are incomparably huge, they are dragons made out of light energy!

Everyone below was completely dumbfounded, they simply couldn't believe their own eyes! Even Xiao Chen himself was bewildered, he didn't know how it happened either.

The three skeletons rushed out from the icy cave, they were so shocked that their jaws kept opening and closing unceasingly. Keke was also filled with curiosity, it blinked its glittering big eyes and rolled around Xiao Chen repeatedly.

The dragon roar pierced the skies, the enormous shadows continuously float in the sky, they made Xiao Chen looks like a demon god in contrast.

“Rumble.....”

An ear-splitting noise broke out from the snowy mountain, a terrifying avalanche had taken place from the mountain peak Xiao Chen was standing at. It was like the galloping of ten thousand horses, it was like the thunderous roar of the angry waves, a wide expanse of snow rolled down the mountain like a thunderous wave.

The summit was the same as ever, the dragon shadows were floating around Xiao Chen, his entire body was throbbing with searing light flame, he watched everything unfolding before him calmly.

This was a huge disaster, it was completely caused by the dragon roar, Xiao Chen looked almost like a “demon” right now!

The practitioners at the rear immediately increased their speed to the limit, and rushed towards the snowy peak at the other side. They watched the

avalanche below them in awe. Those who lusted after the dragon eggs, those who wanted to rush to the summit, and those who wanted to take the dragon eggs by force were all buried under the thick snow. Even if there were Spell Master and Psychic among them who could fly, they didn't have enough time to get away. The big avalanche was too sudden, they were already halfway up the mountain, and it happened right in their surroundings, they didn't even had time to respond!

The vast expanse of snow slide almost filled up the valley at the bottom. Everyone was completely dumbstruck, this was simply too terrifying! Xiao Chen actually buried dozens of practitioners under the sea of snow alive.

Chapter 78 – Anything Could Happen

The bitter cold wind blew past Xiao Chen's clothes, generating a flapping sound. His long black hair danced hysterically with the wind, his handsome face was very stern, his pupils emitted rays of light as sharp as the sword. At this moment, Xiao Chen's lofty and unfaltering figure was deeply carved into everyone's mind, he was like a monster, more like a demon!

"Goodness gracious, what did I just see?!"

"Too scary!"

"Divine Dragon Protection, unbelievable!"

.....

The practitioners at the other snowy peak began to clamor.

Among the practitioners that were trapped on the dragon island, not only Xiao Chen was training diligently to improve his own ability. The other people also advanced by leaps and bounds, this was due to the huge pressure on every one of them. If they don't make any progression, it signifies their death, because everyone knows only with enough strength would they be able to survive on this dragon island.

Recently, almost every practitioners have improved, Xiao Chen was not the only one that's been getting stronger. Everyone had painstakingly worked hard to improve themselves.

When people saw Xiao Chen's body was surrounded by the dragon shadows, they were shocked, but still somewhat dejected. This miraculous scene makes them realize just how big Xiao Chen's improvement was.

However, it seemed like they were thinking too much, because even Xiao Chen himself did not know how it happened. The dragon shadows that were revolving around Xiao Chen already disappeared. He didn't know why something like that happened just now, because when he attempted to summon them again, the dragons converted from light energy did not make another appearance.

Xiao Chen pondered silently, he felt that it must be due to the total discharge of the powerful energy he gathered after breaking through to Exuvia Sixth Celestial Layer. After breaking through, he kept maintaining the ethereal state until those people infuriated him. The dragon power hidden within those divinized acupoints must have been aroused by his state of mind, which brought about that miraculous scene just now as a result.

He always knew the divinized acupoints would unleash a formidable power sooner or later. This might be the manifestation of his divine ability in advance.

Xiao Chen and numerous practitioners were standing on two separate snowy peaks, they looked at one another at a distance. God knows when the world had suddenly become silent, the morning sun gleamed on the snowy peak, the worldly essence lingered around unhurriedly, the intense clamor from a moment ago gradually calmed down.

"Xiao Chen, hand over the dragon eggs!" A yell suddenly resounded, this person was obviously a "spear" incited by others. Following that, the same speech resounded from other direction among the crowds. There were seven to

eight people shouting altogether.

Xiao Chen's gaze was like a torch, the two snowy peaks were very close to each other, he could see a few face clearly. Three from Yaluo De's Nature Alliance, three from the Imperial Angel Zhao Lin Er's Treant's Valley Alliance.

Evidently, their goal was not the dragon eggs, Yaluo De and Zhao Lin Er wanted to incite people to take care of Xiao Chen. People were often blinded by greed, even if the majority of them seemed rational, some still got agitated, and started to hoot along with the rest.

"Hand over the dragon eggs!"

"The dragon eggs belong to everyone!"

"Don't attempt to secretly take one for yourself!"

.....

As Xiao Chen waved his right hand, a huge palm completely made out of divine radiance rushed towards the icy cave behind him. It grabbed the broken pieces of the Monarch Lion Dragon's egg, and then tossed it towards the peak on the opposite side with all its might.

After the golden eggshell were injected with enough energy, it burst forth with resplendent rays of light, and produced a dazzling golden radiance. It flew towards the snowy peak on the other side like a meteor shower.

“This is the dragon egg that you guys want, I already treated it as my breakfast and consumed it. If you guys want a dragon egg, you could find one at the dragon’s nest, why must you all reap without sowing?” [1]

[tl: [1] = This proverb is the opposite of the English proverb ‘Reap what you sow’, which means the hard effort you put in will be rewarded. This proverb is about something unearned. To reap without sowing or to have the rewards without having put the effort in.]

The crystal clear eggshell was like a fine jade, even though it was already not as dazzling as it was when it was still in a good condition, there was still a brilliance lingering about. Words couldn’t even begin to describe how miraculous it was, one could tell from a glance that it was a rare item.

Everyone was clearly stupefied by Xiao Chen’s words, does this person know how to use things sparingly?! He actually..... ate a dragon egg! This..... really made people speechless! This means that he had consumed a future dragon!

Very soon, everyone believed that Xiao Chen was not lying. The dragon egg did not shatter due to the birth of the little dragon; Rather, it was broken by a human, because the crystal clear eggshell had some frozen egg whites sticking on it.

Everyone had the urge to throw up blood, this Xiao Chen was really driving everyone mad. He actually treated dragon eggs as food, even deity wouldn’t have that much luxury!

“Xiao Chen, you bastard!”

“Xiao Chen, this is taking it too far!”

.....

Someone even called him a “good-for-nothing”, they loathed him to the extreme. It was a dragon egg for god’s sake! He actually treated it as a breakfast?!

“I risked my life to fetch the dragon eggs, it was only natural that I get to decide what to do with them. If you guys want to eat it, go get it yourself.”

Veins were practically popping out on everyone’s forehead, even those who were not interested in the dragon eggs also wanted to throw up blood. Who in their right mind would want to eat a dragon egg? This guy actually thought everyone came here because they wanted to eat the dragon egg, they believed Xiao Chen must be doing this on purpose, he was intentionally provoking everyone!

“Xiao Chen, you really are a bastard!”

“Xiao Chen, you..... Do you think you’re a deity?! How dare you treat the dragon egg as nothing more but food?!”

.....

The practitioners on the other side started to make a clamor. And this time, Yaluo De and Zhao Lin Er’s people began to incite everyone again.

“Yesterday, someone discovered Xiao Chen obtains more than one dragon egg, there must be more in the icy cave behind him.”

“Hand over the remaining dragon eggs!”

“Hand over the dragon eggs, you can’t hog them all to yourself, they belong to everyone!”

.....

Xiao Chen turned around to order the three skeletons, “The three of you, take the dragon eggs and get away from here. Set out towards the depths of the snowy mountain!” Even if he didn’t have the “Dragon King Cultivation Plan” before, being forced by so many people now, he couldn’t help but give rise to that kind of intention.

The three skeletons didn’t move, they stood in their original position and looked at him silently. Xiao Chen shook his head and said, “There’s no need for you guys here, nobody can stop me if I want to retreat. More importantly, we cannot let them steal the dragon eggs we obtained through many trials and tribulations.”

The three skeletons no longer hesitated, their body glowed with the spiritual light, making their white bones sparkling clear in contrast. They looked like precious jade flowing with luster, they quickly rushed into the icy cave, then grabbed the resplendent dragon egg, smashed the icy wall on the other side, and ran towards the back of the snowy peak.

“Keke, you also leave this place.” Xiao Chen shouted at Keke who was rolling

here and there on the snowy ground.

Keke didn't seem to feel the tense atmosphere of the approaching war, it was playing around like a naive child. It shook its head like a plump little snowman, blinked its glittering big eyes, and looked at Xiao Chen.

"Keke, don't you want to eat delicious food anymore? Don't you want to get rid of your plump little belly anymore?"

"Squeak....." Keke hanged its head down furiously, after that it curled up its plump little body into a ball, which looked exactly like a snowball. And it actually rolled down the mountain peak while chasing after the three skeletons like this.

The people on the other snowy peak only saw three skeletons enter the icy cave, they didn't know the three skeletons already escaped from the other side.

"Everyone go together, what is there to hesitate?!" The ones in the dark tried to incite the others again. However, no one dare to take the first step. After all, the avalanche just now was too shocking, if it happened again, they will die an unworthy death.

"There is nothing to be afraid of, the avalanche just now already caused the snow to slide down, let's go together." Someone finally took the first step. If someone took the first step, someone else will follow, dozens of people quickly rushed towards where Xiao Chen was located.

Regarding this group of people, Xiao Chen knew it was useless no matter what he said to them, everyone clearly understood what was going on, this can only be settled with one word, that is — kill! He coldly swept his glance at the

practitioners rushing at him. His sharp gaze swept past everyone, but he did not find Yan Qing Cheng and the others.

Chapter 79 – A Battle That Make One Cringe

The instigators were still hooting, but Xiao Chen quickly understood, the majority of the people also quickly come to realize; This kind of instigation won't have much effect. Those who can enter the dragon island were not stupid either, who would willingly let others use them as tools?

It was obvious that those instigators were deliberately acting like this, they belong to a certain alliances, the head of those alliances wanted to take this opportunity to make their move. They wanted to incite people they could trust and test Xiao Chen's strength, then they will kill Xiao Chen in the confusion. After that, the real experts will make their move and snatch the dragon eggs.

No matter where, there will always be a strive as long as people exist. The dragon island is the prime example, even in an unknown land, they will fight and scheme against each other, killing each other mutually, that is something that cannot be avoided. People's heart and nature are very complicated, nobody can perfectly describe them.

The Spell Master and Psychic were scared of the avalanche, so they flew high up in the sky, and took the lead.

However, a miserable scream followed soon after, "AHHH!"

Xiao Chen actually soared into the sky, he jumped more than ten meter high, his entire body was throbbing with divine flame, he swept his right leg across, and actually sliced one Spell Master across the middle! The rain of blood swirled in the air, two halves of the body fell down from the sky.

That was too sudden, nobody ever thought Xiao Chen could actually be that fast, it almost seemed like he was flying. In an instant, he actually killed an Exuvia Third Celestial Layer Spell Master.

To actually get killed by a Martial Artist high up in the sky, this was an absolute disgrace for any Spell Master capable of flying. However, the deceased could not feel the shame anymore, he had consequently lost his life for eternity.

“Everyone together, there is nothing to be afraid of.”

“No matter how strong is he, there’s no way he can take on our numbers.”

.....

Xiao Chen’s gaze was ice-cold, he already locked on to the few who were yelling. Even though he knew without them yelling, those who ought to come up will still come up. Nevertheless, he wanted to get rid of these few people first to show his determination.

And just at this time, more than ten Spell Master and Psychic already flew overhead of Xiao Chen. Even more practitioners that cannot fly climbed to the snowy summit, they surrounded Xiao Chen in the middle.

Divine radiance flickered in Xiao Chen’s pair of eyes, he was not fearful. Among these people, those who reached Exuvia Third Celestial Layer could already be considered an expert, there were only a few who reached Exuvia Fourth Celestial Layer. If he wants to get away, he can do so without a hitch.

Thunderous roars burst out from within Xiao Chen’s body, the “North Star

Constellation” light screen actually appeared in front of him. This light screen was dubbed as the “Sealed God” by Xiao Chen.

When those Spell Master and Psychic in the sky shoot one after another divine radiance downwards, Xiao Chen left behind multitudes of afterimages like the shooting star. He easily dodged all the berserk energy storm. At the same time, the “Sealed God” light screen radiated with an incomparably dazzling radiance. It blocked a portion of the spells that were raining down on his, and he quickly rushed towards the practitioners who were besieging him on the ground.

Xiao Chen already rushed into the crowds, his target was those people who lit the fire. Using his palm like a blade, he chopped Yaluo De’s underling from the waist. The palm blade shone with glorious divine radiance, it was not stained by the blood at all.

Continuing on, Xiao Chen left behind an afterimage in the original place, and evaded everyone’s combined attack. He appeared in front of a member from Treant’s Valley. His left palm lightly streaked across, and a head with terrified expression flew sideways. It gave rise to a rain of blood, the dead body only fell towards the ground after Xiao Chen left.

A divine light flashed by with a “swish”, Xiao Chen break away from the mob, and appeared close to another member of the Nature Alliance. The North Star light screen in front of him blocked the glaring sword radiance from view. Xiao Chen swished past like a lightning, and that person’s body was actually divided into half. Xiao Chen bore through right between the two halves of the body.

Watery blood splashed everywhere! In just a brief moment, the snowy summit was filled with miserable shriek from time to time. The blood already dyed the snowy ground red.

The Spell Master's magic attack, and the Psychic's bizarre attack transformed into one after another terrifying light beam. The attack landed on the snowy summit hysterically, the divine splendor made this snowy summit appear incomparably dazzling.

The "Sealed God" light screen followed Xiao Chen closely, it kept rotating around with Xiao Chen as the center, and helped him block the infinite energy attack. Most of the attack from the Spell Master and Psychic in the sky were successfully disintegrated.

Xiao Chen's strength caused everyone to feel shocked! They originally thought they could have suppressed him with numbers, but who would have thought they would suffer casualties as soon as it started. The Spell Master and Psychic would swoop down from the sky unceasingly, the terrifying spells were like a meteor shower, the bizarre attacks were more like a tide. The glaring lightning, flame, wind blade, and ice lance were wreaking havoc everywhere!

However, even all of these were unable to stop Xiao Chen. After reaching Exuvia Sixth Celestial Layer, he can already completely bring the God of the North Star under control. He didn't have to rely on luck like that time with Lawrence.

The North Star Constellation flickered and lit up the sky, the resplendent rays of light almost enveloped Xiao Chen's entire body. After the spells and bizarre energies were assimilated by the sealed god light screen, the North Star Constellation became much brighter. In the end, blazing rays of light rose into the sky like a volcanic eruption. It swallowed up four Spell Master and Psychic who were swooping down.

That was a really shocking scene, there was a raging conflagration in midair, but that was not a flame, it was a resplendent ray of light. The sealed god light screen enclosed above Xiao Chen's head, it crushed a few Spell Master and Psychic who rushed over here in an instant.

This made everyone once again realize Xiao Chen's strength and formidability!

However, it is impossible for everyone to back out now. Since the situation was already like this, the Spell Master and Psychic in the sky, as well as the practitioners on the ground had no other choice but to let out a rallying cry and gang-up Xiao Chen.

"Kill.....!"

"KILL.....!"

The battle on the snowy summit was incomparably intense, the cry even shook the heaven. More than thirty practitioners were attacking Xiao Chen from all sides.

The audiences on the other snowy peak were very astonished, just what kind of realm had Xiao Chen reached? He was actually waging a war with all the outstanding heroes all by himself, his strength was really too astonishing.

The light screen formed from seven energy-converted stars was like a divine armor adorned on Xiao Chen's body. The rays of light it emitted caused even the sun in the sky to lose its splendor! Xiao Chen's hair was disheveled, he used the divine sword he seized by force to massacre the crowds.

The sword aura soared forth, weaving about in rage!

When Xiao Chen swept it around, nobody could stop it, everywhere the divine sword swept past, blood gushed out unceasingly. The light screen on his external body had already transformed into a bloody screen. A bloody mist lingered on the snowy summit, the pungent smell of blood was carried by the wind.

“Plop!”

The divine sword was like a rainbow as it beheaded one fierce practitioner, plenty of blood splashed on the summit.

“Cough!”

The iron sword was merciless, it cut off the body of one practitioner from shoulder to waist, the eerie white bones, and the scarlet blood were especially unpleasant to the eyes. It caused people to be terrified.

“Rip-!”

The blood-stained divine sword directly split open half of one practitioner’s skull. The white matter flowed out, and fresh blood rushed forth accordingly. The dead body collapsed on the ground, words can’t even describe how bloody and despairing the situation was.

Soon after, the blazing sword aura was raised to the sky, the dazzling light beam penetrated three Spell Master and Psychic’s body in that instant. A lot of blood gushed out from the bloody hole, and dyed the sky red.

This was an extremely desperate battle!

The heavens paled in fear at the blood-stained sword, when the North Star Constellation soared towards the heavens, even the clouds were blasted apart. Xiao Chen had absolute supremacy in this battle. After the North Star light screen dissipated, his long hair was also stained red by the blood. Blood were dripping from the tip of the divine sword, his hair danced hysterically with the wind, his sharp gaze and lofty figure, all of these were carved deeply into everyone's heart. Even after many years later, this image will not be easy to erase.

Chapter 80 – Cross Swords with Sixth Celestial Layer

God knows who was the very first to fall apart, and ran towards the bottom of the snowy hill in fear. Soon after, everyone started to flee in disorder, the Spell Master and Psychic in the sky were also trying to escape in a hurry.

Xiao Chen was too scary, he was practically a demon incarnate. With so many people besieging him, he actually managed to kill more than ten experts! He was as heartless as Asura from the underworld, completely blood-soaked and violent, he massacred without blinking an eye.

The bloody smell from the snowy peak assailed the nostrils, the blood had completely dyed this snowy world with its color. The bloody mist lingered on the summit, broken limbs and body were everywhere, this was the scene of a terrifying slaughterfest.

Xiao Chen leaned on the divine sword, the sealed god light screen already dissipated a long time ago. He was stained by blood from head to toe, but he still looked as imposing as an unsheathed divine sword!

Not a single voice could be heard from the two snowy peaks. It became extremely quiet for a moment, Xiao Chen's strength and formidability caused many to feel fearful.

The majority of the people came to watch the battle, the people who wanted to conspire against him also turned somewhat taciturn. Even those who could cross swords with Xiao Chen have no choice but to reassess the situation.

Suddenly, a dazzling rain of light fell from the whole sky like the stars just at

this moment. The target was Xiao Chen, even though the energy fluctuation was very far away, numerous audiences could still feel it, those energy-converted knife blades possessed power not inferior to Xiao Chen!

The divine swords were as dazzling as rainbow, Xiao Chen left behind multitudes of afterimages at the snowy summit, and the longsword in his hand emitted one after another blazing rays of light that clashed with the rain of swords. Just by relying on his instinct, he could tell that this is a powerful enemy! Presently, he still haven't discover any traces of the opponent.

All of a sudden, it seemed like the divine sword in Xiao Chen's hand had lose its power, the rain of swords were becoming much more concentrated, but those seemed like a mirage, those rain of swords were not really conjured by spiritual power.

"The genius Illusion Master, Carlos!" Xiao Chen immediately guessed who it was, even though he knew those were illusions, Xiao Chen didn't dare to lower his guard, because the real rain of swords might be hidden within!

At the same time, Yan Qing Cheng rose from within the ice and snow, her devastatingly beautiful complexion was unreal, her purple dress fluttered along with the wind, she seemed much more spectacular on this snowy summit.

In that instant, the snowy summit was illuminated by a purple radiance. Yan Qing Cheng was like a fairy dancing in the breeze, she was flying at low altitude. Purple aura lingered on her entire body, and formed a pair of almost transparent purple wings which allowed her to fly for a short period of time. At this moment, she seemed really out-of-this-world.

The beautiful [1] Yan Qing Cheng transformed into a streak of purple light in

the sky. She finally executed the legendary Undying Demon Technique, one after another purple radiance were launched from her two hands, they were launching towards Xiao Chen like purple lightnings.

[tl: [1] = I feel like my translation do the Chinese counterpart no justice. In Chinese, this sentence says: Beauty capable of captivating even the birds and beasts.]

Yan Qing Cheng was at Exuvia Fifth Celestial Layer!

This made Xiao Chen's heart shivered with cold, no wonder she dares to challenge him to a "Hide and Seek" game. If he didn't make a breakthrough to Sixth Celestial Layer, it is hard to say who will win.

And right now, his opponent was not only Yan Qing Cheng, the genius Illusion Master who was hiding in the illusion seemed to have reached Exuvia Sixth Celestial Layer already! There's not much he could do about that illusory spiritual attack. Moreover, the successor of Xiao Li the Flying Dagger did not show his face yet.

Xiao Chen decided to retreat temporarily, and take care of them one by one later! After all, one of them was a Sixth Celestial Layer Illusion Master, if they really crossed their swords, it will definitely be a fight between dragon and tiger. In addition to Yan Qing Cheng, and Wharton who hasn't shown his face yet, this situation was anything but reassuring for Xiao Chen.

However, the genius Illusion Master Carlos finally began for real just at this time! Several hundred exact copy of a golden-haired youth appeared all around Xiao Chen. Without a doubt, those were all illusions, only one of them was the real Carlos among them.

Carlos' appearance could not be considered handsome, but his temperament was outstanding. This kind of people was the so-called promising young talent, one could tell from a single glance that he will inevitably become very powerful, and soar the sky sooner or later. His blue pupils were as deep as the ocean, it made people dare not to meet him head on.

The illusion made by Carlos enveloped the entire snowy summit. Sharp swords, long swords, lightning, heavenly flame, et cetera, attacks of every substances and energies were wrecking havoc on the summit. It seemed like several hundred people using all kinds of bizarre attack at the same time! The thunderous roar was ear-splitting, resplendent divine blade streak across the void, inexhaustible heavenly flame turned the sky scorching red, a wide expanse of brilliant light energy rained down like shooting stars.

Countless illusions surfaced in this ice and snow world, it was an extremely grand scene, it seemed like a big war was taking place, and not a battle between two individuals. This made everyone shake in their boots.

Such a formidable Illusion Master!

Xiao Chen was in deep trouble, he didn't dare to neglect any of these attacks on the summit, because he was unable to tell which were real and which were illusory.

Genius Illusion Master Carlos lives up to his name!

The terrifying energy surged forward like a torrential river, it was rolling over and over like the vast ocean. The summit turned into a frenzy, it was extremely mind-blowing, it was already impossible to distinguish between reality and

illusion.

Xiao Chen's disheveled hair rose to the sky, his pupils were as bright as the stars, and his lofty body remained as still as a pine on the snowy summit. However, the divine sword in his hand already changed into hundreds and thousands of overlapping images. The resplendent sword aura already formed into a concentrated light net, and blocked off all the terrifying attack. Moreover, the Sealed God light screen emerged once more, it enveloped his body and stopped the endless barrage of energy.

If he could not find Carlos' real body, then this battle will never come to a conclusion. His pair of eyes emitted a light essence, and tried to search for Carlos' real body among the thousands of concentrated light screen. At the same time, he had to confront Yan Qing Cheng who was flying with a pair of light wing.

Only... even after consuming his power unceasingly, he was still unable to find Carlos' real body. It was only because Xiao Chen's life energy was far more vigorous than ordinary people, otherwise he wouldn't be able to last this long. Endless divine radiance emitted from his body unceasingly, not only did he had to support the God of the North Star light screen, but first things first — he had to fend off layers upon layers of illusory attacks.

And finally, Xiao Chen discovered a loophole, a completely negligible loophole! With his sharp intuition, he caught winds of the indistinguishable heartbeat sound, and found the location of Carlos' real body.

Xiao Chen sent Yan Qing Cheng, who was swooping down, flying with a single sword blow, his entire person transformed into a streak of light beam and dashed forward. His target was Carlos' real body. Dozens of interweaving lightning charged towards Xiao Chen, even more raging inferno plunged towards him from all directions. He wanted to stop Xiao Chen from advancing, several

waves of terrifying sword rain down one after another.

All of these spiritual attacks were real, none of them were illusions. Xiao Chen laughed grimly, he was even more certain that was Carlos' real body. Xiao Chen swept the divine sword in an arc, dozens of light screen and the inexhaustible raging inferno were destroyed. His lofty figure was like a God of Death as he broke through the obstacle.

However, just at this moment, Xiao Chen felt the hair on his entire body was standing on end. An ominous premonition arose in his mind, he felt great dangers enveloping himself!

Even though he destroyed the rain of swords in front of him, one of them was especially bright. It was like a comet which had streaked across the vast sky from long distance. The brilliance caused him unable to open his two eyes, the long sword in his hand was shattered by that glaring light!

It was Xiao Li's Flying Dagger!

The legendary certain kill throwing knife!

Chapter 81 – Absolutely Brilliant Surprise

Wharton finally made his move!

Just at this time, the duration of the Sealed God light screen was over. This was a flawless trap.

All of them was for this single blade attack!

An almost transparent jade-like knife seemed to have pierced through the space and time. It was only as big as a thumb, and as long as a finger. The nip in the air gave rise to a bone-chilling fear. The prickling murderous aura actually assaulted Xiao Chen's entire body from every direction. The tiny yet resplendent blade was about to make contact with his chest, unless he was a god, it was already impossible to avoid it!

Death was only a few inch apart from Xiao Chen, although he felt unwilling, he already didn't have the strength to reverse the situation. He was unable to change the end result at this moment, he could only wait for his impending death.

A sharp ringing sound echoed at the top of the summit, Xiao Chen was sent flying by an incredible amount of power. The sparkling clear throwing knife actually dropped towards the ground, it didn't penetrates him. However, the powerful impact sent Xiao Chen flying for six to seven meter.

In that instant, everyone present held their breath, the two snowy peaks were dominated by absolute silence.

The legendary Xiao Li's Flying Dagger that never missed the target actually fell onto the ground after making contact with the enemy. It didn't penetrate the enemy's body, this was simply inconceivable!

Xiao Chen stood straight, his lofty body was bursting with searing divine flame. He actually came out unscathed. His furious desire to battle was aroused. Xiao Chen coldly fixed his attention on Wharton in between the gap of the illusion. His pair of eyes were burning with undisguised fury. This carefully prepared attack nearly took his life.

He gently caressed the hole on his cloth, he could touch a few fragments as smooth as jade. That was the colored egg shells left behind by Keke after it was born. He never thought in the juncture of life and death, it actually blocked the legendary Xiao Li's Flying Dagger.

When he gathered these multicolored egg-shell at the time, it wasn't because he thought it was gorgeous. Xiao Chen wanted to keep this for Keke was because of two reasons. One, this was the only thing that was left behind by Keke's parent. Two, Xiao Chen wanted to let someone with extensive knowledge see it in the future, perhaps they would be able to figure out Keke's origin.

Never in his wildest dream had Xiao Chen ever thought the multicolored jade shell would be so hard. It actually blocked the unstoppable Xiao Li's Flying Dagger. God knows how did Keke break out from these shells back then. This shell was comparably harder than adamantium by who knows how many fold!

Only now did people woke up from their daze, they started to make a clamor at the snowy peak on the opposite side. All of these was just too unbelievable.

Divine flame was throbbing outside of Xiao Chen's body, the murderous aura

soared to the sky. He closed in one step at a time, the snowy peak under his foot trembled with each steps he took. One after another huge cracks spread to all directions under his foot. The edge of the snowy peak produced a few cracking noises, countless icicles fell from the peak.

Although there were several hundred illusions, Xiao Chen had firmly locked onto Wharton and Carlos. One searing blade aura that seemed to have linked up with the heaven and earth slashed forward, sweeping away all the illusions ahead, even all the real spiritual attacks were intercepted.

Meanwhile, the three experts finally launched the real combined assault, in hope of eliminating Xiao Chen.

Yan Qing Cheng swooped down from the sky with glaring purple light, her target was undoubtedly Xiao Chen. The genius Illusion Master Carlos moved simultaneously with several hundreds illusion, one after another phantom besieged Xiao Chen. And the present day Flying Dagger's successor, Wharton, executed the second resplendent blade attack. A speck of starlight illuminated the summit, it became the most dazzling point in the heaven and earth.

The more dangerous the situation was, the calmer Xiao Chen become. All of his actions were simple and direct, it's time to get serious! With his right hand serving as a blade, he jumped up at once. A light beam soared towards the sky, and directly sent Yan Qing Cheng flying away. Then the North Star light screen trembled violently, it separated from his body, and swept across all directions. It destroyed the rain of light made out of spiritual energy, and then heavily hacked on that dazzling speck of sword radiance.

“Clang!”

The legendary flying dagger was hit!

Within the dazzling multicolored radiance, the tip of the crystal clear knife sunk into the icy ground. After that, the North Star light screen also disintegrated, and faded away.

If Xiao Chen only survived due to mere luck last time, then this time he relied on his sharp intuition. He actually stopped the legendary flying dagger in midair!

The people on the other snowy peak couldn't help but cry out in surprise.

The godly flying dagger skill had been passed down for many generations, the power will not be the same if used by different people. However, it was hard to say..... whether Xiao Chen could block the third or fourth attack.

After the fierce confrontation, the entire area entered a period of silence for a moment. The following battle will inevitably be a confrontation between dragon and tiger, this will be a life and death showdown between experts of Sixth Celestial Layer!

Xiao Chen's situation doesn't seem very hopeful, unless he find an opportunity to retreat, or else he will have to pay a huge price in this battle. However, sensing the murderous aura coming from him, nobody knows if he will fight or retreat.

"Roar.....!" Just at this time, a loud roar could be heard from the back of the summit. As if the heaven and earth were shaking, the entire snowy mountain shook violently. A huge monster climbed up from the rear of the snowy mountain, it was as long as fifty meter, it looked as if it was carved out of glacial

ice. Its entire body was as white as jade, yet it seemed very terrifying. It had a dragon head with one horn, a dark-blue wolf-like body, a huge crocodile-like tail, and it was covered with white scales that glittered like frost and snow from head to toe.

This was a Snow Jade Dragon! Most of the people recognized this legendary dragon. It lived in ice-cold area, and was fond of sleeping, it spent most of its time of the year sleeping. Legend says that even deities wouldn't dare to disturb its sleep, otherwise it will freeze over a thousand miles of land in its rage. Everything in its path will be ripped apart, even deities would be considered lucky if they were able to escape.

The battle at the summit disturbed the dragon who were fast asleep in the icy cave below, it seemed incomparably furious now.

“Roar.....!”

The Snow Jade Dragon's roar was ear-splitting, a ten meter long huge claw that was flickering with cold and threatening rays of light slammed onto the ground viciously. Carlos, Wharton, Yan Qing Cheng, and Xiao Chen all dodged at lightning speed.

“Rumble.....!”

Along with the earth-shattering sound, the apex of the snowy peak was actually destroyed by that terrifying dragon claw in one fell swoop. This was seriously too shocking!

Roar.....!”

The Snow Jade Dragon faced upwards and let out a roar, it almost caused people's eardrum to rupture. Many people blocked their ears in pain, if they were one step slower, they might have fainted and died on the spot.

“Bang!”

It launched another fierce attack, the sharp gigantic claw viciously swoop down, the snowy summit was unable to bear it, another section of the mountain was destroyed. At the same time, endless amount of ice and snow in the entire area was roused up, it seemed as if a torrent of ice tsunami had been welled up in the vicinity of the snowy summit. This was way too terrifying, when this huge monster flaunted its strength, it was practically unstoppable.

Everyone at the other snowy peak immediately began to flee, they were extremely noisy. All of them wanted to leave this place as soon as possible. The genius Illusion Master Carlos, the Flying Dagger's Successor Carlos, the exceptionally beautiful Yan Qing Cheng, and Xiao Chen didn't have the leisure to care about their life and death battle, they were just right beside the Snow Jade Dragon, they were exposed to the most danger. Each and every one of them raised their speed to the limit, and wanted to get far away from the exceptionally reckless dragon.

Carlos soared into the sky, Wharton directly jumped down the snowy peak, Yan Qing Cheng also soared into the sky, but the light wing at her back doesn't allow her to take flight for a long time, she was swept by the torrent of ice tsunami stirred up by the Jade Dragon, and fell directly towards the direction of Xiao Chen.

Yan Qing Cheng's finger was like a blade, one resplendent purple light was

launched downwards in hope of penetrating Xiao Chen's back. Those who had reached Xiao Chen's level would be able to sense the dangers in their surrounding even in the middle of a chaotic situation. He reacted in almost an instant.

His body was like a flickering light and passing shadows, he left behind an afterimage in his original position, and avoided that approaching attack. After that, without giving Yan Qing Cheng the chance to balance her body, Xiao Chen coldly executed his most powerful attack, this was definitely a killing move with nothing held back!

The glaring light made people unable to look at it directly, seven dazzling energy waves rolled up thousand piles of snow, it was like the raging waves beating against the shore. One layer after another rushed towards Yan Qing Cheng, this was the power of Exuvia Sixth Celestial Layer, Yan Qing Cheng did not have the capability to dodge, and was sent flying by the searing energy wave. She coughed out blood from her mouth unceasingly, her beautiful face was extremely pale.

Without taking any pity on her, Xiao Chen jumped down from the snowy peak, and disappeared on the scene. So what if she was the number one beauty under the heaven? Xiao Chen will not be lenient just because of this, an enemy will always be an enemy, he will not be swayed by any reason!

The Snow Jade Dragon's roar shook the heavens, and caused the snowy summit to chip. The inexhaustible ice tsunami was like tens of thousands of horses stampeding down the mountain. The vast expanse of snow slide buried Yan Qing Cheng at the base of the mountain.

The snow-white dragon let out a roar as it dashed towards the snowy peak in front. It chased after those practitioners that were escaping, this was a huge

change of event, no one would have imagined there was such a terrifying dragon here.

The roar caused an avalanche to break out on the other snowy peak, it happened in an instant. But luckily those practitioners responded fast enough, and had already escaped from that area. Only seven to eight people were not so lucky and were buried alive.

Xiao Chen didn't follow the masses, he selected a flat area, transformed into a light beam and buried himself deep in the snow. Rather than running away, it was better off to just hide quietly.

On the outside, the dragon roar pierced the skies, and the rumble of the avalanche resounded non-stop.....

Only until the panicky yell gradually got further away did the dragon roar slowly calm down, and completely faded away soon after. The world slowly regained its former tranquility, the Snow Jade Dragon seemed to have returned to the icy cave.

Xiao Chen only came out from the deep snow after an hour later, and silently looked at the snowy peak that was rended by the Snow Jade Dragon. One could imagine just how furious was the Snow Jade Dragon just now, the dragons were truly a race that could cause even the deities to shrink back. Even after losing their magic power, their powerful physical body was still unparalleled.

The path of cultivation is endless, he still have a very long path to walk, just when will he attain enough strength to fight with this kind of race?

Chapter 82 – Snowy Mountain's Ice Coffin

Most of the practitioners escaped to the exuberant mountain woods, but their mood was not the same as before. If not because they were one mountain away from the Snow Jade Dragon, and had some leisure period to flee, then it wouldn't be only as much as twenty people buried under the sea of snow.

Xiao Chen was searching this snowy region for a good while, but he didn't find anything particularly special. After that, he set out for the depths of the snowy mountain to look for Keke and the three skeletons.

Two hours later, Xiao Chen found their tracks.

After he climbed up a snowy summit, Xiao Chen was dumbstruck. Other than the three skeletons who were meditating in the icy cave, he found there was a snow lotus about the size of a house, and Keke was currently sleeping soundly on top of it!

The entire snow lotus was emitting a glorious light, the ripple-like radiance circulated slowly, words can't even begin to describe how magical it was. It made the spiritual influence around here very dense, multicolored radiance lingered around the snow lotus that seemed to be carved out of divine jade. It was so dazzling under the radiance of the sun.

And that Keke was just sleeping at the heart of the snow lotus, people couldn't help but admit that this little critter was really miraculous. Every time it was able to find this kind of spiritual item, this was definitely not a stroke of luck, it must have something to do with its spiritual nature.

This little critter was really too carefree, it wasn't even worried if a wild beast will swallow it whole, it was sleeping too soundly. God knows how does this little critter survive on this dragon island with so many monsters roaming around. Xiao Chen walked over there with light steps, and touched it with his hand. Something amazing happened as a result, a ball of gentle radiance was actually overflowing on the surface of Keke's body, and protected it within. "Squeak....." The snow-white little critter was actually talking in its sleep, it flipped around after getting touched by Xiao Chen, and then it started to snore again, it didn't even wake up at all.

This..... Seriously made Xiao Chen speechless.

Xiao Chen didn't try to disturb it again. He sat on top of the snowy peak and began to adjust his breathing. Although he was cold-hearted to his enemy, Xiao Chen was very caring in regards to the people around him. He favored this little critter very much, this time it was thanks to Keke's colorful jade shell, otherwise he might have died in the hand of that flying dagger.

Lunhui Wang and the other two discovered that Xiao Chen had returned. The spiritual light in their eye sockets were flickering, then it died out again as they continued to meditate.

Xiao Chen stayed like this until the latter half of the night, only then did he starts to feel refreshed. He had thoroughly recovered to the peak stage, thanks to him absorbing the essence of a few dragon eggs before, his life energy is now far more vigorous than ordinary people, otherwise his vital energy would have suffered greatly after the intense battle this time.

The rich and powerful life essence make Xiao Chen feel like he has two lives. If he was to run into an enemy close to his level, he could definitely fight until both sides suffered. He had abundant of life energy anyway, he could definitely make

his opponent spent!

The starlight flickered, the dim light of night resembled water

Only until the latter half of the night did Keke get up lazily. After seeing Xiao Chen, it half consciously blinked its big eyes a few times. After that it suddenly recalled something, and painfully pointed its tiny paw at its round and bulging little belly. After that, it resentfully pointed at Xiao Chen, seemingly trying to accuse him wordlessly. Xiao Chen was tempted to smile all of a sudden, he was positive that this little critter must have wanted to eat this snow lotus, it was keeping watch on this spiritual item, yet it wasn't able to eat it. It must have been really bored.

"I guess I need not call you a little monster anymore, I can totally call you a treasure hunting beast. Only you would be able to find this kind of snow lotus, you really are the bane of spiritual item."

Keke seemed somewhat dissatisfied, it furiously waved its little paw at Xiao Chen. After that, it turned around and opened up a few crystal clear lotus petals found at the heart of the lotus, it scooped out a fist-sized jade-like object from within. The divine splendor was really dazzling, it was like a speck of star, this was the genuine snow lotus heart, it made Xiao Chen feel emotionally moved.

Keke was drooling continuously, it wanted to eat yet it doesn't dare to eat.

"Haha.....!" Xiao Chen couldn't stop himself from laughing out loud, and then he said, "Let me keep them for you first, you can enjoy it after your little belly shrunk."

Keke looked at Xiao Chen doubtfully. In the end, it hanged its head dejectedly and nodded its head. It break off the lotus heart into two halves, one half is for Xiao Chen to keep it on its behalf, the other half was given directly to Xiao Chen as a present. At the same time, it was waving its little paw to warn Xiao Chen not to take advantage of the situation.

Xiao Chen was unable to restrain a smile, and said, “You little monster, so you still have some conscience and didn’t forget about me. Rest assured, I will keep them for you, I also don’t need the other half.”

After going to Keke’s old home, Xiao Chen felt the relationship between them had strengthened, he should be able to keep it by his side soon.

“Keke, I will tell you now how to shrink your plump little belly.”

Keke’s big eyes lit up instantly.

“To accomplish that, we need your treasured tree. Last time you saw how I merged with the treasured tree right? From today onward, you need to try and assimilate the divine sproutling into your little belly, and allow it to absorb the excess Sweet Dew of Life. Otherwise who knows how long it will take for you to completely digest those Sweet Dew.”

Keke’s pair of glittering big eyes were perfectly round, then it covered its plump little belly with both hands and shook its head vigorously. That means it will not do it even if you beat it to death. “Squeak! Squeak.....!” It seemed to be saying it will definitely not plant the tree on its belly.

“It’s also fine if you’re not willing to do it. All the Sweet Dew of Life will be

absorbed by yourself, it will be very beneficial. However, from now on until a certain period in the future, you must resist your desire to eat delicious food.”

Keke immediately became listless, it furiously climbed up the snow lotus, and continued to sleep.

“Keke, don’t just sleep all day, it’s about time to supplement your treasured tree, let your treasured tree take root on the snow lotus.”

Xiao Chen carried Keke into the icy cave, and planted the treasured tree on the snow lotus. An intense light lingered on the snowy peak under the dim light of night. On the palm-sized divine sproutling’s dragonet-like “tree trunk”, the inky jade leaf, the milky jade leaf, and also the jasper leaf immediately glowed with dazzling luster.

Early morning, Xiao Chen and the gang left this place, because when they surveyed the scene from an elevated position, they found a run-down ancient palace on a distant snowy peak.

When they arrived at this place, they found that it really wasn’t an illusion. There was really a remnant here, the run-down palace hall almost collapsed, only two of the originally grandeur halls remain standing to this day, but they could collapse at any given time. They didn’t find anything special here, it seemed to be nothing more than the remnant of an ancient palace, it wasn’t as bizarre and terrifying as those palace on the sacred mountain.

“Let’s use this ancient palace hall as a mark, and temporarily bury the dragon eggs here. It will also be easier to look for it later.” Xiao Chen wanted to stop absorbing the dragon egg’s essence. When he welcomed the morning sun yesterday, he had a flash of enlightenment, it gave him an all new understanding

regarding the path of training. He wanted to begin his journey anew. It's not like the dragon egg will run away anyway, he can come back to take it any time. Meanwhile, he was kind of expectant in his heart, perhaps he could really nurture one or two young Dragon King.

Xiao Chen absolutely never thought, after digging the ice and snow, they would actually find an ice coffin!

This is a big discovery! Could this be where an ancient deity was buried? When he thought of this, he fastened his pace and thawed the frozen earth in the surroundings, allowing the ice coffin to surface.

Under the glory of the sunlight, they could see what was within the transparent ice coffin clearly, it had a full body of wrinkled skin. One glance and people could tell it was the remains of an exceptionally old man.

This is seriously too bizarre!

There was only a layer of wrinkled skin, not even a body remains! This sent a chill down Xiao Chen's spine. However, he could not be frightened by just this much. He lightly pushed the cover of the ice coffin, and exposed the human skin inside. He picked it up and discovered there was a breach from the head until the abdomen. Other than that, the rest are in good condition. There was no damage at all, even the almost nonexistent white hair, and the grizzled eyelashes were kept in good condition.

Who knows why, Xiao Chen suddenly felt this place was really eerie. Even though the morning sun shone upon this area, it seemed to have lost its warm, the sunlight seemed deathly pale. Instinctively, he suddenly thought of the cicada shell. This layer of wrinkled skin somehow resembled the insects shedding

their shell, it seemed to share the same characteristic.

Xiao Chen didn't stop here, he once again dig up the frozen ground in the vicinity. Beyond his expectation, he really did found another ice coffin. It was only two meter apart from the first coffin. Xiao Chen sucked in a mouthful of fresh air, could this place really be a bizarre burial ground? If that is the case, then wouldn't that make this run-down palace an underworld?!

The second ice coffin was unearthed, inside the coffin was another incomparably wrinkled skin. This time it made Xiao Chen break out in cold sweat, that was because he discovered the two wrinkled skins looked almost the same. As a result of putting them side by side, he discovered they actually had the same appearance!

Same appearance! Moreover, after a careful comparison, Xiao Chen felt his scalp go numb. That was because he discovered there was no discrepancy with any of the birthmarks on both of the wrinkled skins, all of them looked exactly the same.

“How could this be, even if they are twins, there shouldn't be this much resemblance.....”

Xiao Chen felt this place was getting increasingly bizarre. This was a burial ground that sent a chill down people's spine! He could not stop because of this, he continued to excavate the frozen ground. As a result, the third ice coffin was unearthed. He sucked in a mouthful of breath, he didn't go see the third ice coffin, but rather continue to thaw the icy floor, and excavate the frozen earth.

However, after digging up the ground in the vicinity of the ancient palace hall, he didn't find the fourth ice coffin. And these three ice coffins were only two

meter apart, they were arranged very neatly. Judging from this, it seemed like there were only three ice coffins here.

Xiao Chen lift open the cover of the ice coffin, he was completely astonished. The wrinkled skin in the coffin was exactly the same as the former two. Those three birthmarks were also accurate to perfection.

How did it become like this? Xiao Chen felt this place was extremely eerie, why would there be three exact same copy of human skin here, and not a dead body to be found? Could it be that something had consumed the thing that was inside?

He started to look around after calming down, then his expression suddenly lit up, that was because he found an important clue! On the third coffin, he found a few drops of blood, it seemed to have dried up just recently!

Chapter 83 – Encounter

There were also some blackish bloodstain in the other two wrinkled skins, one glance and people could tell they should have a few centuries of history. They had eroded due to the vicissitudes of time, but of course, even Xiao Chen was unable to pinpoint the exact age of these skins.

As for the human skin in the third ice coffin, the bloodstain in the ice coffin still carry a hint of color, it was easy for an expert on the level of Xiao Chen to speculate. It definitely haven't been more than half a month when this skin was shed!

This immediately made Xiao Chen felt a nip in the air, the hair on his entire body was standing on end. He carefully observed the interior of this human skin, and sure enough, he discovered the bloodstain also carried a hint of color, this only happened moments ago.

He carefully examined, and found that the third skin was relatively softer than the others. Moreover, it was full of shiny grease. It seemed like the skin was shed not too long ago.

Suddenly, Xiao Chen finally found the most important clue, there were some cracks on the middle finger of the third skin. Apart from some bloodstain, there was also a piece of new tender skin about the size of fingernail.

This was seriously too bizarre and terrifying! Xiao Chen's random guess before actually came true! He couldn't help but picture a cicada breaking out of the shell. If he was to guess, it seemed like an old ghost had constantly undergo a few cycles of metamorphosis here!

Xiao Chen subconsciously scanned all four directions, he couldn't find a single trace of human on the chilly snow mountain, but he could feel an extremely cold gaze observing him in the dark.

Imagination, it must be his imagination. Xiao Chen allowed himself to calm down, and then he spread his spiritual power to probe the surrounding. The entire snowy mountain was very quiet, not a single sound could be heard, there was only the chilling cold aura circulating around the big snowy mountain.

Xiao Chen felt this place was not any benevolent land, he buried the three ice coffins back to their original place, and erased all the traces. After that, he ordered Keke who was rolling around near the run-down palace hall and the three skeletons to get away from here as soon as possible.

After training at this big snowy mountain for five days, Xiao Chen didn't find any other bizarre situation. He buried the dragon eggs on top of a snowy hill before he decided to leave this place. For a snowy mountain to appear on a hot and humid dragon island was already an abnormality in itself. And he found something bizarre at this place again, he felt that this place might not be much safer compared to the mountain woods with monsters running amuck.

Pushing their way through the ice and snow world, on their way towards the exit of the snowy mountain, Xiao Chen suddenly heard a faintly discernible "rumbling" sound from a distant snowy peak. It seemed like an avalanche had occurred. Following that, he saw a streak of purple radiance soaring into the sky.

Although they were a distance apart, Xiao Chen could still recognize that figure in a glance, that seemed to be..... Yan Qing Cheng!

That snowy mountain was precisely the place where they fought five days ago. That day, it was unclear whether Yan Qing Cheng was alive or dead after receiving Xiao Chen's attack. She was then buried under big avalanche stirred up by the Snow Jade Dragon, he originally thought she would be long dead after being buried under thousand layers of snow slide. But he never thought after five days, she would actually emerge from the deep snow.

Even though she was very far away, the purple light wings on Yan Qing Cheng's back was very dazzling. It no longer looked almost transparent as it was before. Now, it practically looked like a pair of purple wings carved by divine jade. Words can't even begin to describe how mystical it was.

Not only did she not die, she had clearly made a breakthrough. This made Xiao Chen feel deeply shocked, he recalled the Martial Art practiced by Yan Qing Cheng — the Undying Demon Technique. The legend was really true, those who practiced this technique would inevitably make a huge breakthrough if they could cheat death.

Yan Qing Cheng actually made a breakthrough from the brink of death. After playing dead for five days under the deep snow, she finally made a comeback! This made Xiao Chen trembled with fear, the Undying Technique was really worthy of its name as one of the most glorious and world-shattering Martial Arts.

Yan Qing Cheng who just broke through to Sixth Celestial Layer will definitely be a formidable opponent. But Xiao Chen does not fear anyone on the same level as him, that was because he had once defeated a Void Master who was reputed to be the "King" among practitioners of the same level.

Xiao Chen was as fast as the flickering light and passing shadows, he left behind one after another afterimages at the snowy peak, and chased after Yan

Qing Cheng, he wanted to keep her here. But after Yan Qing Cheng emerged from the deep snow, she unfolded her fairy-like divine wing, and directly flew towards the exit of this snowy mountain as fast as lightning. She didn't stay in this area for long, nor did she notice Xiao Chen who was approaching.

After he finally left the snowy mountain, Xiao Chen looked back at the vast expanse of ice and snow world. Feeling the warm breeze in front of him, Xiao Chen felt this was very unreal. There was almost no buffer zone between the cold and hot territory, the exuberant mountain woods and the pure white snow were so close to one another, it was completely outrageous.

Xiao Chen and the gang entered the zone full of vitality. The melodious birdsong, the refreshing fragrance of flowers, as well as the roar of the beasts. When compared to the deathly still forest behind him, as well as that snowy mountain much further away, this place was very lively.

They were still twenty miles away from the habitat of numerous practitioners. A beautiful mountain enshrouded by mist appeared in front of them. It seemed like monsters rarely roamed around that place. Words can't begin to describe how auspicious and peaceful it seems. They could already see it from a distance, the waterfall tumbled down the mountain, and the rays of light refracted by the mist formed a rainbow in the air.

Xiao Chen arrived at the foot of the mountain. He found this was indeed a good place. The exotic flowers were in full bloom, the jade-like grasses spread over the entire area, the vines folded over in many layers, the beautiful trees were flourishing. This was an ideal place to train. And he ran into an acquaintance at this place.

Between the flowers and trees, there was a sapphire-like tranquil little lake. There was no ripples on the surface of the lake at all, words can't even begin to

describe how extraordinary beautiful and how serene it was. Void Master Lawrence still looked as sickly as before, his handsome face was somewhat pale. He was just sitting at the side of the lake and fishing calmly.

When Xiao Chen entered this area, he immediately felt the abnormality in the space. It seemed as if a shapeless liquid was circulating, it gave him some difficulty in walking. The space was actually folding up layer upon layer, the scenery before his eyes was interweaving.

It seemed like this place had multiple traps, it was like falling into the swamp, the more you struggle, the harder to break out. Like a sharp sword bursting with divine radiance, Xiao Chen used his full power to rip apart layer upon layer of binding ropes. He destroyed all the traps in this area, and returned to the originally tranquil and beautiful field.

At the lakeside, Lawrence turned his head around, and said, "It seems like the rumor regarding how you massacred dozens of people at the snowy mountain from a few days ago was true, I can feel the bloody aura on you even now."

Xiao Chen laughed, and calmly sat not far away from Lawrence, then he said, "It was all for self-defense, I want to keep on living. But some people just keep forcing my hands, I also had no choice but to kill."

"You made a breakthrough to Exuvia Sixth Celestial Layer?" Lawrence's pale face gradually regained some colors, then he said, "How about one more match?" His gaze was somewhat intense, it seemed like he was really looking forward to this match.

"You also made it to Sixth Celestial Layer?" After knowing this, Xiao Chen was a little amazed. But then he shook his head, and said, "Void Master was reputed to

be the King among practitioners of the same level. I really wanted to break this legend one more time, but I cannot duel with you now.”

“Why?”

“Some people always wanted to force me to death’s door, before I can remove all the dangers, I must stay in top condition at all time. You and I already delved into Sixth Celestial Layer, if we really fight for real, it won’t end up as simple as the last time even if I defeat you.”

The somewhat sickly Lawrence laughed, and said, “You are truly conceited, you are that sure you can beat me? Void Masters are kings among practitioners of the same level, those are not empty words!”

Xiao Chen used his hand and lightly poked the surface of the lake, the small lake immediately surged up violently. The water surface seemed like boiling water. More than thousands of fishes jolted out from the water surface. He said with much confidence, “Since I could break the legend last time, I can still do it this time.”

Suddenly, all the fishes that leapt over the water surface were stopped in the air, completely motionless. All of them were confined by Lawrence’s void power. He turned around to face Xiao Chen, and said, “You are indeed very strong, but I am also very confident. I really wanted to fight with you one more time. However, since you are in a dangerous situation, I also won’t make things difficult for you.”

Just at this time, Keke who was not far away was attracted by those fishes hanging in the air. It seemed to think it was very fascinating. When it saw the thousand plus fishes were set free by Lawrence, it extended one snow-white

little paw, and waved it in the air randomly. For a moment, the fishes leapt out of the water surface one more time, beginning to fill the sky. Only after three to four seconds later did they fall back into the water with a “plop”.

This made Lawrence incomparably astonished, for the first time ever, he started to size up the snow-white little critter who was following Xiao Chen, and asked, “This is.....”

Xiao Chen spread out his hands and laughed, “I also don’t understand much about it, it doesn’t seem to have any attack power, but it has sufficient self-defense.”

Keke was very dissatisfied by this evaluation, it waved its little paws furiously, and then it skipped towards the three skeletons joyfully.

“How did you breakthrough the Sixth Celestial Layer? For your information, I spent a lot of effort in order to breakthrough this time.” Lawrence asked.

Xiao Chen didn’t conceal anything, he told Lawrence about the insight he gained while welcoming the morning sun, and explained the feeling he had at that time.

Lawrence pondered for a moment, then he heaved a sigh, and said, “It seems like we went through the same thing. That very day I lost to you, I trained even harder in front of the divine monolith, but I was almost possessed by the Devil. After I retreated to this quiet place to train, allowing myself to find inner peace, but I never thought I’d make a breakthrough right at that moment.”

He also explained what he had learned in details. Even though they practiced

different techniques, this kind of spiritual realization was completely the same. Both of them felt this information exchange was very beneficial.

From the current states of the dragon island, to the classification of the Psychic and Spell Master, the two talked about many things.

“The exotic ability of us Psychic is inherent, there are many kinds of exotic abilities. The Spell Master merely had powerful spiritual power, they do not possess any psychic ability by themselves. However, by chanting an ancient incantation, they can somehow display similar power. I never believed their spells were actually granted to them by the deities, but we really could not find any energy flow within their body. All the energy were gathered from the outside the moment they attacked. All of these signs indicate that their source might really come from the esteemed god they worship.”

Finally, the two once again talked about the current situation on the dragon island, they had a fuzzy desire to act together.

Chapter 84 – Beauty

“Xiao Chen, you’re not thinking of a mass slaughter are you?”

Xiao Chen smiled faintly, and said, “I don’t like to be passive, why should I wait for them to come and kill me? I will take the initiative to wipe them all out.”

It seemed like Lawrence’s body was really not that healthy, when he was in a fit of coughing, his slightly pale complexion turned red. Only until a long time later did it calm down, then he said, “You are seriously a dangerous person!”

“I have no other choice, they were the one who forced me into this situation. I only wanted to survive. Rather than passively waiting for dangers to approach, I’d rather take the initiative to attack!”

Lawrence gradually started to understand Xiao Chen’s personality. He was a very decisive person, he would never hesitate or be swayed for any reason.

“Do you need my help?”

“You..... want to help me?” This made Xiao Chen very surprised, his enemies right now were not some easy target. To offer his help in this kind of situation, it was equivalent to putting his life on the line.

“Let’s look out for each other. Maybe not long later I will need you to save my life.”

Even though Lawrence looked somewhat sickly, his real potential was

extremely terrifying. He was even reputed as the king among practitioners of the same level, who could possibly threaten his life? Xiao Chen looked at him in puzzlement, and asked, “Could it be that on this dragon island, you also have some nemesis?”

“I don’t know. I just had a feeling. A pair of cold and gloomy eyes seemed to be locking on to me. It was not a good feeling, I was unable to pinpoint his exact location.” Lawrence was speaking very slowly, it seemed like this matter was shrouded in mystery.

“Very well, let’s look out for each other then.”

Lawrence didn’t explain in detail, Xiao Chen also didn’t try to dig too deeply. When both of them had already decided to help each other out, Lawrence laughed, but was somewhat callous when he said, “I haven’t killed anyone for quite a while, how about I help you get rid of all your misfortune tonight?”

Xiao Chen also laughed out loud, he could finally see what kind of person Lawrence was. He was not just all talk, this somewhat sickly, but extremely handsome Void Master was those passive type. However, he could be incomparably cold-hearted once he make a move.

They did not start the operation hastily, while maintaining their own condition in the past few days, they also paid close attention to the situation on the island.

The third day. Lawrence returned after understanding the situation and said, “I saw the Solitary Sword Demon!” Lawrence was clearly very thrilled to see this person.

“The Solitary Sword Demon?” Xiao Chen’s heart was stirred, he paid a visit to Buddhist Yizhen two days ago, and asked about the terrifying experts on the island. Buddhist Yizhen mentioned the Solitary Sword Demon was certainly one of them. He practiced the most powerful swordplay under the heaven.

According to rumor, the Solitary Sword Demon’s bloodline was out of ordinary. He was the descendant of the illusory Dugu Qiubai. This clan only had a single descendant in every era. He named himself the Sword Demon as an encouragement to surpass his ancestor. He learned swordplay at the beach since childhood. When he was fifteen years old, he was capable of splitting nine huge waves. After twenty years old, he rarely had any adversary among his peers. He was an extremely terrifying person.

Buddhist Yizhen suspected the Sword Demon as the main driving force behind the big purge.

“Let me calculate if the time fit in!” Lawrence recalled his memory and pondered for a while, then he said, “The Solitary Sword Demon entered the heart of the dragon island a long time ago, but he only trained in front of the divine monolith for a while before he returned to practice his sword at the beach. It seems like the big purge occurred just around that time, perhaps..... your friend’s suspicion is correct.”

The both of them had already realized, if their speculation was correct, then the Solitary Sword Demon might cause a huge storm with his reappearance in the depths of the dragon island.

When Xiao Chen and Lawrence were in the middle of a discussion, an alluring and lovely woman arrived at this place. It was actually a member of the Red Powder Alliance, her beauty was only second to Rowena. Her name was Lianna, she was extremely sexy and charming.

Her beautiful face was brimming with a foxy charm. The pupils of her eyes resembled water ripples. Her beauty lured the soul in, snatching it from the body before one even noticed. Even though her lips were not smeared with lipstick, they still appeared incomparably bright and rosy. Her neck was as white as the swan's, her towering twin peaks were standing erect. Her curvy waist was not lacking in any way. Her beautiful buttocks were ample and perfectly round. Along with her leisure steps, and slight movements, words can't even describe how alluring it was. That pair of slender jade legs were fair and tender. They appeared faintly discernible under the skirt as they swayed back and forth, it was incomparably captivating.

The silky skirt was brushed by the wind, she was elegant and graceful. It clearly outlined her indistinct curvy body, making her appear even more alluring. She was practically an evil spirit, one that specifically came for your soul.

The Red Powder Alliance was really well-informed. They actually found Xiao Chen at this place. Lawrence immediately concealed himself in the first moments and retreated. The Red Powder Alliance wanted to take one step further in regards to their alliance with Xiao Chen. Lianna wished to stay beside Xiao Chen and help him. Even though Lianna was indirect, the meaning was very clear, this was practically delivering a beauty to him.

Sending this kind of enchanting vixen to his door, one can see that the Red Powder Alliance really had an eye on Xiao Chen. They obviously wanted to use a beauty to acquire his trust and favorable impression.

Lianna was sweet and charming; After indirectly stating her purpose, like a flexible willow in the wind, she got beside Xiao Chen gracefully. Her smile was extremely flirtatious, her sexy red lips were flickering with an enticing luster, she lightly blew into Xiao Chen's ear. Then she sat beside him naturally.

“How would you be able to help me?” Xiao Chen sat at the lakeside calmly. He didn’t move an inch.

“Although I cannot help you kill the enemy with my current ability.....” Clearly, Lianna didn’t want to put herself in a dangerous situation. She smiled impishly, and said with a titter, “However, I can make you loosen up to the greatest extend possible.....”

This kind of words could even be said to be extremely ambiguous. She got behind Xiao Chen as she said these, then she stretched out her jade-like fingers and started to knead his back. Then she exposed a lovely smile and said, “Don’t misunderstand oh. I was saying to help you relax by massaging like this, to allow your tense muscles to loosen up.....” This was clearly a trap, the more she told others not to misunderstand, the more ambiguous her movements and speech became. She lightly expelled a breath beside Xiao Chen’s ear, and the movements on Xiao Chen’s back became even bolder.

Xiao Chen seemed to be enjoying this kind of massage very much. He comfortably stretched his body, and said very seriously, “It was pretty good.”

Lianna cast a flirtatious glance at Xiao Chen, and sat beside him. Her soft body was practically leaning against Xiao Chen’s body. Then she said, “I expended a great deal of effort, yet you are only using a few words of praise?”

“Then how do you want me to reward you?” The corners of Xiao Chen’s mouth lifted up as he looked into her eyes.

“I haven’t thought about it yet. But at the very least, you must help me get stronger. The situation on the dragon island is very complicated now, everyone’s

life is on the line. Confidence only come with strength.”

“The development of one’s ability, how could other people help with that, you can only rely on your own bitter training.”

Lianna leaned against Xiao Chen, her delicate body was almost entirely reclined on Xiao Chen’s body. Waves of body fragrance transmitted over here, she said in a soft voice, “I know you definitely have a special training method. Otherwise how could you keep making a breakthrough, I know it is impossible for you to teach me all your secret techniques, but a few tricks is still fine right?”

Xiao Chen immediately understood. The Red Powder Alliance not only had an eye for his strength. They were also interested in his training method.

Lianna’s tender waist was like a snake’s, her arms were as gentle as the willow, she made Xiao Chen’s right hand wrap around her slender waist, both her arms were hanging on to Xiao Chen’s neck. She was extremely gentle and lovely. It was as if her cheeks had been dyed red by the sun. Her tender and rosy skin were so soft that it felt like a drop of water.

Waves of female specific fragrance directly transfused into Xiao Chen’s nose. And Lianna even twisted her body, grazing the tip of her hair on Xiao Chen’s cheeks unceasingly. Her sexy and alluring body stuck onto Xiao Chen like a glue, she was as hot as fire, and as soft as water. This kind of ambiguous provocation seriously caught people’s heartstrings.

Just at this time, Xiao Chen lightly pushed her away, he stood up and said with a smile, “It is already time for lunch, please go roast some wild animals for Keke and me first. Oh, while you’re at it, also roast some lake fishes. One more thing, Keke is fond of eating fruits after meal, please also prepare some.”

Lianna was dumbstruck, could this man be a blockhead? If he remains unmoved, then so be it. But he actually made this kind of enchanting woman go gather firewood and cook outdoor?

“Xiao Chen, you..... When will you teach me some secret technique?”

“My technique is a little hard to learn. It is not fit for a girl to practice.”

“How hard could it be? You are definitely making fun of me.”

“It’s true. In regards to a girl. In order to learn this divine technique, one has to first castrate himself.” 6 Xiao Chen lifted Keke who was sleeping soundly on the ground and left with large strides.

“That..... is nonsense! How can a woman castrate?!”

“Infinitely close to man.”

Lianna was fuming, she stood at the same place and was stamping her feet while grinding her teeth.

“She lost her temper that quickly?” Lawrence was watching Xiao Chen while sitting on top of an ancient tree.

Xiao Chen laughed innocently, he half joked without the slightest care in the world, “This woman was really a seductive evil spirit. I am an ordinary man, it was only natural if something were to happen. However, she was still too foxy in

the end. Moreover, she came with an impure goal. This kind of bait can be eaten up, but one needs to carefully take off the fishhook.”

Lawrence said, “From what I find out these past few days. Except for the extraordinary beautiful Lord Rowena, everyone else from the Red Powder Alliance had once come into contact with experts from various big alliances. Apparently, this Lianna had even followed the Solitary Sword Demon once.”

“If that is true, then I better remain at a respectful distance.”

The two were going to start their secret operation soon.

Lawrence eventually concealed himself again. Xiao Chen called Lianna over here, then he smiled and said, “May I request Lady Lianna’s help now?”

Lianna was pretending to be shy, her pair of eyes could hook one’s soul, she was incomparably foxy. She smiled flirtatiously and said, “How can I be of help?”

“Please go back to the assembly point of the practitioners and tell everyone; I will definitely destroy the Nature Alliance founded by Yaluo De within ten days.”

“You don’t believe us Red Powder Alliance?”

“No, I truly believe you.”

“This kind of news should be kept confidential. And why must you spread the words via us?”

“Some people must be intimidated with absolute strength, I want to let them know I am not someone to be taken lightly!”

“With this kind of move, I bet you want to kill the chicken to make an example of the monkeys?”

“I suppose...”

After a short discussion, Lianna left gracefully.

The news spread like wildfire, this was undoubtedly one kind of forceful declaration of war. Recently, Xiao Chen stirred up some storm. The big battle at the snowy mountain; He showed off an undeniably powerful battle aura. Even those who were reputed to be the strongest among the young practitioners couldn't help but pay close attention to him now.

The assembly point of the practitioners turned into a turmoil. Many people were looking forward to this battle. Even more were looking forward to Xiao Chen's big battle with Yan Qing Cheng, Carlos, and Wharton after this battle, because that's a battle that could not be avoided.

Needless to wait for ten days, just as the curtain of the first night draws near, Xiao Chen and Lawrence were already getting ready to move.

“Lawrence, put this near your chest and the middle of the back.” Xiao Chen gave a few pieces of Keke's colorful jade shell to Lawrence.

After Lawrence received it, he could feel the rock-hard surface of the colorful jade shell. Then he asked, “Are you afraid that I can't block Xiao Li's Flying

Dagger?”

“If we’re fighting face to face, I believe you will be able to block it. But if he attacked in the dark, it was seriously impossible to defend effectively. If it was not for the colorful jade shell last time, I might not be standing here and talking to you now.”

“Xiao Li’s Flying Dagger is really as terrifying as the legend says?”

“Although it was already not the same ‘Xiao Li’ back in those days, anyone who could exhibit the full potential of this divine technique is still very terrifying.”

Lawrence was not some arrogant guy who was unable to recognize other’s good intentions. He listened to Xiao Chen’s suggestion, and used a few colorful jade shell to protect his vital parts.

Xiao Chen woke Keke who was in a deep sleep by shaking it a few times, then he said, “Don’t run all over the place after you wake up, wait for us here.”

Keke half consciously blinked its big eyes, and intuitively nodded its head. After that, it re-entered the land of dreams.

Xiao Chen faced the three skeletons and said, “You guys don’t need to make a move tonight, but you must follow us at a good distant. Just in case we exhausted our strength, you must carry us back.”

The three skeletons nodded their head to express their understanding.

Xiao Chen and Lawrence decided to let loose and wage a war, everything had already been set up properly.

The starlight was pretty dim tonight, darkness shrouded the mountain woods. It appeared especially eerie.

Xiao Chen was like a wisp of smoke, he quickly rushed towards the practitioner's assembly point. Lawrence was capable of flight, and left behind a streak of light in the sky. The three skeletons followed them from a distant away.

Their first raiding target tonight was the Treant's Valley. Xiao Chen decided to pull up Zhao Lin Er's strength first, and then followed by the Nature Alliance established by Yaluo De and Chaos. The rumor they spread out previously was in order to create a diversion. After he get rid of these side threat, it will be the best time to challenge experts on the level of Yan Qing Cheng and Carlos.

This is going to be a bloody night.....

Two ultimate experts such as Xiao Chen and Lawrence made an appearance in the Treant's Valley Alliance. The two of them executed a thunderous massacre. The miserable shriek pierced the calm of the night. In the darkness, a piece of green-colored light screen appeared in front of Lawrence, several hundred meter square of space was enveloped by that light screen. He was in absolute control of the space! Everywhere he passed through, all the resistance will be crushed.

Once a few practitioners from the Treant's Valley were confined in this space, their life or death were already completely in control of Lawrence. The meteor shower created by the power of the void was as beautiful as the gorgeous fireworks, but they were very deadly! The few practitioners didn't have any ability to retaliate, they were all penetrated without resistance.

For this battle, Xiao Chen didn't even need to make a move, and Lawrence had already wiped the battlefield clean. Void Master really lived up to their name as the most renowned practitioners. He was reaping everyone's life like a Death God.

In the end, Xiao Chen didn't find any traces of Zhao Lin Er. They found out from a member of the Treant's Valley; It seemed like Zhao Lin Er could feel dangers approaching, so she already left by herself immediately after returning from the snowy mountain.

The miserable shriek alarmed the surrounding alliances, a huge commotion immediately broke out in this region.

Lawrence's cloth was stained by a few traces of blood, he had a really bloodthirsty smile at the moment as he said, "I presume Yan Qing Cheng and the rest should be at the Nature Alliance. God knows if they will come here after learning about the situation." This Void Master looked somewhat weak and ghastly on quiet days, but he can be really fierce and ruthless once he make a move.

Just at this time, a huge commotion suddenly break out in the dark of the night. Miserable shriek was transmitted from a distant place unceasingly. Soon after, the sound of massacre pierced through the skies. On this dark gloomy night, a huge turmoil actually took place at the practitioner's assembly point!

Xiao Chen and Lawrence looked at each other in dismay. They thought of the Solitary Sword Demon at the same time.

Right now, the big showdown between various alliances are taking place! This

was a game between the schemers, they actually chose tonight to be their day of operation! The sound of massacre shook the heaven, it was very obvious that many alliances had been drawn into the turmoil. This was a battle royal between different factions, this was a premeditated massacre, the big purge was happening again.

All those rules that restrict the alliances totally lost their effects a long time ago. After each schemers got in touch with sufficient power, they began a new round of big purge. Their goal was definitely to get rid of their respective enemy, this was a confrontation between the schemers. Some ambitious schemers might succeed, and expand their influence one step further, while others might be completely annihilated.

“Xiao Chen, this is a good opportunity.”

“I know!” Xiao Chen’s pair of eyes glinted with a chilly ray of light.

On this chaotic night, they relied on their powerful ability to clear their path to the Nature Alliance. They inevitably ran into many battles between various alliances on the way, the two of them kill as they go.

Xiao Chen seized a long sword, and the sword aura streaked across the night sky smoothly. Everyone who dared to rush towards him was now among the pool of blood. Lawrence was just as terrifying, it was as if all the Spell Master and Psychic in the sky ran into their worst adversary. Nobody was able to stop him.

They slaughtered their way to the Nature Alliance. This place had also turned into a battlefield, the Nature Alliance was actually wiped out by others a long time ago.

“The corpse of Yaluo De and Chaos cannot be found.” After Xiao Chen searched around carefully, he followed after the bloodstain.

This was indeed a chaotic night. Almost all the alliances in this area had participated in the war. This was a desperate confrontation, the bellow of rage was ear-splitting, the practitioners everywhere were fighting at the risk of their life, the weak could only be slaughtered. The glaring sword aura, the berserking spiritual attack, the terrifying spell, and the resplendent rays of light illuminated the dark night.

Chapter 85 – Throwing Yourself in Somebody's Arm

There was no trace of Chaos, the young expert from Barbarian Tribe, but Xiao Chen and the gang found Yaluo De who was on the verge of death. It doesn't seem like he has much hope to live by the time they found him.

"I never thought....." He smiled bitterly as he looked at Xiao Chen, and said, "I'd actually die on the hands of Solitary Sword Demon....." As soon as he finished speaking, Yaluo De stopped breathing.

This was a bloody night, they killed because of fear, they killed for survival, this was a very chaotic night!

Even until the daybreak next morning, the massacre was still ongoing. Apart from the games between the main forces of a few big factions, all the other alliances in this region had also been drawn into the maelstrom. Kill or be killed. Everyone was caught up in a crazy situation.

The pungent smell of blood pervaded the entire mountainous region, the blood almost dyed the entire mountain woods red. And just at the crack of dawn, something even more terrifying occurred. Hundreds of giant wasps flew out from a valley nearby, each and every one of them was as big as a goat. They were attracted by the smell of blood, and crazily launched an attack on numerous practitioners. Everyone was caught unprepared by this sudden outbreak.

As the huge wasps kept increasing in numbers, everyone was forced to run towards the deathly still forest. That was because the wasps had covered the entire sky, it was practically like a black cloud falling unto them. All those deceased on the ground were quickly devoured by the huge wasps, only white

bones were left behind.

Everyone had escaped into the deathly still forest. However, it was also strange that not a single one of those infinite wasps dared to charge into the deathly still forest. The massacre began anew, the final outcome of the battle between the few big factions was still not decided. But just at this time, something incomparably terrifying happened. As soon as the blood splashed on the ancient trees of this forest, it was as if those millennium old ancient trees had demonized, those huge branches bend down and firmly bound everyone in the vicinity. The sight of people rotting away was incomparably terrifying, the flesh and bones was slowly assimilated by the branches and tree trunks!

This was really too frightening! Nobody understood why something as terrifying as this could happen. Although the powerful experts could shake off the ancient trees at the critical moment, some who were heavily injured still ended up dead in the demonized ancient trees.

And finally, the practitioners no longer dare to let the blood splash onto the ancient trees. Everyone could feel their hair standing on end in this deathly still forest. These ancient trees seemed like evil spirits with souls. Now, everyone finally understood, why those wild beasts do not dare to approach this place. This place was really too dangerous.

The massacre was still ongoing, everyone gradually approached the deathly sea of bones. When they were almost at the exit of the deathly still forest, the battle immediately became more intense. They don't have to worry about the blood splashing everywhere anymore.

"Xiao Chen....." It was Rowena, the beauty that could turn all living things upside down. Although she was fleeing, her postures was still as lovely as before. After she called Xiao Chen's name in a gentle voice, she flew over here like a

cloud that's as light as feather. She pulled Xiao Chen, her eyes were twinkling, and she said with a flirtatious voice, "Xiao Chen, I will give myself to you as a present."

There were close to ten practitioners chasing after her, without a doubt it was a misfortune brought about by her charm.

"You want to use us as shield?!" Seeing how those ten people already rushed before their eyes, Xiao Chen couldn't help but well up with killing intent.

"No, I promise if you can help me get over this calamity, I will definitely gift myself as a present to you."

Right now, Xiao Chen also didn't have the chance to say anything else, because those ten people already got here. They didn't even give him or Rowena the chance to talk. They attacked with their full power. However, these people obviously ran into an iron wall. These two are Sixth Celestial Layer experts, they were not opponents these people could handle.

After a dazzling sword-qi flashed, Xiao Chen had killed two people with a single slice. And Lawrence was even more straightforward, he trapped everyone in the space he controlled, including Xiao Chen.

The green radiance stopped everyone's movement except for Xiao Chen, then he shouted, "Xiao Chen, do it quick. I cannot hold on much longer!"

Within this bizarre sealed space, the Spell Master, Psychic, and even the Martial Artist found it hard to budge an inch. Xiao Chen was practically chopping vegetables, after the dazzling sword-qi flashed, everyone was chopped in half at

the waist, the blood splashed about everywhere.

The green radiance had faded, all the corpse fell onto the real ground, and the soil was dyed by the color of the blood.

This was a perfect combination move, Xiao Chen praised earnestly, “Void Masters really live up to their name!”

Rowena was clearly in shock, ten experts were actually wiped out in an instant. These two men in front of her were so strong that she felt a bit apprehensive. In the end, she got closer to Xiao Chen with graceful steps, and said with a flirtatious smile, “What I said was true, I am all yours!”

This extraordinarily beautiful woman was incomparably lovely, her innate foxy charm could easily sway a man’s heart. Her breasts were standing erect, they were incomparably plump. Her thin and curvy waist was soft and flexible like the willow in the wind. Her perfectly round buttocks was ample, her pair of slender jade legs were perfectly straight and sexy. Her body moved up and down when she was catching her breath, it was extremely rousing. Even a clayman would be tempted by her breathtaking appearance.

Since her silky dress had been soaked by the sweat, it was hard to cover up the fabulous curved line of her sexy body. It was seriously full of unlimited enticement, it aroused infinite wild and fanciful thoughts.

However, Xiao Chen and Lawrence looked at her as if she was nothing. In this incomparably dangerous turmoil, their hearts were as firm as steel, they would not be swayed by anything.

Rowena saw how Xiao Chen was not affected by her charm, so she could only stop pretending to be cute. However, she followed behind Xiao Chen closely, she was afraid that the two would abandon her.

The slaughterfest was still ongoing!

After entering the deathly sea of bones, Xiao Chen and Lawrence finally encountered Yan Qing Cheng and the rest.

Yan Qing Cheng who had a pair purple divine wings behind her back, the genius Illusion Master Carlos, and the successor of Xiao Li's Flying Dagger, Wharton. All of them clearly did not suffer too much damage. After all, they were expert at the level of Exuvia Sixth Celestial Layer. Not many people was capable of injuring them. The instant they noticed Xiao Chen, the three immediately rushed over here. When enemy encountered each other, there was no need for any superfluous words, there was only a life and death confrontation.

Very few people could reach up to Yan Qing Cheng's level of beauty, a pair of resplendent purple divine wings made her appear even more out of the world. She practically looked like a purple winged Angel that had descended to the mundane world. She streaked across the sky and formed an elegant circle, it transformed into a streak of purple light and shoot towards Xiao Chen.

Xiao Chen happily received the attack, the Sealed God light screen enveloped his body, the radiance of the North Star Constellation sparkled. It looked like he was adorned with an ancient divine armor. The long sword in his hand was taking in and sending out searing rays of light, it was like a huge lightning as it flew towards Yan Qing Cheng in the sky.

The dazzling purple light and that searing sword-qi clashed fiercely and

exploded with dazzling rays of colorful light. Yan Qing Cheng flew higher into the sky, and stood on the empty sky. And Xiao Chen also raised his head to gaze at her coldly.

On the other side, Lawrence was very crazy, he actually trapped Carlos and Wharton at the same time, and launched a terrifying void power attack! Xiao Chen didn't hesitate to rush over there. Within Lawrence's space, Carlos' illusions were clearly not working properly. And Wharton's movements also slowed down, he was not willing to release his throwing knife!

Xiao Chen was not affected in the slightest, last time he was almost killed by these two people, so he wanted to get even with them. But just at this time, Yan Qing Cheng also rushed over here. Lawrence's confinement finally lost its effect. After all, no matter how powerful Lawrence was, it was impossible for him to confine three powerful experts at the same time.

An intense battle finally broke out, Xiao Chen and Lawrence versus these three powerful experts! The extraordinarily beautiful Rowena knew she wouldn't be able to help, so she stayed out this battle.

During the battle, Xiao Chen finally saw the real face of Wharton clearly. During the battle last time, due to Carlos' illusions, he was unable to see the real face of the guy who almost killed him.

Wharton had an average look, but he had an outstanding demeanor. His entire person was like the sharp edge of a sword. He gave people an incomparably penetrating feeling. The battle had been ongoing for half an hour already, but Wharton never sent out the throwing knives. He merely fought in close combat style. It was obvious that he was looking for a certain kill opportunity.

Under the restrain of the Void Master, Carlos was clearly unable to bring out the full potential of his illusion technique. However, those real spiritual attacks were hardly affected, they formed one after another meteor shower and wreaking havoc everywhere.

And Yan Qing Cheng was like a streak of purple lightning, she zapped left and right as she descended towards the ground. She shot down so many purple rays of light that almost submerged Xiao Chen and Lawrence within.

After the intense battle continued for another quarter of an hour, from among the layers of illusion lay out by Carlos, and under the rays of purple light shot down by Yan Qing Cheng, Wharton finally made his move!

An almost transparent jade-like knife seemed to have pierced through the space and time. It was only as big as a thumb, and as long as a finger. It completely broke free of Lawrence's space lock, it launched perfectly straight for his heart. Lawrence and Xiao Chen were dealing with Yan Qing Cheng and Carlos' wild attacks. Wharton had grasped the most perfect opportunity, it was already too late for Lawrence to use his void power to stop it.

"Ding!"

Xiao Li's Flying Dagger that was reputed to be unstoppable fell onto the ground, but Lawrence was also sent flying. He spit out two big mouthful of blood, and his face was very pale. Although Xiao Li's Flying Dagger was blocked by the colorful jade shell, the sword-qi contained on top of it rushed into his body. Lawrence was a Void Master, it was only natural that his physical body was not as strong as Xiao Chen. As a result, he was injured by the sword-qi.

Lawrence!" Xiao Chen transformed into a streak of light and rushed over there.

And just at this time, Wharton executed his second attack, it was similarly impressive as the first attack!

It aimed straight for the middle of Xiao Chen's back!

Although Xiao Chen was worried about Lawrence, but the more desperate the situation, the keener his body and spiritual sense become. Sensing the legendary Xiao Li's Flying Dagger approaching, he made an incomparably bold action. He quickly pulled back the Sealed God light screen, and gathered all of them in his left hand. The North Star Constellation made his palm brightly lit in contrast to other parts of his body. Xiao Chen didn't even turn around and used his hand to grab the crystal clear throwing knife!

"Clang!"

The legendary Xiao Li's Flying Dagger that never missed a target was actually grabbed by Xiao Chen! Rowena, Carlos, Yan Qing Cheng, and the rest were completely stupefied. The North Star Constellation flickered with a glorious divine radiance in Xiao Chen's palm, he exerted his strength and snapped the throwing knife in an instant!

The sound of space tearing apart resounded once more, the flying daggers ripped the space apart. Three consecutive icy aura were launched toward Xiao Chen.

"Clang! Clang! Clang!"

All three resplendent sword-qi was grabbed by Xiao Chen. This was a very big

blow to Wharton. His face was incomparably pale, when he released those three attacks just now, it seemed like his three energies [1] were also discharged. He spit out a mouthful of blood and collapsed.

[tl: [1] = Referring to Essence, Qi, and Spirit.]

Xiao Chen was concerned about Lawrence's safety. He dropped the snapped off throwing knives, and hastily supported Lawrence with his hand.

"Lawrence, how do you feel?"

"No harm, one mouthful of blood was supposed to be thrown up, the other mouthful was forced out by myself!" Speaking until here, Lawrence shouted loudly, "Space Confinement! Xiao Chen, do it now!"

The movements of Carlos and Yan Qing Cheng who were launching spiritual attacks instantly became sluggish at that moment. Xiao Chen didn't hesitate to strike with his sword, the resplendent sword-qi caused the long sword to disintegrate. The incomparably brilliant rays of light swept across the front.

Carlos staked all of his strength to break free from the space confinement, then he soared into the sky, but he was still hit by that glaring sword-qi, a huge amount of blood was left behind. Despite all that, he kept going without even looking back.

The purple light shot down by Yan Qing Cheng were also destroyed, the unstoppable sword-qi even made her sustain a serious damage. She also staked all her strength to fly into the sky. However, just at this time, Xiao Chen utilized his secret technique to the pinnacle. Other than the North Star in his left hand,

his right hand actually shone with a resplendent star. It was just as magnificent as the Royal Amethyst Star.

Xiao Chen waved his right hand, the star at the hollow of his palm actually transformed into a resplendent divine sword. He didn't hesitate to hack it towards the sky. The searing rays of light had more coverage than even the Spell Master's magic attack. The sword-qi that soared into the sky actually cut off Yan Qing Cheng's purple divine wing, and caused her to fall.

Yan Qing Cheng was seriously hurt and fell towards the ground. The resplendent purple wing on her back was destroyed by Xiao Chen's sword-qi like a delicate porcelain! She revealed a pained expression, continuously spit out a few mouthful of blood, and then fell onto the ground.

Left hand with North Star, right hand with Royal Star, Xiao Chen felt both of his hands were brimming with inexhaustible power!

Lawrence coughed as he stood up.

"Lawrence, are you sure you are fine?"

"It's nothing, it will recover in two or three days."

In a distant place, Rowena was very amazed, she absolutely never thought Xiao Chen was this strong. She walked over with light steps.

Xiao Chen turned his head around to look at the pale, yet incomparably beautiful Yan Qing Cheng, then he exclaimed, "I declare you are my slave from now on!"

Chapter 86 – Rain of Blood

Yan Qing Cheng, her beauty could even captivate the birds and beasts, her appearance could hide the moon and shame the flowers, her charisma could even ruin and overturn the states. She was a genuine beauty unmatched in her generation. Right now, her pair of eyes were burning in fury, she was an overbearing woman, she'd rather die than becoming a slave. She stared at Xiao Chen wrathfully.

“A captive needs to understand their own position!” Xiao Chen ignored her after he stopped talking. He began to inspect Lawrence's condition.

The exceptionally beautiful Rowena smiled gently, and said, “Xiao Chen, if you are fine with it, you can leave her to me. I assure you I will turn her into a qualified slave.”

“Good, I will leave her to you.”

At present, the chaotic massacre had persisted for one night, it already started to gradually settle down. It seemed like they had determined the victory or defeat between the few big factions. Even though some practitioners saw Xiao Chen and Lawrence, they didn't dare to start a fight with them. They already saw the terrifying strength of Xiao Chen and Lawrence.

Of course, if the leaders of the big factions are here, it's hard to say whether Xiao Chen and Lawrence would be able to escape.

It is already early morning at the moment, but the sun had not risen yet. A chilly wind mysteriously blew across the earth, the originally sizzling hot island is

indescribably cold at the moment!

“Whoosh! Whoosh.....!”

It was like the screech of the ghosts, the chilly wind produced an ear-piercing screech. It appeared even more mind-boggling and frightening, especially at this sea of bones. Soon after, a yellow wind suddenly blew across the earth. The aura was still as cold as before, and the world had actually turned pale yellow.

Yellow wind was a sign of great misfortune, it was the sign of a demon rising from hell!

Of course, that was just a rumor. But it is indeed very mind-boggling at the moment! All the practitioners raised their heads to look at the sky.

“Rumble!”

Just at this time, yellow clouds shrouded the sky, and dropped a black lightning towards the ground. It made this place even more bizarre and eerie.

And finally, heavy rain started to pour, it was actually yellow rain!

Water screen was formed from the water droplets. The yellow heavy rain seemed so bizarre. It practically looked like a yellow dead water. [1]

[tl: [1] = 尸水: Literally means corpse and water. I believe it is the liquid that is used to submerge the corpse. I don't have a better word for this so I'm just calling it dead water >.<]

This bizarre situation caused everyone to feel somewhat nervous.

Lawrence suddenly opened his mouth and said, "If I didn't remember wrongly. Today seems to be Ghost Festival!"

After entering the world of immortals, Xiao Chen had long forgotten what date was it today. He didn't even know the months and year of this world.

"That..... That's right!" The extraordinary beautiful Rowena's voice was a little shaky.

"Ghost Festival..... How can it be?!" Xiao Chen was not very convinced.

Lawrence nodded and said, "Yes, of course it is not trustworthy. I only suddenly recalled it after seeing this bizarre situation and the surrounding sea of bones."

Only... immediately after they stopped talking, something incomparably bizarre took place in between the deafening thunder and water screen. One immeasurably tall and ancient city emerged from among the sea of bones!

Not only did Xiao Chen and the gang saw it, the other practitioners also did. In that instant, everyone present held their breath. They simply couldn't believe their eyes.

This ancient city within the rain was too imposing, it was emitting a majestic aura. The city wall was about hundred meter tall, it was higher and bigger than

any big city in the mainland. And yet it was brimming with the vicissitudes of time, who knows just how long ago this ancient city wall had been built. It seemed like it had traversed the space-time continuum and came from the ancient era.

That hundred meter tall city gate opened widely, it was directly facing a number of practitioners. Even if the rain was pouring heavily, it was also difficult for the water screen to conceal the scene inside the city gate.

There were groups of soldier within the city wall, they seemed like Yin Warriors with murky deathly aura. They were practicing uniformly under the rain. It was hard to judge which dynasty they used to serve from the ancient armor they were wearing.

Afterwards, someone cried out in alarm, because those people already recognized those armor. They looked completely identical to the written records in the ancient book. Some of them were wearing the ancient armor of Celestial Warrior, and there were also some wearing the ancient armor of Yin Warrior!

Within the ancient city, it seemed like a few huge figures were swaying. It looked almost like a Tyrannical Dragon and Monarch Lion Dragon. However, they were really too far away, and due to the cover of the rain, they were unable to see it clearly.

The yellow dead water-like rain poured down heavily, the weather was brimming with a negative aura. The ancient city within the rain curtain was like an underworld ghost town that reappeared in the human world. The bulky black lightning ripped the space apart, it kept falling from the heaven unceasingly. The ear-splitting sound resembled the screech of malicious spirits, this was an incomparably scary scenario.

The yellow sky gradually became darker, the pale yellow clouds completely turned into black clouds. Even though it was already early morning, this place was even darker than midnight. Layers upon layers of black fog looked like lingering ghost aura. And the color of the lightning actually changed into crimson red!

The crimson red was especially unpleasant to the eyes, one after another terrifying crimson light continuously cut across the sky from that rumbling demonic cloud. It resembled multitudes of bloody rivers surging toward the ground. It made this dark world appears mind-boggling and terrifying in contrast.

The negative aura from the sea of bones was heavy, but it was still not comparable to that of the bizarre ancient city located in the center of the sea of bones. The divine monolith in the center of the sea of bones was already nowhere to be seen. Perhaps it was due to the appearance of the ancient city that this flat land seemed to have significantly been enlarged.

Just at this time, the stench of blood suddenly assailed everyone's nose. Someone finally cried out in alarm, "Blood..... It's watery blood!"

Within the dark sky, that intense yet glaring lightning brandished wildly. They could clearly see the raindrop within the intervals of the electric light. The raindrop actually turned scarlet red! The stench of blood assailed the nostrils, the world was actually covered by a layer of bloody curtain. The rainwater had transformed into watery blood!

This was seriously too terrifying and scary, this made everyone in place unable to suck in a cold breath. Everyone could feel their scalp go numb, their back

breaking out in cold sweat, and the hair all over their body standing on end. It gave rise to a bone chilling fear.

Not only did the ancient city's hundred meter tall city wall emits an ancient aura, it also appears incomparably mind-boggling after being bathed in the rain of blood. It seemed like a huge monsters which broke the bounds of time and came from the ancient era. The fiendish aura it emitted could break anyone's willpower.

Someone said in terror, "Those things embedded on the city gate are....."

All of them couldn't help but raise their heads to see. They could only see a huge Eternal Wheel of Life. Many people couldn't refrain from shouting, "That looked exactly like Buddha's Eternal Wheel of Life in legends!"

"Buddha, Laozi, and all the experts on their level already disappeared countless years ago, why would his Eternal Wheel be embedded here?"

"It seemed to be smashed onto the wall!"

"It seemed like he wanted to destroy the city gate!" And the mysterious city seemed extremely bizarre under the rain of blood! It seemed like the legendary artifact of Buddha had been viciously smashed onto the wall. Many huge cracks appeared on the ancient wall near the Eternal Wheel. The right side of the city gate had suffered serious damage.

Clearly, someone tried to use the Eternal Wheel to attack these wall before. However, the Eternal Wheel had been confined by these bizarre black wall.

If their guess was correct, then this thing was more terrifying than they originally thought! To make the merciful Buddha became like this, it was obvious that he must have been really furious. But he even lost his Buddhist Artifact in the end, one could imagine just how bizarre this ancient city was.

After all, the legendary Buddha was a figure as powerful as Laozi, his magic power and ability surpassed the ancients and dazzling contemporaries. He didn't have much worthy adversary during that time period.

Buddha and Laozi had already disappeared for countless years, could it be related to this ancient city? Everyone thought of this terrifying question.

The scarlet rain of blood still poured down as heavily as before. Through that wide open city gate; They could clearly see those soldiers adorned with Celestial Warrior and Yin Warrior's ancient armor. They were dyed in the color of blood, there were abundant of bloody figures, it was exceptionally terrifying.

"Too scary..... We can stay here no longer....." Some practitioners' voices were already trembling. They quickly retreated, and left the sea of bones. They entered the deathly still forest, but as soon as these people entered the deathly still forest, their miserable shrieks resounded.

"Ah.....!"

The dark sky. The intense lightning, the scarlet rain of blood, and the miserable shriek. When all of these interweaves together, it was so extremely scary and terrifying.

"Tree demon, evil spirit!" Those people screamed in fear, "All the ancient trees

have come to life, they have transformed into evil spirits!”

That incomparably exuberant ancient woods at the rear turned extremely eerie at the moment. All the ancient trees were fluttering about under the rain of blood. A human face had appeared on the trunks of every ancient trees. It truly seemed like they had been possessed by malicious spirits. All the branches were like demonic hands that firmly bound the practitioners. Their bodies were slowly corroded, and absorbed into the tree.

Only a few with enough strength were able to make it back. Dozens of people lost their life in the ancient forest.

Xiao Chen and Lawrence casted a quick glance at each other. They felt somewhat shaken up, everything that happened today was really too bizarre. Nobody was able to understand what was going on.

The extraordinary beautiful Rowena who could turn all living things upside down with her cute act, is no longer acting in a seductive manner. Her voice trembled as she said, “Today is the Ghost Festival, the legend is true. The gate to the underworld shall open, the aura of life will weaken, and the Sovereign of Death will descend upon the world!”

“Nonsense, whence had you ever seen this kind of situation in the world of immortals?” Lawrence coughed moderately, his face was somewhat pale. His body really doesn’t seem that good.

The scarlet rain of blood poured down continuously, but not a single drop was able to make contact with Xiao Chen’s body. The invisible aura around his body blocked every drops of rain, he calmly gazed at the ancient city, and said, “For all the dragons as powerful as deities to be sealed back then, I suspect it had

something to do with this ancient city.”

“I also thought so.” Lawrence nodded his head in agreement.

The mutual killing between the numerous practitioners had already come to an end a long time ago. They divided into a few big factions and stood at opposite side. As for Xiao Chen’s party and other “lone wolf”, they did not join up with those big power.

The appearance of the ancient city and rain of blood gave those schemers no other choice but to form a truce. At last, everyone who was scattered at the sea of bones came together, those key figures seemed to have reached a compromise, and no longer continue to fight.

There were plenty of human figures, the fight between the schemers this time led to a battle royal, which resulted in the death of two hundred plus people. There are presently four hundred plus people remaining on dragon island. And among these numbers, three hundred plus were gathered in this sea of bones.

Nobody dared to act blindly without thinking. Facing the unknowns, everyone could feel a great sense of danger. They could only gather together and watch the ancient city attentively.

At a distant place, one lonesome figure passed through the curtains of blood, and walked towards Xiao Chen’s direction. He walked unsteadily, and staggered left and right. It was actually Buddhist Yizhen. His white shirt had long been dyed red by the blood. Abundance of faint radiance covered his entire body. The blood all over his body was clearly not drenched by the curtains of blood. His monk cloth was worn out, it was obvious that he had went through an intense battle. “Yizhen.....” Xiao Chen immediately rushed to his side.

Yizhen had a really sorrowful expression, he said with a trembling voice, “My senior brother is dead, he died very miserably, he was cut into eighteen pieces by three slash.” As soon as he finished these sentence, he couldn’t bear it anymore, and fell head first onto the ground.

Xiao Chen hastily lend an arm to support him, his pair of eyes emitted two streaks of divine light. Buddhist Yichi actually died like this, Xiao Chen mourned in silence.

“Don’t feel sad, it’s good that you’re alive.” He tried to console Buddhist Yizhen like this.

Buddhist Yichi had reached Exuvia Fifth Celestial Layer at the very least. He might had even broken through to Exuvia Sixth Celestial Layer, but he was actually killed by three slash. That person’s ability couldn’t be taken lightly.

The big confrontation between the schemers this time caused many experts to fall. Except for Buddhist Yizhen from the Dharma Alliance, everyone else perished.

“Is that guy Solitary Sword Demon?” Xiao Chen asked.

“I only saw a person covered by black fog from head to toes, he killed my senior brother, destroyed my Dharma Alliance, and injured me with a sword slash. Yet I was unable to see his true identity.” Speaking until here, Buddhist Yizhen had an expression worlds apart from his transcendental self in the past. He was incomparably sorrowful, and emitted waves of murderous aura.

The North Star light screen emerged from Xiao Chen's left hand, one after another divine radiance flowed into Buddhist Yizhen's body, and stabilized the condition of his injury.

"The only reason I was able to survive, was because someone came to save me." Speaking until here, Buddhist Yizhen recalled the scenario at that time. His face was a little excited as he said, "A woman surrounded by hazy bright mist, she..... actually used the Divine Law!"

"What?" Lawrence who was at the back cried out in surprise, he quickly walked forward to ask, "Is what you said the truth? She used the power of time?!"

"I saw it with my own eyes, she utilized the legendary Divine Law, and made that terrifying person in black fog become as slow as snail. It was as if he was caught in a swamp." 6

"Space was highly regarded, but time is above all else!" Void Master Lawrence had a feverish look in his eyes.

Chapter 87 – Dragon’s Magic Power Recovered!

Lawrence spoke to himself, “Legend says, Void Master was superior, they can overwhelm practitioners of the same level. However, there is one exception, that is as long as the practitioner that can control time does not appear. The Time Bender’s technique was known as Divine Law. Even practitioners one level higher than her couldn’t be her match.

Xiao Chen was still not very familiar with this world. But he came to understand everything from their exchange. The practitioners that could control time seemed to possess the potential of the sovereign.

Buddhist Yizhen could not seize the opportunity to watch the battle between that girl who possessed Divine Law and that terrifying guy shrouded in black fog until the end. Because when those two are battling, they kept shifting from one battlefield to another.

In the dark sky, one after another bloody lightning still kept falling non-stop. The rain of blood fell even harder, the blood on the ground was already one foot tall, fishy smell assailed the nostrils. No matter who see this kind of scene, their scalp will surely feel numb.

When Buddhist Yizhen saw the listless Yan Qing Cheng who was under Rowena’s watch not too far away, he was somewhat shocked.

“She is already my slave.” Xiao Chen ruthlessly gave this beautiful woman a crackdown.

“Hmph!” Yan Qing Cheng let out a cold snort. But she also had no other choice

right now, it was impossible for her to get away with these serious injuries.

And just at this time, an uproar break out from not too far away. Under the bloody curtains, one after another white bones crawled up from the ground. Their eye sockets were completely empty.

“Goodness gracious. What is it now?”

“Could the Sovereign of Death really be descending to this world?”

“Scary.....”

Everyone turned pale with fright. Some people even started to tremble already.

This was originally a sea of bones. Due to the appearance of the ancient city, and the rain of blood, people gradually neglected the endless bones of the dead on the ground. But now, even this sea of bones was no longer calm.

Fortunately, not all the terrifying skeletal remains crawled up, only those that were still in good condition stood up. They were facing that ancient city within the curtains of blood. However, those hill-like remains of giant monsters also started to tremble, it seemed like they might wake up at any time.

“This place is not safe, we need to think of something.” Xiao Chen swept his eyes over this bizarre ominous land.

Only... the endless deathly still forest cuts off their escape route, and in front

of them was that mysterious yet terrifying ancient city. They have nowhere to run.

“What are they doing?” The bewitching Rowena who was in charge of looking after Yan Qing Cheng, looked a little pale at the moment. She lifted her finger to point at the restless crowd in front.

When everyone was feeling terrified by these situation, there was actually a group of people who wanted to enter the ancient city. It seemed like they wanted to explore the ancient yet terrifying city.

“They are going after the Buddha’s Eternal Wheel.” Lawrence coughed lightly, his pair of eyes emitted an unusual light. His handsome yet sickly face was a little flushed due to excitement.

“Buddha’s Eternal Wheel.....” Buddhist Yizhen gazed at the ancient city afar. His sight had already been deeply attracted by that huge Buddhist Artifact. It seemed like his mind had already floated over there.

It seems like greedy desire is inherent in mankind. That group of practitioners already arrived in front of the ancient city, they faced the groups of ancient Yin warrior and Celestial Warrior beyond the city wall. They were scared witless, but they still couldn’t suppress their desire to retrieve the Buddha’s treasure.

Fortunately, the warriors in the city regarded them as nothing, they didn’t even cast a glance at them.

Nobody dared to enter the ancient city.

God knows why but the surface of the black city wall was flickering with a goddamn [1] bewitching light. That group of practitioners are trying to climb up the city wall. The ancient city seemed to have been through the vicissitudes of untold times. The black wall had many scars and paw prints, so it was possible for these practitioners to pull themselves up.

[tl: [1] = Silva: Yep, that's what it says, I did not add words into the author's mouth. He wrote "bird", which could mean p***s or damned.]

Not long later, they climbed up the hundred meter tall ancient city wall. They were only ten meter below the Buddha's Eternal Wheel. That huge Eternal Wheel was as big as a house. It was embedded deeply into the wall, one after another huge cracks spread out very far.

Someone finally walked along with the huge crack and climbed up like this. He slowly approached the Eternal Wheel, but just at this time, many small cracks appeared around that huge crack, and suddenly one after another scarlet blood started to flow out.

"Ah.....!"

The very first person to get to the top let out a miserable shriek and fell. Something terrifying happened to his body while in midair. He actually turned into a skeleton in an instant, all of his flesh disappeared in but a moment.

At the same time, the black ancient city wall flickered with a goddamn light. The bewitching radiance swallowed up the other people, the miserable shrieks rose and fell in succession. They were more miserable than the first person who died. One could clearly see their body being torn into pieces through the curtains of rain. And then they were completely crushed. In the end, they transformed

into specks of light and absorbed by the city wall. Everyone was completely annihilated.

Just at this time, Buddha's Eternal Wheel produced a metallic sound. At the same time it was shaking constantly, dazzling rays of light were produced. An auspicious and peaceful aura resisted the goddamn bewitching light, then the ancient city wall slowly returned to its original state.

Along with the emergence of Buddha's Aureole, the skeletons that were crawling up in the vicinity of the ancient city gradually slumped onto the ground. And those huge monster skeletons also stopped trembling.

"Roar.....!" Only that... a gloomy roar that caused people's scalp to feel numb resounded from the depths of the ancient city. That roar changed everything, not only did all the skeletons stood up, even the huge monster skeletons were raring to go.

That gloomy roar that sent a chill down the spine faded away only after a fit. But it seemed like nothing could stop this disaster now.

From the ancient primitive forest very far away from here, waves after waves of thunderous roars resounded. Even the earth started to tremble. It seemed like an endless waves of monsters are coming at this direction.

At the same time, the skeletons on the ground appeared from under many practitioner's foot, beside them, or even behind them. The countless skeleton army sent a chill down everyone's spine. Those small skeletons were still fine, but those hill-like monster skeletons were practically like a huge milestone rolling around. If the practitioners were to be trampled by them, they will inevitably turn into meat paste.

It was obvious at a glance, these skeletons were not undead creature. They were enveloped by a genuine negative fiendish aura. None of them had any soul fluctuation. They were genuine dead creatures, and yet they could move. This gave people an inexhaustible feeling of fear.

When the skeleton army attacked like this, many casualties were brought about immediately. Some practitioners were directly crushed by those ten meter tall huge skeletal monsters.

This sea of bones was filled with an unending fearful scream. Everyone could barely maintain their calm, fear welled up in everyone's heart. Moreover, the roars of the beasts from a distant place were quickly approaching this place.

Not long later, those thunderous roars already got within the vicinity. They could vaguely see twenty plus huge dragons. They were floating above the deathly still forest. They shot one after another glaring light beams towards this place from beyond the bloody curtains.

One after another thunderous noise caused everyone's ears to buzz. Those terrifying magic technique of the dragons completely annihilated a large amount of skeletons within the sea of bones.

All the practitioners were incomparably terrified, they could clearly see the Tyrannical Dragon, Monarch Lion Dragon, Eight-Clawed Tyrant Dragon, Saber Dragon, and other dragons just as powerful. All of them were actually floating in the sky!

Weren't the dragons sealed? Why can they use their divine ability, and why are they attacking this area? While everyone was feeling terrified, these questions

rose in their hearts.

The dragons had unparalleled strength under the heaven, their magic technique were just as matchless!

Those divine rays that streaked across the sky were unstoppable, nothing could bar its path. Large amount of skeleton army were annihilated one after another. Many practitioners didn't even had the chance to make any sound before they were caught up in the extermination.

"Roar.....!" The heavenly dragons were roaring. The rain of blood poured down like flood, the terrifying divine rays constantly exploded, one after another skeletal remains were crushed, even the goddamn bewitching light of the ancient city became more extensive. Combine all of these together, it was seriously too scary.

Today, the dragons' divine ability was actually recovered. The swamp of dragons in the distant sky already increased from twenty plus to thirty dragons, and the numbers kept increasing by the seconds.

So many dragons capable of downing the gods gathered together, the fiendish aura at present was unparalleled. But it seemed like they had a fear in their hearts, they didn't dare to get close to the ancient city. All they did was bombarding this place from the distant sky.

In regards to all the practitioners here, it was practically like the end of the world!

All the upheaval today was not something the schemers would have expected.

If they knew about this disaster, they would definitely not carry out the big confrontation. They definitely won't kill until here, but it is too late now. This place has practically become hell on earth, the casualties among the practitioners are disastrous.

Xiao Chen was shocked to discover the three undead creatures; Qinguang Wang, Yanluo Wang, and Lunhui Wang actually rushed towards him and made a few comical gestures. Then they approached the ancient city gate.

It was impossible to retreat, the deathly still forest cuts off their path. Xiao Chen slightly hesitated, then he made a bold decision. He told Lawrence and Buddhist Yizhen, "We have no way to retreat, our only choice is to enter the ancient city. There might be a slight hope of survival there!"

"Good. I agree." Lawrence nodded his head to approve. The area that they were located haven't received the destructive attack of the dragons yet. But the terrifying divine rays also landed nearby from time to time, it was only a matter of time before it hit them.

"That is the only way!" Buddhist Yizhen also expressed his approval.

"How can that be? That is a shady place! It is the ghost town that the Sovereign of Death resides. If we go there, we are only following the path to our own doom." Rowena's flowery face had already lose her color a long time ago. She was extremely terrified.

"We didn't force you to come along." Xiao Chen was the first to rush towards the ghost town after saying these. Lawrence followed closely behind him, Buddhist Yizhen also followed closely.

“Madman. You guys are madman!” Rowena puffed up and stamped the ground, but one terrifying divine ray fell not far in front of her. A huge bottomless hole appeared in place of the light, she was immediately scared witless. She detained Yan Qing Cheng and immediately chased after them.

“Xiao Chen, you cannot abandon me! I have already given myself to you as present.”

Xiao Chen turned around to look at her, and said, “The so-called land of death may have a slight hope of survival. I will not follow the path to my demise. If you want to survive, you can follow us. But why are you bringing her along?” Saying until here, Xiao Chen glanced at Yan Qing Cheng. This is not the right time to hold onto a captive like this, it is best to kill her immediately.

The exceptionally beautiful Rowena revealed an enchanting smile and said, “Isn’t this supposed to be your slave? I want to carefully train her, and present her to you in the future.”

“Boom!”

Another glaring divine ray descended, and left a huge pit not so far away. Rowena was frightened and let out a screech right away.

Xiao Chen let out a cold snort, he didn’t want to say much courteous words with this alluring woman. His pair of eyes flickered with divine radiance, and said, “I give you to authority to kill her if she tried to make any funny moves!”

Rowena untied a portion of Yan Qing Cheng’s restrain. Freeing both of her legs so that she had enough strength to catch up with everyone’s speed. The few of

them dashed towards the ghost town and got through the daunting experience without mishap. It was also strange that all the divine rays landed in the vicinity, and didn't hit them directly. It was like they were intentionally driving them into the ancient city.

Xiao Chen, Lawrence, and Yizhen looked at each other for an instant. They suddenly called to mind.

“At the same time the dragons recovered their magic power, their divinity had also awakened and suppressed their monstrosity.”

“That's right. They had regained their wisdom, it seemed like they were forcing us to enter the city. They are taking us to be guideposts.”

Even if they became aware of these, they also had no choice but to dash towards the ghost town. Because if they want to live, that might be their only haven. All the more when the dragons were intentionally driving them into the city.

They were more scared than hurt all the way. They quickly dashed in front of the ghost town. Qinguang Wang, Yanluo Wang, and Lunhui Wang had already entered the city gate a long time ago. They are currently standing face to face with the Celestial Warrior and Yin Warrior.

“Are we..... Really going to enter?” Rowena speaks with a trembling voice. However, the divine ray that fell from the sky immediately interrupted her speech, and made her let out a screech.

Chapter 88 – The Terrifying Ghost Town

Even though they were very far away, it seemed like the dragons could hear what they were saying. The divine rays fell beside them unceasingly, as if they were intentionally driving them into the city.

Without any hesitation, Xiao Chen already got beside Lunhui Wang, and joined the three skeletons to look at the warriors in the ghost town. It was deathly silent, both sides seemed to find themselves in a very subtle situation.

The rain of blood swirled in the air, those Celestial Warriors and Yin Warriors were giving off an ancient aura. It seemed like they had already lived for countless years, they seemed like the reformation of the ancient figures in present age.

The glaring divine ray pierced through the bloody curtains, targeting the inner city gate. Xiao Chen didn't have any other choice, and finally took the last step. The Celestial Warriors and Yin Warriors in the city already stopped their drill a long time ago. They stood there like one after another huge tombstone as they looked at Xiao Chen with their cold gaze.

One step, two steps, three steps.....

Xiao Chen entered the ancient city!

The dragon's attack could no longer do anything to him. Those ancient Celestial Warriors and Yin Warriors did not attack him. Lawrence and Buddhist Yizhen also entered along with him. Rowena's facial expression was very pale, she detained Yan Qing Cheng and followed behind the rest. The three skeletons

cautiously got beside Xiao Chen.

The eyes of the Yin Warriors were incomparably eerie, they lifted the ancient metal spear in their hands simultaneously. Rowena turned deathly pale immediately, but the Yin Warrior did not attack, and continued their drill under the rain of blood. This made the few people let out a long sigh immediately.

They did not dare to enter too deep into the ghost town. They only stood near the city gate quietly. If not for the bombardment of the dragons outside, they wouldn't even think of hiding here.

At a distant place, those practitioners that were still alive saw a few people hiding in the safety of the ghost town. All those people began to rush over there. The dragons also didn't make things difficult for them, they intentionally gave them a way to survive. They wanted to force everyone into the ancient city to find a path for them.

There were merely a hundred plus survivors in the ghost town, the rest had been completely annihilated by the dragon's bombardment. And just at this time, the dragon's berserk attack actually changed from the sea of bones to the ghost town. One after another divine rays rammed on the city wall, many light beams that were launched beyond the city wall spread out.

Everyone was caught up in the attack once more. Just at this time, the hundreds of Celestial Warriors and Yin Warriors near the city gate lifted the ancient lance and metal spear in their hands. One after another, they faced the light beams that descended from the sky.

Those rusty looking and damaged ancient weapons actually resisted most of the divine rays. Those divine rays were unable to injure these Celestial Warriors

and Yin Warriors, but these warriors also exhausted their strength. Their steps were unsteady, and their body swayed unceasingly.

Xiao Chen's keen intuition detected the ancient city emitting a bewitching radiance, the bizarre black radiance blocked most of the dragon's magic attack. Otherwise, even these Celestial Warriors and Yin Warriors wouldn't be able to truly block the dragon's divine ability.

The ghost town is really mysterious and terrifying! That might explain why the dragons dare not approach this place.

“Fo.....”

A long drawn out “Fo” suddenly resounded, it gave people an unfathomable feeling. Above the city gate, Buddha's Aureola soared into the sky. The splendid radiance sprinkled across the land as far as the eyes could see. The Celestial Warriors and Yin Warriors hastily retreated. The radiance was precisely emitted by Buddha's Eternal Wheel.

That huge Eternal Wheel kept quivering on the ancient city wall unceasingly. The invisible sound wave was like a stormy sea surging up violently. It actually caused everyone to push on to the depths of the ancient city's street. And except for Buddhist Yizhen, none were able to stay near the city gate. Even those several hundreds of Celestial Warriors and Yin Warrior had no choice but to brandish their ancient weapons, and head towards the rear.

“Fo.....”

Another “Fo” resounded. The Buddhist's Aureole surrounded Buddhist Yizhen.

Buddhist Yizhen whose monk cloth was dyed red by blood appeared very solemn at the moment. He sat cross-legged, and clapped both hands together. In contrast to the sorrowful looks before him, he is very calm and content right now, his gracefulness is out of the world.

Within the Buddhist's Aureole, Buddhist Yizhen slowly floated up. He was actually sitting on empty air. One huge Buddhist image actually appeared at his surroundings, that unfathomable aura was precisely emitted by that faintly discernible Buddhist image.

Looking from a distant, Buddhist Yizhen was sitting on the huge palm of the old Buddha. Even though his monk cloth had already been stained by blood, his entire person seemed so ethereal as if Buddha had really been reborn. The auspicious and merciful aura spread over a large area.

"Amitufo....." Buddhist Yizhen chanted in a low voice. It seemed like he was enlightened with the perfect wisdom. His entire person seems to have changed, he could only be described as out-of-this-world at this moment. It seemed like he has forgotten the sadness he once felt, forgotten the death of his senior brother, he is very calm and undisturbed right now.

He quietly sat on the hollow of Buddha's palm, and muttered difficult to understand ancient scriptures. He closed his eyes and sunk into some kind of special meditation zone. At the distant, everyone was envious of Buddhist Yizhen's luck. Without a doubt, he was helped by Buddha's Eternal Wheel.

Nobody knew how much benefits did Buddhist Yizhen get from this, but it was the legendary Buddha's gift, even those people with immortality would be very excited to receive it!

Far away, those thunderous roar of the dragons momentarily calmed down due to the sacred light of Buddha's Eternal Wheel. However, the thunderous roar shook the sky again after a short while, one after another dragon magic bombarded the inner ghost town from all direction.

Even though the black radiance had already enveloped the sky of the ghost town, many divine rays still passed through. All the Celestial Warriors and Yin Warriors lifted their ancient weapons to resist.

Except the place where Buddhist Yizhen was, the other practitioners were painstakingly trying to dodge. They were actually forced into this kind of mysterious yet terrifying ancient city. They seriously had no room to advance or to retreat.

Xiao Chen was the first to go along the ancient streets, and headed towards the depths of the ancient city. Even his countenance would change in the face of the dragon's divine spell. Even though the spell were weakened by the black radiance produced by the ancient city, it was still not something Xiao Chen and the rest could ward off.

Lawrence and rest followed Xiao Chen along the ancient street. Yan Qing Cheng was very cooperative at the moment, she did not resist at all, and followed the others along with Rowena. Their only hope for survival was to get away from the battlefield near the city gate.

The people at the back also ran towards the other end of the street after a slight hesitation. If they were one step slower, they would have fell under the spells of the dragons. Those Celestial Warriors and Yin Warriors also retreated, but they still didn't attack the others, they were like stone statues without emotion.

Only, many practitioners gradually started to feel uneasy, because they saw a lot of white bones on the street! Could these people be the same as them, and died a mysterious death after bursting into the city? However, everyone has no way out, they could only wait quietly in the depths of the ancient city. Quietly wait for everything to calm down.

However, the situation did not turn for the better. On the contrary, it became even more severe. The dragon roars were gradually approaching, the roars caused the heaven to fall and the earth to rend. Many of the weaker practitioners couldn't bear it anymore, their face were incomparably pale. They could see enormous figures of dragons in the sky over the sea of bones. They are currently outside of the ghost town, the intimidating pressure was like a furious ocean surging up. Some even penetrated the ancient city's black radiance, causing everyone to be caught up in a perilous situation.

The dragons seemed like they wanted to destroy this ghost town, even if they were fearful of it. They didn't dare to descend towards the ground, but the magic attack descended from every direction.

Just at this time, all the practitioners scattered like ants. Each of them ran towards the empty streets and alleys of the ghost town, they couldn't care less anymore. Regardless of whether there was any dangers in the city, it is more important to avoid getting killed by the dragons right now.

The Celestial Warriors and Yin Warriors also couldn't ward off the attacks anymore, they waved their rusty ancient weapons, and retreated towards the depths of the ancient city. The ghost town was brimming with baleful aura, the watery blood flowed unceasingly on the streets. In addition to those white bones on the ground, it was seriously like the hell on earth.

“Ah.....!”

A miserable shriek resounded from the depths of an alley. It was a very sorrowful shriek, as if the person had received a great shock before he died. It was not very far from Xiao Chen and Lawrence’s party.

“What’s going on, that place was not attacked by the dragon’s magic attack right?” Rowena’s voice was trembling.

Xiao Chen and Lawrence did not say a single word, they went into the ancient alley together. The surrounding buildings were like the city wall, only god knows what kind of material they were made out of. Their colors resembled the dark red of dried up blood. And yet they were flickering with bizarre black radiance.

The alley became narrower as they move on. They quickly reached a dead-end. The miserable shriek just now came from within a normal-looking residence, there’s still some lingering sound. However, there was another more notable sound.

“Skeech! Skeech.....!”

Relying on their intuition, they felt that was a gnawing sound. It seemed like the sound of tearing one’s flesh apart with the teeth. They didn’t know what kind of creature was it, nor do they want to know under this kind of circumstances. Rowena’s face was deathly pale, she exerted her strength to cover her mouth. Xiao Chen and Lawrence looked at each other in dismay. In the end, they chose to fall back, and left this residence that caused one’s hair to stand on end.

The ghost town was indeed not a benevolent land, it was filled with unknown dangers!

“Ah.....!”

The miserable shrieks once more resounded from not far away, and not only from a single location. When Xiao Chen and the gang arrived at the scene, they discovered it all came from those former residence. The former residences flickering with black radiance were densely packed on both sides of the street. Some are grand and magnificent, while others are in terrible condition. The arrangement is pretty similar to any ordinary city.

The miserable shrieks were transmitted from within the former residences. Clearly, many practitioners decided to hide in the former residences after seeing how the dragon’s magic spell couldn’t destroy the building. They never thought they’d actually die within the building. Up until now, no people knew how they died.

However, Xiao Chen and the rest had already heard the gnawing sound from a few former residences. Clearly, something terrifying was devouring the practitioners within the former residence. This was a very terrifying thing, all those who entered the ancient city could be regarded as some of the most well-known figures, and yet they ended up becoming other people’s food.....

“Clank! Clank!”

“Clink! Clank!”

In the depths of the ancient street, the sound of clashing metal could be

heard. Xiao Chen and the rest saw two Psychics controlling divine swords made out of spiritual energy in the sky, and killing each other mutually. Under this kind of circumstances, they were still fighting. One could see the enmity between them was not simple.

After a miserable shriek, one Psychic was cut in half, and fell from the sky. The other Psychic flew towards a different direction. That two section of corpse fell in front of a big residence. “Creak...!” That tall bloody red door opened slightly.

Xiao Chen clearly saw two specks of eerie green light in the darkness. That was a sinister yet frightening pair of pupils. As soon as a burst of chilly wind brushed past, the two section of corpse in front of the blood-red door disappeared. After that, the door close with a “Bang!”. From behind the door, the gnawing sound could be heard.

This was a terrifying scene Xiao Chen and the rest saw with their own eyes. Even though they didn’t see what kind of creature it was, it was enough to make them feel astonished. It seemed like there was a terrifying person, beast, or perhaps a ghost residing in each former residence.

“What was that?” The beauty queen Yan Qing Cheng also couldn’t help but feel a little fearful. She stared at the bloody red door without blinking her beautiful eyes.

Rowena was “responsible and diligent”, she reeducate Yan Qing Cheng by saying, “Why don’t you worry about yourself first.”

The dragons’ attack were getting wilder, some of them already flew overhead the ghost town, and shot down one after another divine rays unceasingly. Some Celestial Warriors and Yin Warriors were already annihilated by them. However,

it seemed like the dragons did not launch an all-out attack yet. Judging from their attacking style, it seemed like they were still probing around.

The practitioners were inevitably caught up in this disaster, some more people died an unnatural death.

Xiao Chen and the rest kept using the buildings on the street as shelters. Not long later, they saw two powerful experts mutually killing each other on the main road. One mysterious man with his entire body shrouded in black fog is currently engaging in a fierce battle with a girl shrouded by seven-colored radiance. Their battle is very extraordinary.

The divine sword in the man's hand swept from all eight directions in a single breath. He possessed this disdainful look out of the corner of his eyes, and had an air of overbearing supremacy. The space was twisted due to a wave of his sword, it formed a special "domain" at his surrounding. He seemed like an overlord within that domain.

And the girl shrouded by seven-colored radiance was just as mystical. The hazy radiance that enveloped the space was so outstanding, even the mysterious man's long sword would become incomparably slow, and lose its excelling power once it broke into the space. That space shrouded by the dense bright fog seemed like a tiny world in its own right.

Chapter 89 – Reappearance of the Divine Monolith

Without a doubt, these must be the pair of experts Buddhist Yizhen encountered before. It seemed like they were mortal enemy, even after entering the ancient city, they were still having their decisive battle. The black fog and colorful mist concealed their face, it made people unable to clearly distinguish their real appearance. They could only see hazy shadows.

“It is really the power of time, it is the genuine Divine Law!” Lawrence offered a word of praise, it was easy to tell that he was very excited. It seemed like he wanted to rush over there to learn something from the woman in question.

Without making any sound, a murderous aura suddenly closed in. Xiao Chen turned around immediately, his left hand was enveloped by North Star Light Screen, and grabbed an almost transparent knife blade in that instant. That resplendent knife blade was crystal clear, it was as beautiful as a work of art. With astonishment, it was actually Xiao Li’s Flying Dagger!

The big battle ahead also didn’t cause Xiao Chen loosen his guard, he stopped the killing move this time in the first moments. Just by raising his wrist lightly, sword aura ripped the void apart, it was launched high into the sky.

“Plop!”

A lot of blood splashed downwards, the human figure in the sky flee in a hurry. Just when Lawrence was about to soar into the sky, Xiao Chen pulled him, and said, “No need to go after them, you are not in your best condition, we must not suffer any accidental loss.”

“Wharton was actually carried by Carlos into the sky, it seems like they wanted to escape immediately after getting rid of you. However, we can collect some interest in advance.....” Speaking until here, Rowena smiled flirtatiously. After that, she lifted Yan Qing Cheng’s face by holding her chin, and said, “Treating this kind of peerless woman as interest is really too wonderful. I wonder how should we tame her in the future?” When they arrived at the central ancient city, the dragon’s magic attacks were already unable to affect this area. In other words, their lives were no longer in danger. Even though they were attacked from time to time, it was nothing compared to the dragon’s destructive attack. All of these could be stopped with ease.

However, Xiao Chen had a really bad feeling, his intuition was telling him something was watching outsiders like them in the dark. He suddenly turned his head around and saw a huge shadow quickly approaching from among the ancient building complex. They could vaguely tell it was a human figure, but the figure was really too big, it was at least twenty meter tall.

“Swish!”

Lawrence used the void power to create a light rain, and launched it towards the dark zone ahead. The resplendent light illuminated that corner, a black cat about the size of a pony cried out in fear, and scampered with a whoosh. It disappeared in the darkness.

Such an enormous black cat really made one feel stupefied. Moreover, it was actually able to evade Lawrence’s light rain attack, which gave people an even more bizarre feeling. They could vaguely see a necklace made out of human skulls hanging around its neck. Words can’t even describe how eerie and mysterious it was.

“Gu-lulu”

On the ancient street, a few snow-white human skulls rolled over, they kept rolling until they reached under Xiao Chen's foot. Qinguang Wang, Yanluo Wang, and Lunhui Wang seemed to be very mindful of these human skulls. The three skeletons lifted the skull, and their jaws kept making a snapping sound.

Xiao Chen took one human skull from their hands, he discovered there was a lotus insignia on the forehead of the skull. It was similar to the insignia on Qinguang Wang and the other two's forehead. But they already lost their splendor long ago, there was only a little bit of imprint.

“Plop!”

“Plop!”

The few human skulls mysteriously shattered, the white powdered bones fell gently like the dried up sand. These things were extremely strange, it seemed as if the skulls that had existed for countless years were giving them some kind of warning.

Lawrence looked at Lunhui Wang and the rest, then he faced Xiao Chen and said, “Those who have a lotus insignia on their forehead might evolve into the Undead Sovereign in the future. That is an existence that would cause even the deities to shrink back. Those few skulls just now seemed like the leftover of genuine Sovereign Kings.

“This ancient city is too mysterious and scary!” Xiao Chen exclaimed.

The unknown mystery seemed to possess an irresistible force on humans. After

Xiao Chen and the gang entered the ancient city and arrived at this place, they could already stop advancing, but their strong desire to explore this place seemed to be pushing them forward. They wanted to get to the bottom of this deathly still ancient city.

After Lawrence probed the surroundings carefully, he said in a heavy tone, “The ancient city is very bizarre. There is an energy confining the space above the sky, even Psychic and Spell Master wouldn’t be able to leave from the sky. Perhaps only the dragons would be able to break through.

The Celestial Warriors and Yin Warriors they passed by occasionally did not block their path, but when their cold gaze swept past them, it seemed like they were looking at dead people.

From the front, the sound of surging river could be heard. At the same time, a baleful aura pervaded the entire area. Moreover, pungent smell of blood drifted in the air. Scarlet blood mist rushed forth as the bloody river was surging forward. The pungent smell that made people wants to throw up didn’t allow anyone to doubt whether or not the blood was real.

Until now, even Xiao Chen was somewhat convinced, this place really seemed like the residence of the Sovereign of Death.

Above the surging bloody river, there was a stone bridge every few distance away. The stone bridges were engraved with various demons and deities. The vicissitudes of time were clearly visible on the engravings, it seemed like they were explaining something.

There were some withered skeletons on each and every stone bridge. It might be due to the vicissitudes of time, but those white bones were almost eroded.

Xiao Chen and the gang did not stop, they directly crossed the bloody river using one of the stone bridge. And it seemed like the heart of the ancient city was already in front of them, that place was a central plaza.

A huge monolith stood in the center of the plaza, it was at least hundred meter tall!

Xiao Chen was gobsmacked. Isn't this the divine monolith in the middle of the sea of bones? How did it appear in the ancient city, could it be that these two were interlinked and had a great connection? That must it be!

The plaza was very wide and spacious, except for that huge and eerie ancient monolith in the center, the plaza was surrounded by a very special fence. It was actually made out of rocks that looked similar tombstone.

“Those couldn't be built by assembling ancient tombstones together right?” Lawrence looked at the surrounding fence doubtfully.

And just at this time, the survivors also arrived at this place one after another. Among them included the expert who was wrapped in black fog from head to foot, as well as the woman who was shrouded by colorful mist. However, they are no longer fighting, and distanced themselves from each other.

Altogether only thirty plus people who arrived at this place. They are the true elites among the practitioners. Several hundred people died in a disaster, only a few dozen people remained in the end. Far away, those Celestial Warriors and Yin Warriors still looked at everyone as if they were nothing. They didn't have any reaction towards the few dozen practitioners.

In the distant sky, the dragons were bellowing in rage. They were still attacking this ghost town. Just at this time, the huge ancient monolith standing at the center of the plaza suddenly burst forth with a torrent of divine radiance. It tore apart the dusky sky, and prevented the rain of blood from falling, all of them were blocked high in the sky.

A fluctuation similar to that of the boundless ocean surged up violently from the plaza. Even though it didn't possess any destructive force, it still possessed a huge pressure on the mind. It made the practitioners at this place unable to bear it anymore, that was a fear evolved from the soul.

Half of the people were unable to bear this kind of pressure, they actually couldn't resist kowtowing on the ground. They were just like puny ants scared into submission by the ruler of all living things. That huge pressure, that ancient aura, it was really intimidating!

Xiao Chen, Lawrence, the mysterious man shrouded in black fog, as well as that woman shrouded in colorful mist were doing their utmost to resist. In the end, only the few of them didn't crouch down.

The divine radiance emitted by the hundred meter tall ancient monolith was entirely drawn back. But in that split second, they transformed into one after another figures. A few more huge divine monolith suddenly appeared on the plaza, but with careful examination, they could only detect one genuine monolith. The others seemed to be almost identical illusions, they stood at the center of the plaza together with the real ancient monolith.

Everyone wanted to take a step forward to look at the mysterious ancient monolith. Even though the fog was bubbling up, everyone could still see the mysterious engravings on the ancient monolith!

Only... nobody was able to approach. It seemed like there was an invisible energy in the surroundings of the huge ancient monolith and the few layers of monolith illusions. One practitioner attempted to approach, nothing happened at the beginning, but once he entered a few meter deep, he actually transformed into a pile of blood paste and melted on the plaza.

Nobody else dared to attempt, everyone couldn't help but fall back. They surrounded the huge ancient monolith and watched from the distant. In the end, god knows who was the first to discover the diagrams on the surrounding fence and cried out in surprise.

After that, everyone walked over to those pitch-black stone beams that looked like tombstone. Many ancient events seemed to be recorded on the stone fence, but they were too hard to decrypt. Nobody was able to understand what they were reading. None of the diagrams on the stone tablet remained in good condition. It seemed like the most crucial parts were deliberately erased.

However, it was still somewhat beneficial for everyone. They actually discovered some training methods carved on the stone monolith. Lawrence whispered to Xiao Chen; That he found a diagram left behind by a powerful Void Master. Even though the diagram was very fuzzy and difficult to comprehend, it still gave him a very important enlightenment.

At this time, the plaza was very quiet, everyone was searching in the vicinity of the stone fence, they wanted to find some even more valuable diagram.

Xiao Chen also searched around. However, he didn't pay much attention to the secret techniques of the Martial Artist, because his intuition told him those training methods were far inferior to the Secret-Qi Training Method he

specialized in. But he still received huge benefits from these, this place had many lost skills, as well as some of the legendary killing move; Such as God Slayer, Chaotic Three-Way Patterns, Eight Laws of Subduing Demons, *etc.*

“O the ultimate essence of things, a moment of enlightenment is all thee need. Once the scene can’t be concealed, here we meet face to face.” Just at this time, a clear and sonorous chant transmitted to everyone’s ears. Buddhist Yizhen floated over here.

One couldn’t see his once mournful expression, he seemed really graceful and ethereal at the moment. He fixed his gaze at the mysterious man with black fog all over his body, and said, “Solitary Sword Demon, I will make you understand what is karma today.”

As he was saying this, Buddhist Yizhen was calm and indifferent. So much so that he even possessed some sort of charm similar to that of Gods and Buddhas smiling while fiddling with flower. Words couldn’t even describe how breathtaking it was. It was very obvious that the Buddha’s Eternal Wheel made this young buddhist accomplish the first Nirvana-like transformation. It seemed like he really had a flash of realization.

The black fog bubbled up, the Solitary Sword Demon’s tall figure became visible. This was a man with really grim expression, he was not that handsome, but he had this really threatening disposition. His entire person seemed like a sharp unsheathed sword.

“It was really you.” Yizhen was very calm.

“It seems like the legendary Buddha really possessed sky-shattering magic power. A single Buddhist Tool could actually let you undergo a complete

transformation. I thought the Dharma faction was already abolished, I didn't expect there was someone like you." The Solitary Sword Demon's voice was as grim as his expression.

"Few were born, few return to nirvana, such is the circle of life. Light and dark maintained an equilibrium, some seeds shan't return to the roots or origin." Buddhist Yizhen quietly recited the chant, quoting the Buddhist scripture, it seemed like the insight was considerably deep.

Chapter 90 – Eternal Restrain!

“The so-called Buddha, and the so-called life or death. They are nothing in front of me, absolute strength can crush everything!” The Solitary Sword Demon once killed Buddhist Yichi with three slash, he was indeed in possession of a preeminent ability. He left an afterimage in his original place, and appeared in front of Buddhist Yizhen while brandishing the double-edged sword in his hand. The sword produced waves of terrifying demonic whistle, the surrounding space was distorted immediately afterwards. This was the incarnation of absolute strength!

Buddhist Yizhen did not receive the attack head on. Rather, he flew up with a whirl, and went along the ancient street while defying gravity, he looked transcendental like a Buddha going for a walk under the moonlight.

“Solitary Sword Demon, let’s have a decisive battle between you and I after changing location.”

“I won’t die that easily. In front of absolute strength, every scheme will be wasted.” The Solitary Sword Demon’s confidence originated from his own strength. He didn’t stay for long, and chased after Buddhist Yizhen after shrouding himself in the black fog.

“The line is empty, sit empty, silent movement are all empty. It would go head to head. Like the cranial longitudinal sword cut spring.....” Buddhist Yizhen’s speech was faintly discernible as he gradually distanced himself. One could tell he had definitely advanced to a whole new level. Each and every speech of his contained the wisdom of Buddha.

Not a single person from the plaza went after them. Even though that might be

a rarely seen big battle, so much so that it could even be considered as biggest confrontation of the youth generation, none was willing to roam about randomly when they couldn't even guarantee their own lives. Moreover, there were some ancient training diagram on the stone fences around this plaza. Although they were all badly damaged and difficult to comprehend, it was still a rare opportunity to them. Everyone carefully searched this place, hoping to find a diagram that was useful to them.

A sword-qi appeared suddenly, a streak of light went straight for the middle of Lawrence's back. Even though Xiao Chen could feel it, it was already too late to help him. He was away from Lawrence by some distance, although he believed in Lawrence's strength, the guy in question was already heavily injured after all. He couldn't help but feel anxious.

However, green radiance rushed forth, and Lawrence's body was enveloped by that hazy radiance. When the sword-qi that was launched towards Lawrence entered this bizarre space, it became slower and slower as if it fell into a swamp. A crystal clear throwing knife halted just behind Lawrence's back! It was only a few inch behind him.

Lawrence turned his body around, and looked at the fence not far away, then he said, "I almost suffered an unfortunate event once, but the same attack will not work on me twice. Come on out, Wharton. I have already locked onto you, only one of us will come out of this alive today."

Wharton, the successor of the Godly Flying Dagger Technique, turned around and ran away as soon as he stood up from the back of the stone fence. However, Lawrence soared into the sky and left a green trail in the sky as he chased after him.

Xiao Chen also didn't tarry, his left hand was enveloped by the North Star Light

Screen, and a resplendent star appeared on his right hand too. He emitted a threatening murderous aura. He didn't want to let Wharton get away anymore. His figure swayed continuously as he left behind one after another afterimages during the chase.

"Xiao Chen, you don't need to make a move. I have already locked onto him. This time I will let him taste his own medicine. I will make him understand Void Master is not to be trifled with!" Lawrence disregarded his injured body and was determined to kill the enemy. Nobody could change his killing intent.

They passed through the blood river. Lawrence and Xiao Chen were pursuing Wharton closely on the ancient street. In the end, they got back to the plaza. Being able to fly at an early stage was the Psychic and Spell Master's biggest advantage, Wharton's path was still cut off in the end.

Lawrence trapped Wharton in a green dimension. Unable to escape, Wharton could only choose to fight with Lawrence. Xiao Li's Flying Dagger pierced the void and transformed into one after another dazzling rays of light. It was launched towards Lawrence.

However, when facing only one opponent, Lawrence possessed absolute control within the green dimension. He could respond to every single attack a single practitioner on the same level was capable of. The most terrifying Godly Flying Dagger Technique lost its merit today, all the Flying Daggers became so slow in this dimension, everything was clearly reflected in Lawrence's pair of eyes. He unhurriedly evaded all the sword aura, and even halted a few Flying Daggers in midair.

At this moment, Lawrence showed everyone why the Void Masters were revered as kings, and utterly destroyed the legendary Xiao Li's Flying Dagger!

“Clang!”

A metallic noise resounded, few of the Flying Daggers in the sky were broken into pieces simultaneously. The resplendent sword of rain condensed from void power took the form of Xiao Li's Flying Dagger. They emitted glaring rays of light and was shot towards Wharton.

Even if Wharton was powerful, he was powerless to do anything at the moment. He had the same feeling as Xiao Chen at that time. He felt his entire body was being bound in the space controlled by Lawrence, he was actually unable to budge an inch, as if he was caught up in the swamp.

“Plop! Plop! Plop.....!”

More than ten glaring rays of light continuously ran through Wharton's body, one after another bloody arrows came out from the other side. Blood flowed out like waterfall from the dozen of wounds on Wharton's body. Lawrence defeated Wharton using the imitated Xiao Li's Flying Dagger.

The green light screen gradually faded away. Wharton's body swayed left and right. He coughed out blood unceasingly. He smiled bitterly and said, “At least I died in the hands of a living person. I am much luckier than the rest of you. All of you will die tragically.....” Saying until here, he tore apart the front piece of his cloth. They could see a bloody big hole in his chest. Even though his heart was still throbbing, the mark of the claw was very clear. It seemed like his heart was almost scooped out. Furthermore, there were a few deep scars near his chest.

It was very obvious that he was already seriously wounded, he wouldn't be able to live more than a few days. And this suicide attack proved that he was

prepared to die. As soon as he finished saying these words, Wharton fell on the pool of blood. Nobody knew what did he encounter, but that paw print didn't seem like the doing of an ordinary human. Recalling what he said before, everyone felt a chill down their spine. This is a ghost town after all.

“Roar.....!”

Thunderous roars transmitted from outside the ancient city wall. God knows how many dragons had already assembled at the moment, they finally began to go at it for real. Even if the survivors had made it to the center of the ghost town, they were still able to feel the unlimited fluctuation.

The dragons attacked in a frenzy, it seemed like they wanted to destroy this ghost town as quickly as possible. Even though the goddamn light enveloped the ghost town, and the baleful aura was present everywhere, it seemed like it also wouldn't be able to resist for long. Not long later, the entire ghost town was shaking, it seemed like it might collapse at any given time.

The rain of blood already ceased, the dark sky was illuminated brightly by the divine radiance of the dragon's spell. It seemed like they wanted to split the hazy sky, and let the radiance of the sun destroy this ghost town.

In the middle of an ear-splitting thunderous noise, the dragons outside the dead city let out a roar simultaneously. Apparently, they were using a powerful dragon magic. The glaring rays of light were like the brilliance of ten suns, the rays of light ripped apart the dark sky and dispersed the demonic clouds above the sky. The sunlight shone down in an instant.

This is an astonishing change.

It was already noon at the moment. When the gleaming sunlight and the demonic light of the ghost town came together, rumbling noise resounded constantly. It was like the incompatibility between fire and water. It kept producing thunderous explosion noise.

Soon after, a deadly aura soared into the sky, a bloody screen covered the sun. Even though the demonic cloud was dispersed, the sunlight was still dyed in the color of blood by the ghost town!

The plaza produced a rumbling noise, the hundred meter tall divine monolith and few almost identical monolith illusions were moving around in a circle. They actually encircled the plaza, and trapped the black well that appeared in central-most plaza without anyone noticing.

Only until the bloody sunlight shone upon the world did that pitch black ancient well become especially apparent. Even though the sky was illuminated by the rays of light, it still appeared incomparably dark and bizarre. It possessed a magic power that causes one's heart to race.

That ancient well was only three meter in diameter, an indistinct black aura was lingering on the well. It gave people an enigmatic feeling, it looked like an entrance to hell. The more one looked at it, the more puzzling they felt. It was incomparably bizarre, it felt like it would swallow up people's mind.

The face of the huge divine monolith and the surrounding monolith illusions could finally be seen clearly under the radiance of the bloody sunlight. There were handwritings engraved on every monoliths, two identical characters were found on every monoliths: Eternal Restrain!

Xiao Chen was deeply attracted by the first monolith. It was actually Eternal

Restrain: Yellow River! Isn't this the divine monolith at his hometown, why did it appear here? He knew this divine monolith was an illusion, but it was actually related to the divine monolith on the dragon island. It really made him feel restless.

The only characters on the divine monolith was only not limited to "Eternal Restrain". After the ancient character, there were different characters. Looking at the other ancient monoliths, he could see "Eternal Restrain: Lost Island" on the second divine monolith. Other than that, he could only see "Eternal Restrain" on the other monoliths, the rest were fuzzy. Moreover, in a moment later, those characters flickered momentarily and faded away. In the next moment, one after another vivid diagrams appeared on each and every divine monoliths.

Even though a few huge divine monoliths were in front of their eyes, everyone could tell that only the second "Eternal Restrain: Lost Island" was real. The rest were merely illusion that looked almost identical. What made everyone feel extremely shocked was that, all the divine monoliths were emitting a bizarre energy fluctuation, they seemed to be imbuing the real divine monolith with power.

Under the bloody sunlight, the diagram engraved on the divine monoliths did not only appear more vivid, it seemed like they had been imbued with souls as they passed straight through the wall.

The first divine monolith, that is "Eternal Restrain: Yellow River", had a very peculiar diagram on its surface. High up in the sky, black clouds covered densely. Heavy rain poured, huge lightning ripped apart the void. On mother earth, the mountain collapsed, the surface splits, and magma rushed forth. The entire mother earth was trembling fiercely. In the middle of the sea, the raging waves beat against the shores, the stormy seas covered the skies, and engulfed the heaven and earth.

The second divine monolith, that is “Eternal Restrain: Lost Island”, had the portraits of dragons galloping in the skies. It seemed like they were wailing. Many people and deities were also struggling. Above them was an ocean of blood as far as the eyes could see, there were hundreds and thousand layers of raging waves. A dried up mountain of bones stood at the center of the bloody ocean, it was rammed by the torrents of bloody waves, and yet the majestic mountain of bones remained motionless.

Below the dragons and those deities was a ghost town. The demonic aura was dense, the pitch-black gate to hell was half-opened. It was completely lifeless beyond the gate, it was a world of complete darkness. It emitted inexhaustible aura of death. What made people even more amazed was that, below the ghost town, there was an auspicious land. The palace was unoccupied, the resplendent divine trees and jade-like grasses were all over the place. However, not much was outlined. It was already at the bottom-most of the divine monolith, it was hard to observe more of the vast land.

The diagrams on the third divine monolith were made out of a few hardly related drawings. A farmer riding an old ox to plow the land. A shepherd guiding a group of oxen and horses at a prairie. A fisherman standing on a boat and casting his fishing rod into the river. A peddler standing in front of the store touting the wares. Few of these small diagrams were not related in the slightest, but when they were put together, it called to mind the simple life of humans. It made people couldn't help but think of all kinds of lifestyle.

The diagram on the fourth divine monolith emitted an indistinct radiance. One after another imposing Temple in Heaven stood tall on the clouds. They were hidden behind the clouds, many bejeweled jade palaces were faintly discernible.

The diagram on the fifth divine monolith depicted an inexhaustible purple fog

covering up the heaven and earth. It seemed like there was a magnificent army with thousands of men and horses galloping within the fog, and yet it seemed like there was a bellow of countless creatures. This diagram was very fuzzy, but it made people's heart race. Even though they couldn't see the scene beyond the fog, the interior emitted a majestic aura similar to that of the boundless ocean.

It seemed like there was a sixth and seventh divine monolith, but they were barely visible. As for the diagrams on those monoliths, there wasn't even a need to ask.

Under the radiance of the bloody sunlight, few of the visible stone inscriptions did not only seem more vivid, they were even transmitting a faintly discernible sound. These stone inscriptions seemed so real and so vivid. Each and every diagrams seemed like they had their own soul.

These doesn't seem like stone inscriptions anymore, they seemed more like a few different worlds that were put together by someone.

Even though the diagrams on the huge divine monoliths were incomparably mystical, they still fell short to the black well that was encircled within. The more they look the more terrified they felt, it seemed like a bottomless hell that would swallow up their mind.

Under the sudden rampage of the dragons, the demonic well let out a faintly discernible heavenly music for a period of time, then it produced a mournful whistle that caused people's scalp to go numb in the next moment. It caused every practitioners to fall back involuntarily. Even though the sound did not have an offensive nature, it caused people's nether region to shrink.

The ghost town trembled violently, the huge divine monolith and the illusory

monoliths also trembled violently. Even though Xiao Chen had guessed only one divine monolith was real, he was unable to find any faults in the other monoliths at the moment. It seemed like their souls had crossed time-space continuum to come here and provide power for the ancient monolith.

Chapter 91 – Engraving, Halberd, Wheel, Trigrams, Dragons

In the end, the illusion of the other divine monoliths faded away, only the real “Eternal Restrain: Lost Island” remained. It is currently subduing that “Demonic Well”.

Everyone couldn't help but suspect whether there were other ancient monoliths similar to the eternal restrain on the dragon island out there? Other people have doubts, but Xiao Chen was sure there were other divine monoliths out there. After all, he had personally seen “Eternal Restrain: Yellow River” before.

The bottomless “Demonic Well” shook violently, it seemed to be connected to another world. It appears as if countless souls are struggling to get free. They rumbled restlessly as if they wanted to get out.

Just at this time, brilliant rays started to erupt from the real divine monolith. It suppressed the dazzling light that was about to burst out from the “Demonic Well”. The magnificent power was incomparably boundless, it spread all over the ghost town like a vast ocean.

The Demonic Well trembled unceasingly, but it never stood a chance against the divine monolith in the first place. The powerful light from the Demonic Well become dimmer over time. And finally, the light retreated back to the Demonic Well with a flash. The huge divine monolith was really bright, it trembled unceasingly, and the diagrams looked as if they had come to life at this moment.

Among the ear-splitting explosive sound, the diagrams from the divine monolith actually flew out from its surface. The dragons, deities, sea of blood, ghost town, and Pure Land interweaves together to form a light screen that

covered the Demonic Well, and sealed it underneath.

On this day, the sea area around the dragon island covered the skies, the entire ocean was like a boiling water. The entire island was affected by slight earthquake. On the island, the forest trees danced hysterically, dead leaves swirled in the air, monsters rampaging everywhere, and vicious birds let out a long cry. The ghost town had it worst, a goddamn light burst towards the heaven.

On the dragon island, a mountain that had remained silent for many years suddenly bubbled up with a torrent of black fog. The jet-black metal engraving from one side soared into the sky and flew towards the ghost town at high-speed. It left a behind streak of dazzling radiance in the sky.

This metal engraving was only fist sized at first, but when it arrived at the ghost town, it was already as big as a mountain. It lunged towards the divine monolith below. When the divine monolith flickered with brilliant rays, a light screen faced the sky. After the metal engraving rammed onto the light screen, a loud explosive sound was produced. The ten million tonnes of metal engraving was actually sent flying away.

Just at this time, from a mountain range that had collapsed for countless years on the dragon island, a divine halberd burst forth with dazzling radiance. It broke free from the historical remains and soared into the sky. Then it launched towards the ancient monolith in the ghost town.

But it was fended off by the divine monolith with the same method. The ten meter long divine halberd cuts across the void as it was flung towards the sky.

After that, Buddha's Eternal Wheel on the city gate produced a loud sound

similar to the yellow bell. The sound resonated across the heaven and earth. It emitted glaring rays of light and bumped into the ancient monolith at the depths of the ancient city. The ancient divine monolith shook violently, and Buddha's Eternal Wheel was also sent flying away like a huge meteorite. It left behind a trail of light as it flew towards the distant sky.

Carrying on, another valley on dragon island burst open. A huge brass trigrams split the sky and headed towards the ghost town. It strikes the ancient monolith below with power worth tens of thousands of thunder claps. But... the terrifying power brought about by brass trigrams was unable to shake up the divine monolith. It was sent flying like the former three.

Soon after, the metal engraving, the divine halberd, the Eternal Wheel, and the brass trigrams bombarded the ancient monolith continuously. The explosive sound kept reverberating in the ears, the entire ghost town was shaking. But even so, the divine monolith was not damaged in the slightest. Soon after, two rays of light also came from where the dragons were besieging the ancient city. That came from a hundred meter long Ancestral Dragon's Horn, it was glinting with multicolored light. The Ancestral Dragon's Claw was as sharp as the divine blade, it was very dazzling as it tore the sky apart and attacked the divine monolith below.

Today, explosive sound kept reverberating at the ghost town that had remained silent for countless years. Even the sky was covered by the bizarre light. Although the rain of blood stopped a long time ago, it was even more terrifying now. The ancient city was pervaded by an invisible baleful aura.

Under the attack of the Ancestral Dragon's Horn and divine tools like the Buddha's Eternal Wheel, the ancient monolith trembled violently. And just at this time, all the dragons flew over there. All of their magic spells were aimed at the divine monolith. It was very obvious that their final goal was that Demonic Well. It seemed like that place was connected to an exotic world. Only... It was

sealed by the ancient monolith, which prevented the other forces from entering.

The countless amount of skeletons outside the ghost town all looked up at the sky. At this moment, it seemed like they had been embedded with souls. As far as the eyes could see, the sea of bones was enveloped by a layer of dim bluish-green radiance. This was the light of departed spirit. They fused together to form a pressure as great as the furious ocean, and surged up violently towards the dragons in the sky.

The dragons in the sky also didn't dare to stay idle to look at the dim bluish-green light. One after another divine rays descended, and left many huge cracks on the deathly light screen. They penetrated the light screen and smashed the endless white bones below into pieces.

It was very obvious that these skeleton army was protecting the ghost town. Waves of mournful whistle that made one's scalp feel numb resounded from the sea of bones every now and then. The sound of ancient battlefield seemed to cut through the time-space continuum and transmitted here. Just by hearing it would cause one's hair to stand on end. The dragons had no other choice but to spare some of their energy to observe this ancient battlefield.

With the Ancestral Dragon's Horn, Buddha's Eternal Wheel, and so on bombarding the divine monolith unceasingly, the ghost town was already shaken up. Xiao Chen and the rest couldn't stay in the vicinity of the plaza anymore. That place was truly the eye of a hurricane, all the attacks were concentrated over there.

The jet-black metal engraving, the resplendent divine halberd ^1], and the ancient brass trigrams were clearly divine artifacts on the same level as Buddha's Eternal Wheel. They once made an appearance in the legendary tales. There were divine artifacts of unmatched strength.

The Eternal Wheel belonged to Buddha, that was without a doubt. As for the owner of the other divine artifacts, they should be from the same era or at least on the same level. Only... it was unknown whether they were still alive or not. But one thing was certain, the Ancestral Dragon from the past generation was long dead. Otherwise the Ancestral Dragon's Horn and Claw wouldn't separate from its main body and showed up by itself.

"The legendary weapons, who was their previous wielder?" A lot of people had this kind of thoughts. Even though they've heard of a few divine artifacts, they didn't really know as to who was their previous wielder.

The divine monolith was already nearing its limit. It seemed like it would fall at any given time. After all, it was bearing powerful attacks from all sides, and still had to seal the Demonic Well underneath, it seemed to be losing its strength to resist. However, just at this time, those fence that encompassed the plaza suddenly erupted with resplendent rays of light that seemed to harmonize with the divine monolith's radiance. They began to work together to resist the power from the outside world.

"Could those really be tombstone of the ancients?!" Someone cried out in shock. After all, those stone tablet had too much resemblance, and it was in this ghost town and all.

It was just like the stone fence and divine monolith had become one, they formed a dazzling light screen that enveloped the entire plaza. Fortunately, Xiao Chen and the rest had already retreated from the plaza. Otherwise they would be trapped within.

The dragons and divine artifacts seemed like they didn't want to give up the

opportunity today, they kept attacking the divine monolith unceasingly. Xiao Chen and the rest were unable to stand straight at all in the vicinity of the plaza. They quickly retreated, they wanted to use this chance to escape from the ghost town. However, they were unable to find the exit. This ancient city was just like a maze, all the streets seemed so similar, they were tangled up and incomparably complicated. While on the run, they stepped into a hall unknowingly.

In front of the hall with imposing aura, there was a block of jet-black monolith. Three ancient characters were carved on the surface: Demon Execution Hall. This place gave people a distinctive pressure, those three huge characters seemed to have voiced out the purpose of this place.

“Swish!”

A huge shadow flit by, everyone looked up in surprise. A twenty meter tall human-shaped figure stepped across at lightning speed. It disappeared in the gaps of the hall. That couldn't be a human, he was too big, but his movement was as soundless as the wind. It was difficult to trace him.

A chilly wind brushed past. Among the ancient halls, the bloody doors swayed unceasingly while letting out a creaking sound. It was especially frightening.

Everyone did not pass through the halls, they took a detour and continue onward. However, they didn't walk too far away from the ancient street. Another ancient and magnificent building appeared before their eyes. There was a similar black monolith standing in front of the hall. Three ancient characters were carved on the surface: Fallen Deity Hall.

This was clearly related to the Demon Extermination Hall. “Extermination” and “Fallen” explained everything.

The survivors felt a nip in the air, nobody dared to scout the area. Everyone took a detour and bypassed this place. After that they slowly forged ahead. They wanted to escape from this ancient city, the mood was very heavy. All of them didn't know if they could leave this place alive.

The crowd gradually scattered, many people began to look for an exit by themselves. Not long later, a miserable shriek resounded. Xiao Chen and Lawrence rushed forward at high-speed, but they only saw a meat paste on the street gushing out bloody fog. There was a one meter long huge claw mark on the ground. Apparently, that person was flattened by a strange giant creature!

They cautiously probed their surroundings. Xiao Chen and Lawrence cast a glance at one another and retreated at lightning speed. They could feel a huge monster hiding in the dark. It seemed like it was about to assault them with the claws. Even though they didn't see it clearly, that kind of feeling couldn't be wrong.

They quickly ran away from that area. And soon after, a miserable shriek once more resounded from there. Obviously, someone rushed to the scene and met up with misfortune. The three skeletons followed closely at the side. Rowena and Yan Qing Cheng also followed closely behind. This was a really frightening ancient city, whether they could safely depart from this place was full of unknowns.

Passing through one after another streets, they saw many grand halls along the sides of the road. There were actually so many demonic shrines that were unheard of. Xiao Chen and the gang still couldn't find the exit of the ghost town. They could feel the energy fluctuation emitted by the divine monolith at the heart of the town. But no matter how much they searched for the gate at the opposite side, they couldn't find the real exit. The ancient streets kept diverging them from the main road, it seemed like their sense of direction had been

affected by a bizarre power, they were unable to distinguish left from right.

“Rumble.....!”

It sounded like the gallops of ten thousand horses, the ancient buildings in the surrounding trembled violently. Xiao Chen and the gang hastily rushed into the depths of an alley. By relying on their intuition, it seemed like a group of huge monsters were surging forward on the main street. The baleful aura swept past with a rumbling sound.

Chapter 92 – There really is Ghost

Miserable shrieks that caused one's blood to run cold were transmitted from a distant place. It sounded like someone was ripped apart by unknown huge creatures. Xiao Chen and the gang looked at each other in dismay, the ancient city was getting more and more terrifying, yet they hadn't encountered one of those hideous organism or demonic creature that roamed about in the ghost town from beginning to end. They knew once they did, they will inevitably be caught up in a life and death situation.

"Can we..... really get away from here?" The extraordinarily beautiful Rowena broke out in cold sweat, her face was somewhat pale.

"Maybe." Xiao Chen seriously had no idea, this ghost town was clearly enclosed by an extremely incredible ancient spell. Otherwise it was impossible for them to get lost all the time.

"Ah.....!"

A miserable shriek resounded from the main street not far away, Lawrence quickly flew over there, and surveyed the surrounding from an alley. After that, his face suddenly twisted, he flew back and shouted, "Not good! I saw those Yin Warriors are also making their moves now."

They saw several hundreds of Yin Warrior and Celestial Warrior when they entered the ancient city earlier, they seemed like ancient fossils. They once turned a blind eye to numerous practitioners, but they are making their moves now, this is definitely not a good news.

Xiao Chen walked to the other end of the alley to survey, he merely saw two Yin Warriors dragging the corpse of a few practitioners toward a distant location. It seemed like they didn't spend a great deal of effort to eliminate those practitioners. This is really too terrifying.

"We must think of something, this city is too dangerous for us." Xiao Chen's mood was somewhat heavy, it didn't seem like there was any feasible means to get out of here.

The entire place turned silent for a moment. "What kind of monsters are you? Show yourself!" At a distant place, the Solitary Sword Demon's voice suddenly transmitted here. It seemed like he ran into trouble. Following closely, waves of terrifying growls was transmitted over, along with the angry roar of the Solitary Sword Demon and the ear-piercing hiss of iron sword tearing the void apart.

After a burst of intense battle, the Solitary Sword Demon let out a long howl. It sounded like he was wounded and ran away. This made Rowena and Yan Qing Cheng change their countenance at the same time, they knew how terrifying was the Solitary Sword Demon. If even he was unable to deal with the vicious thing that appeared within the city walls, then the other people wouldn't even stand a chance.

Instead of entering those expansive main street again, Xiao Chen and the gang rather forge ahead within the alley. It should be comparatively safer since it was unlikely for the huge monsters to show up here. They were exceptionally careful when passing through the doors of the every residences, because according to the information they gathered, each of those former residence was occupied by a vicious beasts. When they just entered the ancient city, many practitioners were eaten alive within those residences.

Fortunately, the vicious beasts within those former residences did not come

out. Otherwise it'd be an incomparably scary event. Just thinking about it, if every vicious beasts in the ancient city were to move, would cause people's scalp to feel numb.

Within the dusky alley, the pavement was spread with black rocks that had been through the vicissitudes of time. It was emitting an ancient aura. Xiao Chen and the gang turned left and right, but they still couldn't find a way out. They felt it was impossible to leave this ghost town.

A "Tap! Tap!" sound suddenly reverberated within the alley. The eerie noise filled the quiet alley, it caused Xiao Chen and the gang to feel a nip in the air. Practitioners on their level were all light-footed, so this was definitely not a sound they made.

It sounded like someone who wore wooden clogs was following them unhurriedly. Xiao Chen suddenly turned around, but he didn't find anything. At the same time, the "Tap! Tap!" sound also faded away.

"Go! Don't pay much attention to it, we should leave this district as soon as possible." Xiao Chen knew they finally ran into an unknown demonic beast. They were already being targeted.

Rowena had a worried expression. Yan Qing Cheng who had her power sealed was also unable to remain calm. The two rushed in front of the three skeletons, and ran forward at high-speed. Xiao Chen and Lawrence also raised their speed, while taking precautions at the same time, for fear that the demonic beasts would launch a preemptive strike on them.

"Tap! Tap! Tap.....!" The sound suddenly reverberated again, and it actually came from the front.

“Ah.....!” Rowena cried out in fear, she immediately turned around and ran, Yan Qing Cheng also didn’t lack behind.

A chilly wind was blown from the front, Xiao Chen and Lawrence raised their power to the limit. Looking at the corner of the dusky alley, they could see a burial cloth flapping along with the chilly wind. More than half of the cloth was exposed, it was emitting a fiendish aura. The “Tap! Tap!” sound came to a halt, they could only see that piece of cloth flapping along with the wind, they couldn’t see the demonic beast that hid at the other corner of the alley.

Rowena and Yan Qing Cheng already hid at the back, Xiao Chen and Lawrence took a glance at each other. They knew it was impossible to break away from that demonic beast now, the other party had already marked them as targets. They could only settle this by force. The two of them walked forward at the same time, the three skeletons also followed them closely. They also felt very restless.

“Ah.....!”

A miserable shriek suddenly resounded from a distant place, it was especially frightening in this quiet ancient street. Xiao Chen and the gang immediately halted their footsteps. And that flapping cloth in front also moved away all of a sudden, that nerve-wracking fiendish aura faded away. The sound of the footsteps rushed towards a distant location.

That place turned deathly silent, after a long time later, the few of them were convinced that unknown demonic beast had really left.

“So scary..... How frightening.....” Rowena lightly patted her towering breasts, she said with a startled expression, “Although we didn’t see what it was clearly, I

knew we were in grave dangers just now.”

“Fortunately, it already left.” Lawrence also let out a breath, he was actually very nervous too. After all, this is a terrifying ghost town that had already snatched away the life of many practitioners.

“Tap! Tap! Tap.....!” The sound of the footsteps reverberated in the empty streets once more. It came from their back! The few who just loosened up didn’t even had the leisure to relax, their face immediately froze up.

“Why is this happening.....” Rowena’s voice was trembling, Yan Qing Cheng’s face also twisted, they quickly turned around.

This time, Xiao Chen didn’t fall back. He decided to settle this once and for all. The other party had already locked onto them, rather than running with their tails tucked in between their legs, it was better to settle this as soon as possible. As if he had understood his intention, Lawrence followed him and rushed towards the path they came from.

However, when they rushed backwards, they realized in a flash; This doesn’t seem to be the same demonic beast from earlier, because it didn’t possess that nerve-wracking baleful aura, but they could also feel great dangers all the same.

“Swish!”

A huge shadow appeared in the middle of the alley, blocking their path. It looked like a malevolent demon, it was making threatening gestures. Behind that shadow was a pitch-black fog, they couldn’t see a sliver of light. It seemed like the gateway to hell was standing right there.

Without any unnecessary words, Xiao Chen used his hand as a sword, he immediately engulfed it with a resplendent divine radiance, and sent the unstoppable sword-qi slashing forward. Lawrence used the void power to form a rain of light, and enveloped the target.

“Crack! Crack!” The sound of bones snapping could be heard. Following closely, the watery blood splashed everywhere. It was emitting a steaming heat, the scarlet blood flowed along the pavement. This was definitely not a dead person, it was clearly a living creature.

“Gu-lulu...”

One human head rolled out from the black fog, it kept rolling until Xiao Chen’s foot. It had a malevolent appearance, it must have been really terrified when it was still alive.

“Ah.....” Rowena who was behind them let out a shriek.

Without taking another glance, Xiao Chen had already recognized this face. This was a young practitioner who was together with them not too long ago. But everyone had scattered all over the place. This person was clearly not killed by their attacks just now. Because his neck seemed to be torn apart, there was also a deep scar on his face.

The black fog ahead was still drifting around, but that huge shadow was already gone. They could vaguely see a figure standing in place within the black fog.

“Swish!”

Rays of light flashed, Lawrence executed his attacks, one after another light screen was pouring down like water curtain. Its target was the black fog. At the same time, Xiao Chen fearlessly stepped forward, the North Star light screen broke away from his left palm and enveloped the black fog.

“Crunch! Crunch.....!” It resembled the sound of crunching, this kind of unpleasant noise transmitted from within the black fog. At the same time, the black fog started to dance wildly, it clashed fiercely with the two light screens that was covering it. It wanted to break free.

“Pssh! Pssh!”

It was like the sound of water dripping onto red-hot iron. The point of contact between the black fog and light screen kept producing this kind of noise. At the same time, a nauseating stench wafted through the air. A yellowish dead water flowed out from within the black fog.

“Demonic Beast, it’s a Demonic Ghost!” Rowena cried out in alarm.

“Kill it quick, otherwise it will attract other evil spirits!” Yan Qing Cheng’s face also changed abruptly, she yelled urgently. Although she was Xiao Chen’s enemy, she didn’t wish anything to happen to them now.

Actually, she didn’t need to say anything, Xiao Chen and Lawrence were decisive people, they were already preparing to execute their strongest attacks. Lawrence completely sealed this space, he couldn’t care less about the stench of the corpse now. The space was enveloped by the green light screen. Him, Xiao

Chen, and the black fog already found themselves in the bizarre space. This was Lawrence's battle space.

"Xiao Chen, do it quick, while I am restraining him!"

The ripple-like void power restrained that black fog, and Xiao Chen was not affected at all. The North Star light screen appeared on his left hand again, and due to the fluctuation of his state of mind, the resplendent star on his right hand actually transformed into a crescent light blade.

"Kill!"

The light screen in Xiao Chen's left hand enlarged, it protected him like a light shield. He quickly dashed forward, the crescent blade in his right hand slashed out like a Heavenly Blade, it ruthlessly tore the black fog apart.

"Wuah.....!" And ear-piercing and mournful screech reverberated from within the black fog.

"It seems like the Demonic Beasts are not that strong, both of us are sufficient to get rid of it." Lawrence's confidence skyrocketed, he could clearly feel that the opponent was unable to break through his confinement. It was already unable to move the moment he sealed its movement, and Xiao Chen's powerful attack was unquestionable, it was more than enough to destroy this threat.

The crescent light blade was whirling within the black fog, it resembled a new moon descending between the black cloud. It kept eliminating the darkness. The stench was indeed incomparably nauseating, even when they were holding their breath, they could still feel that nasty odor.

Xiao Chen used his formidable strength to disperse the black fog, a seven to eight year old boy revealed itself. His clothing was very ancient, it was similar to the diagram carved on rock wall. It emitted an ancient aura. He didn't have a trace of life, his dead-fish eyes were devoid of any light. He was at such an innocent age, yet there was a hint of malicious aura. He firmly fixed his gaze on Xiao Chen and Lawrence. His tattered ancient cloth was already shattered into pieces by the crescent light blade, but his body was not chopped off. His skin already had cracks, it looked just like fish scales. The light blade left one after another marks on his petite body that was as hard as steel. The yellowish dead water precisely flowed out from those tiny wounds.

"It really is a ghost!" Lawrence was somewhat shocked, he believed there was god on earth, because that was the reason why he trained so hard, but he didn't believe in ghosts. In his opinion, gods were experts that evolved from man, but what is ghost? After death, everything will be lost, everything ought to return to nothingness.

"The existence of undead creatures were reasonable, since their souls were not destroyed, but a ghost....." Lawrence was extremely bewildered as he looked at this young child that emitted the stench of corpse. He couldn't feel the fluctuation of soul from the body of the other party. There was only a malicious fiendish aura.

"Let's forget about that for now, we should eliminate it first." Xiao Chen controlled the crescent light blade to hack at it unceasingly. After losing the protection of the black fog, this fierce-looking "ghost" was not indestructible anymore.

Within the glaring radiance, his two arms were already chopped off by the light blade. During this process, it actually emitted a metallic noise, it was like a clash

between metals. Soon after, Xiao Chen beheaded him with all his might, causing his head to tumble-down. It was not worth to take pity on something as ominous as this evil spirit. Going easy on him would only bring disaster upon themselves.

After he was beheaded, this ancient “evil spirit” was actually still struggling. Its body trembled slightly, its head was also trying to roll away. Lawrence didn’t give him the chance to get away. Xiao Chen also didn’t let him slip away, the two worked together to crush his body completely.

Chapter 93 – Burial Cloth

Lawrence's green battle space opened widely, the stinky odor of the corpse spread all over the place. Rowena and Yan Qing Cheng who were at the back almost threw up. Even the three skeletons seemed to hate this kind of fiendish aura very much. They hid at a place the wind could not reach.

Only after a long time later did the alley return to peace.

"Let withdraw from here quickly." Xiao Chen took the lead and rushed towards another alley. The rest followed him closely. They knew these thing were very formidable, just now they only killed a "young evil spirit", if they were to encounter a normal adult "evil spirit", whether they could win or not was hard to say.

Especially that evil spirit that was wearing a burial cloth from before. If it really appeared in front of them, then it will certainly be a very terrifying thing.

"Hide!" Xiao Chen quickly rushed into the shadow of an alley. The few people behind him also concealed themselves. He discovered dangers ahead of time, it was a response originated from spiritual sense, it was one's natural instinct to seek luck and avoid calamity. This was the pure spiritual awareness of a practitioner that had reached a certain level.

Just at this time, a chilly wind brushed past in the sky. The sound of wind blowing sent a chill down people's spine. One figure quickly flew past on the top of the alley.

Although it flew past at high-speed, the few people here were not weak either,

so they were able to see what kind of creature it was in an instant. Their complexion changed over and over again. That was a human figure with a pair of grayish wings, but his head seemed like a skull. There was only a layer of dry skin sticking on it. Its eye sockets were incomparably empty, it seemed very frightening. That was definitely not a god-like existence like the Fallen Angel, it was like a genuine “Birdman” that was already dead. However, he could soar in the sky freely.

The chilly wind rose again, cold air enveloped the area. The few of them went into hiding again. There were three birdmen flying past this time.

“This is really such a damned place!” Even Xiao Chen who had willpower as strong as steel exposed this kind of feeling.

All of a sudden, Qinguang Wang and the other two skeletons were getting restless. They fixed the spiritual light in their pair of eyes at the other end of the alley.

The three skeletons seemed to be very sensitive to the baleful aura in the ghost town. They actually detected it earlier than Xiao Chen and the others this time.

They only saw a shadow slowly extending over from the ground. Soon after, a bone-chilling wind was blown here. Following closely, the burial cloth that was carrying a fiendish aura exposed itself from the corner of the alley. It was flapping along with the wind. Everyone felt their scalp had gone numb, this terrifying monster still chased after them in the end. They originally thought they had already broke away from it.

The original color of the burial cloth was already unable to be distinguished, because it was brimming with the black bloodstain. It produced a “flapping”

sound along with the chilly wind, the gloomy alley was so frightening and bizarre. The baleful aura bubbled up violently for an instant, a lofty and awe-inspiring shadow turned around from the corner.

His entire body was shrouded in darkness. A black fog was drifting at that place. And his body was wrapped thoroughly by that burial cloth. It was hard to see his real face clearly. Only a pair of eyes could be seen clearly, it was throbbing like a bluish-green will-o'-wisp. No fluctuation of soul could be detected, there was only the stinky smell of rotten corpse, as well as that baleful aura.

They couldn't run away anymore. This evil spirit had clearly locked onto them already, they could only settle this once and for all.

That lofty shadow walked without making any sound, only the frightening flapping sound of the burial cloth could be heard. A pair of deathly eyes stared at Xiao Chen and the gang.

"Do it!" Xiao Chen was fearless, he faced the bone-chilling wind and dashed forward. The North Star light screen appeared in his left hand, it transformed into a seven starlight shield and protected him. The crescent light blade also appeared in his right hand, the rays of light was extremely glaring, it was just like a genuine divine sword.

The crescent light blade drew a beautiful trajectory. It was like a comet streaking across the sky from outer space. The resplendent divine radiance illuminated the entire dusky alley. It went straight for the evil spirit's neck. The black fog was dispersed, the evil ghost's lofty body was exposed. With the black burial cloth winding around, it looked like an imposing tombstone.

“Cling! Clang!” The ear-piercing metallic sound caused the eardrums to ache. The evil spirit’s right hand was as fast as lightning, it gave rise to a chilly wind that shielded its neck, and deflected the crescent light blade.

That was an adamantium-like demonic claw. A layer of black skin was sticking on the parched joint. It was a genuine claw of the evil spirit. Just looking at it made one’s scalp feel numb.

Brilliant rays flickered, the crescent light blade turned around, its speed had reached the peak, and targeted the evil spirit’s chest. At the same time, Lawrence moved both hands repeatedly, a prison made of void power fell towards the ominous ghost from the sky at high-speed.

The ominous ghost did not shrink back at all. On the contrary, it took large strides forward. The right demonic claw deflected the crescent light blade once more. At the same time, the left hand stretched forward. It actually destroyed the green cage on top of its head with raw power. The heavy smell of rotten corpse pervaded the air. His left hand and right hand was substantially different. The left hand was incomparably swollen, it was like the hand had been soaked in water for too many days. It was very bloated and bulky, but the power it possessed was not much weaker than the right hand.

Lawrence and Xiao Chen cast a glance at one another, this evil spirit was too powerful. Perhaps they would have a hard time against it. However, there was no point in running, their only hope of survival was to fight to the death.

Xiao Chen raised the level of his secret technique to the limit. His long black hair fluttered hysterically. After that, the North Star light screen in his left hand and the crescent light blade in his right hand merged together. The seven stars were embedded into the crescent moon. The light blade became incomparably bright. It was being held in Xiao Chen’s right hand.

He dashed forward without fear. His tall and straight body left behind one after another afterimages like the flickering light and passing shadows. The first slash was sent towards the evil spirit's waist. He obviously wanted to chop the evil spirit in half at the waist. The evil spirit seemed to be aware of Xiao Chen's power and the sharpness of the light blade. It didn't use its demonic claws to block this time, and quickly dodged to the side. After that, it sent a sharp claw towards Xiao Chen's heart.

After Xiao Chen's power increased, what improved the most was his speed. He made a somersault without the time to ask a question. He jumped high into the sky in that instant, and avoided the demonic claw. And with the head and legs upside down, he swooped downwards. The light blade in his hand emitted a glaring divine radiance, he slashed vertically at the evil spirit below.

The evil spirit let out a growl. It fell back one step at a time, huge cracks appeared with every steps it took. One could imagine just how much pressure he was bearing.

Just at this time, Lawrence also raised his void power to the limit and made his move. The green light screen broke up this place into several pieces. It took shape of a few overlapping spaces. Not only did he temporarily sealed the evil spirit's path to retreat, he even wanted to use this kind of space to rip the evil spirit apart.

"Creak! Creak.....!"

The evil spirit's body produced this kind of sound. It seemed like the bones in his entire body was dislocated. It tried to resist being crushed by Lawrence's void power.

This provided Xiao Chen with a golden opportunity. Even though his body was tall and straight, its movement was like the wind and lightning. Moreover, it was as agile as the light and shadow. Xiao Chen twisted his body in the air, and sent another slash towards the evil spirit that was temporarily trapped.

The evil spirit's body was bounded, but both of its hands were able to break free. It crossed its hand to block the incoming attack from the sky, then it let out an angry growl. Waves of black fog spouted towards the sky from its mouth.

Xiao Chen's body emitted rays of light, a layer of light screen protected his body like a shield. He was not afraid of those undead miasma invading his body.

“Cling! Clang!”

The light blade firmly hacked onto that swollen demonic claw. Even though the netherworld light flickered and protected the evil spirit, after Xiao Chen's light blade and North Star Constellation merged, it was seriously too sharp, it actually left a deep cut, that bloated demonic hand was almost chopped off. The yellowish dead water splashed everywhere. The light blade was stuck between the bones on the demonic hand.

“Shriek.....!” Even though it was an evil ghost, it seemed like he was able to feel pain, and let out a bone-chilling screech. And then with a “boom”, it broke free from Lawrence's overlapping space, and was about to pounce on Xiao Chen who was falling from the sky.

Xiao Chen's movement was too nimble, he flipped over like a gale, and got back to the upright position, then he used his leg to firmly kick on the pair of wide open demonic claws before he tumbled towards the ground. Everything

was performed smoothly.

“Shriek.....!” The evil spirit let out a bellow of rage. After being stepped on by Xiao Chen’s foot, that sharp light blade that was embedded on its demonic hand actually disintegrated, and the shockwave actually destroyed one of its demonic claw. The yellowish dead water splashed all over the place.

The burial cloth flapped along with the wind, the evil spirit let out a screech, the bluish-green radiance throbbed violently in its pair of eyes. Its destroyed left hand actually became swollen again. After that, the broken hand actually regenerated. Another rotten ghost hand reemerged in good condition.

Xiao Chen sucked in a mouthful of cold air. Lawrence furrowed his brows, and said, “His power is indeed very frightening. If not because he is not very bright, our condition might be worst.”

“Shriek.....!” The evil spirit let out a screech and ran towards them. It gave rise to waves of black fog, the ground actually started to shake when it ran with all its might, one after another huge cracks appeared on the ground. One could imagine just how much power it possessed.

“Thousandfold Overlaps!” Lawrence’s handsome yet sickly face welled up with the color of blood. He had executed his most powerful technique. The void power trapped the evil spirit, and the folding space tried to tear it apart.

“Unite!” Xiao Chen took large strides forward, his eyes were as sharp as the cutting edge of a sword. The light blade in his hand seemed to have melted, and became one with his right palm. The light blade was all pulled back into his palm. The right palm shone with a divine radiance, it was almost transparent. The mark of North Star Constellation was on the back of the hand. The hollow of his palm

was filled with a full moon.

“Bang!!”

A palm blade firmly sliced the evil spirit’s tiny arm, a terrifying wound appeared in place, and dead water rushed forth. The radiance flickered, and the palm blade left behind one after another afterimages. Xiao Chen entirely transformed into a streak of light beam. He revolved around the sluggish evil spirit and kept attacking non-stop.

It was being torn apart by the overlapping space. Even though the evil spirit tried to attack Xiao Chen, it was unable to land any decisive blow. It urgently let out an angry screech. Although the netherworld light that sprung up from its dead body blocked the palm blade, it still received heavy injuries.

Xiao Chen’s light palm caused Lawrence to feel deeply startled. If he was not facing this terrifying evil spirit, but a practitioner on the same level, Xiao Chen’s strength would be unparalleled!

However... the evil spirit’s power exceeded Lawrence and Xiao Chen’s expectation. The burial cloth abruptly trembled, a thick deathly aura spread over a large area. The netherworld light destroyed Lawrence’s void power, the green overlapping space faded away instantly. Lawrence was sent flying by his own disordered power. Trace of blood spilled from the corner of his mouth.

And Xiao Chen was also forced backwards by the powerful force. To make it even worst, the evil spirit was targeting him. It left behind an afterimage in its original position and appeared in front of Xiao Chen. It spread out a pair of demonic claws and sent them downwards.

Xiao Chen frantically raised his power, and evaded at top speed. Then he executed an incomparably powerful counterattack. The shadows of the man and ghost seemed to have tangled together. Apparently, the burial cloth was an extremely powerful cursed artifact. It gave rise to the chilly wind that caused Xiao Chen to feel dizzy. One after another netherworld light intertwined in his surroundings, it seemed like the ghosts were dancing.

The evil spirit was really too strong. It was using the bizarre power of the burial cloth to lay out a “domain” that belonged to him. That was a special “Ghost Domain”. Even if Xiao Chen had unparalleled strength, even if that evil spirit was scared of his light palm, he was still being forced to be on the defensive side.

In the end, he was forced to jump high up into the sky. He wanted to break away from that bizarre ghost domain, but the evil spirit also soared into the sky. It was sticking close to him like a glue. When the demonic claw waved around, one after another deathly light was produced. The netherworld aura tried to engulf Xiao Chen.

“Break!” Xiao Chen shouted loudly, his right palm and the demonic claw came into contact. It was too late for the evil spirit to dodge this time, it could only grab onto Xiao Chen’s palm blade.

“Crick! Crack!”

The sound of bones shattering into pieces could be heard. The demonic claw was actually destroyed. The palm blade that was made from the fusion of North Star and Moon Blade was truly unstoppable. Even the evil spirit suffered a heavy loss. However, just at this time, the burial cloth on the evil spirit’s body flipped over, and quickly wrapped the resplendent divine radiance on Xiao Chen’s right palm. The black fog rolled over and over, which immediately submerged the rays of light.

All of this happened too fast, every actions were completed while they were still in the sky. The evil spirit let out a growl. The burial cloth all around its body flipped over, wanting to wrap Xiao Chen within. The black fog flooded the entire alley, the aura of death spread all over the area. This place appeared incomparably frightening.

Xiao Chen struggled to get free with all his might, but the burial cloth was very bizarre. He was actually unable to destroy it. The unstoppable light palm also had a hard time cutting it. It was only a matter of time before Xiao Chen was completely swallowed up.

Chapter 94 – Spiritual Divine Light

It was already too late for Lawrence's assistance, all of this happened too fast. Just now he was sent flying very far away, he was too far away from Xiao Chen, the void power wouldn't be able to reach this area. As for Rowena who was at the sideline, she didn't have that kind of power.

But just at this time, three streaks of white light rushed into the sky like three streaks of lightning. The three skeletons that didn't make a move until now finally made their move after Xiao Chen was caught up in danger. Since the battle began until now, the three fellows watched at the sideline, they were unusually calm. It seemed like they were looking for the evil spirit's weak point.

“Bang!”

They bumped into the evil spirit at the same time, six bony claws violently tore apart the burial cloth, and saved Xiao Chen from the dangers of being wrapped. At the same time, Xiao Chen quickly took action. After his legs clashed a few times with the evil spirit's legs, he sent a horizontal slash towards the evil spirit's throat with his left hand.

By the time they landed on the ground, Xiao Chen's right palm had already broken free from the burial cloth. The three skeletons split up and tore the burial cloth from three different directions. They wanted to tear it apart from the evil spirit's body.

The burial cloth was a bizarre cursed item, the three skeletons had seen everything clearly, and Xiao Chen already had a profound understanding. He almost paid a huge price because of this just now, he also started to tear the evil cloth that was covered in black bloodstain.

The black netherworld light flickered, the burial cloth actually let out a screech. It was an incomparably mournful screech, just hearing it caused people's scalp to feel numb. The black fog violently rolled over and over in this alley.

"Shriek.....!" The evil spirit seemed very anxious, the burial cloth trembled violently in hope of destroying Xiao Chen and the rest.

Just at this time Lawrence also rushed over, the overlapping space enveloped it again. The green rays of light made the evil spirit felt as if it was caught up in a swamp.

"Quick! Pull the burial cloth apart, he is not as strong as we thought, his power came from this evil cloth!" Xiao Chen yelled at Lawrence. He was able to uncover this secret during close combat. It was the burial cloth which granted the evil spirit this kind of power.

"What..... The burial cloth?!" Lawrence kept sending the green-colored void power to confine the burial cloth and pulled it outward with all his might.

"Shriek.....!" The evil spirit bellowed in rage, the burial cloth that covered its face was already tore apart by Lunhui Wang. Half of its rotten face was exposed. Eerie green light emitted from its eye sockets, and the messy blood-colored hair was spiky. This kind of rotten corpse was especially intimidating. It was a genuine evil spirit.

The evil spirit was getting desperate, if the burial cloth was torn apart, his power will diminish substantially. He struggled intensely, and then spouted a few yellowish gas from his mouth. It transformed into a glaring light sword that attacked Xiao Chen and Lawrence. This was the strongest demonic-qi he

accumulated in his body.

It forced Xiao Chen and the rest to fall back.

“Shriek.....!” The evil spirit screeched loudly. The instant Xiao Chen and Lawrence were forced to take a step back, he shook the burial cloth with all his might. The inexhaustible aura of death spread all over the place, the black fog rolled, and pushed Qinguang Wang, Yanluo Wang, and Lunhui Wang away in an instant.

“Clatter! Clatter!” The three skeletons’ framework collapsed and scattered on the street. The white bones all over the ground were especially unpleasant to the eyes.

Xiao Chen was downhearted, but his tension immediately loosened up after he notice that framework was not destroyed. They were just separated from the joints, and he actually saw Qinguang Wang’s skull flickering with specks of radiance. It seemed to be telling him that they were fine.

Three cunning skeletons..... Xiao Chen no longer worried about them.

The evil spirit viciously gazed at Xiao Chen and Lawrence. Then it dragged its rotten legs and walked towards them in large strides. Traces of yellowish dead water was left on the surface of the ground. Its full attention was focused on the two people ahead. But just at this time, when he was about to get past the three skeletons’ skull, the skulls jumped up at high-speed, and shot towards the evil spirit like three streaks of white light.

At the same time, Xiao Chen and Lawrence also made their moves. A blazing

sword-qi and light rain enveloped the evil spirit.

The evil spirit let out a screech, it waved one demonic claw towards the three skeletons' skull. The other demonic claw was used to fend off Xiao Chen and Lawrence's attack. As expected, the skulls were sent flying by him, but three spiritual light shot out from the skulls like three streaks of lightning and pierced the evil spirit's eyes.

"Shriek.....!" Like it received a devastating attack, the evil spirit suddenly fell to the ground while facing upwards. It rolled around like crazy on the alley.

Without any delay, Xiao Chen rushed over quickly and grasped the burial cloth firmly. And then he pulled it in one breath, the burial cloth flipped over, it produced a flapping sound, and gave rise to thick black fog. It finally separated from the body of the evil spirit. Lawrence also rushed over and used void power to confine the burial cloth in a tiny space.

After losing the burial cloth, the evil spirit's body was completely exposed. It was a truly frightening scene. Half of its body was completely swollen, it was already rotten. And the other half was like a dried up tangerine skin. The parched skin was sticking to the framework which gave off a black light.

It was sinister and scary!

The evil spirit was still rolling on the ground, Xiao Chen took a step forward. He stepped on the evil spirit's neck ruthlessly. With a "snap", the sinister ghost head tumbled down. At the same time, three spiritual light rushed out from the evil spirit's eyes, and entered three skulls on the ground.

The evil spirit which had its head and body separated still did not become motionless. It actually struggled to get free, its headless body stood up straight, and pounced on Xiao Chen as fiercely as before. After losing the burial cloth, it was far weaker than its former self. It was already unable to threaten Xiao Chen's life.

Xiao Chen jumped high into the sky, he moved his hands unceasingly, and then threw the seal downward with all his might. A blazing divine radiance descended, and then with a "boom", the evil spirit was torn apart.

Even though they knew the evil spirit wouldn't pose any threat to them after losing the burial cloth, Lawrence was still very shocked to see this killing move of Xiao Chen. He couldn't help but ask, "Why did I never see you use this killing move before?"

Xiao Chen descended from the sky, and said, "How would I dare to use it before, this is a technique I saw on the fence around the divine monolith. It seemed to be the legendary God Slayer Technique. I never practiced it before, how would I dare to use it on the evil spirit? Just now I felt there was no more dangers, so I'm just using it as a test. Who could have thought that the God Slayer Technique was this powerful. Indeed, the better secret technique requires one with compatible ability to exhibit its full potential.

"Is that so....." Lawrence smiled slightly with his somewhat sickly yet handsome face. He had recorded many diagrams regarding the space from the fence at that plaza. It will surely be beneficial if given some time.

And Xiao Chen had also recorded quite a few killing moves. Not only was there the God Slayer Technique, there were also the Chaotic Three-Way Patterns, Eight Laws of Demon Suppression, *etc.*

After the evil spirit was ripped apart, the black fog dissipated quickly. Rowena and Yan Qing Cheng also came closer at this time. They felt very fearful just looking at the remains on the ground. And Xiao Chen destroyed the head with another attack.

Lawrence opened up the sealed space, and threw the burial cloth onto the ground. All of them could feel a bizarre energy fluctuation.

Yan Qing Cheng was watching this battle from the sideline all along, she seemed somewhat excited. She couldn't help but start to talk, "This burial cloth was handed down from ancient times, not only was it still in good condition to this day, it is bearing a frightening demonic-qi and powerful energy. It was definitely stained by the blood of an extraordinary figure."

"Not bad, it was definitely encroached by the blood of a super powerful experts. Otherwise it wouldn't be this terrifying and bizarre." Lawrence spoke until here, then he turned his attention to the three skeletons at the side, and said, "It was thanks to the three of them. Otherwise we would be in a really dangerous situation just now. It never occurred to me that their spiritual lights are so strong. This is clearly a sign that they will be able to evolve into Sovereign Kings."

The three skeletons slowly assembled their framework. After that, they stretched their joints comically. But everyone clearly looked at them differently now, these three skeletons were definitely a perfect example of disguising oneself as swine to eat the tiger.

"Was it really a ghost? I couldn't feel any soul fluctuation from their body....." Lawrence whispered to himself. The condition of his injury was getting worse

after this battle, he seemed a little weak.

Xiao Chen also pondered for a while before he opened his mouth and said, “Maybe it was because the baleful aura in the ghost town was too heavy, which stirred up the residual thoughts within those corpse, and took shape of such a terrifying evil spirit. Perhaps..... the ghosts in the folklore were formed like this.”

Soon after, their gaze fell back to the burial cloth again. Judging from how easily Xiao Chen destroyed the evil spirit in the end, the evil spirit was not really that strong. The only reason they were unable to defeat it in the beginning was because this bloodstained burial cloth increased the power of the evil spirit.

“This adult evil spirit is not much stronger than the young evil spirit we eliminated earlier. It was only because of this cursed item, how do we deal with it?” Lawrence asked Xiao Chen.

In regards to this kind of demonic item that was filled with fiendish aura, no one had a favorable impression of it. Nobody was willing to use it as weapon. It didn't seem too likely for it to be refined either. Perhaps only an evil spirit would be able to refine it.

“How about giving it to the three of you?” Xiao Chen looked towards Qinguang Wang and the other two skeletons.

“Clack! Clack!” The three skeletons moved their jaws unceasingly. They waved their hands to refuse. At the same time, the lotus insignia on their foreheads emitted resplendent divine radiance. It made their framework appear as bright as the white jade, not a single trace of sinister aura could be found. On the contrary, they looked like the most perfect masterpiece under the heaven.

All of them thought it was weird, skeletons brimming with divine aura, it was really strange.

In the end, they used a slab to cover the burial cloth in the alley, then they quickly left this place. But... when they were about to turn at a corner, Xiao Chen clearly heard the door of a former residence opening with a “creak”. He suddenly turned around to take a look. He only saw a man wearing ancient cloth, he pulled that burial cloth from under the slab quickly, and floated back into the former residence.

In that instant, Xiao Chen felt a chill down his spine, because he saw the real face of that person clearly in the last second. It was actually a legendary immortal that had a golden statue in the human world! But... within that instance, he didn't feel any immortality on the other party's body. He also didn't feel any soul fluctuation, there was only a sinister baleful aura.

Xiao Chen quickly caught up with Lawrence and the rest, leaving that alley behind him. However, he was unable to remain calm, just what kind of place was this ancient city? Why..... Why did it become like this?! Just now, he definitely didn't see wrongly. His state of mind fluctuated violently, he thought of many possibilities, but he didn't tell Lawrence and the rest what he saw earlier, because that will only increase the anxiety.

They pushed their way through the ancient street, Xiao Chen became more cautious than ever. They remained at a respectful distance from the door of every former residences. It was hard to say what would be hiding in the former residence, it was even harder to predict what kind of dangers exist in this ancient city.

All of a sudden, waves of yelling noise entered their ears. The sound of battle was transmitted from an ancient street not far away, it seemed like there were

quite a few people.

“The line is empty, sit empty, silent movement are all empty. It would go head to head. Like the cranial longitudinal sword cut spring.....”

Xiao Chen heard Buddhist Yizhen’s voice. He walked out from this alley, and looked towards that ancient street. He only saw seven to eight practitioners having a fierce battle with two Yin Warriors. Buddhist Yizhen and Solitary Sword Demon were among them, they had laid down their desire for revenge at this moment, and worked together to confront a powerful enemy. Even that mysterious woman who was shrouded by colorful mist was among them.

The Yin Warrior was like an ancient fossil, their entire body was covered by the armor. He was standing at the same spot without moving an inch. The ancient bronze spear in his hand emitted one after another brilliance. It gave a hard time for a few young experts.

If it was not because the woman who was shrouded by colorful mist using the Law of Time to slow down its movement, those few people would already be in a dangerous situation. The Solitary Sword Demon was showing off his ability like a sharp sword, and the sword in his hand even caused the space to distort. His long sword emitted a whistling sound. He was definitely the strongest among the group.

Buddhist Yizhen seemed transcendental, when he was soaring in the sky, he seemed like the Gods and Buddhas. Lotus flower light were actually floating in his immediate surrounding. His entire person was brimming with Buddha nature. Thousands of Buddha Palm kept attacking that Yin Warrior. After he received enlightenment from the Buddha’s Eternal Wheel, he had successfully transformed. He is not much weaker than Solitary Sword Demon now.

Xiao Chen and Lawrence walked forward with large strides, their only hope for survival now is to work together. They decided to join the fighting group.

They had no choice but to admit, the Yin Warrior was indeed very strong. Only one of them was able to resist eight young experts, and it seemed like he was not very clear-headed. He definitely had a super terrifying strength. They were unable to read his state of mind, he looked like a stone statue no matter how they looked at him. One person fighting against eight experts, and he was still as silent and indifferent as in the past.....

Chapter 95 – Desperate Straits

“Overlapping Space!” Lawrence saw how the Law of Time slowed down the Yin Warrior, his pair of eyes immediately burned with passion. The void power surged up violently. When the power of space and time merged together, glaring rays of light burst out, it was more powerful than anyone could have imagined.

“Boom!”

The sound of something disintegrated could be heard, a little less than half of the Yin Warrior’s ancient armor was actually burst open. Its sturdy body was exposed to the air, that bronze-colored skin emitted waves of black fog.

Xiao Chen also made his move around this time, he jumped into the sky, and swooped towards the Yin Warrior. He launched the God Slayer Technique without blinking an eyes, a few blazing divine radiance tore the space apart. At the same time, the Solitary Sword Demon also waved his metal sword towards the Yin Warrior. As for Buddhist Yizhen, he shot an incomparably huge Buddha Palm forward.

The Yin Warrior felt dangers approaching, after a part of the armor had been cracked, most of his strength seemed to have dissipated. It waved the ancient bronze spear in its hand to resist the attacks. However, within this glaring rays of light, the remaining armor was thoroughly destroyed. The ancient bronze spear in his hand also snapped in half. His bronze-colored body was exposed to the air, and then his body actually began to age slowly. One after another hideous wrinkles emerged, even his muscles gradually started to wither.

“We finally encountered some living person and not an evil spirit.” The Solitary Sword Demon’s voice was very cold, it seemed like he encountered the evil

spirits before. The claw marks on his body were very terrifying.

The Yin Warrior had an incomparably bewildered expression, it seemed like his soul was devoured. Following closely, that weak soul fluctuation in his body disappeared. After that, his sturdy body completely deteriorated, only skin and bones were left in the end. Will-o'-wisp flickered in his pair of eyes, and then an incomparably baleful aura burst out from his body.

A practitioner said in surprise, "How did this happen? He lost his life force, and it seemed like..... he transformed into an evil spirit!"

As soon as he finished speaking, a deep and low growl emitted from the Yin Warrior's mouth. It seemed like he had obtained a new life as he dashed towards everyone with a sinister look.

Xiao Chen who just fell from the sky was the first to receive the attack. But Xiao Chen was not fearful at all, he had already seen the evil spirit before. As long as it was not those figures from the former residence, or those evil spirits with demonic item like the burial cloth, he should be able to handle ordinary evil spirit.

He attacked with the God Slayer Technique, it seemed as if both of his hands had transformed into Heavenly Blades, they were unstoppable and extremely sharp. The blazing rays of light were swung down, and chopped the corpse warrior's two arms in an instant. After that, Xiao Chen sent a roundhouse kick and destroyed the corpse warrior's head, sending him flying away.

The corpse warrior was far weaker without the ancient armor, he was unable to threaten the practitioners at all. The Solitary Sword Demon destroyed that headless corpse warrior with a single strike.

The battle ended like this, everyone understood after actual combat. If they wanted to kill the Yin Warrior, they needed to destroyed the armor first, otherwise they wouldn't stand a chance.

The place became very quiet, all of them had a really ugly expression. After all, they were only able to kill one Yin Warrior after cooperating as a group. And they saw more than hundreds of Yin Warrior and Celestial Warrior when they entered the ghost town. If all of those warriors were to gang up on them, the consequences would be unthinkable.

In addition to those evil spirit that came out from time to time, as well as those terrifying huge monsters, their situation didn't seem too bright. After all, there were too many monsters in this ghost town. The Yin Warrior was far from the most threatening, those unknown monsters were what they were most afraid of.

“Why did the Yin Warrior possess life force, but once their armor was taken off, they would die immediately and transform into an evil spirit?” One practitioner raised the question, this was also what puzzled everyone.

“We can tell the ancient city had existed since untold time, and those Yin Warrior might have lived just as long. The reason they were able to live for so long might be because those armor was able to preserve their body in that condition all this time.”

Someone proposed this kind of idea, even though it might not necessarily be true, it still made some sense. This made some people among them gave birth to some schemes. Should they plunder the Yin Warrior's armor, or gather the broken ancient armor on the ground.....

But... without giving them the time to think, the earth suddenly produced a rumbling noise and shook violently. A frosty gale blew over, the building in the vicinity began to tremble, and the wretched fiendish aura surged up violently. The deep and low shriek resembled the explosive thunder that caused people's soul to tremble.

Without any hesitation, all the practitioners rushed into an alley, and evacuated from this ancient street. Just when they distanced themselves from that area, they could feel enormous monsters passing by. That area shook violently as if an earthquake had just taken place.

"This is much more terrifying than the Yin Warriors, and who knows how many more of these terrifying monsters are out there. Even if a god enter this ancient city, it's hard to say whether they can get out alive!" One practitioner groaned in fear, he was already somewhat desperate.

The mysterious woman who was shrouded in colorful mist advised everyone with her heavenly voice, "No matter what happens, do not attempt to hide in the former residence."

Everyone nodded in consent, because many who entered the former residence never came out again. But Xiao Chen had a different feeling from everyone else. He did see a legendary immortal that was enshrined and worshiped in the mortal world with his own eyes after all. And he seemed to be the owner of that deadly residence..... He felt the mysterious woman shrouded in colorful mist had also discovered this kind of secret.

"Squawk.....!" Gloomy howls resounded above everyone's head, three skeleton birds were swooping towards them at high-speed. They had skinny body and huge wings, they seemed very ferocious and menacing.

“Hmph! These damnable thing again!” The Solitary Sword Demon snorted coldly. When he brandished his metal sword upward, the space distorted, as if it was about to break into pieces. A “domain” created by his powerful force was launched toward the sky. It emitted a powerful energy fluctuation, and enveloped two skeleton birds in an instant. After that, a bone snapping sound transmitted outwards. The ghost’s feathers filled the sky, shattered skeletal remains fell toward the ground. It was not hard to tell how powerful and terrifying was the Solitary Sword Demon, it made Lawrence at the side couldn’t help but admit the Solitary Sword Demon was stronger than him.

The other skeleton bird was pulled towards the ground by the giant Buddha’s hand created by Buddhist Yizhen. It was then pulverized on the ground. The three skeleton birds were destroyed, but the mysterious woman shrouded in colorful mist helplessly cried out, “We might be in danger.”

Everyone raised their guards. Before the three skeleton birds attacked them just now, it seemed like they were calling out for help. Everyone quickly rushed towards an alley, wanting to leave this area as soon as possible, but it seemed like they were too late. There was no time for them to run.

Waves of chilly wind swept down from the skies, a bone-chilling air enveloped everyone on the ground. The blood-colored sky was filled by the skeleton birds, they plunged towards the ground like a mass of black cloud. There were at least a thousand of them altogether.

How were they supposed to fight like this? Even if all of these evil spirits just drop themselves towards the ground, it was already enough to drown everyone to death. Moreover, each one of them was just as ferocious.

“This is it, we’re done for!” One practitioner was in despair. In the end, he actually rushed into one of the former residences at the side. But... as soon as he entered, a miserable shriek resounded. Following that, the “cracking” sound of bones was transmitted outwards. It seemed like a monster was gnawing at the skeleton of the dead.

Everyone’s face turned pale, nobody else dared to rush into the surrounding former residences. All the practitioners ran forward at high-speed, wanting to get far away from the death threat coming from the sky.

But... even the Psychic and Spell Master capable of flight found that it was a fruitless effort. Those skeleton birds were really too fast, while producing waves of bone-chilling wind, they quickly outflanked the practitioners and cut off their path.

The shadow and chilly wind were everywhere. The mournful sound made people’s scalp feel numb, the chill even ran through their spine. Qinguang Wang, Yanluo Wang, and Lunhui Wang pulled the lower hem of Xiao Chen’s shirt, then they pointed at the blood river in front. After that, the three of them broke themselves into pieces and mingled with the bones on the street. The three of them began to play dead.

“Must we plunge into the blood river?” Xiao Chen thought out loud. There was no need to think much, it was obvious that the blood river was not a benevolent place. Maybe there would be even more ferocious ghosts in the river. However, there was no other way, he could only rush over there.

The skeleton birds swooped down, everyone began to suffer from the relentless attacks. One after another netherworld light spouted from their mouth and were launched toward everyone. Right now, all of them couldn’t help but reveal their most powerful technique. Otherwise, they might perish right

here and now.

The woman shrouded in colorful mist used her Law of Time to stop the skeleton birds in the sky. The practitioners below sent one after another dazzling rays of light to rip apart those motionless monsters. After that, the Solitary Sword Demon's sword-qi also soared into the sky, after an invisible "domain" enveloped those damnable creatures, the sound of cracking bones reverberated unceasingly. The skeletal remains kept falling non-stop.

Xiao Chen's God Slayer Technique, Lawrence's Law of Space, and Buddhist Yizhen's Divine Ability were also exhibited to the fullest extent. The blazing rays of light soared into the sky unceasingly. One after another skeleton birds fell, but there was an endless stream of monsters, it was impossible to annihilate them all.

Few of them were hit by the deathly rays, it left a terrifying wound on their body. Everyone attacked and retreated at the same time, they were gradually rushing towards the blood river not far away.

The rapid blood river smelled incomparably fishy, bloody mist pervaded the air. The smell of rotten corpse assailed everyone's nostrils. It seriously gave people the impulse to throw up the food they consumed the previous day.

Where else could they run if they don't plunge into the river? One seriously wounded practitioner couldn't stand it anymore and jumped into the surging river first, but something frightening happened. As soon as he jumped into the river, a huge shadow quickly rushed over in the blood river. A demonic claw about the size of a millstone grabbed the practitioner. It snapped the practitioner in half on the surface of the water, and then it sunk into the blood river.

This scene seriously scared everyone to death, all of them couldn't help but feel fearful. This scene was really too scary, they didn't see what was that creature at all, they only saw a huge demonic claw..... The ghost town was really too frightening.

Waves of chilly wind swept down from the skies, the thousand plus skeleton birds were still swooping down non-stop, but nobody dared to jump into the blood river anymore.

Right now, even Xiao Chen, Lawrence, and the Solitary Sword Demon were wounded. As for Yan Qing Cheng and Rowena, if not for the protection of the woman shrouded in colorful mist, they might be dead a long time ago.

In regards to that mysterious woman who could control the Law of Time, Xiao Chen felt a sense of deja vu for some reason. [1] But he didn't have the time to think about it at the moment, the evil spirits in the sky pushed him to the edge of danger. Under this kind of circumstances, his God Slayer Technique became more and more refined. He was able to exhibit a terrifying power, the blazing divine radiance kept tearing the monsters in the sky, a large quantity of the skeleton bird's dismembered body already fell all around him.

[tl: [1] = An idiom: When something good or bad occurs, it usually occurs more than once and often within a short period of time.]

"Bang! Bang! Bang.....!" The earth was shaking, even the buildings near the blood river were shaking. A huge monster walked over from a distant place. A huge shadow was cast on the ground, the earth trembled for a moment with each steps it took.

That was indeed a terrifying giant demon, it was about thirty meter tall, its humanoid body was covered by white bony scales, only its head was not covered by the scale. A layer of dried skin was sticking close to the skull. What little yellow hair it had swayed with the wind. Its deep eye-sockets were emitting bloody red radiance, it seemed incomparably cruel.

And along his tailbone was a huge tail about ten meter long. It was also covered in bony scales, it looked just like a huge crocodile tail. Along with his movement, the earth trembled violently. The demonic aura spread in all direction, some skeleton birds in the vicinity were scared and flew higher into the sky.

When it rains, it pours. This is the worst case scenario for Xiao Chen and the rest. They were already caught up in a desperate strait due to thousand plus skeleton birds, and now this kind of huge monster came. The situation seemed more hopeless than ever.

“Damn it!” The conceited Solitary Sword Demon couldn’t help but let out a curse, because the feeling of fear rose in his heart. He felt death was fast approaching, it seemed like they really had no way out of this now.

“We’re dead..... There’s no hope of survival.....” Someone already indulged in grief.

Indeed, under this kind of circumstances, it seriously made people lose all hope.

While killing the skeleton birds that swooped down unceasingly, Xiao Chen looked at everything calmly. He was not fearful in the face of death, he only felt regretful that he couldn’t go explore the land of immortals. Are they going to die

in this ancient city? He felt somewhat regretful and unwilling to die.

The earth trembled violently, the thirty meter tall demon already got in front of them, a huge shadow was casted on the ground. He tried to trample everyone with a sinister-looking face.

“Roar.....!” All of a sudden, the dragon roar shook the heavens. A glaring golden explosion of light flashed through the sky!

Chapter 96 – Amethyst Dragon King

The dragons that are currently attacking the divine monolith at the core of the ancient city noticed the abnormal situation in this area. A Monarch Lion Dragon with golden scales all over its body rushed over. It opened its mouth and spouted a golden ray. The blazing radiance made the practitioners unable to open their eyes.

The mournful screech of ghosts resounded. Hundreds of skeleton birds fell from the sky, their feathers fluttered about and danced in the sky. In the face of the king of dragons, the Monarch Lion Dragon, all the skeleton birds flew off like rockets. And that thirty meter tall demon was also dominated by the Monarch Lion Dragon's intimidating aura, it stopped its footstep.

The Monarch Lion Dragon let out another roar, a golden rain of light fell from the sky, its target was the gigantic demon. The rain of light was as terrifying as unstoppable sword-qi. The huge demon had no other choice but to fall back at lightning speed.

However, it seemed like the Monarch Lion Dragon did not plan to let him go. It suddenly swooped down from the sky, a streak of enormous golden ray cuts through the void like lightning. Everyone felt their vision blurred. After that, they heard a loud “splashing” sound. The billows from the blood river soared into the sky, the Monarch Lion Dragon actually swept the huge demon into the blood river.

When the demon let out a mournful screech, bubbles surfaced on the blood river as if it was boiling. The demon struggled violently, it seemed like a monster was pulling his huge body into the river. The bloody waves rolled over and over. It finally calmed down after a while, that thirty meter huge demon was silenced

in the blood river.

The Monarch Lion Dragon in the sky coldly swept its eyes across the young practitioners. But it didn't attack them, the reason it rushed over here was to wipe out the evil spirits. In the end, the majestic Monarch Lion Dragon flickered with golden radiance, and ran towards the core of the ancient city in the sky.

Not far away, the three skeletons slowly reassembled their framework, and exercised their joints. The survivors were in a dreamy state, to find a way out from a desperate strait, all of them were brimming with joy.

However, their smiles were frozen again in the next instant, because a gloomy fiendish aura pressed towards this place once more. Qinguang Wang, Yanluo Wang, and Lunhui Wang were extremely fast at this moment, they reassembled their framework with a "clattering" sound, and then rushed beside Xiao Chen in the blink of an eye.

At a distant place, fifty plus Yin Warriors adorned with the ancient armor were closing in one step at a time. Although the bronze and iron spear in their hands were rusty, they still contained a skyrocketing murderous aura. It was as if they had vowed to massacre anything in their paths, even if it was a Dragon King.

And behind the Yin Warriors, there was another fifty Celestial Warriors. They were also wearing similar ancient armor that carried the vicissitudes of time. They looked almost like an ancient fossil. The killing intent was similarly skyrocketing.

Everyone did not know how powerful was the Celestial Warrior, but they had already experienced the strength of the Yin Warrior. And now so many of the Yin Warriors and Celestial Warriors had come together, it was impossible for them

to resist.

Moreover, the eyes of these Celestial Warriors and Yin Warriors were very clear. This means that they are very clear-headed. The Yin Warriors they killed earlier were far from comparable to these warriors! It was very possible that any of these Celestial Warriors and Yin Warriors could wipe the floor with them!

Xiao Chen lamented inwardly. This is really a ghost town, even if the deity ventured too deeply, they might not be able to leave without a hitch.

“Let’s run!” Someone shouted. All of them ran forward along the ancient street. Facing this many Celestial Warriors and Yin Warriors head-on was equivalent to suicide.

It was not only the Celestial Warrior and Yin Warrior that were closing in, those skeleton birds that were scattered by the Monarch Lion Dragon started to gather together and flew towards this region once more. Even the Spell Master and Psychic had no other choice but to fly at low altitude, otherwise they’d be sitting ducks for the several hundreds of skeleton birds.

Xiao Chen and the rest were running quickly on the ancient street, this moment was indeed a great escape with their life on the line. Even though the Yin Warrior and Celestial Warrior’s pace were not fast, they still closed in the distance with ease, as if they possessed the Ground Shrink ability.

The skeleton birds in the sky were increasing in numbers. Already a few hundreds were assembled. They started to launch their attacks on Xiao Chen and the gang again. At the same time, evil spirits lingering with black fog rushed out from the alleys every now and then. God knows just how powerful were these evil spirits. They also gathered in the same place and chased after the group of

practitioners.

At the central zone. The divine monolith trembled violently. The entire ancient city shook slightly. And the door of many former residences also opened with “creaking” sounds at this time. That was a very bad signal, it seemed like the monsters that always remained idle until now were finally making their move.

At the same time, waves of trembling sound transmitted from a distant place, it sounded like the stampede of numerous huge monsters.

At this moment, the baleful aura in the ancient city skyrocketed, the deathly aura filled the air, all the evil spirits became restless. Xiao Chen and the rest felt they were caught up in a desperate strait, if this goes on, where else could they run to? It was only a matter of time until they were wiped out.

The cry of a young dragon transmitted over. That’s right. It was a soft and immature cry. That was obviously the cry of a young dragon. With a flash of purple light, a one meter long young dragon rushed over, it was shrouded by purple clouds. Its appearance was very much identical to the legendary Qilin.

It possessed a deer-like and horse-like body, four wolf-like feet, and dragon scales, but it also possessed some distinctive differences from the legendary Qilin; It had a crocodile-shaped divine tail. The resplendent purple radiance was glorious, its scales were gorgeous, and the pair of amethyst horn on the side of its head resembled the antler. Its head looked just like the legendary Ancestral Dragon’s!

It was actually the Amethyst Dragon King, many practitioners here had once encountered this little dragon. And Yan Qing Cheng, along with Carlos and Wharton, even tried to ambush this Syndicate Dragon King. But they still failed

to subdue it in the end.

Although the young Amethyst Dragon King was only one meter long, it emitted a powerful dragon-qi. It possessed a pressure worthy of the king of the beast. It looked at everyone vigilantly, and then cheerfully ran beside the mysterious woman shrouded in colorful mist. It intimately rubbed against the side of the mysterious woman.

This outcome made everyone stupefied. The Amethyst Dragon King was actually subdued by her!

That was but the first Dragon King they encountered on this dragon island, it might be the very first Syndicate Dragon King to be born. That means it might be the young Ancestral Dragon's most powerful adversary. So much so that it might even take down the young Ancestral Dragon and replace it. If it can grow up smoothly, it will definitely become a terrifying existence that even the god don't dare to provoke.

The young Amethyst Dragon King turned around and ran forward. It seemed to be guiding the mysterious woman shrouded in colorful mist.

"Everyone follow me." The mysterious woman's angelic voice transmitted outwards, then she ran after the Amethyst Dragon King.

The monsters and evil spirit behind them continued the chase, and as for those skeleton birds in the sky that saw the young Syndicate Dragon King, they started to hesitate. They were afraid of drawing the attention of those fully grown dragons behind the young Dragon King.

The Yin Warriors and Celestial Warriors did not stop, and those evil spirits covered by black fog were even more fearless, they also quickly closed in. The Amethyst Dragon King suddenly turned its body around. Purple divine flame pulsed all over its body, then it let out a roar towards the evil spirits at the rear.

Although its gentle cry was soft and immature, when it gets angry, the roar was as ear-splitting as the sudden clap of thunder that resounded in the heavens. It caused those evil spirits to slow down their footsteps in the twinkling of an eye. The Amethyst Dragon King's appearance made them recall some ancient memories.

Everyone had noticed, the young Amethyst Dragon King actually led everyone to the vicinity of the divine monolith. It caused many evil spirits to stop advancing as a result. Only the Yin Warriors and Celestial Warriors chased after them with a pace that was not too slow nor too fast.

"Can this Dragon King be trusted?" Someone raised a question.

The young Amethyst Dragon King turned its head around to take a glimpse at the practitioner and let out a growl. It was very sensitive to sound, and possessed expressions like that of a human. This made Xiao Chen thought about Keke, that adorable little beast couldn't still be sleeping right? Let's hope nothing bad happened to it.

"If we don't believe it now, then what other choice do we have?" Someone refuted.

"You guys just keep moving, it will not do harm to us." The mysterious woman shrouded in colorful mist had a really gentle voice, while advancing as if she was flying, she gently caressed the dragon horn of the Amethyst Dragon King.

“How did you subdue it?” Someone finally couldn’t resist and asked. One must know many people originally planned to subdue this Amethyst Dragon King. But all of them failed in the end.

The mysterious woman was flabbergasted as she said, “I have never subdued it. I only treated it as a friend, that’s why it would frequently appear beside me when we were at the mountain woods out there. But... I never thought it also entered the ancient city, it seemed to be showing us the way now.”

The practitioners looked at each other in dismay when that heard what she said. The mysterious woman had such a pure characteristic, she actually obtained the trust of the Amethyst Dragon King like this. It seriously made people jealous and envious of her. But some people were not convinced, if not for the Dragon King, then for what reason would she enter the dragon island.

“I wonder why you guys were always at each other’s neck, especially you, Solitary Sword Demon. If I didn’t stop you several times, you might have killed even more.” The mysterious woman had some complaints for the Solitary Sword Demon.

These words caused to other practitioners to feel amazed. Could this girl really be that pure-hearted? Could she really be an oddball from some noble family? Even though they have their doubts, they didn’t think about it too much. It is more important to run for their life now.

“Hmph!” The Solitary Sword Demon only gave a snort in return.

Xiao Chen felt all the more familiar with this mysterious woman, but he just couldn’t recall where he met her before. He had seen many female practitioners

on this dragon island, perhaps she was among one of them.

As they were talking, everyone had already been led by the young Amethyst Dragon King to the vicinity of the divine monolith. But of course, the so-called “vicinity” was a place where the energy rays couldn’t reach. Rays of light flickered in front of them, the Buddha’s Eternal Wheel, Brass Trigrams, etc were still bombarding the divine monolith. High up in the sky, there were even more dragons.....

Chapter 97 – Heavenly Diagrams Appeared

The young Amethyst Dragon was the legendary Syndicate Dragon King. With it at their side, even if those dragons found them, they wouldn't be attacked. Everyone comforted themselves like this. The Yin Warriors and Celestial Warriors at the back seemed to be anxious, they were unwilling to approach this place, and watched from a distant.

Letting out a growl, the Amethyst Dragon King moved away from the vicinity of the divine monolith. It ran towards the upstream of the blood river. This blood river with a nauseating smell could even be said to have nine bend eighteen curves. It was incomparably twisted.

“Bang!”

With a loud sound, the rays of light soared into the sky from the divine monolith. The divine halberd with resplendent golden light and that jet-black metal engraving were sent flying away. Xiao Chen felt very excited, because at the time the divine monolith lit up, they arrived at the back of the divine monolith. He could vaguely see some diagrams within the divine radiance!

He was extremely excited at the moment, that was the continuation of the qi-training diagram bestowed by heaven. It was the piece of secret technique he had yearned for all along. The divine monolith on the dragon island really had some big connection with the ancient monolith in the Yellow River.

“Xiao Chen, what are you blanking out for?! Let's go!” Lawrence noticed Xiao Chen was standing there with blank expression, he couldn't help but pull his shirt.

“You guys go first. I will come after you soon.” Xiao Chen was absent-minded, his attention was fully focused on that indistinct qi-training diagram.

“Are you crazy?!” Lawrence exerted his strength to push Xiao Chen.

The Solitary Sword Demon at the side laughed grimly and said, “Hmhmhm. You wanted to memorize the qi-training diagram on the ancient monolith? I advise you to forget about it. Each and every practitioners who tried to practice the qi-training diagram on the dragon island’s ancient monolith ended up dead.”

Buddhist Yizhen also walked over when he heard these, then he said, “Xiao Chen, don’t be absurd and try to memorize the qi-training diagram, that is a technique that cannot be practiced. According to legend, someone had obtained the diagrams in the past. But all those who practiced this technique died tragically.”

“It doesn’t matter, you guys go first.” It was as if Xiao Chen had been possessed by ghost. His gaze was fixed at the ancient divine monolith firmly. But those diagrams already faded away as the rays of light receded.

Just at this time, a cry of alarm transmitted from the front. It seemed like the Amethyst Dragon King had led everyone to a bizarre location. Lawrence and Buddhist Yizhen glanced at one another, then they pulled Xiao Chen at both sides and walked forward. It was easy to tell they were worried something would happen to Xiao Chen.

And just at this time, the Ancestral Dragon’s Horn, Buddha’s Eternal Wheel, Brass Trigram..... as well as numerous dragon’s spell bombarded the divine monolith again. The dazzling rays of light rose from the ancient monolith, the

heavenly diagram appeared again!

This time, two terrifying rays of light shot out from Xiao Chen's pair of eyes. It was just like an essence, his mind seemed to have left his body along with the two divine light. At this moment, he felt a large quantity of ancient aura pouncing on him directly. An ancient stone inscription deeply embedded into his brain.

That's right, that was the follow-up of the martial arts he practiced! Moreover, he found four new techniques in that complicated diagram. It was four mysterious killing moves. Although there were only four moves, it meant the whole world to Xiao Chen.

It was impossible for Xiao Chen to completely assimilate the follow-up heavenly qi-training diagram in such a short period of time. He could only firmly embed them in his brain. However, he felt a sense of déjà vu in regards to that four killing moves. After thinking about it for a while, it seemed like he had seen this One Scale: Half Claw before.

The first move from the four killing moves had a striking resemblance with the God Slayer Technique. But it was much more simpler than the God Slayer Technique. The more Xiao Chen analyzed, the more fearful he felt. The God Slayer Technique he found at the stone fence previously, when compared to the first move on the divine monolith, they were worlds apart. They couldn't even be compared, it was hard to express just how profound it was with mere words.

Soon after, Xiao Chen found that the four killing moves on the divine monolith, a little trace of each could be found in the killing moves recorded on the stone fence. The second move of the four killing techniques actually had a little resemblance with "Chaotic Three-Way Patterns". The third move of the four killing techniques actually had a little resemblance with "Eight Laws of Demon

Suppression”. And the last of the killing techniques actually had a little resemblance with “Five Death Blow”.

The four killing techniques on the ancient divine monolith only required four signs, but so much skills had derived from such a simple diagram. Maybe this was the so-called main path.

The legendary Chaotic Three-Way Pattern, Eight Laws of Demon Suppression, Five Death Blow, etc were all evolved from one of the four killing techniques. And who knows just how many fold more refined were these techniques.

The main path is simple..... the main path is simple! Xiao Chen kept muttering these few words. In the end, he dubbed the four killing moves as: God Slayer, Chaotic Patterns, Demon Suppression, and Death Blow!

“What are you muttering to yourself?”

Lawrence and Buddhist Yizhen who were pulling Xiao Chen couldn’t help but shake him a few times after seeing his absent-minded look. Xiao Chen finally woke up from that kind of state. He gradually calmed down, and said, “I am fine.” Only then did Lawrence and Buddhist Yizhen let go of him.

“What happened over there?” Xiao Chen looked ahead of him in shock, they were already a few hundred meter behind. The bloody light soared to the heavens ahead of them.

“The Amethyst Dragon King drew us here, who knows; there might really be a way to get out of here.”

In this area, the amount of ancient buildings decreased. The blood river nearby pervaded with negative aura, bloody fog drifted around. The soaring bloody light in front seemed to possess an ancient platform brimming with oppressive aura.

Xiao Chen and the others quickly rushed over there. They found out that was actually an ancient sacrifice altar. It was made by piling black boulders on top of one another, the height was at least twenty meter tall. It was brimming with the vicissitudes of time. It was surrounded by two meter tall stone monoliths. And the soaring bloody light was precisely emitted by those stone monoliths. It was like they were shielding the ancient sacrifice altar.

The blood river was connected to the ancient sacrifice altar, then it flowed towards the distant location. It seemed like the bloody light had great connection to the blood river. People couldn't help but suspect, could this be the legendary blood sacrifice? Could it be that the blood river was made for the purpose of powering this ancient sacrifice altar?

Nearly all the survivors in the ancient city followed the Dragon King and escaped to this place. But there were only seventeen to eighteen people left. The rest were no longer alive. Xiao Chen found his enemy, the genius Illusion Master, Carlos, at this place. But the two of them didn't start a fight, this is not the best time to settle their personal enmity.

The Amethyst Dragon King let out a growl, then it actually jumped, and leapt over the blood river. It crossed the stone monolith, and rushed into the bloody light. Then it got in front of the ancient sacrifice altar. It turned around and let out a few growl, it seemed to be asking everyone to follow.

Dozens of practitioners looked at each other in dismay, could they leave the ghost town by running to the sacrifice altar? That seemed unlikely. However, they didn't have much time to think over it, because waves of stampeding sound

was transmitted from a distant place. The Celestial Warriors and Yin Warriors took a long detour from the divine monolith and finally arrived here. Furthermore, even more evil spirits were also rushing over. The sky was also covered by the densely packed skeleton birds.

What's more shocking was that. Many of the former residences were no longer at a standstill. Waves of mournful roars were transmitted from those residences, those were definitely some super powerful monsters!

The practitioners were no longer hesitant. Since they are already here, might as well give it a try along with the Amethyst Dragon King. Dozens of people jumped over the sea of blood in succession and crossed the stone monolith.

Everyone followed the Amethyst Dragon King along the ancient stone steps and got to the top of the sacrifice altar. The stone altar that had endured the wind and frost over countless years had diagrams of the sun, the moon, and stars carved on the surface. Not only that, there were also many drawings of ancient figures, but they were unable to guess what it was.

When they walked on top of the sacrifice altar, everyone also noticed many bloody diagrams depicting dragons being offered as sacrifices to the gods. This made the Amethyst Dragon King very angry, it kept letting out a growl.

Just at this time, a big crowd of evil spirits arrived in front of the sacrifice altar. Black fog rolled over and over, the gloomy fiendish aura pervaded the air. And the sky was also covered by a black cloud. Not only was there the skeleton birds, there were also many other unknown evil spirits that could fly. All of them were staring at the sacrifice altar fiercely. But none of them had unleashed their attacks yet.

“What’s going on? Why do I feel something fishy is going on.” Someone said with bewildered look, “These monsters are swarming around us, don’t tell me..... are they going to treat us as live offerings?”

The evil spirits kept increasing in numbers. In the end, they let out a shriek. It made this place tremble unceasingly. Even the Amethyst Dragon King seemed somewhat anxious now, it kept raising its head to look around. Through the gap between the evil spirits in the sky, they could see the bloody sun was about to suspend over the ancient city.

When the bloody sun gradually approached the center, the bloody light of the ancient sacrifice altar glinted incessantly. This sacrifice altar that had existed for god knows how many years was crazily drawing the surrounding blood river as if it had come to life. Dazzling rays of light rushed up.

The evil spirits that were besieging them raised an upheaval. Their mournful screech kept resounding non-stop. It seemed like they were watching a live sacrifice from taking place.

Just at this time, the building complex very close to the sacrifice altar suddenly turned chaotic. A violent rumbling noise resounded, the most majestic former residence in the center suddenly collapsed. The mournful screech was deafening, it seemed like another unique monster was born.

Everyone were overwhelmed with shock. This is something that never happened before since they entered the ancient city. Right now, even though many former residences were letting out a bizarre sound, they haven’t collapsed yet.

Following that, a streak of white light rushed out. They could only see a hairy

and adorable little critter jumping from the rooftop of one building to another. The snow-white little critter was panting with rage while blinking its pair of glittering big eyes. It looked at that ruins and let out a “Squeak! Squeak!” sound that transmitted to everyone’s ears.

“Shriek.....!” The screech of the malicious spirit caused the evil spirits in the sky to tremble. They almost fell onto the ground. They could only see a tall man wearing ancient armor crawling out from that ruins.

“Ah.....!”

“How could this be?!”

“That is.....”

Everyone turned pale with fright. Because that was a headless angel, and yet it was actually able to let out a sound. Moreover, he had a pair of golden wings, that means he must be a god as depicted in legends! Why was he in the former residence? And where did his head go? But after a careful observation, they couldn’t sense a trace of holy aura from him. His entire body was brimming with terrifying baleful aura.

The headless golden-winged angel threw itself at the snow-white little critter. It destroyed that former residence in a flash, endless amount of smoke and dust were blasted into the air. The little critter seemed to be extremely fast, the headless angel’s golden wings were actually unable to catch up. In the end, the little critter rushed into another former residence, the headless angel also followed into the residence.

Every former residences had a super powerful monster in it. Along with the collapse of a few former residences, several monsters wearing ancient peasant clothing already rushed out. One couldn't find anything special about them, but their terrifying strength made people felt very fearful. They were so much stronger than those evil spirits everyone had encountered before.

A seemingly very adorable snow-white little critter actually made such a huge ruckus. And it was actually able to come out in one piece even after entering a few former residences. It was completely inconceivable.

“Keke.....!” Xiao Chen cried out in fear. He already recognized Keke, he absolutely never thought of the possibility that the little critter had actually entered the ancient city too.

Some people had seen this little critter following Xiao Chen before. They suddenly recalled it at the moment. But they never thought this little critter was so mystical. One must know that many practitioners who entered the former residences never seen the light again. They were reduced to the evil spirit's ration. But this adorable little critter actually ran inside again and again, it really made everyone speechless.

Not only does it seem to be fearless, it appeared to be panting with rage. It was extremely cute and mystical.

Keke heard Xiao Chen calling out its name, it blinked its glittering eyes and looked over. After that, it ran over cheerfully as if it had found its close relative. It stepped on one after another former residences along the way.

Things have gotten really rowdy. The golden-winged headless angel and other monsters pursued at the rear, they frantically destroyed several haunted house

along the way. The smoke and dust soared into the heavens at that area.

Everyone was completely dumbstruck, this little critter..... was too unrestrained. Or was it because it was too pure and adorable? It actually rushed over here without a care in the world, all the while stirring up such a huge commotion on the way. Everyone was completely speechless.

While Xiao Chen was feeling anxious for Keke, he was also secretly guessing at the same time; Could those few people behind the golden-winged headless angel be celestial beings back in those time? After all, he was able to recognize one of them before. Even though these few people had unfamiliar faces, it was hard to say they don't have similar status.

“Rumble!”

One after another former residences collapsed in succession. Keke was almost caught by one evil spirit, Xiao Chen was extremely nervous. In the end, he couldn't stand it anymore and wanted to jump out of the sacrifice altar to provide support for Keke.

“Don't go!” Lawrence and the woman shrouded in colorful mist stopped him at the same time. Xiao Chen was stopped by the power of Space and Time.

Fortunately, Keke was in good health. Moreover, it actually had enough time to angrily wave its little paw at the golden-winged angel.

In the end, Keke transformed into a streak of white light with a swish. It actually flew across a few dozen meter in the sky. It directly passed the blockade in front of the sacrifice altar, and leaped one more time to jump over the blood

river. Then it ran towards the top of the sacrifice altar.

Keke was really too mystical. Its entire body was snow-white, that spotlessly white fur was flickering with a crystal clear luster. It was as if the fur was carved out attentively from soft and pure agate. Adding on to that, its pair of glittering big eyes made it extremely adorable. This little critter was seriously a goblet of intelligence.

Chapter 98 – Passing through the Space

“Keke, how come you’re here?” Xiao Chen was really worried about it earlier.

Keke was panting with rage as it pointed at him, and then pointing at itself. Its expression was so cute and funny, it was “squeaking” unceasingly like a sulky child. It seemed to be blaming him for abandoning it.

After Keke jumped over, a huge commotion already broke out below the sacrifice altar. It seemed like the evil spirits that rushed out from the former residences wanted to cross the blood river and rush to the top of the altar. This made all the practitioners incomparably frightened. But fortunately, they only let out a few angry snarl and did chase any further.

“Aw~ so cute!” The exceptionally beautiful Rowena smiled enchantingly. She walked over here and embraced Keke, but the little critter didn’t seem to appreciate the soft feeling of her breasts, it directly jumped on top of her head instead.

This made Rowena felt embarrassed and humiliated. In the end, it was Buddhist Yizhen’s bald head that helped her broke away from this predicament. With a “swish”, Keke jumped on top of his head, it even jumped on top of his head a few times due to curiosity. Buddhist Yizhen was not angry at all, he was all smile. It seemed like he had really became a monk that transcended worldliness.

“Keke, don’t mess around.” Xiao Chen grabbed Keke down from Buddhist Yizhen’s head. However, Keke fixed its gaze on the Amethyst Dragon King in the end. It looked at the legendary king of dragons without a hint of fear. Moreover, it was extremely daring as it hopped onto the Dragon King’s head. This gave

everyone another great shock, just what was this little critter's origin for it to be so fearless?!

“Roar.....!” The Amethyst Dragon King raged, it shook its dragon head with all its might. It wanted to throw Keke down. For the Amethyst Dragon King, this was a type of serious provocation. As the future Dragon King, how could it let a little critter ride on top of its head. It was truly intolerable.

“Keke.....” Xiao Chen was almost speechless. This little critter was really too naughty. How could it be so fearless? He quickly grabbed Keke forcefully in order to prevent the Amethyst Dragon King from going crazy. Facing such an angry Amethyst Dragon King, Keke waved its little paw without a care in the world. It seemed to be saying; I don't want to play with you anymore.

Everyone became speechless watching these event unfold.

And just at this time, the bloody sun shifted to the middle of the sky. One after another bloody light descended, the sacrifice altar also burst forth with endless bloody radiance. In the end, everyone felt everything around them were covered in the color of blood. They were unable to see anything else.

The space was distorted, it seemed as if the time had also twisted. Everyone felt as if they had entered a space-time tunnel, a bizarre feeling sprouted in their heart.

The bloody light became the only thing before their eyes. Who knows how much time had passed, everyone felt as if they were walking on the clouds. It seemed as if they were pushing their way through at high-speed. When the bloody light finally faded away, what appeared before them was an empty space. It was like they had returned from ancient times, there was no scenery within

this unusual space. Except for their breathing sound, it was deathly silent in this pitch-black space.

It felt like a hundred million years had passed, yet it felt like only a few seconds had passed, everyone was experiencing a space-time disorder. Soon after, countless light beam streaked through the sky beside everyone like one after another shooting stars. Xiao Chen and the rest felt as if they were travelling through time and space.

They quickly pushed their way through just like this. It felt as if time had already stopped, they couldn't feel the flow of time anymore. Everyone's heartbeat and breathing also seemed to have stopped.

Who knows when it started, the surrounding space began to twist, one after another ripples of energy fluctuation approached, but the energy ripples did not harm the body of anyone. It brushed past their skin like soft water ripple.

“Rumble!”

With a burst of loud rumbling sound, a glaring radiance suddenly burst out, everyone couldn't help but shut their eyes.

When everyone opened their eyes again, cool breeze brushed past their face, the moonlight was gentle, this was a peaceful night. The sky was filled with many stars, the moonlight spilled down like the water, everything was so auspicious and peaceful.

It really felt as if it was a lifetime ago, the soaring bloody light, the gloomy baleful aura, the endless stream of evil spirits..... they all disappeared without a

trace.

Everyone found themselves on the summit of a huge mountain. There was a pavilion not far away, and a small bridge with running water. There was also the refreshing fragrance of flowers. Under the calm starry sky, everything seemed so beautiful, everyone had escaped from the ghost town.

“We finally got out.....” Someone shouted excitedly.

Xiao Chen found this place somewhat familiar, and Keke who was sitting on top of Lunhui Wang’s head was a little restless, it stayed on alert and looked all around. It was rare for the insensitive Keke to show this kind of expression.

One practitioner happily ran towards the clear spring nearby, but just when he passed the ancient hall at the side, he suddenly disappeared in thin air. This unforeseen event made everyone’s expression change, their happy expression vanished from the face of the earth.

At the same time, a Psychic also disappeared in the sky. The sky was just as terrifying!

“Don’t move around randomly! Don’t get close to those ancient halls!” Xiao Chen yelled loudly, he finally remembered, this was the sacred mountain! This was the place where many dragons roamed around previously, it was very close to Keke’s home; the Heavenly Tree. At that time, he almost lost his life at the foot of the mountain.

How did they get here, and why was it already night-time, could they really have traveled through space-time, and spent more than half a day? Everyone

had this kind of doubts.

The Amethyst Dragon King also let out a growl, it also hinted everyone not to act blindly without thinking. It seemed to be a little fearful of this sacred mountain.

The fine trees were exuberant on top of the sacred mountain, the waterfall was surging down the mountain, and there were many pavilion halls. It seemed just like a fairyland, but everyone felt fearful in their heart instead.

“This is really eccentric, the entire scenery looked picturesque, but the bottom seemed so desolate.” One practitioner who stood at the precipice thought out loud as he looked down.

It was like he said, the top of the sacred mountain had so many grand halls, but the bottom was very desolate. There was almost no vegetation, the huge sacred mountain was all brownish. It was somewhat strange.

It was clearly visible, all those halls had been through the vicissitudes of time, some were already collapsed.

“Where is this, what the hell is going on?” The practitioners were very uneasy. “We passed through the space and arrived at this unknown place.” Psychic Lawrence was most proficient in the power of space, he positively announced his verdict to everyone.

The mysterious woman who was proficient in time said, “We spent a lot of time to reach this place.”

Now, they could finally understand why it instantly turned from noon to night.

Xiao Chen didn't conceal anything, he shared his experience at the foot of the sacred mountain last time. Right now, their fate was interlinked, only by working together as a group would they have a chance of survival.

Not far away, the mysterious woman whose entire body was shrouded by colorful mist lightly stroked the Amethyst Dragon King's horn. She attempted to communicate with it, and she finally came back after a long time, then she said, "The Amethyst Dragon King unintentionally charged into an ancient hall at the foot of the mountain and after that, it mysteriously arrived at the ghost town's sacrifice altar."

Everyone became silent, the Amethyst Dragon King entered the ghost town from the foot of the mountain, and yet when they came back from the ghost town, they arrived at the peak of the sacred mountain. How are they supposed to get down safely?

With Xiao Chen's experience. As well as how those practitioners disappeared in thin air earlier, all of these indicates that it would be difficult and dangerous to get to the mountain foot.

"Let's probe around carefully as we descend, this place should not be as dangerous as the ghost town." Someone proposed this kind of idea. The other people hesitated for a moment, but they still decided to go along with it.

However, just when they covered a distance of roughly hundred meter, a miserable cry resounded. The person at the frontmost disappeared in thin air. And there was no ancient hall in the vicinity, this was really somewhat frightening. They were still on the summit, they had just left from the precipitous

area, they hadn't really descended yet.

Looking at all the ancient halls below the mountain, everyone started to feel dizzy, they finally felt a sense of danger.

"Life or death will be decided by fate. Let's go!" One practitioner was very courageous, he actually took the lead. This time everyone advanced for nearly fifty meter, then the practitioner who took the lead disappeared in thin air. He didn't even had enough time to shout.

"How did this happen?!" Everyone were somewhat terrified, nobody was willing to take the lead now.

"Let me take the lead." The mysterious woman shrouded in colorful mist walked in front without hesitation, everyone couldn't help but admire her courage.

"No, let me do it." Xiao Chen walked out from the crowd just at this time, because he recalled what happened last time; Keke had saved him twice in the most crucial moment. He put Keke on the ground and said, "Little monster, you should stay a little far away from me, you must save me at the crucial moment."

"Squeak! Squeak!" Keke was very dissatisfied to be called a little monster by Xiao Chen. It grabbed Xiao Chen's long hair lightly and pulled it. After that, it nodded and blinked its big eyes as it got to the back of the line. Soon after, it jumped onto the back of the Amethyst Dragon King without restrain.

"Roar.....!" The Amethyst Dragon King was completely enraged, this little critter actually dared to offend it again and again. It really made this Dragon King

furious, how it wished it could tear the little critter apart immediately.

“Don’t get angry.” The woman shrouded in colorful mist appeased the Amethyst Dragon King who was about to go on a rampage, she said, “It is much smaller than you, let it have its way for a bit, a Dragon King must have a Dragon King’s elegance.” Very clearly, the mysterious woman treated the Amethyst Dragon King as a child throwing a tantrum.

The Amethyst Dragon King let out a growl, then it turned around to take a quick glance at Keke. It seemed like Keke was no longer provoking it and sitting on its back quietly. Keke was currently keeping an eye on Xiao Chen nervously.

After changing their direction, they walked down the mountain for about ten meter. Xiao Chen’s figure suddenly disappeared, and at the same time, that area burst forth with divine radiance. Keke had made its move! It actually dragged Xiao Chen back.

Everyone was dumbstruck, they couldn’t believe their eyes and looked at this cute little critter. Even the Amethyst Dragon King also exposed an astonished expression, it turned its head around to look at Keke who was on its back.

“Hehe.....” Keke laughed out like an innocent child.

Xiao Chen who had just paid a visit to the gates of hell seemed to have sensed something, he turned around and said, “Just now I felt like I was enveloped by inexhaustible baleful aura. It was the same aura as in the ghost town. If we disappeared in thin air at the sacred mountain, we might end up in that ghost town again. Moreover, we might end up in a more dangerous place.”

From this, it could be seen that the quiet sacred mountain was also brimming with danger. A bit of carelessness would mean losing their life.

It was incomparably thrilling as they advanced for more than two hundred meter, Xiao Chen disappeared in thin air three times, but he was pulled back by Keke's bizarre ability. However, something bad happened, because Keke "squeaked" and using a gesture to tell Xiao Chen that it was getting more and more strenuous.

All of them couldn't help but feel anxious, if they keep going until the waist of the mountain, the ancient halls would increase in numbers. It was impossible to avoid them all. Everyone had already analysed the regular pattern, the closer to the halls, the more dangerous it became. How would they be able to leave the sacred mountain like this?!

When Keke pulled Xiao Chen back for the sixth time, the Amethyst Dragon King exposed an astonished expression. It noticed how Keke had a completely different expression from before. After that, it actually emitted a divine radiance and pulled one practitioner walking in front back from the netherworld.

It was actually a divine ability similar to Keke's very own, but it was not as powerful as when Keke used it. Everyone looked at the Amethyst Dragon King in awe. They couldn't help praise the Syndicate Dragon King, it truly lived up to its name, it actually learned Keke's skill in such a short about of time.

But when it heard everyone's compliment, the Amethyst Dragon King exposed a rarely seen ashamed and upset expression.

The mysterious woman was very close with the Amethyst Dragon King, she could more or less guess the reason it felt ashamed, so she asked, "Was Keke

using the dragon's divine ability?"

The Amethyst Dragon King nodded its head in distress.

Seeing this as a result, everyone seemed to have petrified. Keke was actually using the dragon's divine ability!

"I thought that was the case, when we were in the ghost town, I saw the Monarch Lion Dragon and Tyrannical Dragon using this kind of skill to confine, destroy, and exterminate everything."

Not only was all the practitioners looking at Keke in awe, even Xiao Chen who walked in front stopped his footstep and turned around to look at that cute little snow-white critter. And just at this time, Keke became a little muddle-headed, it opened its eyes widely and looked at everyone in puzzlement. It had an innocent look.

Buddhist Yizhen recited the chant, and said, "I once saw an ancient scripture regarding the records of exotic beasts. It seemed like there were two or three exotic beasts that were as strong as dragons. They possessed unparalleled inborn intelligence, and could practice the divine ability of every race. I believe Keke might be one of those race, but it's a pity that the ancient scripture was based on Buddhist doctrine, the record was lacking in details. It didn't describe the exotic beasts' appearance and name in detail."

Chapter 99 – Breakthrough to Seventh Celestial Layer

“Swish! Swish! Swish!”

Keke’s status increased greatly. Everyone looked at it more passionate than ever. How they wished they could just embrace the little critter in their bosom and take it away. Unfortunately, the little critter didn’t understand their ways of thinking at all. It blinked its glittering big eyes and looked at everyone innocently. It seemed to be somewhat dissatisfied being stared by everyone like that. It waved its little paws at everyone while “squeaking” resentfully to protest.

Everyone had different thoughts, and began to push their way forward again. However, they were getting closer to those densely packed palace halls below.

“Swish!”

Light and shadow flickered. Xiao Chen disappeared, but he was pulled back by Keke in the nick of time. However, it seemed to be struggling a little. Only after the mysterious woman, Lawrence, and Buddhist Yizhen hastily offered their support did they manage to drag Xiao Chen back in the end.

“Not good, we can’t go on like this. Otherwise none of us would be able to get to the mountain foot alive.” Xiao Chen halted his footstep. He didn’t want to die, it was only because Keke was capable of saving him did he dare to take the lead. But now, it was getting more strenuous for Keke, it will eventually slip up if they keep up like this.

“Then what do we do? Don’t tell me we’re just going to wait for our impending death here?”

Everyone was feeling anxious, they didn't have any ways out.

"Guys, look over there..... it seems like a sacrifice altar!" The extraordinarily beautiful Rowena suddenly cried out in shock.

The huge sacred mountain region was very vast, behind a pile of rubble at a distant place, it seemed like there really was a sacrifice altar. It was made by piling up dark brown rocks.

Everyone walked over there cautiously. In the end, they looked at each other in dismay, that place..... seriously had a sacrifice altar that was about ten meter tall. It was emitting unbounded ancient aura.

Xiao Chen said, "Rather than waiting for our impending death here, we might as well make a bet!"

"Heh. Let's take our chance then!" The Solitary Sword Demon agreed. Even if he was conceited and arrogant, he also had no other way to get out of this alive.

Everyone walked on top of the ancient sacrifice altar together, a gloomy baleful aura was transmitted from above. It seemed like it had once been stained by blood. Even though countless years had passed, they were still able to see the dried up bloodstain.

But when dozen of people got to the top of the altar, the ancient sacrifice altar didn't have any response. It seemed like nothing more than an ordinary altar.

“Blood sacrifice! It seemed like this altar requires blood to activate.” Someone proposed this kind of idea because they saw the dried up bloodstain on the sacrifice altar.

“Very well, then each of us will spill some blood on the altar.”

Everyone pierced their finger tip, and let the blood drop spill on the altar. Although the blood was limited, they could clearly feel the changes of the sacrifice altar. Its entire body actually turned red and burst forth with bloody light.

At the same time, the stars in the sky actually shot down one after another light beams. All the light beams gathered on the ancient sacrifice altar. The bloody light then soared into the sky, glaring bloody radiance emerged from this area. Meanwhile, a bizarre image came into their view, everyone actually saw the ghost town. All of their faces turned pale at the thought that they will be sent back to the ghost town. This made them feel very discouraged.

Fortunately, that was just an image, it was not their destination.

The intense battle in the ghost town was still ongoing. The Buddha’s Eternal Wheel, the Ancestral Dragon’s Horn, and the Brass Trigrams were still bombarding the divine monolith. The dragons were also making their moves. An endless swarm of evil spirits who carried sky-rending baleful aura were approaching the divine monolith.

What made everyone even more terrified was that; There was actually a sea of blood hovering on top of the ghost town. In the center of the sea of blood, there was a mountain of bones. And on the mountain of bones, there was an ancient castle emitting dense negative aura.

This..... made everyone stupefied. Wasn't this the diagram carved on the divine monolith? The real thing actually appeared!

They clearly saw the picture carved on the surface of the divine monolith while they were in the ghost town. Therefore, they were able to recall those images in their mind.

What was carved at the uppermost of the divine monolith was an ocean of blood as far as the eyes could see, there were hundreds and thousand layers of raging waves. A mountain of bones stood at the center of the bloody ocean. And in the center, the dragons were galloping in the skies. It seemed like they were wailing. Many people and deities were also struggling. Below the dragons and those deities was a ghost town. The demonic aura was dense, the pitch-black gate to hell was half-opened. It was completely lifeless beyond the gate, it was a world of complete darkness. And below the ghost town, there was an auspicious land. The palace was idle, the resplendent divine trees and jade-like grasses were all over the place. However, not much was outlined. It was already at the bottom-most of the divine monolith, it was hard to observe more of the vast land.

Right now, the sea of blood and mountain of bones had made an appearance. The ghost town also appeared. Could it be that there was really a pure land underneath the ghost town? Everyone was full of doubts.

All of these indicated the picture recorded on the divine monolith was real!

Glaring bloody light flashed. The light beams shot down by the stars in the sky were absorbed by the ancient sacrifice altar. After that, it emitted blazing rays of light, everyone was unable to open their eyes anymore. But they knew that they

will be sent to an unknown area.

Certainly, they were putting their lives on the line. After all, the sacrifice altar was not supposed to be used to travel back and forth. It seemed to be used for sending offerings. If their deduction was correct, their situation was extremely dangerous, because it was very possible that they will be delivered to the door of the Saint Demon as an offering. However, they didn't have any other choice, they could only take the bet!

They were crossing the empty space once more, and it was pretty much the same as the last time. The light beams flew past in the endless void sky like shooting stars. It seemed like countless stars were flickering as they forged ahead, it felt as if they were pushing their way through under the resplendent starry sky.

The time was already twisted. It made people unable to understand whether the time was passing by quickly, or if the time was flowing slowly. It lasted until a glaring radiance burst out. After they came out from this bizarre space, all of these finally came to an end.

The cold air whizzed past. The snowflake danced in the breeze. A vast expanse of whiteness was now present before everyone's eyes. They actually found themselves at the great snow mountain.

This is..... the great snow mountain at the West side of the sea of bones!

The Sacred Mountain at the East, the sea of bones in the center, and the Great Snow Mountain at the West, these three formed a straight line. These were extremely unusual locations on the dragon island, Xiao Chen never thought these three actually had a great connection.

Everyone was anxious and frightened. They didn't know if they had really came out alive this time around. It was currently at the crack of dawn, the East already exposed marble white color of the dawn sky. The cold wind roared furiously on the snow mountain, the snowflakes danced wildly. This snowy world was particularly cold.

“Will there be any terrifying existence here? Will we be..... eaten up as offerings?” One practitioner's voice was somewhat shaky. They faced death again and again in such a short period of time, it already made him lose heart. He was unable to endure anymore psychological damage than this.

After the series of dangers, only sixteen people were able to get this far. And this included Qinguang Wang, Lunhui Wang, and the other skeleton. If they only count those who were completely “human”, then there were only thirteen of them.

When everyone was feeling somewhat nervous, Keke let out a cheer. It stepped on the Amethyst Dragon King's head and jumped onto the snowy ground. It happily rolled on the ground, it was like a happy little snowman. The young Amethyst Dragon King was very unhappy. It let out a growl towards Keke who was much smaller than it, but it didn't launch an attack.

The time passed by peacefully. The blizzard already came to a stop. The morning sun rose from the East and gave off a golden radiance. It was a morning filled with hope.

Everyone cautiously trod on the snowy ground, they climbed on top of a snowy peak to survey the green hills at the distant place. They didn't encounter any danger here.

“There’s no restriction here, we are saved.” One practitioner shouted happily.

Illusion Master Carlos was the first to soar into the sky. He quickly flew towards a distant location. After he was convinced that they were no longer in any immediate danger, he couldn’t help but run away as soon as possible. Otherwise he and Xiao Chen will definitely engage in a life and death battle, since they already don’t have any common interest.

“Haha.....” The Solitary Sword Demon laughed heartily, his sonorous voice was like trembling metal. He looked at Buddhist Yizhen, Xiao Chen, and the rest before he lifted his metal sword and left at lightning speed. The woman shrouded in colorful mist also left swiftly with the Amethyst Dragon King. Soon after, the survivors left one after another.

Rowena didn’t leave, she revealed a heartfelt smile. She used her lily-white hand to tightly secure Yan Qing Cheng’s hands, preventing her from running away. This made Yan Qing Cheng hate her to the point that the root of her teeth was itching.

“We finally escaped!” As soon as Lawrence finished these words, he fell onto the snowy ground. His wound was not light. At the same time, because he was exhausted, and that he was physically weak to begin with, he fell asleep the moment he relaxed.

“One new life, one transformation.” It seemed like Buddhist Yizhen gained an insight, he welcomed the morning sun and sat on the snowy ground.

As a Martial Artist, Xiao Chen had a physique far more powerful than ordinary people. Even though he felt a bit exhausted, he didn’t have the desire to take a

rest. The God Slayer, Chaotic Patterns, Demon Suppression, and Death Blow; These four killing techniques were enticing him like an ancient spell. He rushed in between the snowy mountain to smooth out his body, then he began to practice these four killing techniques on the heavenly diagram of the divine monolith.

Under the morning sun. At the snowy field. Xiao Chen's body seemed like a mosquito. [1] He jumped to the summit of a snowy mountain, and left one after another afterimages. He pushed his way through like a streak of divine radiance. With a rumbling sound, the summit of the snowy mountain was actually destroyed. His momentum was extremely great!

[tl: [1] = It originally says mosquito dragon, but dragon feels redundant and meaningless. It probably mean Xiao Chen's figure was so small that it looked like a mosquito.]

At a distant place, Rowena and Yan Qing Cheng's face already discolored. Buddhist Yizhen who was currently sitting in meditation also felt emotionally moved.

Xiao Chen stood on top of the snowy mountain, his tall and lofty figure was covered by the golden radiance of the morning sun. It looked like he was adorned with a layer of divine armor. Just now, he clearly felt the power of the four killing moves. He merely used the first "God Slayer" only, and it already drained all of his strength. However, it was extremely powerful. He actually destroyed the mountain peak!

If he could use these four killing moves without a limit, then he would be peerless among those of the same generation.

After resting for sufficient time, Xiao Chen proceeded to practice the second

killing move, “Chaotic Patterns”. But it was the same as before, his innate power was unable to keep up. Only a fraction of power was displayed before the power in his body ran dry. Due to this, he was really looking forward to the day he could fully control these four killing moves; God Slayer, Chaotic Patterns, Demon Suppression, and Death Blow. He was unable to exhibit their full power right now, and yet they were already so terrifying. If he was really able to fully control them, then just how powerful would they become?

After practicing two of the killing moves, the God Slayer and Chaotic Patterns, even after Xiao Chen had sufficient rest, he felt his qi and blood was having adverse reaction. His body seemed somewhat unstable. He naturally knew what was going on. He had this kind of feeling a really long time ago. Whenever he practiced a powerful technique, he would feel like this. And precisely because of this, he deduced it was because of the technique he practiced in; It seemed to be imperfect, there ought to have a follow-up.

To be able to come out alive after charging into the ghost town this time. It truly turned into a great opportunity for Xiao Chen. He was actually able to find the continuation of the qi-training diagram bestowed by heaven.

Xiao Chen calmly stood on the snowy peak. The qi-training method bestowed by heaven was very special, it didn’t require one to sit in meditation to practice. That heavenly diagram embedded into the depths of his mind reappeared at this moment. He began to operate the secret technique in accordance to the diagram.

It was truly like water and milk blended together. It was really the continuation of the qi-training diagram he found previously. It was completely compatible with the former qi-training method. Xiao Chen felt his entire body was extremely relaxed, the adverse reaction between his qi and blood from earlier completely calmed down.

He stood like that for half a day, his surroundings was flickering with multi-colored radiance. It made the snowy ground brightly lit in contrast to the surroundings. All the spiritual energy was forcefully gathered together and rushed into his body. In the end, Xiao Chen's two legs actually parted three-inch from the ground, and floated in the sky. A faint luster was circulating around his body, every inch of his skin was like divine jade.

In the afternoon, Xiao Chen finally woke up from that mysterious martial domain. A layer of crystal clear radiance circulated around his entire body. He actually broke through to the Seventh Celestial Layer very naturally. All because his secret technique improved one step further, he breakthrough to a new level very naturally.

Lawrence also woke up a long time ago. He kept drawing one after another diagrams on the snowy ground as if he had been possessed by the devil. It was a very mysterious space magic that was recorded on the stone fence. It could be considered a priceless treasure for him, Xiao Chen and Yizhen didn't disturb him. They let him remain submerged in that selfless domain.

Two days had passed without any water and rice, Buddhist Yizhen hunted a few Snow Rabbit, he and Xiao Chen used their pure energy to melt the snow and washed the rabbit meat. After that, they operated the secret technique and used the blazing divine radiance to roast the rabbit meat. This could also be considered some kind of unconventional practices.

The aroma of the meat finally woken Lawrence from that "selfless" domain. His stomach betrayed his wisdom and called out with a "grumbling" sound. The remarkably beautiful captive, Yan Qing Cheng, didn't get mistreated at all, and she also didn't regard anyone as outsider. She sat along with everyone and enjoyed the meal.

Only Keke was looking at everyone miserably, it painfully stroked its round and bulging little belly. After that, it used its pair of little paws to cover its eyes.

To live on after a calamity, everyone felt deeply moved. They finally escaped from the ghost town. Even if they were at this ice and snow world, they still felt the life was so vivid. A genuine world with vitality and energy was just too great.

Chapter 100 – Harvesting Dragon King

On that afternoon, the few of them decided to leave the ice and snow world, and return to the exuberant mountain woods brimming with vitality. Just at this time, Xiao Chen recalled the three dragon eggs he buried at this snowy mountain. The Monarch Lion Dragon's egg had already been refined by him. The Tyrannical Dragon, Saber Dragon, and Thunder Dragon's egg were still preserved in good condition at this place.

When they heard Xiao Chen mentioned this. Not only was Rowena startled and excited, even Lawrence and Buddhist Yizhen were emotionally moved. They heard about the battle that unfolded on the snowy mountain due to the dragon eggs before, but they never thought Xiao Chen actually managed to get so many dragon eggs.

When everyone entered that region, all of them stopped at the same time. That was because they could feel the fluctuation of life, it was precisely on that mountain peak where Xiao Chen said he buried the dragon eggs. They thought of the same possibility simultaneously.....

They quickly rushed up, Lawrence and Buddhist Yizhen followed Xiao Chen's instruction, and destroyed a thick layer of ice. A snowy cave revealed itself.

After clearing up the ice and snow at the tunnel entrance, dazzling rays of light immediately overflowed. Three magical dragon eggs were as beautiful as jade. The green Tyrannical Dragon's egg flickered with glorious divine radiance. It was crystal clear, and as eye-catching as a green moon. An intoxicating radiance was circulating on the Saber Dragon's jasper-like eggshell, it had a striking resemblance with spiritual jadeite. Purple splendor was lingering on the Thunder Dragon's egg. It was extraordinarily beautiful, as if it was carved out of amethyst.

And just at this time, the fluctuation of life became more intense. It actually originated from the Tyrannical Dragon and Saber Dragon's eggs. Xiao Chen and the rest were right on the mark, a young dragon or two was about to be born.

"This..... the temperature is so low here, and yet they are able to break free from the shell. This is inconceivable." Lawrence sighed in awe.

Buddhist Yizhen explained, "The temperature have nothing to do with it. The dragon eggs will absorb the worldly essence by itself, when they collected sufficient spiritual energy, the young dragon will break free from the shell by itself."

Xiao Chen also never thought it would become like this.

"Crack!"

The sound of cracking eggshell could be heard, a small crack appeared on the Tyrannical Dragon's egg. A green divine radiance emitted from the crack.

Xiao Chen hastily called everyone out of the cave, he told Lawrence and Buddhist Yizhen at the entrance of the cave, "I have a feeling, that Tyrannical Dragon's egg might produce a young dragon king. I believe the first person it see will leave a deep impression in its heart. Among the two of you, who wants to go in and obtain this opportunity?"

What this signify was very obvious; They might be able to subdue a dragon king, nobody would remain unstirred at such an opportunity! Rowena who was at the side felt really envious and jealous. But she knew a Dragon King was too

precious, there wouldn't be an opportunity for her.

"Brother Xiao, you should go in by yourself." Lawrence and Buddhist Yizhen unanimously decided.

"No. You guys had seen it yourself, Keke was not inferior to Dragon Kings. You guys make a decision quickly, or you might miss the opportunity." Keke's magical ability was obvious to all. Xiao Chen was speaking the truth.

Buddhist Yizhen said, "Brother Law, you go. You are a Void Master. Your only weakness is that your physique is inferior to Martial Artist. If you have a Dragon King at your side, you will inevitably be unparalleled. You will become a genuine war king."

"No. I already heard this a long time ago. Buddhist had mythological beasts as protector of Buddhism law. If you have a Dragon King beside you, your Buddhist Divine Power will rise tremendously."

The two of them declined each other's kindness. Xiao Chen laughed and said, "Don't argue anymore, it seems like there are two life fluctuations. They are almost just as powerful, but one of them will be born soon. Lawrence, you go first. The other one belong to Yizhen."

Just at this time, Lawrence and the others also felt it. The other fluctuation of life also became more intense. It seemed like it was also about to break out from the shell. Lawrence no longer declined. He entered the ancient cave with large strides. And just at this time, the sound of cracking eggshell sped up.

A cry of shock transmitted outwards, Lawrence had seen the young dragon

born with his own eyes.

“Roar.....!”

A dragon roar transmitted outwards, Lawrence embraced the half meter long green colored young dragon and walked out. The young dragon seemed a little perplexed, but it didn't attack Lawrence.

“It's a Dragon King!” Buddhist Yizhen and Rowena cried out at the same time.

Syndicate Dragon King were born with extraordinary gifts, they were substantially different from the rest of the dragons. This green colored young dragon did not resemble a Tyrannical Dragon at all. Its dragon head was similar to that of the Ancestral Dragon, it was almost the same. A pair of green dragon horns shone with resplendent rays of light. Its body looked similar to Tyrannical Dragon. It was flickering with green radiance. The moment it was born, it began to absorb the worldly essence frantically. The spiritual essence gathered from all directions.

Lawrence quickly operated his spiritual energy to “feed” it, allowing the little dragon king to absorb it frantically. This was a joyous and shocking occasion.

“I will call you the Azure Dragon King from now on.” Lawrence said happily.

And Yizhen did not say much to Xiao Chen, he already entered the icy cave, waiting for the young Saber Dragon to break free from the shell. Without a doubt, that was definitely a Dragon King, because its life fluctuation was not much weaker than the Azure Dragon King's.

If these were to spread out, everyone would certainly feel incomparably shocked. The dragon eggs fetched by Xiao Chen was really as the rumor says. The “Dragon King Cultivation Plan” was successfully carried out, but this was actually unintentional.

“Crack! Crack!”

The sound of cracking eggshell transmitted from the icy cave. A dragon roar followed soon after. Another young Dragon King had been born, Buddhist Yizhen embraced the little dragon and came out, it was also about half a meter long. Green radiance was lingering on its entire body, the dragon head was also similar to that of the Ancestral Dragon, it had a pair of jasper-like dragon horns, its draconic body resembled the Saber Dragon; It had many sharp bony outgrowths, it gave Buddhist Yizhen no other choice but to be careful when embracing it, lest he be stabbed.

“Then I will call you the Jade Dragon King from now on.” Buddhist Yizhen was very happy. He also began to operate his pure energy to “feed” the young dragon king, allowing it to absorb it frantically.

“Xiao Chen, could you give the remaining young dragon to me? All of you already have a powerful Dragon King anyways.” Rowena was acting shyly, she kept casting flirtatious glance to Xiao Chen.

“If a young dragon will really be born, I can give it to you.” Xiao Chen replied like this. But in reality, he knew it was not highly possible, because he couldn’t feel a trace of life fluctuation from the Thunder Dragon’s egg.

However, Rowena already ran into the icy cave happily. Only until a long time later did they hear her startled scream, “How did this happen?!”

Xiao Chen walked into the cave, he only saw Rowena using one hand to lightly drag the huge purple dragon egg. It seemed like she didn't use too much strength.

"Why is it so light?" She was filled with doubt.

When Xiao Chen received the Thunder Dragon's egg, he furrowed his brows. This dragon egg was indeed too light. Moreover, the life essence inside the egg was not very much. There was practically no life fluctuation transmitted outwards.

"Don't tell me the life energy within had been fought over by the two Dragon Kings?!" Xiao Chen had this kind of thoughts. After all, an ordinary dragon couldn't be compared to the Dragon King. Since the dragons were born, they needed to absorb a great amount of worldly essence. In the face of two Dragon Kings, this dragon egg couldn't be preserved anymore.

When Rowena heard this, she immediately became dejected. She was extremely disappointed.

And outside of the icy cave right now, the Azure Dragon King and Jade Dragon King had already absorbed enough spiritual energy. They could walk by themselves already.

Keke also ran over from a distant place, it curiously sized up the two Dragon Kings. The Azure Dragon King and Jade Dragon King seemed to possess an enmity against one another. They faced each other and it seemed like they would break into a fierce battle any moment now. Lawrence and Yizhen hastily separated them.

Dragon King and Ancestral Dragon will fight for supremacy. At the same time, the fierce battle would also occur among the Dragon Kings. Right now, they definitely cannot allow them to be hostile to one another, if they were to fight, both will suffer a disastrous loss regardless of who win or lose.

Lawrence and Yizhen were fully aware of the legend regarding the Ancestral Dragon and Syndicate Dragon King. The young Dragon King will gain an ability to protect themselves not long after they were born, then they will leave the dragon nest by themselves. From then on, they will keep fighting and grow up in dangerous environment.

The young Dragon Kings might have a favorable impression of them now, but it was hard to say whether they will leave on their own accord or not. Therefore, the two of them decided they must establish a tight relationship with the Dragon Kings, just like that mysterious woman and that Amethyst Dragon King.

“This is truly unbelievable. To see two Dragon Kings born on the same day. I find it a little hard to believe.” Lawrence sighed in awe.

“It was indeed very amazing.” Buddhist Yizhen also spoke like this.

“I found these eggs at the vicinity of the sacred mountain. The dragons and monsters roaming around that place were the most powerful of their kinds. How could their later generations be any ordinary dragons!” Xiao Chen already had this kind of premonition a long time ago. He knew if the little dragons were to be born from the dragon eggs he looted, they will most likely be Dragon Kings.

The young Dragon Kings could already run as fast as the wind, they seriously lived up to their name as the mythological beasts in legend. Even though they

were only half a meter long, they were already bigger than Keke.

“Squeak! Squeak.....!” Keke was jumping from the head of one dragon to another, it felt very strange. It seemed to be extremely happy to have two new playmates.

But the two proud Dragon Kings were not very happy, they resented that little critter for stepping on their head. They were even angrier that Keke was taking them to be mounts. However, they found that they were unable to do anything to that snow-white little critter. Its speed was much faster than them.

“Roar.....!”

“Roar.....!”

Dragon roars pierced the sky, it nearly caused an avalanche. Even though the Syndicate Dragon Kings were very young, they possessed incomparable strength.

When the few of them left the snowy mountain, they stood at the tallest peak to survey the sea of bones. That place was still shrouded by bloody light. It seemed like the battle had not ceased yet. This was indeed an earth rending battle.

Why did the rain of blood fell that night? How did the dragons who had been sealed recover their divine ability? And most importantly, why did they attack that incomparably terrifying ghost town simultaneously? What was the thing that was suppressed by the divine monolith..... The few of them were filled with questions. It was really not easy to get out alive this time.

Chapter 101 – After a Mysterious Week

Xiao Chen decided to go probe around the vicinity of the ghost town, he must get to the bottom of this, otherwise he wouldn't be able to feel at peace.

Lawrence and Buddhist Yizhen didn't plan to explore for ghost town for a short period of time. Their most important mission now was to nurture the young Dragon Kings. Only until the two young Syndicate Dragon Kings had enough power to protect themselves would they be willing to leave their side. They needed to seek for a place to train, the situation on the dragon island was very complicated at the moment, only strength represents everything.

After the calamity in the ghost town, as well as that massacre previously, several hundred practitioners on dragon island died. Now, there were merely a little over a hundred practitioners on the entire dragon island. Almost all of these people were lone wolves. If they also participated in the battle that day, and were forced into the ghost town, perhaps there would only be a few practitioners left on the dragon island now.

Xiao Chen originally wanted to go probe around the vicinity of the ghost town, but he found that area was still brimming with baleful aura, the bloody radiance was unpleasant to the eyes. He changed his mind in the end, that place was too dangerous at the moment, he decided to not take any risks temporarily.

When the few of them walked in the mountain woods, they were shocked to find that; The rain of blood did not fall on these region at all. It seemed like only the sea of bones and that deathly still forest were affected by that rarely seen rain of blood. The few of them heaved a sigh, that region was seriously too dangerous, and that night they massacred until that place by chance. It was indeed following the path to their own doom.

There were many beautiful landscapes on the dragon island, Xiao Chen and the gang found a spiritual mountain pretty quickly. The fine woods were flourishing, the wisteria were all over the place, it could even be said to be the intoxication of a beautiful spring day. The spiritual energy was dense, that was even a waterfall in between.

After experiencing the calamity in the ghost town, everyone felt delightful to see this kind of beautiful spiritual land, their body and mind loosened up.

There was a crystal clear lake in the bamboo forest. Xiao Chen was currently free-swimming in the middle of the lake. He washed off the dirty blood all over his body, it seemed like his spirit had also received a baptism. His mind was empty and calm, he unconsciously operated his secret technique, the entire water surface was rippling. Xiao Chen was shrouded by the drizzling mist.

Soon after, the lake water calmed down again. It seemed like he had become a part of the tiny lake, the surrounding fishes were no longer afraid of him; They were swimming beside him. Xiao Chen felt as if he had really merged with the heaven and earth, and became a part of nature. In the end, he submerged into the bottom of the lake, and sunk into a fantastic martial zone. His entire person already no longer require to breathe, endless spiritual energy entered his body from the skin, the impure energies were discharged by nature.

God knows how much time had passed, Xiao Chen finally opened his two eyes and rose from the bottom of the lake. After he surfaced, the golden rays of light spilled from the East. It allowed him to take a bath under the dazzling morning sun.

Lawrence who was jogging at the side of the lake was incomparably shocked

and said, “Don’t tell me you were in the lake the entire night?”

“Oh? I guess that was the case, I also never thought I would actually lie dormant from yesterday evening until now.” Xiao Chen flung his dripping wet long hair, and walked towards the shore. The surface of his body was flickering with a crystal clear luster, it was like a layer of jade flower had been smeared on his body.

“It seemed like you had undergone a peculiar transformation.”

“I also felt as if some transformation had taken place.” But Xiao Chen was unable to pinpoint accurately what kind of changes had taken place. However, just at this time he said, “Yizhen is also coming over here.” After saying these, he blanked out for a moment, because he was unable to see Yizhen nor could he hear the voice, yet he was completely sense Yizhen getting close.

Sure enough, Yizhen walked over from a bamboo forest not far away, which confirmed the feeling he had a moment ago.

Lawrence was dumbstruck. Only until Yizhen appeared in his line of sight did he discover him. Practitioners on their level were nimble, they normally wouldn’t make any sound when walking. And Xiao Chen actually relied on his spiritual sense to find Yizhen approaching in advance. Although the distance was not too far, this kind of foresight with spiritual sense was still really miraculous.

“Our good captive is really so diligent, she is actually preparing breakfast for us. There are Mongolian gazelle’s leg, deer breast..... coconut juice.....” Xiao Chen spelled it out one by one. Lawrence quickly rushed into the bamboo forest, and found that it was exactly as Xiao Chen had said; Under Rowena’s supervision, Yan Qing Cheng was preparing those breakfast.

In regards to Xiao Chen's conspicuous spiritual sense, Lawrence and Buddhist Yizhen were extremely shocked.

"Without your eyes nor your ears, how far can you perceive?" Lawrence asked.

"I guess roughly a hundred meter or more."

"How terrifying, no one will be able to mount a sneak attack on you from hereafter." Buddhist Yizhen was deeply moved as he said, "This seemed to be an ability that only surfaced when one reached the Historia realm."

Exuvia, Historia, Zephyrus, Nirvana, and Immortalis were regarded as the five major realms for the practitioners. Once they entered the Historia realm, the practitioners would gain some bizarre divine ability. Xiao Chen's ability to sense the surroundings without sight or sound could be considered as a kind of divine ability.

Xiao Chen just made a breakthrough to Exuvia Seventh Celestial Layer not long ago, there were still some distance from the Historia realm. And yet a divine ability had already emerged, this was definitely a rare event.

"Time to eat....." The extraordinarily beautiful Rowena called out to the three men from the bamboo forest.

Enjoying the sumptuous breakfast served by beautiful woman while appreciating the fragrance of flowers and birdsong not far away, as well as the clear mountain spring, they felt extremely pleased. Their nervous mood in the past few days finally eased up.

At this entrancing and flourishing spiritual land, Xiao Chen trained with a relaxed mind. His pure energy became more and more condensed, after his martial technique improved, he felt that he was able to absorb the worldly essence much faster than before.

It must be mentioned that Rowena was really “responsible and diligent”, she actually wanted to turn Yan Qing Cheng into a gorgeous woman. She diligently gave her instructions everyday, which made Yan Qing Cheng clench her teeth in anger.

The three skeletons were training, Lawrence and Buddhist Yizhen were also training, everyone was striving to increase their own strength. According to what Lawrence had said, training for one year on the dragon island was equivalent to three-five years of training in the past, because they might die if they didn’t have enough strength at this place. Everyone had no other choice but be forced to devise ways to make a breakthrough as soon as possible.

Only Keke was the most leisure, it would go provoke the two young Dragon Kings when it had nothing to do, which caused the birds and beasts in this region to run away frantically due to the dragon roars.

“Xiao Chen, are you using the true God Slayer Technique?”

Yizhen was currently swapping pointers with Xiao Chen, he saw how Xiao Chen used the God Slayer Technique before. He was very surprised after the enquiry, and said, “Legend says that after the God Slayer Technique reach a certain level, it was possible to slay a god efficiently. It is an extremely terrifying killing move, but nobody was capable of mastering it.”

Yizhen saw how Xiao Chen was already able to display such a huge power with his current ability, he was indeed somewhat fearful. Xiao Chen didn't hide anything and passed this technique to him, but Buddhist Yizhen was unable to display its full power with his Buddhism Law. It seemed like this killing move was specially customized for those who trained in the divine monolith's law.

After hearing Xiao Chen's presentation, there were still three techniques as powerful as God Slayer; The Chaotic Patterns, Demon Suppression, and Death Blow, Buddhist Yizhen was truly a bit speechless. In fact, Xiao Chen only focused on practicing the God Slayer at the moment, because one technique could evolve into endless variation, he still haven't grasped the essence of this first technique.

Actually, after the life and death experience in the ghost town, Buddhist Yizhen had reaped a huge benefit too. The ancient scripture in the Buddha's Eternal Wheel had embedded in his heart for eternity. At the same time, the Buddha's Eternal Wheel had increased his power from the Fifth Celestial Layer directly to the Seventh Celestial Layer.

After training on this beautiful spiritual mountain for a few days, Xiao Chen and the others clearly felt the baleful aura in the heart of the island had become weaker. And this was already the seventh days since the ghost town appeared.

Xiao Chen hurriedly left this place, and made his way to the vicinity of the sea of bones in order to look around. As for Lawrence and Yizhen, because of the Azure Dragon King and Jade Dragon King, they stayed behind. The three skeletons also didn't leave, and continued to train at this place. Only Keke followed Xiao Chen delightfully.

With his current ability, a few dozen miles were nothing. He quickly entered the deathly still forest, and arrived just before the sea of bones.

A few dozen practitioners concealed themselves at this place, they were all watching the ghost town from the sidelines. They paid close attention to everything that happened there. Xiao Chen arrived just on time, the sea of blood in the sky slowly retreated, and the Brass Trigrams, Divine Halberd, and Metal Engravings in the ghost town transformed into three light beams and left the ghost town. As for Buddha's Eternal Wheel, it embedded itself back onto the ancient city gate.

Soon after, all the dragons flew out from the ghost town, their divine ability seemed to be weakening at lightning speed. They actually landed on the ground as soon as they left the ghost town. The last to fly out of the ancient city was the Ancestral Dragon's Horn and Ancestral Dragon's Claw. They flew towards the direction of the sacred mountain.

Everyone was incomparably shocked, the dragons really seemed to have lost their divine ability, they merely recovered their divine ability for seven days, and then returned to their original state. Regardless of the kings of dragons such as the Monarch Lion Dragon and the Tyrannical Dragon, or the common dragons such as the Elephants Draco and the others, all of them were using brute force to run towards a distant location. Not a single dragon were able to fly again.

Seven days!

Such a mysterious seven days!

How did something like these happen?!

The ghost town in the middle of the sea of bones also gradually became duller over time. In the end, it actually completely disappeared in the boundless sea of

bones. Only the hundred meter tall ancient divine monolith stood there. Everything had disappeared, as if nothing happened in the first place. However, regardless of the deathly still forest, or the boundless sea of bones, the traces from the rain of blood remained, this was the only evidence that left behind.

Only until a long time later, when the dragons distanced themselves, and the forest became quiet, did the practitioners dare to approach the sea of bones. They wanted to get to the bottom of the matter. Among the dozens of practitioner, the majority of them did not enter the ghost town. When the rain of blood descended, they didn't enter this terrifying ominous land. Spell Master Schroder and Psychic Lanyu was among the group. Xiao Chen had met these two before, he was unable to recognize the rest.

Xiao Chen also entered the sea of bones, he found the Solitary Sword Demon at this place, as well as that mysterious woman shrouded in colorful mist. Almost all the survivors who had entered the ancient city before were present, they were the most concerned regarding these.

All of a sudden, Xiao Chen felt someone was spying on him. This was his foresight ability without relying on sight and sound. This was the new divine ability that came into his possession recently. Fifty meter behind him, a young man with pale complexion was currently sizing him up.

Even though they were still a distance apart, Xiao Chen could feel this guy was extremely dangerous. He had a feeling that even the Solitary Sword Demon was not a match for him.

Although he didn't turn around to watch, he already clearly captured that person's appearance with his spiritual sense. That was a twenty plus year old youngster, he was medium-sized, and couldn't be considered handsome. His complexion was abnormally pale, it seemed like there was no flowing blood.

For some reason, a weird feeling welled up in Xiao Chen's heart, it felt like he had seen this person before, but he couldn't recall it at the moment. The youth with abnormally pale complexion was clearly not spying on Xiao Chen alone, he also spied on Solitary Sword Demon, Lanyu, Schroder, and the other experts, all of these were clearly sensed by Xiao Chen.

What was he doing? Xiao Chen remained calm and collected, he continued to use his foresight ability to observe him. All of a sudden, Xiao Chen's pair of eyes emitted two divine light, he felt a nip in the air. He "saw" the red birthmark on the left wrist of the youth, it was identical to a shocking memory in his mind.

He once excavated three ice coffins at the snowy mountain. Each coffin had a piece of casted off human skin. All the three human skins had this kind of red birthmark on their left wrist, it was exactly the same. At last, Xiao Chen finally realized why he felt this youth looked so familiar. If this youth had more wrinkles on his pale cheeks, and had thinly spread white hair, then he would look exactly the same as those three human skin.

It was the old ghost in the ice coffins!

Xiao Chen secretly sucked in a mouthful of cold air, how did this happen? His original speculation actually came true, this kind of bizarre old ghost actually existed! If that was the case, then doesn't that mean this old ghost had lived on this dragon island all along? That means he had lived for at least a few hundred years!

But why did he spy on me? Xiao Chen had this kind of doubts. Being watched by this kind of bizarre old ghost, anyone would feel a sense of danger. God knows just what was this old ghost planning.

Looking at how young the old ghost was one more time, and yet so pale, it really looked like a living corpse. Words couldn't even describe how eerie and frightening it was. In the end, the old ghost distanced himself, and disappeared from this sea of bones.

This was a great misfortune, he must think of a way to defend himself, or even eliminate the old ghost. Just when Xiao Chen's state of mind was very unstable, he felt a very familiar aura, it seemed like the Barbarian Tribe's young expert Chaos was glancing left and right not far behind him. However, Xiao Chen was completely gobsmacked, even though the aura was very much like that of Chaos', that was not the same person!

Chapter 102 – Native Peoples of Sacred Island

Chaos was about three meter tall, he was a powerful beastman brimming with wildness. He had a pair of wolf ears, and a long tiger tail. And the person that was glancing around behind him was actually a fatty! His stature was not lofty at all, he was short and stout. People get the feeling that he was especially simple and honest, even when he was glancing around, he seemed a bit foolish and stupid.

This was too strange! Xiao Chen could indeed sense Chaos' aura from his body, but why was the body a different person? Suddenly, he felt a nip in the air and quivered momentarily. Could it be that Chaos was already dead, and then resurrected with a different corpse? After all, he experienced too many strange and terrifying things during the ghost town's calamity. He instinctively thought of something like this. In addition, there was also the bizarre fact regarding the snowy mountain's old ghost, how could he not let his imagination run wild.

The simple-minded fatty circled around the sea of bones. After that, he actually crossed the sea of bones, and walked towards the Southernmost direction. Xiao Chen was not too familiar with the Southern part of the island, he had never explored that region before. However, he went after him this time, and decided to find out the origin of this little fatty that possessed Chaos' aura.

When he was following the little fatty, Xiao Chen found that the Solitary Sword Demon and the mysterious woman shrouded in colorful mist were also following closely. They didn't even try to avoid him. When they crossed the sea of bones, and entered the mountain woods, Xiao Chen walked over to them, and said straightforwardly, "I suspect there is an evil spirit borrowing corpse to return from the grave. That's why I came after him, what about the both of you?"

The Solitary Sword Demon sneered, “Heh, likewise! I could feel the aura from a certain beastman that left a little impression in me from his body. But that body doesn’t belong to that person.”

“I also chased after him for the same reason.” The mysterious woman answered like this.

Xiao Chen was finally convinced, his feeling was not wrong, something strange was going on here.

The silly little fatty was not as simple as his outer appearance dictated. He seemed to be very perceptive, he constantly changed his direction in the mountain woods for fear that someone was tailing him. This made Keke that was following at Xiao Chen’s side blink its glittering big eyes unceasingly, it seemed to find this very fascinating.

They kept going southward for about an hour or more, only then did the little fatty enter a wide mountain forest. He was no longer turning left and right, but Xiao Chen and the others were not worried at all, it seemed like they had already reached their destination. But just at this time, Keke jumped onto Xiao Chen’s shoulder. It extended one of its little paw to pull his long hair. After that, it kept glancing backward with its big eyes.

Xiao Chen’s heart skipped a beat, he pretended to stop and probe around. Not long later, the snowy mountain’s old ghost entered his perceptive range, he could clearly “see” him following them.

This was definitely not good, Xiao Chen saw the Solitary Sword Demon and that mysterious woman in front, it seemed like they didn’t know the existence of this old ghost yet. Xiao Chen remained calm and collected, he continued to

follow them. Not long later, they found a small village in the ancient forest. The surroundings were enclosed by ancient trees, it would be hard to find this village if they didn't search thoroughly.

The small village only had about seventy to eighty household. They could hear the cries of chicken and barking dog. It was brimming with the scent of countryside. It made Xiao Chen felt as if it was a lifetime ago, there was actually a small mountain village brimming with livelihood on this kind of uncivilized dragon island, it was a bit unreal.

"Cough! Cough.....!" A fit of coughing transmitted over, a specter-like old woman appeared behind Xiao Chen and the others. She sighed faintly and said, "Youngster, why are you guys following my grandson?"

Xiao Chen felt heavy-hearted, his foresight ability did allow him to detect the old woman in advance, but the other person was seriously too fast. He clearly saw a figure approaching them from the forest like a wisp of smoke.

The Solitary Sword Demon held his metal sword and retreated to the side, pulling some distance from the old woman. And all traces of that mysterious woman shrouded in colorful mist were long gone, it seemed like her ability was really outstanding. She already concealed herself from the old woman in advance.

"We don't have any evil intention, we only wanted to investigate something." Xiao Chen was very calm. He looked at this crooked old woman with white hair before him.

"You want to investigate our village?" The old woman's voice was somewhat cold.

“No.” Xiao Chen decided not to beat about the bush. It was not necessary to cover up the truth with some excuses, he said, “We felt the aura of an acquaintance from the body of the little fatty. We thought it was very strange, so we followed after him. We wanted to find out what is going on.”

“You felt the aura of an acquaintance, don’t tell me that so-called acquaintance was your friend?” Although the old woman was speaking quite gently, Xiao Chen’s prophet-like spiritual sense could feel a trace of danger.

“No, truth be told, he was my foe. Between me and him, only one of us would be able to keep on living.”

“Oh...” The old woman nodded her head. At the same time, Xiao Chen felt the danger faded away.

“How about you?” The old woman turned her head to look at the Solitary Sword Demon.

Although the Solitary Sword Demon was conceited, he also didn’t want to stir up trouble with a powerful enemy without clearly understanding the opponent’s strength. He used his index finger to point at Xiao Chen and said, “I am the same as him.”

“My intuition tells me you guys are not lying. Then this will be easy to deal with, I don’t mind telling you. That beastman known as Chaos was killed by me. I implanted two of the ancient beast souls from his body into my grandson.”

Xiao Chen and the Solitary Sword Demon what a little shocked, they had once

heard some beastman had ancient beast soul sealed within their body. It was indeed possible to forcefully remove them and implant them in other people's body.

“My grandson is also the descendant of a beastman. His body has an ancient beast soul. That Chaos didn't know what's good for him, he wanted to swallow up my grandson's beast soul. As a result, he was captured alive by my grandson, I punished him like such after bringing him back to the village.”

Xiao Chen and the Solitary Sword Demon were speechless, Chaos was truly too unfortunate. He actually met this kind of fate.

“Let's go, we rarely get any visitors, let's go to the village and drink some tea. I know you guys surely have a lot to ask me.” The old woman walked forward as she said these.

“Granny, may I ask; Are you guys living on this dragon island all along?”

The old woman looked at Xiao Chen, her tangerine-like face revealed a smile, and said, “I knew you were going to ask this. Our ancestors were like you, they came from the mainland. As a result, they were trapped on the island, we are their descendants.”

Although he already thought of the possibility, Xiao Chen still couldn't help but feel amazed. It seemed like he could see his own future already. Is he going to spend the rest of his life trapped on this island?

“Something's amiss, the dragon island was unsealed not long ago, why didn't you guys leave?” Xiao Chen thought of this question.

“How to leave? Living on this island for a long period of time, our physique will change. It was just like a curse, we cannot leave this island.” The old woman let out a breath as she speak.

“Don’t tell me there is no other way?”

“There is, if you guys can subdue nine Syndicate Dragon King, even if this island is already sealed, you will be able to safely depart from this island.”

“Is that true?” The Solitary Sword Demon who remained silent until now also couldn’t help but open his mouth to ask.

“The mixture of nine Dragon King’s blood can lift the curse of us later generations.” The old woman looks absent-minded, she was a little excited.

As they were talking, they entered the village. Although there were the sound of chicken cries and barking dogs, the figures of human was sparse. It appeared lacking of vitality, it felt a little lonely.

That silly little fatty walked over from a courtyard, and asked, “Grandma, they are.....”

“You silly little boy, you were usually quick-witted, but today you didn’t even realize you were being tailed.”

“They were following me?!” The little fatty was somewhat vexed, then he appeared a little silly again. However, Xiao Chen didn’t look down on him. This

little fatty might be those kind of people that act like a hog to eat the tiger. Otherwise it was impossible for him to get rid of Chaos.

The old woman brought Xiao Chen's party into the courtyard. She prompted them to take a sit beside the stone table, then she made the little fatty prepare the tea. Only then did she begin to talk slowly with Xiao Chen's party.

"The dragon island is sealed, even the sea area in the vicinity had also turned into the Taboo Ocean. Regardless of man or ship, everything that attempted to enter will be destroyed. But according to legend, there is a divine ship that can cross the Taboo Ocean." The old woman gave Xiao Chen's party a sliver of hope.

"What kind of ship?"

"It was a divine ship built from the Ancestral Dragon's bone and Heavenly Tree. It was drifting in the middle of the Taboo Ocean all along. It already drifted for countless years. It can bring everyone on the island out of the Taboo Ocean."

"How do we find this divine ship?" The Solitary Sword Demon asked.

The old woman took a sip of the tea, then she said unhurriedly, "Didn't I say it before? You need nine Dragon King, they can work as one to summon the divine ship that drifted in the Taboo Ocean."

"Then don't you suppose we have a high chance of leaving here?!" The Solitary Sword Demon was very excited.

Then the old woman poured cold water, "The prerequisite is that you guys must first find nine Dragon Kings, and have them listen to what you said. You

must make them agree to summon the divine ship for you.”

This was definitely an extremely difficult challenge. At that time, how many people wished to subdue the Amethyst Dragon King, and yet none were able to subdue it. Of course, if the Solitary Sword Demon knew Xiao Chen and his party had obtained two Dragon Kings, he definitely couldn't resist his urge to throw up blood.

“Is there nothing else we can use as replacement?”

“There is, if you guys can find the legendary young Ancestral Dragon, it is also possible. One Ancestral Dragon can produce the same result as nine Dragon Kings.” The old woman said very calmly.

Chapter 103 – Secret

The Solitary Sword Demon was speechless.

As for Keke who was looking all over the place on Xiao Chen's shoulder, its glittering big eyes immediately turned perfectly round as soon as it heard these two words, the Ancestral Dragon. It waved its little paws exaggeratedly, that meant it was totally not convinced.

"Why is the village so quiet?" Xiao Chen noticed how there were seventy to eighty households, but he only saw three to five people after entering the village.

"Although there are a lot of houses, the population already declined. In the end, there's not even thirty people left in the entire village." The old woman let out a long breath.

Just at this time, a white-haired old man floated into the courtyard like a specter. That was an aged Psychic.

"Fourth Grandpa.....!" The little fatty called out without thinking.

The old man answered briefly, then he furrowed his brows and said, "Not good, that evil spirit has reborn, I found his traces."

"What evil spirit?" The Solitary Sword Demon asked.

"An ancient evil spirit, it has lived for countless years, it was the only malicious spirit that had escaped from the ghost town."

The old man's words immediately made Xiao Chen felt a chill. He recalled that old ghost that had undergone several metamorphosis at the snowy mountain. It seemed to have followed them here.....

The evil spirit had existed for countless years, it came from the ghost town, it actually originated from the ancient era. This piece of news was really terrifying, it made people tremble in the face of disaster.

Back in those days, the village was originally not located here. Rather, it was in a valley with much prettier scenery, but they found a few dozen stone coffins when they dug the land to build the foundations. Only after they suffered a disaster did they move to this forest.

And not more than three months later, the evil spirit appeared. That was the beginning of the village's nightmare, they were like animals that were reared in the pen. One or two people would disappear from time to time, the villagers knew it was the evil spirit that snatched those people's life.

The old woman's ancestors also tried to resist before, they once thought of ways to eliminate the evil spirit, but everything ended up in failure. Moreover, they invited an even more terrible retribution, it was a dark history etched in their memories for all eternity.

As the old woman slowly explained, Xiao Chen and the Solitary Sword Demon's expression became heavier. The reappearance of that terrifying evil spirit will definitely be a great threat to their life on the dragon island. The old woman let out a breath, as if she had just woken up from a nightmare. It seemed like a few more wrinkles appeared on her aged cheeks.

In those dark times, the old woman's ancestors found a few historical remains of some ancient village. There were some written records in those desolate ancient village, only then did they found out the evil spirit was an ancient departed soul, the only evil spirit that escaped from the ghost town, it was not an opponent they could hope to defeat.

Imagine this, if there were people trapped on the dragon island in each generation. And those people's death were associated with the evil spirit, then some clues will more or less be left behind.

According to ancient legend, some powerful evil spirits could forcibly absorb the vitality of the living, allowing their ghost-like body to transform unceasingly and thereby returning to the sun again. This kind of evil spirit were called Demon. Those written records left behind in the ruined ancient village validated this legend. It was very obvious that the evil spirits on the dragon island were all demons.

Fortunately the malicious spirit couldn't wreak havoc for a long period, it was only for one year. When the time passed, it would search for a desolate place and fell into a deep sleep. It would continue to sleep like that for a few hundred years until the transformation took place. After that, it will emerge from the coffin again to assimilate the Yang energy.

The old woman's ancestors had experienced this calamity twice, which caused the population to decline. If they were to go through this one more time, then even after the remaining twenty to thirty people die, it wouldn't even meet the demon's minimum requirement. A complete annihilation was only a matter of time.

"If you say it like that, aren't we toasted?" Although the Solitary Sword Demon asked like this, he didn't carry a hint of fear. He was an unfriendly guy, a genuine

cold-hearted guy.

“According to some written records we found later, we only have one chance at present.” The old woman took a sip of tea to moisten her dry lips, then she said, “The first three months when he casted off his skin was his weakest period, only during this time would we have a chance of defeating him. Otherwise he will be unparalleled after this time limit. We wouldn’t even stand a chance, he will become a genuine demon.”

The demon had already undergone dozens of transformation, he normally would have reached the perfect realm by now and became an existence that even the god wouldn’t dare to provoke. But because the dragon island was sealed, the demon was unable to break through the shackles. It was firmly suppressed at the realm of demigod, and the demon himself didn’t dare to take the risks and breakthrough forcefully. Otherwise the consequences will be dire, the power of god is not permitted on the dragon island.

Exuvia, Historia, Zephyrus, Nirvana, and Immortalis. The Zephyrus realm of the five major realms was also known as demigod realm. The gap between the practitioners on the island and the demon was as clear as day.

“Within the period of three months? Then we don’t have much time left.....” Xiao Chen told them everything he saw on the snowy mountain.

The old woman and old man were appalled, they revealed a terrified expression. The old woman said, “He..... already morphed at an earlier time?! If what you said is true, then two months might have passed already, it seems we..... don’t even have a month left.”

The old man was gathering snow lotus in the vicinity of the snowy mountain,

that's how he found the traces left behind by the evil spirit, but he didn't discover the three ice coffins in question.

Xiao Chen lowered his voice and asked, "Is there a birthmark at his left wrist?"

"According to what they say..... yes!"

"Then we're in trouble, when I came to this place, it seems like..... that guy had followed us."

This news from Xiao Chen was like a comet falling into the tranquil ocean, the heart of the few people on the spot was palpitating like crazy. Their expression took a disastrous turn, chill ran down their spine, and they quickly swept their eyes across all four directions.

The entire area turned deathly silent.

Only Keke was looking all over the place with its glittering big eyes without a care in the world.

Xiao Chen lowered his voice to the greatest extent, and said, "Since he is that powerful, couldn't we get help from other forces to deal with him? A few days ago, the dragons displayed an out of the ordinary divine ability!"

This was a proposal, and also an inquiry, why did the dragons recover their former power within those few days, it was still a mystery to him. He was completely uninformed regarding the mysterious ghost town.

“The ghost town..... it was the ghost town!” The old man sighed lightly, and said, “Everything was because of the ghost town. I mean, think about it, that demon came from the ghost town.”

The old man didn't say much, as a matter of fact, they also didn't know much. All their information was passed down by their ancestors. At the intervals of every hundred years, the seal on the dragon island would be lifted temporarily. The dragons would recover their divine ability on the day of the ghost festival for a short amount of time and attack the ghost town later. They wanted to destroy the divine monolith, as for what kind of secret it was hiding, outsiders like them was unable to find out.

As for the Brass Trigrams, the jet-black Metal Engravings, the golden Divine Halberd, and other legendary divine artifacts, they were also unable to find out where were these hidden. The mysterious dragon island was hiding a lot of secrets, even if they expended a great effort to unearth everything, they also wouldn't be able to unearth all the secrets. This island seemed to be hiding a gargantuan secret.

“The dragon island's divine monolith should be an important clue.....” The Solitary Sword Demon thought out loud.

“This misfortune came too suddenly, a disaster shall strike again.” The old woman's aged face became frailer as she said, “There is a bizarre energy suppressing the power of god on the dragon island. Although they are mainly directed against the dragons, other races had also been affected greatly. Beginning from our ancestor's era, regardless of how much talent one possessed, they wouldn't be able to get past Zephyrus Third Celestial Layer.” It was very obvious that nobody on the dragon island had enough power to confront the demon.

Just at this time, the sound of ripping air could be heard from the entrance to the village. Everyone could clearly see a few resplendent sword-qi soaring into the sky. At the same time, they could hear an angry shout, as well as the loud sound of building collapsing, which was then followed by a scream. After that, they could hear the ear-splitting dragon roar.

The old woman, the old man, Xiao Chen, the Solitary Sword Demon, and the little fatty rushed out of the courtyard and ran towards the village entrance at lightning speed.

They only saw a few corpses that had been ripped apart at the village entrance, they were scattered on the collapsed buildings. The body of the woman shrouded in colorful mist trembled slightly, then she threw up a mouthful of blood. She clearly just received the injuries. The Amethyst Dragon King was accompanying her, it also had scars on its body, there were some scales and dragon blood on the ground.

The old woman and the other villagers wore a sorrowful expression, they gathered the corpses together, then they sized up the woman shrouded in colorful mist and the Amethyst Dragon King.

“Is this a Dragon King?”

“Yes.”

“What happened just now?”

The woman shrouded in colorful mist was really mysterious, Xiao Chen encountered her several times, but he was still unable to see her real face. The

colorful mist was lingering on her body from beginning to end, she appeared incomparably transcendental and mysterious.

“Just now a man with really dense negative aura got over here.....”

As the woman shrouded in colorful mist recounted the event, everyone quickly associated it with the demon! Even though he was still in his weakest period, he was still so powerful. The three people in the village entrance were ripped apart by him in almost an instant. And the woman who could control the law of time also sustained a heavy injury, if the wounded Amethyst Dragon King's blood did not unexpectedly penetrate that evil spirit in the most crucial moment, she might be ripped apart in that moment too.

“The Dragon King's blood can actually restrain him, this is such a wondrous news.” The old woman's tangerine-like wrinkled skin twitched. It was easy to tell that she was very excited, but it seemed somewhat terrifying. That wrinkled cheeks were almost contorted, she laughed with a quack and said, “This is seriously such a wondrous news, this might be our only way to defeat him. We only knew the mixture of nine Dragon Kings' blood can lift our curse, but we never thought it can be used to restrain the evil spirit too, kakaka.....”

Chapter 104 – Demon

Since the dragon island had been sealed, no Ancestral Dragon and Dragon King had ever appeared. The legend finally began once more after countless years. The people who came to the dragon island this time was not to explore the island, their goal was the Ancestral Dragon and Dragon King.

“Granny, we don’t need to fear him anymore, at least we have the ability to defend ourselves this time, I will go find Blackie.” The little fatty said without thinking, then he rushed into the village as quick as lightning.

A dragon roar transmitted from the jungle behind the village, not long later the little fatty led a one meter long young black dragon over. The scales all over the little dragon’s body were flickering with black radiance. Its entire body was shiny black, its head looked like the Ancestral Dragon, yet its body looked like a leopard or a tiger. Of course, it was impossible for it to possess any fur, it was completely covered in dragon scales.

It was a Dragon King without a doubt, it was pointless to guess what kind of dragon it was, because there was a huge difference between the Dragon King and the previous generation.

The people in this village had actually found a Dragon King already, one could tell they were preparing for this a long time ago. The black Dragon King was only a little smaller than the Amethyst Dragon King. It was very possible this might be the second Dragon King that was born on the dragon island. It possessed a clear advantage to compete for the position of the Dragon Emperor.

When the Amethyst Dragon King and Black Dragon King met each other in the eyes, they immediately let out a growl. The enmity between them was very deep.

This was something unavoidable, the battle between the kings of dragons was the cruelest, the Syndicate Dragon King will inevitably fight to the death upon reaching a certain stage in growth.

The woman shrouded in colorful mist and little fatty hastily appeased the young Dragon Kings, preventing them from breaking out into a fight. And just at this time, Keke's glittering big eyes suddenly widened, the two Dragon Kings also seemed to be on guard as they looked towards the same direction as Keke; The jungle outside of the village.

Keke scuttled onto the Amethyst Dragon King's back with a "swish". It used its two paws to rub the wound to smear its paws with a bit of the Dragon King's blood. Then it transformed into a streak of white light and dashed towards the jungle outside of the village while the Amethyst Dragon King let out a roar in frustration.

The black fog fluctuated in the jungle violently, many forest trees were destroyed in but a moment. Keke transformed into a streak of white light and ran back to the village. And then a youth with pale complexion appeared from the jungle, his chest had a few bloody hole, that was caused by the Amethyst Dragon King's blood. And his left arm had a tiny paw print, that was clearly Keke's masterpiece. His pair of eyes emitted two soul wrenching rays of light. He gazed at Keke and the two Syndicate Dragon King, then he faded away in his original position without making any sound.

"It is him!" Xiao Chen and the woman shrouded in colorful mist opened their mouth simultaneously.

"It's him, it's that evil spirit....." The old woman was emotional as she said, "I saw the written records regarding the evil spirit left by our ancestors, it included a simple drawing about him. It is precisely because of him that many of our

ancestors were dead!”

The constant arrival and retreat of the evil spirit made everyone felt very uneasy. Although it had backed off for now, it was hard to say whether it will show up again or not.

The potency of the Dragon King’s blood made Xiao Chen and the others utterly astonished. It was really capable of restraining this kind of terrifying demon. One could imagine just how powerful the Dragon Kings would become once they reached maturity. And Keke’s performance made everyone flabbergasted, it was actually able to discover the evil spirit before everyone and the Dragon King.

Keke was currently rubbing its little paws desperately, trying to rid the bloodstain from its snow-white fur. After that, it beautifully ignored the Amethyst Dragon King’s growl, and mischievously jumped onto the Black Dragon King’s back, then it waved its little paw at the Amethyst Dragon King. Before the two Dragon Kings got furious, Xiao Chen hastily grabbed it. This little guy was seriously too unruly.

The few of them returned to the village, they went to a different courtyard this time. There was a field of grapevines in the courtyard, the leaves were emerald-green, and many crystal clear purple grapes were hanging on the vines. They were as shiny as the agate crystals.

The few of them sat around a stone table below the grapevines. They began to go over the plan in details, they must eliminate the demon, or else everyone will be in danger.

Xiao Chen said, “The demon suffered a heavy damage from the Dragon King’s blood, this is our chance, we must gather everyone on the dragon island to deal

with him.”

After the calamity in the ghost town, there were still hundred plus practitioners on the dragon island. That was because they didn't get close to the sea of bones. If all of them unite as one, that will definitely be a powerful force.

It was rare for the Solitary Sword Demon to lay down his pride. He also felt the threat of death, he completely agreed with Xiao Chen's proposal.

The mysterious woman whose entire body was shrouded by the colorful mist nodded and said, “We can also form a truce with another group of experts.”

Xiao Chen and the Solitary Sword Demon did not understand, they looked at her doubtfully. The old woman at the side smiled and said, “The young lady is a true expert, but your ability seemed to fluctuate sharply, it made people unable to ascertain your true power.” She squinted her eyes and said, “Other than the group of young experts that entered the dragon island, there are still thirty plus Zephyrus level old masters here.”

The Solitary Sword Demon nodded, he understood in a flash. According to the agreement between all parties, the old masters cannot get involved in anything that happened on the island. Only the youth generation will fight over the Dragon Kings, the older generation could only provide support at the boundless ocean. These people clearly infiltrated the island secretly and didn't follow the rules.

“I will get in touch with them, I know those people's movement.” The old man at the side started to talk.

The old woman said, “Our most important goal now is to search for nine Dragon Kings, with nine kings together, we will be able to summon the legendary divine ship and leave this mysterious yet terrifying island for good.”

According to legend, the divine ship made from the Ancestral Dragon’s bones and Heavenly Tree had been drifting in the Taboo Ocean all along. It had withstood the vicissitudes of time, only this kind of boat could bring everyone on the island away from the Taboo Ocean. This was what the old woman’s ancestors found in the written records of a ruined ancient village.

The Ancestral Dragon’s bone was without a doubt, the dragon’s sacred bone. As for the Heavenly Tree, it was as Xiao Chen had thought, it was indeed referring to that divine tree at Keke’s old home; That tree trunk that was as wide as a lofty mountain.

The few of them discussed for a long time, but the most pressing matter was that; Would they be able to leave this village safely? The evil ghost might be lingering in the vicinity of the village.

“Don’t tell me we have to bring the Dragon Kings along to go and gather everyone?” The Solitary Sword Demon exerted his strength to grab his metal sword, his fingers got a little pale.

Everyone turned silent, as a matter of fact, they were already facing a death threat. The evil spirit will definitely not let them off, he suffered a heavy injury because of them. It was a great shame and humiliation for a demon who had survived for countless years.

Just at this time, Keke widened its glittering big eyes again. At the same time, the Amethyst Dragon King and Black Dragon King also let out a growl. A burst of

chilly wind blew into the courtyard, the negative aura pervaded in the vicinity of the grapevines.

The Amethyst Dragon King was ready to go this time, it didn't wait for Keke to scuttle across its body, it was the first to dash out. The Black Dragon King let out a growl and followed closely behind. Keke did not feel pressing at all, it jumped onto the grapevine and looked at the two Dragon Kings yelling on the street.

The negative aura already scattered away, the evil spirit retreated again. However, the few people in the courtyard still felt a nip in the air, they felt the entire village was already filled with the breath of death.

"This will not work, we will eventually make a careless mistake if this keeps up. Without the two Dragon Kings with us, we won't be able to deal with that demon." The silly little fatty expressed his opinion, he was clearly not as foolish as his outer appearance dictated.

"Not good, this is really bad!" The old man furrowed his brows and said, "Our clansmen outside will be returning soon, if they encountered the evil spirit, they will certainly not be able to escape its evil clutches."

Soon after, they got up and rushed towards the village entrance. They prepared to provide support to the people returning to the village. The chicken cries and dog barks already couldn't be heard in spacious and empty village, it was deathly silent. It was just like an abandoned land left to return to unchecked growth.

"He's coming!" Xiao Chen shouted. It was because Keke jumped onto his shoulder and used its little paw to pull his long hair. Its glittering big eyes were gazing at the street ahead.

The evil spirit stopped hiding after it has been found, the black fog rolled over and over, waves of bone-chilling negative aura surged up violently. Everyone could feel the nip in the air, the two Dragon Kings let out a roar constantly, they were not afraid of the fiendish aura. If nobody stopped them, they would have dashed over there a long time ago.

The evil spirit was already within hundred meter range. Although the underworld fog was raging and blocked the scorching sunlight from spilling down, Xiao Chen could still “see” him clearly. That was due of his spiritual sense that didn’t require sight and sound.

The one in the cloudy fog was indeed that youth he saw at the sea of bones. His left wrist had an eye-catching birthmark. His pair of eyes were somewhat empty. He seemed to have experienced the changes of time, without examining carefully, it was hard to imagine he was a demon that had lived for countless years. The more one looked at him, the more frightening they felt.

“Give him to me..... And I’ll let everyone off.” A faint ghost whistle transmitted from the black fog. Although it was the voice of a young man, it was lacking of vitality. It sounded like the echo of the chilly wind that blew into the ancient residence from a broken window. As the words reached everyone, it was as if a cold air had entered their body, it made them felt a chill down their spine.

The chilly wind bubbled up, the black fog in front of the demon dispersed a little, they could clearly see the arms he stretched out; It was pointing at Xiao Chen.

“You mean me?” Xiao Chen felt something was not good, for what reason did the evil spirit want him for.

The chilly wind swept past again, the pale face within the underworld fog revealed itself before everyone's eyes. He slowly shook his head, his right arm moved slightly. Keke jumped down from Xiao Chen's shoulder while panting with rage. It actually dashed forward without any hint of fear, it was squeaking non-stop, as if asking the evil spirit something. At the same time, it waved its little paw and a dazzling radiance enveloped the evil spirit.

The fog rolled over and over, the evil spirit faded away without making any sound. The strength displayed by a combat ready evil spirit was unfathomably deep. Keke waved its little paw on the street fiercely, it was very angry, and yet it seemed somewhat adorable. Xiao Chen hastily carried Keke back in his arms. The mysteries surrounding Keke were continuously increasing, he didn't want anything to happen to this little critter.

The few people beside Xiao Chen were endlessly shocked, the demon seemed to be a little afraid of Keke. But Keke was not a Dragon King, could it be that its blood or body could restrain the demonic fiend?

"I cannot comply to your request, nobody shall harm Keke." Xiao Chen faced the spacious and empty street ahead as he shouted. It was not only for the evil spirit, it was also to make himself clear to the few people around him.

A conspicuous figure of the evil spirit appeared at the street far away. The ghost whistles transmitted from the cloudy fog, "I want that sacred tree on top of its head, give that sproutling to me, and I promise not to harm a single soul hereafter."

Everyone's gaze focused on Keke, the treasured tree on its head did not emit any radiance at the moment, it was just like an ordinary plant, It was nothing out

of the ordinary. Everyone originally thought it was because this naughty little critter was running everywhere and the sproutling was stuck on its head by accident. Only now did they know there was much more to it, even the demon was tempted by it.

At the same time Xiao Chen was feeling surprised, his heart was brimming with doubts, but he didn't even think twice about it. It was impossible for him to comply. He asked, "Why should we give it to you? How are we supposed to believe anything you said?!"

"I pledge I will not harm anyone on the dragon island after I get the sacred tree, otherwise my body and soul will extinguish." The evil spirit's voice transmitted from the black fog.

The old man said in a low voice, "According to the written records, the evil spirit cannot break their oath, he made a pledge before and never go back on his words." It was very obvious that the old man was afraid of the evil spirit, he wanted to reach a compromise.

"Can you even believe in a demon's pledge?" Xiao Chen turned his head around and asked coldly.

This made the old man and old woman's aged face turn as red as apple. They were indeed very scared of the evil spirit, whether the evil spirit would violate his pledge or not was not something they could be really certain of. However, their clansmen shall come back any time soon, and the evil spirit is in the vicinity, this is definitely a life threatening danger for those people.

The underworld fog dispersed, the demon turned his head around to look at the direction of the divine monolith that was located at the heart of the island,

then he said, “I will not go back on my pledge, otherwise I will be punished!”

“You are a demon, how can I believe you, people often said not to make a deal with demon.” Xiao Chen was carrying Keke in his arms, he wanted to draw back, but Keke on the other hand was restless, it was struggling to get free and wanted to dash over there. It didn’t seem to be afraid of the evil spirit in the underworld fog.

“Alas, I’m not a demon, I’m a human.” The indistinct ghost whistle heaved a sigh.

Xiao Chen gave a cold snort in return, “That is not a funny joke.”

“I had transformed continuously over the countless years, what I am looking forward to the most is to reborn under the sun. I am no longer a corpse now, I have blood and flesh, I really don’t want to go on killing anymore.”

Chapter 105 – Sacred Dragon Tree

Xiao Chen gave a cold snort in return, “That is not a funny joke.”

“I had transformed continuously over the countless years, what I am looking forward to the most was to be reborn under the sun. I am no longer a corpse now, I have blood and flesh, I really don’t want to go on killing anymore.”

“How do you explain about the few people you killed at the village entrance?”

“They attack me first, that woman shrouded in colorful mist can be my witness.” The demon heaved a sigh.

Xiao Chen remains unmoved and said, “Stop acting as if you had no other choice. You once murdered so many people, how could a demon’s nature be changed so easily? Besides, if you really restrained your ominous nature, why would you force me to hand over the sapling?”

The underworld fog around the demon became denser, the dense negative aura pervaded the surrounding once more, he then said with an indistinct voice, “The seal on the dragon island suppressed my power. It made me unable to break through the shackles smoothly. That’s why at the intervals of every hundred years, I need to absorb the Yang energy. Although I already have a living body with flesh and blood, I still don’t have the vitality. If I cannot get the nourishment from the sacred tree, I have no choice but to absorb extensive amount of Yang energy again. But I really don’t want to continue this massacre.”

“You are telling one lie after another.” Xiao Chen was not very convinced by his words.

“Why should I lie to you?” The demon’s pale face that was exposed from the black fog seemed very sincere, he sighed and said, “So what if you have Syndicate Dragon King to protect you? Their blood can indeed harm me, but will they be able to protect you forever? You guys should know if I really wanted to kill you, there were plenty of opportunities. Besides, what about the other people on the island, who will protect them, if I really wanted to kill, who can obstruct me?”

“Are you threatening us?”

“If that’s what you want to think, then so be it.” The demon sighed unceasingly. It sent a chill that made people’s blood run cold, he was a genuine demon, every words couldn’t be taken lightly, reaping life was a commonplace for him.

“Someone is coming.....” After saying this, the demon faded away without a sound. After that, a scream resounded from the jungle in front of the village. The old woman and old man’s face turned pale on the spot, it was obviously the people from their village.

“Stop it, you demon!” The little fatty shouted loudly. He led the Black Dragon King into the forest. Xiao Chen and the others also followed closely.

The gloomy black fog rushed forth from the forest, the demon appeared again, ten meter in front of everyone. His pale face was very undisturbed, like nothing had happened at all. It made people felt a chill in their heart.

“Why don’t you give the sacred tree to me now. I will give it back after I have no more use for it, I guarantee I will not harm anymore living person from now

on. I will try my best to be a good person.” A sincere expression emerged on the cheeks that didn’t have any hint of blood. The demon was very serious and sincere, one was unable to tell if he was acting.

The old woman and old man were very furious, the clansmen who shouted just now was clearly dead, their body shuddered slightly. Xiao Chen and the Solitary Sword Demon found this to be really ridiculous. A demon that once killed people like scything flax actually wanted to reform and start afresh.....

“What is this sacred tree that you are talking about. Do you really need it that badly?” The little fatty questioned.

“Alas, that is the dragon’s sacred tree, I really need it badly, that is the only thing on this dragon island that can turn me into a living person.” The demon was always sighing as he spoke. It seemed like he was very anxious, it didn’t have any resemblance to the heartless him when he was making his move. It gave people a misconception that he was just a lonesome man.

“The dragon’s sacred tree.” Once these few words came out from his mouth, a huge wave immediately surged up in everyone’s heart. Naturally, the most excited ones were the two young Dragon Kings. Their pair of eyes were emitting substantive divine radiance as they slowly pressed on towards Xiao Chen and Keke.

Keke broke free from Xiao Chen’s embrace and jumped onto the ground while panting with rage. The little critter was not scared of the two Dragon Kings as it stared at them with the treasured tree on its head. Although Keke was usually lively and cute, it emitted an invisible pressure at the moment. The little critter actually wanted to carry out a battle to defend its honor, it wanted to confront two dragons at the same time.

Xiao Chen knew Keke had a powerful defensive power, he would also have a hard time breaking free if he was trapped. But he never saw Keke using any kind of offensive power before, he didn't want it to fight with the two Dragon Kings. After all, it was still too young.

But when Xiao Chen reached out his hand to pull Keke, he was repelled by a light screen. Keke's spotlessly white jade-like body was flickering with seven colored radiance. It was as if a seven-colored sacred fire was throbbing outside of the little guy's body. It actually emitted an astonishing battle intent.

This had never happened before, Keke was always lively and mischievous. "Competitive" does not sit well with it, but Keke's current behavior had overturned its former conduct.

The Amethyst Dragon was flickering with purple radiance, the Black Dragon King flickered with black radiance, they were still closing in.

The dragon's sacred tree was really too enticing, everyone on the spot was unable to calm down, but they knew they couldn't let the Dragon Kings fight each other. The woman shrouded in colorful mist and that little fatty tried to dissuade the two Dragon Kings unceasingly.

However, the two Dragon Kings remain unmoved, that was the dragon's sacred tree, and now it was under the control of an unknown little critter like this, they felt that it was a great humiliation for the dragons.

"Squeak.....!" Just at this time, Keke let out a young and tender cry. It extended one little paw to point at the treasured tree on its head, and then pointed in front, at the forest that was pervaded by negative aura. After that, it

dashed over there first. The two Dragon Kings gathered their thoughts before they let out a roar and rushed towards the evil spirit.

Keke waved its little paws to draw two seven-colored light screen that enveloped the evil spirit in the underworld fog. And the young Dragon Kings' horns also burst out with glaring rays of light. The rays of light transformed into perfectly straight light beams and shot towards the evil spirit. It seemed like they wanted to decide the outcome with this method, they wanted to find out who was the true king by defeating the evil spirit.

The black fog rolled over and over violently, the demon faded away from his original place. But the three divine beasts seemed to be able to lock onto his aura. They followed after him into the forest, under the roar of the Dragon Kings, under the sound of falling ancient trees, that place was dazzled by rays of light, and leaves were swirling in the air.

Suddenly, like the wind rolled up the clouds, the underworld fog floated over at high-speed. The demon appeared in front of Xiao Chen and the others without making any sound. The cold aura locked onto the few of them, they felt as if an avalanche had weighed down on their body.

Keke transformed into a streak of light and appeared on Xiao Chen's shoulder. The two Dragon King also came back respectively, the demon then faded away without a sound. All of this happened in an instant.

"You guys saw it already, if I wanted to kill you just now, I had plenty of opportunity, but I didn't do it." The demon heaved a sigh at a distant place and said, "The Dragon Kings are too young, although their blood can restrain me, they cannot do anything to me as long as I am fully prepared. On the contrary, if I wanted to kill them, they will certainly be in danger. However..... I do not want to offend the dragons."

That was indeed the case, the demon had immeasurable strength.

At this time, everyone started to hesitate. In the end, all of them looked at Xiao Chen and Keke. They are the most crucial point of this event, everything will be decided by them.

Keke was panting with rage on Xiao Chen's shoulder as it widened its glittering big eyes, it casted an angry look at the demon in the cloudy fog. The sapling was a sacred tree that had accompanied it since birth, it was also its ration, and the only thing that's been accompanying it all along since it was abandoned by its parent. Don't look at how it was uncaring of the sapling most of the time, when someone really wanted to fight over it, Keke will not comply no matter what.

"Little guy, I only wanted to borrow it. I will definitely return it to you. And I will certainly repay you several-fold." The demon revealed a gentle expression, he revealed a slight smile to Keke. This made the few people on the spot a little astonished. The demon seemed to attach more importance to Keke than the two Dragon Kings.

Xiao Chen looked at the few people beside him, he quickly understood everyone's intention after taking a quick glance. Even the most stubborn Solitary Sword Demon wanted to reach a compromise. The demon was really deep and immeasurable, they didn't stand a chance against him. Although they didn't know if what he said was true or false, it was still a hope anyhow.

After everyone's opinion was made clear to him, Xiao Chen became silent. After that, he embraced Keke who was panting with rage tightly to prevent it from rushing over there. He said to the demon, "If your target is the sacred tree, then just come at me. This has nothing to do with the others. We will discuss this

further after changing location. No matter what happens, I ask of you not to harm the others. This is the very least you can do to show your sincerity.”

The demon’s pale face turned slightly red, he nodded slightly and said, “My only target is the sacred tree, if other people don’t hinder me, or attack me, I will absolutely not harm them.”

An impending storm was actually eased up like this, Xiao Chen didn’t turn around and took large strides out of the village. The two Dragon Kings roared as they chased after Xiao Chen, they didn’t want to let the sacred tree fall onto other people’s hand.

The little fatty hastily chased after the Black Dragon King to appease it. He spent a great deal of effort to convince it to fall back. As a matter of fact, even though the Dragon Kings are young, they already have intelligence. It knew deep down that it didn’t have enough power to retrieve the Sacred Dragon Tree.

“I wish you can come back safe and sound, I really wanted to make friend with you. I am called Oxman.” The silly little fatty said to Xiao Chen in a low voice as he fell back.

Oxman was a rather funny name, but Xiao Chen didn’t have the mood to laugh. He nodded lightly and said, “The next time we meet, we will be friend. My name is Xiao Chen.”

The woman shrouded in colorful mist also walked over, but it was not to take the Amethyst Dragon King away. On the contrary, she wanted it to accompany Xiao Chen and protect him if necessary.

“I appreciate your kindness, but Keke is as powerful as a Dragon King, if Keke cannot restrain the evil spirit, even an additional Dragon King will not help in the least.” Xiao Chen felt the mysterious woman was indeed good-natured. He told her about the other two Dragon Kings with a voice only the two could hear. Soon after, he walked over to the mountain woods alone, that demon had already went ahead of them.

Keke, the snow-white little critter, was extremely intelligent. It clearly knew what happened just now, it unwillingly took off the treasured tree from its head, then it hugged it tightly for a really long time. After that, it reluctantly handed it over to Xiao Chen, it had a really dejected expression.

Xiao Chen smiled and said, “You little monster, this is the sacred tree that had accompanied you since birth, how can we give it to others so easily? Besides, that guy is a demon, we cannot believe anything he said, we cannot make a deal with him.”

Keke was unhappy to be called a little monster, it angrily grabbed his long hair and pulled it lightly. Soon after, it still handed over the treasured tree to Xiao Chen.

“Don’t worry, you little monster. We don’t need to hand over the sacred tree yet. He was definitely concerned about something, otherwise on what basis would a demon use kind words to talk with us, and not seize it by force.”

“Squeak.....!” Keke’s big eyes suddenly lightened up, its long eyelashes flickered unceasingly. But in the end, it became dispirited again as it lowered its head. It funnily compared its height to the evil spirit’s height, it seemed to be saying it really was too young at the moment, and that it wouldn’t be able to defeat the demon.

Xiao Chen found its action to be very amusing, he laughed and said, "You were always sleeping all day long, and those Dragon Kings were fighting almost everyday; They thought of every possible methods to make themselves stronger. You are not inferior to them, you just need to work hard. If you want to have enough strength to fight off the demon, you cannot be lazy from now on."

The snow-white little critter angrily grabbed Xiao Chen's long hair and pulled it lightly, then out of his expectation, the little critter actually nodded its head seriously. It put on the treasured tree hat and jumped from Xiao Chen's arm to his shoulder. It earnestly sat in meditation and began to harmonize its breathing.

That's right, it was sitting in meditation and harmonizing its breathing!

This made Xiao Chen so shocked that his jaw literally dropped. Keke was actually sitting like the practitioners. Its pair of glittering big eyes were shut, the long eyelashes were no longer flickering. Moreover, its entire body burst out with faint multicolored radiance, as if it had already submerged in an ethereal boundary.

Xiao Chen's current state of mind already couldn't be described with mere words, the shock Keke gave to him was really too much. How could this little critter manifest something like this?

However, after walking for a few miles in the jungle, Xiao Chen became completely speechless again. That was because he heard a slight snoring sound, the little critter actually fell asleep on his shoulder.

Speechless..... Totally speechless.

Habit was not easy to change, Xiao Chen really didn't know what to say to this little critter anymore.

Chapter 106 – Seeking Power

Speechless..... Totally speechless.

Habit was not easy to change, Xiao Chen really didn't know what to say to this little critter anymore. He really wanted to pull its hairy ear to awaken it, but he restrained himself in the end. This little critter was born not long ago, it was still too young, having this kind of habit was normal.

It seemed like the demon had completely disappeared, it didn't show up all along, but Xiao Chen knew it was certainly in the vicinity. The sun sets in the West, the twilight dyed half of the sky red. Xiao Chen walked in the mountain woods aimlessly, he gradually calmed down as he listened to the bellow of the vicious beasts at a distant place. Having a demon following him around, he couldn't go back to Lawrence and Buddhist Yizhen's side at the moment.

After Xiao Chen left, the old woman, the little fatty, the Solitary Sword Demon, and the others immediately began to move. The demon's words couldn't be trusted, they wanted gather all the experts together and mobilize everyone to search for the Syndicate Dragon Kings. If they can really gather nine Dragon Kings, then leaving this dragon island is no longer a dream.

On this night, many practitioners received news that made them extremely moved. They finally had hope of escaping from this dragon island, this seriously raised their morale. But of course, regarding the appearance of the demon, everyone had a sense of foreboding, which fueled their desire to leave this place as soon as possible.

This was a very lively night, everyone who received the news was unable to fall asleep. All of them wanted to find the Syndicate Dragon Kings urgently.

Without a doubt, when nine young Dragon Kings were gathered, the curtains shall rise!

During the midnight, an open-air fire was throbbing, Xiao Chen sat in front of the flame and meditated calmly. And that snow-white little monster, Keke, was still maintaining the cross-legged posture with the treasured tree on top of its head. It sat on Xiao Chen's shoulder and let out a sweet sounding snore. It appeared cute and laughable at the same time.

However, Xiao Chen found that Keke was not really sleeping, because he noticed the ripple-like multicolored radiance that was lingering around the little critter all along fluctuated unceasingly. Moreover, the sapling on its head actually turned from its previously dim state to the now brilliant state since a long time ago. It seemed like there was a fantastic connection between the two.

Could it be that it really knows some kind of peculiar training method? Xiao Chen speculated inwardly, he had heard of this before; The dragons and some uncommon races would inherit a training method specific to their race the moment they were born. Keke should be one of those uncommon race.

Chilly wind brushed past, the temperature in the forest rapidly declined, it blew past like the winter's cold wind. There was a bone-chilling nip in the air, the open-air fire throbbed violently and changed into pale green in a flash, it was very eerie.

Without any sound, the evil spirit sat at the opposite side of the open-air fire. It was only one meter away from Xiao Chen.

"A thousand years ago when I saw the sacred tree, it only had a single black

leaf. A thousand years later, it already have three divine leaves.” The demon’s pale complexion was emphasized even further by the throbbing flame. If he said he was not a ghost, nobody would believe him.

Without a doubt, Xiao Chen was hooked by his words. At this very moment, he was absolutely fearless. It was a matter that will happen sooner or later, there’s no point in avoiding it. He opened his mouth to ask, “You saw it at the Heavenly Tree?”

“That’s right, I found it on the stump of the Sacred Tree. The sapling is precisely the stump’s alternate rebirth. However, it’s already not the same Sacred Tree, because it has six more luster compared to the Heavenly Tree.” The demon’s reply affirmed Xiao Chen’s conjecture at that time.

“Although legend says the Heavenly Tree was the dragon’s Sacred Tree, it didn’t belong to the dragons originally. The Sacred Tree was transplanted by the dragons on this island.” The indistinct ghost whistle recounted the tale unhurriedly. The demon was in deep thoughts after saying these, then he said with a perplexed expression, “I actually know this much.....”

His behavior made Xiao Chen flabbergasted. And just at this time Keke finally woke up. When it saw the demon was sitting just across of them, the little critter almost wanted to jump over there. Xiao Chen stopped it hastily and asked the demon, “You seemed to have forgotten a lot of thing.....”

The demon recovered from his brief bewilderment, he nodded his head and then he shook his head. A negative aura swept past as he said, “Regarding my memories from the ancient times, it was a piece of blank. I can only remember that I escaped from the ghost town.”

Xiao Chen felt a bit disappointed, he wouldn't be able to draw out the secret of the ghost town from him.

Fog lingered in the mountain woods and merged with the gloomy aura released by the demon. It made this area really bewitching. After a long period of silence, the demon broke the ice and said, "I believe you are an intelligent man. You should know that I don't want to take it by force, but that doesn't mean I really don't dare to make a move. I only wish to borrow the sacred tree from your hands, I will certainly return the favor in at most one year. Moreover, there will certainly be a generous reward."

"What are you worried about?" Xiao Chen couldn't understand no matter how much he thought about it.

"Although it is true that my memories regarding the distant past is a piece of blank, I still know who can I provoke and who I should not provoke." The demon said very directly, "I didn't dare to start a feud with the dragons, that's why I was unwilling to kill the two Dragon Kings. Same as the former, I felt apprehensive towards this little critter, I am not willing to provoke its parents."

Keke's glittering big eyes immediately filled with hope, it seemed to be loathing the demon no more. Its long eyelashes were quivering, it was listening attentively, it seemed like it really wanted to know the whereabouts of its parents.

Xiao Chen understood the little critter's frame of mind and asked the demon, "You know of Keke's origin?"

"I don't know, but I can be sure this little critter is certainly not weaker than Syndicate Dragon King. Its parents ought to be existences on equal footing with

a matured Dragon King, otherwise I doubt they would dare to touch the dragon's sacred tree. When I saw the sacred tree sprouting the black leaf a thousand years ago, I also found a seven-colored egg. It was side by side with the little sacred tree, they were sealed together by a mysterious power. I suspect that should be Keke." After the demon said these, he got a good look at the little critter.

Keke blinked its big eyes half-consciously, and on the other side, Xiao Chen was shocked. One thousand years ago, Keke was already born in this world as the jade egg? However, he had already interacted with Keke, the little critter was indeed born not too long ago. If that's the case, then doesn't that mean the seven-colored jade egg had nurtured it for at least a thousand years?

Keke's identity had always been a mystery.

"How long is required for dragons to break out of their shell?" Xiao Chen wanted to use those dragons to compare with Keke.

"That is hard to say, generally speaking it requires at least several hundred years, but since the dragon island had been sealed, this standard will be completely shattered, because there will be a bizarre power at work this time. All the dragon eggs on the dragon island will crack in the shortest possible time and give birth to the young dragons. What they needed ultimately was the nourishment of the boundless worldly essence. If they were provided with endless spiritual energy, maybe the eggshell would crack in just a few days."

A few days in contrast to hundred years was really somewhat exaggerated. Thinking about it carefully, comparing several hundred years to a thousand years, Keke couldn't really be considered to be in defiance of the natural order.

“Squeak.....” The little critter cried out softly, it had a somewhat lonely expression, it seemed to be thinking about its parents again. Its miserable appearance made people want to spoil it.

“After learning all these, you should understand now, I really only wanted to borrow it.” The demon fixed its eyes on Xiao Chen and said, “I am fearful of its parents, but I don’t feel apprehensive towards you. Killing you won’t bring any trouble to me.”

Hearing these words, the little critter broke free from the sense of loss, it fiercely waved its little paws at the demon.

Xiao Chen was fearless and said, “You want to kill me? Keke will remember you and avenge me in the future. I understand why you don’t dare to do anything to it, otherwise you will certainly be trapped in a hopeless situation with its parent’s divine ability.”

With a sigh, the demon faded away along with a cloudy fog. An indistinct ghost whistle transmitted from the forest not far away, “Whether it really have a parent or not, or whether if its parents are still alive, it is very hard to say. I was only being too cautious before. My patience have limits, I won’t give you too long to reconsider. If..... you insist on shedding blood, then I will not be lenient!”

The dragon’s Sacred Mountain, it was lofty and majestic. The atmosphere was intimidating, it seemed like a huge divine pillar that supported the heaven and earth.

Xiao Chen brought Keke back to this region again. Standing on the thousand meter high Heavenly Tree’s stump, he looked at the majestic Sacred Mountain at the correct position.

The demon's words last night made Xiao Chen realize he will not become hostile for a short period of time. He could ignore the threat for a few days. The reason he came here was to find a powerful force to suppress the demon. He placed his hopes on the experts among the dragons, but to his dismay, those Greater Dragons, such as the Tyrannical Dragon, the Monarch Lion Dragon, the Saber Dragon, *etc.* had also lost the divine ability they displayed at the ghost town. Their brutality won over their divinity at present, he certainly won't be able to communicate with them.

Without a doubt, the demon also followed them. Even though he couldn't find his whereabouts, Xiao Chen could feel he was just nearby.

“Roar.....!”

A dragon roar transmitted from a distant place, it was a young dragon according to his intuition. Looking down at the shadows dancing in the forest below, Xiao Chen could see the figures of a few practitioners. They seemed to be pursuing a golden young dragon. The two words “Dragon King” immediately surfaced in Xiao Chen's mind. The practitioners should have obtained the news that they could summon the divine ship by gathering nine Dragon Kings, but chasing the young Dragon King until this region was really too reckless.

This region seemed to be the dragon's holy land, not only was there the powerful Tyrannical Dragon, Monarch Lion Dragon, and so on, this place was filled with primal beasts as powerful as the dragons. The consequences will be dire if they run into them.

Chapter 107 – A Different Young Dragon

Sure enough, what Xiao Chen was worried about came true. A sky piercing dragon roar streaked across the vast sky, a golden ray flickered as a Monarch Lion Dragon appeared in this region at high-speed, it was carrying a sky-rocketing baleful aura. A wide expanse of forest trees tumbled down, frightened screams transmitted over, a few practitioners among them were ripped apart by that mountain-like Monarch Lion Dragon in almost a split second.

Its huge draconic body seemed like it was made out of brass. A single attack immediately razed a wide expanse of mountain woods to the ground. The mountainous region trembled violently, the other few practitioners who managed to get away also couldn't escape from their imminent fate. They were trampled by the Monarch Lion Dragon and turned into meat paste.

Xiao Chen became speechless, the price the practitioners had to pay to leave this dragon island was really too high. Even if they could find nine Dragon Kings in the end, they would most likely lose more than half of their people.

The evil spirit appeared on the sacred tree's stump without making any sound. Xiao Chen didn't pay attention to him and left from the other side. After that, he quietly waited until the nightfall.

When the moonlight spilled down, the vicinity of the Sacred Mountain was especially calm. The roars of the dragons and monsters no longer resounded. Xiao Chen passed through the forest and arrived at the foot of the imposing Sacred Mountain. Xiao Chen once more felt that familiar yet terrifying aura.

That's right, although it was faintly discernible, the aura was very similar to that of the ghost town. If they wanted to enter the ghost town again, this may

serve as an entrance, but who would voluntarily follow the path to their own doom?

“Do you want to tempt me to enter the dangerous zone?” The demon stood at a forest not far away, and looked at Xiao Chen calmly. He had lived for countless years, it was impossible for him to fall for this.

Xiao Chen never thought of enclosing the demon in the ghost town again, he only came here to see if there was any terrifying power sealed on the Sacred Mountain that was capable of destroying the evil spirit. However, he stopped his footstep at the foot of the mountain, the peculiar aura emitted by the Sacred Mountain seemed much stronger than last time.

That mountain’s dark red body seemed like it was encroached by blood. Those ruins on the Sacred Mountain were imprinted with the vicissitudes of time, they emitted boundless ancient aura which made the heart quiver.

Keke shook its head towards Xiao Chen. The intelligent little critter had a very keen intuition. Its body that was as bright as white jade flickered with multicolored light as it hinted Xiao Chen not to take another step forward.

His hope was dashed, Xiao Chen knew if he rashly advanced this time, he might lose his life here. He chose to fall back and return by following their former path. When they got close to the Heavenly Tree, the roar of a young dragon attracted Xiao Chen’s attention.

Under the brilliance of the moonlight, it seemed like a layer of silk had spread over the entire mountain woods. He could clearly see the battle between young dragons in the vicinity of the sacred tree’s stump. Moreover, there were actually three dragons! The roars were precisely produced by them.

This immediately caught Xiao Chen's attention, this was but in the vicinity of the sacred mountain. Who knows if there might be a Syndicate Dragon King among them. He moved stealthily and slowly approached that place. As a result, he was utterly astonished, there were actually two Dragon Kings among the three young dragons. They were currently having a battle. Although the third young dragon was not a Dragon King, it was exceptionally fierce. It actually joined the Dragon King's battle, they were having an intense battle royal.

One young Dragon King flickered with red light from head to toe, it was pulsing like the blazing flame. Its Ancestral Dragon head was really eye-catching, just judging from its draconic body, it was hard to tell what kind of dragon it was.

As for the other young Dragon King, its entire body flickered with golden light, as if it was made out of gold. The Ancestral Dragon head was also just as eye-catching. Its body looked like a little lion, but of course, it was impossible to find any fur on its body, it was completely covered by golden dragon scales.

Xiao Chen was unable to guess the origin of the Red Dragon King, but in regards to the Gold Dragon King, he immediately thought of Monarch Lion Dragon. Moreover, it was most likely born from the other egg in that valley he visited before.

The two young Dragon Kings was close to one meter long, but their power were enough to make experts at the level of Seventh Celestial Layer to feel fearful. The restriction of the seal didn't apply to them, their divinity won over their brutality, they were capable of releasing some dragon-specific attack-type magic.

No wonder this was the dragon's holy land, Xiao Chen heaved a sigh. All the

powerful dragons gathered in this place, thus it increased the probability that Dragon Kings will be born in this place compared to other places. Two Dragon Kings actually appeared in such a short period of time, if including Lawrence and Buddhist Yizhen's Azure Dragon King and Jade Dragon King, then this place alone had given birth to at least four Syndicate Dragon Kings.

Could the little Ancestral Dragon also appear in this region? Xiao Chen possessed a little expectation towards this, but he also knew the chance of seeing the little Ancestral Dragon was much lower than seeing nine Syndicate Dragon Kings together.

"Roar.....!" The young dragon let out a roar, the battle was very intense. What made Xiao Chen rather astonished was that; That young dragon that was obviously not a Syndicate Dragon King was actually that tenacious. It was clearly weaker than the other two, it already received a fatal wound, but it still rushed over there and joined the battle between the two Dragon Kings.

It was a really strange young dragon, it was actually so tenacious and stubborn. It joined the fray without a care for its own life. It was seemingly a very ordinary, the dark brown draconic body was riddled with scars. Its body was like that of a panther, its head also looked a little similar to the Ancestral Dragon, but it didn't have a single horn, its power and speed were also unable to compare with the two Dragon Kings. It was also unable to use any simple dragon magic. A lot of dragon scales had already fallen from its body, it was badly damaged, and its body did not emit the least bit of light. It was even inferior compared to other dragons.

However, this little dragon was really too tenacious and stubborn, every time it fell onto the pool of blood, it rose and charged into the fray again. It lasted until the two Dragon Kings were infuriated, they seemed to be very angry at this weak third-wheel that kept interfering with their real fight. They let out a lethal attack towards the dark brown young dragon at the same time.

With a wail, the unremarkable young dragon fell on the ground, it was unable to get up anymore. Xiao Chen sighed with sorrow, the rise of the Dragon King was really a cruel process. Many of their kind will fall during their transformation and advancement. And the legendary Ancestral Dragon might even experience a crueller fate. After all, it had to face the challenge of at least nine Syndicate Dragon Kings!

The young dragon's battle and cries had been heard by the dragons in the vicinity, but they didn't come to interfere and let this cruel battle continue. This seemed to be the dragon's law of survival.

In the end, the young Dragon Kings were scarred and separated from one another, they finally left. The mountain woods turned silent, only the cries of the weak little dragon could be heard. It was not dead yet, the little dragon was just at the vicinity of the sacred tree's stump, the dragon blood had already dyed the ground red.

Xiao Chen walked over there, he found that the young dragon was already about to die. The condition of its injury was seriously too grave, a few terrible cuts on its chest were whirling around, the multicolored internal organs already exposed itself. It was clearly unable to hold on much longer.

"Squeak.....!" Keke exerted its strength to pull the lower hem of Xiao Chen's cloth. Its glittering big eyes were brimming with sympathy.

"You want me to save it?"

Keke nodded its head strongly.

“I also wanted to save it, but its injury is seriously too grave, it is impossible to bring it back to life.” Xiao Chen shook his head helplessly. He knew the young dragon’s situation made Keke empathize with it. This place was Keke’s place of origin, it was an abandoned child, and the little dragon’s situation right now was very similar. It was like it had already been sentenced to death penalty, and nobody cared about it, as if it had been abandoned by the world.

“Squeak.....!” Keke still continued to shake Xiao Chen’s foot. After that, it took off the treasured tree from its head and carefully placed the little sacred tree at the edge of the young dragon’s mouth. Keke inserted the black leaf into the young dragon’s mouth.

“Slurp! Slurp.....!” The dying little dragon started to suck the black leaf. Its consciousness was already fuzzy a long time ago, this seemed to be some kind of instinct.

One after another radiance flowed from the little sacred tree into the young dragon’s body. The originally unconscious little dragon opened its eyes. First, it looked at Keke and Xiao Chen in puzzlement, then it vigilantly tried to move its injured draconic body, but it didn’t success, the sharp pain caused it to whine a few times.

Keke tried to pass the little sacred tree to the side of its mouth again, but the young dragon stubbornly turned its head.

“Squeak.....!” Keke panted with rage and pointed at the wound with its little paw. It didn’t expect the dying little dragon would shake its head to refuse Keke’s good intention. Then it proudly lifted its head, but unfortunately, it fell back on the ground powerlessly.

Such an interesting young dragon. Even when it was about to die, it was still so proud and aloof.

Keke was very dumbfounded, it helped him with good intentions, and yet the receiving party was like this. The little critter angrily put the treasured tree away. And on the other side, Xiao Chen sighed with sorrow. He opened the close-fitting package and took out the shiny Snow Lotus Core from within. This was supposed to be Keke's delicacy, but since the little critter's belly was filled to the brim by the Sweet Dew of Life, it was unable to enjoy the Snow Lotus Core. Xiao Chen had been keeping it all along.

"Let's try giving it some Snow Lotus Core."

Keke blinked its big eyes, and then nodded its head to convey its approval.

Xiao Chen forcefully pulled the stubborn young dragon's mouth apart and stuffed the Snow Lotus Core into its mouth. This was a rarely seen natural spiritual item, it possessed an unimaginable effect, but the dark brown little dragon spit it out. It didn't want to accept any help at all.

Xiao Chen was speechless at this conduct, he picked up the Snow Lotus Core that fell on the grass and crushed it, then he applied it on the wound. However, the young dragon violently rolled around and rubbed those Snow Lotus Core off from its body. A lot of blood gushed out from its wound, this young dragon was too stubborn.

In the end, Xiao Chen forcefully stuffed a Snow Lotus Core into its mouth and used pure energy to force it down the throat. He stood up and said to Keke, "Let's go, we already tried everything in our power."

Although they already moved very far away from there, they could still hear the proud little dragon's painful cries. It was obvious that it wouldn't be able to live past this night with that kind of injury.

Early morning, Xiao Chen woke up from his meditative state, the gentle sunlight spilled on the forest. The specks of golden light that leaked through the branches and leaves were like pieces of gold. Keke also rubbed its eyes half-consciously and lazily got up from among the flowers and plants.

Unable to find any power to fend off the demon in the dragon's Sacred Mountain, Xiao Chen decided to head to the next destination; The Treant's Valley at the outer region of the island. He will never forget what he saw that night, the twenty meter tall old treant evolved into a flesh and blood human with green hair. The powerful energy fluctuation emitted by him at that time indicated that he was inevitable a powerful existence. Xiao Chen always believed that old treant might be able to contend against the dragon. Maybe he will be able to fend off the demon!

The dragon island was really too big, in addition to the dense forest and all kinds of monsters roaming around, one had to be very careful. It required at least a few days to safely arrived at the outer region of the island.

He finally arrived at the outer region of the island after three days. When he was passing through a valley with beautiful scenery, he found something very unusual. Golden rays of light flowed from a thatched cottage in the valley like ripples of water. It seemed like there was a golden fountain there, waves of auspicious aura made the birds and beasts in the valley calm down. This was seriously too miraculous, it was hard to imagine what happened in the thatched cottage.

The entire valley was filled with verdant orchid tree, there were all kinds of colorful flowers ranging from pink to yellow among the grove. It was filled with flowering trees, and the glistening green leaves made the colorful flowers exceptionally beautiful in contrast. The flower buds were brimming with an intoxicating fragrance.

In addition to that golden mist that bubbled up unceasingly, a layer of mysterious veil had been spread over the entire flower valley. This place seemed like a fairyland, it was auspicious and peaceful.

Xiao Chen continued to observe quietly in the vicinity, Keke wanted to run over there several times, but was stopped by Xiao Chen. Just at this time, the pale looking demon appeared without a sound. Although the black fog did not rush forth, there were still some indistinct sinister aura. He gazed at the thatched cottage attentively and said, "That is the breath of god."

These words made Xiao Chen incomparably shocked, the breath of god, how was that possible? Could it be that there were still some deities on the dragon island? Didn't this place suppress the power of god? It was impossible for this kind of existence to be here!

"This is really the breath of god!" The demon squinted his eyes and emitted two cold light.

Xiao Chen's heart stirred up, would they be able to end the demon's life just like this? If it was really a god, it should be able to destroy this demon that couldn't breakthrough to the god realm successfully.

The golden brilliance gradually became weaker, the auspicious aura in the thatched cottage also became gentler and gradually dispersed.

“Oh, I finally understand, this is the awakening of divinity.” The demon’s stiff body finally relaxed. The cold light from his pair of eyes also faded away.

Chapter 108 – Undead Emperor

“What is going on?” Xiao Chen asked. Even though he was unwilling to make a deal with the demon, there were things he couldn’t resist asking.

“The blood of god was ignited in the mortal body. This is the awakening of divinity. That is to say, the so-called divine inheritance. The descendant of god will receive a portion of their ancestor’s power.”

This news made Xiao Chen a little surprised, but not as shocked as earlier. He opened his mouth to ask, “He is really strong?”

The demon said very calmly, “No matter how powerful his ancestor was, it is impossible for him to manifest the same power after it had been passed down through the generations. It is already pretty good if he can reach the demigod level before thirty years old. But if he wants to make further improvements, he must break through the confinement of his own blood. Otherwise he will not be able advance any step further.”

Xiao Chen suddenly realized, wasn’t this the demigod that Buddhist Yizhen and Lawrence had told him about? Some people were naturally born as a demigod, they were the descendant of god, along with their growth, they would receive the power passed down to them from their ancestor.

However, this kind of family was very rare, and not every generation possessed this kind of power. Because along with the passage of time, the blood of god hidden within the body of the clan would become thinner and thinner along with each generation. Having one who awakened to divinity every few dozen generations was already good enough.

Who was in the thatched cottage, what level was he now, was it someone he knew? Xiao Chen really wanted to step forward to probe around.

“It was merely the awakening of the deity’s power source, to become a real demigod, he must wait until thirty years old at the very least. His power didn’t increase by much at the moment, if I want to kill him, it would be as simple as crushing a little tick. Maybe even you can do it.” The demon had an easygoing tone, it seemed like he didn’t even take someone who had hope of becoming demigod seriously. This was the qualifications of the strong.

Xiao Chen walked over with large strides, he wanted to get to the bottom of this matter. And just at this time, the gold light completely vanished. A figure broke out from the roof of the thatched cottage and soared into the sky.

“Lande!” Xiao Chen was really too astonished, it was actually the golden-haired pretty boy, Lande. He had a pretty deep discord with the person in question.

“Xiao Chen!” Lande floated high in the sky and looked below. He was also filled with surprise, he never thought he would encounter Xiao Chen at this place. Without any superfluous words, a golden light poured down like torrents.

“God Slayer!” Xiao Chen shouted softly, one after another multicolored light rushed forth from both of his hands. The sword shadows soared into the sky soon after and destroyed those golden light wave. After that, Lande had actually been counterattacked.

Lande hastily soared into the sky and flee towards a distant location. “Let’s fight again at the next opportunity.” Lande’s voice was transmitted from far away. It didn’t contain resentment and indignation, his mood seemed to be very calm, it seemed like he had already forgotten how he suffered a crushing defeat at that time.

“I will wait for you any time.” Xiao Chen replied. To actually make an enemy out of someone who might become a demigod, it was really out of his expectation. However, it was not really that unexpected if he thought about it carefully, Yan Qing Cheng was extraordinary, if Lande didn’t have potential, why would she interact with him? It was certainly because she had an eye on the possibility of him becoming a demigod in the future.

However..... a demigod was nothing to be afraid of. Xiao Chen believed as long as he worked hard, so what if the other party possessed the bloodline of the god? One of the killing moves he practiced was even called the God Slayer, how could he be afraid of a demigod? As long as he practiced it to the highest level, there was nothing to be afraid of.

After a day, Xiao Chen finally arrived at the treant’s valley. However, he was disappointed to find that the green haired man had already left this place, the few treants also disappeared without a trace. And of course, it was impossible to find Zhao Lin Er who escaped to the outer region of the dragon island before

anyone else.

“Are you trying to find that old treant to deal with me?” The demon was really unpredictable, he appeared at the treant’s valley without a sound and said, “He was indeed quite strong, but even if he had transformed into human, he is still not my opponent. I will make it clear to you, if he finds the small sacred tree, he will definitely fight over it too, because he is a treant, he needs it more than me. Who knows, he might just shed all pretense and make a move without any qualms.”

Xiao Chen didn’t reply, he just walked at the outer region of the dragon island aimlessly. In reality, he was searching for the whereabouts of those treants carefully.

“Are you really going to find him and make the two of us fight over it?” The demon laughed and said, “If that is the case, I will be very happy to see him kill you and snatch the sacred tree away from you. Then all of this will be unrelated to me. I will find him some other time and take it by force, this can also be considered taking revenge for you. Of course, I will save this little critter.”

Keke was sleeping soundly, otherwise the little critter will certainly rush over there.

Xiao Chen looked around the outer region of the dragon island for several days, but there was nothing to be gained. Soon after, Xiao Chen arrived at a gloomy swamp several times, but he had to fall back every time. That was the deathly swamp Lunhui Wang and the other two skeletons formerly lived.

Regarding that ten meter tall Undead Emperor with a pair of rotten wings, the impression it left in Xiao Chen’s heart was really too deep. Even though he didn’t really see it on that day, the terrifying scene it brought about was enough to prove its strength. It was a terrifying existence Xiao Chen thought to be as powerful as dragons.

Could he really borrow his power? Xiao Chen was really uncertain. If he didn’t deal with it properly, he would anger a killing fiend, it might be as terrifying as the demon!

The night sky was filled with many stars, Xiao Chen finally arrived at the deathly swamp again. He didn’t have any time to tarry, the demon was obviously getting

impatient. If he don't find a way to eliminate the demon soon, his life will be in danger.

These past few days Keke was like an obedient baby, it spent more than half of the day in deep sleep. Xiao Chen knew the little critter might be meditating really earnestly with its strange sleeping meditation method.

The undead miasma drifted in the air, it was fluttering like a black ribbon. The gloomy swamp was very quiet, no birds and beasts dare to get close.

The demon looked at Xiao Chen with a smile yet not a smile, he followed behind Xiao Chen unhurriedly. These past two days he had been following Xiao Chen closely, he was no longer following him secretly.

After a slight hesitation, Xiao Chen held his breath and took large strides into the swamp. A layer of light screen appeared, it protected him and Keke who was sleeping soundly. He stepped on the muddy ground and forged ahead. The path was filled with dried up bones, he could occasionally see a few deathly pale moonlight that spilled into the darkness.

He finally entered the heart of the swamp, Xiao Chen looked at a pile of bones before him. He felt a chill in his heart, that kind of baleful aura that directly penetrated one's heart was really bizarre. It was like a black flame throbbing on the pile of bones. He knew the ten meter tall Undead Emperor was under that pile of bones.

Turning his head to look at the demon, the desire to retreat welled up in Xiao Chen's heart, because the evil spirit clearly knew about this place and yet it wasn't fearful. This was already enough to answer his question.

"Heh-heh....." Although the demon tried to laugh as gently as possible, it still seemed very gloomy under the dead of the night in this deathly swamp. "I think you better fall back, otherwise when the Undead Emperor come out, the undead miasma it releases might harm you. I haven't greeted this old friend of mine for quite a while already, let's have a chat about the old times with him today."

Xiao Chen was completely speechless, the two of them were actually friends. He silently retreated and felt a bit sorrowful in his heart. It might be futile to find someone on this island capable of restraining this demon.

“Old friend, I came to see you.” The demon lightly waved his hand, those big pile of bones all floated up and shifted to the other side. The black underworld fog violently surged up from the underground, it was rolling over and over like raging black fireworks.

A ghost whistle that made one’s scalp feel numb transmitted from the underground, then the demonic cloud covered up the moon, endless amount of black fog soared into the sky in an instant. It completely blocked the moonlight that spilled through the branches and leaves of the tall ancient trees.

A huge monster appeared from the swamp, its ten meter tall body emitted a baleful aura. Although he was a little far away, and the black fog was lingering around, Xiao Chen could still see the rotten body of the Undead Emperor, as well as that pair of huge rotten wings. The negative vibe spread far and wide, the terrifying black power assailed the deathly swamp, and the mournful screech sent a chill down people’s spine.

He was unable to see the head and face, it was hard to guess his emotional state. However, the pressure emitted by him and his power could be felt vividly. This Undead Emperor might really be capable of defeating the demon, but..... would they fight?

Could he be an angel in his previous life? Xiao Chen thought of something like this, otherwise how would it have a pair of wings, but the body was really too huge. Maybe before the dragon island was sealed, a big battle took place on this island and the Undead Emperor might have fallen in that time period.

Two ice-cold rays of light shot towards Xiao Chen like sharp swords, it seemed like the Undead Emperor wanted to get rid of him.

“Old friend, relax. Don’t lower yourself to his level, it was I who wanted to see you.” The demon calmly stood in front of the Undead Emperor.

Its ice-cold gaze shifted direction, the Undead Emperor and demon walked over to a distant place. It seemed like they really were old friends. Xiao Chen’s final hope had been dispelled.

However, just after they left for a short period of time, an explosive sound suddenly echoed from the distant swamp. That was the sound of forest tree getting crushed! Inexhaustible cloudy fog spread far and wide, a violent energy

fluctuation rolled over and over.

The Undead Emperor and demon exchanged blows!

Xiao Chen chose to get away from the swamp immediately, his speed was extremely fast, it was seriously like the wind and lightning. He got away the swamp in almost a moment.

That pair of undead brothers actually fought against each other, there's no news better than this. Xiao Chen went to a highland and jumped onto the crown of a ten meter tall huge tree to survey the deathly swamp from an elevated position.

The inexhaustible cloudy fog rolled over and over, it actually submerged that entire area where the fight took place. It was impossible to see the battle progress, one could tell the intensity of the battle only because of the violent energy fluctuation.

When the dense deathly underworld fog rolled westward unceasingly, the original battlefield became visible to naked eyes. It seemed like a meteor had fallen within that hundred meter radius. The ground had sunk down for who knows how many meter, it already turned into a huge hole. It was pitch-black and god knows how many meter deep.

One could imagine just how powerful was the Undead Emperor and demon, not only did they destroy every tangible thing on the ground, even the area itself caved in.

There were figures of human swaying in the distant place. There were still some practitioners at the outer region of the island. This intense battle startled them, but those people retreated at lightning speed after sensing the thick deathly aura. One could tell that they were very careful.

The intense battle lasted for a quarter of an hour, Xiao Chen was looking forward to the death of the demon.

However, he guessed wrong again, when the underworld fog dissipated, a three hundred meter wide hole appeared on the spot. The Undead Emperor and demon were actually sitting beside the hole as they talked about something.

Although he couldn't see clearly, he was still able to feel that kind of

atmosphere. They don't seem to be mortal enemy, he could occasionally hear that eerie laughter. The two evil spirits seemed to be hitting it off.

How could that be?

Xiao Chen remained puzzled even after thinking it over a hundred times, the two evil spirits were having a life and death bout just a moment ago, and now they were actually on a friendly term in the blink of an eye. This change of atmosphere was really too fast.

"Haha..... I will definitely not forget about you when I break free, we are the closest friend." The demon's hearty laugh transmitted from a distant place.

Soon after, the demonic cloud rolled over and over. The Undead Emperor returned to the underground. A chilly wind brushed past, green leaves fell and withered, the demon appeared on the crown of a huge tree. He was not far away from Xiao Chen. The demon sat on the branch and said, "Have you thought about it carefully? I am already at the limit of my patience. If you can convince the little critter to willingly lend me the sacred tree for one year, he too will get a generous reward."

Xiao Chen maintained his calm, would they really be able to get the sacred tree back after giving it to the demon? It seemed like Keke and the sacred tree were inseparable, do they really have to make a compromise in order to survive?

"Other than the dragons and those primal beasts on this dragon island, nobody can threaten me. However, the dragons will not do anything to me. And you have seen it yourself, the Undead Emperor and I are on friendly term. Every time I rebirthed, I will come here to swap pointers with him. He is my greatest ally."

"Who is he? What kind of person was he?"

Hearing these, the demon raised his head to look at the bright moon in the sky. He let out an indistinct sigh and said, "I don't even know who am I. How would I know about him? I only know I escaped from the ghost town. And he is a corpse that rotted countless years ago....." Speaking until here, the demon actually revealed a distressed expression. It seemed like he was really not an evil spirit, but a pitiful youth.

Chapter 109 – Encounter

The moonlight was like water, the treetops was quiet, the demon was actually daydreaming. He looked at the bright moon and seemed to be recalling an old memory, he actually shed tears from his pair of eyes unconsciously.

The weeping demon seemed so pitiful, he once killing people like scything flax, and yet he had such a weak side. If these were to spread out, nobody would believe it.

The demon could be considered handsome, and since he was the only evil spirit capable of escaping from the ghost town, that means there must be something uncommon about him. He probably had a really glorious past, but everything about him had been washed away by the flow of time, even he himself had no idea who he was.

“My heart ache when I look at the bright moon in the sky, it feels like I have lost something very precious on a night like this countless years ago.....” The crystal clear teardrop rolled down the demon’s pale cheeks.

After a really long time later, he finally wiped the tears. The demon’s face spread into a smile and said, “I actually shed tears, I am becoming more and more like a human, perhaps I am already a human.”

Soon after, under the moonlight, Xiao Chen and the demon on the treetop sunk into a moment of silence again. After a long time later, the demon said with an ice-cold voice, “I will give you seven more days.” He disappeared from the treetop after saying these.

A breeze brushed past lightly, Xiao Chen’s long hair danced along with the wind. At this kind of night, he also thought of many things. Looking at the bright moon, he recalled his parents and relatives. He had been at the world of immortals for a few months already, and yet he was trapped on a desolate dragon island. He spent most of his time striving for survival.

How is father and mother doing? Losing this son of their’s, they must have been really sad. He really wanted to return to the human world and made his aged parents grin from ear to ear. He didn’t want them to be sad. 1

There was also that girl in his heart, after many years later, would she still

remember him? “Farewell, my beloved. Let’s hope our dream still exist after many years later, let’s hope that beautiful memory will stay with us forever.” 2

Xiao Chen bid farewell to his past, glistening teardrop actually flashed in his pair of eyes unconsciously, his state of mind was very chaotic.....

Without any people around, he didn’t have to hide his true feeling. He was a flesh and blood human, he also possessed every kind of emotions like the common people. However, he could only bury these feeling deep down in his heart. In the eyes of the practitioners on this dragon island, he was a cold-blooded youth, but who would have known he had this side to him?

“I really want to return to the human world.....” Xiao Chen muttered this to himself, a few teardrop finally rolled down on his cheeks, but he suddenly shook his head in that instant to shake off the feeling. He buried that emotion deep down in his heart again.

“That is impossible at present. The only thing I can do is to make sure I stay alive.” He steeled himself and forcefully shook off the sentimental feeling. He began to meditate on the treetop until he fell into a deep sleep.

Early morning, the lively birdsong roused Xiao Chen from a deep sleep. Attracted by his secret technique, the worldly essence gathered at surrounding of the treetop. It made the spiritual influence at this place really dense, the multicolored light flickered, even the dazzling morning sun seemed to be comparatively dimmer. Many birds were attracted over, they were flying around him and chirping unceasingly.

Xiao Chen began to stretch his muscle. “Flutter! Flutter! Flutter!” The birds were startled and scattered in all directions. Looking at Keke who was drooling while sleeping soundly, he couldn’t help but smile. The little critter was really too cute, it actually slept as peacefully as a little baby, but it would let out a squeak every now and then.

It was already pointless to stay at the outer region of the dragon island. Xiao Chen brought Keke and returned to the depths of the island. After two days, he actually met up with Lawrence, Buddhist Yizhen, and the others. The Azure Dragon King and Jade Dragon King was accompanying them. As for Yan Qing Cheng, her power was sealed and was supervised by the extraordinarily beautiful

Rowena. Moreover, there were twenty plus people behind them, it seemed like they were following the small group blindly.

“Xiao Chen!” Buddhist Yizhen and Lawrence cried out in surprise, they quickly rushed over. The two young Dragon King also flickered with divine light and rushed over like lightning. They revolved around Xiao Chen and fixed their gaze on Keke like a tiger watching the prey.

“Are you okay?” Lawrence was very concerned and asked. His handsome yet somewhat sickly face made this Void Master possess a unique trait.

“I am fine, what is going on, why are you guys here?” Xiao Chen looked at him doubtfully.

Buddhist Yizhen said in a low voice, “We are looking for Syndicate Dragon King. Right now, all the practitioners on the dragon island already know it was you who were stalling the legendary demon. Everyone is really grateful to you. All the people who we can get in touch with on the dragon island already moved out, we wanted to find a few more Dragon Kings, summon the divine ship, and leave this island as soon as possible.”

After a lovely laughter that would hook one’s soul, Rowena twisted her snake-like waist and walked over gracefully. At the same time, she pulled the beautiful Yan Qing Cheng over. She casted a glance at Xiao Chen shyly and said, “Seriously, why do you have to be such a show off. Don’t regret it if you can’t enjoy this devastatingly beautiful female slave when the time comes oh.”

Yan Qing Cheng secretly clenched her silver teeth, but she didn’t have any other choice. If her power was not sealed, she really wanted to finish off this extraordinarily beautiful Rowena at once.

“I have been working hard these past few days oh, I have been strictly drilling how to be a woman and qualified slave into her every day.” Rowena giggled. It was really like the ripples of the spring water, she was lovely yet enchanting.

With a few swishing sound, the three skeletons at the back of the crowd rushed over. Qinguang Wang, Yanluo Wang, and Lunhui Wang were also with these group of people. They got in front of Xiao Chen at high-speed and used their skeleton-specific language to greet Xiao Chen, their jaw kept generating the “Clack! Clack!” sound.

Xiao Chen found out what happened recently from these people, it really seemed like every group of people had been mobilized. Lawrence and Buddhist Yizhen was found by that woman who was always shrouded in colorful mist. She persuaded them to take the young Dragon Kings to lead the people in search for other Dragon Kings.

Because only a Dragon King could understand a Dragon King, with the Azure Dragon King and Jade Dragon King at their side, there will surely be a gain.

According to majority vote, they originally wanted Lawrence and Buddhist Yizhen to separate and led one group of people respectively. However, after many contradictions, everyone finally agreed to have them stick together. Moreover, they were allowed to bring Rowena and Yan Qing Cheng along.

In fact, a Dragon King seriously understood the other Dragon Kings. They already found the traces of another Dragon King in this region. They had been planning how to subdue it these past two days.

“I found two Dragon Kings at the vicinity of the dragon’s Sacred Mountain, but that place is really too dangerous. There are many dragons and primal beasts, ordinary people won’t be able to approach.” Xiao Chen passed this information to Lawrence and the others. If they wanted to find nine Dragon Kings, they eventually had to venture that region after all.

“Are you talking about the savage Red Dragon King and the bold Gold Dragon King? The Red Dragon King had already been subdued.”

Buddhist Yizhen’s words made Xiao Chen felt a bit flabbergasted.

“Someone went there and successfully subdued the Red Syndicate Dragon King?”

“That’s right.” Buddhist Yizhen explained, “That mysterious woman led Solitary Sword Demon and other experts to enter that region, under the guidance of the Amethyst Dragon King, they found the Red Dragon King. With the sacrifice of nearly twenty people, the Solitary Sword Demon finally subdued the Red Dragon King.”

“How did he subdue it?”

“Originally many practitioners wanted to subdue it by force, but they were

unable to encircle the Red Dragon King. On the contrary, a few people were injured by it. Moreover, they angered the brutal Monarch Lion Dragon, Saber Dragon, and other vicious dragons, as a result, we lost seven to eight people. Only a minority were able to come back.....” Buddhist Yizhen explained briefly.

Xiao Chen couldn't help but heave a sigh after hearing these. The most formidable and terrifying creature in this world was still human after all.

On the second attempt, the Solitary Sword Demon gathered more than ten people. But the mysterious woman did not participate. First, they lured the Red Dragon King out of the dragon's holy land, and then they sent people to besiege it.

The dozens of people were also seriously hurt under the counterattack of the Red Dragon King. In the end, never in their wildest dream had they thought the Solitary Sword Demon who didn't make a move until then would attack them. The dozens of people were killed by him with a single slash! Taking advantage of the situation, the Solitary Sword Demon built a relationship with the Red Dragon King as its savior. Soon after, he used all kinds of talent, and arranged a few more drama before he finally pulled the Red Dragon King to his side. 3

Although the young Dragon Kings were intelligent, and the seal on the dragon island had no influence on them, they were still too young after all. How could their intelligence be comparable to the scheming humans.

“Roar.....!” The dragon roar shook the heavens at a distant place. After that, the Solitary Sword Demon's hearty laugh was transmitted over. One could see him dashing over from the distant with a Red Dragon King by his side.

“Why did you come here?” Xiao Chen asked in confusion.

Lawrence explained, “It's what we planned in advance. Not only him, the owner of the Black Dragon King and Amethyst Dragon King will come too. We plan to work together to surround the Syndicate Dragon King in this region.”

The Solitary Sword Demon rushed over very quickly. The Red Dragon King beside him had blazing red flame throbbing all over its body, it flickered with divine light. Relatively speaking, the Red Dragon King might be the most competitive among the few Dragon Kings. Its eyes immediately gave off an ominous glint the moment it laid eyes on the Azure Dragon King and Jade Dragon

King that were only a little smaller than it. It threw itself at them very fiercely.

A fierce battle would occur every time a Dragon King encounter one another. As for the reason why the Azure Dragon King and Jade Dragon King could interact with each other peacefully, it was all thanks to Lawrence and Buddhist Yizhen. They tried to dispel their enmity unceasingly.

The Red Dragon King fiercely threw itself over, the Azure Dragon King and Jade Dragon King also did not want to be outdone. They faced the savage Red Dragon King that was a little bigger than them together. Lawrence and Buddhist Yizhen stopped them hastily. This was not the right time to have internal conflict between these Dragon Kings, it would not be beneficial for anyone.

However, not only did the Solitary Sword Demon did not stop the Dragon King, he was laughing heartily on the contrary. He was happy to see his Red Dragon King keeping the smaller Azure Dragon King and Jade Dragon King under control. He was proud and aloof, not only was he vying for supremacy among his peers, his Dragon King was also like him.

Just at this time, the little critter who was sleeping soundly on Xiao Chen's shoulder was roused up by the noise. It rubbed its big eyes half-consciously like a child and looked at everyone before it looked at the three Dragon Kings that was about to fight.

"Squeak.....!" The snow-white little critter's big eyes immediately lit up. It had seen the Azure Dragon King and Jade Dragon King before, so it naturally recognized them. And it had also caught a glimpse of that savage Red Dragon King on that night. It scuttled with a "swish" and landed on the Red Dragon King's head in a flash. It was hopping and skipping on top of its head, it seemed to be exerting its strength to stamp on the head.

This unforeseen event made everyone stunned, and on the other side, the Red Dragon King was stamping with fury. It was seriously about to burst with rage. It was more savage than the other Dragon King, its temper was naturally worse than the other Dragon King's. How could it allow an unknown little critter to let loose on its head?

A pair of crimson dragon horn emitted a red lightning with a "snapping" sound. It wanted to eradicate Keke, but a ball of gentle light immediately

wrapped Keke's body within. It didn't receive any damage. The little critter nimbly jumped onto the Red Dragon King's back, it was still hopping and skipping, exerting its strength to stamp the Red Dragon King.

Of course, Keke was not really harming the Red Dragon King, it was just some kind of open provocation. Thinking about it carefully, the Amethyst Dragon King, Azure Dragon King, Jade Dragon King, and Black Dragon King had already been stepped by this snow-white little critter before. The Azure Dragon King and Jade Dragon King were just at the side, they were a little depressed, but they were more than happy to watch all of these unfold. They cheerfully watched the Red Dragon King being stamped by the weird little critter. 4

However, it seemed like Keke was really overdoing it this time, it kept stamping the Red Dragon King wildly. The Red Dragon King's magic attack was ineffective against it. Although it only knew a single confinement technique, that dazzling radiance was able to resist every attack. It gave the furious Red Dragon King no other choice, even if it was rolling on the ground violently to shake off the naughty Keke, the little critter was able to get on its back again with absolute speed.

Only Xiao Chen knew why Keke was being this extreme. He guessed the little critter must be trying to uphold justice for the dying little dragon on that night.

"Keke, that's enough. Come back here!" In the end, it was still Xiao Chen who grabbed Keke back.

The Solitary Sword Demon at the side was very dumbfounded, the haughty him seriously felt a bit depressed. A difficult to tame savage Red Dragon King actually lost to a snow-white little critter. It made him very upset.

The other people were feeling very refreshed in their heart. Many people dare to get angry at him but didn't dare to show it on the surface, because his power was really too high. Only a few among his peers would be able to get on his level.

Chapter 110 – Eleven Dragon Kings

Just when everyone thought it was over, the Red Dragon King burst into a fit of rage. It rushed towards Keke, a few crimson energy blades were released from its pair of horns. Even Xiao Chen had been targeted.

In fact, when confronting this kind of one meter long young Dragon King, even Seventh Celestial Layer experts like Xiao Chen didn't dare to be careless, because Syndicate Dragon King would become an existence even the deities wouldn't dare to provoke once they grow up. Even though they were very young now, they were still as powerful as Sixth to Eighth Celestial Layer. This was their inherent gift, people couldn't help but be frightened and envious of them.

However, before Xiao Chen even made a move, Keke was already enraged. Although it was deliberately stamping the Red Dragon King before, it didn't really attack the Red Dragon King. But now the snow-white little critter waved its little paws seriously, seven-colored light screen was formed, not only did it block the crimson energy blade, it also trapped the Red Dragon King with a "whoosh". After that, the little critter waved its little paws again with no trace of politeness. With a "swish", the Red Dragon King was tossed on top of a tall ancient tree.

This outcome not only made the Red Dragon King bellowed in rage, it also made the Azure Dragon King and Jade Dragon King to look at each other. Many practitioners were also stupefied. Of course, those who had experienced the calamity of the ghost town were not too surprised, because they had seen Keke using its divine power before.

The Azure Dragon King and Jade Dragon King growled, they rushed in front of Keke and let out a snarl unceasingly. It seemed like they were asking something. On the other side, Keke proudly waved its little paws and jumped onto Lunhui Wang's head. It was "showing off" by "squeaking" unceasingly. 1

It was a really astounding scene. A cute little critter became the focus of a few mystical Dragon Kings. Only Xiao Chen, Lawrence, Yan Qing Cheng, the Solitary Sword Demon, *etc.* knew why the two Dragon Kings were surrounding Keke and "questioning" it. From the mysterious woman and Amethyst Dragon King, everyone already knew Keke's divine ability was in fact, the dragon's secret technique.

A little critter that even knew about the dragon's secret technique, how could those who knows the inside story not be surprised!

In the end, even though the Red Dragon King was still angry, it didn't try to attack Keke anymore.

Finally, the little fatty Oxman and that mysterious woman arrived in succession. The Amethyst Dragon King and Black Dragon King followed beside them. With the arrival of two more Dragon Kings, a fierce battle nearly broke out again between the few Dragon Kings. However, the Black Dragon King and Amethyst Dragon King had better self-restraint, and they were much more interested in Keke than the other few Dragon Kings. Those who knew the inside story realized they wanted to fight over Keke's sacred tree, but the little critter was not concerned in the least.

"Maybe the situation might not be as bad as we thought." The woman shrouded in colorful mist said to everyone, "I have communicated with the Amethyst Dragon King. According to the legend of dragons, the Ancestral Dragon can undo the seal on this island, but it seemed like it must move away from the dragon island. That is to say the Ancestral Dragon and Dragon Kings will eventually leave the dragon island. We don't need to force them, so long as we use an appropriate method, we might be able to reduce a lot of casualties."

Lawrence, Buddhist Yizhen, the Solitary Sword Demon, and Oxman communicated with their own Dragon King and validated the news. Everyone could finally see a sliver of hope, so it turned out the future kings of dragon had to leave this place eventually. Perhaps the Ancestral Dragon Divine Ship was made for them.

They had already gathered five Dragon Kings, they were already very close to nine Dragon Kings. And when everyone realized where did Lawrence and Buddhist Yizhen's Dragon Kings came from, they couldn't help but feel like they were going to blow up. Their conjecture regarding Xiao Chen's "Dragon King Cultivation Plan" at that time actually came true.

It was pointless even if everyone felt jealous or envious, the dragons would go crazy and kill anyone who entered their territory if the grasses were so much as brushed by a little wind. It completely sealed their fancy to steal the dragon egg.

In some kind of sense, it was much safer to surround and capture a young Dragon King. After all, even if those dragons lost their divine ability, even if their brutality won over their divinity, they still had a god-like body. They were extremely fierce and terrifying.

Everyone set off under the guidance of five Dragon Kings. On the other side, Xiao Chen did not follow them. Even though many people wanted to borrow Keke's power to capture the young Dragon King, it was rejected by Xiao Chen. After all, when those Dragon Kings grow up, even deities wouldn't dare to provoke them. If he let Keke deal with them now, it was equivalent to setting up powerful enemies for Keke in the future.

It was not because he failed to grasp the bigger picture, it was because with the participation of five Dragon Kings, dealing with one Dragon King shouldn't pose too much of a problem. Of course, everyone did not really force him into it, a lot of people were scared that the demon that was following Xiao Chen would harm them.

Everyone gradually distanced themselves. Qinguang Wang, Yanluo Wang, and Lunhui Wang stayed behind and followed Xiao Chen again.

The demon appeared in the forest, he looked at everyone's figure from behind and said, "I daresay they will fail this time, if it was a different Dragon King, they might be able to catch it, but even five Dragon Kings won't be able to pin down the Dragon King this time."

"Why? Don't tell me the legendary Ancestral Dragon finally appeared?" Xiao Chen looked at him in shock.

"Although I have seen eleven Dragon Kings, I haven't seen the legendary Ancestral Dragon. Maybe it hadn't been born yet."

"What? There are actually as many as eleven Dragon Kings?!" Xiao Chen was very astonished.

"Of course, maybe there might be one or two more. However, to summon the divine ship, you guys only need nine Dragon Kings." The demon's words confirmed the written records about the divine ship found by the old woman.

"Is that so..... You still haven't answered my question, why five Dragon Kings

wouldn't be able to pin down the Dragon King they found this time?" Xiao Chen looked at him in puzzlement, it was hard to imagine just what kind of Dragon King would be able to deal with five Syndicate Dragon Kings.

"Heh-heh, it is not because this Dragon King is very powerful, it is because the ability it possess now is not something the other Dragon King can compare. Because it is the only one that can fly now, the other Dragon King might need a long time before they can manifest a similar divine ability."

"Why is it so special, don't tell me there is also a big gap in strength even among the Dragon King?"

The demon laughed and shook his head, then he said, "No, this is the Dragon King's innate ability, because this is a Winged Dragon King."

"Winged Dragon King?!" Xiao Chen was very shocked. Because according to what he knows, the Winged Dragon was the only dragon that was not sealed. It seemed like there was only a single Winged Dragon on this dragon island that came from the outside. He still clearly remember how the Fallen Angel defeated and dropped the Sacred Dragon onto the dragon island. Could that be a female dragon and gave birth not long after it was forced onto the dragon island? This speculation might be very possible.

"Is that so, this is really too unexpected." Xiao Chen heaved a sigh.

Just at this time, the roar of dragons and the practitioner's yell were transmitted from a distant mountain woods. It was very obvious that they found the tracks of the Winged Dragon King.

"Actually, if you guys find one more Dragon King, you would have assembled nine Dragon Kings already." The demon laughed faintly.

"What do you mean, don't tell me other people had already subdued the Dragon Kings?" Xiao Chen felt very excited.

"Of course, the other three Dragon Kings had already been subdued a long time ago. It would be more appropriate to say those three Dragon Kings were the very first to be subdued."

Hearing these, Xiao Chen quickly thought of those first group of people who entered the depths of the island. It must be those group of older generation

experts.

“You must have guessed it already, the older the ginger, the more spicy they are. Although they only have thirty plus people, they are much stronger compared to youth like you. If it was not because of their greed and wanted to enter the dragon’s Sacred Mountain to find the legendary Ancestral Dragon, they might have subdued even more Syndicate Dragon Kings.”

This piece of news from the demon was very shocking, so it turns out they had almost gathered nine Dragon Kings in total without realizing it. It means that they can finally see the hope of leaving this dragon island now.

“Leaving this dragon island is no longer a dream, it is already on the verge of success now.” The demon laughed grimly and said, “Have you thought about it carefully? If you haven’t, you might regret it for the rest of your life. I also don’t want to kill you, why don’t you stay on the dragon island and accompany me?”

Keke who was pretending to be asleep jumped up angrily, it glared at the demon with its glittering big eyes. However, the little critter knew it didn’t have an attack-type magic, it wouldn’t be able to deal with the demon as it is now. Moreover, its confinement technique couldn’t catch up to the demon’s superb speed.

On the other side, Xiao Chen sucked in a mouthful of fresh air, if everyone left, leaving him all alone on the dragon island, that would be very terrifying.

“Eh? These three skeletons..... their background is quite impressive!” It seemed like the demon had only just noticed Qinguang Wang and the other two skeletons. His voice contained a hint of surprise, “They must have just evolved recently, I have never seen them before. They actually evolved this quickly, how come they only awaken now after falling on the dragon island for so many years?” To be praised by him like this, it was enough to tell how much potential the three of them possessed. He revolved around the three skeletons and said, “Don’t tell me they have a bit of history in their past life?”

“They can evolve into Sovereign King.” Xiao Chen opened his mouth and said. He wanted to listen to the demon’s commentary, so that he could understand more about the three skeleton’s future potential. 2

“Sovereign King? Heh-heh..... That’s a little exaggerated, even if the departed

souls and undead creatures evolved to the peak stage, how many could actually breakthrough to Sovereign King since ancient times? Sovereign King is an existence equivalent to the Dragon King. Don't look at the Undead Emperor in the deathly swamp, he is still a hundred and eight thousand miles away from a genuine Sovereign King."

The demon's words immediately gave Xiao Chen a whole new understanding of the Sovereign King's power, but he was a bit puzzled and asked, "When I was in the ghost town before, I saw the skull of a few Sovereign King, if they were that powerful, how did they die within the ghost town?"

"Impossible!" The demon said with certainty, "Sovereign King can only be sealed, it is impossible to kill them. Oh, now that you mentioned it, the dozen of you were only that powerful, and yet you were able to escape from the ghost town, it was indeed a miracle."

"They had a complete lotus flower insignia on their skull, don't tell me they were not Sovereign Kings?"

"Far from it." The demon let out a cold snort and didn't say anything else.

Just at this time, the dragon roar at the distant mountain woods gradually got further away. Xiao Chen wanted to witness the result with his own eyes. He turned around to take a quick look at the demon before he took large strides towards that mountain woods. This time the demon did not follow him.

The mountain woods was filled with broken branches and withered leaves, it was very obvious that a big battle took place in this region. The majority of the people already left, only Lawrence and Yizhen's group were still searching in the vicinity. "It was a Winged Dragon King, that little dragon was really too fast. It only exchanged a few blows with the other Dragon Kings before it soared into the sky." Lawrence felt a bit helpless and heaved a sigh, then he continued, "We felt it was very strange when we found its trail before, because it was really too fast in the thick forest. We only knew it was a silver-colored Dragon King, we never thought it actually had a pair of wings."

This outcome was really unexpected. After all, Winged Dragon couldn't be regarded as powerful among the various dragon races. But a Dragon King just had to show up from this kind of race. This gave everyone no choice but to

believe the legend, the Dragon Kings could rise from any dragon race, even the weakest dragon had the possibility of giving birth to the Ancestral Dragon.

A weak growl transmitted from not far away, it sounded like a wounded beast. The instant Xiao Chen turned his head, he exposed a shocked expression. He actually saw that dark brown little dragon again; That tenacious, stubborn, and proud little dragon.

Presently, it was surrounded by a pool of blood, the flowers and plants below its body were stained by the blood. It couldn't bear the sharp pain and let out a growl. Keke's big eyes also widened right away, it dashed over there with a swish.

Xiao Chen felt it was a little unbelievable, the last time he saw the little dragon fought with two Dragon Kings, it was already on the verge of dying, because its chest was cut open, even the internal organs could be seen through the wound. It was hard to imagine how it could have survived that.

Walking over there, he found that the wound the little dragon received last time was almost fully recovered, but it received another fatal wound. There was a huge bloody hole situated at its neck and the pair of ribs were almost pierced, according to common sense, this kind of injury means certain death.

"Such a weird little dragon, when we got over here it was actually fighting with the Winged Dragon King. Although it was defeated in the end, this little dragon was quite courageous. It actually has the guts to fight with the kings of dragons." Lawrence heaved a sigh at the side.

Chapter 111 – The Power of God

Xiao Chen was momentarily lost in thought, this stubborn and proud little dragon was far from courageous, it was more appropriate to say it was too competitive. He could guess it was most likely this unremarkable little dragon who issued the challenge to the Winged Dragon. It was because this little dragon had challenged the other two Dragon Kings before. Moreover, the Winged Dragon wouldn't take the initiative to challenge a puny dragon like this.

“Such a weird little dragon.....” Xiao Chen squatted down to look at it quietly. After that, he attempted to give it a dose of Snow Lotus Core. It turned out the same as last time, the little dragon twisted its head stubbornly.

Just at this time, Buddhist Yizhen and Rowena also gathered around. After seeing the little dragon's grave condition, everyone shook their head. They felt that it was impossible for it to survive.

“This island is called the dragon island, after we got here, we haven't tasted dragon meat yet, why don't we roast it? It won't be able to live much longer anyway.” One practitioner at the side suggested.

As a result, the Jade Dragon King and Azure Dragon King nearby let out a sky piercing roar. They could fight with their race, but they could not tolerate people eating dragon meat. That practitioner was shocked speechless immediately.

The little dragon's expression was very proud and very fierce, it was not a face a loser on the verge of death would show. Despite how its pair of eyes were already lifeless, it still looked at everyone who pointed at it with disdain, so much so that it even tried to stand up. Only when it looked at Keke and Xiao Chen did it show a somewhat different expression.

Everyone gradually dispersed, Xiao Chen told Buddhist Yizhen and Lawrence the news he received from the demon in a low voice.

“What, we actually only need one more Dragon King? We need to get in touch with those older generation soon!”

And just at this time, Xiao Chen felt the aura of the demon in the vicinity. At the same time, Lawrence's complexion changed abruptly.

“Don’t worry, he will not harm anyone for the time being.” Xiao Chen explained.

“You are saying that is the demon’s aura?” Lawrence was indefinitely bewildered as he asked. It caused Rowena and Yan Qing Cheng at the side to turn pale simultaneously. It was not a good feeling to be spied by a demon.

“That’s right. Something wrong?” Xiao Chen asked in puzzlement.

“So it was him, he was the demon.” Lawrence suddenly realized and said, “Remember what I told you before? After entering the depths of the dragon island, I always felt someone was spying on me, it was this kind of aura.”

Xiao Chen recalled Lawrence’s words, when they decided to work together, Lawrence once said someone was spying on him in the dark, it made him felt restless. That was one of the reason which resulted in Lawrence and Xiao Chen to work together. Who could have thought that was actually the demon, this riddle was actually broken just like this. This also indicated that the demon had already morphed from the snow mountain a long time ago.

Everyone had already left. Only Xiao Chen, Keke, and the three skeletons remained in front of the little dragon.

“Why are you so stubborn? I am trying to help you, why won’t you accept it? Last time you were fortunate to be alive. Don’t tell me you want to overexert yourself again?” The little dragon twisted its head to the other side abruptly. It was also weird that the blood was no longer leaking from the wound.

Xiao Chen’s heart was filled with doubts, he felt that this little dragon did not survive because of luck. Maybe this little dragon had something uncommon that hadn’t been discovered by others.

This little dragon’s warlike nature was very similar to the Dragon King’s, it wanted to evolve and rise to a higher level through constant battle. However, this little dragon was really too weak, it didn’t even have a single horn. It didn’t have any resemblance with the Dragon King, and the disparity between the legendary Ancestral Dragon was even larger.

If only it was a little stronger, Xiao Chen might mistake it as an unusual Dragon King. After all, this little dragon seemed very intelligent, it didn’t succumb to

brutality due to the seal on the dragon island.

“Maybe you might become the most powerful dragon just below the Dragon King.” Xiao Chen said to himself softly. Such a warlike little dragon, if it could survive after each battle, it would certainly become more and more powerful. Dragon was a very competitive race, who knows it might really evolve from an ordinary dragon to an unusual dragon that was second only to the Dragon King. As for evolving to an Ancestral Dragon, that was not very realistic. After all, innate skill was also extremely important. Its inborn ability did not meet the requirement.

In regards to Xiao Chen’s evaluation, the little dragon did not have any response. It already closed its pair of eyes and ignored everything at the outside world. Keke curiously run around in circles nearby, it seemed to find the little dragon very interesting. It curiously touched the little dragon’s head, and then looked over the dragon claws. For some reason, it squeaked a few times.

In the end, Xiao Chen also left, but he turned back only after a few miles. Leaving this kind of wounded little dragon at the underbrush alone might attract the other beasts. After all, this was not the dragon’s Sacred Mountain. Without the shelter of the dragon’s territory, the other beasts would most likely enjoy the meal without a qualm.

However, although there were a few beasts in the vicinity by the time he returned, when they got close to the dark brown little dragon, they ran away as if frightened by something. This was a strange and unusual phenomenon.

Xiao Chen still couldn’t understand what happened in the end, but knowing that the strange little dragon was in good health, he left while feeling relieved.

There were only two days left before the seven days limit, Xiao Chen aimlessly walked in the depths of the dragon island by himself. He didn’t place his hope on finding a power that could suppress the demon anymore. It seemed like there was really nothing on the dragon island that could restrain the evil spirit.

But just when he was about to give up, he encountered something unusual.

There was a collapsed mountain range in the depths of the dragon island, that place was barren; not even a blade of grass grows. It was filled with endless chunks of crushed rocks. It seemed like a calamity had took place here, the entire

rocky mountain seemed to be destroyed by a powerful force.

Although the mountain range already collapsed, people could still feel it was once a lofty and majestic mountain. Just from these ruins before their eyes, they could already feel a majestic power.

Many areas of the stony mountain range already collapsed and had been flattened, but there were still a lot of rocky peak standing upright. However, those rocky mountains were already filled with cracks, it seemed like they would collapse at any given time. It gave people a weird and wondrous impression.

It was at this unusual place that Xiao Chen found a lot of corpse. It was obvious that they were left behind since ancient times, their bones already decayed a long time ago, the brittle bones would shatter into small pieces with just a light step.

There were many bones like this among the shattered rocky mountain, it made people unable to understand clearly what happened at this place before.

And Xiao Chen just entered this region, walking into the mountain range for a short distance, he found a few more corpses among the rubble. It was obvious they hadn't died for long, judging from their grizzled hair, they must be fifty to sixty years old elder. Without a doubt, they must be the older generation experts that secretly infiltrated the dragon island.

How did they end up dead at this place? Xiao Chen secretly raised his guard, after a careful observation, he found that these few people seemed to have fled from ahead. It seemed like their body were unable to endure it anymore and fell at this place in the end.

After a careful observation and conjecture, it seemed like ahead of them was filled with indescribable danger. Moreover, it didn't seem to be very close from here. Xiao Chen took a step forward, Keke also sobered up and curiously sized up the rocky mountain. The three skeletons followed behind them closely.

After advancing for two miles, they found a few more corpses. It seemed like they were the same group of people, but these few people died a little earlier, they didn't manage to run as far as the few people from before.

"Squeak! Squeak.....!" Keke didn't seem to be aware of the dangers in front, it

excitedly ran and hopped between the rocky mountains. It seemed like there was a treasure ahead that was attracting it.

How did this happen? It seemed like there was danger ahead, otherwise it was impossible for these older generation experts to die, and yet Keke who was brimming with spiritual nature acted like this. Xiao Chen was very doubtful.

“Do you guys want to die?” The demon appeared behind Xiao Chen’s party.

“What kind of place is this?” Xiao Chen turned around to ask.

“It is a place you must not set foot in.” The demon’s eyes were a little empty as he said, “The dragon island is a desolate mysterious island, there are a lot of place even I do not dare to rashly approach. I advise you to leave as soon as possible. However, if you want to try your luck, I will not stop you. If something happened to you guys, I can obtain my needs honorably.”

Keke disregarded the demon and took the initiative to run forward, Xiao Chen also paid no more attention to him and followed Keke to proceed onward. After advancing for four to five miles in this shattered rock vein, Xiao Chen and the rest finally felt something abnormal, a sacred aura fluctuated in this region like the water ripples, there was an awe-inspiring power at this place.

It was the power of god!

This kind of thought rose from Xiao Chen’s heart, this was definitely not something that could be compared with an ordinary power, but how could the dragon island permit the power of god to exist? It ought to be sealed.

Specks of golden light emitted from between the rocky mountain ahead. The power of god originated from there, it was obvious that they were already close to their target. Keke let out a cheer and dashed over there joyfully. Xiao Chen felt uneasy to let it be so he also followed closely. The three skeletons even transformed into three streaks of light and followed after them.

They finally entered that collapsed rocky mountain, the dazzling golden light projected into Xiao Chen’s eyes. At the same time, it made people felt the power of god was even denser at this place. It seemed as if there was a blazing sun in front.

“Squeak! Squeak.....!” The snow-white little critter finally stopped its footstep.

It jumped on top of a huge mountain rock to look forward.

And Xiao Chen finally saw the object clearly.

It was a golden divine halberd that seemed like it was completely made out of glaring golden light. It was so sacred and out of ordinary, the halberd was quietly stuck between the rocks. It emitted a golden divine power that was like a surge of sea wave. 1

Chapter 112 – Sealed Ancient Artifact

Divine radiance lingered on the golden halberd, it was emitting a pressure as heavy as a mountain. At the same time, it was brimming with the vicissitudes of time, it possessed an incomparable ancient aura and heavy pressure. And the sharp edge of the huge halberd was flickering with chilly radiance like that of the ice.

This was definitely a divine weapon; an ancient artifact that couldn't be completely sealed! Even the dragon island's power couldn't seal its divine power completely. It was enough to show how outstanding was this weapon.

Xiao Chen suddenly recalled, on that day when the ghost town appeared in the sea of bones, the Buddha's Eternal Wheel, Ancestral Dragon's Horn, jet-black Metal Engraving, Brass Trigrams, and other ancient artifacts were bombarding the divine monolith. And this golden halberd was one of the artifacts among them! This was a divine artifact that was on par with Buddha's Eternal Wheel and Ancestral Dragon's Horn, it dared to bombard the divine monolith that sealed the dragon island.

Such a coincidence, he actually found this divine golden halberd! Xiao Chen felt very excited, if he could control this divine halberd, he might be able to borrow its power to completely suppress the demon. However, Xiao Chen quickly calmed down after a short period of excitement. Few older generation experts lost their life at this place, and yet they were unable to obtain the divine weapon, would a younger generation expert like him be able to do it?

"I advise you to keep away from here one last time." The voice of the demon transmitted from not far away, and continued, "Don't even think about it, it was buried under the mountain before, if you accidentally stirred up its murderous aura, you will only be courting death. It reappeared in this generation after the ghost town's calamity, if you guys take another ten steps forward, you will be considered lucky if you can escape narrowly. The few corpses from before are the best example, the golden murderous aura will follow you as closely as the shadow follows the body. It will keep following you until you are dead."

Xiao Chen had a sliver of fear, he didn't doubt the demon's words. If it was really that easy to get the divine artifact, perhaps the demon would already take

it for himself. Just when he wanted to call Keke to fall back, that little critter was already completely infatuated. When it looked at the golden halberd with glorious divine radiance, its glittering big eyes were already filled with stars. It was even dancing and gesticulating for joy.

Goodness gracious!

This little critter was actually that fond of this huge killing tool.

“Keke, come back here.” Xiao Chen called out a little too late, Keke already made its move. It actually transformed into a streak of white light and dashed forward, it wanted to carry the divine halberd away.

A cloudy fog rushed forth for an instant and the demon disappeared along with the black fog, because he knew what was about to happen. Xiao Chen and the three skeletons were getting anxious, but there was nothing they could do.

The glaring golden light soared into the sky, then it swept over to Keke and Xiao Chen’s direction. The approaching murderous aura made people’s soul tremble. The little critter seemed to come to itself at this time, it knew it caused a huge disaster. Using its most powerful confinement technique, it rushed back at lightning speed. Xiao Chen and the three skeletons were wrapped up in the light screen.

At the same time, that unstoppable golden light blade slashed down from the heaven like a huge lightning. Xiao Chen turned completely pale and shut his eyes. And Keke seemed to know that it had caused a life threatening disaster, it growled a few times in distress. At the same time, it spared no effort to strengthen its confinement technique until the strongest state.

The golden divine halberd was an ancient artifact, so much so that it was on equal terms with Buddha’s Eternal Wheel. One could imagine just how incredible was the power released by this kind of weapon. Although the dragon’s divine ability controlled by the snow-white little critter was second to none, it was still a cub in the end, it was unable to resist.

The glaring golden light destroyed that layer of light screen in an instant, then it swoop towards the little critter and Xiao Chen. At this final moment, the little critter innocently blinked its big eyes, it was a little dejected as it looked at Xiao Chen. It seemed to be saying this had nothing to do with it.

Xiao Chen was speechless, he absolutely never thought it would end up like this.

At the most critical moment, the approaching golden light blade did not hit them, the little critter's treasured tree hat blossomed with multicolored light. All the golden light blade transformed into ripple-like energy flow and gathered at the tiny sacred tree like rivers meet the sea.

"Squeak.....!" The snow-white little critter wiped that dejected look from its face and embraced the treasured tree excitedly. It was shouting and jumping like a naughty child. All the approaching golden light blade were absorbed by the sacred tree. 1

Xiao Chen and the three skeletons were startled for a moment.

At a distant mountain peak, the demon was at a loss for words. He looked at this direction while feeling bewildered.

"Keke, what are you doing? Stop it now!" Xiao Chen who just calmed down became nervous again. The snow-white little critter was really too unrestrained, it actually wanted to approach the golden divine halberd again after putting on the treasured tree hat. This made the three quiet skeletons jumped up, oh how they wished they could stop the little critter.

"Squeak! Squeak.....!" The little critter mumbled to itself uncaringly. It walked over there unsteadily.

Xiao Chen felt like his heart would jump out from his throat, would the sacred tree be able to stop the golden divine halberd's attack this time? After all, the distance was much closer compared to last time.

However, it was unexpectedly smooth, the ancient golden halberd actually emitted a gentle divine radiance, there was no hint of murderous aura. It allowed the little critter to approach slowly. Keke happily turned its head around and waved its little paw at Xiao Chen a few times, this made Xiao Chen and the three skeletons a little speechless.

In the vicinity of the golden divine halberd, the golden light wave was as thick as the liquid. The little critter felt like it was caught up in a swamp, it was difficult to walk and the little critter had to exert its strength to move forward.

Seven steps, six steps, five steps..... up till the last steps, the snow-white little critter finally got in front of the divine halberd. It happily grabbed the golden divine halberd, who knows just why was the little critter so fond of this huge killing tool.

When Keke grabbed the divine halberd that was much bigger than itself, a violent trembling noise resounded. The entire collapsed mountain range shook violently, it felt like a huge earthquake had broken out.

Since it had come to this, Xiao Chen also tried to press his luck, he brought the three skeletons and dashed forward at high-speed. Since it was impossible to run away anymore, they might as well rush forward. They quickly joined up with Keke. Within the glaring radiance, the sky of this rocky mountain range was reeling and the earth was quaking. The dazzling rays of light soared into the heavens, there were even more huge rocks flying into the sky.

Even the practitioners very far away from this region had noticed this kind of bizarre event, they looked at the glaring golden radiance in the sky of this region. The demon who was at a distant place heaved a sigh and said to himself, "If only the sacred tree remains in good condition."

"Keke, look at what you caused this time, we might really not make it this time." Looking at Keke's innocent look, Xiao Chen felt very helpless.

Among the rumbling sound, they felt as if they were walking on clouds, it seemed like they were lifted up from the ground. However, Keke's confinement technique was still very effective, it wrapped them within, and the sacred tree on Keke's head was flourishing with multicolored radiance. It seemed to be gobbling up the fierce energy flow.

"Squeak! Squeak.....!" Keke looked at Xiao Chen innocently, it seemed to be saying we are very safe. The golden divine halberd was actually in its embrace, the snow-white little critter excitedly waved the halberd with all its strength, the blazing divine radiance swept across the entire rocky mountain, rumbling sound transmitted from the earth unceasingly. Xiao Chen found the right opportunity to hit the little critter's head with all his might to make it well-behaved.

In the end, with an ear-splitting explosive sound, the light screen that was enveloping Xiao Chen's party was sent flying far away from this region. Keke

firmly held onto the golden divine halberd, it didn't want to let go no matter what.

With a "bang", the group fell in between the rubble a few hundred meter away. With the light screen protecting them, none of them were hurt, but Keke called out anxiously, because the golden divine halberd in its embrace actually turned dimmer over time. After that, it actually disappeared in thin air.

The demon at a distant mountain peak opened his mouth widely in shock, he didn't dare to believe his own eyes. Those few extremely daring guys were actually safe and sound, they didn't die.

After the blazing golden divine radiance in this region completely dissipated, the demon rushed over as fast as lightning. He looked at Xiao Chen's party dumbfoundedly. This was really too shocking for him, all of them were actually still alive. Xiao Chen and the three skeletons already calmed down, only Keke was calling out anxiously. It was especially dejected, the golden divine halberd actually disappeared. 2

The demon was not able to utter a single word for a while, only until a long time of silence later did he doubtfully say, "You guys..... actually pulled that ancient artifact out....."

Keke fiercely revolved around the demon, the snow-white little critter suspected it was the demon who stole the divine halberd.

"Where is the golden divine halberd, how come I cannot feel its aura anymore?" The demon asked with bewildered look. Xiao Chen also couldn't feel the slightest hint of the divine halberd's aura. That divine artifact seemed like it just disappeared in thin air.

"How is this possible, it seemed to have completely disappeared from the dragon island." The demon was about to be driven mad, just what did the few guys in front of him did, a legendary ancient artifact actually went missing just like this. Even with his unfathomable ability, he was unable to feel the golden divine halberd's whereabouts anymore. It was enough to explain that the divine artifact had really disappeared.

In the end, Keke almost flipped, it pointed at the demon fiercely, asking him to return the divine halberd. The demon was completely speechless, it had no other

choice but to get away without making any sound.

They searched in this rocky mountain for more than half of the day, only then did the snow-white little critter left with Xiao Chen while feeling vexed. However, Xiao Chen felt that the golden halberd did not really disappear, he could vaguely feel the aura of the divine halberd, but he was unable to pinpoint the location.

3

Even after they were ten miles away from that place, Xiao Chen still had that feeling. It indicated that the divine halberd was with them all along! When he told the little critter about this to appease it, Keke's big eyes immediately lit up. It looked up and down, left and right, but it was unable to find anything.

In the end, this matter was left unsettled.

Only one day was left of the seven days limit, and just at this day, Xiao Chen received news that the Winged Dragon King had been subdued. That also signified that they had already gathered nine Dragon Kings; if they could get in touch with the older generations.

This was undoubtedly a shocking news to Xiao Chen. Although the majority of the people did not know they had already subdued nine Dragon Kings, the truth was unable to be covered up for long.

Xiao Chen couldn't help but start to come up with some countermeasures. Maybe his only choice was to give the treasured tree to the demon. Otherwise, he could only helplessly see other people leave and stay on the dragon island all by his lonesome self.

He saw Lawrence and Buddhist Yizhen again, Xiao Chen discussed with them for a really long time. That was because he will need to go make a deal with the demon not long later.

"How did the Winged Dragon King get subdued?"

"You might find it hard to believe even if I tell you." After roasting the tasty deer breast, Lawrence passed it to Xiao Chen and said, "It was a huge Sacred Dragon that gave the little Dragon King as present to a practitioner called Lanyu."

"What? The Sacred Dragon gave its own child as a present to Lanyu?!" Xiao

Chen thought of many possibility, but he never thought it would be like this.

It seemed like the Winged Dragon that fell on the dragon island was able to maintain a trace of divinity. It didn't get completely sealed by the power of the dragon island. It was making plans for its child's future, it seemed to know that human's wisdom couldn't be underestimated. In the end, Lanyu's potential seemed to have caught its attention.

Actually, in regards to that female practitioner called Lanyu, Xiao Chen had a pretty deep impression of her. She also tried to pull Xiao Chen into the Blue Rain Alliance before, she had a sweet-tempered nature which left an extremely good impression in Xiao Chen.

In reality, Lanyu was a true expert.

According to what Buddhist Yizhen said, most of those who had enmity with the Solitary Sword Demon on this dragon island had been killed by him. Especially after the ghost town's calamity, a few practitioners who were almost on his level perished in the ghost town. Among the youth generation, there were only a few people left on this island that could contend against the Solitary Sword Demon. And the founder of the Radiance Alliance, Schroder, as well as the founder of Blue Rain Alliance, Lanyu, were among the few that could withstand nine slash from the Solitary Sword Demon. Of course, Yizhen and Xiao Chen were among the few.

However, withstanding nine slash and defeating him was two different things. According to Buddhist Yizhen's speculation, the Solitary Sword Demon was at least Eight Celestial Layer. Except for that woman who controlled the law of time, no one else could really be his opponent.

Xiao Chen said, "Nine dragons had already been gathered, we should promptly get in touch with those older generations. Perhaps, the little fatty Oxman and the villagers had already got in touch with those older generation people. It is about time to leave this desolate island."

"But you....."

"I will go and completely settle this with the demon."

Chapter 113 – Compromise

Xiao Chen did not hide anything, he had already told Lawrence and Yizhen everything.

“You have to come back as soon as possible. Otherwise when everyone knew that we have already gathered nine Dragon Kings, they might summon the divine ship immediately.”

“That’s right. Xiao Chen, you must not forget, I had already trained this kind of peerless beauty into a wonderful slave 1, if you don’t come back at once, you will regret it in the future.” The extraordinarily beautiful Rowena laughed softly.

Yan Qing Cheng was a beauty that could captivate even the birds and beasts, her appearance could even hide the moon and shame the flowers. She just turned her head to the other side, her beautiful face didn’t have a trace of emotion. Since her power had been sealed, she didn’t want to say any useless words.

“It doesn’t matter, even if Xiao Chen didn’t want to give the sacred tree to me, I won’t mistreat him either. How about letting this woman stay behind to accompany him.” The demon showed up in the mountain woods along with the cloudy fog.

This was the first time Lawrence and the others saw the demon. Rowena’s complexion changed on the spot and she quickly retreated. The other people’s face also changed abruptly.

“It’s the last day already, have you not come to a decision yet?” The demon looked at Xiao Chen.

And on the other side, Xiao Chen looked at Keke who was fast asleep. Looking at its peaceful appearance, Xiao Chen heaved a sigh. This was the snow-white little critter’s ration, and he was about to leave the dragon island, if they borrowed the sacred tree to the demon, then how about Keke, should he take it with him? Xiao Chen was really in a difficult position.

“Seems like you still have a hard time making a decision.” The demon retreated.

Everyone got through this night peacefully, but just when the first glimmer of light shone upon the horizon, a chilly wind blew past violently. The demon paid a visit at the crack of dawn, without making any sound, he wrapped Xiao Chen and the three skeletons, as well as Yan Qing Cheng in the cloudy fog, all of them disappeared in a moment.

It was impossible for Lawrence and Buddhist Yizhen to stop it, the gaps between them were too big. They believed the demon was not simply at the demigod level, he couldn't have spent these countless years in vain!

The frosty wind was biting cold, Xiao Chen's party had been brought to the snowy mountain by the demon. The sun had already rose at this moment, the brilliant white snow covered the entire mountain peak, the morning sun made this place more beautiful in contrast to the surroundings.

Keke, the snow-white little critter, had already woke up from the daze, it took off the treasured tree hat sadly and passed it to Xiao Chen while feeling a bit sorrowful. He could tell the little critter was very disappointed, Xiao Chen really did not have the heart to do it, but he really did not want to spend the rest of his life on this island.

"You made Keke really sad." Xiao Chen said these as he looked at the demon calmly. The underlying meaning was that you have already offended the snow-white little critter, it might come and take revenge on you in the future.

"I just want to borrow it for one year at most, it has a very long life ahead, I will definitely repay you with a generous reward, it will inevitably be more lavish than this favor."

"But the nine Dragon Kings already gathered together, the divine ship will be summoned soon, we will leave this island, how will you give it back to us?"

"That is indeed problematic, it is definitely impossible for me to board the divine ship and leave the dragon island as I am now." The demon contemplated for a moment and said, "Then I will have everyone stay behind, I will make them unable to leave until one year later."

"Do you want me and Keke to make an enemy out of everyone on the island? Once they know the truth, they will definitely resent us."

“How about I just kill everyone else.” The demon said very cruelly.

This made Yan Qing Cheng at the side felt a little ice-cold, she didn't say a word since coming to this snowy mountain, but she still felt a bit of fear in her heart. After all, this is the legendary demon that had lived for countless years!

“Didn't you promise to be a good guy, why must you continue to slaughter?” Xiao Chen really didn't want the demon to go crazy like this.

“Let me think.....” The demon became quiet for a moment, then he said, “How about I give you some present for now.” Speaking until here he waved his hand with sudden force, the cloudy fog wrapped them and brought them to the foot of a snowy mountain.

The demon opened a hole in ice, there was actually an imposing ice castle within. It was hidden in the core of the snowy mountain.

The ice castle halls in the core of the snowy mountain were embedded with many jewels, which made this place as bright as daytime. After passing through seven ice castle halls, they arrived at the main hall filled with weapons.

The demon faced Xiao Chen's party and said, “Take any weapons of your liking. Although I can't guarantee that they are rare treasures, there might be some weapons used by ancient immortals among them. I gathered these from the ancient battlefield on the dragon island.”

The radiance in the ice castle hall was bright, every weapons seemed to be uncommon, but there was a common ground, all of them were damaged, they were just some defective goods.

Keke casted a few glance listlessly, it didn't have the mood to pick any. It was not really interested in weapons, it only cared about that golden divine halberd from before because it liked the aura emitted by that divine artifact.

The three skeletons did not hold back, they quickly picked a long sword respectively. It seemed like an antique that had been through the vicissitudes of time, but there was still a dazzling radiance circulating on the weapons. Although it was lacking of sharp end, if they could repolish the swords, they might become exceptionally good weapons. And if what the demon said was true, they were weapons used by ancient immortals, then there was no need to polish them

again, they were already rare killing tools by themselves.

Yan Qing Cheng also did not hold back, she carefully picked a pair of daggers. One was as red as blood, the other was as green as jadeite. They were forged with unknown materials, the divine radiance was resplendent, and they were extremely sharp. The two daggers seemed like they were originally a pair, they were very compatible when put together. Everything was fine except for one small defect, the sharp end was also missing, a tiny section was missing.

Xiao Chen also selected a weapon in the end, even though he believed the body was the best weapon, but since the demon was so “generous”, he might as well take some. What he chose was a black short sword. The jet-black sword did not have any sharp edge, there was also no radiance circulating on the sword, it looked very old and simple. It felt very heavy after he lifted the sword, it was only half a meter long, and yet it weighed several hundred kilogram. It was obviously not a common object.

Since it was a broken sword, it seemed more like an epee 2 now. Whether he used it as a blade to slash or brandish it like a sword, it was fine either way.

“Good eyesight, you guys had chosen the best among these weapons. Especially that black broken sword I am particularly interested in. Frankly, I feel that it is not as ordinary as it look. If it was not for repaying you, I definitely won’t give this broken sword to anyone no matter what.” 3

They could tell the demon was being serious. In regards to the jet-black sword in Xiao Chen’s hand, they could see the demon was a bit reluctant to part with it.

Seeing Keke’s listless expression, the demon said, “I have a special gift for you.” After saying these, the demon brought the few people to the next ice castle hall.

The temperature rapidly decreased the moment they entered the castle hall, even practitioners on the level of Xiao Chen felt a little unbearable. And Yan Qing Cheng who had her power sealed immediately retreated, she was unable to bear the temperature in the ice castle hall.

This ice castle hall was very spacious and empty, on the ice platform at the center of this hall, only a single divine object was there, it was flickering with multi-colored radiance. That was a crystal clear milky white divine jade about the

size of a human head. The ice-cold aura was precisely emitted by it.

After the listless Keke looked at it, its glittering big eyes immediately lit up. It flew over there with a swish and hugged that divine jade tightly. It wasn't afraid of the coldness at all.

The demon explained, "This is the legendary Ice Divine Jade, it was formed naturally by condensing the essence of the ice vein, it is a rarely seen spiritual item. Compared to that Snow Lotus Core you guys obtained before, this is much stronger. However, it is unfortunate that average people won't be able to enjoy it. After all, it is too cold....."

Before he could finish his sentence, Keke already took the treasured tree from Xiao Chen and placed it on top of the Ice Divine Jade. With a "cracking" sound, the small sacred tree had rooted itself on the Ice Divine Jade, causing it to crack at high-speed.

The demon felt his heart ache. In his imagination, no matter how mystical was Keke, it also wouldn't be able to completely digest such a huge Ice Divine Jade. He thought there would still be at least more than half of it left. After he shook off the breath of death from his body, he could slowly absorb the essence of the Ice Divine Jade, that's what he thought. But Keke had given it to the sacred tree instead, the demon knew just one Ice Divine Jade was not enough. Even a few more wouldn't be enough for the sacred tree to absorb.

"Squeak! Squeak.....!" The snow-white little critter was muttering to the sacred tree unceasingly, it seemed to be bidding farewell the sacred tree. This made Xiao Chen felt even more ashamed.

Multicolored light flickered, white mist drifted, the cracking noise resounded unceasingly, the brilliance of the Ice Divine Jade flowed towards the small sacred tree like ripples of water.

Leaving Keke to look after the small sacred tree, the demon brought Xiao Chen to another ice castle hall to discuss with him.

"I originally didn't want to say it, but since you guys mentioned the divine ship will take off soon, I can tell you this secret. There is another ship, the Sovereign King Ship. It can steer away from the dragon island, and break through the Taboo Ocean. I will board the Sovereign King Ship in the future and leave the

dragon island. I will go to the immortal's mainland to return the sacred tree to you. I swear in the name of the ancient sovereign king, if I do not return the sacred tree, my body and soul shall perish."

Sovereign King Ship!

Xiao Chen heard this secret for the first time, but he was not fully convinced.

"I am not trying to deceive you, think about it carefully, how could I willingly stay here? The power of god is suppressed at this place, if I am to stay here, I wouldn't be able to make the most important breakthrough. I can ignore the Ancestral Dragon Divine Ship from leaving, only because I know of another method to leave this place. Otherwise how would I be willing to cut off my way out. As long as the sacred tree can help me transform the breath of death within my body into the breath of life, I can definitely find a way to summon the Sovereign King Ship to leave this place."

Thinking about it carefully, the demon does have a reasonable argument.

It had already been ten days since the sacred tree was given to the demon. From then on, the demon never shown itself again, he shut himself in the snowy mountain's core.

And during these ten days, the snow-white little critter was unlike itself, it appeared listless all day long. This made Xiao Chen felt extremely ashamed, how he wished he could go back to the snowy mountain to take the sacred tree back by force, but he didn't have that kind of ability.

On that day, Keke seriously caused a havoc at the snowy mountain, but the strength displayed by the demon was really too deep. It seemed like he was far beyond the demigod level. He didn't return a single attack, he allowed Keke to attack him from start to finish, and yet he was able to dodge every attacks with absolute speed. The confinement technique was unable to envelop him.

Xiao Chen was trying hard to think of a way, he felt that Keke couldn't move on without the sacred tree.

"Squeak.....!" Keke looked at the direction of the dragon's sacred mountain. It had a very sad expression, it seemed to be because it lost the sacred tree its parents left for it.

“Keke, why don’t we go take a look at your little beast nest? We will leave this place in a few more days, and go to an even bigger world.” Seeing the little critter like this, Xiao Chen tried to lighten it up as much as possible. He wanted to make the little critter happy.

Keke nodded its head strongly, it was originally a lively little beast, and yet it was so quiet now. This sense of loss might stick around for very long.

At present, all the young practitioners already knew nine Dragon Kings had been subdued, they were trying to get in touch with those older generation experts.

The little fatty Oxman’s elder had already got in touch with those people, if it was not because they were keeping the Ancestral Dragon in their mind constantly, they might have already summoned the divine ship.

However, the date of departure was getting closer, those people decided to try one more time, if they still couldn’t find any trace of the Ancestral Dragon within half a month, they will leave this dragon island.

Many young practitioners cursed them for being greedy, but there were also a lot that joined the search. After all, that was the legendary Ancestral Dragon, it was the genuine king of dragons.

The little Ancestral Dragon’s strength would probably be unimaginable once it grew up. Nine Dragon Kings were required to summon the divine ship, and yet it was able to summon divine ship by itself. Just looking from this point of view, it was enough to explain its position as the king of dragons.

And in order to find the Ancestral Dragon, the older generations had paid a great price. Almost half of them were killed because they accidentally intruded the dragon’s territory.

However, everyone also discovered an astonishing fact, the dragons didn’t seem to be against the idea of the young Syndicate Dragon King accompanying the humans. It seemed like they knew the Dragon Kings would eventually leave the dragon island. All kind of signs had verified this, in order to break free from the seal of the dragon island, it seemed like they really needed the Ancestral Dragon and Syndicate Dragon Kings to leave this place.

Xiao Chen bid farewell to Lawrence and Buddhist Yizhen, he didn't even let the three skeletons to follow them. He arrived at the vicinity of the dragon's sacred mountain again and paid a visit to the Heavenly Tree's stump. The snow-white little critter seemed especially sad, it was dithering at the place it was born unceasingly. It was poles apart from its mischievous self in the past.

Chapter 114 – Dragon, dragon, dragon

The pitiful little critter's appearance made Xiao Chen felt very unpleasant.

The snow-white little critter was weeping with a “boo hoo” sound, then it raised its head to look at the sky, its glittering big eyes were brimming with tears, it seemed to be calling out to its parents.

“Keke, don't be sad, you will definitely see your parents one of these days, and I will come up with something to help you seize back the little sacred tree.”

When Xiao Chen and Keke left this place, they finally ran into few of the rumored older generation experts at the surrounding of the dragon's sacred mountain. Although they still hadn't found the tracks of the Ancestral Dragon, they finally subdued the offspring of the Monarch Lion Dragon roaming in this area.

The golden little Dragon King was very bold and powerful, glorious light flickered all over its body, as if it was made out of gold. Just by considering the physique, it should be comparatively outstanding among the little Dragon Kings.

Xiao Chen did not show himself, he only watched from a distance. And what made him most amazed was that, A huge Monarch Lion Dragon was concealing its brass-like body in between the forest trees not far away. It was quietly watching the little Dragon King as it was taken away, it didn't try to stop them. However, it had a hint of reluctance in its eyes, it was an expression similar to when parents were sending their child to a far away land. It appeared very humane as it was brimming with sadness.

This made Xiao Chen very shocked, the Monarch Lion Dragon was voluntarily sending the little Dragon King off. Who said their brutality won over their divinity? They were clearly very clear-headed! Perhaps, after the ghost town's calamity, their muddle-headed brain had already sobered up.

Obviously, the dragons knew the only way to break free from the dragon island's seal was to let the little Dragon Kings depart smoothly. They had no other choice but to borrow the human's strength.

He had seen how the dragons prevented the practitioners from capturing the little Dragon Kings before, many practitioners were massacred mercilessly.

Maybe they were just angry and unwilling at that time, they didn't want their offsprings, especially the legendary Dragon Kings, to be ordered and enslaved by humans.

However, it seemed like they had come to a compromise now, they seemed to be aware that the little Dragon Kings would eventually leave this place and enter the immortal's mainland which was mostly ruled by humanity. Perhaps, having a human to rely on was more dependable. In order to let the little Dragon Kings live a peaceful life in the future, these dragons who served as father or mother came to a compromise.

Another Syndicate Dragon King was subdued, there were already ten Dragon Kings on this island following the practitioners. However, there was still no traces of the legendary Ancestral Dragon.

The roar of young dragons transmitted from a distant place, Xiao Chen brought Keke along and found them by relying on the sound. They only saw a golden little Dragon King fighting with a dark brown little dragon, this was not an evenly matched battle at all, the dark brown little dragon was already riddled with scars. It already received a few life threatening attacks.

Few older generation experts calmly watched the little Dragon King's battle, then a gray-haired old man among them said, "Let's be on our way, this kind of battle is meaningless, the little Dragon King need a more powerful opponent."

He waved his right hand, a wave of spiritual power cuts through the space, that dark brown little dragon was sent flying by the attack in a flash. After that, the few people brought the Gold Dragon King along and distanced themselves.

It was that dark brown little dragon again!

It was that competitive, unyielding, and proud little dragon that always issued challenge to the Dragon Kings all over the place.

Xiao Chen started to have doubts, although this little dragon looked ordinary from the outside, it really seemed to be a little special; How did it survive every time it received a fatal wound like this? Moreover, it kept challenging the Dragon Kings over and over again, it was not fearful of the pressure from the kings of dragons at all. Its characteristic was truly fitting for the king of dragons, but its inborn condition was really a little too inferior.

Just when Xiao Chen was about to make his move, he felt a baleful aura just at this time. That was a distinctive aura possessed by individuals that had slaughtered myriad of living creatures. The figure of a huge green Tyrannical Dragon flashed from the mountain woods at the opposite side. It was walking over to the heavily injured little dragon one step at a time.

Xiao Chen prevented Keke from rushing over there and continued to observe quietly in the dark. It was very obvious that the Tyrannical Dragon was concealing itself in the vicinity all along, and yet it didn't make a move, this proved once again that the dragons had already come to a compromise. It didn't prevent the older generation experts from taking the young Gold Dragon King away. Maybe it was like the Monarch Lion Dragon; They wanted to rely on the humans to allow the Dragon Kings to grow up safely on the immortal's mainland.

The Tyrannical Dragon was the most powerful among the dragon species, its entire body flickered with divine radiance. It arrived in front of the weak little dragon one step at a time. Xiao Chen didn't know what it was going to do, he held his breath and watched quietly.

"Roar.....!" A low dragon roar was transmitted, the Tyrannical Dragon hanged its head downwards, and then it actually extended its dragon tongue to lick the little dragon's scarred body.

The Tyrannical Dragon didn't possess any malice. On the contrary, it was a little doting, could the little dragon be his offspring? Xiao Chen's heart was filled with doubts.

One couldn't help but gasp in surprise, the powerful Tyrannical Dragon that could cause even the gods to shudder had saliva with healing properties. After getting licked by it, those wounds on the little dragon were all healed without exception. Moreover, there was a crystal clear radiance circulating next to the wound.

The unconscious dark brown little dragon let out a few growls involuntarily, it seemed to have felt its body condition recovering. The Tyrannical Dragon retreated one step at a time, then it left with large strides. The ground let out a "rumbling" sound with each steps it took as it left this region.

Xiao Chen was very confused with this situation, according to the little

dragon's shape, it was impossible for it to be the Tyrannical Dragon's offspring. Could it be that the dragons had a really peaceful relations, so much so that the grown-up dragons would even take care of other dragon's offspring?

When Xiao Chen walked in front of the stubborn little dragon, it was already awake. This time, it didn't reject Xiao Chen anymore, it just looked at him calmly. However, it was still a little proud and aloof.

Keke seemed to find this little dragon's situation very amusing, it temporarily shook off its disappointed mood that had prevailed for many days. It was a little funny as it tapped the little dragon's head, it looked like it was checking for the ripeness of the melon. This made the weak little dragon very dissatisfied, it glared at the snow-white little critter angrily. However, Keke was not aware of it at all, it still continued to feel about on its head.

"Don't try to find it anymore, it originally didn't have any horn to begin with."

"Squeak.....!" Keke replied to Xiao Chen, and pointed at a faintly discernible speck of light.

After a careful examination, Xiao Chen was gobsmacked. A dragon horn about the size of a grain already grew on its head, but it was seriously too small, and the surrounding also didn't have any bulge, it was very hard to imagine it was about to grow a horn.

"It is really about to grow a horn, this is really a little strange." Xiao Chen thought out loud.

This doesn't seem like a dragon with two horns. It only had one horn, because it was growing from the center of the little dragon's forehead.

Xiao Chen gave the stubborn little dragon a small piece of Snow Lotus Core. He originally didn't expect the little dragon to accept, but because he felt the Tyrannical Dragon was returning, he wanted to show that he didn't want to harm the little dragon. Out of his expectation, the little dragon didn't refuse it this time, it expended great deal of effort to move its body and swallowed the crystal clear Snow Lotus Core from the underbrush.

It was very obvious that this proud and aloof little dragon was not rejecting him anymore, Xiao Chen obtained Keke's consent to set aside a Snow Lotus Core

that was a little bigger for the little dragon. After that, he got up and be on his way again.

Only until he covered a huge distance did he turn around to take a look. He found that area was flickering with golden radiance, it was actually that Monarch Lion Dragon!

.....

Half a month had passed, there was still no traces of the little Ancestral Dragon. Why was it that the most powerful existence in legend still not making an appearance on the dragon island? The older generation experts were very dejected.

The actual number of older generation experts who entered the dragon island was close to one hundred. In the end, only about twenty plus people remaining. As for the youth generation that entered the dragon island, there were a thousand plus practitioners, but only eighty plus people remaining. It could be said to be a disastrous loss.

The youth generation that entered the dragon island could be considered unrivalled experts among their peers. Almost everyone had already stepped into the Exuvia realm. Although it appeared as if they were nothing special, since Exuvia level youth could be seen all over the dragon island, Exuvia seemed like nothing more than a few words. But one must know that these people were selected very carefully, otherwise how would there be so many Exuvia level youth gathered on this island.

Strictly speaking, the youth who entered the dragon island couldn't be considered the strongest among their peers on the immortal's mainland, but they were definitely the top ten among their own sect.

Every powerful forces definitely wouldn't dispatch their number one youth expert. That was their future hope, it was impossible for them to send promising young experts like those to such a dangerous place. Of course, there were still some exception, some of the weaker forces would dispatch their most powerful youth expert, but it was just a minority in the end.

After a few months of tribulation of the dragon island, these group of young experts had experienced an unforgettable fortification. In only a short few

months, almost everyone had made a breakthrough. That was their survival instinct kicking in, which forced them to train painstakingly.

If these survivors were to return to the immortal's mainland, they would definitely become the top five among the peers in their own sect. More importantly, after these experience, they would put even more effort into their training, they would definitely make great accomplishments in the future.

These painful experience and tribulation would definitely become their most valuable assets.

Just a few more days before they depart, the eleventh Dragon King was subdued by Spell Master Schroder. This young Dragon King was actually found at the beach, it was the offspring of the Eight-Clawed Tyrant Dragon. It had the head of the Ancestral Dragon and a draconic body with eight claws, silver light flickered all over its body. It was called the Tyrant Dragon King by everyone.

Originally Schroder wanted to call it the Silver Dragon King. After all, Tyrant Dragon King was not very elegant, but since everyone had already called it as such, he could only follow suit and called it the Tyrant Dragon King.

Xiao Chen was very surprised when he got this news, he had refined a Tyrant Dragon's egg before, he never thought the other dragon egg would actually turn into a young Dragon King.

There was still no traces of the Ancestral Dragon until now, Xiao Chen had a bit of a guilty conscience, could the little Ancestral Dragon be among one of the dragon eggs he refined? However, he negated this kind of thoughts in the end, the probability of that happening was way too low. 1

The burning sun was high up in the sky, the heatwaves mixed together with the salty smell of the sea breeze. The vast golden sandy shore connected with the ocean, it was entirely the color of gold.

After the dragon island was sealed, the originally green-colored ocean had changed into a golden ocean a few months later. The wind and waves were still present, the waves were still surging up violently as usual. However, it was deathly still, there were no fishes roaming in between, and no seabirds were gliding in the sky.

That verdant coconut grove provided a shade at the coastal area, plenty of completely ripe light brown coconut fruits were piled together. They seemed especially alluring under the green leaves.

Xiao Chen, Lawrence, Yizhen, Rowena, Yan Qing Cheng, and the others had gathered at the coconut grove. The majority of the practitioners on the island had also rushed over, because tomorrow is the day they will request the young Dragon Kings to summon the legendary divine ship.

“Xiao Chen, you really made it.” The little fatty Oxman chuckled foolishly and walked over with the Black Dragon King. He was a beastman descendant with three beast souls at the moment, even though he was only at Exuvia Fifth Celestial Layer, he couldn’t be underestimated.

Xiao Chen, Yizhen, and the others chatted with him happily. The little fatty and twenty plus of his clansmen had already drank the blood of nine Dragon Kings and completely lifted the curse. Their mood was especially great, they finally had the opportunity to escape from this island.

At last, everyone could finally relax, there was no need to struggle now, all the practitioners took a rest at the seaside coconut grove, and waiting for the day they depart from this island quietly.

Buddhist Yizhen leaned on the coconut tree’s trunk, he petted the Azure Dragon King beside him and said, “I must train harder when I get back, I must surpass the Solitary Sword Demon.”

Rowena smiled charmingly and said, “Great master must not be too hard on yourself, since wine and meat can enter your stomach anyway, let me introduce some good sisters to you when we get back.”

Lawrence nodded seriously when he heard what was said, “That’s not a bad idea, even though brother Yizhen looked as if nothing was wrong, he must be feeling really depressed deep down. We should really help him as much as possible.”

“Hehe, Lawrence, need me to introduce one to you too? We are from the same family oh. As the elder sister, I will pick one for you carefully.”

“Forget it, I cannot accept those sisters of yours.” Lawrence shook his head

repeatedly.

“Can you introduce one to me too?” The little fatty Oxman laughed foolishly, “I am not picky, just find me one that is about the same as you.”

Everyone laughed out loud at the same time.

“Why you!” Rowena punched him in the face and said, “Not picky? Just find someone about the same as I? Are you saying I am very ordinary? Very average? Then do you fancy these kind of beauty?” The extraordinarily beautiful Rowena pointed at Yan Qing Cheng at the side.

“You mean her? Forget about it. Grandma said this kind of woman is not fit to be a wife.” The little fatty said that with a straight face.

Everyone smiled ear to ear again.

And Rowena already laughed until her beautiful face turned into a mess, her sexy red lips opened slightly as she said, “If it’s her, she really is not fitting as a wife. At best, she can only be a lover, do you dare to take her?”

“How would I not dare.” The little fatty said uncaringly.

“You guys.....” Yan Qing Cheng glared at Rowena and the little fatty furiously.

“It’s out of the question even if you dare, hehe.....” Rowena casted a glance at the little fatty and said, “Have you never heard you can’t cheat on your brother’s wife?”

“Huh? You can cheat with your brother’s wife?” 2

.....

Since they were about to leave the dragon island, almost all of them already had a relaxed mind, the seaside was filled with many cheerful talk. 3

Chapter 115 – The Identity of the Mysterious Woman

All of a sudden, a beautiful blonde-haired man that was as blazing as the sun entered Xiao Chen's line of sight. He passed through the dense coconut grove and arrived at this region. It was actually Spell Master Lande.

Xiao Chen restrained his smile, he just sat there and looked at him before he opened his mouth, and said, "You really have the guts to actually appear in front of me, do you want to challenge me?"

Lawrence, Oxman, Yizhen, and Rowena were still joking together, they did not become tense due to Lande's arrival. That was because they were confident in their strength, with these few people sitting together, even Solitary Sword Demon wouldn't come to openly provoke them.

"Alright, I will apologize for my frivolous behavior before, but I actually don't need to apologize, because you already gave me the deepest and most painful lesson. You must know that you were very ruthless during that battle, you broke at least thirty bones of mine." The blonde-haired beautiful man, Lande, did not seem very embarrassed when he said these. He sat opposite of Xiao Chen unhurriedly, his pair of sapphire eyes appeared very sincere as he said, "A few days ago, I still wanted to find you to take revenge, but now I finally thought it through. The hatred between us was really not worth it. We are about to leave the dragon island soon, there is nothing more exciting and joyous than leaving here alive. Let us forget about all the unpleasant things between us after we leave the dragon island. It was only because I was too arrogant and conceited, I have already suffered enough as a result, I don't want to keep making more mistake. I came here today to dissolve our past resentment." 1

Xiao Chen said, "If it was not because I had no other choice, who would want to face you in a life and death battle? If you are sincere, then I will accept your proposal and dissolve our grudges."

Lawrence's somewhat sickly face revealed a smile and said, "Lande, I have heard of you before, but I never regarded you as anyone important until now. I can easily take your life within twenty moves. However, seeing your action today, I couldn't help but see you in a new light. It is easy to take but hard to let go, it proved that you have made a mental breakthrough to some extent."

“That means I have the opportunity to befriend such a beautiful man, and not as an enemy anymore?” Rowena smiled charmingly.

Lande nodded his head with a smile, “I was desperate before, thinking that we will be trapped on the dragon island forever. But to my surprise, I unexpectedly found that we can leave this island, it really had a big impact on my mental state, I can finally look at things from different perspective, and be more open-minded.” 2

“Lawrence, you might need to get your eyes checked, Lande did not only make a mental breakthrough, his ability might advance by leaps and bounds over the next few years, he’s a demigod that is gradually awakening, a descendant of god.”

“Seems like my little secret had been exposed by you.” It was impossible for Lande to deny.

“A natural born demigod? Lande, I adore you so much!” Rowena discharged electricity 3 from her eyes, trying to hook his soul.

“Really? Let’s forget about our rivalry, I will definitely go and swap pointers with you frequently.” Buddhist Yizhen also opened his mouth in shock.

“Huh? Let me take a good long look at the face of a demigod.” The little fatty walked in front and sized up Lande very seriously. It made everyone unable to restrain a smile, it must be mentioned that Oxman was very good at setting the atmosphere.

In this course of events, the beautiful Yan Qing Cheng remained silent. 4 She didn’t say a single word nor did she cast a glance at Lande.

“Brother Xiao, I have a presumptuous request. Can you set my junior sister, Yan Qing Cheng, free? We are about to leave the dragon island soon, let us forget about all the unhappy things in the past.” Lande looked at Xiao Chen earnestly.

“I also did not plan to make an enemy out of her before, but since it has already become like this, it is impossible for me to release her now.” Xiao Chen refused by saying, “Do you believe our enmity can be resolved now? Do you think she will let it go like this?”

In fact, Xiao Chen was a little troubled regarding how to deal with Yan Qing Cheng. A lot of people on dragon island knew Xiao Chen had taken Yan Qing Cheng as captive, it was fine since everyone was trapped on the dragon island. However, everyone was about to enter the immortal's mainland, the Undying Alliance could even be said to be a powerful force. In the event that the news of Yan Qing Cheng being held captive were to spread out once they enter the immortal's mainland, it might bring a lot of trouble to him. How about killing her now? That would only be inviting more trouble than necessary. This was the reason why he didn't act blindly without thinking until now.

These few days, Rowena, Lawrence, and the rest had come up with a plan for Xiao Chen; That was to leave them with no option but to accept it, he will tie a knot with Yan Qing Cheng and become a married couple for real. This way, they could avoid any dangers in the future. According to what they said; Xiao Chen, you will become the son-in-law of the Undying Faction, and not treating Yan Qing Cheng as a slave. How will the Undying Faction find any reason to come and cause trouble for you? Of course, the prerequisite was for Yan Qing Cheng to act lovey-dovey on the outside.

However, to make Yan Qing Cheng cooperate? That was impossible!

Of course, there was another fatal part; Xiao Chen had killed Wang Zi Feng and Liew Yue, the two experts from the Undying Alliance. Although the word did not spread out, there was a key person who knew the inside story. That was precisely Zhao Lin Er. At that time, it was her who passed the news to Yan Qing Cheng. If they don't seal her mouth, things will definitely turn for the worst.

Just when Xiao Chen thought of Zhao Lin Er, she really appeared. She actually entered the coconut grove, and that snow-white unicorn was following far behind her. It was unwilling to approach the crowd, it looked over a little timidly.

Xiao Chen almost couldn't believe his eyes, the peerless Imperial Angel actually appeared in front of him, it was way too unusual. The grudges between them could only be settled with life and death. At that time, they were really at each other's neck.

Xiao Chen jumped up immediately, if it was not for Zhao Lin Er, he definitely wouldn't end up in this world. He couldn't remain calm and said coldly, "You

actually dare to show up here?!”

The devastatingly beautiful Imperial Angel had a really cold expression as she said, “I came here to dissolve our grudges.” 5

Not only was Xiao Chen dumbstruck, even the few people beside him were at a loss for words. What was happening today? Why did everyone come to dissolve the grudges? Lande was still pardonable, since it was originally caused by his arrogance. But Zhao Lin Er and Xiao Chen were always at each other’s neck, how could this kind of enmity be dissolved? And it seemed like the person herself was unwilling to let it go.

Even Lande felt a bit inconceivable, even though he was the first to come, their temper was completely different.

“You want to resolve our grudges?” Xiao Chen wanted to laugh, but he didn’t.

“Please come with me to meet someone.” After saying these, Zhao Lin Er no longer paid attention to Xiao Chen and walked over to the beach.

A graceful figure was standing over there calmly, the figure seemed proud and aloof, and yet it was out-of-this-world. There was a purple young dragon beside her, she was looking at the golden ocean. It was that woman who could control the law of time, but the colorful mist was not lingering on her body at the moment. Only because she was facing the coconut grove with her back, everyone was still unable to see her face.

It was not a trap, everyone did not follow him. Xiao Chen took large strides towards the beach.

Just at this time Keke rubbed its hazy big eyes, it finally woke up. When it looked at the young unicorn that was as bright as jade in front, its glittering big eyes immediately lit up. It flew over there with a swish, and landed on the back of the young unicorn.

The young unicorn was startled like a little rabbit, it wanted to run away, but it realized it wouldn’t be able to throw off Keke who was already on its back. It felt anguished as it turned its head, but when it saw Keke’s appearance, its fear dissipated. It looked at the naughty little critter curiously. The two cute little thing looked at each other face to face, they had a very amusing expression.

Xiao Chen followed Zhao Lin Er one step at a time and arrived in front of the golden ocean. He finally saw the face of the mysterious woman clearly. He became dumbfounded in that very instant, how could this be possible, how could it be her?!

She had a beauty that was hard to describe with words, it was impossible to describe how good-looking was her appearance, she was a stunning beauty that couldn't be described with mere words. She was a goblet of Spiritual Energy, her entire person looked like a mist and far away, she was obviously in front of him, yet it felt like she was high in the clouds. This was a genuine transcendental aura.

In reality, the appearance of Zhao Lin Er and Yan Qing Cheng could already be considered the most stunning under the heaven. It was impossible for the person in front of him to be more beautiful, but her distinctive traits made her surpass the former two by leaps and bounds. This was a charm the ordinary people could never hope to achieve, it seemed like she was already not a living person with blood and flesh, but rather the most outstanding masterpiece in Heaven.

She was actually the extremely gifted Goddess Lan Nuo!! It was precisely because she caused a distortion in space that Xiao Chen and Zhao Lin Er wound up in this world.

"Are you surprised?" Lan Nuo smiled faintly, like a beautiful rainbow that was let off from the ice and snow, she was very dazzling.

"Really..... Surprised." Xiao Chen replied as such.

"When I distorted the space on that day, I saw the both of you rushing in when I took a step forward. I originally wanted to stop the both of you, but I realized it was already impossible to turn back, I could only bring the two of you with me. Unexpectedly, you guys became enemy. We all came from the human world, I don't want to see you guys facing each other in a life and death battle. I want to let the both of you make up."

Xiao Chen highly respected this extremely gifted goddess. This was the only expert that could cause a spatial distortion with martial arts in the human world after many long years of silence. Moreover, it was this kind of peerless and lovely young lady, he admired and respected her deeply. Xiao Chen started by saying, "I

originally was unwilling to make an enemy out of her, the result today could be said to be caused by her. I am not trying to push the blame, this is the fact.”

“Hmph! If it was not because you killed my maid that was as close to me as my blood sister, why would I even care?!” Zhao Lin Er’s beautiful face was brimming with anger.

“If it was not because your subordinates were relying on force to bully others, if they didn’t besiege me, why would I even make a move? It was a righteous self-defense, how could I care about my enemy’s situation?” Xiao Chen opposed with equal harshness.

“Alright, the both of you don’t bring up the things from the past anymore.” The proud goddess Lan Nuo smiled faintly and said, “I just wanted to ask the both of you, I intent to help the both of you reconcile, are you willing to make up?”

After a period of silence, the both of them nodded. They revered Lan Nuo very much.

“Good, since the both of you are willing, then please forget about all the unhappy events in the past, the both of you are prohibited to fight from now on, will you promise me this?” 6

Lan Nuo sincerely tried to help them. The two vowed not to fight anymore in the end. This outcome made the both of them very regretful, it was not something they could have imagined in the past. However, not fighting anymore doesn’t mean they will become close friends, it is impossible for them to get intimate with each other.

In regards to Lan Nuo’s ability, Xiao Chen was full of doubts. One must know that she was a goddess that was able to cause spatial distortion. And someone with her ability was only able to suppress the Solitary Sword Demon.

However, he quickly understood after listening to Lan Nuo’s brief story.

When Lan Nuo distorted the space, she had already reached the legendary Nirvana realm.

One who reached this realm would become neither dead or alive, their body and mind would be trapped in the brink of death. They would linger around the

boundary of life and death to comprehend the profound meaning between life and death. If one thoroughly comprehended the secrets of life and death, they would become an immortal with one more step. However, if they failed, they might be consigned to eternal damnation, their body and soul would be entirely wiped out.

At the same time, the practitioners who are on this level, their ability are neither strong or weak. Their power are very unstable, when they are strong, they can unleash powers equivalent to Immortalis. When they are weak, their divine ability was even weaker than practitioners of Historia realm.

The realm of Nirvana was regarded by the practitioners as the greatest opportunity, but also the most ruthless one. Those who solved the riddles of life and death would break out of their cocoons and transform into butterflies. They would attain immortality and live on forever. Those who couldn't comprehend the secrets would be annihilated at this point, it was a cruel reality.

After Lan Nuo who was situated at the Nirvana realm caused a spatial distortion and entered the dragon island, she found that her power was still very unstable. She didn't know the secrets of the dragon island; This place sealed every god-level power, when the boundless sealing power rushed towards her, she originally tried to resist, which almost caused this proud goddess to die on this barren island.

Lan Nuo suffered an enormous loss on this dragon island, the ability that she cultivated all her life was narrowly overthrown. However, she was innately gifted after all, while she was caught between life and death, she quickly discovered the nature of the problem and voluntarily sealed her power by herself. Only then did the boundless sealing power have less influence on her.

But even so, that sealing power still suppressed her power to Nirvana's lowest fluctuation range. One must know that Nirvana level practitioners could become as strong as the immortals, but they could also get as weak as Historia level expert. The lowest fluctuation range of Nirvana was close to the Historia realm. And the heavy damage she suffered for now was also hard to recover from.

Chapter 116 – Summoning Divine Ship

So it was like this, Xiao Chen was very worried for Lan Nuo.

“Don’t need to worry about me, once we leave this place, I believe I will smoothly enter the realm of immortal not long later.” Lan Nuo smiled confidently, it was like the spring wind brushing the willow tree, it gave people a warm feeling.

The grudges between Zhao Lin Er was actually dissolved like this, it was not something Xiao Chen could have expected. But they were rather unwilling in the bottom of their heart, they only didn’t want to waste Lan Nuo’s good intention.

Xiao Chen headed back to the coconut grove, but his mind was still filled with Lan Nuo’s figure. He admired this kind of proud goddess very much, if only he could take this kind of girl as his wife..... Sweet-tempered, kindhearted, and intelligent, anyone would fall for her. But he quickly shook this thought off, how could he think about something like this? However, he quickly changed his line of thought, how could he not have this kind of thought, perhaps everyone would have yearned for this kind of wonderful woman.

Xiao Chen couldn’t help but recall all kinds of legend regarding Lan Nuo. She was the legendary figure of Yanhuang Dynasty, her name had already circulated to every corners of the world for many years. She was exceptionally charming, a natural-born genius, At the age of twenty, she traveled around the world with a sword, none were able to fight her on equal term.

But it was also during that year, Lan Nuo practiced the legendary Divine Dominion and caused her power to become half crippled. Her body gradually became weaker. Soon after, Lan Nuo was resolved to freeze herself in a bottomless ice valley.

A miracle happened to Lan Nuo, thirteen years later, she came out of the ice cave full of life, her complexion was as devastatingly beautiful as in the past. Her peerless beauty didn’t undergo any changes of time, the thirteen years of time passed just like a snap of a finger to her.

She was frozen for thirteen years, the time goes by, yet her rosy cheeks remained youthful!

Returning to the coconut grove, he turned back to watch unconsciously, Xiao Chen saw Lan Nuo, Zhao Lin Er, and Psychic Lanyu walking together. At the same time, he also saw a green-haired youth not far from them. Xiao Chen was surprised, wasn't that the old treant from the treant's valley that evolved into blood and flesh human? Could it be that he planned to leave the dragon island too? That was definitely an expert close to the level of demigod!

The sunset dyed the horizon red, the boundless gold ocean moved up and down. There were many practitioners in the vicinity of the beach, almost everyone had rushed over. 1

Keke was sitting at the back of the little unicorn which galloped left and right on the golden beach. It was fearless in the face of those young Syndicate Dragon King, with the support of Keke's miraculous confinement technique, the little unicorn had a huge boost of confidence. It kept galloping and jumping in the vicinity of the Tyrant Dragon King and Winged Dragon King. Keke even left a few footprints on the body of a few Dragon Kings.

Zhao Lin Er was very annoyed, seeing her beloved little unicorn being rode by that person's spoiled little critter, it made her a little unhappy. But looking at that adorable little thing, she was unable to really flare up.

"Roar.....!" The sky piercing dragon roar caused the gold ocean to become restless, a golden little dragon ran over to the seaside. There were another three young Dragon Kings behind it. Everyone at the seaside knew the older generation experts had arrived, these were the Syndicate Dragon King they had subdued.

Along with the Gold Dragon King's roar, the other Dragon Kings also became restless, all of them ran towards the beach. Those Dragon Kings gathered in one place, an astonishing battle intent broke out immediately, they actually wanted to fight.

This was not a good event, the master of each Dragon King rushed over to separate them by force. Otherwise there would inevitably be a tragedy. In the end, those eleven Dragon Kings seemed to have come to a compromise, they didn't attack each other and walked all over the place at the sandy shore.

This was a rarely seen scenario, after all, there were more than ten Syndicate Dragon Kings! To be able to see just one of these legendary dragon was already

not bad, but now so many had gathered in one place. Maybe it didn't seem like a big deal now, but after ten years or hundred years later, the later generations would definitely gasp in surprise. That was because, these little Dragon King would have grown into a powerful existence that even deities were scared of. And these powerful Dragon Kings once gathered on a certain beach.

Everyone at this place might not have these kind of thoughts now, but their offsprings would certainly use this as the topic of a conversation; Their ancestor had once witnessed this scenario. Of course, they would certainly also talk about a certain little critter.....

Keke played happily on the beach, Xiao Chen just let it be, it was very hard to break the snow-white little critter away from its disappointed mood, he didn't want to break its happy mood. However, after the four little Dragon Kings of the older generation experts arrived, Keke began to cause some trouble again.

It actually transformed into a streak of light and stepped on the body of the four Dragon Kings one by one. It seemed like it wanted to make it clear to the people, that it had left its footprint on the body of the eleven Dragon Kings once, as if it wanted to leave a "legend of the little critter" for the later generations.

The four newcomers burst into rage, and the other seven Dragon Kings at a distant place were taking delight in their misfortune. They had experienced this before, they had been provoked by that hateful little critter once. Even that Winged Dragon King that could fly was not an exception.

The night descended, many stars decorated the blue dome of heaven, the night breeze was so gentle, but nobody was able to fall asleep, because they will finally leave the dragon island tomorrow.

Xiao Chen laid in the coconut grove on his back, then he said to himself, "Let's hope everything go smoothly." 2

The little fatty Oxman said, "Just relax, those group of old fellows are already here, it is unlikely for them to stall for time again. As a matter of fact, they are a little scared now, because in the vicinity of the snow mountain the demon lived in seclusion, the cloudy fog had become denser these past few days, they are also scared that some unforeseen event will occur."

"The demon! Sigh..." Xiao Chen let out a breath, he always felt a little sorry for

Keke.

This was a suffocating night, and also a night filled with expectation.

Early morning, when the first ray of light spilled on the beach, almost everyone opened their eyes. Everyone started to gather on the golden beach and moved away from the coconut grove. Many people were using net made out of vines to carry a huge bag of coconut fruits to keep as drinking water while on the sea.

There were a hundred plus people altogether, and in front of everyone was eleven young Dragon Kings, each of them was mystical and out of ordinary.

Amethyst Dragon King, Black Dragon King, Azure Dragon King, Jade Dragon King, Red Dragon King, Winged Dragon King, Tyrant Dragon King and so on stood in a straight line. They faced upwards and let out a long roar. The ear-splitting roar took shape as a bizarre power and reverberated in the sky fiercely. The roar was transmitted to the distant ocean.

Every practitioners had no choice but to temporarily seal off their sense of hearing. Otherwise none of them would be able to bear the terrifying sound waves emitted by eleven Dragon Kings simultaneously, despite them being so young.

It sounded like nine heavenly thunder were rumbling over the gold ocean, and nine volcanoes were piercing through the surface of the earth. The oppressive Dragon King's roar transmitted far and wide, it made this gold ocean rage violently.

The bizarre energy fluctuation wavered in between the heaven and earth, it made everyone believed that the legend of nine Dragon Kings summoning the divine ship was real. Otherwise it wouldn't be this miraculous.

The heaven and earth seemed to possess an incomparably vast and ancient aura, it seemed like an unknown mysterious power was transmitting some kind of message to a distant location.

"Roar.....!" The Dragon King's roar lasted for a long time. The entire dragon island was trembling slightly. The Dragon King's roar seemed to pierce through the space-time and transmitted their willpower along.

Among the ear-splitting Dragon King's roar, a sound that couldn't be regarded

as harmonious suddenly emerged.

“Squeak! Squeak.....!” Nobody knew when it happened, but the snow-white little critter had already ran in front of the line and became the leading cast of the eleven Dragon Kings unknowingly. It was actually trying to imitate them and devoted all of its being to face upwards and let out a long squeak. But its voice was really too soft and immature, it sounded like an infant that was learning how to talk.

However, what made everyone most shocked was that, the snow-white little critter’s voice clearly resounded in between the heaven and earth, it did not get pressed down by the eleven Dragon Kings’ voice at all. The “squeaking” sound could be heard clearly, it was like a naive child singing the folk song sincerely.

Everyone wanted to stop it, but just at this time, from the vast golden ocean, a loud dragon roar resounded. It was like a great heavenly tone that transmitted from ancient times, it made one’s soul tremble.

A huge imperial boat that was blossoming with seven-colored radiance braved the wind and billows, it appeared on the surface of the gold ocean from thin air, as if it really pierced through the space-time and came from the ancient era.

Many people were moved to tears, that huge divine ship was similar to an imposing small mountain, it seemed like a real Ancestral Dragon. It was currently crossing the Taboo Ocean and approaching this place.

It was indeed a huge divine ship that shaped like the Ancestral Dragon, the ship glinted with seven-colored radiance and illuminated the entire Taboo Ocean. Thousand miles of sea area fluctuated violently due to its appearance, but the divine ship was still sailing smoothly, it didn’t sway in the slightest.

The legend was true, with nine kings gathered together, they could summon the divine ship built from the Ancestral Dragon’s bone and Heavenly Tree. It could bring everyone through the terrifying Taboo Ocean and depart from the dragon island.

Eleven young Syndicate Dragon Kings already stopped their roars, and Keke ran to Xiao Chen’s side. But just at this time, even more world-shaking dragon roars transmitted from their back. There were countless huge dragons in the coconut grove, the green Tyrannical Dragon, the gold Monarch Lion Dragon, the bluish-

green Saber Dragon, the purple Thunder Dragon..... numerous wild dragons gathered at this place. The baleful aura soared into the sky, huge dragon shadows occupied the entire seaside coconut grove. 3

Everyone became pale, what did these dragons want, why did they gather at this place, could it be that they wanted to kill everyone?

However, what made everyone felt a bit relieved was that all the seemingly terrifying dragons did not approach, they only let out a roar in that coconut grove and observed the situation. The eleven young Dragon Kings also let out a roar immediately afterwards and ran towards the coconut grove at high speed. They seemed a bit reluctant to part.

At this moment, everyone finally understood, those huge dragons seemed to have come to see the young Dragon Kings off. The eleven young Dragon Kings rushed into the pack of dragons, and let out a sad growl, they seemed reluctant to part from the dragons. The adult dragon's roars were also filled with sadness and reluctance.

It's getting closer, much closer, the legendary Ancestral Dragon Divine Ship finally reached the shore. A seven-colored divine light transformed into a rainbow bridge, it extended from the divine ship to the shore. 4

Chapter 117 – Unforeseen Event

Oxman's grandma shouted loudly, "Everyone follow the rainbow bridge to get on the boat, you must not attempt to fly onto the boat, because regardless of the sea or the sky, they are brimming with the sealing divine power. Without the protection of the divine ship's seven-colored radiance, your body and bones will definitely be crushed."

Nobody dared to play with their life, everyone stepped onto the divine ship by following the regulation. And just at this time, the eleven young Dragon Kings and the dragons finally finished bidding their farewell. All of them rushed onto the divine ship while uttering sad calls. After the young Dragon Kings ascended onto the divine ship, the seven-colored radiance of the divine ship glinted, it immediately started to tremble. The ship was actually going to set sail soon.

"Stop wasting time, everyone hurry it up." The people on the divine ship shouted loudly.

Xiao Chen said to Lawrence, Yizhen, and the others, "Let's go, we should also get on the boat."

Just at this time, Xiao Chen suddenly had a bad premonition, he felt as if a huge bottomless cave was going to swallow him up, he tried to dodge hastily. But it was already too late, he didn't even see the enemy clearly, because there was already no one behind them, and yet a huge scroll had already unfolded, it enveloped him, Yan Qing Cheng, and the three skeletons. A huge cracks split open in the sky and engulfed them.

"God damn it!" Xiao Chen couldn't resist from cursing, he fell for someone's scheme, and yet he didn't know who the enemy was. There was nobody behind him, and in front was a chaotic group of people boarding the ship.

An indescribably huge power pulled Xiao Chen and Yan Qing Cheng, who knows just where was it taking them to. That huge crack was about to close, Xiao Chen spared no effort to run back, but he found that it was hard to succeed.

Keke was also beside him, the snow-white little critter let out a few angry growls, it waved its two paws violently and sent out a few light screen, it seemed to have rolled up a few human figures within with a few "swishing" sound.

After the light flashed, they had completely sunk into the darkness. In this deathly still space, the time seemed to be at a standstill, Xiao Chen knew this seemed to be passing through the space.

On the beach, Lawrence and the others let out a cry of surprise, and then they got furious.

“If my guess is not wrong, someone schemed against them with a Space-Time Scroll, this is really too detestable! Sending them somewhere else at this crucial moment, it clearly shows that the schemer wants to trap them on the dragon island forever.”

Time wouldn't wait for people, even if Lawrence and Yizhen was incomparably furious, they still couldn't find any traces of Xiao Chen even after they searched the entire beach. And just at this time, the divine ship was going to set sail soon, they had no choice but to board the ship.

After experiencing another fantastic space-time travel, Xiao Chen felt the space in front of him suddenly brightened up. They passed through this deathly still space and reappeared in the real world.

Before their eyes were the endless primal forest, what entered their ears were the bellow of beasts.

Xiao Chen found that aside from himself, Yan Qing Cheng, and the three skeletons, there were still three white-haired old man, and Keke was pointing at them with its little paw angrily.

“Keke, was it them that plotted against us?” Xiao Chen asked. Keke nodded its head strongly. Xiao Chen almost went berserk, he didn't even know the few people, and yet they wanted to set him up. He was beyond angry.

The three old man were also incomparably furious, one of them shouted loudly, “How did this happen? How did we also get here, it was a ten miles transportation, this place is at least ten miles from the beach, there's not enough time for us to board the ship!”

“Martial uncle, why do you want to kill me?” This Yan Qing Cheng also shouted angrily.

The old man who was called as martial uncle by Yan Qing Cheng shouted

angrily, “If the news regarding you and that youngster were to spread out, how are we to keep our face? Trapping the both of you on this dragon island is already being lenient. However, I never thought..... something so simple, we would also get caught up in it.”

They originally thought it was a simple mission, they thought they could easily get rid of the Undying faction’s disgrace, but the elderly man absolutely never thought it would turn out like this. He furiously shouted at the other two men, “The both of you are Spell Master, don’t tell me you don’t even know how to use the scroll? What kind of lousy scroll was that?!”

“Let’s stop wasting time, we might be able to catch up if we hurry it up.” Those two already flew into the sky, they wanted to head towards the direction of the beach.

Yan Qing Cheng’s martial uncle also rushed onward like a monster, he didn’t even care about killing Xiao Chen and Yan Qing Cheng anymore.

“Squeak.....!” Keke angrily waved its little paw, a dazzling light screen instantly rushed forth and enveloped them, then it pulled them back.

“Keke, just leave them alone, we should make haste.” After Xiao Chen shouted these, he quickly rushed towards the beach. Yan Qing Cheng and the three skeletons also followed closely, the three old man shouted furiously and looking at them leave. They never thought it was that little critter that made them suffered the consequences they brought upon themselves. Only until Keke and their figures completely disappeared did the three old man regain their freedom. They also rushed towards the beach immediately afterwards.

Xiao Chen still missed the divine ship in the end, the distance of ten miles was nothing to experts on his level, even if the path was blocked by forest trees, he still got back to the beach rather quickly. After bypassing those dragons, he was just in time to see the divine ship slowly setting sail and departed from the coast.

It only departed for seven to eight meter, but that seven-colored rainbow bridge on the shore was already gone, he missed the ship just like this. That was because it was impossible for him to pass through that terrifying restricted domain.

Keke seemed to have felt Xiao Chen’s despair, the snow-white little critter

spared no effort to exhibit the most powerful confinement technique. It wanted to confine itself and cross this domain together with Xiao Chen. However, it was stopped by Xiao Chen, he knew the little critter's capability, it currently don't have that kind of power.

"Xiao Chen!"

"Xiao Chen!"

.....

From the divine ship that was enveloped by seven-colored radiance came the voice of Lawrence and Yizhen. Goddess Lan Nuo, Rowena, the little fatty Oxman, and the others also had a regretful expression.

"How did it become like this, who were the bastards that did this?" Lawrence shouted furiously.

"Brother Xiao, I will never forget you." The little fatty Oxman also shouted.

"Xiao Chen....." In this kind of situation, Buddhist Yizhen also had no idea what to do.

When the eleven Dragon Kings boarded the ship, the Ancestral Divine Ship sailed automatically, it was impossible to turn back.

"You must live on, if I have the what it takes in the future, I will definitely come and save you." Lan Nuo waved her hand lightly.

This kind of promise, in other people's ears, it might sound like an empty promise, but Xiao Chen knew Lan Nuo had that qualifications. He shouted loudly towards the divine ship, "Goodbye, see you again later, I will never forget all of you!"

There were also some who called out Yan Qing Cheng's name, but what else could they do, she only waved her hand silently.

A lot of people were standing at the back-end of the ship and waving their hand towards the coast, among them were many acquaintances and some people they didn't know, including Lawrence, Yizhen, Rowena, Lan Nuo, Oxman, Lande, even Zhao Lin Er and the genius Illusion Master Carlos.

Just at this time, Yan Qing Cheng's martial uncle and the two Spell Masters

also rushed to the beach, they faced upward and shouted furiously, “How did it become like this? Just how did this happen?!”

“Martial uncle Wang Hao, this is the consequences you brought upon yourself!” It was impossible for Yan Qing Cheng not to be angry, the only opportunity to leave the dragon island was actually wasted like this.

Wang Hao only wanted to dispose the two of them without trouble, he never thought it would end up like this, he was very regretful. If he had known earlier, he wouldn’t have acted rashly. The two aged Spell Masters beside him were even stamping their feet. In the end, they looked at Xiao Chen and Yan Qing Cheng with an ominous glint.

The huge ship was gradually sailing away, but everyone was still able to see everything at this place. The voice of Lawrence and the others transmitted over, they were worried about Xiao Chen and reprimanding the three old man.

The Solitary Sword Demon’s voice that was transmitted over was brimming with regret, “Xiao Chen! It is such a pity! I thought in a few more years, you could become a worthy rival, it is such a pity!”

Xiao Chen said to Keke, “Confine them.”

The snow-white little critter was already panting with rage a long time ago, it didn’t hold back and confined the three with seven-colored light screen, it didn’t even give them a chance to move. Although the three were experts on the level of Historia, they were still unable to break free from Keke’s confinement technique.

“Keke, can you let my power enter the light screen and kill them?” Xiao Chen asked hopefully, if he couldn’t kill the three of them with his own hands, he wouldn’t be able to quell his anger.

The snow-white little critter nodded its head to indicate that it was possible.

Xiao Chen shouted towards the divine ship that gradually distanced itself, “Solitary Sword Demon! There is no need for you to lament, I will let you see my secret technique now.” He held the jet-black broken sword in his hand, and then he slashed it diagonally upwards. Even though there was only a single slash, it seemed as if there were hundreds and thousands of sword-qi soaring into the

sky. And Keke let all of it enter the light screen.

“Ahhh.....!” Miserable shrieks resounded, the flesh of Wang Hao and the two Spell Master’s right arm were scraped from the bones cleanly, only the bones remained.

The Solitary Sword Demon could see it clearly, that attack was not simply using the sword-qi to burn the flesh, it was a complicated move, the flesh was cut apart by using hundreds and thousands of dazzling knife. He was emotionally moved and shouted loudly, “Nice move! What is that sword technique called?”

“God Slayer!” Xiao Chen shouted loudly.

The divine ship gradually distanced itself, he was unable to hear the voice nor see the figure of the people on the ship clearly anymore. The seven-colored divine ship gradually faded away at the gold ocean.

Wang Hao and the other two were thrown into the Taboo Ocean in the end, even Keke’s light screen was unable to resist that kind of destructive force. The three of them were crushed in an instant.

For things to actually end up like this, it was a really shocking conclusion, Xiao Chen looked at Yan Qing Cheng, the two of them remained silent.

“The most terrifying thing on a desolate island is not having an enemy, but to be left all alone. Yan Qing Cheng, do you still want to kill me now?” Xiao Chen looked at this Undying disciple.

“It was precisely because only the two of us left, I felt all the more scared.” Yan Qing Cheng spoke bluntly.

Xiao Chen was speechless, their line of thoughts were really too different. He laughed mischievously and said, “It seems like I was being too lenient before, if I treated you as a slave at an earlier time, perhaps you might not find me that scary now. Alright, alright, I am only a man, and you are only a woman, let us have a talk between man and woman.”

“You..... don’t mess with me! Or I’ll commit suicide immediately.” Yan Qing Cheng’s voice was a little shaky.

Xiao Chen smiled slightly and said, “If you want to commit suicide, go ahead

and do it. I won't stop you."

"You....." Yan Qing Cheng's frail and elegant body backed away unceasingly.

Being forced to stay on the dragon island, Xiao Chen was indeed very depressed in the beginning, but now he already adjusted his mood, because he knew there was still the "Sovereign King Ship" that could take him away from this place. As a result, he still had the mood to tease Yan Qing Cheng and said, "Woman, just what are you thinking? Am I that scary?"

The three skeletons looked at each other in dismay, they followed Xiao Chen closely.

Knowing that Xiao Chen was teasing her, Yan Qing Cheng angrily turned her head to one side. And on the other side, Xiao Chen carried Keke and walked forward, then he said, "Little monster, it seems like we will be staying on the dragon island for a while, at least until you get your little sacred tree back."

When Keke heard the "little sacred tree", it immediately became spirited and ignored the "little monster". It cheerfully ran all over the place and then followed Xiao Chen towards the snowy mountain.

Yan Qing Cheng followed closely behind.

"Hey, woman, why are you following me? Aren't you afraid that something will happen? You better keep far away from me, the sooner the better. Otherwise, you will be in great danger."

"You sealed more than half of my power, if I don't follow you, then what? Waiting for the monster to eat me?" Yan Qing Cheng replied unhappily.

"You want to kill me, and I am not such a cruel person, I am unwilling to kill you, so I can only seal your power. How about this, why don't you just commit suicide? We don't need to make things difficult for both of us."

Yan Qing Cheng was speechless, she felt that the man before her eyes was too hateful. This was a clear indication that he was using her to modulate his emotions and stave off depression.

Presently, it was impossible for Xiao Chen to kill Yan Qing Cheng, the demon said he needed at least one year to shake off the breath of death. In other

words, he had to stay on this dragon island for one year if they wanted to get Keke's sacred tree back. If it was only him, he would be bored to death, leaving Yan Qing Cheng alive, even as an enemy, he wouldn't feel so lonely at the very least.

"Xiao Chen, I warn you, don't you dare try to do anything to me."

Xiao Chen sneered at her and said, "You are warning me? Oh please, rather than warning, it's more like enticing me. Just relax, after a long period of misery and oppression on the isolated island, we will have something to talk about, you will not be disappointed."

This kind of reply was misleading, it made Yan Qing Cheng worried and fearful, but she felt even more humiliated and angry.

Chapter 118 – Shocking

Three days later, they arrived at the depths of the island again.

The cloudy fog pervaded the boundless snowy mountain, one could very well imagine just how deep was the demon's power, but Keke was hardly fearful, it panted with rage and let out a loud squeak in front of the snowy mountain with ice castle within. At the same time, it used the confinement technique to move the snowy mountain's door.

The chilly wind swept past violently, waves of underworld fog rushed forth, it was especially frightening at the frigid snowy mountain. Yan Qing Cheng had an ugly look, she never thought Xiao Chen would actually come to provoke the demon of his own accord, he was really a lunatic!

Until the underworld fog was totally dispersed, the demon walked out. His pale face actually looked a little more lively compared to before. He asked in astonishment, "I heard the roar of the Dragon Kings, why are you guys still here?"

"We missed the divine ship, we wanted to learn more about the Sovereign King Ship from you." Xiao Chen explained their purpose for coming. And on the other side, Keke was panting with rage, it seemed like it really wanted to pounce on the demon.

"So it was like that." He didn't answered Xiao Chen, but rather showed a smile to Keke and explained to it first, "Everything is very smooth, if I am fast, it will only take up to two months, it won't take more than a year. I will return the sacred tree to you soon, it is much faster than my expectation. I will keep my promise, and definitely return the favor in the future."

Keke nodded its head while panting with rage.

After he finished greeting Keke, the demon turned his body to face Xiao Chen and said, "I can find methods to summon the Sovereign King Ship, but I'm afraid you might not be able to bear the ghost invasion on the holy ship." 1

"Is it that serious?" Relying on his instinct, Xiao Chen knew in order to ride the Sovereign King Ship, they have to face great dangers, it is not as safe as boarding the Ancestral Dragon Divine Ship.

“That’s right, because it was originally not made for humans. The Sovereign King Ship is also called the Devil Ship, a portion of the Sovereign King’s soul was sealed on the ship. Any living person riding it will end up throwing their life if they don’t have a corresponding divine artifact.”

Yan Qing Cheng already started to understand what was going on, she felt excited and fearful at the same time, it seemed like the Sovereign King Ship might be a very bizarre and terrifying ship.

“Is it impossible even with Keke’s sacred tree?”

“Most likely not. Moreover, they might even clash, it is better for you to find a Yin-type divine artifact rather than one brimming with life force.”

“This..... where will we find something like this?” Xiao Chen couldn’t help but feel nervous.

“The ghost town.....” When the demon mentioned this name, he also felt uncomfortable, it seemed like he was a little apprehensive. 2

Xiao Chen immediately shook his head, with his current ability, it was already a miracle to be able to make it out last time, how could he go and seek his own death again.

The demon looked at Xiao Chen and said, “How about this? If you can wait another three or five years, I can bring you along when I leave the dragon island, I can guarantee your safety on the Sovereign King Ship.”

“Three or five years? That’s too long. Didn’t you say you need a few more months to shake off the breath of death?” Xiao Chen asked in puzzlement.

“Shaking off the breath of death only meant I don’t need to use the sacred tree anymore, it didn’t mean my ability will be perfected. You guys need to wait for very long.”

Xiao Chen didn’t know what to say, did he really have to stay on this dragon island for a few more years? He wanted to help Keke get back to sacred tree immediately and leave this place, he really didn’t want to stay on this barren island anymore.

“Is there really no other way?”

“Like I said, you just need to find Yin-type divine artifact. This kind of thing can only be found in the ghost town.”

“If I had known earlier, I should have brought the burial cloth from the ghost town along.” Xiao Chen couldn’t help but recall the bloodstained demonic cloth they obtained in the ghost town after killing an evil spirit.

“Burial cloth.....” The demon’s eyes immediately lit up and asked, “What’s going on?”

Xiao Chen recounted the event on that day in details, the demon laughed grimly and said, “That kind of burial cloth can also be considered divine artifact? At most, it is only a cloth stained by the blood of a powerful deity, how can that be considered divine artifact! However, after hearing your story, I recalled something. There are some stone inscription on the island, it seems like there really is such a Yin-type divine artifact at the base of the divine monolith that sealed the island.”

“What kind of divine artifact?” Yan Qing Cheng asked, she really wanted to leave this place immediately.

“Burial cloth!” The demon answered.

“Burial cloth again? What’s the differences?” Xiao Chen asked.

“That is an item that was referred by the gods as a crazy Yin-type divine artifact, because its background is really too big.” The demon explained slowly.

This made Yan Qing Cheng even more curious, she was no longer afraid of the demon and asked, “Just how big could its background be?”

“Legend says it is Suirensi’s burial cloth!” As soon as these words left the demon’s mouth, Xiao Chen was agape and tongue-tied. Only until a long time later did he say, “How is that possible, the ancestor god Suirensi had passed away?!”

Yan Qing Cheng also shook her head and said, “That is certainly impossible, rumor says ancestor god Suirensi stayed in the south desolate region of the immortal’s mainland, although he already disappeared countless years ago, it was impossible for him to die, nobody had the ability to kill him.”

The demon shook his head and said, “I don’t know the full story, this is only the legends and records of the dragon island. However, even if Suirensi’s burial cloth is at the base of the divine monolith, you guys also wouldn’t be able to get it, because even I am unable to approach that place. Unless you have the Buddha’s Eternal Wheel, golden halberd, or other such divine artifacts to clear the way.”

When it heard about the golden halberd, Keke’s pair of big eyes widened, it helplessly and spiritlessly let out two squeaks. The golden halberd was originally acquired by it already, but it disappeared mysteriously in the end.

Leaving the snowy mountain, Xiao Chen, Yan Qing Cheng, as well as the three skeletons came to the sea of bones again. They looked at the lofty divine monolith helplessly, because they were unable to approach the divine monolith’s base at all. That place was filled with baleful aura that would crush everything that approached.

“Yan Qing Cheng, maybe we really have to spend the rest of our life on this island. We can’t completely trust the demon’s words, who knows if he will really take us with him.”

“I also don’t believe the demon’s words.” Yan Qing Cheng replied.

“If we are really trapped on this dragon island for eternity, the wedding can be done, but it’s way too lonely!” Xiao Chen sighed with sorrow.

“Just die!” Yan Qing Cheng ignored Xiao Chen and left with graceful steps. There were only the two of them left on the dragon island now, Yan Qing Cheng was no longer afraid of getting killed, she was more worried that Xiao Chen would do something to her.

In reality, Xiao Chen was a very ordinary man, he also had worldly desires, but now his mind was filled with how to escape from the dragon island, he was not as bad as Yan Qing Cheng had thought. It might be a different story if he was no longer worrying about survival.

Qinguang Wang, Yanluo Wang, and Lunhui Wang, these three skeletons felt at home wherever they ended up. They trained in the vicinity of the sea of bones quietly. Xiao Chen brought Keke to survey the vicinity on a daily basis to find a way. And Yan Qing Cheng also spent most of her time in this way.

Half a month passed in a flash, when Xiao Chen went to hunt for food in the mountain woods on this day, he actually encountered that stubborn and proud little dragon again. It was in the same situation as the last time he saw it, bruised from head to toe. However, there was no mortal wound this time, and that horn already grew a little, it was flickering with a milky white radiance, very mystical.

To his amazement, Xiao Chen found that this little dragon seemed to be much stronger compared to before, it seemed like this little dragon could really become more powerful with each battle. Maybe it could slowly transform and become stronger, maybe it could really become the most powerful dragon second only to the Dragon Kings.

“You tough little dragon, we meet again. You didn’t look as pitiful as the last time we met.” Xiao Chen fished out a Snow Lotus Core and gave it a piece. Keke was a bit dissatisfied this time and squeaked a few times, because the little dragon did not have a fatal wound this time, there was no need to waste the delicacy it hadn’t been able to enjoy.

The dark brown little dragon quietly swallowed the Snow Lotus Core, it didn’t leave immediately after that, it just looked at the kind-hearted human and beast before its eyes curiously. After all, it had been saved by Xiao Chen a few times, even though it was not really necessary.

“You foolish little dragon, why must you fight with others until you are in this sorry state every time? I wonder why are you so competitive. Sigh, how great would it be if you are a Dragon King, you can go to the dragon’s sacred mountain and help me steal the Ancestral Dragon Horn. Oh, forget about it, even a Dragon King might not necessarily be able to touch that thing.”

When the dark brown little dragon heard Xiao Chen said he wanted to steal the Ancestral Dragon Horn, it immediately became vigilant. It looked at him as if he was a scumbag.

Xiao Chen was amused by this little guy’s expression, this little dragon seemed to be very intelligent, it was able to understand his words. And just at this time, what made Xiao Chen baffled was that; Keke and the little dragon seemed to be squeaking and mumbling among themselves, it seemed as if they were having a conversation.

What made Xiao Chen more surprised was that; the dark brown little dragon also squeaked a few times, its voice was very young and tender, almost the same as Keke, it seemed to be replying to Keke.

Goodness gracious!

The two little guy could communicate?! Xiao Chen found it somewhat inconceivable.

Not long later, the dark brown little dragon turned around and left, it seemed to be very fast, it was indeed much stronger compared to before.

“Keke, what did you say to it just now?”

“Squeak! Squeak.....!” Keke pointed at the direction of the sea of bones.

“You told the little dragon about the difficult situation we are facing?”

“Squeak.....!” The snow-white little critter nodded its head strongly.

During the sunset, Xiao Chen was roasting the meat in the vicinity of the sea of bones. Keke’s plump little belly finally shrank a little after so many days, it could finally enjoy the delicious food happily. Just at this time, the shadow of a little dragon appeared in the deathly still forest. The dark brown little dragon actually found them at this place and quickly appeared in front of Xiao Chen.

“Come, you tough little dragon, I will treat you to some delicious food.” Xiao Chen called out to the little dragon, but he became dumbfounded in a short while later, the tough little dragon was holding something in its mouth, it was only one meter long, and that thing extended far behind the little dragon’s body.

“What? This is impossible!” Xiao Chen shouted in surprise.

Chapter 119 – Nine Underworld Formation

Because what the little dragon held with its mouth was actually a cloth, it was those dark red cloth stained by blood! 1

“Don’t tell me that is Suirensi’s burial cloth?!” Xiao Chen looked at the little dragon with amazement. This was indeed an unimaginable event, even if that was not ancestor god Suirensi’s burial cloth, it was already miraculous for the little dragon to find this kind of burial cloth.

Keke and the little dragon were chatting and enjoying the meal. Xiao Chen carefully examined the black cloth in his hands, this really seemed like an antique that had been through the vicissitudes of time, it possessed an unbounded ancient aura. It was clearly different from the one they found in the ghost town last time, this piece of cloth didn’t have any sinister and gloomy aura, it felt like it was nothing more than an antique, there was nothing special about it.

Yan Qing Cheng walked over when she heard Xiao Chen’s shout, her jaw also dropped after she saw this piece of burial cloth.

The two little guy were currently enjoying the roasted meat, the tough little dragon seemed to have never eaten cooked food before, it was no longer being stubborn and ate with relish. At the same time, it kept replying to Keke with squeaking sound.

Finally, Keke faced Xiao Chen and pointed at the divine monolith, then it pointed at the burial cloth before it pointed at the direction of the dragon’s sacred mountain.

“You are saying this burial cloth was originally from the divine monolith and was taken by the dragons to the sacred mountain?” Xiao Chen asked in surprise.

Keke nodded its head, and then pointed at the stubborn and proud little dragon. It means that everything was told by that tough little dragon.

Xiao Chen and Yan Qing Cheng looked at each other in shock, after that they shouted loudly at the same time, this was a truly unexpected event. This also made the two little monster look at each other in shock, after that they engrossed in eating.

“Hey hey, the both of you, leave some for me, I haven’t eat any yet.” While Xiao Chen was examining at the burial cloth carefully, he reminded the two monsters.

As a result, the two little monsters ignored him and ate even more vigorously.

When Xiao Chen appeared at the snowy mountain again, the demon practically couldn’t believe his own eyes when he looked at the burial cloth. He said excitedly, “It seems..... like the real deal. I can feel the aura of sacred blood. Even if this is not Suirensi’s burial cloth, it might be Laozi or Buddha’s burial cloth.”

Can these even be compared? Xiao Chen was speechless.

The demon said, “Alright, anyone who wants to leave the dragon island, focus your mind on refining this burial cloth everyday. When the time comes to ride the Sovereign King Ship, you don’t need to worry about losing your soul anymore.”

“How do we refine it?” Yan Qing Cheng asked seriously, with Xiao Chen and her current ability, they had never refined a magic weapon or divine artifact before, they didn’t understand the basic.

“That is by sending your spiritual awareness to probe the burial cloth while you are meditating, your goal is to become one with the burial cloth. You guys should go now, I won’t need the sacred tree in two more months, I will return it to you at that time and help you summon the Sovereign King Ship.”

“If you really help us summon the Sovereign King Ship, then what will you do in the future, how will you leave?”

The demon smiled and said, “No matter if it was the Ancestral Dragon Divine Ship or the Sovereign King Ship, they will return to the Taboo Ocean once the mission is completed, the most important thing is to have the ability to summon them.”

Two months passed very quickly, Xiao Chen and Yan Qing Cheng concentrated on refining the ancestor god’s burial cloth everyday, they didn’t let anything distract them. Keke and the three skeletons were also forced by Xiao Chen to stare blankly at the burial cloth everyday.

The day the demon came out from the closed-door training finally arrived, the

eerie aura from the demon was indeed no more, it seemed like he had really turned into an ordinary human, but his complexion was still as pale as before.

No one could be happier than Keke, after losing and regained the little sacred tree, the little critter was so happy that it rolled all over the snowy mountain excitedly.

“I will definitely repay you several fold in the future.” The demon smiled as he said to Keke.

After that, he brought Xiao Chen and the others to the beach as fast as lightning.

“Summoning the Sovereign King Ship is more troublesome, it requires at least seven days, you guys need to be patient.” After saying these, the demon started to draw a diagram on the beach unceasingly. One after another mysterious diagrams were carved on the sandy beach. After that, he took out a dozen of broken ancient flags and set it at the crucial points of those diagrams.

Just at this instance, waves of chilly wind suddenly blew from the heaven to earth, the black clouds covered the sky, the thunder was ear-splitting. There were even more bloody billows rushing forth in the sky, words failed to describe how bizarre and scary the scene was, and this was just the beginning!

Xiao Chen absent-mindedly thought of the scene when the ghost town emerged on that day; the world was filled with negative aura, the black clouds rolled over and over, it seemed like it wanted to overwhelm the earth, there were even more bloody light that glinted constantly, the baleful aura flooded the world, it was just like the end of the world.

Is the demon really as powerful as the demigod only? Xiao Chen was filled with doubt, he was not very convinced! The demon already broke the bound countless years ago, could he really be just a single step away? Even if the ghost town had been sealed, he might have already found some kind of methods to increase his strength, otherwise how could the demon bring about such a terrifying scene?!

Yan Qing Cheng also had doubts, she was even more fearful of the demon's strength now. It was impossible to see anything clearly within a few meter in the demonic cloud. She was filled with reverence as she looked at the demon

chanting all alone at the golden beach.

The three skeletons were very calm, but the spiritual light that flickered in their skulls occasionally made it clear that they were feeling apprehensive and looking around carefully.

Keke had an inquisitive look, its big eyes blinked a few times, it was unable to understand where did the demon retrieve those broken flags, it was just like a conjuring trick that made it very puzzled.

The snow-white little critter was fearless, it ran over there without any qualms. The little critter revolved around the demon and squeaked a few times to inquire. It appeared to be taking everything that happened at this place very lightly.

“It is a very simple matter, you will naturally understand when you grow bigger, this is only a very simple divine ability. You can open up a domain that belongs only to yourself and store the items there.” 2

“Squeak.....!” Keke still did not understand, it shouted a few times resentfully.

The demon stopped the work he was doing, and with a “snap”, a void door with dense negative aura appeared in front of him, Keke backed away in shock hastily.

At the back, Xiao Chen and Yan Qing Cheng vaguely saw a few terrifying objects in that sinister void door. They could vaguely see a few huge skeletal remains, and some flowing black liquid.....

The demon quickly sealed the void door, he smiled and said to Keke, “Did you see it? It was that kind of space, it was but a simple divine ability for you in the future. When the time comes, you will naturally learn it by yourself.”

Keke looked at the demon drawing the ancient diagram with interest. From time to time, it would also run around Xiao Chen cheerfully, it was easy to tell the little critter was in good mood.

Half a day later, the demon had already completed a part of the ancient diagram. The negative aura in the sky became even denser, so much so that they were almost liquified. The baleful aura made Xiao Chen and Yan Qing Cheng unable to stay at this place anymore, if they continued to stay, their soul might

be devoured by the underworld fog.

They hastily spread out the ancestral god Suireshi's burial cloth and used it to block the underworld fog in front. This made Yan Qing Cheng feel rather embarrassed, she actually had to wrap herself in the same cloth as Xiao Chen.

The result was very obvious, without emitting any fluctuation, the seemingly very ordinary and common dark red cloth actually repelled all the negative aura, making them unable to get close.

“Wuu~ Wuu~”

The chilly wind roared furiously, and ghost screech suddenly resounded in the sky, it was transmitted through the dense dark cloud. Words failed to describe how terrifying and frightening it was.

The demon raised his head to look at the black sky with no sunlight, he spoke to himself, “Is it here?”

“W-What is coming?” Yan Qing Cheng stuttered in fright, she was feeling restless, she had never trusted this demon completely since the beginning.

“They are coming.....” The demon did not say who it was, this made Yan Qing Cheng unable to find a peace of mind.

Even if Xiao Chen knew the demon wouldn't do anything to them, he still felt a bit uneasy. After all, everything was too bizarre and terrifying.

In the dark sky, the black clouds rolled, bloody light glinted, the mournful ghost screech became even more desperate, it seemed like it was just in the sky above their head.

“Don't be scared, you guys have the ancestor god's burial cloth, they will not do anything to you.” The demon turned around to face the two of them and said, “These are the lost souls that were drifting around in the world, only by gathering these lost souls together will we be able to summon the Sovereign King Ship.”

The scalp numbing mournful screech got closer and closer, it seemed like they were just shouting beside their ears, this kind of situation made one unable to calm down. Even the snow-white little Keke also yelped unceasingly, as if it was

trying to resist those sound. Only the three skeletons were unaffected, the ghost screech didn't have much influence on them.

“Rumble!”

Along with the thunderous roar, the dark sky seemed to be cut open, one after another bloody rays of light appeared. Xiao Chen and Yan Qing Cheng could vaguely see a huge shadow standing tall and upright in the sky, it was just above them as it let out a screech, this was simply inconceivable.

“Seven days..... Do we really need to wait seven days?” Yan Qing Cheng were stuttering with fright, if they had to keep watch at this place for seven days, that would be too agonizing.

The demon turned around to look at them and said, “Oh, I need seven days indeed, but you guys don't need to wait here. You just need to come back and complete the summoning ceremony on the last day. However, you guys don't go too far, maybe there will come a time when I need some help from you. This Nine Underworld Formation is powerful and unpredictable, I cannot master it completely.” 3

“Nine Underworld Formation?!” Yan Qing Cheng cried out in alarm and said, “I had heard of this ancient formation before, it seemed to be one of the most mysterious ancient formation in legends. However..... I can't remember the specifics.”

“The young lady is quite knowledgeable, this is passed down by a sovereign king once upon a time, it was the holy formation of a dark clan. Although what I obtained was only an incomplete formation, I can have such an accomplishment today is greatly linked to it. I just hope it can help me retrieve my past memories.”

Xiao Chen and the others quickly retreated from the seaside area. They looked at that lingering demonic cloud from a distant place, from the sky all the way to the ground was filled with darkness, they could vaguely see the shadow of the ghosts roaming about, and even hear the mournful screech of the ghost. Many frightened beasts at the coastal area of the island flee in all directions, getting further away from that area.

In the next few days, Xiao Chen and the others prepared to depart from the

island by gathering a large quantity of coconut fruits. Traveling on the ocean, fresh water was essential. Even though with their current ability, they would be able to endure for a long time without food and drinks, but since they had time to prepare, why should they suffer hardship.

These past few days, the dark underworld fog became denser at the coastal area, if Xiao Chen's party did not have ancestor god Suirensi's burial cloth, it was absolutely impossible for them to enter that place. The black fog were almost liquified, it felt incomparably heavy to be walking within. Yan Qing Cheng had an experiment before, she tried to force a wolf to enter that area, as a result, it scattered and dispersed like a puff of smoke in split second. One could very well imagine just how terrifying this place was.

Even Keke and the three skeletons had no choice but to take shelter in the burial cloth. Fortunately, this cloth was long enough.

The thunderous roar resounded at the seaside constantly, even the gold ocean seemed to be shaking up, the vicinity of the beach had already turned into a forbidden area.

In these few days, gigantic and vigorous illusions appeared constantly, it seemed as if this place had turned into a nation of death. Despite knowing that it was far from comparable to the ghost town, Xiao Chen and Yan Qing Cheng still felt great dangers.

The seventh day was finally here, the demon's formation was also completed, he had gathered enough negative aura over the past few days, and a lot of lost souls wandering at the dragon island also gathered at this place. It had satisfied the requirement to summon the Sovereign King Ship.

The dragon island seemed so peaceful, but who knows just how many powerful experts lost their life on this island in the distant past. The lost souls were sufficiently powerful.

"I need the blood from either one of you to begin the real summoning ceremony." The demon looked at them from within the underworld fog, his face was a little pale. Drawing the ancient formation, gathering the negative aura and lost souls, it was extremely tiring. It seemed like he had almost exhausted his strength over the past few days.

“Wait a moment, Keke is not here yet.” Xiao Chen turned around to look behind.

These few days the little critter appeared and disappeared unpredictably, it always went into the depths of the dragon island by itself. Who knows just what it was doing, Xiao Chen also didn’t stop it from causing mischief, as long as it didn’t cause some disaster.

“I told it to come back earlier today, how come its still not here?” Xiao Chen looked at the direction to the depths of the dragon island doubtfully.

Just at this time, the noise of something collapsing suddenly resounded from the depths of the island, it sounded like a mountain had crumbled.

“Rumble!”

The coastal area trembled violently, as if an earthquake had just occurred. One could very well imagine just how powerful was the fluctuation that transmitted from a distant place. 4

Chapter 120 – Sovereign King Ship

At the surrounding zone of the underworld fog, the demon was startled and immediately soared into the sky to look at the depths of the island.

“How did this happen..... what is it doing?!” He seemed to be very astonished.

“What’s going on? Take me up there.” Xiao Chen called out from below. Relying on his instinct, he could tell it was most likely caused by Keke.

The demon waved his hand and swept Xiao Chen up into the sky with the black fog, Xiao Chen stood along with the demon at a high place. After that, the demon brought him to the depths of the island, they stopped at the region filled with smoke and dust. At this place, they could clearly see the scene in front, a mountain peak had actually been destroyed.

The snow-white little Keke was fleeing in disarray among the range of hills, its speed was extremely fast, it was just like a streak of white light flying past. And behind it was a jet-black metal engraving, it was carrying an overflowing magic aura and chased after the little critter like a little mountain.

The forest trees behind it were destroyed, the mountain rocks were split apart, a wide avenue was opened up by the little critter and the jet-black metal engraving.

Xiao Chen felt a burst of headache, this snow-white little critter was really too undisciplined, just a few days and it already caused such a huge disturbance, this legendary jet-black metal engraving was actually found by it. The little critter was messing around too much.

Xiao Chen clearly remembered the scene at the ghost town on that day, the divine artifacts that bombarded the ghost town at that time included the Buddha’s Eternal Wheel, Ancestral Dragon Horn, Golden Halberd, and also this Metal Engraving that is emitting black fog.

How did Keke find it?

The demon also furrowed his brows and said to himself, “It is too reckless, how did this happen? The Metal Engraving is not as easy to find as the Golden Halberd, as for where to find it, I also haven’t a clue after all these years, and it is

actually found by this little critter. But how can the Metal Engraving be touched so carelessly, it really is too reckless!”

At the distant place, Keke’s cries of fear could be heard from time to time, the little critter had obviously received a fright. It knew it had caused a disaster and wanted to break away at all cost, but it was an impossible wish. If it was not for the protection of the seven-colored sacred tree on its head, the snow-white little critter might already be in danger a long time ago.

“Quickly think of something to save Keke.” Xiao Chen was very anxious, he unconsciously used a commanding tone to talk to the demon.

“I also have no means of saving the little critter, my power is not enough to stop the Metal Engraving’s attack. That is one of the very few divine artifacts in this world, although its power is sealed at this dragon island, it is still not something that be can stopped by anyone.” The demon heaved a sigh, he was feeling powerless.

“Then what do we do?” Xiao Chen revealed an anxious expression.

The demon furrowed his brows, but it only lasted for a moment before he said, “I think it will certainly be unharmed.”

“What makes you say that?” Xiao Chen also gradually calmed down, because he knew getting anxious wouldn’t solve anything.

“At that time the golden halberd was unable to do anything to the both of you, and this metal engraving ought to be almost the same as the golden halberd, surely that little critter will be able to get away smoothly.” The demon speculated as such.

“Rumble!”

A rumbling sound transmitted from a distant place, a cliff was destroyed by the metal engraving, and Keke escaped into the mountain range in a hair’s breadth. It disappeared from Xiao Chen and the demon’s line of sight.

The rumbling sound echoed in the depths of the mountain range in unbroken succession, it caused tens of thousands of beasts to flee and yelp. The mountains trembled unceasingly, the smoke and dust filled the whole sky, and the dragon roars transmitted from even further away. It seemed to be their response to

everything that happened at this place.

Only until a quarter of an hour later, everything finally calmed down. The explosive and rumbling sound could no longer be heard, that mountain range was extremely quiet. Even all the vicious beasts had already escaped from this region, everything was just that quiet.

Xiao Chen felt his heart sunk, the demon also had a bad premonition, he brought Xiao Chen and hastily rushed over there. They only saw a complete mess in the depths of the mountain range, the broken forest trees and the range of the caved in zone was too wide, it seemed like a calamity had just taken place in this region.

That powerful metal engraving disappeared, as if it had never appeared to begin with.

“Keke.....” Xiao Chen called out loudly, “Little monster.....”

A rustling sound transmitted from the destroyed woodland, a white light flashed from among the disordered leaves, a snow-white little critter sneakily poked its head out. It patted all over its body with its little paws out of lingering fear, it was really humane. After that, it let out a long breath and squeaked a few times, it seemed to be confused at the disappearance of the metal engraving.

Xiao Chen was in a good mood and found it laughable, this little critter actually knew how to be afraid. The demon brought Xiao Chen and landed over there, Keke raised its head to look at them, then it kept squeaking unceasingly, as if it was telling Xiao Chen what happened just now.

“You sure know how to invite disaster, you little devil. Keke, you are seriously too undisciplined, I am really a little scared now, if I bring you with me away from this dragon island, I really have no idea what kind of disturbance you will cause in the future.” Xiao Chen felt a bit dejected, it seemed like he could already see some of the bad things that might happen in the future.

The snow-white little critter turned its head to the other side, it seemed to be unable to accept this.

“Where did the metal engraving go?” Xiao Chen asked.

Keke blinked its big eyes and shook its head in puzzlement to express that it

didn't know.

"That was a genuine divine artifact! It couldn't have disappeared like that golden halberd right?" Xiao Chen felt something was not right.

Keke felt a little upset, then it exposed an innocent look, its pair of eyes were filled with sincerity, it seemed to be saying it really had nothing to do with it.

Xiao Chen was completely speechless, he really didn't know what to say anymore.

The demon searched every nook and corner of this region for about half an hour. In the end, he faced upwards and let out a long sigh, he really couldn't understand what was going on anymore, just what did this snow-white little critter do, it actually made not one, but two divine artifacts disappear, it was really a little unbelievable.

"You really had no idea how it disappeared?" The demon looked at this young little critter doubtfully, he wanted to confirm it one more time, but once he saw that sincere and innocent look, he completely relinquished the idea to go on searching, he felt really helpless in front of this little critter. 1

The demon controlled the underworld fog, sweeping Xiao Chen and Keke into the sky, then they left this place and flew towards the beach.

"Wait a moment." Xiao Chen opened his mouth and said somewhat unnaturally to the demon, "You should know, Lunhui Wang and the other two are skeletons, if we rashly enter the immortal's mainland like this, it might cause some unnecessary trouble. I want to borrow something from you." 2

The demon was not someone stupid either, he guessed what Xiao Chen was saying in but a split second, he couldn't help but remain silent. Only after a long while did he finally say, "You have the nerve, you actually planned to take advantage of me. But fine, it does not matter, those casted off skin no longer served any purpose for me anyway."

Speaking until here, he changed direction and quickly rushed towards the depths of the dragon island. This distance was practically nothing for a practitioner of his level, they quickly arrived at the peak of the snowy mountain. After digging out the ice coffin and folded the skin properly, he gave it to Xiao

Chen as a present.

Although he felt a bit disgusted at the demon's skin, Xiao Chen still received it. After all, these will be the three skeletons' clothing from hereafter.

They quickly set off after that, flying towards the coastal area of the island.

The demonic cloud rolled at the seaside, the baleful aura soared into the sky, this place could even be said to be the underworld. One after another ghost shadows were struggling and screeching within the dark fog, the negative aura bubbled up frantically. A few especially huge shadows stood in there like small mountains, the baleful aura released by them was the thickest.

After landing on the golden beach, the demon brought Xiao Chen, Yan Qing Cheng and the others into the dark fog. He opened his mouth and said, "We will begin to summon the Sovereign King Ship now."

Xiao Chen bit his middle finger and let the blood flow along the finger, dripping a few drops of blood on the diagram drawn by the demon. Although there were only a few dozen drops, it was already very effective.

It was as if the drop of blood had divinized, it emitted a glaring red light, and then it actually started to move at high speed, moving along the diagram like a crimson divine snake. The glaring red light moved on this gold beach at lightning speed.

In the end, the dim blood light actually spread all over the entire diagram. The black fog in the sky became thicker, the ghost screech was deafening, those huge shadows standing tall in the sky faced upward and let out a thunderous roar, which shook the heaven and earth.

The chilly wind spread far and wide, it swept towards the depths of the gold ocean, a vast and terrifying aura seemed to have crossed space-time, transmitting some kind of information there.

The wail of the ghosts and howl of the wolves made this place extremely noisy, the gloomy aura filled the entire world, it caused all the vicious beasts at the outer region of the island to tremble. It seemed as if this place had already become a true underworld.

Xiao Chen and the rest could see one after another ghost shadows swaying in

their surroundings. They could vaguely see countless bones of the dead floating in the sky, the watery blood filled the whole sky, it was a genuine land of death.

Xiao Chen and the rest could barely stand even with the protection of ancestor god Suirensi's burial cloth. There were ghost shadows all around them, the baleful aura caused their hair to stand on end, their scalp to feel numb.

"Wuu~ Wuu~" From the distant gold ocean, a mournful screech transmitted over as a response to the ghost screech of the Nine Underworld Formation, it seemed like a huge monster was rushing over at high speed from the ocean.

"Wuu~ Wuu~" The mournful ghost screech became louder and louder, the dark fog at the lower altitude of the beach gradually raised. It allowed them to see the scene in the Taboo Ocean clearly. A mountain-like black ancient ship drifted over like a ghost. It was overflowing with baleful aura, the boundless gold Taboo Ocean began to roil violently.

Sovereign King Ship!

Xiao Chen and Yan Qing Cheng were incomparably shocked, the legend was really true, there was really this kind of ancient ship that had experienced the vicissitudes of time. It was drifting all year round at the Taboo Ocean.

"Wuu~ Wuu~"

The Sovereign King Ship's entire body was shiny black, just looking at it made one feel terrified, it seemed as if that place was connected to the underworld, connected to the gates of hell, it really made one scared witless. Compared to that divine ship flickering with seven-colored radiance, it was as different as the night and day.

Chapter 121 – Ancestral Dragon?

Two ancient ships with completely opposite aura, the difference was really too big. Yan Qing Cheng clenched her teeth secretly, if not because she didn't have any other way, she definitely wouldn't board this ancient ship. This was not made for human, it was practically a ghost ship.

It's getting closer, much closer, the Sovereign King Ship was about to reach the shore. Its appearance was clearly reflected in Xiao Chen and the other's eyes. The pitch-black body of the ship was carved with diagrams of ominous ghost, and the dark fog lingering around the ink-like ancient ship was raging. A huge underworld lamp was hanging on the ship, it emitted a dim white light which made the ancient ship appear even more eerie and terrifying.

After observing carefully, Xiao Chen and Yan Ching Cheng took a deep breath at the same time. They originally couldn't see it very clearly before, only now did they realize that the Sovereign King Ship's entire body was that of a skull opening its mouth. But the way it opened was really a little exaggerated, its arc bend like a crescent moon, and its mouth that was precisely shaped like a moon was facing the sky, forming the upper part of the hull. The other parts of the skull was submerged in the gold ocean. 1

It was very easy for people to associate it with something bad, could this really be an ancient ship made out of refined giant skull?

A gloomy black light launched towards the shore from the ancient ship, it formed a deathly bridge which allowed people from the shore to board the ship.

"Get on the ship, let us meet again when the opportunity arise." The demon smiled towards Xiao Chen.

"Many thanks!" Xiao Chen expressed his gratitude to the demon.

"Don't mention it, this is what I ought to do, I did promise I will certainly repay the favor to Keke several folds." The demon smiled faintly.

"Squeak.....!" Keke didn't seem to feel grateful to the demon, it was panting with rage as it ran towards a not so distant location. The little critter waved its little beast paw lightly, a seven-colored radiance appeared and enveloped a big pile of fruits at the beach, which included the coconuts, pineapples, oranges,

amethyst pears, sweet dates, and so on. After that, it cheerfully ran back and delivered the small mountain of fruits to the Sovereign King Ship via the ghost bridge.

Now, the little critter's plump little belly had already shrank, as far as food was concerned, it could even be said to be anything goes. There were many peculiar fruits that it liked, it specially requested Xiao Chen to gather those.

Seeing such a big pile of fruits being delivered to the ancient ship smoothly, Keke had a sense of accomplishment, it revealed an extremely satisfied expression.

Just when Xiao Chen and the others were about to board the ship, one after another dragon roars transmitted from their back, it was as ear-splitting as the heavenly thunder. Just when the ghost screech stopped, the dragon roars resounded, the scene was somewhat astonishing.

Xiao Chen turned around to watch, he only saw the figure of ten huge dragons showing up at the coast. They faced this place directly and let out a thunderous roar, it was actually the ten kings of dragons, which included the Tyrannical Dragon, Monarch Lion Dragon, Eight-Clawed Tyrant Dragon, Saber Dragon, and so on. There were exactly ten dragons, they were the ten true kings of dragon race!

"This is....." Yan Qing Cheng was feeling very apprehensive, her beautiful face had a hint of fear. The dragon race was so strong that even the demon wouldn't dare to provoke, if these dragons were to attack now, the consequences would be unthinkable.

"Wu....." A faintly discernible sad calls resounded, an unremarkable little dragon was reluctant to part with the ten kings of dragon, it was actually that dark brown tough little dragon, that incomparably proud and aloof little dragon that always went around challenging others to a fight.

It was reluctant to part as it paced back and forth in front of the ten most powerful dragon kind, it was unwilling to leave.

The ten greater dragons that was second only to the Dragon King also took a step forward and encircled the little dragon. The green Tyrannical Dragon, the gold Monarch Lion Dragon, the silver Eight-Clawed Tyrant Dragon, all of them

lowered their heads and licked the little dragon's body lovingly. One after another multicolored radiance rushed into the little dragon's body, they were also reluctant to part with it.

Xiao Chen and Yan Qing Cheng felt relieved, the ten kings of dragons will not attack them, they are only sending the tough little dragon off.

The demon revealed an astonished expression, he looked at the dragons in front with blank expression, then he muttered, "Don't tell me..... How is this possible! This is impossible, but....."

At the same time, Xiao Chen and Yan Qing Cheng also thought of the same possibility, all of them revealed an unfathomable expression.

"No, I must be wrong!" After staring blankly for a while, the demon woke up from the daze. He pushed his speculation just now to the back of his head.

Xiao Chen and Yan Qing Cheng also shook off that very idea at the same time, they opened their mouth and said simultaneously, "It cannot be the little Ancestral Dragon!"

The demon shook his head strongly, then he faced Xiao Chen and said, "I remember you saved this little dragon once, it seems like your kindness have paid off. Although it is impossible for this little dragon to be the Ancestral Dragon, it shouldn't be weaker than the ancient Dragon King. Since it is leaving with you, it will certainly follow you when you arrive at the immortal's mainland. Take good care of it, I recalled a legend regarding the dragons, this little one have unlimited potential."

Yan Qing Cheng looked at Xiao Chen with envy and jealousy, anyone could tell the little dragon was a little different from its peers now, it was not the clumsy little dragon as it was before. Although it was a little different from when the eleven Dragon Kings were sent off by numerous dragons on the dragon island, there were only ten dragons this time, but each of them represented the strongest species among the dragon race. It was easy to tell that the little dragon's identity was only known to a limited group of dragons, this little dragon was filled with mysteries.

"Just what is that little dragon, what kind of legends regarding the dragons did you recall?" Yan Qing Cheng looked at the demon, she really wanted to know the

answer.

“I am also not too clear, I only saw the written records on a broken monolith found at the dragon island. It says that one dragon will not leave the dragon island along with the Dragon Kings, it will leave by itself.”

“Could that be the little Ancestral Dragon?” Yan Qing Cheng asked urgently.

“I don’t think so, that broken monolith had the terms “Dragon King”, it is impossible for them to refer to the Ancestral Dragon as a certain dragon.” Speaking until here, the demon was also not too convinced, but once he felt the power of the tough little dragon, he reaffirmed himself and said, “It is still much too weak compared to the little Dragon King, how can that be the little Ancestral Dragon? I am sure.”

Keke blinked its big eyes and curiously sized up those dragons, it already knew the tough little dragon will be going with them so it cheerfully let out a “squeak” and ran over there, it was not afraid of those ten powerful dragons at all.

Xiao Chen wanted to stop the little critter, but it was already too late, and the demon just smiled meaningfully, he wanted to see these dragon’s reaction towards the little critter, he wanted to find out just how deep was its background.

The fearless little critter that was as cute as snow-white pompom ran beside the black little dragon with high speed. It squeaked excitedly and jumped onto the little dragon’s back. After that, it ran around the little dragon, completely ignoring the ten kings of dragon that was second only to the Dragon Kings. 2

The tough little dragon was very dissatisfied, it let out a few growls toward Keke, but there was little to no hint of enmity. After all, they could also be considered old acquaintances by now, it seemed to know that this naughty little critter was naturally mischievous.

However, the ten dragons fixed their eyes on the snow-white little critter’s treasured tree hat firmly. After that, they faced upwards and let out a long roar which shook the vast sky, they looked like humans that had just found the New World. Their gaze were glued on the snow-white little critter.

The ten dragons did not attack Keke for the time being, they had a strange

expression when they looked at the little critter, it seemed to be filled with doubt, anger, astonishment, and all kinds of emotion.

In the end, the Eight-Clawed Tyrant Dragon was the first to make a move, it stretched its huge claw towards the snow-white little critter's treasure tree hat, wanting to take it off. At the distant place, Xiao Chen was extremely nervous, he feared that the dragons will kill this snow-white little critter.

The little critter Keke was not scared at all, when it saw a huge dragon claw approaching itself, it just stared at the Eight-Clawed Tyrant Dragon while panting with rage, it shouted with dissatisfaction, as if it was questioning the dragon furiously.

What made everyone baffled was that the Eight-Clawed Tyrant Dragon seemed to have understood everything, it hesitated slightly and the huge dragon claw slowed down, it didn't drop the claw immediately, but it was very reluctant, its claw was swaying back and forth on top of Keke's head.

The other kings of dragons also had a hint of hesitation. In the end, the somewhat violent Monarch Lion Dragon extended its huge dragon claw that was flickering with gold radiance, the claw pressed towards Keke all of a sudden, it seems determined to seize back the dragon's sacred tree.

"Squeak! Squeak.....!" The snow-white little critter seemed to be extremely furious, its glittering big eyes were filled with anger, waving its little beast paw with all its strength, a seven-colored divine radiance enveloped the Monarch Lion Dragon, it wanted to stop the Monarch Lion Dragon with the confinement technique.

However, the Monarch Lion Dragon was a high-born species that was only second to the Dragon Kings, although its powerful divine ability had been sealed, its physical body was still powerful enough to make the deities tremble in fear. Although the mysterious confinement technique enveloped its huge dragon claw, the seven-colored radiance shattered into pieces in a flash. It was easily destroyed by that Monarch Lion Dragon.

At a distant place, the demon let out a sigh and said, "The dragons really are the most terrifying ones, their innate power is not something other race could hope to match."

And on the other side, Xiao Chen was extremely anxious, he was scared that Keke would die at this point.

Although the confinement technique did not stop the Monarch Lion Dragon's huge golden claw, this dragon stopped the claw by itself. The confinement technique exhibited by the seven-colored radiance was the dragon's divine ability. If it was a little stronger, it would no longer be as simple as confining, it could destroy and annihilate everything in its path. If the ten dragons were not sealed, they could also use this kind of powerful dragon technique, this was a divine ability that belonged to the kings of dragons.

"Squeak! Squeak.....!" Keke looked at them without a hint of fear, it was panting with rage as it used its tiny beast paw to point at them one by one. It seemed to be questioning them something. This made Xiao Chen and the demon at a distant place look at each other in dismay, they were unable to guess nor imagine the reason for the little critter to act like this.

Chapter 122 – Current Situation

Xiao Chen was filled with doubts, Keke was an abandoned child, it didn't even know its own parents, and somehow it seemed to be quarreling with the kings of dragons now? And it seemed to be contending on strong grounds, could it be that it actually knew more things than he originally thought? This was seriously too strange.

All of a sudden, Xiao Chen recalled Keke was already able to use the confinement technique the moment it was born, maybe all of these were innate intelligent. It must be because of this that the little critter knew so many things, which resulted in its current behavior.

Ten huge dragon claws were swaying back and forth on top of the snow-white little critter's head, the green Tyrannical Dragon's claw, the gold Monarch Lion Dragon's claw, the silver Eight-Clawed Tyrant Dragon's claw..... they seemed to be hesitating.

When the demon looked at all of these, he felt very unnatural, if he was besieged by ten dragons, it was impossible for him to remain as fearless as Keke.

In the end, the killing intent of the ten dragons seemed to have vanished, they pulled their destructive claws back, it was a very unbelievable scene. Their attitude was also substantially different, when they looked at the snow-white little critter, they actually had a hint of loving gaze. 1

This change of event was really too fast, it made Xiao Chen and company feel a little inconceivable, even the three skeleton dropped their jaws silently.

The snow-white little critter was not the least grateful to them, it was panting with rage as it turned its plump little body, completely ignoring them. And then it actually waved its little beast paw at the tough little dragon, it seemed to be urging it to hurry up.

This scene made everyone speechless.

Finally, the tough little dragon that was covered in black dragon scales reluctantly bid farewell to the ten dragons, it turned its head back three times with each steps it took and followed the snow-white little critter along to the beach. Its pair of big eyes actually flashed with glistening tear drops, it was

another little beast with intelligence!

The demon stared at the snow-white little critter for a while, and then he turned his full attention to the jet-black little dragon. It seemed like he was trying to see through its true nature, but the little dragon was very proud, it didn't pay any attention to him at all.

"You guys get on the ship now, I pray for a pleasant journey ahead." The demon patted Xiao Chen's shoulders and said, "I daresay we will definitely meet again."

The dark fog already scattered, Xiao Chen raised the ancestor god Suireshi's burial cloth and took the lead, taking a step on the jet-black ghost bridge. Although in that instant, he could vaguely hear the ghost screech, Xiao Chen did not feel agitated and took large strides forward. All the negative aura disappeared, the breath of ghost was retreating, their party smoothly boarded the Sovereign King Ship.

The demon yelled, "Once the person who offered their blood to summon the Sovereign King Ship boarded, the ship will set sail immediately. You guys must not randomly explore the ship, it is best if you all stay at a fixed place and set the ancestor god Suireshi's burial cloth beside you as a banner. You can guarantee your safety that way. Remember, you must not enter the depths of the cabin secretly by all means. It's best to just stay on the deck."

These words made Yan Qing Cheng feel a bit uneasy, she looked at Xiao Chen and said in a low voice, "There won't be any problem right?"

"It should be fine if we listened to what he said." Xiao Chen waved his hand at the demon and said, "Many thanks, see you again later."

Yan Qing Cheng also waved her hand with a complicated expression, she was bidding farewell to this unforgettable dragon island. The three skeletons also extended their bony palm to wave a few times at the demon.

Keke jumped onto Xiao Chen's shoulder and let out a few squeaks toward the dragon island, it seemed to be bidding farewell to its homeland too. As for the tough little dragon, it was already gleaming with tears. It faced the ten dragons and let out a roar unceasingly, it seemed completely different from its usually proud and competitive nature.

Ten dragons faced upward and let out a long roar, they looked at Xiao Chen's party as they boarded the ghost ship and following them with their eyes as they distanced themselves from the island.

"Have a pleasant journey....." The demon yelled in a loud voice.

"See you again later!"

"Goodbye, farewell the dragon island!"

The ancient ship gradually proceeded and getting further away, they were already unable to see the dragon island clearly and it finally disappeared in the end.

Only now did Xiao Chen turn his back towards the dragon island, no matter if it was Xiao Chen or Yan Qing Cheng, they were all deeply moved. Even the three skeletons were no exception, they had been looking at the direction of the dragon island all along silently. That was where they were born after all, their past was somewhere in that place. These three skeletons were very uncommon, the spiritual light in their eye sockets throbbed unceasingly, if they reached the ultimate realm sometime in the future, maybe they might come back to the dragon island to search for their dream, they will come back to find out their real identity.

Perhaps only the snow-white little critter was the most detached among the party, it didn't seem to be feeling sentimental and was already engrossed in drinking the coconut juice. As long as the little sacred tree was by its side, it didn't care where it ended up. The little critter was not feeling depressed at all.

The proud and aloof tough little dragon also gradually calmed down, it was sizing up the Sovereign King Ship like Xiao Chen.

The negative aura pervaded on the ship, if it was not because of the burial cloth that was fluttering beside them, they might not be able to stay at this place for long. The ancient ship was very big, cloudy fog was lingering on the cabin, a huge underworld lamp was hanging there, emitting a dim white light which gave people a really bad feeling.

Xiao Chen remembered what the demon had told them, he didn't want to cause too much trouble by exploring the cabin, otherwise he might endanger his

life. He believed Yan Qing Cheng also wouldn't act recklessly, the three skeletons were also very obedient, the only thing he worried about was the snow-white little critter.

"Keke, you must not play around by all means, this time we are putting our life at risk to pass through the Taboo Ocean, you absolutely cannot act recklessly. You must not go to the direction of the cabin." Xiao Chen couldn't help but give it a serious warning. This little critter did not know what's good for it since birth, it was necessary to give it a heads-up in advance.

Hearing these words, Keke lifted its head to look at the direction of the cabin, its big eyes immediately lit up. 2

"Stop right there, don't try to do anything funny!" Xiao Chen had a bad feeling, so he inadvertently reminded this troublemaker.

"Squeak.....!" Keke felt wronged and nodded its head, it seemed a little dispirited.

"Tough little dragon, you must look after it very carefully." Xiao Chen gave this task to the black little dragon.

When the ancient ship passed through the gold ocean, the golden spin-drift rose up and down, it was incomparably beautiful. It was like a masterpiece sketched out by a divine pen.

Yan Qing Cheng attempted to throw a coconut fruit into the ocean. As a result, as soon as the coconut fruit was outside of the black light's range, it disintegrated in an instant. It disappeared without a trace, not even the dusts remained.

This was a very terrifying scene, if a flesh and blood human fell into the ocean, the result would certainly be the same.

Xiao Chen secretly rejoiced, although they missed the Ancestral Dragon Divine Ship, there was still the Sovereign King Ship in the end, otherwise this kind of Taboo Ocean, even deities would find it hard to get through.

The gold ocean was not as calm as it looked from the seashore, the deeper they go, the more violent it became. The Taboo Ocean was all around them as far as the eyes could see, it was a glorious yellow, if they didn't take the dangers

into consideration, it was seriously grand and beautiful, enough to bewitch a man.

Gradually, Xiao Chen discovered a problem, the Sovereign King Ship seemed to have slowed down, as if it had encountered a great resistance. Yan Qing Cheng also discovered this problem. At first, they were very worried that something might have happened to the hull, but that shouldn't be the case, it seemed like a bizarre power was trying to prevent the ancient ship from leaving this sea area.

Its speed was much slower compared to when the Sovereign King Ship was first summoned, it seemed like there was a force directing all of these from within the darkness. It seemed to know the ancient ship was carrying someone or something from the dragon island, so it exerted more power to stop it.

Although the speed decreased, it was not stopped completely, the ancient Sovereign King Ship was still advancing slowly. It was still a little faster compared to the normal walking speed of ordinary people.

Yan Qing Cheng frowned and said, "I originally thought we could leave the Taboo Ocean very quickly, but at this rate, it might take many days. After all, legend says the Taboo Ocean had a perimeter of at least one thousand miles."

"Don't be impatient, there's no need to hurry." Xiao Chen smiled faintly and said, "You don't need to think about those, you should think of the problem between you and me."

"You..... What are you doing, don't come over here." Yan Qing Cheng seemed to have thought of something, she backed away with lingering fear, but she didn't dare to get too far away from the burial cloth.

"What are you thinking of? Don't tell me you want me to put on a good show in front of the three skeletons and two little monsters? Even if you have that kind of mood, I don't have that kind of desire. These kind of thing need to set up the mood, it depends on the surroundings."

Yan Qing Cheng was so angry that she became speechless, the other party was clearly teasing her, and using her to regulate his state of mind.

"What do you want?"

"I was thinking if it is about time I destroyed the flower." Speaking until here,

Xiao Chen's expression gradually became cold, he was not joking around.

And Yan Qing Cheng clearly felt the other party's killing intent, she didn't want to die, her heart immediately filled with fear. All the more when she was just about to break away from the dragon island, if her dream was to be shattered at this time, it was seriously too cruel.

"It seemed like there is no leeway between you and me, if I don't kill you now, it will only cause more trouble for me."

Yan Qing Cheng knew he was not just threatening her. Since they had left the dragon island, he wouldn't need to worry about being alone anymore, he no longer had to spend a lifetime on a barren island by himself, he had no qualms of killing her now, it could also be said that she had no value now.

Yan Qing Cheng quickly thought of something and calmed down, then she said, "You cannot kill me. You already know, I don't really have any attachment to Wang Zi Feng and Liew Yue, what I did last time was only to defend the honor of our faction. In other words, we don't really have any enmity between us."

"At that time we really don't have enmity, but this is the reality, it is already too late to turn back." Xiao Chen looked at her very calmly.

The more he pressed on, the more Yan Qing Cheng felt unease, she opened her mouth and said, "I promise I will not tell anyone you had once killed the people of the Undying Faction, let's resolve all our grudges like this, there is no reason for us to fight anymore."

"This is not a reason, it's just an excuse to let me spare you."

"Listen to me until the end." Yan Qing Cheng continued, "As a matter of fact, the matter regarding Wang Zi Feng and Liew Yue is already a thing of the past. However, you killed my martial uncle Wang Hao, everyone on the divine ship had seen it, if you kill me now and enter the world of immortals, you will encounter a great lot of trouble. Only by leaving me alive will you be safe."

"Oh? Speak." Xiao Chen kept looking at her with a calm expression. In fact, the reason he didn't make a move was because of this.

"Keep me alive, and I will help you clear your name." Yan Qing Cheng already calmed down.

“How will you clear my name, how can I believe anything you said?” Xiao Chen had the upper hand, because he was in control of Yan Qing Cheng’s life or death.

“A lot of people had seen my martial uncle attacking us, and he was killed by you in the end. Regardless of the outsider’s opinions or the truth, it showed that we are on the same side, we either sink or swim together. Only by working together will we be able to break away from the Undying Faction’s desire to kill. We will push all the blame to my martial uncle, say he was jealous of the younger generation and wanted to kill me, which dragged you into it as a result, In fact, his action was very dishonorable on that day, we have many witness, the situation is very favorable for us.”

“Many people also knew I caught you as a female slave, what good would our cooperation do?

Hearing the two words, female slave, Yan Qing Cheng’s face turned red and then turned pale, she was very annoyed, but she couldn’t show it on the surface.

Yan Qing Cheng clenched her teeth and said, “Everything can be cleared, say we are in fact an alliance, at that time we were just putting on a play, it was all for surviving on the dangerous dragon island. We did that in order to provide misconception to outsiders, so that when it was necessary, we could take them by surprise. We can go find Buddhist Yizhen, Rowena, Lawrence, and the others to testify. Especially if I, the victim, says so, it is more unlikely for the outsiders to doubt us.”

Xiao Chen smiled and said, “What you said is very pleasant to hear, but who knows if you will really keep your word once we enter the world of immortals, and put me in a dangerous situation immediately. Rather than that, killing you here might be a better choice.”

“You are looking down on the Undying Faction too much, if you really killed me, in addition to martial uncle Wang Hao’s death, you will definitely meet a tragic end if they find your whereabouts. Don’t try to press your luck, I believe many people already know about your secret technique, it will inevitably spread to the Undying Faction. Unless you stop practicing martial arts from hereafter, you will eventually expose yourself.”

“Can I really break away from dangers completely if I keep you alive?” Xiao

Chen was calm and cool, but his killing intent did not diminish.

“That’s right, I guarantee it will be profitable to both sides, I promise you this much.” Yan Qing Cheng vividly felt Xiao Chen’s killing intent, it forced her to come to a decision quickly. If she could keep her life, she was even willing to forget her experience as the prisoner of war.

“But I cannot trust anything you said, this is the biggest problem, if only you have a method that can convince me.”

Chapter 123 – Taboo Ocean

“This.....” Yan Qing Cheng really had nothing else to say, as a matter of fact, if their position was reversed, she would find it even harder to trust Xiao Chen.

She knew there was one possibility, and that was to offer herself, maybe she could only gain the other party’s trust by connecting to him with marriage. The other side ought to know a woman as proud as her would rather die than lose her virginity. Maybe she could only gain Xiao Chen’s trust with this.

However, how would she be willing to resign herself?! Especially to this man who was once her enemy? Although she had to accept a compromise now, she still wouldn’t be able to stand that kind of outcome.

However, if she don’t do this, how will she gain the other party’s trust? With Xiao Chen’s personality, he will eliminate everything that is dangerous, he won’t allow her to live.

The Sovereign King Ship advanced slowly, it gave rise to light waves in the gold ocean. The jet-black ancient ship seemed especially eye-catching among the glorious divine radiance of the Taboo Ocean.

Looking from a distant, it seemed like a huge, upside-down black skull drifting on the sea, flickering with black light, sinister and bizarre. This was a very unusual scene, it was a very eye-catching scene, but there’s not a lot of spectators at the moment.

The deck of the ancient ship had sunk into silence, Xiao Chen was calm and unruffled in the midst of chaos, he seemed to be very relaxed and unconcerned, as if he had forgotten what happened just now. He was currently watching the gold ocean, admiring the extraordinarily beautiful and majestic gold Taboo Ocean.

However, Yan Qing Cheng knew the other party’s killing intent had yet to diminish, it was only because he had the upper hand and could kill her, who had her power sealed, at any time. She was having an intense internal conflict, she didn’t want to die, she was still young, she had unlimited future prospects, her future was filled with hope, but how could she survive this?

Did she really have to pay a great price? Yan Qing Cheng was an ambitious, and

at the same time, an outstanding woman. She didn't want to live an ordinary life, she wanted to surpass her predecessor, she wanted to explore the entire world, but she didn't know how to get through the current crisis. Did she really have to go beyond her bottom line?

After leaving the dragon island, everything had changed, the two who originally had a subtle relationship had a lot to think about, it was not as simple as thinking about how to survive on the barren island, they had to think about the future, about everything that might happen from now on.

Everything was very tranquil, only the sound of two little monsters swallowing their food could be heard. Keke did not have much to think about, it just indulged itself in eating all kinds of strange fruits. The proud and aloof little dragon had clearly been influenced by Keke's way of life gradually, it was no longer resisting the delicious food and enjoyed them delightfully like the snow-white little critter.

On the side of Qinguang Wang and the other two skeletons, they were sitting beside the burial cloth very quietly, they were as motionless as three fossils. It seemed like they were already in a deathly still state. They meditated like that quietly, the spiritual light in their eye sockets would flicker a few times occasionally, and the lotus insignia on their foreheads would brighten up.

Who knows just how much time had passed, the color of the sky gradually became darker, Xiao Chen also broke several unknown nuts into pieces and began to enjoy his dinner. This was a really strange feeling, at this Taboo Ocean that even demigod wouldn't be able to set foot in, they were enjoying sweet wild fruits and drinking coconut juice while watching the sunset dyed the gold ocean with its color. It was an unusual feeling.

Nightfall, the sky was filled with specks of stars, the starry sky was filled with the breath of freedom. Xiao Chen felt his mood lightened up very much, they finally departed from the dragon island.

And just at this time, Keke suddenly cried out in fear.

Xiao Chen who was currently looking up at the sky was startled, he hastily turned around, only to see Keke taking off its treasured tree hat and calling out with a few squeaks. At the side, the tough little dragon curiously looked at it, the

proud and aloof little dragon didn't seem to be lusting after the sacred tree like those young Syndicate Dragon Kings.

"Keke, what happened?" Xiao Chen asked it doubtfully.

The snow-white little critter was still pointing at the treasured tree hat and squeaking incessantly. It seemed to be very surprised, something must have happened to the little sacred tree. Xiao Chen walked in front of it, when he squatted down to lightly touch the sapling, he immediately felt a little warmed up, it seemed like there was a ripple of energy fluctuation.

"Eh?" Xiao Chen was also filled with doubt.

Yan Qing Cheng was also very astonished, she turned her head to look over.

There was indeed a weak fluctuation that was almost undetectable, but neither Keke or Xiao Chen had ever took notice of it before, the little sacred tree seemed to be absorbing the external energy.

Under the dim light of night, Xiao Chen's keen spiritual sense was at its peak, he finally saw it clearly, specks of faintly discernible golden light actually gathered from all directions and slowly floated towards the little sacred tree.

This was..... the energy from the gold ocean!

Xiao Chen was gobsmacked, the little sacred tree was really too mystical, it was actually capable of absorbing the Taboo Ocean's divine power.

Because the fluctuation was too weak before, no one had noticed, but now regardless of Xiao Chen, Yan Qing Cheng, the two little monsters, or the three skeletons, all of them knew what just happened.

The snow-white little critter shouted excitedly with a few squeaks, it wanted to put the little sacred tree in the gold ocean, but it stopped its action midway while feeling vexed, because it remembered how terrifying the gold ocean was.

After completely understanding the situation, Xiao Chen felt very excited. The Taboo Ocean seemed to possess unlimited divine power, if the little sacred tree was able to absorb a little, it might be able to grow a bit.

"Let me give it a try." Xiao Chen raised the sapling and gradually got closer to the side of the ship. Just at this time, the sacred tree emitted a fairly bright

radiance, the gold specks of light it gathered had clearly increased drastically.

Xiao Chen did not dare to recklessly expose the sapling to the outside of Sovereign King Ship. After all, they had seen it with their own eyes, everything that broke away from the protection of the black light emitted by the ancient ship would disintegrate into nothingness. Even though this was the legendary sacred tree, it was hard to say it would be able to withstand that kind of divine power.

Xiao Chen's arm was already at the side of the ship, the golden specks of light it gathered kept increasing in numbers, the little sacred tree absorbed these divine power at high speed.

Taking his chances, he moved it forward some more, it was already a little beyond the side of the ship, but it was still within the range of the black light. The golden energy gathered at an even faster rate, it was like countless of tiny fireflies flying over from all direction and pouncing at the sapling.

This was a really joyous occasion, looking at the sapling absorbing the divine power, it gave people a strong sense of satisfaction.

Keke blinked its big eyes and ran all over the place, it was extremely excited. However, it was impossible for Xiao Chen to raise the sapling like this forever. In the end, he used the burial cloth to bind the little sacred tree and hanged it at the side of the ship.

This was a really joyous night, the speck of stars decorated the blue dome of heaven, the Sovereign King Ship sailed slowly, the little sacred tree flickered with gold radiance at the back of the ship, it was already surrounded by even more specks of light.

The night breeze brushed past lightly, the depths of the Taboo Ocean was not as deathly still as they originally thought, it was windy and there was the sound of ocean wave too. Although the cabin area was filled with skyrocketing baleful aura, which made Xiao Chen and company feel their blood run cold, it was still quite peaceful at the back of the ship, under the shelter of ancestor god Suireshi's burial cloth. Under the gentle moonlight, the two little monsters were already sleeping soundly, the three skeletons also remained completely still.

Xiao Chen looked at Yan Qing Cheng, he wasn't worried about being ambushed by her at all, so he fell asleep while feeling relieved. With his current spiritual sense, he would wake up the moment there was any anomaly, and the other party had her power sealed by him, she wouldn't be able to harm him even if she wanted to.

Who knows just how long later, Xiao Chen was roused from a deep sleep, he could hear a faint shriek, it seemed like the ghost screech was fluttering in the wind. At the direction of that cabin, a huge underworld lamp was emitting dim white light, but it was unable to really illuminate that area, the deathly pale light was only limited to that narrow place.

Even further away was a dark door that seemed to be connected to the underworld, it was extremely eerie and intimidating. They couldn't see anything beyond the door, and that gloomy ghost screech was precisely transmitted from that place. At the same time, it seemed like there was movements within the cabin, this was an atmosphere that made one's hair stand on end, they couldn't see anything, yet they could hear it, which made it even more terrifying.

All of a sudden, the huge Sovereign King Ship shook violently, it seemed like within the cabin, there was a huge monster who was flipping its body over while having a sweet dream. That kind of rolling sound and the ghost's sleep talk could be heard clearly. The baleful aura surged up and covered the starlight in the sky.

The black underworld fog was drifting and lingering on the surroundings of the ancient ship. The gold seawater in the vicinity had been dyed black.

Xiao Chen was not the only one who had woken up, Yan Qing Cheng also sat up nervously, and the two little beasts looked at the cabin without batting an eye, the three skeletons' spiritual divine light throbbed unceasingly.

This was really a ghost ship, it was actually this bizarre and terrifying. Without a doubt, there was a really terrifying existence on this ship, they could clearly see the underworld fog drifting on the entire ancient ship, if it was not because of the protection from ancestor god Suirensi's burial cloth, the back of the ship might already sunk into darkness.

The gloomy ghost screech resounded in a low voice, the frightening walking sound transmitted outwards unceasingly, the Sovereign King Ship finally

revealed its true face.

However, it was already at the crack of dawn, the dark sky gradually regained a little vitality, and those bizarre sound slowly settled down.

Xiao Chen and the others finally let out a long breath, if that terrifying existence in the ancient ship's cabin really came out, they might be in a really dangerous situation. Even with the shelter of the burial cloth, it was hard to guarantee they would still be safe.

Just at this time, Keke jumped onto the edge of the ancient ship, the little critter was looking for the little sacred tree. Xiao Chen was also shocked when he turned around to take a look. Who knows when it happened, but about half of the burial cloth was already hanging outside of the ship, the little sacred tree fell down and was no longer in their line of sight. It was already outside the range of the black light.

This made Xiao Chen's heart sunk, he quickly ran over there, but he loosened up soon after. Although half of the burial cloth and little sacred tree was outside the range of the black light, they didn't disintegrate. On the contrary, the gold radiance at the side of the ship was resplendent, the divine radiance was flickering.

It proved itself as a burial cloth encroached by the blood of ancestor god, it still looked like any ordinary burial cloth, there was no luster whatsoever, but it was not destroyed by the power of the Taboo Ocean, this was really such a rare occurrence.

And the little sacred tree was even more miraculous, due to the sheer size of the Sovereign King Ship, it was impossible for it to touch the gold ocean while hanging in the sky by half of the burial cloth. However, the gold radiance that rose from the Taboo Ocean was like water ripples which connected the sapling to the sea. It seemed as if both sides were already interlinked.

Although the energy fluctuation was not very violent, it could be seen clearly with naked eyes, there was a tiny stream of energy flowing steadily towards the sapling, the golden energy was precisely absorbed by it.

Although the divine power was not as boundless as they originally thought, the little sacred tree would still have absorbed endless amount of energy at this rate.

Gathering a little and absorb it slowly, as long as there was enough time, the little sacred tree would definitely grow a little.

The sun rose from the East, the morning radiance spilled on the surface of the sea, a new day had begun, the huge ship still sailed as slowly as before.

The rising sun seemed to be dispersing unlimited vitality, it made the sinister Sovereign King Ship retract its baleful aura. The ocean was rippling with specks of gold radiance, everything seemed that auspicious and peaceful. Those who didn't know the truth might find it hard to believe every inch of this space could crush a demigod, or even a deity.

It seemed like this kind of trip didn't fit the snow-white little critter and the tough little dragon, because they had an active nature, the two cubs tried to cross the shelter of the burial cloth several times and looked at the direction of the cabin, but they were reprimanded by Xiao Chen every time.

Yan Qing Cheng was feeling very disorganized, she was unable to make a decision, she couldn't make a choice, because the price was really too great. Xiao Chen didn't know what this stunning beauty was thinking, but he did not feel anxious, he had more than enough time, maybe the other party could really help him work out a safe and dependable plan.

Sunrise and sundown, four days passed in the blink of an eye.

Another night had arrived, over the past few days, the ancient ship was very restless every night, there would inevitably be a terrifying sound transmitting over. So much so that Xiao Chen could even feel the baleful aura entering the range of the burial cloth a few times. And a few times he was even roused from a deep sleep, only to see a few terrifying shadows fixing their eyes on them from not far away.

On the fourth night, the starlight was somewhat dim, with the sound of the rising and falling wave, the ancient ship felt a little constrained, it was unusually calm.

It was already very late at night, but the ghost screech did not arise as it used to. However, Xiao Chen was unable to really fall asleep, he felt that the atmosphere was unusual. In the end, he fell into a half-asleep state.

Chapter 124 – Shenxiu 1

Finally, Keke was unable to restrain its active nature anymore, it still crossed the boundary of the burial cloth in the end and ran over to the cabin. The snow-white little critter could even be said to be extremely daring. It actually jumped onto the inextinguishable underworld lamp with a thunk and curiously surveyed from above.

“Wuu~ Wuu~” Although the mournful screech was not very loud, it still resounded clearly in Xiao Chen and company’s ears. The chilly wind brushed past with a whoosh.

In that instant, the long fur on the little critter’s snow-white body stood on end, it was frightened by the sudden sound and jumped down hastily. And on the other side, that tough little dragon was still as competitive as ever, it already poked half of its body into the cabin. Its black dragon scales flickered with specks of light, it seemed to thirst for a good fight, regardless if it was a ghost, a beast, or a human.

Xiao Chen woke with a start, he was feeling helpless, these two cubs were uncommon beasts, hoping that they would stay in one place without moving was impossible, but to audaciously explore the ship like this was really inappropriate.

“Roar.....!”

A huge roar resounded, it was a terrifying sound wave filled with the breath of death, the competitive tough little dragon was pushed back from the cabin by a mysterious power. At the same time the faint ghost screech resounded, it was as if there were hundreds and thousands of people muttering and weeping simultaneously. It was exceptionally intimidating.

The snow-white little critter and tough little dragon hesitated, they were feeling demoralized from an opponent that they could not see and backed away unconsciously. 2

Meanwhile, waves of black underworld fog gushed out from the cabin, they were rumbling like the black clouds. They could vaguely see dozens of malevolent shadows swaying in the fog, seemingly wanting to charge toward the two cubs.

“Swish!”

Divine light flickered, Keke's used its divine ability, the confinement technique, to envelop the dozens of shadows ahead in the seven-colored radiance, then it fiercely throw them into the depths of the cabin.

As if some kind of balance had been broken, a furious chilly wind roared past the originally tranquil gold ocean in an instant, the dark fog overflowed and filled the sky, the Sovereign King Ship trembled violently, a soul wrenching howl transmitted from within the cabin, the baleful aura enveloped the space in the vicinity in a flash.

The sinister and terrifying vibe made this entire region seems like the netherworld, the starlight in the sky was covered up entirely, the roar was ear-splitting, that was a genuine ghost screech, the huge ship was swaying violently, it was swaying as it forged ahead.

"Come back here at once!" Xiao Chen really started to get a little angry.

The two little beasts slowly fell back, their gaze still fixed in front nervously.

"Didn't I tell the both of you not to go over there?"

Seeing Xiao Chen admonish it like this for the first time, the snow-white little critter felt wronged and pointed at the cabin, then it made a threatening gesture. After listening carefully, Xiao Chen finally understood what it was trying to say; There was actually a terrifying ghost peeking at them from the cabin. It was precisely because the two little beasts had discovered the ominous object did they get over there.

"Mythological beast's intuition is as amazing as expected." Xiao Chen couldn't help but heave a sigh, his spiritual sense that didn't require sight nor smell actually lose its effectiveness on the ancient ship, he was unable to find anything abnormal, he was unable to understand what kind of monstrosity lies in the depths of the cabin, and yet these two cubs could sense it clearly.

"It seems like I was wrong, let me give you some reward." Xiao Chen broke the Snow Lotus Core in half with one hand and distributed it to them.

"Squeak.....!" Keke shouted with dissatisfaction, it seemed to be saying that was its property to begin with.

After a careful observation, Xiao Chen and Yan Qing Cheng also detected it,

there really was an unknown demonic beast peeking at from the direction of the cabin. This was a very bad signal, with the speed the ancient ship was traveling at, they will need a really long time to get past the Taboo Ocean, god knows what would happen if the situation become worst than this.

“Boom!”

The giant ship swayed violently again, it made Xiao Chen and the rest very startled, the ship was actually slanting just now, as if it was about to capsize at the Taboo Ocean. A gloomy and yet extremely terrifying sighing sound echoed from within the ancient ship. It sounded like an extremely powerful evil spirit had roused from a deep sleep.

This was some kind of silent constrain, it made people feel very strenuous just gasping for breath, it was as if they were choking.

This kind of atmosphere made Xiao Chen and company feel endlessly frightened, the situation at the moment was really too worrying, even that fearless Keke had become as quiet as a mouse. Only the tough little dragon had a blazing radiance in its pair of eyes, its battle intent was actually so high, it seemed like it was about to rush over there at any given time. It was as unyielding as the time it faced the Syndicate Dragon Kings on the dragon island.

Xiao Chen hastily restrained it, don't joke around, this is not the situation where outside forces can go and infuriate that unknown, yet exceptionally terrifying existence in the cabin. They could only hope for the sun to rise.

However, after that terrifying baleful aura persisted for one and a half hour, it slowly dissipated again, nothing happened at all during those intervals. The black underworld fog gradually pulled back, the starlight in the sky became visible again, as if nothing had happened at all.

Occasionally, they could hear the ghost screech from the cabin, but Xiao Chen and the others preferred the situation to stay like this forever, because this kind of ghost screech was much better compared to that constraining atmosphere just a moment ago. Comparatively speaking, these ghost screech could already be considered a gentle symphony.

After all, they could clearly feel these wouldn't be able to threaten their life, and the terrifying atmosphere that accompanied that sigh earlier was the most

dangerous.

The morning sun finally rose at the horizon in the East, and the red sun jumped out from the surface of the sea, a new day had begun, that terrifying atmosphere from the previous night disappeared without a trace.

During the noon, Xiao Chen found to his joy, the radiance emitted by little sacred tree below the ship's railing was getting more intense. The seven-colored sapling was enveloped by a gold radiance. Pulling it back onto the ship, he saw that the fourth leaf had actually budded. Maybe it might be better to call it a sprout, a few golden leaf blades were already growing.

This made people feel satisfied and joyous, they could see the little sacred tree's growth very clearly, this was a gain that could be seen with naked eyes.

The palm-sized sapling did not grow taller at all, its tree trunk was strong and vigorous, it coiled around just like a young eastern dragon, it seemed like there was a little more breath of vicissitudes. From bottom to up, there was the inky jade leaf, the milky jade leaf, the jasper leaf, and the golden bud in succession. It was very possible that the gold jade leaf will become fully developed at the Taboo Ocean.

Of course, no one could be happier than the snow-white little critter.

Xiao Chen put the sapling outside of the ship again, he was also looking forward to the growth of the little sacred tree, he wanted to know how it would end up in its final stage. They moved forward in the boundless Taboo Ocean slowly, although something terrifying did happen on the ancient ship in the next few days, no dangers fell unto them thus far.

The time went by quickly, ten days had passed under this kind of dangerous and nervous atmosphere. The little sacred tree's golden jade leaf was almost fully grown. The gold radiance was glorious, and it was crystal clear at the same time, as if it was a jade artifact. Boundless divine power circulated on top of the leaf.

The power it absorbed from the Taboo Ocean was not really a lot on a daily basis, but the power it accumulated over a long time was enough to let it grow.

And after travelling for so long, the huge ship also seemed to have become

much faster, and the color of the Taboo Ocean also changed gradually, from gold to dull gold over time. Xiao Chen knew they were about to enter the outer region of the Taboo Ocean, it was extremely possible that they will break away from this terrifying sea area soon.

Yan Qing Cheng was terrified and joyful at the same time, the glimmer of hope was finally before her eyes, but she knew she didn't have much time left, she must make a decision soon.

They were really about to break away from the Taboo Ocean, the color of the seawater gradually changed into dull gold, the Sovereign King Ship already traveled at speed faster than ordinary people's jogging speed. It was very obvious the divine power declined at outer region of the Taboo Ocean, the resistance had decreased greatly.

And on the fourteenth day, something exceptionally miraculous happened, a long drawn out Buddha chant transmitted from far away.

This was really too strange, this was the Taboo Ocean, although it was located at the edge, it was impossible for someone to enter safely, and there was actually a gentle Buddha chant transmitting over.

“My body is the tree of wisdom, my heart the bright mirror's altar.....” 3

The voice gradually became more distinct, it was a melodious and beautiful sound, it was the voice of a young man who seemed to be filled with endless Buddhist power. With the sound transmitting over and over, it resounded in Xiao Chen and company's ears like a gold trumpet, it seemed to be enlightening them with perfect wisdom, it made them feel as if they had received enlightenment, as if they had come to realize something.

They only saw a transcendental figure, his white clothing was far whiter than snow. He stepped on the gold Taboo Ocean and came over, words failed to describe his otherworldly elegance. He was just like a deity descending to earth.

Closer, he was getting much closer, his figure gradually became clearer, he was wearing a monk cloth, his entire person was extremely ethereal, without being polluted by the inelegance of the mundane world, his upper body was enveloped by a dim white fog, so they were unable to see his face clearly.

“My body is the tree of wisdom, my heart the bright mirror’s altar, always wipe them to make them not be contaminated by dust.”

Xiao Chen and Yan Qing Cheng were very shocked, someone was actually able to ride on the waves of the Taboo Ocean, this was a little unbelievable, this person must have an incomprehensible amount of magic power!

In the next instant, when they sucked in a mouthful of cold air, the breeze swept past lightly, which dispersed the fog at the upper body of the white-clothed monk, it made his entire body visible to the naked eyes, and that was actually a headless corpse..... that was a transcendental headless Buddhist monk!

The fog fluttered lightly and enveloped his upper body again in a split second, but Xiao Chen and Yan Qing Cheng had seen the scene just now, although it was just a quick glance.

Graceful, out-of-the-world, and extremely divine, but he was actually a headless corpse, this was really too strange. Although he was overflowing with the vibe of an immortal Buddha, it made people feel a little frightened instead.

The white-clothed headless monk was as quick and agile as the deity, he went past Xiao Chen and company while riding on the wave. However, only after a short while, he turned back and returned, overtaking the ancient ship once more. After that, he kept going back and forth like this, always drifting in the surrounding of the ancient ship.

At this moment, although he gave off the vibe of a transcendence, that feeling he gave people was that of a specter, it was hard for people to think of anything positive.

“Don’t tell me..... is this the genius from the legend of Zen Buddhism.....?” Yan Qing Cheng had a really ugly expression.

Xiao Chen had already realized a long time ago, this headless Buddhist monk might very possibly be that legendary Buddhist Shenxiu, who was both handsome and scholarly.

“My body is the tree of wisdom, my heart the bright mirror’s altar, always wipe them to make them not be contaminated by dust.” This phrase could even be

said to be famous throughout all ages, it was well-known even among non-Buddhism.

However, scholarly Buddhist Shenxiu during that time was actually a tragic figure, when this phrase of his just came into being, it had turned into a supporting role to enhance other people's brilliance.

"The mind and spirit are in the void, there's nothing there in the first place, so the temptations of the world can't blemish it." This phrase came out from Huineng 4, the Sixth Patriarch of Chan Buddhism, at almost the same time, which made people slap the table and shout with praise, it completely covered up the brilliance of Buddhist Shenxiu.

Fifth Patriarch Hongren 5 originally wanted to pass the position to Buddhist Shenxiu, but precisely because of the phrase that was born later, he completely changed his mind, because he knew the other person might be more fitting for this position.

If Huineng was not born, Shenxiu might have walked a completely different path. Shenxiu brought about Huineng's accomplishment that had been passed down for all eternity, but if it was not because of Shenxiu, this phrase of Huineng wouldn't exist either.

He was a scholarly great sage from the Buddhism clan, and yet his brilliance had been completely covered up, those who were familiar with the details would never forget about this genius that had been neglected in the Buddhism clan.

"The legendary great sage from the Buddhism clan, Shenxiu....." Xiao Chen muttered to himself, he felt it was unbelievable, that was a figure from the human world a millennium ago. He never thought he'd have the chance to see him in the world of immortals, although his head was missing, although he was no longer in a normal state, Xiao Chen still felt a great wave in his heart, maybe he might be able to see more of the legendary figures in the future.

The headless monk followed them for a few dozen miles, and then gradually vanished within the Taboo Ocean, he didn't continue to chase after them.

"What's going on? How did this happen....." Yan Qing Cheng also felt flustered, it was hard to calm down, she spoke to herself, "The dragon island is really terrifying, for this kind of figure to actually be at the outer region of the Taboo

Ocean.....”

Two days later, the bluish-green waves rolled over and over in front, the color of the dull gold ocean completely changed, they had left the Taboo Ocean! They finally broke away from that cursed region, Xiao Chen and Yan Qing Cheng were very excited. Even the two little beasts were also jumping in joy, only the three skeletons remained as still as the ancient well, they were very calm.

But just at this time, an ear-splitting dragon roar seemed to have come from the Ninth Heaven, the roar was raging in the sky above the bluish-green ocean, it caused the seawater to turn over violently.

At the distant place, a seven-colored huge ship flickered the multi-colored radiance, braving the wind and billows as it came over, it was like a huge dragon, that was actually the divine ship. The ship that once carried Yizhen, Lawrence, and the others away from the dragon island. Xiao Chen never thought he would encounter it again at this place, he had a bad premonition.

As expected, the divine ship came from outside of the Taboo Ocean and directly charged towards their direction. It caused a huge tsunami, as if trying to capsize the Sovereign King Ship.

“Shriek.....” An extremely oppressive ghost screech transmitted from the Sovereign King Ship, the jet-black ghost ship wouldn’t take it lying down, it seemed to possess wisdom and let out a screech in response. 6

Chapter 125 – Obliterate Demon Absolute God

“Brace for it!” Xiao Chen warned the men and beasts on the ship with a loud voice. The snow-white little Keke quickly rushed to the side of the ship to pull the little sacred tree back and embraced it tightly.

Seven-colored radiance soared into the sky, the divine ship seemed like it had cut open the space-time and approached at high speed. The ghost ship also picked up speed in that instant, it gave rise to endless wind and waves, the demonic-qi soared into the sky, and the ship proceeded high speed forward. The bluish-green ocean surged up violently, it seemed as if the two huge ancient ships had an indescribable attractive force when they ran into each other, they transformed into two light beams and collided.

“Boom!”

Along with the thunderous noise, as if the sky and earth had turned upside down, endless bluish-green waves surged high into the sky and covered the sun. The torrents of seawater flooded the sky, bluish-green droplets sprinkled all over the place. Although the two ship didn't really collide, it was as if they had really crashed, there were separated by ten feet, the seven-colored radiance and dark demonic-qi were clashing in a frenzy.

To some degree, they could hear a burst of dragon cry and ghost screech, the multicolored radiance lingered on heaven and earth momentarily, and the chilly wind roared furiously the next instant. This kind of indescribable changes in the heaven and earth was incomparably astonishing, it was as if the sky and earth had turned upside down.

The boundless bluish-green ocean was full of catastrophic vibe, a powerful fluctuation that made one tremble spread far and wide, it felt as if the galaxy had fallen from the Ninth Heaven. It weighted down on them like thousands of mountains.

Just at this moment, the tough little dragon had the most peculiar behavior, when Xiao Chen and the others were striving to balance themselves, during the time when they were crouching on the ship, it stood upright and unafraid. It let out a long roar towards the divine ship ahead unceasingly, its little body actually emitted such an ear-splitting sound wave, even its pair of eyes were glinting with

glorious divine radiance.

The vast and mighty destructive power ahead caused the entire sea water to boil, that was completely caused by pure power, the white ocean waves hid the sky and covered the earth, as if the end of the world had arrived. The tough little dragon was not fearful, it confronted all of these firmly.

Just when Xiao Chen and the others thought an even more terrifying clash was coming up next, the two ancient ships suddenly split up. Divine light flickered, demonic-qi rolled over and over, two ancient ships slipped past one another, but a seven-colored ray of light launched from the divine ship in that very instant. It dispersed the black light surrounding the Sovereign King Ship and swept towards the tough little dragon in a perfectly straight line.

“Get down!” Xiao Chen shouted loudly, because he could feel how dangerous that divine light was. However, the tough little dragon turned a deaf ear, it was standing there like a stone statue. The glorious divine radiance did not harm it at all, but rather enveloping it like the water ripples.

Next, another divine light launched over, this time it was not launched towards the tough little dragon, but the little sacred tree hugged tightly in the snow-white little critter’s bosom. Even Keke was wrapped up within as a result.

The dragon ship charged into the Taboo Ocean, the Sovereign King Ship proceeded to the bluish-green ocean on the other side. They actually avoided a destructive clash that was about to break out like this.

And the two little beasts were at a loss, as their body had been restrained by two divine light. Although they were already far away from that region just now, the rays of light still didn’t dissipate. Only until a little while later did they begin to struggle, they looked very much like a vigilant human when they were inspecting their current state. However, nothing abnormal happened to the two little beasts, it seemed like the seven-colored radiance did not do any harm to them.

The bluish-green wave rolled over and over, the Sovereign King Ship was getting faster and faster, its speed kept increasing after leaving the Taboo Ocean, until it transformed into a streak of black light and headed towards the immortal’s mainland.

They passed by a few island in the vast ocean from time to time, the Sovereign King Ship braved the wind and billows, as if it was soaring. Without anything to stop it, the ship let out waves of gloomy moan. A few days passed like this and they already covered tens of thousands of miles. It must be mentioned that, this plane was too vast and boundless, it was far bigger than the mortal world.

Many days passed like this, they had already covered countless miles of sea area, the Sovereign King Ship began to slow down, it felt like there was a vast and ancient vibe ahead of them.

Xiao Chen knew they were most likely getting close to the immortal's mainland, this kind of indistinct vibe belonged to the immortal's mainland, he was secretly shocked, this world was really not ordinary.

"Yan Qing Cheng, do you have any way to earn my trust?"

Hearing Xiao Chen asking like this, Yan Qing Cheng felt a little apprehensive, she knew if she don't make her decision soon, Xiao Chen will not be lenient. She wanted to make her move, but she felt powerless, and yet, she was still unwilling to make a compromise.

Yan Qing Cheng remained silent for a good while, then she suddenly laughed out loud in the end, as if she had been freed of worldly worries, this was out of Xiao Chen's expectation by a large margin.

"What are you laughing at?"

"Let's make a deal."

"Making a deal with me, do you even have any resources?"

Yan Qing Cheng hesitated for a really long time, then she steeled herself and said, "Have you ever heard of Obliterate Demon Absolute God?"

"Obliterate Demon Absolute God?!" Xiao Chen was quite shocked, he looked at Yan Qing Cheng without blinking his eyes and said, "I have heard of this kind of martial arts in mortal world, it was reputed as the best technique in legend."

"The martial arts passed down in the mortal world is imperfect, it is only the Obliterate Demon, and the one circulating in the world of immortals is the Absolute God, the two of them are quite different, Obliterate Demon Absolute

God can also be regarded as a supreme martial arts in the world of immortals, why don't we make a deal with this? I will pass this technique to you, and you will set me free."

"Haha..... What makes you think this will work?" Xiao Chen laughed heartily and said, "The so-called path to immortality, no matter how marvelous is the Obliterate Demon Absolute God, it is not appealing to me in the slightest, you must know that the best martial arts in this world of immortals is not only the Obliterate Demon Absolute God."

Yan Qing Cheng heaved a sigh, she made her decision and said, "Alright, since this deal is off, let's go with a different method. Since you have heard of this martial arts, you should be aware of its demonic nature and divine nature."

"That's right, I know of it, although this martial art is extremely formidable once it is perfected, it is also extremely "demonic". In the course of training, it requires a human as vessel 1, it is very dangerous."

"You are right, to train this Obliterate Demon Absolute God, you need a vessel to entrust a portion your soul, this is the most difficult method in every kind of martial arts, it is extremely dangerous. Moreover, in the course of training, if your skill is lower than the vessel's, you will inevitably be controlled by the vessel, unable to resist, unable to struggle, you should know what that means. For hundreds and thousands of years, only three or four people were able to really master this technique."

"What are you trying to say?" Xiao Chen asked.

"I want to let you be my vessel, you should know what this means, those who practiced in Obliterate Demon Absolute God must choose someone far weaker than them, and those who practiced in this martial art like me, the probability of success is too uncertain. In other words, a portion of my soul will be sent to your body, it means our fate will be interlinked, it is impossible for me to harm you, because I won't be able to live the moment you die. Moreover, I am weaker than you, so you will not be in any danger, the one being controlled is me....."

Xiao Chen laughed, and on the other side, Yan Qing Cheng clenched her teeth. This was tantamount to making a compromise, to be controlled by Xiao Chen like this, anything could happen.

“Xiao Chen, now you should be able to believe I won’t cause any trouble for you after we enter the world of immortals right? However, I have a condition, after I entrusted a portion of my soul to your body, you may not meet up with me, we will not see each other for three years.”

Xiao Chen laughed and shook his head, “How can I let this happen! Within three years, you will have achieved many accomplishments. When that time comes, wouldn’t I have become your vessel for real, and get controlled by you at that time? I will turn into your prisoner.”

“Since ancient times, there were only two or three people who truly mastered this martial art, you overestimate me too much, and lack too much self-confidence in yourself, don’t tell me you thought I can overtake your training progress? Alright, since you lack self-confidence, we can cancel the three years agreement.” Yan Qing Cheng looked at Xiao Chen with a provocative glance, her peerless beauty possessed an alluring charm.

“As far as I know, once you started practicing the Obliterate Demon Absolute God, it will take at least one year for the restrain to take effect.” Xiao Chen wanted to give it a try. No matter how much time passed, the two would be bound by this kind of connection, as long as Yan Qing Cheng didn’t make a breakthrough, she would certainly die if he was to die. And if Yan Qing Cheng die, he would not be affected. Of course, the prerequisite is that Yan Qing Cheng will not surpass him, or fully master this martial art that none had perfected for the past hundreds and thousands of years. If he end up being controlled by Yan Qing Cheng under such an advantageous position, he’d rather bump into a bean curd and drop dead.

“Correct, it requires one year as you said, but since my soul is in your body, what are you afraid of? If something happened to you, I will meet the same fate too.” Yan Qing Cheng was betting with her own fate, she wanted to try her luck, she originally didn’t want to practice this martial arts, but she had no other alternative. Perhaps she might be controlled by Xiao Chen now, but if she can somehow master it sometime in the future, then their situation will be reversed.

“Fine, since that is the case, I have nothing else to say. However, I am a little doubtful, this martial art don’t seem like something just anyone can get that hands on.”

“Indeed, not just anyone can get their hands on this, only a few old masters in the Undying Faction know of this peculiar martial arts, other people are unaware of it. There is a profound reason why I can get my hands on it.” Yan Qing Cheng didn’t say what it was, Xiao Chen also didn’t press for an answer.

It might be a little troublesome later, but Xiao Chen broke the seal on Yan Qing Cheng, allowing her power to recover. With his current ability, he was not at all worried that she would rebel and run away.

After going through what seemed like a mirage, within that multicolored radiance, surrounded by all kinds of divine illusion, a divine light emitted from Yan Qing Cheng’s pair of eyes and entered Xiao Chen’s body, a connection was formed between the two of them in that instant.

At the same time, a vast continent appeared before their eyes, the primal aura directly blew past their face. 2

Chapter 126 – Encounter

The Sovereign King Ship slowed down quickly, it seemed like the ship really had intelligence. After getting close to the immortal’s mainland, a black light appeared and rushed towards the shore, it was just like a demonic bridge. Xiao Chen’s party were flung towards the bridge and slid down the demonic bridge.

When they stood on the shore and felt the aura of the mother earth, Xiao Chen and Yan Ching Cheng felt like it was a thing from the distant past, they finally arrived at the immortal’s mainland safely.

“Wuu~ Wuu~” A gloomy and indistinct sound came from the Sovereign King Ship, it was bursting out with demonic rays of light, and then caused endless bluish-green waves to rise. It distanced itself without even turning back, the ocean was cleaved in two by the ship’s wake.

The three skeletons followed Xiao Chen’s instruction and put on the demon’s casted off skin, then they wore clothes made out of hide. They walked over to the continent all together. But only after marching for a few steps, dozen of human figures crowded around them from the woodland near the beach.

Xiao Chen noticed this area had previously been through a fierce battle, there were a lot of huge cracks on the shore, and many places were stained by blood.

The people that crowded around them were young men and women, each and every one of them was uncommon, the men were handsome and confident, the women were as pretty as flower, it was clearly unusual for this kind of group to appear at the seaside. It was easy to tell that they were practitioners, and each of them were not weak.

“Junior Sister.....”

“Junior Sister, you actually came back safe and sound.....”

.....

A cry of surprise could be heard from the front, some people were delighted, some were shocked, they had all sorts of expression.

Oh @ ¥ #%!

Xiao Chen felt a little speechless, he never thought they’d actually encounter

the people from the Undying Faction the moment they get onshore. However, he was not frenetic. Yan Qing Cheng rushed over there quickly and excitedly exchanged a few words with them.

Right now, Xiao Chen and Yan Qing Cheng's fate were interlinked, it was impossible for Yan Qing Cheng to have a change of mind. On the contrary, she would do her utmost to "deny" everything that happened on the dragon island.

Yan Qing Cheng appeared very breathtaking when she stood there, although those youth could be regarded as outstanding, they still couldn't be compared to her. A few very unfriendly gaze came from the opposite side, those came from a few young men. Although those women did not have any hostility, they still looked at Xiao Chen and company vigilantly.

Xiao Chen looked at those men fawning on Yan Qing Cheng, listening to their pick up lines calmly.

"Junior Sister, how did you ride on that kind of monster ship and come back alive?"

"It is also fortunate that you came back several months later, otherwise you would be in danger. Not long ago, when that divine ship returned, all the sects that were providing support at the vicinity of the dragon island had a fierce battle on this beach. There were countless casualties."

"That's right, in order to fight over those Syndicate Dragon Kings, so much blood had been spilled, even the demigods were dispatched. The shore was stained by the color of blood at that time."

"It was too terrifying, the demigod, Fallen Angel, and even the Crimson Dragon appeared on that day....."

.....

Although their explanations were lacking in details, Xiao Chen already knew what happened clearly. He lightly furrowed his brows, this couldn't be considered as good news, whether Lawrence and the others were alive was still unknown. But it could still be considered lucky for him since he actually avoided a massacre.

"Junior Sister, you are awesome as expected, not only did you manage to avoid

that bloody battle and returned safely, you actually subdued a Dragon King too.”

“I believe the patriarch will certainly elevate your position in the sect.”

.....

Yan Qing Cheng felt a little embarrassed, she did not know how to break the news that the tough little dragon was not hers, she glared at Xiao Chen ferociously.

“Junior Sister, what is this dragon called, what kind of name did you give it?” A young man from the Undying Faction walked towards the tough little dragon, and said, “The names of the eleven Dragon Kings could even be said to have shaken the entire world, Amethyst Dragon King, Azure Dragon King, Winged Dragon King, and so on had spread across the entire continent. What is our Undying Faction’s Dragon King called?”

“Just imagine, when it grows up dozen of years later, even deities won’t dare to provoke it.”

.....

At this moment, not only those young men who were fawning on Yan Qing Cheng, even those women were a little excited, they all walked towards the tough little dragon.

“Roar.....!” When a man tried to pet the tough little dragon, it let out an ear-splitting roar which caused his body to shiver uncontrollably. The thunderous dragon roar made him feel a bit dazed.

“What a powerful Dragon King!”

All of them sighed in succession.

“It didn’t belong to you.” Xiao Chen finally opened his mouth at this time. At the same time, the tough little dragon paid no attention to them, and proudly got beside Xiao Chen.

“Who are you?” A few men had actually noticed Xiao Chen a long time ago, they deliberately ignored him before, however, they had no choice but to open their mouth to ask now.

“Xiao Chen.” Xiao Chen answered calmly.

“Which sect did you come from?”

“Junior Sister, it was not you who brought this Dragon King back?”

Very clearly, a few people had an ugly expression.

Yan Qing Cheng faced Xiao Chen, she seemed embarrassed and resentful. After letting out a cold snort, she answered the Undying Faction’s people, “This little dragon is not subdued by me.”

“Are you the one who subdued this little dragon?” One person casted a provocative glance at Xiao Chen.

“That’s right.”

“I don’t believe it, I only believe this is subdued by my junior sister.” The man sneered and closed in, wanting to get in between Xiao Chen and the little dragon.

“You better not stay too close to me.” Xiao Chen did not want to waste his time on this kind of person, rather than speaking nonsense, he’d rather take action. As for explaining, he believed Yan Qing Cheng would come up with something.

“How insolent, so what if I don’t keep away from you?” This was clearly a provocation.

“Then I will invite you to take a bath.” Xiao Chen didn’t say much, he grabbed that man’s collar as fast as lightning and tossed him into the ocean.

With a “splash”, the spindrift surged and that person fell into the seawater.

“Swish! Swish! Swish!”

The men at the side moved quickly and surrounded Xiao Chen.

“What are you guys doing?” Xiao Chen was not frenetic, although the few of them were pretty good, there were only two or three Exuvia Second Celestial Layer experts among them, the rest had not even breakthrough to Exuvia realm yet.

“Junior sister, just who is this guy?” While those men surrounded Xiao Chen, they also looked at three similar-looking old men. Their body stature were as thin

as a match, and they had a deep set of eye sockets.

“Junior sister, did he take the Dragon King away from you by force?” These words could even be said to be false accusation, because the Undying Faction was pretty close from this place, they wanted to take the tough little dragon by force.

Just at this time the snow-white little Keke widened its big eyes and cast an angry look at these people. It quickly drew their attention.

“Is this a puppy? It looked quite adorable, it must be the pet junior sister found on the dragon island.”

“It should be a little lion, it is very intelligent as expected.”

“Squeak! Squeak! Squeak!” Keke shouted angrily, as if it was saying, “Go die! Go die! Go die!” It waved its little beast paw without holding back, the seven-colored radiance enveloped all those who pointed at it in an instant, and were tossed towards the ocean, the “splashing” sound repeated without an end in sight.

The few women who didn’t participate in this literally dropped their jaws in shock. And those people who were tossed into the ocean got back onshore with high speed, they were getting really furious due to humiliation, and about to rush over one more time.

“Alright, stop making a fuss, that little dragon was subdued by Xiao Chen, it is unrelated to us.” Yan Qing Cheng finally opened her mouth to talk.

“Junior sister.....” One man called out awkwardly and resentfully, it was very obvious that he wanted to take advantage of the fact that their sect was nearby to take away the little dragon by force. Even if they were no match for him, they could send someone to invite an expert.

“You guys can stop plotting behind my back now, the little dragon is not a Dragon King, but it is certainly my partner, I will not let you guys take it away.” While saying these, Xiao Chen laughed softly, then he said without holding back, “Oh I forgot to tell you, I am actually part of the family, Yan Qing Cheng is my wife.” 1

This was a quick and heavy blow to few of the men, they shouted in

succession:

“What..... nonsense are you spouting?!”

“This is blasphemy!”

.....

Yan Qing Cheng was also very resentful, she said to Xiao Chen coldly, “Please conduct yourself with dignity, don’t speak nonsense!”

“Are you saying I am wrong? Our fates are interlinked together.” Xiao Chen was not the least bit concerned, but this only made people feel even more annoyed.

However, no one else dared to approach them, they had seen what Keke was capable of. At the same time, that tough little dragon had explosive battle intent, if it was really a Dragon King, its power would be very astonishing. In addition to the three identical old men not far away, it made them lose their guts to act blindly.

“Xiao Chen, don’t force me. Otherwise.....” Yan Qing Cheng was so angry that she became a little speechless.

Just at this time, a powerful energy fluctuation rushed forth from a distant place, the figure of a man arrived at the beach without any sound.

“Second senior brother!”

“Second senior brother has arrived!”

.....

Xiao Chen felt threatened, he gazed at that figure that suddenly appeared.

That was a middle-aged man around the age of forty, he had a middle-sized body stature, appearance-wise, he was very average, but his pair of eyes were very sharp. That person was without a doubt very powerful, he gave people a deep and immeasurable feeling. Xiao Chen felt quite shocked, although this person was of the same generation as Yan Qing Cheng and the others, his age and ability were already comparable to the previous generation experts.

“Junior sister, you have returned. The patriarch knew you were safe and sound

all along because of the Undying Altar, that's why we left some disciples to stand guard at the seaside to receive you."

Hearing these, Xiao Chen was even more shocked, the Undying Faction was truly profound and mysterious, that patriarch's power was unfathomable, he was actually able to confirm Yan Qing Cheng, who was tens of thousands of miles away, was still alive by means of the sacrifice altar, it was really inconceivable.

"Greetings, second senior brother." Yan Qing Cheng hastily saluted respectfully.

The Undying Faction's second senior brother permitted Yan Qing Cheng to stand up, then he faced Xiao Chen and said, "This friend, you seem to have some relationship with my junior sister, please come with me to the Undying Faction."

"Very well." Xiao Chen didn't hesitate and responded immediately, there was nothing to be afraid of.

"Then let us depart quickly." The Undying Faction's second senior brother looked at the tough little dragon profoundly, then he said to everyone else, "This is not a peaceful place, many practitioners are still scattered all over the place, if we keep staying at the coastal area, it will turn really ugly if they see us."

Walking on the coastal area with flourishing forest, the immortal's mainland seemed like a piece of desolate land.

The Undying Faction was at the South shore, it was only ten miles away from their original location. Xiao Chen was surprised to find that there were really a lot of practitioners pacing back and forth in this region.

When they were passing through the mountain woods, the Undying Faction's second senior brother cautiously made everyone conceal themselves, a Fallen Angel flew past at lightning speed in the sky, it was lucky that they haven't been discovered. And not long later, Xiao Chen found to his surprise, a black Winged Dragon was spiraling over the sea area not far away, fortunately it did not discover them.

Chapter 127 – The Undying Patriarch

Traversing for more than ten miles in the dense woodland, they avoided a lot of practitioners along the way, and finally arrived at the Undying Faction's strategic location. They only saw the mist lingering ahead of them, the hazy luxuriant mountain was indeed a goblet of spiritual energy.

Moving on, the place was filled with fragrance of flowers and birdsong, the waterfall was surging and plunging down the mountain, it was as if they had entered the immortal's paradise.

Xiao Chen was very excited, this was definitely a holy land. The Undying Faction's ancestor, the Demon King, had left an epic legend behind in the mortal world, he was a really glorious and world-shattering figure. While he was still in the mortal world, he had never thought he would be able to associate with the Demon King ever. After all, that was a figure from a legend hundreds and thousands of years ago. It was too far away for him to even think about it, but now he had actually arrived at the Undying Faction's strategic location.

Was the outstanding Demon King really living in this place?

"Is the Demon King here? Do you guys see him often?" Xiao Chen asked one of the disciple beside him, which immediately made the disciple's face turn dark and looked at him a few times strangely, but he didn't answer his question.

"Are you still holding a grudge? It was not me who tossed you into the ocean, it was this snow-white little critter." Such unperturbed words made that disciple even more irritated. He ignored Xiao Chen and immediately pulled three meter apart after turning his body around.

Walking into the mountain of immortals with beautiful scenery, there were white apes hopping around happily, a herd of aged deer holding fruits in their mouth, and there were even transcendental cranes gliding through the sky. The clear spring tinkled and the halls were standing in between the mountains and rivers. And lastly, the hazy magic breath; this place was really a pure land of ultimate bliss.

All of a sudden, Xiao Chen saw two huge monsters flying in circle in the sky of this pure land. It was actually two black Winged Dragons, their body length was

about seventeen to eighteen meter, the dragon wings could stretch up to thirty meter long. Their dragon scales all over their body were flickering with glorious radiance. Their pair of wings gave rise to a strong wind that blew the milky white mist away.

“Buddy, why do you guys have Winged Dragons here?” Xiao Chen was quite shocked.

One of the Undying Disciple looked at him happily and said, “These black dragons are the gatekeeper our seventh patriarch subdued.”

“What an imposing sect, to actually subdue this kind of ferocious Winged Dragons as gatekeeper, this is too amazing! These are demigods!”

At the main gate, Xiao Chen even saw a three-headed huge monster, its body was about ten meter long, adorned with black armor from head to toe, its shape was similar to that of a tiger. The beast just crouched over there quietly, it looked really ferocious. Without a doubt, this vicious beast must be a gatekeeper.

“Alas, junior sister, you finally come back safe and sound, I was so worried about you all these time.” A rather handsome young man brought a group of people to receive them at the main gate. It looked like he was an important figure. When that man swept his glance past Xiao Chen by chance, his eyes lit up.

“Qing Cheng greets senior brother Qinyi.”

“Why is junior sister treating me like an outsider, hehe, come with me to go and see the patriarch, that old man has been waiting for you for a long time. Later senior brother will hold a welcoming dinner for you to celebrate your safe return.” Qinyi said these with a smile, then he turned his head to look at the black tough little dragon and continued, “Is this a Dragon King subdued by junior sister?”

“No, that dragon was subdued by Xiao Chen.”

“Oh, we should have a good talk later with brother Xiao.” Only now did Qinyi formally turned around to face Xiao Chen.

“Very well.” Xiao Chen responded casually.

Not long after walking into this heavenly paradise, Yan Qing Cheng went to see the Undying Faction's patriarch. Other than the second senior brother, the rest of the disciple seemed to be fearful of Qinyi.

Xiao Chen was arranged to stay at a guest house close to a green bamboo forest. After waiting for almost an hour, someone came to invite Xiao Chen, the patriarch from the Undying Faction wanted to see him. The three skeletons and two little beasts did not follow him, Xiao Chen made them stay at this place quietly.

He saw Qinyi again on the way, although the other side was greeting him with a smile, Xiao Chen's intuition told him this Qinyi didn't seem like a very friendly guy.

"Brother Xiao has become my junior sister's vessel for practicing Obliterate Demon Absolute God?" Qinyi asked while on the move.

"That's right, Miss Qing Cheng and I just happened to get caught up in this situation."

"Oh, that's very strange, I see that Brother Xiao seems to be much stronger than my junior sister, why would she make this kind of decision?" Speaking until here, Qinyi revealed a smile to Xiao Chen and continued, "Generally speaking, most people would choose their antagonist as a vessel for Obliterate Demon Absolute God, this way they can make a breakthrough from their former realm as quickly as possible, is there a discord between brother Xiao and my junior sister?"

Although his speech was very calm, it contained a hint of concern. But there was a deeper meaning behind those words, the provoking words just now also possessed a warning behind it.

"Is that so, was there always such a weird tradition to practice this Obliterate Demon Absolute God?" Xiao Chen smiled and continued, "But Miss Qing Cheng and I are best friend that had been through many trials and tribulations, we were only able to survive on the dragon island because we helped each other out. She said she chose me as the vessel because she believes in me, because even if she failed, she wouldn't have to worry about being controlled by me. That is because she knows I won't do harm to her."

Qinyi maintained his smile and said, "Many thanks to brother Xiao for taking care of my junior sister. Otherwise the patriarch will be very broken-hearted if something happened to my junior sister. The patriarch is especially fond of her, the reason we dispatched her this time was so that she could sharpen her skills, she will be entrusted with heavy responsibility in the future, she might even become the next patriarch."

"Is that so, I didn't know your faction's patriarch is that fond of miss Qing Cheng."

The two conversed as they walked, it could even be said to be "talking nonsense".

"What is brother Xiao's plan for the future?" Qinyi smiled as he asked.

"I didn't have anything planned, if your patriarch don't mind, I am thinking of troubling you for a while longer and spend more time with miss Qing Cheng." Xiao Chen replied without a shred of shame.

Qinyi's face twitched involuntarily, but he quickly recovered. Xiao Chen snickered; Keep acting youngster, keep acting, let's see how long will you be able to keep your composure.

Because Xiao Chen's power far surpassed Yan Qing Cheng, by the time Yan Qing Cheng begin to formally practice Obliterate Demon Absolute God, her relationship with Xiao Chen will inevitably be inseparably close. It could be said that unless a miracle occurred, she will be completely under Xiao Chen's control.

Qinyi calmed down a little, he smiled and said, "Brother Xiao shouldn't think too much, the patriarch is very fond of junior sister, she might take over a high position in the future. Anyone who want to become the Undying Faction's patriarch must not get too close with foreign practitioners."

"This is such a bad news, I really admire miss Qing Cheng, the both of us have mutual feeling, but I don't wish Qing Cheng renouncing her position as the patriarch because of me." Xiao Chen was really shameless, he said this so naturally and seriously. Qinyi was burning up after hearing these, he really wanted to have a few round with Xiao Chen, but as the young expert of the Undying Faction, he must not be rude to the guest.

Xiao Chen did not know the disciples at the side were taking note of his words and the gossips would reach Yan Qing Cheng's ears so quickly.

Not long later they arrived in front of a grand hall, Qinyi stopped and let the other female disciple lead Xiao Chen into the hall.

The interior grand hall was very quiet, the smoke from burning incense rose in spirals, a white-haired old man was sitting in the grand hall. His face was full of wrinkles, he seemed to be around seventy to eighty years old. The feeling he gave people was very bizarre, the old man was obviously sitting there, and yet Xiao Chen was unable to detect him. As if he was just a thin air, the old man sitting there didn't seem to exist in the same space.

An expert, he was definitely an expert! As the Undying Faction's patriarch, he must be at least a demigod.

"So, you are Xiao Chen?"

"Yes, greetings to senior." Although Xiao Chen was not interested in some of the Undying Faction's disciple, he still possessed a bit of reverence for this old man.

"It was you who killed junior brother Wang Hao?" The Undying Faction's patriarch got straight to the point and directly asked this question.

"Er....." Xiao Chen suddenly blanked out, this matter couldn't be avoided, everyone on the divine ship had seen him put an end to Wang Hao's life with the God Slayer at that time. Although it was only possible because Wang Hao's movements had been sealed by Keke, Xiao Chen clearly felt how powerful Wang Hao was. Despite how he was of the same generation as the old man before Xiao Chen's eyes, the differences between them were as different as sky and earth, it was absolutely impossible to compare them.

Xiao Chen immediately began to talk about the event on dragon island, he had already discussed these with Yan Qing Cheng on the Sovereign King Ship, their reports must be identical.

When Xiao Chen and the Undying Faction's patriarch were chatting, Yan Qing Cheng ran over to the grand hall while feeling bashful and angry at the same time. She already learned about the thing Xiao Chen and Qinyi were discussing.

Many of the other disciples also heard about it, they were whispering that Xiao Chen might become the Undying Faction's son-in-law.

“Junior sister, he is lying right?”

“Very well, since he was making irresponsible remarks, we will take care of him for you.”

“Too hateful, he actually dare to ruin junior sister's reputation, we will teach him a lesson.”

Some male disciples were feeling upset, Qinyi's face was also very ugly. It was obvious that he had a pretty high status among the younger generation of the sect, nobody dared to make any noise near him.

On the other hand, many female disciples were watching the show from the sidelines. Not only did Yan Qing Cheng get pampered by the older generation experts on usual days, she was also surrounded by many male disciples. It was a rare sight to see her get bullied.

Within the grand hall, the patriarch asked Xiao Chen many questions. After that, the castle hall became very quiet, it remained like that for a very long time. After at least a quarter of an hour later, the Undying Faction's patriarch finally opened his mouth and asked, “A lot of people returned from the dragon island in one piece, I got a secret report not long ago, you had treated Qing Cheng as a slave on the dragon island once, was there really such a thing?”

Speaking until here, the old man was no longer illusory, as if he had passed through the space and emerged, as if his real body had just arrived at the main hall. A completely overwhelming pressure pressed down on Xiao Chen momentarily, it almost caused him to have a nervous breakdown.

“Thee only know the first, but not know the second, for the sake of survival, miss Qing Cheng and I were compelled to put on a show to give the others the misconception that we were enemies. We wanted to let them think miss Qing Cheng had lost her power.”

The patriarch of the Undying Faction gazed at Xiao Chen tenaciously for a really long time, the radiance in his eyes almost materialized, as if they were two swords that penetrated Xiao Chen's sea of consciousness. Xiao Chen already

broke out in sweat all over in a brief moment and almost collapsed from dehydration.

However, he still resisted the urge to collapse in the end, he'd rather break down than confessing the truth. Otherwise he might suffer a tragic death. Just at this moment, Xiao Chen profoundly felt that having a powerful patriarch behind the faction was really too important.

When that pressure faded away, Xiao Chen almost fell down. What made him surprised was that, he saw the Undying Faction's patriarch as if he really entered another space and made his own body situated in an illusory state. His entire person was like a specter.

"Let's go, I will go and see just what kind of creature was that snow-white little critter."

Hearing the Undying Faction's patriarch said these, Xiao Chen suddenly blanked out, Keke had actually attracted this incomprehensible elder's attention. Who knows if it was a good thing or a bad thing.

It seemed like he had noticed Xiao Chen's concern, the old man said softly, "I don't have any malice, I only received the secret report not long ago. That little critter of yours is not a Dragon King, and yet it was not second after the Dragon King, I want to see what kind of creature it really is."

When Xiao Chen walked out of the grand hall, he saw a lot of Undying disciples already surrounded the place. The majority of them had a smile, and some male disciple were glaring at him. Yan Qing Cheng even stopped him with a rather ugly expression.

"Xiao Chen, you....." Yan Qing Cheng quickly retracted her words, the other disciples also retreated to both sides respectfully without delay. That was because they saw the patriarch was coming out from behind, he was faintly discernible like the clouds and mist.

The Undying patriarch casted a few glance at everyone indifferently, and then he walked forward, Xiao Chen followed closely behind later, but first he said to Yan Qing Cheng, "Miss Qing Cheng, I will go find you later." Then he said to everyone, "I will see everybody a while later."

Everyone was stunned, some people even clenched their fists, but they didn't dare to say much in the presence of the patriarch.

Xiao Chen and the Undying Faction's patriarch quickly arrived at the bamboo residence, the tough little dragon and Keke rushed over. The Undying patriarch's eyes immediately emitted two rays of divine light as soon as he saw the two little beasts. He stared at them without batting an eye.

The two little beasts seemed to have felt a powerful pressure, they immediately stood at the opposite side of the Undying Faction's patriarch.

"These two little beasts are rather strange." The Undying Faction's patriarch muttered to himself.

"Roar....." It seemed to have felt how formidable was the patriarch of the Undying Faction, the tough little dragon let out a bellow towards him. It seemed like it wanted to have a decisive battle, which caused the old man to smile faintly and said, "Although it is not a Dragon King, it has the quality of one."

On the other hand, Keke moved its big eyes and revolved around the old man, it seemed to be very curious as to why the old man was looking at them like that.

"This snow-white little critter is really strange, I need to check some ancient text to be able to verify its identity."

Just at this time, the three skeletons walked out, they were wearing the demon's casted off skin and looked monstrously thin, but when the Undying patriarch looked at their appearance clearly, he face turned pale with fright. He was more excited compared to when he saw the two little beasts, he muttered, "This..... How is this possible?!" 1

Chapter 128 – The Demon’s Identity

The Undying patriarch’s shocked expression; this kind of expression made Xiao Chen extremely shocked, could it be that he had seen the demon before? That was an expression one would make only when they were startled, but how could this be?

The Undying patriarch was only about seventy to eighty years old, and the demon was already on the dragon island for countless years, it was impossible for him to leave that place. How did the Undying patriarch come into contact with the demon before?

In that instant, Xiao Chen had a really brazen idea, could the demon actually be the Undying Faction’s ancestor, or maybe even the Demon King himself? And for the Undying patriarch to be this shocked, it must be because he had seen a statue or portrait of the demon before.

However, he quickly pushed the idea that the demon was the Undying Faction’s ancestor to the back of his head. One must know that this faction’s ancestor, the Demon King, had not existed for as long as the demon. The Demon King was a figure from one to two thousand years ago, and that demon had peeled off his skin on the dragon island more than a few dozen times. Each time he peeled off his skin, a hundred years would have passed, Oxman’s village had a clear written record of it.

“Elder, why art thou so excited, don’t tell me thou had seen this face before?” Xiao Chen opened his mouth to ask.

With the Undying patriarch’s profound ability, how could he not tell they were only three skeletons covered by peeled off skin. He slowly calmed his exhilarated mood and said, “I have seen it, I have really seen it before, but..... this is really too unbelievable! This..... This must be a coincidence, it must be a coincidence.”

The three skeletons watched all of this calmly, they had a very indifferent expression.

“You guys follow me.” The Undying patriarch was an unfathomable expert after all, he quickly recovered and became as calm as an ancient well without a ripple. He took Xiao Chen’s party towards the mountain woods, walking along

the sides of the waterfall, they passed through an area filled with the fragrance of flowers and birdsong. The halls were decreasing in number as they moved on, until they arrived at the back of the mountain which was unusually quiet.

This place was definitely the Undying Faction's most important location, although the buildings were scarce, all of them were ancient buildings, it seemed like they had been through the vicissitudes of time. The two Winged Dragons' nest was right at this place, a young Winged Dragon was playing by itself on a rocky mountain beside a huge cave.

The smoke from burning incense rose in spirals, there was a huge copper cauldron in front of a few stone pagodas, and thick incense sticks were stuck in the cauldron. Although he couldn't see any trace of humans, Xiao Chen's spiritual sense informed him that there were definitely some powerful experts keeping guard at this place. He could feel some pressure in the silence, it seemed to be warning them not to act recklessly.

Pushing open a vermillion door, they entered the ancient building. After passing through a few halls, they stopped at a grand hall.

The ancient hall was very spacious and empty, it didn't have any unnecessary decorative items. There was only an ancient painting enshrined in the center. What made Xiao Chen the most surprised was that, the figure in the ancient painting was actually of an old man with an auspicious appearance, it looked exactly the same as the demon in his aged state.

"This....." Xiao Chen was at a loss for words, could it be that there was an error with his speculated time? Could the demon really be the Undying Faction's founder?!

The Undying patriarch first paid his respect, then he watched the ancient painting very seriously and made a minute comparison with the three skeletons.

"This is too unbelievable, they are actually exactly the same!" The Undying patriarch cried out like this.

The red mole on the right eyebrow was completely identical, and the birthmark on the left wrist was also sketched out in the portrait very clearly. All of these were completely identical to the demon skins that the three skeletons were wearing.

“Did you find these three peeled off skins on the dragon island?” The Undying patriarch inquired Xiao Chen.

“That’s right.”

“How did you guys find it?”

“We unearthed it by chance when we were digging the icy ground.”

“That is to say that this person went to the dragon island before, and disappeared from this world as a result.” The Undying patriarch seemed a little rueful.

“Who is that person, is he very strong?” Xiao Chen couldn’t help but ask, because the Undying patriarch had unfathomable strength, his entire person seemed as if he had split the space and hid in a different world, it gave people a really unrealistic feeling, and this kind of person was stirred up by the demon’s skin, it was obvious that the demon must have possessed an unbelievable status.

“Very strong, extraordinarily strong, so strong that people are unable to lift their face to look at him directly!”

Xiao Chen knew the demon must have an outstanding background, otherwise how could he be the only evil spirit that managed to escape from the ghost town. He must have been a distinguished figure during his lifetime. But after hearing the Undying patriarch’s evaluation, he was still shocked. With such a high evaluation, he might be as powerful as the Undying Faction’s founder, the Demon King.

“Just who is he?”

“Don’t ask who he is first, tell me everything you know in details before that.”

“Alright.....” Xiao Chen told him everything he could. When the Undying patriarch heard this, he frowned for a moment, and was amazed the next moment.

“He was actually the only one who managed to escape from the ghost town.” The Undying patriarch thought out loud, “He was able to steadily exceed the demigod level on the sealed dragon island, this is really universally shocking. One must know that the sealing force on the dragon island could even kill a god.”

The Undying patriarch seemed to be recollecting his memories and spoke to himself, “He came from the human world by opening a spatial rift, created an otherworldly technique in the mortal world, defeated the unparalleled experts all over the world, and even after entering the world of immortals, he was still just as invincible. All the deities who came seeking for trouble were wiped off the face of earth. His actions give the later generations like us huge confidence, a man shouldn’t be afraid of god, because a man can surpass the god.”

Xiao Chen was also very excited when he heard these, all of these indicators made it clear that this person seemed to be the founder of the Undying faction, the Demon King!

“Is he the Demon King?” Xiao Chen couldn’t help but have this kind of speculation, because the Demon King’s martial art was self-taught. He was the most powerful man since times immemorial, almost none was able to catch up to him.

“Is not.”

“What?!” This made Xiao Chen feel a bit inconceivable.

“The portrait enshrined in this hall was drawn by the Demon King personally, that person’s identity was far older than the founder, the Demon King.”

These words from the Undying patriarch made Xiao Chen turn pale with fright. His status was much higher than that of the Demon King. Wasn’t the Demon King the founder of the Undying Faction? It was already beyond his capability to speculate that person’s real identity.

“Young man, you came from the human world, you should have heard of some rumors. There was a huge sect that was reputed as number one under the heaven, although it has already fall apart a really long time ago, I assume there should still be some legends. Our founder Demon King was a part of that huge sect.”

A huge sect reputed as the number one under the heaven, you mean the Demon Sect?”

“Not bad. The founder Demon King’s martial art was originally inherited from the Demon Sect. Only until later did he come up with the Undying Technique,

which was claimed to be the equal of Obliterate Demon Absolute God. Although the founder had established the Undying Faction in the world of immortals, he was still grateful and never forgot about his instructor. Although that sect already fell apart a long time ago, the founder still personally drew the portrait of the Demon Sect's founder and enshrined it in this hall."

"The demon was..... the founder of Demon Sect?!" Xiao Chen felt his lips dried up, his voice was a little shaky, all of these were too inconceivable. The founder of Demon Sect was an unparalleled existence that once swept through the whole world.

"He was precisely the founder of the Demon Sect who once created the Obliterate Demon Absolute God, Demonic Art, and other series of unrivaled martial arts! Although the Demon Sect has fallen apart a long time ago, the remaining branches are still large sects in the world of immortals, and among the later generation disciples, the Demon King was the only one who could be on par with the founder of the Demon Sect."

Although he had already entered the world of immortals, the Demon King was still unable to meet the founder of the Demon Sect, because the differences between their age was too great. The founder of Demon Sect had already disappeared in the world of immortals a long time ago. This was also the main reason why the Demon Sect fell apart.

The portrait in the grand hall was a way for the Demon King to convey his respect. He specially went to the ruins of the Demon Sect to search for his statue and picture to draw this portrait personally and enshrined it at this place.

"It had never occurred to me, who could have thought that the founder of Demon Sect actually died on the dragon island. No wonder there were no news about him for the past many years." The Undying patriarch heaved a sigh. But knowing that the demon was still alive, he was still very excited, this meant that the founder of Demon Sect might return to the world of immortals several years later. If this was to spread out, it would definitely be earth-shattering news, even the Undying Demon King would reborn from the dead after hearing this news.

could hope to match. Once he reincarnated from the dead, his power would inevitably make a few breakthrough consecutively once he left the dragon island, in which the power of god was sealed. Recovering his divine power back in those days wouldn't take too much time.

Xiao Chen took advantage of the situation to ask the Undying patriarch the current situation of the Demon King.

“The founder Demon King has yet to return to the sect after eight hundred years, no one knows his current situation. If the sect is not facing a calamity, the founder will most likely not return for eternity, he has already set everything aside a long time ago.”

Next, the three skeletons took off the demon's skin, these were the remains of the founder of the Demon Sect, no matter what they said to the patriarch of the Sect's branch, it was impossible to continue wearing them anymore. The three skins were enshrined beside the portrait as sacred treasures.

After knowing the connection between the demon and Xiao Chen, the relationship between the Undying patriarch and him naturally had an obvious change. Although he was still as calm as an ancient well, his attitude was clearly different from before.

“I know you and Qing Cheng did not speak the truth, but it doesn't matter, in that kind of vile environment, anything could happen. I know that Wang Hao is not satisfied with my master, as well as Qing Cheng's, so it comes as no surprise if he wants to get rid of Qing Cheng. On the face of the founder of the Demon Sect, I will stop looking into this matter. However, if you dare to harm the Undying Faction later on, I will not hold back. The situation out there is very chaotic at present, the dispute concerning the Dragon Kings has yet to settle down, you can temporarily stay at my sect. You can leave whenever you see please.”

Saying these to Xiao Chen could already be considered to be extremely benevolent. Even if someone suspected that the tough little dragon was a Dragon King, nobody would dare to come and cause trouble, he could set his mind at ease and train at this place undisturbed.

Soon after, the Undying patriarch entered another ancient hall to search for

the ancient texts. He looked through the texts seriously, but he shook his head in the end and said, "That's strange, just where did this snow-white little critter come from? This ancient text has records of numerous celestial beasts, but there is no record of this little critter."

Xiao Chen rummaged through the knapsack to retrieve the seven-colored jade shell, but after the Undying patriarch looked at it for a long time, he was still just as clueless. In the end, he said, "There is no one in this world who has more ancient records than the Buddhist Sect, if you get the chance in the future, you should go to the Buddhist Sect and get to the bottom of this matter."

Xiao Chen had settled down in the Undying Faction, he meditated in silence within the bamboo house everyday. Strength represented everything in the world of immortals, if he wanted to live a good life, he must continue to make breakthroughs.

These past few days, the Undying Faction was bustling with noise, many disciples were discussing that Xiao Chen might become the son-in-law of the Undying Faction, saying that Yan Qing Cheng would marry him. This was obviously not the doings of a certain male disciple, it was the scheme of a few female disciples whose strength was second only to Yan Qing Cheng. As long as there were humans, there were rivers and lakes. As long as there were rivers and lakes, there were wars. Everything was this simple, it was the nature of human.

This made Yan Qing Cheng very humiliated and angry. At the same time, it also drove many male disciples in the Undying Faction mad.

Some disciples had already come to provoke him a few times already, but all of them were tossed aside by Keke without a trace of politeness. Xiao Chen also didn't stop the snow-white little critter from showing off its might, because he knew those who rashly came to provoke him were just some insignificant people. A real important figure wouldn't behave like this, even if they wanted to make their move, they would come up with a scheme first.

A week went past like this, and some important figure from the Undying Faction finally showed up. It was Qinyi's father, Qing Zhang Feng. Just like Wang Hao and the others, he was the junior brother of the patriarch, but his age fell short of a single generation, he was only fifty years old.

Qin Zhang Feng caused a huge disturbance as soon as he arrived, claiming he wanted to punish Xiao Chen and Yan Qing Cheng for their crime. He already knew about the death of Wang Hao from the secret reports.

For a moment, a torrential storm was raised in the Undying Sect, but with the Undying patriarch suppressing the situation, it didn't cause too much of a ruckus. In the end, Yan Qing Cheng was even forbidden from entering the back mountain, and as an outsider, Xiao Chen was also penalized, he would be under house arrest at the Undying Faction for a year.

But, rather than saying Xiao Chen was under house arrest, it was more like they were forcibly requesting Xiao Chen to train. The Undying patriarch could still be regarded as lenient towards him, he was able to move freely in between the mountains, and the scenery was very beautiful to boot.

Xiao Chen cheerfully found a peaceful place to meditate.

But when the trees longed for peace, the wind would never cease. Night time, in a certain courtyard, Qinyi passed a bag of drug to a person beside him and said, "This much should be enough."

After receiving the bag of drug, that person swallowed the saliva and said, "This..... is a really strong aphrodisiac, wouldn't this much be fatal?"

Qinyi laughed and said, "Don't worry, that guy's power is very high, it will not be a problem."

And just at this time, Xiao Chen was roused from his quiet meditation by the snow-white little Keke. These days Keke would always appear and disappear unpredictably, and it happened very frequently, who knew what it was doing so busily. 2

The snow-white little critter was holding a crystal clear red fruit in its mouth, it was emitting a refreshing aroma, and its little beast paw was grabbing an ancient text. It had a very excited expression as it blinked its big eyes. The little critter passed the crystal clear red fruit and ancient text to Xiao Chen at the same time.

Xiao Chen looked at it strangely, and he was stunned the moment he took the ancient text, because of the few characters on the cover: Undying Demon Technique.

It was actually the Undying Faction's secret technique, it was actually stolen by this snow-white little critter, Xiao Chen could feel his heart thumping wildly.

"Wh-Where did you find these?" Xiao Chen felt his lips a little parched, this was not a trivial problem, this little critter was really too thoughtless.

Chapter 129 – Underground Cave

The snow-white little critter had stolen the Undying Sect's scripture, Xiao Chen was momentarily stunned. This little critter was really born with an exceeding spiritual sense, which was specialized to look for treasures. Xiao Chen already knew this when they were on the dragon island, the rare treasures were unable to escape the hollow of its palm, even this kind of heavenly technique was unable to do so. This made people a little speechless.

"Squeak! Squeak.....!" Keke blinked its big eyes innocently, seemingly saying that this was an insignificant matter. After that, it passed the crystal clear fruit that was emitting an alluring scent to Xiao Chen.

"Could this be the Cloudfire Fruit? According to legend, it takes ten years to bloom, ten years to bear fruit, and ten years to ripen." After a careful examination, Xiao Chen had confirmed that this was indeed a Cloudfire Fruit. However, he had a kind of bad premonition.

There were about thirty of this Cloudfire Fruits all together, they were like a bunch of crystal clear red grapes. Just where did this little critter manage to find it, did it steal the fruits from an important place of the Undying Sect? If that was the case, the little critter had certainly caused a huge disaster, because since it had already retrieved a bunch of it, it must have already eaten to its fill a long time ago with its personality. Even if they returned the Cloudfire Fruits now, it was already too late.

Xiao Chen was holding the Undying Sect's scripture and this bunch of Cloudfire Fruits, he was really speechless. This matter would not be easy to deal with.

"Didn't I warn you before? We must not stir up any trouble at the moment, you..... why did you steal other people's most valuable scripture?"

It was only natural for him to reprimand this snow-white little critter, it was unavoidable. Since this matter had already escalated to this point, the most important thing now was to find a remedy to pacify the situation. However, since they had already stolen the goods, might as well take a look at it. While Xiao Chen was reprimanding Keke, he began to read the legendary scripture.

However, Keke was getting dissatisfied, it took the Cloudfire Fruits back and

began to enjoy the fruits by itself while panting with rage.

“Hey, don’t start throwing a tantrum, was it wrong for me to point out your mistake?”

The snow-white little critter didn’t try to justify itself, only after it ate all the Cloudfire Fruits in one breath did it pull the hem of Xiao Chen’s cloth unhurriedly, hinting him to follow it.

Xiao Chen’s heart was racing, taking the Undying Sect’s scripture with him, he followed Keke out of the residence. After they climbed over the back mountain, they kept going northward. They only arrived at their destination after going forward for more than twenty miles. Xiao Chen didn’t expect the snow-white little critter would actually bring him to a precipitous rocky mountain. Soon after, its figure flashed and brought Xiao Chen to an ancient cave.

This mountain that couldn’t be considered very tall was completely made out of rock, the ancient cave was very deep and winded around complicatedly. There were many forks in the road, it was very easy to get lost. After they walked into the cave for a really long time, Xiao Chen felt a heatwave assaulting him, there was actually a stream of hot springs in the cave.

They kept forging ahead for a while longer, the front was flickering with brilliant rays, he followed the snow-white little critter into a wide and spacious cave. Many night pearls were embedded on the rock walls, which made this place as bright as daytime in contrast.

After entering this place, Xiao Chen was startled at first, then he laughed. He saw plenty of crystal clear Cloudfire Fruits on the walls not far away from the hot spring. It was like a bunch of rubies that emitted an alluring fragrance. And that tough little dragon was half-submerged in the hot spring while letting out a hiccup. This little guy was always playing it cool, this kind of appearance was really too rare.

Xiao Chen already knew he had treated the snow-white little critter unjustly, but he was still very shocked. It seemed like calling the little critter a treasure hunting beast was more than appropriate. The Cloudfire Fruits were hidden so deep in the mountain and yet it was able to find it, it seriously made people speechless.

“Hmph!” Keke actually let out a hum like that of a human, seemingly trying to convey its dissatisfaction.

“Alright, I know I blamed you wrongly. I feel that I have given you the wrong name, it shouldn’t be Keke, ‘Tongchi’ would be a better name. I see that no treasures will be able to escape from the hollow of your palm.”

After carefully examining the cave dwelling, Xiao Chen found that there was a man-made room; the table, the chair, the bed, they were all made out of rocks. And the Undying Sect’s scripture in his hand was actually found in this place by the little-critter. He was only able to confirm it because there was a clear dust imprint left on the stone bed.

Xiao Chen suddenly laughed out loud, he knew that the Undying Sect’s divine arts was not lost, and he actually obtained a similar scripture at this place. He could very much feel at ease while using this as a practice reference.

The martial arts he practiced in was originated from the Yellow River’s ancient monolith, as well as the dragon island’s mysterious monolith. Although it seemed to have improved one step further, it was still unknown if it had been perfected yet. However, the power was still tremendous. If the other martial arts were not especially well-known, he wouldn’t have any interest in them either, but the martial arts left behind by the Demon King was still pretty attractive to him. He wanted to see what kind of unworldly divine arts did this legendary genius passed down. Perhaps he could comprehend new things by using it as an analogy, and understand some profound mysteries.

While eating the Cloudfire Fruits that could replenish the three energies, Xiao Chen studied the Undying Sect’s scripture attentively. Just by skimming through the text, he was already deeply invested. The Demon King was indeed an outstanding individual, the martial arts he created displayed originality, it was essentially different from the other sect’s martial arts.

While studying the Undying Demon Technique attentively, Xiao Chen felt as if the Demon King had passed these martial arts to him, he was deeply indulged in reading the scripture.

However, this sect’s strange arts were too mysterious and unpredictable, it was still not that bad in the beginning, but the more Xiao Chen read, the more

difficult it was to understand. Not long later, he even started to see illusions, so much so that he almost threw up blood. It seemed as if there were countless demonic shriek in the surroundings, it made people's mind sway, and the soul about to break down.

Xiao Chen took a huge breath, then he started to operate his martial arts in silence. Only after a long time did it slowly start to calm down, he sighed inwardly, this sect's strange arts were really worthy of the Undying Sect's scripture, it proved itself to be the heroic Demon King's creation, it was really too bizarre. An average person would most likely collapse after reading a small chunk of the text.

He recalled a certain legend, in the mortal world, when the Demon King had just created the Undying Demon Technique, countless people had once fought for that imperfect technique, and every single one who had seen that martial arts almost had their soul broken into pieces. The Demon King's nefarious name became even more infamous due to this.

"Scripture, divine arts!" Xiao Chen sighed.

This scripture really had originality, the glorious "Immortal Demonic Seal" explained how to use the smallest power to bring out the greatest might. Thus, allowing the weak to fight against the strong, the small to kill the big, it gave people no choice but to exclaim in admiration. This was the main reason the Undying Demon Technique became world renowned; it was an art that brought out the full potential of every power.

What Xiao Chen was most interested in was the records of the "Undying Wings". By condensing the energy, one was able to produce a pair of Undying Wings, it allowed martial artist of Exuvia Fifth Celestial Layer to fly in the sky. This was much too attractive to Xiao Chen, to be able to fly freely in the sky was the divine ability he yearned for even in his dreams. And the answer was within this Undying Sect's scripture.

The "Immortal Demonic Seal" and "Undying Wings" were the Undying Sect's scripture's most important part, it was also because of these two essential factors that this sect's strange art was world-renowned and how it came to be the most famous divine art.

Xiao Chen only skimmed through a part of it, it was impossible for him to grasp it so quickly. However, he already had a plan, it was impossible for him to stop practicing the divine monolith's secret arts, but he could effectively assimilate some skills.

For example, the "Immortal Demonic Seal" which was capable of bringing out the full potential of every power, this kind of skill could be assimilated with ingenuity. As for the "Undying Wings", it was only a matter of finding out how it works, then he could make the energy pass through his back and form divine wings capable of flight. It was fairly possible to combine them.

Xiao Chen was unable to calm down, by fusing the world-shattering arts with the martial arts he practiced in, it would undoubtedly bring it up to a whole new level.

In the end, his mind was submerged in a fantastic state, he read without thoroughly understanding the Undying Sect's scripture and mechanically embedded it into his mind. He didn't dare to trifle with it, because it was impossible to comprehend all the profound mysteries in a short amount of time. If he tried to do it forcefully, his soul might even end up dissipated like the majority of the people.

After embedding it deep into his sea of consciousness, Xiao Chen let out a long breath. It was impossible for him to bring the scripture with him all the time, it was also impossible to come to this place everyday, the safest method was to memorize it.

After plucking a few bunches of Cloudfire Fruits, Xiao Chen let the snow-white little critter led him out of this underground labyrinth, and returned to the residence.

By the time they returned, Xiao Chen could vaguely see a figure swaying a few times in the front, that place seemed like the kitchen. That was a small kitchen that primarily served the people at the back mountain. The back mountain was an important place for the Undying Sect, it seemed like the super powerful experts were staying there. And Xiao Chen was currently staying in between the front mountain and back mountain, thus his food and drink were usually provided from that place.

He felt a little baffled to see a dubious figure this late at night, so he approached without making a sound. Arriving at a place illuminated by the lighting, his prophet-like spiritual sense caught everything.

Every night, someone would come to ask Xiao Chen what he wanted to eat the next day, and the people in the kitchen would prepare the ingredients for breakfast the night before the next day. That person actually sprinkled a lot of drug powder on the foodstuff prepared for him.

That guy seemed to be the person who was always beside Qinyi, Xiao Chen understood everything clearly in a flash; Qinyi wanted to deal with him. Waiting until that person retreated, Xiao Chen walked into the kitchen calmly. Unless it was a special drug, even if practitioners on his level were to be poisoned, they could remove it from their body at high speed.

He left after taking a little foodstuff, he caught a hare and forcefully fed it. As a result, this rabbit's eyes immediately turned green and went on a rampage. After observing for a long time, Xiao Chen finally understood this drug powder's function, the green-eyed male rabbit was chasing female rabbits all over the mountain.

Chapter 130 – Disturbance

Xiao Chen was dumbstruck, this was such a strong aphrodisiac! Suppose if he had mistakenly taken a dose of it, even if there wouldn't be a big problem, he would definitely be humiliated.

This fellow Qinyi was seriously not a good person, but at least he was not cold-hearted, he didn't use a strong poison. Xiao Chen did not hesitate, if he wanted to play, so can play along. Using his secret arts to cautiously absorb fine powder on the foodstuff into his palm, he threw the majority of it into the water jar without any hesitation.

“Equal opportunity”, since everyone in the back mountain was some super powerful experts anyway, it probably wouldn't cause some huge disturbance. At most, the uncle and aunt would only jump up and down for a while. If they want to have a thorough investigation, they will have to get even with Qinyi.

Of course, Xiao Chen also didn't want to let Qinyi off this easily, he arrived at Qinyi's residence without making any sound. This lateral court couldn't be regarded as small, there was actually a specialized waiter. He didn't hold back and mixed the remaining fine powder with the tea leaves.

The next day was lively as expected, a few angry roars could be heard from the back mountain, but it quickly calmed down. However, this matter had definitely not ended yet, the kitchen would definitely be investigated thoroughly.

What Xiao Chen didn't expect was that, although the uncle and aunt at the back mountain acted like nothing had happened, there was another person he didn't expect. It was precisely Yan Qing Cheng who was under house arrest at the back mountain, she kept shouting in the woodland of the back mountain.

“Get over here Xiao Chen!”

“I know it was you who set me up.....”

“Ahhh, that damned Xiao Chen.....”

In the end, Yan Qing Cheng stubbornly stormed Xiao Chen's residence. Her cheeks were flushed, and her entire body was shuddering, the drug was obviously very intense, but with her ability, it didn't pose to be much of a

problem.

After this had happened, Qinyi was very nervous. And Qing Zhang Feng who knew his own son very well seemed to have realized something. As a result, after entering Qinyi's residence for a short while, a bellow of rage resounded after they drank the tea. The old man did not get affected, but Qinyi began to run in the courtyard naked.

This matter was left unsettled in the end, but it was rumored that Qinyi was ruthlessly admonished by the patriarch. If it was not for giving Qin Zhang Feng face, Qinyi might have been punished severely.

But the matter regarding how Yan Qing Cheng was "dancing" in Xiao Chen's courtyard with flushed cheeks, when she was in fact "flipping out", was spread by a few women in the Undying Sect. They made it seem so "vivid" and naturally made it seem more erotic.

Time passed very quickly, Xiao Chen had already spent three months in the Undying Sect. He spent every day meditating quietly. Among the four killing moves, God Slayer, Chaotic Patterns, Demon Suppression, and Death Blow, he was already able to control the God Slayer. As for the Chaotic Patterns, he already comprehended it to some extent. As far as Demon Suppression and Death Blow were concerned, he could only put them to simple application.

Of course, it was not because he didn't have enough talent. The main reason was that he was studying the Undying Sect's scripture meticulously. He was researching the "Immortal Demonic Seal" very carefully, he wanted to try and extract this technique into a single killing move. A "Demonic Seal" that allowed the weak to fight the strong.

Without a doubt, the Undying Sect's scripture was broad and deep, but he didn't want to dip into it completely, so long as he could draw out the most important part, it was more than enough. If he could really assimilate it into his martial arts effectively, it would inevitably allow his martial arts to level up.

This way of thinking was not bad, but it was really too hard to carry it out. He tried to force it a few times during these three months. As a result, he coughed up blood incessantly for five times, his body nearly collapsed, and his soul was also wounded several times. One could imagine just how profound and

complicated was this martial arts.

And this was only from extracting the most essential part, if he really completely practiced this technique from the beginning, it might even be more strenuous. No wonder the Undying Sect was able to flourish for so long, their future was all but guaranteed with this kind of abnormal arts to comprehend.

During the fourth month of training, Xiao Chen finally had a little accomplishment, the “Demonic Seal” was finally taking shape. At the same time, he could control the Chaotic Patterns of the four major killing moves at long last.

And during these four months, Xiao Chen also strenuously comprehended this “Undying Wings”. To be able to fly freely in the sky was something he longed for day and night. Even if he was unable to cultivate the Demonic Seal, he must absolutely cultivate this divine wing. This was something he spent the most attention on the past four months.

Apparently, the Undying Wings was much harder to practice than the Demonic Seal, he thought hard and long about it every single day, but the progress was very slow. He was only able to form two hazy purple mist behind his back, it was far from materializing the divine wings.

During these past few months, the three skeletons spent every day meditating in silence. They almost never left the residence. For them, all they needed was a quiet place to train, they need not anything else. The snow-white little Keke always appeared and disappeared unpredictably, who knew just what was it doing so busily. Fortunately, it was still obedient and didn’t enter those forbidden area of the Undying Sect.

As for that tough little dragon, it was still as competitive as before, it went back and forth to the underground labyrinth everyday. It seemed to be challenging the little Winged Dragon at the back mountain to close quarter combat almost everyday. Although that Winged Dragon could be considered a “little dragon”, it was already three to four meter long, it was much bigger than the tough little dragon. The tough little dragon could be said to keep on fighting despite continual setbacks, everyday it crawled back to the underground labyrinth while dripping with blood. It recovered its physical strength by devouring the Cloudfire Fruit.

In the end, even the little Winged Dragon was getting scared of the tough little dragon's desperate struggle. It was not that the Winged Dragon didn't want to kill the tough little dragon to settle this once and for all, it was that the tough little dragon seemed to be immortal, no matter how severe it was wounded, it would still live on to see another day, as if it had an undying body. And every time they fought, it became stronger.

Everyone in the Undying Sect was already used to the dragon roars on a daily basis. And some people, including the Undying patriarch, gradually started to look at the tough little dragon in a different light, they had finally realized the tough little dragon was not ordinary.

Time always passed by without one noticing, Xiao Chen had already stayed in the Undying Sect for half a year. He finally mastered the Demonic Seal. Of course, the so-called mastered was the same as how he could control the three major killing moves, the God Slayer, Chaotic Pattern, and Demon Suppression. It was not on the level where he could exhibit its full potential.

After adding the Demonic Seal to the four major killing moves, it could now be known as the five major killing moves. And in regards to practicing the Undying Wings, Xiao Chen could be said to be unfaltering and kept on fighting despite continual setbacks. He was enlightened when he looked at how the tough little dragon was challenging the little Winged Dragon everyday.

It was yet another early morning, the sunlight spilled on the back mountain. The hazy mist flickered with multi-colored radiance, It was lingering on the woodland, and among the flowers and plants, enhancing their beauty. This beautiful pure land was just like the fairyland.

"Xiao Chen, how dare you! The patriarch didn't allow you to break into the back mountain, he only allowed you to train quietly in the front, you actually had the impertinence to run into my sect's important location....." Yan Qing Cheng was currently facing the morning sun to take in and send out the multi-colored sunlight. One after another fantasy-like luster were lingering on her body. It made her seem extraordinary in contrast, her beauty was capable of causing the downfall of a city. It made people unable to look at her directly.

"Heh-heh, why don't you just go and complain to the patriarch." Xiao Chen

chuckled. He came to this back mountain almost every day, since those older generation figures of the Undying Sect who lived at this place did not say anything, how could Yan Qing Cheng do anything to him.

Seeing Xiao Chen's unperturbed smile, Yan Qing Cheng hated him to the point the root of her teeth started to itch. She had been enduring this anger for so many days, there were many rumors regarding the relationship between Xiao Chen and herself in the sect. Although she knew that it was her junior and senior sisters who were adding fuel to the fire, it wasn't without reasons.

The disturbance caused by the Dragon King war in the outside world had gradually calmed down, many events that happened on the dragon island at that time had already spread out, the entanglements between Xiao Chen and herself had already been known to everyone in the Undying Sect. It made her eyes turn black the moment she saw Xiao Chen. 1 Especially when she thought about practicing the Obliterate Demon Absolute God, the consequences might turn even more serious in the future. She couldn't help but vent on Xiao Chen by biting back twice.

"Mr. Xiao, don't be so complacent. I will pay back everything you've done to me sooner or later."

"That's good, I will look forward to it. In half a year later, I assume your Undying Demon Technique will have completely changed into Obliterate Demon Absolute God. At that time, it seems like I will be able to give you any orders. Oh, let me think about it, I am an ordinary man, I have all the needs an ordinary man requires. It seems like it is about time to stop this monk-like practice, it is uninteresting. We should have a good talk, and discuss about our future."

"Drop dead! Know your place, I am far above and beyond where you are! There's nothing to discuss between us."

"I am a man, you are a woman, discussing the matter between us is simply discussing the matter between a man and a woman."

Speaking until here, Xiao Chen turned around and left, because he knew if he kept going, Yan Qing Cheng would completely flip out. At the same time, it was because he felt some uncles were looking at him in the dark.

Yan Qing Cheng's beautiful face was gloomy, her graceful body was shaking

slightly, she really wanted to rush over there to kick Xiao Chen onto the ground and ruthlessly stamp on his hateful smiling face.

Not long later the tough little dragon had arrived, it let out a long roar towards the dragon cave below the cliff. It was provoking the young Winged Dragon in the cave. The three meter long little Winged Dragon always passively accepted the challenge recently, it was feeling furious and depressed in its heart. Just because it didn't have anything better to do, this strange little dragon always came to look for a fight. The Winged Dragon was furious at how it was unable to kill the tough little dragon no matter what.

It flew out of the cave once its wings were unfolded, then it suddenly swoop down. It seemed like the Winged Dragon wanted to end the battle today as early as possible, it fought with full strength at the beginning. The pair of sharp dragon claws resembled the divine hook, it gave rise to a strong wind as it swept towards the tough little dragon's back.

“Swish! Swish! Swish!”

The dragon's shadow swayed, the tough little dragon left a few afterimages in its original place. Its speed was unbelievable as it dodged the attack. As a result, the rock in its original place was shattered by the Winged Dragon's claw.

Xiao Chen was secretly apprehensive when he saw it, the tough little dragon's improvement was really too fast, just now it was using substitution technique consecutively, it was just like when human experts were using the profound movement arts. Nobody taught this tough little dragon the human's martial arts, could it be that this tough little dragon was the same as Keke; that they were born with the knowledge of some profound secret arts to begin with? But wasn't that the privilege of the Dragon King?

He didn't pay attention to it for a long time, but the tough little dragon's single horn had already sprouted completely. It was flickering with glorious radiance, it seemed unusually mystical, the tough little dragon's physique seemed to have gone through a huge transformation, its power was much greater than before, the speed was also much faster.

“Roar.....”

The two dragons had an intense battle, although the tough little dragon was

still not the Winged Dragon's opponent, it was unafraid of death and was exceptionally fierce. That tough little dragon was really a little reckless, it made the Winged Dragon feel helpless.

In the end, the tough little dragon ran away in defeat with blood flowing all over. And just at this time, Xiao Chen made his move, he used the Sealed God Light Screen to envelop the little Winged Dragon that was about to fly back into the dragon cave. It made this little Winged Dragon very furious, it was struggling unceasingly.

"Don't panic little guy, I just wanted to see how you operate the dragon force and the pair of wings, I will release you in a while." Xiao Chen spared no effort to constrain the little Winged Dragon and probed around unceasingly.

Using both hands to feel the fragment of scales, sensing the surge of dragon force within, he observed how those power was circulating on the Winged Dragon's pair of wings. Linking it with the Undying Wings technique, Xiao Chen sent the secret arts to the blood vessels at his back while in deep thoughts.

After half an hour later, Xiao Chen finally had some insight, but it was also at this time he felt something was fishy. The little Winged Dragon was no longer struggling, and at the same time, he found that there were huge shadows on the ground. Raising his head, he saw two huge monsters descending from the sky while giving rise to strong wind.

Goodness gracious!

Xiao Chen released the little Winged Dragon and ran away immediately. The two fully grown Winged Dragons that were on patrol had returned, just in time to see these event unfolding.

How was it possible to get away, those huge dragon claws swept towards Xiao Chen in but a moment. However, the claws did not tear him apart, two adult Winged Dragons landed in front and behind Xiao Chen. The rays of light flickered, and the huge draconic body disappeared without a trace, a pair of male and female youth blocked his way, the man was tall and soldierly, the woman was tender and beautiful.

Although he knew the adult Winged Dragons had power equivalent to demigod realm, and was capable of transforming into humans, Xiao Chen still felt a little

shocked to see it with his own eyes. And the main reason was that; he was caught bullying their child red-handed earlier, how could he not feel apprehensive.

“That was, uh..... I didn’t have any evil intention.” Xiao Chen was caught red-handed, he really didn’t know what to say anymore, these were two demigods for crying out loud. He only wanted to study the Undying Heavenly Wings, how did he end up enraging the little Winged Dragon’s parents.

“Wuu~ Wuu~ He was bullying me. And he wanted to steal our treasure.” That little Winged Dragon was flying over from nearby while weeping, then it began to accuse Xiao Chen while whining like a baby.

That @#%¥ Xiao Chen was a little speechless, that little Winged Dragon actually knew how to speak human tongue, and it was very fluent! It was obviously accusing him! One must know that the Winged Dragons were obsessed with treasures, almost all the adult Winged Dragons had fortune that were not too big nor too small. Was it trying to frame him? But thinking about it meticulously, it couldn’t really be considered framing him either, this was the best way to deal with him.

With a swish, the rays of light glinted and Xiao Chen was brought into the dragon cave by these couple.

“If you want us to forgive you, think of a way to make that little dragon that came from the dragon island to pass the legendary dragon martial skill to our child.”

Chapter 131 – Level Up, Success

The dragon cave was built on the cliff, it was about ten meter from the ground, that huge dragon cave was very wide, even if these jade-like dragon couples transformed into huge Winged Dragons, there was enough space for them to stretch their body.

The rock walls within the dragon cave were polished until they were smooth and shiny, it was wide and deep, but the interior was not dusky at all. On the contrary, the depths of the dragon cave was as bright as daytime, the roof of the cave was embedded with many jewels, which provided enough light source.

And what made Xiao Chen believe that the Winged Dragons had a hobby of collecting treasures was that; he saw a pile of gold coins and jewels in front. The glorious radiance was so brilliant that made people unable to open their eyes.

Xiao Chen was dumbstruck, he didn't dare to believe his eyes, so much jewels all in one place was really too astonishing. No wonder Lawrence and the others always said there would inevitably be someone who was determined to become the legendary dragon slayer. One dragon cave was precisely a treasure in itself, if they could massacre the Winged Dragon, they would have obtained treasures that could last them a few lifetime.

"See~ Look at this greedy bastard's eyes, I didn't lie, not only did he bully me, he wanted to steal our treasure." The little Winged Dragon had a very puerile voice when it was speaking. Obviously, it was still very young.

Looking at that little beast who accused him, Xiao Chen was really a little speechless. Could this be the so-called early maturing? Regardless if it was Keke, those little Dragon Kings, or this little Winged Dragon, they all possessed an out-of-ordinary wisdom.

"Little guy, you shouldn't lie. Otherwise you will become fat and turn as round as a ball."

"Who are you calling small, you are not as tall as me." The three meter long little Winged Dragon walked over and stood gallantly to look down at Xiao Chen, then it said, "You are a bad guy, you bully me....."

Here it goes again..... Seeing how it was able to speak human tongue, Xiao

Chen felt that it was a little funny, but he was unable to laugh in a situation like this.

“What of our proposal from earlier?” The little Winged Dragon’s parents opened their mouth to ask again, although it was very solemn, it was fortunate that they didn’t have killing intent.

“What legendary dragon martial skill, I never heard of it before. Besides, that tough little dragon was always playing it cool, even if it know the secret arts, it is hard to say if it will listen to me and pass the skill to your child. Although the relationship between us is friendly, you guys should know that it is a very proud little dragon.”

While he was saying these, Xiao Chen began to change his mindset, his astonished mentality from seeing so much treasures in the dragon cave slowly calmed down. He started to think of the matter regarding the tough little dragon, it was actually able to arouse these Winged Dragon couple’s attention, the tough little dragon was getting all the more uncommon.

“It doesn’t matter if you succeed or not, what matters is that you tried your best. Otherwise you will have offended us for bullying our child and wanting to steal our treasures. It doesn’t matter to us whether you are the Undying Sect’s guest or not, we can dispose of you any time we want. You must know that we the reason we continue to stand guard here at the Undying Sect is because of their ancestor. There won’t be a big problem even if we slaughter a few people once in a while.”

The little Winged Dragon’s mother opened her mouth to speak.

Although they were very serious, Xiao Chen could catch a slight smile on their face. They obviously didn’t have the slightest amount of killing intent. On the contrary, it was as if their scheme had succeeded.

Goodness gracious! Xiao Chen felt a bit helpless, it seems that even if this had not happened today, these two Winged Dragon might go to find him sooner or later. Apparently, they had already planned for this a long time ago.

“Alright, I will try my best, it’s not my problem anymore no matter how it ended.”

“Then we’ll give you our thanks in advance. Oh, we knew that you are attempting to learn the Undying Heavenly Wings, we can give you some pointers.” The little Winged Dragon’s father said with a smile on his face.

“How did you guys find out?”

“A person who had returned from the dragon island, how can we ignore someone like that.”

“You will help me cultivate the Undying Divine Wings?”

“We can give you a pointer or two, we did study the Undying Sect’s scripture before.” The little Winged Dragon’s mother had a very amiable smile, it made people feel as if they were cleansed by spring breeze.

“You guys also practiced it before?” Xiao Chen was very shocked, the dragons were able to practice the human’s heavenly arts, this was a really shocking fact.

“Due to the differences in physique, we only studied it for a while. Without a few years of hard work, you won’t be able to master the Undying Divine Wings, this is a step-by-step process, you can’t rely on your power to make a breakthrough, you need to slowly open access the acupuncture point for the divine wings.....”

After listening to the dragon couple’s stories, Xiao Chen gained more insight regarding the Undying Divine Wings. The human body had numerous acupuncture points, but people didn’t understand everything about the acupuncture points. Generally speaking, all they knew about were the major acupuncture points in the human body. Such as the dozens of “Flight Acupoints” that the Undying Divine Wings required, they were acupuncture points that had never been heard of before.

What was written in the Undying Sect’s scripture were very brief, it only mentioned to open up those mysterious “Flight Acupoints” at the back to generate the Undying Divine Wings, but it didn’t mention in detail how many of those acupuncture points were there.

In accordance with what Xiao Chen had known before, he thought there were only forty to fifty acupuncture points involved, but now he finally knew there were actually eighty-one acupuncture points, they were collectively known as

the Flight Acupoints. 1

Having someone to guide him was more effective than learning by himself, especially when it came to this kind of scripture. Just knowing the method was far from enough, the predecessor's experience was also very important.

These dragon couple had stayed at the Undying Sect for nearly a thousand years, they knew a lot of secrets. After listening to their explanation, Xiao Chen finally realized how he should go about with his training, he didn't need to observe how the little Winged Dragon operate its dragon force to fly anymore.

Because he had enough power, he had already opened nearly half of the Flight Acupoints, maybe he would be able to master it in half a year later. Only until that time would he be able to generate the genuine Undying Divine Wings, because even if one acupuncture point was missed, it would be hard to control the divine wings.

After Xiao Chen left the dragon cave, the dragon couple had a very solemn expression as they said to Xiao Chen, "The matter regarding that little dragon, you must not tell anyone, otherwise you will be in for a great disaster."

Xiao Chen nodded his head doubtfully, it seemed like the tough little dragon had many secrets, this was not the first time he had thought of it, the proud little black dragon might be the Ancestral Dragon, but he kept overthrowing that idea. Legend says the Ancestral Dragon was extraordinary gifted the moment it was born, even the Dragon Kings were not its opponent. As far as the tough little dragon was concerned, all of these requirements were not met. Xiao Chen could only think of the tough little dragon as a competitive dragon, maybe it might become as good as the Dragon King one of these days.

"No way, I don't like that little rascal, it came to disturb me all day long, I don't want to learn any legendary whatever martial skill from it!"

When he left the dragon cave, Xiao Chen heard a few exchange of words between the dragon couple and the little Winged Dragon, they seemed to have touched upon the topic of "Dragon King".

The time passed day after day, but Xiao Chen gained little benefits everyday.

It had already been ten days since he received the advice from the dragon

couple, Xiao Chen spent most of his time immersed in a mysterious meditation realm. He was currently training his personal secret arts, that was his root after all.

At this moment, he suddenly felt as if he was floating high in the clouds, his entire body felt as light as feather. 2 Moreover, it seemed as if his soul was about to materialize and flew out from his body. An musky fragrance was emitted from his body.

Shortly afterwards, there was a loud rumbling sound, it was as if a sudden clap of thunder had resounded in his sea of consciousness, he actually made a breakthrough in this kind of quiet meditation; rising to Eighth Celestial Layer from the Seventh Celestial Layer, he leveled up again.

His entire body flickered like a gem, as if his body had become sage-like. A fragrant breath was lingering in the room, his eyes were as sharp as the blade at this moment, his three energies had reached a new level which he couldn't touch upon in the past.

A powerful energy was circulating in his body that was flickering with radiance, it was like a surging river, maybe it might be more accurate to say it was like a torrential river. It made him feel as if he possessed endless energy. Everything did not come to an end at this point, the energy surged through hundreds of blood vessels in his body unceasingly, it didn't stop for the following three days and three night. It seemed like his body was being refined, he could clearly feel the changes in his body.

In the end, every inch of his skin was as crystal clear the bronze-colored divine jade, it was brimming with explosive power. His physique was much too powerful compared to before. When everything had finally calmed down, Xiao Chen found to his surprise that he had actually promoted to the peak of Eight Celestial Layer. There was only a fine line separating him from the Ninth Celestial Layer, it felt as if he might make a breakthrough at any time.

He almost breakthrough two levels at once, this was truly an unexpected surprise, one must know that it would get all the more challenging the more one advanced, making a leap like this was very rarely seen.

Xiao Chen clearly understood all of this was because the martial arts he

learned from the dragon island had been perfected one step further, that was the reason he was able to make a breakthrough like this. This made him all the more convinced, that he would only practice this secret arts. If he wanted to learn other martial arts, it should be like the Demonic Seal, extracting the essence, turning it into a killing move, and not learn the original arts. As for the Undying Divine Wings, it was more like a skill, he didn't need to change his main secret arts.

There was another nice surprised in store for Xiao Chen's transformation this time, when the powerful energy that grew and multiplied without end finally stabilized, he felt a burning hot aura coming from his back. The purple radiance was flickering, and the entire house was covered by the purple mist, it was misty and brilliant.

The Eighth Celestial Layer peak energy that finally stabilized and calmed down started to revolt again, all of them charged into all the "Flight Acupoints" at his back. While the bones were making grinding noise, Xiao Chen's body trembled again and again, concentrated beads of sweat emerged on the surface of his body. As if his body had been moistened by water, he was dripping with sweat from head to toe.

With the final ringing sound produced by the joints, Xiao Chen's body trembled repeatedly, and then a rumbling sound transmitted from his sea of consciousness. In that instant, he felt as if he was soaring high in the clouds, he knew that he must have mastered the Undying Divine Wings this time!

Chapter 132 – Too Luxurious!

Purple radiance burst out in an instant, the Undying Divine Wings extended from Xiao Chen's back. The purple divine wings were as clear as the jade, they were almost transparent, and yet, they contained a powerful force. These were not merely divine wings capable of flight, but also a terrifying weapon! They were far from comparable to Yan Qing Cheng's Fifth Celestial Layer Undying Divine Wings at that time. The Undying Divine Wings at the peak of Eighth Celestial Layer had already become a very terrifying and powerful weapons. They were comparable to the sharp blade of a divine weapon.

Of course, these wings were completely materialized with his energy, he could control them however he wished.

“Swish!”

Lightly spreading out the divine wings, Xiao Chen arrived at the courtyard like a purple lightning. After that, he transformed into a purple light again and entered the mountain woods in front for a test flight.

Everything was so perfect, after mastering the Undying Divine Wings, Xiao Chen's speed had increased to an unfathomable level. He could extend his sphere of activities to the sea and the sky hereafter, he didn't need to limit himself to the ground anymore when engaging in a fierce battle. It could be said that with the divine wings in his possession, those Spell Master and Psychic that could fly will no longer hold any advantage over him. He will inevitably become those people's bane.

Standing beside the water well, Xiao Chen lifted the cask over and over to wash his body, his mood was undoubtedly joyful.

The food in the room had cooled off a long time ago, Xiao Chen was in closed-door training for three days already, the kitchen staff come and go several times but didn't disturb him, he only set the food down quietly. Perhaps this was some kind of unwritten rule in this sect.

Although he was eating cold food, Xiao Chen felt as though he was enjoying a luxurious meal. This was because he was spiritually satisfied, half a year of bitter training finally paid off, these period of training could be said to be a huge

success.

The three skeletons also seemed to have felt his joyous occasion. They walked in from another room and moved their jaws to generate the “clacking” sound, as if they were congratulating him.

He hadn't seen the snow-white little critter and tough little dragon for a while now, Xiao Chen strode across the road with agile steps and headed towards the back mountain.

Yan Qing Cheng was currently sitting quietly among the fragrant turf. A hazy radiance enveloped her surroundings. The pleasant birdsong lingered in the flower trees nearby. It was very peaceful. A beauty blending into the picturesque nature, it was indeed a vivid and harmonious scene.

Xiao Chen quietly watched from the sidelines for a moment, he didn't break this beautiful scene and continued forging ahead after passing through this area. Only until he distanced himself did Yan Qing Cheng open her beautiful eyes to take a quick look before she shut it again.

After passing through the waterfall area, the sound of a fierce battle could be heard coming from the front. As expected, the tough little dragon was having yet another fierce battle in the vicinity of the dragon cave. Xiao Chen was shocked to find that its speed seemed to have somewhat increased, and its battle skill seemed more refined than ever, but it appeared to be relying on brute force for the most part.

He finally understood after a long time, Xiao Chen already knew, it was not that the tough little dragon was being impulsive. More like, it was intentionally challenging the strong, seemingly trying to toughen its physical body at all costs. It did not hesitate to get serious injury every time, as if it was trying to arouse the potential hidden in the dragon's body. As far as the battle technique was concerned, it seemed to possess an outstanding gift. Even though it wasn't used frequently, it was already getting more adept. It was just as the Winged Dragon couple had said, it had grasped some legendary dragon martial skill. That was because its battle style every time was so profound and brilliant.

At this moment, the one fighting the tough little dragon was the little Winged Dragon's father. He transformed into human and personally practiced with it. Of

course, he was holding back and used just enough power to strike every inch of the tough little dragon's body. The dragon force penetrated it unceasingly, the black little dragon's scales were already stained by blood. Although it was seriously hurt, it was not to the point of life threatening.

The tough little dragon seemed to be very pleased with this kind of battle. It displayed a series of movements Xiao Chen had never seen before, it left one after another afterimages on the battleground. Its battle style was very eccentric and extremely effective. Although it was impossible to injure the little Winged Dragon's father, it still displayed an out of ordinary battle skill.

Xiao Chen could see some gateway, it was truly suitable to be named the dragon's battle skill. The tough little dragon seemed to be repaying the Winged Dragon couple for personally training it since the past few days. Although this little guy was uncommunicative, it was level-headed. It knows what should be done and what not to be done.

Although the little Winged Dragon who watched the battle at sidelines had a dark expression, its somewhat excited eyes had already betrayed its gradually changing mood.

After the battle was over, the tough little dragon dragged its injured body towards the little Winged Dragon. It actually extended a dragon claw and pointed it towards the little Winged Dragon's forehead.

The little Winged Dragon was so young and yet it was able to speak human tongue, it was clearly out of the ordinary. The little Winged Dragon stared blankly for a moment, but it still lowered its head in the end, otherwise the tough little dragon couldn't reach due to the difference in height.

A speck of light emitted from the tough little dragon's claw, it rushed forth like water ripples and actually blended into the little Winged Dragon's forehead.

Only until the tough little dragon departed for quite some time did the little Winged Dragon regain its consciousness, then it mumbled to itself, "Actually, if this little rascal did not come to disturb me everyday, it is quite cute. Just now it passed yet another battle skill to me."

The Winged Dragon's parent smiled towards Xiao Chen and said, "We are extremely grateful."

“Don’t mention it, the tough little dragon has its own point of view, I don’t have the ability to sway its way of thinking. I think the reason why it taught your child the dragon martial skill is because it also feels bad to come and bother you everyday.”

“That’s right, that’s right. I was almost driven crazy by it.” The little Winged Dragon whispered to itself.

Xiao Chen went after the tough little dragon, by the time he left, he seemed to have heard the little Winged Dragon’s father muttered the few words, “Dragon King”. Could they be talking about the tough little dragon? Unlikely. Could it be that he wanted his child to evolve into a Dragon King? That..... was an audacious way of thinking. However, that seemed to be very possible, that little Winged Dragon didn’t look like any ordinary dragon no matter how he looked at it. It already knew how to speak human tongue at such young age.

He quickly caught up to the seriously hurt tough little dragon, the little guy just coolly nodded towards Xiao Chen as usual and continued forging ahead without changing its expression.

Returning to that underground cave, the tough little dragon silently washed the bloodstain in the hot spring. While enduring those throbbing pain all over the body, it began to gobble up the cloudfire fruits to restore its three energies.

Despite how the caves were filled to the brim with this kind of cornelian-like fruits, after a few months, the cloudfire fruits were almost exhausted by the tough little dragon and snow-white

little critter. There were only a few stalks remaining on the wall.

Maybe the rate of the tough little dragon’s improvement had to do with these. Every time after it was seriously hurt, it would use this kind of spiritual fruits to replenish its physical body at high speed, which helped it to unleash the body’s potential one step further.

At the same time, Xiao Chen also noticed there were some other fruits in the cave. After a careful examination, it actually looked very much like an amethyst pear. He knew it was impossible for this tough little dragon to go and search by itself, because this little guy only know how to fight and train all day long. He was sure that it wouldn’t go out its way to find food to satisfy its desire.

Xiao Chen immediately thought of Keke, that little thing was indeed the bane of all spiritual item. Most of the good thing in the vicinity couldn't escape from the hollow of its palm. At the corner, Xiao Chen even discovered more than half of the amethyst reishi mushroom missing. That's such a waste, it's really too wasteful, this kind of rare treasures were actually wasted like this.

Keke always appeared and disappeared unpredictably recently, Xiao Chen hadn't seen the little critter for a really long time already. But now it seems like the little critter was exploring this mountain of immortals like a fish back in water.

Xiao Chen waited here for roughly three days before the snow-white little critter showed up. The little critter was carrying a super big ginseng that looked like radish as it returned. However, it threw the ginseng to the tough little dragon uncaringly, as if it was throwing a Chinese cabbage.

Keke's fur was brighter than ever, it was as clear as a finely crafted divine jade. Its pair of glittering big eyes seemed to be brimming with more intelligence, it could even be said to be covered with spiritual energy from head to toe. Of course, it was a also little fatter. It was easy to imagine how it treated these kind of spiritual item as food on a daily basis. This made Xiao Chen stare at it blankly, it was really too extravagant!

Seeing that Xiao Chen had come, the snow-white little critter's expression changed slightly. It looked fishy no matter how he looked at it.

"Are you hiding something from me?"

It shook its head strongly, then the snow-white little critter threw the radish-like ginseng over. That means it wanted to let Xiao Chen enjoy it, there was some implication of winning his favor by fawning on him.

"Ey, you have a guilty conscience. Talk, did you cause some trouble again?"

It was rare for the snow-white little critter to expose this kind of apologetic expression. It pointed at the big ginseng and used its little paw to gesture continuously. Although it was well-coordinated, it still spent a long time in order for Xiao Chen to understand what it was saying; the ginseng was actually pulled up from someone's medicinal garden! 1

Xiao Chen became speechless immediately. He knew without asking, according to its personality, it must have went to other people's medicinal garden and treated their precious land as its own vegetable garden.

"This kind of giant ginseng, how many have you pulled up?"

The snow-white little critter thought about it seriously, then it extended one little beast paw.

"Five?"

The snow-white little critter turned its little paw over, with the hollow of the palm facing downward.

"Ten?"

The little paw flipped over again.

Xiao Chen was at a loss for words.

The little paw flipped over one more time.

Xiao Chen could feel his face turning pale 2. Seeing how it still wanted to flip the little paw, he hastily stopped it.

"Stop flipping, I already know, you really treated that place as nothing more than a radish field. In your eyes, those giant ginseng are no different from a giant radish."

The snow-white little critter blinked its glittering big eyes, it then scratched its head embarrassedly.

"Other than the giant ginseng, did you touch any other medicinal herb?"

Dilly-dally, dilly-dally, Keke searched the corner of the cave to find some leftover stolons and seeds. One couldn't help but sigh, there were a complete variety of spiritual item, ranging from reishi mushroom to amethyst pear to daybreak dates and pure gold lotus.....

Xiao Chen felt an intense headache.

"Did you really think what you are eating as Chinese cabbage?!"

Wrecking havoc at an important location of the Undying Faction ——— the medicinal garden. This is a pretty big disaster.

However, the snow-white little critter was hardly fearful, it was gesticulating a little proudly. After communicating with it attentively, Xiao Chen finally understood what it meant.

Keke told him it didn't left any clue behind, and that the medicinal garden was really big. It pulled one over here and another one over there. As for the fruits, it picked one from this tree, two from that tree, harvesting them evenly.

"You sure are crafty, but did you know? People are tending to these spiritual items with care. They might neglect it if it is only for a short time, but they will eventually notice something is wrong after a long time. You are stirring up trouble for me again."

The snow-white little critter was no longer feeling pleased with itself, it hanged its head dejectedly to express that it had understood. Then it pointed at the tough little dragon without any code of brotherhood.

The haughty and cool tough little dragon also felt apologetic, it was indeed enjoying much of these spiritual items. Xiao Chen felt completely helpless.

After a further enquiry, Xiao Chen didn't know whether to laugh or to get angry. He found out the reason why Keke went missing frequently, always appearing and disappearing unpredictably. It had taken residence in the medicinal garden and treated that place as its comfortable recess.

"Looks like we have no choice but to leave the Undying Faction now." In fact, even if this had not happened, Xiao Chen had also thought about leaving this place soon. He had been at this place for half a year already, the disputes between the Dragon King should have ceased already, and he already got enough benefits at this place. It was about time to change the training environment.

Before leaving this place, he thought it might be a good idea to pass the scripture found in this cave to the Undying Patriarch. After all, he will definitely put the Undying Divine Wings to full use in the future. It wouldn't be good if people thought he went to the Undying Faction to steal their techniques. If he passed this book over openly, it may be assumed that the Undying Patriarch wouldn't go as far as taking back the Undying Divine Wings he mastered. After all, he had a certain "friendship" with the so-called founder of the Demon Sect.

Like this, there wouldn't be much problem if he used the Undying Divine Wings.

Out of Xiao Chen's expectation, when he was having an audience with the Undying Patriarch, he actually already knew about Xiao Chen practicing the Undying Divine Wings. This made Xiao Chen quite shocked, looking at that illusory old man who seemed like he was in another dimension, he felt deep in the heart that it was unfathomable.

The Undying Patriarch did not reproach him, he took a look after receiving the scripture and said, "This is the ancestor Demon King's original records, it is not any different from the scripture in the sect. So the ancestor had once secluded himself in that cave. It may be assumed that he was afraid the scripture will be lost to the vicissitudes of time, so he intentionally left another book in that cave."

Next, Xiao Chen expressed his desire to leave, he wanted to temper himself by exploring every corners of the immortal's mainland.

"I once said you are free to leave whenever you please. Although according to reason, you are still under house arrest, but since you have found the Demon King's original scripture, I can liberate you in advance. In addition, since you have already mastered the Undying Divine Wings and understand some of our sect's secret technique, I will confer you as the Vindex 3 of Undying Sect. You won't get any privilege, but if the Undying Sect is in trouble, you must come and help, will you agree to that?"

Xiao Chen thought inwardly, "Since elder already said it like this, how can I refuse?" However, it was as it should be. After all, he had practiced other people's scripture. But he may assume that he wouldn't even need to lift a finger to help the Undying Sect during this lifetime. Just who would be capable of exterminating the Undying Sect? Even deities had to think twice before provoking them. 4

In the end, just when Xiao Chen was thinking how should he take his leave, the Undying Patriarch's words made him blank out immediately. He spit out the tea he just drank a moment ago.

"Are you willing to take Qing Cheng as your wife?" 5

Chapter 133 – Bastard Fatty

Seeing Xiao Chen's gaping expression, the Undying Patriarch didn't wait for him to say anything and immediately said, "Oh? I guess we'll let nature take its course."

Xiao Chen wanted to explain why he spit out the water just now, but recalling this the old man before him was too mysterious, how could he not have realized already with his worldly wisdom that comes with old age, he was clearly stirring him up on purpose.

Before he left, Xiao Chen drank a cup of wine together with the younger generation of the Undying Sect. All of these were arranged by the Undying Patriarch, it was impossible for the older generation to show up. That was because even if he was the Vindex of their sect, he clearly didn't have any rank.

They toasted one after another, although Xiao Chen was surrounded by some beautiful ladies, he felt like a fish back in water. It must be mentioned that the female disciples of the Undying Sect were all very good-looking.

"Brother Xiao, when will you marry off junior sister Yan?"

"It's a pity this older sister has resolved herself not to marry, otherwise I will definitely fight over you with junior sister Yan."

"I hear brother Xiao had successfully mastered Undying Divine Wings, it must be junior sister Yan's contribution."

.....

This group of woman could even be said to be telling one lies after another, the Undying Sect was as the rumor says; the relationship between the disciples are thin, they are always fighting and scheming against each other. Right now, Yan Qing Cheng is their most powerful rival in the competition for the patriarch's position. They'd rather have her marry off immediately.

As for those male disciples, none of them were being courteous towards Xiao Chen, each and every one of them had an ugly look on their face. They were forcing him to down the alcohol and forbid him from using the secret technique to diffuse the wine. Xiao Chen was seriously drunk and his steps were unsteady.

Damn, these bastards! He had no choice but to keep toasting with those most vicious guy. Fortunately, he had enough alcohol tolerance and downed two of the noisiest guy.

When it was finally his turn, Qinyi drank till he drop, he grabbed Xiao Chen's neck and said while he was drunk, "You little guy, because of you, I was running around naked....."

Xiao Chen looked at him in such a drunken state, for him to actually bring up such a topic, he immediately thought that this guy might not be that hateful. Thinking about it carefully, this guy did not try to harm him, all he wanted was to humiliate him. And after that, he didn't take any other action.

"Who asks you to set me up first, this is getting revenge by playing somebody back at his own game, heh-heh....."

"You sneaky little bastard..... Wait till I go out to train, I will definitely settle this score. Come and drink..... drink....." This guy obviously drank a little too much, even his tongue is getting loose. After drinking a few cupful, he continued, "Our strongest people have already gone out to train, otherwise you..... are far from their opponent, I am saying..... those who are about the same age as us..... not someone on the level of second senior brother."

Xiao Chen naturally knew who was this second senior brother he was talking about, he once received them at the beach, that was a forty odd years man, his power was incomprehensible.

When they were about to leave, the little Winged Dragon saw the tough little dragon came to the back mountain, it immediately shouted as if it was wronged, "Are you kidding me, I already fought with you today, why did you come here, wuu~ wuu~"

But when it saw the tough little dragon hinting it to come over, the little Winged Dragon immediately thought it was a little strange. Finally, the tough little dragon placed its little claw on the forehead of the little Winged Dragon. A burst of ripple-like hazy radiance faded away on top of its head unceasingly.

Only until the tough little dragon and Xiao Chen gained some distance did the little Winged Dragon rouse up. It was just like the voice of a baby, but it earnestly shouted, "I will fight with you again in the future, but I might become a Dragon

King already at that time, make sure you don't fall behind."

After leaving, they waited for the snow-white little critter for a really long time, it ran over at lightning speed like a jade arrow. The little critter was actually carrying a really big backpack. After that, it made Lunhui Wang carry the backpack and passed it to the skeleton very carefully.

The people who were sending them off felt very baffled; this snow-white little critter is so interesting, could it be that this little critter has packed some items for traveling?

Xiao Chen's face twitched, he was truly putting on a fake smile. He covered up for the snow-white little critter and said, "Sorry for the inconvenience, this little thing is such a glutton, I reckon it may have cleared out your kitchen, please overlook it this once." He took the lead and left with large strides as soon as he finished. No matter how they looked at it, it seemed a little like he was running away.

After one hour had passed, there were miserable shouts transmitted from the Undying Sect, "Damn it, the medicinal garden had been plundered..... it must be that white little critter!"

On the road, Xiao Chen was scolding the perpetrator, "How can you do this, do you really need to pack these up before departure? Let's return these to them stealthily."

The snow-white little critter jumped onto Lunhui Wang's body and hugged the backpack firmly. That means it will not return it even if he beat it to death. Even that tough little dragon had abandoned its doctrine and stood in front of Lunhui Wang to guard the backpack. That was because it knew Keke was loyal to its friends, half of these should be his.

Oh god, these two..... Xiao Chen didn't say anything else and walked forward with large strides.

It must be mentioned that the immortal's mainland was seriously too vast, who knows just how bigger it was compared to the human world. Despite the numerous population, they had only developed ten percent of this boundless earth. The other ninety percent was covered by primitive forest.

Every cities and towns were separated by an endless sea of trees, the towns resided by mankind were like thinly spread flowers that decorated the vast sea of greenness. Describing it as a red dot was not at all an exaggeration.

Close to the ocean was the Undying Sect which located at the southernmost of the continent. If Xiao Chen wanted to enter the interior, he had to head north. Walking on the quiet yet overgrown path, he strictly followed the path indicated by everyone in the Undying Sect, because it would be inconvenient if he get lost in the boundless primitive forest, as he might need to spend a lot of effort in order to find a way out.

Despite there being a desolate ancient path, most people wouldn't dare to travel alone, because ferocious beasts would jump out from the forest at both sides from time to time. However, this didn't have much influence on Xiao Chen and company.

The tough little dragon welcomed all, it would occasionally charge into the primitive forest voluntarily to fight at close quarters. Of course, Xiao Chen didn't dare to let it go too deep, who knows if there were some exotic beasts.

Six days later Xiao Chen finally arrived at a big town, the population count was around fifty thousand people. It was almost comparable to a small country 1. This was the scale of the cities and towns in the world of immortals, because the land was too vast, the primitive forest was too concentrated, and with many vicious beasts roaming around, a lot of people decided to gather together as a result.

This was the first time Xiao Chen had seen a town in the world of immortals, looking at the humans gathering together gave him a really wonderful feeling. Although he saw plenty of people on the dragon island, and at the Undying Sect, he always felt it was lacking this kind of genuine life activities.

In this big town, Xiao Chen felt as if he had returned to the human world, looking at the crowds come and go on the main street, he felt everything was so familiar.

“Candied fruits.....”

“Dog meat steamed bun.....” 2

“Rice cake.....” 3

“Lamb kebab.....”

“Tender and crispy chicken wrap.....”

“Fresh and delicate mushroom soup.....”

Xiao Chen was pushed into the “Refreshment Street” by the crowds, listening to these familiar sound, he felt truly wonderful.

“Boss, give me dog meat bun, rice cake, lamb kebab, and other snacks.” Xiao Chen wanted to experience that kind of feeling from the human world again.

“Little brother, I only sell dog meat bun here.”

Xiao Chen gave him a gold coin and said, “Please help me take care of it, you can keep the remaining money.” It was easy to get things done as long as one had money. After that, Xiao Chen began to eat heartily, although it might not be that tasty, the feeling he gets from eating was a different story.

When Xiao Chen was enjoying the food; in the Undying Sect, Yan Qing Cheng was forced to leave the mountain. The words the Undying Patriarch said to her still resounded in her ears, “Since you chose to practice the Obliterate Demon Absolute God, you have no choice but to roam around the world. This law attach importance to cultivating your mind. Moreover, you must not be too far apart from your vessel, otherwise what’s the point of sending a portion of your soul to the vessel? Your senior sisters and brothers will also leave the mountain not long later, it is about time to let you go and learn through experience.”

Xiao Chen was completely unaware of these. In the end, he simply left the dog meat stall and while walking on this lively refreshment street, he was buying and eating all kind of snacks. He felt even more energetic than ever. This made the tough little dragon and snow-white little critter exceptionally curious. As a result, they also ate until their mouth became shiny due to greasiness. All of theses snacks were really fresh for them.

Nobody found these two animals strange, because they had already seen all kind of big and unusual beasts. There were all kinds of ferocious beast in that endless primitive forest.

As for Lunhui Wang and the other two skeletons, they were following the party not too close nor too far. The three skeletons already looked very much like a human now, the Undying Sect had enough materials, they even put pearls into the eye sockets that barely passed off as genuine one. If one didn't examine closely, they wouldn't be able to find anything strange.

“Hey, isn't it time-consuming walking a dog or a cat? Little brother, you sure are carefree.” A fatty with a dishonest look called out to Xiao Chen. He pointed at Keke behind him, and said, “Is this a cat or a dog, it's beautiful. It is actually grabbing the food with its paw and eat like a human. What kind of breed is it, could it be the legendary Chaos Cat?” 4

Xiao Chen was somewhat speechless. And Keke's face turned dark at once, it was so annoyed that it directly threw more than half of the sticky cake 5 in its little paw to the fatty's face with a “smack”.

This bastard fatty immediately shouted out loud, “An intellectual species! It really is too intelligent, it actually knows how to get angry!” This guy was not angered at all. On the contrary, he was excited as he said, “How much? Sell it to be, brother. I guarantee to give you a good price.”

“Plop!”

Keke threw the “rice cake” in its other paw to the bastard fatty's face.

Chapter 134 – Legend of Warbeast

“Plop!”

Keke threw the “rice cake” in its other paw to the bastard fatty’s face.

“Hey, not only is it intelligent, it even has an air of arrogance, I like this little pup very much. Er... or is it a kitten?” The bastard fatty was not angry at all, he continued to ask excitedly.

“This is an incomparably fierce little lion.”

Hearing Xiao Chen say these, the snow-white little critter rolled its eyes. If Xiao Chen was not related to it, a sticky cake would surely fly towards his face.

“How can that be? There’s no lion like this; snow-white like jade. It doesn’t even have a mane.”

The snow-white little critter no longer paid any attention to them, it jumped onto Qinguang Wang’ shoulder with a thud and continued to finish off the delicacies.

“Don’t tell me it’s the legendary Jade Lion! Hey, it actually climbed up a tree?”

What kind of eyes did the bastard fatty have, was that a tree? Even Qinguang Wang wanted to throw a piece of sticky cake at him. Unfortunately, it didn’t have any. 1

This bastard fatty really seemed like a profiteer, his eyes were already glinting like a gold coin. He excitedly ran around in circles with Keke as the center. As a result, he accidentally bumped into the tough little dragon at the side. This proud and aloof little dragon frequently ate the spiritual items found by Keke, it could even be said to be repaying the little critter, with a little bit of strength, it sent the fatty flying away.

“Ouch! Who bumped into me?” The fatty complained as he got up.

At the same time, a disturbance broke out not far away. A few dozen people rushed over and surrounded Xiao Chen quickly. Two were accompanied by cherished cats, some were pulling huge hounds, and two of them even took along four to five meters long Yellow Earth Dragons. Of course, those couldn’t be considered as genuine dragons, they were merely from a lesser dragon species

that looked like giant lizard.

“Young master, are you okay?” Those people quickly surrounded him.

Those few hounds that were as big as a calf already charged towards the tough little dragon.

“Stop! What are you guys trying to do?!” This fatty didn’t seem that wicked, he hastily stopped them.

But it was already too late, with the tough little dragon’s arrogance, it was always the one doing the provocation, how could it let others offend it? However, towards these kinds of common beasts, it wasn’t even worth killing. It just waved its tail three times beautifully.

“Pow! Pow! Pow!”

The three giant hounds were sent flying seven to eight meters away. They became listless as soon as they hit the ground. They faintly felt a frightening dragon-qi when their bodies made contact.

The bastard fatty’s eyes immediately lit up, the two Yellow Earth Dragons at the side charged over, but he didn’t stop them this time. On the contrary, he looked on without blinking an eye.

“Bang! Bang!”

With two banging noises, two huge Yellow Earth Dragons were also sent flying by the tough little dragon.

“Good! This is too wonderful!” It was as if the bastard fatty had taken an aphrodisiac, his eyes emitted green light. The way he looked at the tough little dragon was more passionate than when he looked at Keke. He said excitedly, “This is a top-notch warbeast, it seemed to be a lesser dragon, but I estimate that it has at least one-fifth of pure dragon blood in its body. I’m going to be rich, I’m going to be rich, hahaha.....” 2

Xiao Chen looked at this bastard fatty dumbfoundedly. After that, he just took the tough little dragon and company to go on their way.

“Brother, don’t go.” The fatty chased after them, then he promptly explained with over-enthusiasm, “Just blame me for being so pleased as to lose my sense

of measure. Haha, but I really am too happy. It seems like this single-horned little beast hasn't cast off its baby teeth yet, if that is the case, then this is really too rare. I am saying the both of us will get rich, seriously. You must believe in my insight, if you let me carry out the activities, this little beast can bring us a great amount of gold coins." 3

Xiao Chen didn't say much to him, this guy was obviously a profiteer, one must not make a deal with them.

"Brother, don't go. You must believe me." The fatty intimately followed beside Xiao Chen, he kept going on and on, "Brother, do you know who I am? I am reputed as the warbeast master with great strategic insight."

Ignoring him, Xiao Chen continued onward.

"You must know that our family has even established the Warbeast Castle in Celestial City, the biggest city in the southern part of the continent. We definitely have enough power."

"Warbeast Castle?" Xiao Chen felt a little baffled and asked, "Is it common practice to have a warbeast in the mainland?"

This time was the fatty's turn to look at Xiao Chen with eyes that one normally used to look at an idiot, the surrounding people also revealed peculiar expressions. This made Xiao Chen feel a little uneasy.

"I say, brother, did you just came out from a forest cave?"

Mother f—! Xiao Chen was really speechless, this guy actually used sarcastic remarks to say he was a prehistoric person.

"Who doesn't know that warbeasts are the most thriving industry in the immortal's mainland?!" The bastard fatty spoke like a specialist, "Not only do the wealthy and powerful ones like to watch the warbeasts, even the commoners actively participate. Many people try to catch an unusual beast to make a living. Let's not even talk about the practitioners, they could even stake a thousand pieces of gold on one throw just to get an intellectual beast with super fighting strength."

After listening to the fatty's very patient explanation, Xiao Chen finally understood that it was common practice to have a warbeast. The owner of every

big warbeast stadium had inseparably close connections with the practitioners, because they were in control of many powerful and exotic creatures. This was very attractive for the practitioners, some sects frequently spent a huge amount just to buy some intellectual beasts.

Many practitioners on the mainland were raising intellectual beasts, those were their loyal partners in battle after all. In order to establish the Warbeast Castle, the owner would require a huge power. Most of the factions were unwilling to provoke them, because they were capable of providing top-notch intellectual beasts.

According to rumors, anyone who dared to establish the Warbeast Castle were certain to have a super vicious beast not inferior to dragons, so much so that rumors said they even had a sacred beast.

“Let me tell you a little secret of this industry.” The bastard fatty whispered mysteriously, “Those who dared to establish a Warbeast Castle did not only have sacred beasts on the same level as dragons, they are certain to have a genuine dragon.”

This really made Xiao Chen very astonished.

Seeing that he was already emotionally affected, the fatty struck while the iron was hot, “Brother, the moment I laid my eyes on you, I felt like we could hit it off, it could even be said to be familiarity at first sight. How about this, why don’t we go find a place to drink a few cups and chat?”

“Very well, how should I address this plump brother?” Xiao Chen was not piqued by the wealth, it was to make a future plan for this tough little dragon. If it was as the bastard fatty said, that it was a common practice to keep a warbeast around, then the immortal’s mainland was too suitable for this proud little dragon. Even after leaving the dragon island, it didn’t have to worry about finding a rival.

With a little bit of effort, the two had already become close brothers. The fatty had a name that would cause people to spit out blood, he was called: Zhuge Liang. 4

It was rare for him to reveal a bashful expression like this, he said, “My parents wanted me to become a little clever, so they gave me this name.”

After talking for a bit, he found that the reason why Zhuge Liang was also well-known in the world of immortals was very simple. A certain practitioner who broke the bounds of space-time and arrived at the world of immortals had published the “Romance of the Three Kingdoms” from the human world. It soon became a very influential masterpiece.

Xiao Chen and the fatty Zhuge Liang chatted while they ate, at last, they finally touched upon the topic he was most concerned about. Wasn't the dragon island sealed? How was it possible for the Warbeast Castle to possess any dragons? Could they be Winged Dragons?

But a single word from the fatty made him completely speechless.

“All the insiders know about our family's trump card, there is an unparalleled Tyrannical Dragon within the Warbeast Castle.”

“How can that be?!” Xiao Chen didn't believe it and asked, “How can a Tyrannical Dragon appear on the mainland, didn't they get sealed on the dragon island?”

“Brother, did you really just come out from a forest cave?”

Mother f—! Using this kind of phrase again, Xiao Chen really wanted to kick him once or twice.

“Oh, my bad my bad, I had forgotten.....” Bastard fatty Zhuge Liang muttered under his breath, “Most people don't know of this, only those who established the Warbeast Castle know of this information.”

“Stop leaving me in suspense, why don't you tell me what is going on?”

“Brother, you should have heard of the disturbance on the dragon island not long ago right?”

“Of course.”

“This was not the first time the seal on the dragon island had been lifted. The seal has been lifted several times every few hundred years. Although no Dragon Kings were born in the past, there were still many ordinary young dragons. Hehe..... do you understand what I mean now?” The fatty narrowed his eyes and smiled, he sipped the drink with a slurp.

“You are saying the predecessor once brought the young dragons out of the dragon island?”

“Clever! It is exactly as you said, not only did they grew up in the mainland, they even had offsprings. But most of them are in the hands of some influential factions, ordinary people have never even heard of them.”

“Then doesn’t that means there’s no shortage of dragons on the immortal’s mainland now?”

“Of course, but there’s not that many to be honest. Moreover, other than the Winged Dragons, even if the other dragons keep far away from the dragon island, they are still under the power of the seal and unable to display the divine abilities they once had. But just by relying on their physical body and strength, even a top-notch sacred beast is not their match. But of course, it also depends on the dragon species, the Tyrannical Dragon I am talking about is not fully grown yet, and not even demigod can destroy its corporeal body.”

Xiao Chen took a deep breath, it seemed like he had underestimated the dragon’s power. He asked, “What kind of major powers are in possession of dragons?”

“Those who have authority, those who have money, and those powerful factions. And of course, the Warbeast Castle has the monopoly. This is also the reason why the warbeast industry has that much influence.” The bastard fatty stressed the statement again. Those capable of establishing the Warbeast Castle inevitably possessed formidable strength and inside information.

While drinking and chatting, Xiao Chen finally understood the position of the warbeast industry on the immortal’s mainland. They could be considered one of the most powerful industries on the mainland. So much so that, even some of the powerful factions would engage in business with them, or even serve under a certain Warbeast Castle.

This bastard fatty was very talkative, he spoke about many fantastic stories regarding the warbeast industry, but the more he listened, the more he felt like the fatty was just shooting off his mouth. A few examples; this guy boasted how there was once a warbeast master who dominated a phoenix from their family’s Warbeast Castle and destroyed a city for revenge. There’s another one; it was

about how a warbeast master who once raised an unknown beast. As a result, when the little beast was fully grown during the warbeast master's later years, it was actually capable of standing up to a Tyrannical Dragon. He talked about how they defeated the Tyrannical Dragon in the stadium of their hated enemy.

The bastard fatty talked about many similar legends, although Xiao Chen did not really believe what he said, he could tell that the warbeast industry had great influence. To sum it all up, the "water" of the warbeast industry was very deep.

Xiao Chen really looked forward to it, it seemed like the tough little dragon had an abundance of opponents now. The existence of the warbeast industry was really too suitable for the tough little dragon, it could even be said to be a blessing.

"How about it brother Xiao, why don't you sell that single-horned little beast to me, I will give you a fair price."

Xiao Chen stared blankly and said, "Why should I sell it to you?"

"Aiyou, hey, I talked for half of the day, my saliva almost dried up, and you still don't understand? The warbeast industry has deep connections, you wouldn't be able to cross the river by yourself, you will save a lot of trouble by selling it to me. I guarantee you will have no shortage of money to spend during your lifetime."

This bastard fatty was really a profiteer, Xiao Chen cursed inwardly and then he said, "I am not selling."

At the same time, he raised his guard. This bastard fatty must have realized this tough little dragon was not ordinary. That's why he was willing to spend a great deal of effort to sweet talk him. Could it be that this guy already realized this was a genuine dragon? However, there were many dragon subspecies on the mainland, the tough little dragon's appearance shouldn't be too eye-catching.

After coaxing and pestering him for a while, the fatty also noticed that Xiao Chen wouldn't sell the tough little dragon no matter what. Then he finally said resentfully, "Alas, pity my saliva, you still can't get the point after talking so much, what a scatterbrain."

"You want me to kick you?" Although Xiao Chen felt that this bastard fatty was

very friendly, he was a bit annoying.

“Just kidding, heh-heh. How about this, why don’t we sign a contract? That single-horned little beast still belongs to you, but I will be responsible for it.”

Xiao Chen had already categorized him as a damned profiteer a long time ago, he definitely wouldn’t sign a contract with him. He said, “If you can offer an optimal condition, I can make a verbal agreement, and the tough little dragon will be in your care, but I will absolutely not sign a contract.”

“So it is called the tough little dragon, interesting, it indeed has a resemblance to a dragon. However, I say brother, aren’t you a little too inauthentic? There’s no such thing as a verbal agreement, only a written contract would be effective.”

“I always comply with the agreement, I like to make deals with honest people. If you have good faith, then you won’t care about the contract.”

These words checkmated the fatty Zhuge Liang, he said embarrassedly, “So brother, you really didn’t just come out from a forest cave after all.”

“You bastard, those words again, don’t make me kick you, you damned fatty!”

Next, Xiao Chen and this profiteer Zhuge Liang began to talk. He came to understand more regarding the warbeasts. The more he listened, the more he thought this industry was specially created for the tough little dragon.

However, on the other side, the tough little dragon was grinding its teeth as it looked at the bastard fatty. Keke was also looking at him with an ugly expression.

Chapter 135 – Beast Examination

They were currently situated in a private room. A long table was especially laid out for the two little beasts, with various kinds of delicacies not inferior to the ones the fatty and Xiao Chen were having. As for Lunhui Wang and the other two skeletons, they just stood there like a tree trunk, not touching the food or drinks. The fatty also did not pry much.

The fatty clearly noticed the two little beasts' fluctuating mood, he asked Xiao Chen in a low voice, "I say brother, do these two little beasts possess intelligence? Why do I feel that I could hear them grinding their teeth towards me?"

"It is not your imagination, this is a fact. You treated a very terrifying little beast as a kitten, and another one as a source of money, how could they not want to bite you?"

In short, this was supposed to be a really pleasant party, the bastard fatty had expressed enough goodwill, he promised Xiao Chen that he could satisfy the tough little dragon's need by providing it with an opponent everyday, but it did not require the tough little dragon to show up in the warbeast stadium to perform.

The fatty was born in a family with great influence over the warbeasts, although he was not from the main family, he had great talent on this warbeast business. He possessed a sharp intuition, the instant he saw the tough little dragon, his blood boiled for some reason. He felt that he might have just found a treasure that hadn't been opened yet.

If his intuition was accurate, and somehow unearthed a super powerful warbeast, then his position in the family would inevitably rise many times over. He would inevitably attract the attention of the clan leader and elder. Although it was most likely impossible to claim the position of clan leader, his power and position would rise by a wide margin.

In regards to the request raised by Xiao Chen, he was not worried at all, that was meant to be. The more powerful the warbeast, the more potential the warbeast possessed, the more they couldn't let it get onto the stage voluntarily. Only this way would they be able to entice more people.

“I say brother, we have said all there is that needs to be said, I have also accepted all your conditions, why don’t we go and see the tough little dragon’s potential?”

The tough little dragon was a little unwilling, it didn’t have a favorable impression of the bastard fatty.

“Don’t worry too much, you tough little dragon, this is all for your own good. The only thing you are lacking to evolve into a Dragon King is a worthy rival. They will keep making arrangements for you in the future.” Xiao Chen lightly patted the tough little dragon’s scales and softly whispered beside its ear.

The tough little dragon blinked its eyes, then it nodded strongly and agreed happily.

This battle maniac! Xiao Chen heaved a sigh.

“I am only representing the family and came to patrol, I didn’t bring any especially powerful warbeast with me. I’m not sure if there is any intellectual beast in this town that is worthy of taking the stage.”

Not long later they arrived at the warbeast arena, from far away they could already hear the roars of the beasts, as well as the excited shouts and shrieks of people.

It was really bursting with popularity!

Warbeasts, they truly deserved to be called the most powerful industry on the mainland.

This place was very big, it was divided into a few battle arenas. Each arena was filled with a multitude of people. All the spectators were cheering as if they were crazed.

Fatty Zhuge Liang quickly found the person in charge of this arena and arranged a “beast examination” with him. The so-called “beast examination” was a language of the trade. It had the meaning of testing the potential of a new intellectual beast.

After knowing the fatty was sent over to patrol by the main family, the person in charge of this place didn’t dare to be negligent and hastily arranged the

venue. Beast examination was not something an outsider was allowed to watch, so they got far away from the battle arena.

Because the main target of a beast examination was normally a new intellectual beast on recommendation, their wild nature hadn't be eliminated yet, nobody could put them under control. Thus, the examination usually took place in a huge iron cage.

But it was impossible for the tough little dragon to receive this kind of treatment, let's not mention how the tough little dragon would create a big disturbance by itself, even Xiao Chen wouldn't agree to it. In the end, they directly carried out the beast examination outdoors.

The manager of the warbeast arena saw that the tough little dragon was only about one meter long, it was so very small, so he made a big deal over a minor issue. As a result, he didn't send out any ferocious beasts in the beginning. He only released an ordinary leopard. Regarding this, the bastard fatty Zhuge Liang didn't say much. He only chuckled as he overlooked everything, he wanted to see the tough little dragon's true strength and was more than happy to see it fight a few more rounds.

The result was very shocking, the tough little dragon only bared its teeth, and that leopard fell onto the ground, paralyzed.

Everyone was extremely shocked, only Xiao Chen knew what the tough little dragon did just now. It felt that it was looked down upon and was getting angry. The tough little dragon emitted an invisible dragon-qi, how could this ordinary beast not be afraid? Its legs immediately gave up and collapsed. 1

The manager of the warbeast arena wiped off the cold sweat. The second time he directly released five male lions. The result was as astonishing as ever, the tough little dragon swung its tail five times and sent all five of the male lions flying.

Looking at this single-horned little beast with a panther-like body, the warbeast arena manager was at a loss for words. A one meter long little beast actually possessed this much power, it was simply inconceivable.

The bastard fatty was so happy that his smile distorted, what kind of exotic creatures had he not seen before? He knew some exotic creatures couldn't be

judged from their size alone, all the more when it came to a powerful warbeast. Clearly, the tough little dragon's potential was beyond measure, the initial result of the beast examination made him very satisfied.

The warbeast arena manager was already dripping with sweat. This time, he did not try to estimate the tough little dragon's strength anymore. He directly sent out the most powerful warbeast at this place. That was a giant wolf with white fur, its body length was about six meters long. It was the tallest in the arena and looked down at everyone present. Its pair of wolf eyes were flickering with green light, exceptionally awe-inspiring. At the same time, its four limbs were very special, they were actually covered by scales. One could tell it was a fierce character in a single glance.

"ARH-WOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOO..." The white wolf was clearly very intelligent, it seemed like it could feel that the tough little dragon was not any ordinary beast. It didn't look down on the tough little dragon because of its size. After a long howl, it transformed into a streak of white light and pounced over.

"Swish!"

The tough little dragon left an afterimage in its original position and dodged the attack. Xiao Chen who was watching the battle narrowed his eyes. This was definitely the dragon martial skill as described by the Winged Dragon couple. The tough little dragon's movement just now was very special, it was using the substitution technique like a real human expert.

"ARH-WOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOO..." The white wolf let out a long howl, it actually spouted flames from its mouth. It was a bizarre species as expected, it was capable of using magic spells.

The tough little dragon dodged again with lightning speed, it didn't try to use brute force as it did in the past. The tough little dragon transformed into a streak of black light and moved as quick as the lightning. It got near the giant wolf several times and left behind a few terrifying wounds on its body.

The white wolf faced the sky and let out a bellow of rage. The scales on its four limbs suddenly gave off glorious divine light at this time, then it actually took off from the ground.

It was truly an exotic creature, it actually possessed this kind of ability. The

white wolf was very strong without a doubt. The tough little dragon was caught up in a passive situation, it could only take a defensive stance and get thrashed around. It was unable to reach the giant wolf that was flying in the sky.

The warbeast arena manager gradually revealed a smile on his face. After all, if no warbeast could suppress this one meter long single-horned beast in this arena, he would have lost all his face.

However, his smile didn't last for long. The giant wolf in the sky seemed like it wanted to deliver the last hit and put an end to this battle. It pounced towards the little dragon that was always in a defensive stance with its claw.

Just at this time, the tough little dragon suddenly exploded. The scales all over its body were flickering with brilliant rays. It actually jumped into the sky to face the giant wolf that was pouncing at it. After running through the gaps of its paws, the tough little dragon ruthlessly sent an attack towards the giant wolf's chest. Blood gushed out like a waterfall, the giant wolf let out a snarl and fell onto the ground.

"Bravo! Bravo!!" The fatty clapped his hands and said, "Endure the attack and look for a chance to deliver the fatal strike. This is the skill only those warbeasts that have experienced countless battles possess. The tough little dragon is really too talented, it was practically born to fight, fighting is its way of life."

Soon after, he waved his hand to hint the warbeast arena manager to step down, then he looked at the tough little dragon with a passionate gaze and said, "I will turn you into a celebrity, I will make those upper-class ladies to squeal for you, and those men to go crazy for you."

No matter how Xiao Chen looked at him, he could only see a guy that had gone crazy due to greed.

"Haha..... When we get to the Celestial City later, I will treat you to the best wine, and request the prettiest girl to look after you....."

It seemed like the snow-white little critter couldn't watch any longer. It directly jumped onto his head and used its paws to mess up his hair, then it jumped onto Xiao Chen's shoulder.

The fatty was not angry at all, he chuckled and said, "Oops, forgot my

manners... but this little beast is really too promising. Although the trump card of this warbeast arena is nothing compared to the one in the warbeast castle, it was more than enough to verify the tough little dragon's potential. After all, it is still so young, it has a very long path ahead of it. It has unlimited potential! Hoh? It has a panther-like body, a Tyrannical Dragon's tail, its head looks a little similar to the Dragon King, and yet, it only has one horn, this little guy couldn't be..... a real dragon right?"

Profiteer Zhuge Liang looked at the tough little dragon doubtfully. It must be mentioned that this guy had a very keen insight in regards to beasts, he was naturally gifted in this field of work.

"You can just think of it as a dragon if you like."

Hearing Xiao Chen say it like this, the fatty chuckled and dispelled his doubt. But he said confidently, "This little beast's potential is unlikely to be inferior to a dragon, I believe it might even grow into a legendary sacred beast. At that time, even fighting against a dragon will not be a big problem. Wahahaha, it is I who discovered this tough little dragon. At that time, even the blurry old man from the main house might send a few outstandingly beautiful female practitioners to protect me. Hehehe... hehehehehe..."

The fatty just kept laughing at the corner by himself. When he suddenly heard the sound of grinding teeth again, he found that the tough little dragon was staring at him. He hurriedly shut his mouth.

"Brother Xiao, why don't we become sworn brothers. We ask not the same day of birth, but we seek to die together." 2

This bastard, what a profiteer. After seeing the tough little dragon's potential, he wanted to strengthen their friendship in this way. Xiao Chen cursed silently.

Naturally, Xiao Chen did not become sworn brothers with this guy, but it's not like Xiao Chen disliked this bastard fatty. After all, this guy was still pretty friendly.

"Brother Xiao, when we get back to the Celestial City later, we must dig out the tough little dragon's potential. Let me think..... the first match..... Callas, that scoundrel's Senarius Lion 3 should be a fitting opponent. That warbeast is unparalleled among the smaller sized warbeasts. The tough little dragon is still

young, after going through a rigorous training and becomes a little stronger, we can use it to deal with that little beast king. The Celestial City is, oh so big, the population exceed millions, it is equivalent to the biggest city in the Southern part of immortal's mainland. There are quite a few warbeast castles, we will have much to do at that time." The fatty was already starting to scheme.

The fatty and Xiao Chen talked about many things, the fatty's last words were, "Brother Xiao, wait here for some time, it won't take more than five to seven days. After that, we can go to the Celestial City together."

Aside from coming to inspect the family business, Zhuge Liang also received orders to gather as much information of any exotic beasts in the southern desolate region of immortal's mainland. They intended to send some experts from Zhuge's family to come and look for exotic beasts in the future. If those exotic beasts really existed, and if they could catch one, it would be an unimaginably huge harvest for them.

Actually, the fatty had already accomplished his mission, but because he was very eager, he wanted to personally go to the south desolate region to explore.

Xiao Chen originally planned to stay in this town for a few days anyway. Of course he didn't have a problem after listening to the fatty's explanation.

The time passed quickly, ten days passed in the blink of an eye. The fatty never showed up, it already exceeded the time limit he had set. As a result, Xiao Chen waited for another five days, but he didn't see a shadow of the fatty during this past month.

During this period, Xiao Chen once went to the warbeast arena to inquire, but he didn't get any news whatsoever. At that place he experienced the popularity of the warbeast industry again. He thought that if he failed to secure any source of income, he could bring the tough little dragon to the warbeast arena to fight a few rounds, then they wouldn't need to worry about clothes and food.

Twenty days had passed, there was still no news regarding Zhuge Liang. Xiao Chen felt that it was pointless to keep on waiting, this bastard fatty had most likely gotten lost in the south desolate region.

Xiao Chen started his journey towards the Celestial City. The distance to that place was roughly two thousand miles and a little. It seemed like there were only

a few big towns on the way. That was because the rumors from the south desolate region were ominous, so the population was especially sparse.

Legend said the ancestor god Suirensi was living in the south desolate region, but Xiao Chen, who had just returned from the dragon island, had a hint of doubt. The burial cloth he had with him belonged to the person in question, if that was really true, then the ancestor god Suirensi should have passed away already.

The south desolate region rarely got in touch with the outside world, the road was very worn out, some areas didn't even have a road. On the third or fourth days since Xiao Chen and company left, they actually couldn't find the road anymore.

But Keke and the tough little dragon were like fishes back in the water. The spiritual items that were looted from the Undying Sect had already been finished by them. Keke could frequently find some unusual treasure in the south desolate forest, and the tough little dragon would go and challenge vicious beasts everyday. Fortunately, they hadn't ran into any especially powerful vicious beast.

However, Xiao Chen was getting a little anxious and frightened. It was very likely for them to get lost in the south desolate region if they didn't follow the road. The vicious beasts they encountered were getting more ferocious by the seconds, there were actually quite a few primal species. This showed that they had already entered the depths of the south desolate region.

During this time, the fatty Zhuge Liang finally returned to the town with three of his men, their clothes were ragged without exception. A few of them managed to make it back after getting lost in the desolate jungle for almost twenty days.

When he found out that Xiao Chen had already left, he felt a bit anxious. At the same time, he received a letter transmitted from the Celestial City via a flying pigeon. The content of the letter said someone brought a Dragon King and arrived at the Celestial City. It had already made an appearance in three warbeast castles. It was as if the fatty had just taken a dose of aphrodisiac, he hurriedly went on his way; one was that he wanted to catch up to Xiao Chen, two was that he wanted to see the Dragon King immediately.

Chapter 136 – Snooping around the Phoenix Lair

After exploring the south desolate region for another two days, Xiao Chen and company finally left the evil forest. They arrived at a mountain range with incomparably beautiful scenery. This kind of sophisticated zone was rarely seen, the long howl of the beasts couldn't be heard, nor was there any exotic creature roaming around.

The mountains in this area were lush and verdant, the leaves were as green as jade, fine woods grew left and right. It was practically a place filled with treasures, such as ginseng and reishi mushrooms. This made the snow-white little critter so happy that it skipped a few times. Yanluo Wang and the other two skeletons were already carrying a few bags of good stuff for that little critter.

In this area, they could see red-crowned cranes holding reishi mushrooms in their mouths, aged deers carrying spiritual grasses on their heads, and white apes holding peaches of immortality in both hands. It was practically the so-called paradise.

At this auspicious and peaceful land, all they could see were some meek and docile animals. They didn't find any ferocious beasts, Xiao Chen even started to think there might be a celestial being living in seclusion at this place. The outcome was slightly disappointing, he couldn't find any cave dwelling nor traces of an immortal.

Keke and the tough little dragon called out at the same time, then they quickly rushed ahead. They only saw a group of tall trees ahead. Although they were thinly spread, each tree could reach up to a hundred meters tall. The vines were folding over in layers, the fragrance of flowers and birdsong made this place seem especially peaceful.

And on top of the tallest tree, there was actually an enormous bird nest. It was as big as three buildings put together. The most peculiar thing about the nest was not its sheer size, but rather the fact that it was glinting with multicolored light.

After getting closer, they could finally see it clearly, the materials used to make the bird's nest were really too extravagant. It was actually made out of Goldblaze Lotus, Silverthread Grass, Amethyst Fairy Orchid, and other such

materials. There were even quite a few millennium fleeceflower roots, reishi mushrooms, ginsengs, and other pure spiritual items hanging on top of the nest. This gigantic bird nest was practically a gold mine!

No wonder the two little beasts rushed ahead so urgently, even Xiao Chen's heart was thumping non-stop. This was so extravagant that it made one speechless. Just what kind of mythical beast would build this kind of nest, could it be a sacred bird?!

"Whoosh! Whoosh!"

The little critter was really too fast, it already grabbed the king-sized sack it requested Xiao Chen to prepare previously and dashed to the top of the giant tree (Mainly because it felt very regretful when they left the Undying Sect, it felt that the spiritual items the small sack was able to contain were really too few). What made Xiao Chen most surprised was that the tough little dragon also knew how to climb trees, it was already on top of the giant tree, at the vicinity of the bird's nest.

"Get back here quickly, don't act recklessly." Xiao Chen shouted.

However, how could the two little beasts care about such things now, they just grabbed anything they liked, such as the millennium fleeceflower root or ginseng king, and stuffed it into their mouths. All the while filling up the king-sized sack with all the items they could find.

Xiao Chen unfolded the Undying Divine Wings and flew into the sky, but the two little beasts had already filled up the king-sized sack at this time. Asking them to return those spiritual items to the respective owner would be even harder than reaching the sky.

"The both of you..." Xiao Chen felt a little helpless and continued, "...only know how to stir up trouble. Since you are unwilling to return the items, then let's leave as quickly as possible."

"Whoosh! Whoosh!"

They were very obedient this time. After quickly getting down the tree, they ran ahead of Xiao Chen and the three skeletons.

"This time you guys were really too rash, did you know what kind of bird's nest

was that?” Xiao Chen reprimanded them while running, “That place was full of parasol trees, if my guess is not wrong, that was definitely a phoenix nest. Do you guys know that it is an existence on equal footing with the dragons?! If we get discovered, the consequences will be very grave. This is not the dragon island, the phoenixes are not sealed like the dragons, each and every one of them is an existence comparable to gods.”

The two little beasts seemed to know about the phoenixes, they nodded their head strongly to express their understanding.

After running for more than thirty miles, Xiao Chen felt something was not right. He could feel a weak life fluctuation among them. Turning back to look at the king-sized sack carried by Qinguang Wang, he could actually see a faintly discernible radiance emitting from the sack. 1

He stopped his footsteps doubtfully, he had a really bad premonition. He opened that king-sized sack quickly, and after spreading open the pile of spiritual items with both hands, he found a colorful egg about the size of a head. It was flickering with specks of multicolored radiance, the life fluctuation was precisely emitted by it.

Xiao Chen immediately felt a pang of headache, he could overlook it if the two little beasts only stole some spiritual items, but damn, they were so thorough and even stole the phoenix egg.

How could the phoenix not get angry when it returned?! A phoenix capable of building that kind of nest, it was definitely not an ordinary phoenix.

“The two of you.....” Xiao Chen was practically howling at them, “Which one of you stole the phoenix egg?”

The two little beasts seemed to be aware that they got into huge trouble. Their reaction was surprisingly quick, they pointed at each other simultaneously. 2 They didn’t dare to admit it was their fault. This made Xiao Chen completely lose his will to be angry, he really didn’t know what to say anymore.

Both the snow-white little critter and the tough little dragon pointed at the path behind Xiao Chen, it seemed like they were asking him if they should go and return it?

However, the cry of the phoenix already transmitted from that direction at this time, how were they supposed to return it now? Just make a run for it! Xiao Chen unfolded the Undying Divine Wings, he carried the two little guys with both hands, made Qinguang Wang held onto his waist, and the other two skeletons to hold on to his thigh. Then he flapped the divine wings and flew at lightning speed while sticking close to the ground. He didn't dare to fly into the sky, if they were to be discovered by the phoenix, it would certainly catch up to them.

After flying for a few dozen miles, Xiao Chen was so incredibly tired that he felt as if his waist was about to snap. The Undying Divine Wings were getting dimmer over time. However, the cry of the phoenix was getting closer by the seconds, it seemed like it had already locked onto them.....

Xiao Chen's Undying Divine Wings already lost all of its radiance, if not because his skill was profound, he would be unable to endure it anymore. After all, he had just mastered the Undying Divine Wings not too long ago, and flying with this much load was really a little strenuous.

What made Xiao Chen most depressed was that; the two little beasts felt that the experience of flying was very fresh and exciting, it seemed like they didn't realize they were currently running away from a phoenix that was said to be comparable to the dragons.

The cry of the phoenix was getting much closer, it seemed like it had already discovered their trace. Xiao Chen rested for a while and struggled to refresh himself, then he executed the secret art once again, his entire body was flickering with rays of light, the purple Undying Divine Wings extended from his back once more. Of course, the wings were materialized from energy, they were not a part of his body.

While advancing at lightning speed in the dense jungle, the shadows of the forest trees went in reverse continuously. They were flying while hiding their presence, Xiao Chen had already increased the speed to the limit, but the cry of the phoenix kept resounding from behind, they were simply unable to break away from the phoenix.

Xiao Chen clenched his teeth and flew for more than one hundred and fifty miles, he was already unable to go on much longer. He felt the three skeletons

weighing down on him like three little mountains, he felt that even the two little beasts started to weigh ten thousand kilograms.

After flying for another ten miles, Xiao Chen helplessly landed on the ground, no longer trying to run. He could already tell, the phoenix had already locked onto him, it was completely capable of overtaking him. It seemed to be tormenting him on purpose, forcing him to flee in fear. If this kept up, he would either die from exhaustion or have a nervous breakdown.

After a long time later, a presence with powerful pressure descended from the sky, the multicolored radiance was as intense as the glaring sun, it made one unable to look up and see the figure of the phoenix directly. The voice of a girl coldly resounded from the rays of light, “Why are you not running anymore, go on~ Eh.....?” As if she had discovered something, a sound of astonishment came from the colorful radiance.

Soon after, the multicolored radiance launched towards them. Although Xiao Chen did not resist, the tough little dragon and the snow-white little critter were struggling with all their might. But regardless of the tough little dragon’s extreme speed or Keke’s confinement technique, they were unable to fend off the colorful radiance.

They were enveloped by countless rays of light, the sound of wind brushing past their ears resounded, Xiao Chen and company had already been lifted off the ground. They flew through the sky at extreme speed and seemed to have come to a stop in what felt like an instant. After that, they found themselves below that emerald green parasol tree.

They found themselves back at the dwelling of the phoenix. The tallest parasol tree was glinting with green light, its entire body was emitting the breath of life. The multicolored radiance was lingering on the gigantic phoenix nest at the top of tree.

“You guys have the impertinence to break into my sacred place, and even harm my niece, how dare you!” The multicolored radiance floated in the sky, a cold voice transmitted from within. The figure within seemed to be overlooking Xiao Chen and company.

Eh, she’s not the little phoenix’s parent? Xiao Chen was a little surprised. But

he still felt a pang of headache, wondering how should he resolve this problem. The phoenix girl in the sky was an existence equivalent to gods. All these happened because of the snow-white little critter and the tough little dragon, but it was impossible for him to push the blame to them just to save his skin.

Thinking for a while, Xiao Chen opened his mouth to explain, “Miss phoenix, please allow me to explain, we didn’t have any intention to harm anyone. All these happened because these two little things were a little too mischievous……” He pointed at Keke and the tough little dragon before he continued, “They originally only wanted to take some spiritual items to ease their hunger, but they unexpectedly collected the phoenix egg as well during the confusion.”

“Looking for something to ease their hunger? Then why must you come here to steal?” The girl’s voice was as cold as before.

“We got lost in the south desolate region, we are already unable to find a way out. We only got here by chance. You can see these two are not some ordinary beasts, they must eat some spiritual items everyday. Just when we found the phoenix nest, the two little beasts had already rushed over there, I wasn’t able to stop them in time.”

The snow-white little critter at the side nodded its head strongly, it looked so very innocent, as if it was saying that was indeed the case. Soon after, it opened the king-sized sack and cautiously retrieved the phoenix egg that was not much smaller than it, then it lifted the egg to present it to the phoenix. The tough little dragon seemed to know it was in the wrong. Moreover, it seemed to be aware that the phoenix girl in the sky was an existence that couldn’t be provoked. It was rare for the tough little dragon to stay in one place obediently. Its attitude was like day and night compared to before, where it would just go and challenge opponents stronger than itself.

The phoenix in the sky did not seem to be worried that they would break the phoenix egg. She never demanded them to hand over the egg since she overtook them, only now did she send a multicolored radiance down from the sky to receive the egg.

“Hmph, if it were not for the friendship between the sacred beasts of the same

kind, I definitely wouldn't forgive you lot that easily." The glaring multicolored radiance in the sky gradually became dimmer, the phoenix girl finally revealed herself.

Xiao Chen knew she was talking about the tough little dragon and Keke.

This was an incomparably beautiful multicolored phoenix, a dream-like luster was circulating around the colorful divine feathers. The captivating holy aura enveloped her entire body, it gave one an auspicious and peaceful feeling. It was no longer as imposing as it was just moments ago.

"Many thanks to Miss Phoenix's magnanimity." Xiao Chen expressed his thanks, he wanted to leave this place as soon as possible.

"Hmph! I didn't say I will let you off." The multicolored divine phoenix was about three meters long. She was extremely graceful and looked like a peerless beauty while flying in the sky. Light waves circulated in the phoenix's eyes as she said. "You guys must pay a little price to make amends for your mistake."

"Whoosh!"

The king-sized sack on the ground flew high up into the sky, heading towards the phoenix nest. Those millennium fleecflower roots, golden ginseng kings, and amethyst lotus seeds were all returned to the phoenix nest that flickered with colorful splendor.

Keke blinked its big eyes, that kind of reluctance in its eyes was plain to see. The tough little dragon was also feeling very regretful, it silently watched as all of this was happening, but it also had no other choice, those were not their stuffs to begin with.

But that was no all, the multicolored radiance flickered again, the three sacks carried by Qinguang Wang and the other two skeletons also flew towards the phoenix nest.

The snow-white little Keke became anxious right away, these were not plundered from the phoenix nest. It spent a lot of effort to look for these in the south desolate mountain during the past few days, although it was far from comparable to the spiritual items found in the phoenix nest, these were still something it worked hard to acquire by itself. It immediately shouted with a

“squeak” and waved its little paws repeatedly to use the confinement technique, in hope of taking those sacks back.

At the same time, the tough little dragon also made its move. A resplendent ray of light actually emitted from its single horn and launched towards the sky. Xiao Chen had only seen the tough little dragon fight with brute strength before, occasionally using some dragon martial skill, this was the first time Xiao Chen had seen the tough little dragon using a divine ability.

But even if the two little beasts worked together, it was impossible for them to win against the sacred phoenix in the sky. Perhaps even an unsealed adult dragon wouldn't be a match for the phoenix. Those spiritual items continued to fly towards the sky without any resistance.

Keke was really heartbroken, it let out a few “squeaks” in anger, seemingly trying to say those belonged to it.

The tough little dragon also had no other choice, although its battle intent was high and did not hesitate to issue a challenge to the sacred phoenix in the sky, the unfathomable phoenix girl just ignored its challenge. On the contrary, she just smiled gently and said, “Wait till my niece is born, then you can go and challenge it.”

They felt so helpless!

They failed to steal the phoenix egg and lost three sacks of spiritual items as compensation. Keke was panting with rage, it silently waved its little paws at the phoenix girl a few times, then it turned around and wanted to leave. Although the tough little dragon's battle intent was high, the others simply paid no attention to it. The tough little dragon felt that it was unable to muster the strength.

The two of them caused the phoenix girl smile due to anger. She said, “The two of you disturbed by niece, and yet you look as if you were wronged, seriously... the both of you are asking to be spanked!”

Chapter 137 – Tyranny

Two multi-colored rays of light shot down from the sky, the glittering light quickly engulfing Keke and the tough little dragon. The two little beasts were tossed into the phoenix nest on top of the tree.

“I ask the sacred phoenix to forgive the two of them.” Xiao Chen really didn’t want to stay at this place for much longer. He wanted to leave with the two little beasts.

However, the phoenix girl had some other plan. Her voice was no longer ice-cold; it was as sweet-sounding as heavenly music, “You wait here for some time. As another one of the same kind of sacred species, I will whip them into shape. Otherwise it will cost them dearly one of these days.” 1

The so-called “whipping them into shape” made Xiao Chen dumbstruck. Keke and the tough little dragon almost threw up blood; the two little things even rolled their eyes. The phoenix girl actually wanted them to incubate the phoenix egg with their power source.

She made the two little guys incubate an egg!

At that time, the two little beasts were angry at her. They were but individuals who even dared to oppose the heavens!

They really wanted to smash the phoenix egg to bits at that time, but they found that a divine power was at work and were practically unable to damage even a fraction of the egg. On the contrary, their powers were absorbed by the phoenix egg, and they somehow ended up incubating the egg instead.

The two little beasts were so angry that they couldn’t bear it, so they shouted in a loud voice.

Ethereal mist flickered, the sacred phoenix lightly waved her divine wings, and a floating isle appeared from thin air; there were many exotic flowers in full bloom on the isle, jade grass-covered the land, red-crowned cranes were dancing in the breeze, and white apes were jumping from tree to tree. It was a world filled with the fragrance of flowers and pleasant birdsong. There were even some pavilions and kiosks, as well as a small bridge across running water. It was practically the very image of heaven itself.

Specks of splendor were circulating around the floating sacred isle. It floated up and down just above the phoenix nest. The phoenix girl turned around and flew towards the isle. Before she ascended onto the isle, she had already transformed into a graceful young lady, but Xiao Chen and company were unable to see her real visage. They could only see her pretty back figure as she walked away gracefully.

The two pitiful little guys suffered the consequences they had brought upon themselves for the first time, but they were also helpless in this situation. They were imprisoned by the sacred phoenix's power source. It was impossible to even get away from the phoenix nest. Moreover, they must constantly operate the power source hidden within their body to resist it, otherwise the halo of light around them would keep shrinking, squeezing them and making them suffer.

And the multi-colored radiance released by them, after circulating one loop in the phoenix nest, would all flow towards that phoenix egg. This was tantamount to incubating the phoenix egg indirectly.

The two little beasts were incomparably depressed, and yet, it was impossible for anyone to take them away.

Xiao Chen was incomparably astonished. The phoenix nest was actually not as simple as its outer appearance dictated. It was actually merged with a mysterious and unfathomable ancient spell. The reason it was made out of pure spiritual items was so that it could gather even more spiritual power.

Just from a quick look, Xiao Chen could feel how marvelous it was. The golden ginseng kings, millennium fleeceflower roots and other such spiritual items on the phoenix nest hadn't even dried up yet; they were blending with the spiritual energy and glowed with life force. By absorbing the essence of the sun and moon, as well as the splendor of the stars, a steady flow of essence was delivered to the phoenix egg located in the nest.

The phoenix nest was practically a treasure to amass spiritual energy!

After observing for the whole day, Xiao Chen finally affirmed his speculations. Sunshine, moonlight, and the essence of the plants flowed continuously like water ripples, so much so that even the essence from mother earth had bubbled up. Naturally, the most eye-catching event was during the night. At that time he

could clearly see starlight gathering at the phoenix nest from the sky one after another. It made this place incomparably bright, as if the bright moon was just right in front of him.

Ten days passed in a flash as the three skeletons meditated quietly under the parasol tree. Xiao Chen trained painstakingly on top of the phoenix tree. The spiritual energy at this place was dense. It was an exceptionally good place to train.

The two little beasts had already lost their will to be angry a long time ago; they were really scared of the phoenix girl now. Even incubating an egg could turn into some kind of torment. Although this was also tantamount to training, they only wished they could get away immediately.

During this period of time, that floating isle was intermittently visible, and its position was not fixed either. It seemed to go from place to place like the clouds, always drifting within a radius of ten miles.

Xiao Chen was deeply shocked, this sacred phoenix's ability was really too terrifying. He couldn't estimate just how powerful she really was.

On the fifteenth day, the sacred phoenix flew out of the isle. She transformed back into a phoenix while she was still quite some distance away. Then with a flash of light, she appeared in the phoenix nest. She smiled gently and asked, "Will you two little young'uns yield?"

Her voice was melodious and sweet. It was very pleasant to listen to, but it undoubtedly sounded like the sneers of a demon to the two little beasts. They quickly nodded their head in sync and didn't dare to throw a tantrum anymore.

"Good boys, hehe."

A multi-colored radiance flickered. Keke and the tough little dragon were engulfed by the light and sent back to the ground.

"Eh...?" The phoenix girl found that the fluctuation of life inside the colorful egg was now stronger than ever. It surpassed her expectations. She looked at the two little beasts on the ground and said, "I almost made an error of judgment. Hoh? You guys are more uncommon than I thought. Could it be....."

The two little beasts did not pay attention to her as they were itching to leave

this place immediately, but Xiao Chen was listening attentively. He wanted to know Keke and the tough little dragon's origin. He only saw the phoenix girl pucker up her brows. It seemed she couldn't be sure, so there was no conclusion whatsoever. On the contrary, she had taken notice of the dim little tree on Keke's head.

Multi-colored rays of light flickered, and the sapling flew towards the sky. The phoenix girl lightly waved her wings and a divine light was launched towards the sapling. A rainbow-colored radiance immediately soared into the sky from the sapling. The inky jade leaf, the white jade leaf, the jasper leaf, and the gold leaf were flourishing with brilliant rays. 2

"Ah...!" The phoenix girl cried out in surprise for the first time, "This is..... did the sacred tree of legends reincarnate?" She was clearly very shocked.

Just when Keke was about to get anxious, she quickly sent the little sacred tree back. It seemed like she was feeling very apprehensive. It caused the little snow-white critter to feel very confused. It originally thought the phoenix girl would rob it of the treasured tree; never in its wildest dreams would it have imagined the phoenix girl to give it back just like this.

"You guys may leave." It seemed like the phoenix girl didn't want them to stay for long.

Xiao Chen opened his mouth to ask, "Can I ask the sacred phoenix to give us some directions? We wanted to go to the Celestial City, but we lost our way in the south desolate region."

"Very well, I will take you to the ancient road that leads to the Celestial City." But just at this time, the sacred phoenix furrowed her brows again. She whispered to herself, "It seems like I really underestimated you guys too much." While speaking, she ignored the two little beasts on the ground. She turned towards Xiao Chen instead and said, "Let me take a look at the sacred burial cloth you are carrying."

That burial cloth did not emit any fluctuations of life, but it was still perceived by the phoenix girl; her power was truly god-like. Xiao Chen retrieved the item and lightly waved his hand. The burial cloth transformed into a light beam and soared into the sky.

The phoenix girl received it and looked at it over and over again, then she returned it back to Xiao Chen without saying anything more.

Suddenly, countless strip of auspicious rays appeared between the heaven and earth. Xiao Chen and company were shrouded within the rays of light. They could hear the sound of the wind rustling beside their ears. They landed on a broken ancient road about half an hour later.

A beautiful phoenix feather fell gently from the sky. It landed right in Xiao Chen's hand. The feather had a smooth surface, and there was an indistinct fragrance.

"Sorry to have wasted your time. Take this feather as a present, you can think of it as compensation."

A heavenly voice transmitted from the sky. The instant the phoenix girl turned around, she transformed into a dream-like girl. Her back figure was out-of-the-world as she floated away gracefully.

Keke watched the back figure of the sacred phoenix impatiently. Seeing that she didn't return the spiritual items it collected by itself, it felt incomparably disappointed. In the end, it looked at the multi-colored feather in Xiao Chen's hand and mumbled to itself, as if it was saying this is unfair.

Xiao Chen looked pensive.

Three days later, Xiao Chen and company had already traveled several hundred miles. With their speed, this was not considered quick. The main reason was that they didn't make haste on their journey. On the way, the tough little dragon would occasionally go into the forest to fight with the vicious beasts. And then there's also little Keke, who would go to look for spiritual grass from time to time.

However, this kind of leisure journey didn't last for long. There were still eight hundred miles before they arrived at the Celestial City.

The tough little dragon let out an angry roar from the jungle ahead. It seemed like it had encountered great danger. Xiao Chen hastily rushed over there, guessing that it must have encountered a powerful creature. 3

But he quickly overthrew that very idea after getting close to the forest. He

saw five young practitioners surrounding the tough little dragon. 4

They were definitely a group of experts. Three of the girls among them were psychics. All three of them were floating in the sky and enveloped the tough little dragon within a barrier. They wanted to keep the tough little dragon in place. The tough little dragon's movement was very sluggish. And the other two on the ground did not hesitate to attack the tough little dragon, so it was riddled with scars.

Exuvia Second Celestial Layer!

.....

Exuvia Sixth Celestial Layer!

Xiao Chen was alarmed, the weakest among these five youngsters was at the Exuvia Second Celestial Layer, and one of them had actually reached the Exuvia Sixth Celestial Layer. They were undoubtedly experts among the youth. Otherwise, how was it possible for them to keep the tough little dragon in place and even injure its thick-skinned body.

Xiao Chen rushed over like a streak of lightning, leaving an afterimage in the jungle. His palm blade swept through the forest like thunder. The forest trees collapsed under the glaring rays of light, and a gale rose abruptly.

That was no doubt the power of the Exuvia Eight Celestial Layer!

He broke the barrier in an instant and saved Tenax 5, the tough little dragon, whose entire body was stained by blood, from a dangerous situation.

Xiao Chen entered the fray to protect Tenax, the tough little dragon. His towering figure remained motionless as he fixed his eyes on the few people.

Looking at this uninvited guest who appeared like the wind and lightning, the few of them were gobsmacked.

"Who are you? Mind your own business!" One man among the group seemed very unhappy, and he stared at Xiao Chen resentfully.

Xiao Chen also looked at him. Looking at the bearings of everyone present, this guy seemed to be the leader of the group, but he was definitely not the strongest. That was because his power was only at the Exuvia Third Celestial

Layer, and the Sixth Celestial Layer expert was right beside him.

“I think there is a misunderstanding between us.” Xiao Chen muttered to himself for a bit, then he said, “This warbeast is my partner. It is not a wild beast in the uncultivated forest. I hope everyone can kindly overlook this.”

It was still that young man who was thought to be the leader who opened his mouth to talk, “Your partner? Hmph! What a joke!” He was very arrogant and didn’t put Xiao Chen in his eyes. He said with a cold voice, “This is a warbeast the great me laid my eyes on. It is an untamed beast found in the forest, it is mine!”

Xiao Chen didn’t say anything immediately, but he was already calculating in his mind whether or not he could eliminate all of them if conflict was to break out. That was because these people were so very arrogant, and it seemed like they had quite a bit of background. They were a little too tyrannical, and it seemed like reconciliation was out of the question.

Chapter 138 – None can Resist

A youth in his prime, with high status, was always the most arrogant guy. How could they not be?

Kadiva was from a rather famous family in the Celestial City, he always did whatever he wanted to do. This time, he kept this a secret from his family and led his trusted aide to come and search for some legendary warbeast in the south desolate region. Never did he expect most of his soldiers would perish after entering the south desolate region for only a dozen of days. Only five of them remained, and when he saw the tough little dragon today, how could he not tell that Tenax was out of the ordinary.

After secretly watching Tenax challenging a few vicious beasts and emerging victorious, Kadiva had already come to a conclusion; this must be the strongest type among the inferior dragons, it should have at least one-third of dragon blood flowing in its veins, or perhaps it might be a real dragon stranded in the south desolate region.

When he thought about the dragons in the south desolate region, his blood started to boil. Legend said that in the ancient past, a few incomparably powerful dragons did not get sealed on the dragon island, they lived in seclusion at the south desolate region. If this tough little dragon was their descendent.....

Kadiva was so excited that he couldn't stop his body from shaking. The descendent of the most powerful ancient dragon that escaped the fate of getting sealed on the dragon island, this was simply a blessing from the heavens. If he could subdue this tough little dragon, perhaps it might not even be inferior to those genuine Dragon Kings that departed from the dragon island.

The descendent of the strongest dragon!

After Kadiva had this deduction, he immediately led his trusted aide into action. They stealthily caught up to Tenax and surrounded it from every direction. What made him most happy was that the tough little dragon was very keen and discovered them in the first moments, and yet, it didn't run away. It provoked them and took the initiative to take up a challenge. With such an arrogant personality, it made Kadiva even more convinced. It might really be the descendent of those dragons!

They must be decisive, they must not miss this chance and let it get away.

The battle to subdue the descendent of the strongest dragon had thus began.

However, just when it looked like everything went smoothly, an outsider like this unexpectedly appeared. Kadiva was in a really bad mood, the Celestial City was known as the biggest city in the south desolate region, and he came from one of the largest and most influential families in the Celestial City. He was always the one making others yield to him, how could he tolerate other people meddling in his business.

Despite seeing that Xiao Chen's ability was very profound, his superiority complex made him unable to think highly of any practitioners.

"I am telling to truth, look at how it is following me so familiarly. If this is a wild beast, how is it possible for it to acknowledge me so easily." Xiao Chen tried to explain one last time. He didn't want to get into a conflict if at all possible.

But the blond-haired youth at the opposite side did not buy it, he was still as arrogant as before and said impatiently, "Stop wasting my time, I found it first and you still want to vie for it? This is obviously a wild beast. I don't want to make things hard for you, the ancient road is over there, you can be on your way. Let's not get in each other's way."

Kadiva's words were very obvious; Scram, I have already laid my eyes on this warbeast, if you don't leave now, you won't be able to so anymore.

How could Xiao Chen not understand his underlying meaning? The other party clearly wanted to rely on his status and the experts beside him to forcefully take over Tenax. This was the truth of the world, strength represented everything. If it was any ordinary young practitioner, they might have yielded already. That was because they could recognize the family crest on the left sleeve of the youngster. That was the emblem of a powerful family in the Celestial City, a super influential family that controlled a warbeast castle, it was an existence that many practitioners were unwilling to provoke.

But Xiao Chen did not know of this, and even if he knew, it meant nothing to him. With his personality and the strength he currently possessed, he wouldn't hesitate to dispose of them, because it was impossible for him to hand over Tenax to the other party. The more he came to understand the tough little

beast, the more he became interested in Tenax. He was expecting some kind of possibility to take place.

Once he made his decision, he wouldn't continue to drag his feet in the mud. Knowing that it was unlikely for the other party to change their mind, Xiao Chen immediately assumed a battle stance. The glaring rays of light emitted from his body were throbbing like the blazing flame, and yet, they looked like a divine armor protecting him from harm. At this moment, they were unable to look at Xiao Chen from up close.

"Hey, this joker is so arrogant, he actually took the initiative." Kadiva was very angry. Nobody had ever provoked him before, it was always him doing the provocation. Especially this guy who looked like a hermit no matter how he looked at him, this guy actually dared to offend him.

Kadiva was an expert at the level of Exuvia Third Celestial Layer, he could be considered an expert among the youth generation, especially among the nobility. However, this "expert" depended on who he was dealing with. He did not know how deep was Xiao Chen's power, but the man beside him had already felt it ever so faintly. That man was his shadow, a bodyguard who grew up along with him. He was a Sixth Celestial Layer expert who specialized in protecting him. He was one of the bodyguards that were nurtured by their family since young age, and was very loyal to the family.

"Young master....." Kadiva's bodyguard lightly pulled the lower hem of his shirt, then he said in a low voice, "This guy is more powerful than me and he has already revealed killing intent."

Speaking until here, the bodyguard faced Xiao Chen, and said, "We are from the Reagan family. Will this friend be willing to sell us this warbeast? We will not treat you unfairly." Obviously, he had already detected Xiao Chen's killing intent. He was fully aware of how very terrifying was this man before his eyes and didn't want to fight with Xiao Chen. Because the bodyguards grew up with their respective masters since childhood, they could speak on behalf of their masters sometimes.

"That is impossible." Xiao Chen refused very bluntly.

"Arrest him!" Kadiva of the Reagan Family couldn't tolerate it any longer, he

directly issued the order.

The girls floating in the sky were Psychics, they were very beautiful and seemed to be persons of mixed blood. They possessed the classical beauty of the East, and also the noble traits of the West, but even so, their charming appearances couldn't be concealed. Their pupils were bright and intelligent, and their light blue hair were fluttering like water ripples.

They were the collateral relatives of the Reagan family, their blood relationship with this influential family of Celestial City was already thinned out a long time ago. However, due to their strength and outstanding appearance, they were still appreciated by the family and so they frequently mingled together with a few direct descendants of the Reagan family. As far as this chaotic relationship between man and woman was concerned, the elder of the Reagan family always turned a blind eye to it.

Three of the female Psychics dropped three rays of green light, they launched spiritual attacks and took the initiative to attack Xiao Chen.

Meanwhile, Kadiva already raised a sharp sword and rushed over personally.

Xiao Chen quickly dodged to the side to avoid the attacks from the three Psychics, then he rushed straight towards Kadiva. His fingers emitted a glaring sword-qi as if they were a double-edged sword. Xiao Chen attacked this youth from the Reagan family with a diagonal slash.

The sword-qi produced a sharp sound as it cut through the air. The face of the bodyguard at the side turned pale. He could clearly feel Xiao Chen's terrifying strength at this very moment. After a loud shout, he raised his speed to the limit. His speed already surpassed that of Kadiva. After concentrating his power in the metal sword held in his hand, the sword became translucent and actually started to tremble. The sword-qi was extremely rich and powerful. He faced Xiao Chen head on with this strike.

"Swoosh!"

The sound of the sword-qi slashing the air was exceptionally ear-piercing!

However, the bodyguard's sword-qi was simply unable to stop the sword-qi emitted from Xiao Chen's adamantium-like fingers. The adamantium fingers

smashed a few dozens of sword-qi and then it made direct contact with the sharp sword held by the bodyguard.

With a clear crisp sound, the sword in the bodyguard's hand exploded like the fireworks. The energy flow dispersed in all directions when the sword was destroyed. As if the bodyguard had been hit by a stormy sea, his body trembled violently. He could see a gold radiance rushing into his hand from that sword hilt. The bodyguard fell back at high speed. Although his right arm trembled incessantly, he used some kind of excellent martial art to neutralize the terrifying energy that entered his body.

His will was completely crushed at this moment, he clearly felt that he was far from being Xiao Chen's opponent. He cried out in alarm, "Are you Windfeathers or the Solitary Sword Demon..... or perhaps Zhao Chongyang?"

He continuously declared the names of a few first-rate youth experts of the Southern region. He was truly a little apprehensive towards someone with such strength.

But Xiao Chen did not stop there, he continued to forge ahead like a sharp blade. He suddenly clenched his fist and sent the punch directly towards Kadiva. At this moment, Kadiva also coincidentally got before his eyes.

With an explosive sound, the long sword broke into pieces. Xiao Chen passed through the shattered light screen and bumped into Kadiva's palm.

"Snap! Snap!"

The sound of bones snapping could be heard, it was especially ear-piercing in this occasion.

A spiral energy directly flowed into Kadiva's right arm. His arm already turned into twisted dough. 1 Although the arm did not break into pieces, it was already deformed. That arm was completely useless now.

"Ah!!!!!!!" Kadiva screamed at the top of his lung, his face distorted in pain.

This series of movements happened in only an instant. It was so quick that they could see nothing but a blur. Regardless of whether it was the bodyguard or the three female Psychics in the sky, they could only launch a single attack. There was simply not enough time to offer support to Kadiva.

“Run! Quick!” The bodyguard pushed Kadiva who was still screaming to the side, then he rushed forward by himself. He knew this enemy was really too formidable, he knew that he wouldn’t be able to stop him. The three Psychics dived down from the sky. After securing Kadiva, they immediately flew towards the sky.

Tenax finally made its move. A divine radiance emitted from its single horn and shot down one female Psychic from the sky with a “swoosh”. After that, it rushed over there fiercely.

At the same time, a human figure jumped down from a tall tree at a distant place. The one who hid there was Lunhui Wang. The sneak attack caused one female Psychic to stagger, but she still didn’t fall down in the end.

Xiao Chen rushed forward like a demon, going straight for the bodyguard who remained behind without any flashy movement. The palm blade was as sharp as a divine blade, the glaring rays of light directly collided with the bodyguard’s fist. Another bone snapping sound reverberated. Along with a gloomy snort, the bodyguard was sent flying away.

“My friend, anyone can make mistakes, you should forgive them when possible.” The bodyguard was holding his already twisted arm.

Xiao Chen was really calm, and said, “If people don’t offend me, I will not make trouble for them. It’s not like I didn’t give you a chance, but you guys insisted on forcing my hand.”

“You..... You must know that the Reagan family is very powerful. Kadiva is the seventh grandson of the chief..... the chief pampered him a lot.”

“Exactly because I know you guys come from a powerful family that I cannot let a single one of you get away.”

The bodyguard immediately understood Xiao Chen’s intention. Since they already made their moves, it was impossible to turn back anymore. The most effective method to silence them was to kill them all.

“Kill!” The bodyguard rushed over again without a hint of fear.

But that was clearly a futile effort. There was no chance for someone at the Exuvia Sixth Celestial Layer to win against an expert at the peak of Exuvia Eighth

Celestial Layer.

Xiao Chen was like flickering light and passing shadows. With the palm blade in front, his entire body almost seemed transparent. Transforming into an unstoppable divine blade, he dashed forward in a straight line.

His speed was really too fast. What's more, with the bodyguard's own speed, it resulted with a "pfff" as blood gushed forth. The bodyguard was actually chopped in half. His upper body and lower body fell at opposite sides.

Xiao Chen directly bore through his body. With the divine radiance protecting his body, he did not get encroached by the blood. With such speed and power, if he was seen by his peers, they would certainly be shocked.

With his speed not decreasing, Xiao Chen unfolded the Undying Divine Wings and flew towards the sky. 2

It was a very funny scene, by the time he caught up, he found that the two female Psychics were already trapped in the sky by a ball of light. It was actually Keke who just returned after finding some spiritual items. It found them running away from the party so it undertook the task to capture them.

And Kadiva had actually used a scroll to fly high into the sky, and flee towards the Celestial City.

Xiao Chen sneered. With the Undying Divine Wing as his trump card, how could he let Kadiva escape? Increasing his speed to the limit, he quickly caught up to Kadiva.

"Where do you think you are going?"

Hearing the lofty sound behind him, Kadiva turned his head around to take a look. He was so scared that his soul had literally left his body. Xiao Chen spread out a pair of divine wing while emitting killing intent. He was already not more than three meters behind Kadiva.

He never thought that Xiao Chen could actually fly, this kind of martial artist was really too terrifying. At this moment, he no longer had an arrogant look in his face. There was only fear.

"You....."

His terrified expression continued to spread. Kadiva detested himself very much at this moment. If he was not that arrogant just now, perhaps they could've avoided this terrifying situation.

He recalled what the elders in the family had warned him; "Don't rashly make an enemy out of practitioners outside of Celestial City. The foundation of the family is only at Celestial City, the outside world is still not something we can control."

"Don't kill me!"

"Give me a reason."

Looking at Xiao Chen's ice-cold expression, Kadiva's body shuddered. Even the flying scroll that was carrying him started to sway.

"I come from the Reagan family. If you kill me, you will be in huge trouble."

"There will be more trouble if I don't kill you!"

Without any more superfluous words, Xiao Chen made his move. A chilly divine light flashed through and blood splashed everywhere. Kadiva's head flew out.

3

The scroll that was carrying the headless corpse fell towards the ground diagonally.

Xiao Chen flew back the way he came.

He hinted for Keke to release one of the Psychics. Xiao Chen wanted to try if he could catch up to a Psychic with the Undying Divine Wings. That charming girl let out a screech and made a run for it while sticking close to the forest. She witnessed everything just now, she was already extremely scared of Xiao Chen. Right now, she only wished she could return to the Celestial City as soon as possible.

Xiao Chen obviously wouldn't give her such an opportunity. He unfolded the Undying Divine Wings, increased his speed to the limit, and caught up to the female Psychic in almost an instant. At this moment, Xiao Chen did not show any kindness; blood splashed everywhere, the pretty female Psychic was also chopped in half. Her corpse fell in the mountain woods.

Xiao Chen was very satisfied with the Undying Divine Wings. This was practically the Psychics and Spell Master's nemesis. He believed this would definitely become their worst nightmare.

A clean sweep; three female Psychics, one bodyguard, and Kadiva, all of them were exterminated. Xiao Chen had a mood swing. He didn't think he was ruthless, because it was justified self-defense, it was all for survival.

Because he had killed these people, Xiao Chen did not feel anxious on his journey. Only until half a month later did they slow down their pace. After that, in another five more days, they finally left the south desolate region. The Celestial City was already in sight.

Chapter 139 – Celestial City

The south desolate mountain woods, cutting across thousands of miles, it was vast without boundary.

Xiao Chen and company passed through many mountains and a great number of ravines. Walking past the endless sea of greenery, they could finally see the Celestial City.

The magnificent Celestial City, it was brimming with the vicissitudes of time. The city wall was tall and massive, it was about thirty meters tall, and more than ten steeds could run side by side on top of it. The tall city gate was even more majestic, it was just like a watchtower that fell from the heaven dome; simple yet imposing. It was truly fitting for such a famous city.

The moat was about ten meters wide, and a few dozen meters deep. Although the moat was filled with water lilies, and a shoal of fish was moving about, if one examined carefully, they could actually see ferocious crocodiles and bloodthirsty fishes roaming about.

Without a doubt, Celestial City was a grand and majestic ancient city. It was the most renowned city in the south desolate region.

There were all kinds of legends regarding this ancient city. It was possible to tell just from its name, “Celestial City”, that it had a connection to the celestial emperor. The ancient city was shrouded in a veil of mystery.

“We’re finally here.”

While looking at the big city in front, Xiao Chen walked over there with Tenax and company.

Walking past the suspension bridge, they got through the moat and entered the city gate. Surprisingly, no one came to interrogate or block this lone man.

Celestial City was a bustling and thriving ancient city; there was an endless stream of horses and carriages, the main street was bustling with activities, a great number of stores stood at both sides of the avenue, and the sound of merchants touting their wares could be heard.

“High quality lesser dragon skin, only for a hundred gold coins.”

“Thousand year ginseng, genuine old ginseng king.”

“New restaurant open for business, big discount on the first day of opening.....”

“The strongest warbeast.....”

“Candied fruits.....”

It was truly a lively and bustling big city; people of all ages were crowded together on the streets. There were all kinds of people, it could even be said there were many different kinds of races. There were blondies with blue eyes, black-haired persons with tanned skin, green hair, yellow hair, and even the tall and bulky beastmen.

Xiao Chen and company pushed their way through the crowd. They were truly overwhelmed. He spent most of his recent days in the desolate forest, it felt so long since he entered this kind of big city.

The Celestial City had a population close to two million people. It was a big city not just in name, but also in reality. Just imagine how much resources they had to spend on a daily basis. Apart from importing the resources from many cities and towns in the surroundings, the most important was still the Grand Canal that flowed from the North. The canal made it possible to import an endless stream of supplies.

“Let’s go, we will be staying here for a long time.” Xiao Chen was very fond of the flourishing Celestial City. He led Qinguang Wang and company to forge ahead.

The crowd did not have any peculiar expression when they saw Keke and Tenax, because that was more than normal. There were quite a few warbeast castles in Celestial City, it was an extremely common practice to have a warbeast. In fact, there were so many people with exotic creatures on the main street.

Xiao Chen and company took up residence in a big tavern. After freshening up, they prepared to go take a stroll and familiarize themselves with the big city. The three skeletons did not accompany them, they were not interested in the city. The two little beasts on the other hand, were looking forward to explore this

bustling city. All of these fresh experiences roused their curiosity. They followed Xiao Chen and set out together.

They walked about randomly, and asked for the direction to the warbeast street. They inevitably had to pass through the antique street to get there. The majority of the people who came to this place were the middle-aged and elderly people. Only these people would like antiques. Xiao Chen conveniently bought a few pendants on the way. Ignoring Keke and Tenax's opposition, Xiao Chen put the pendants on them. There was a certain charm when the crystal clear ancient jades were paired up with them.

All of a sudden, Xiao Chen saw a familiar back figure at the corner of the street.

"Eh, how come she is also here?"

That was actually Yan Qing Cheng. She obviously hadn't noticed Xiao Chen yet. Xiao Chen was in deep thought and observed at a distant place for a while. He found the imprint of the Undying Sect hidden in an antique store. That was obviously the Undying Sect's little communication point.

Warbeast street; one warbeast arena after another lined up on both sides of the street. Loud beastly roars transmitted from the inside occasionally. Endless streams of people were coming and going on the main street, it was practically a boiling cauldron of voices. This place was clearly more bustling than the other areas of the city.

The color of the sky already darkened, but this was the warbeast street, everything had just begun. There were even more people participating in the warbeast arena at night. Xiao Chen felt a little hungry, he brought the two little beasts and stepped into a restaurant. The restaurant was facing the street and business seemed very good.

He did not choose a private room, instead Xiao Chen chose a seat by the window on the second floor. He listened to the others bragging while enjoying the meal.

"Hey, that was really too strange. That Lynx Dragon was not really a dragon, and yet, no worthy adversary appeared even after it swept the entire arena. What's more, it is still in the growing stage."

“In my opinion, that Lynx Dragon is still not a match for that gold-furred beast in the Hughes Warbeast Arena. That one is really too savage. It is still just a cub, but it tore apart a lesser dragon king that was about ten times its body weight.”

“That Frost Dracolion that appeared in the Morass Warbeast Arena was also very terrifying. It was only two meters long, but it actually crushed a fifteen meters long primal beast.”

“A lot of intellectual beasts have appeared in the warbeast arenas recently. All of them are of the rarely seen variety. I suppose if they are nurtured properly, they might grow up into a sacred beast later.”

“Exactly! The monsters that appeared recently are very strong, and they are still in the infancy stage. I bet they could be sold for a sky-high price. I wonder if those owners will sell them or not.”

“Hoh... although they are very powerful, they are only challenging some nameless warbeast arenas. Only those who can come out alive after challenging those warbeast castles can be regarded as out of ordinary.”

“Don’t you guys find it strange? How come all kinds of intellectual beasts appeared in Celestial City at the same time? And they all are of those rarely seen varieties. As far as I know, those might really be young sacred beasts. One that is capable of standing side by side the dragons and phoenixes.”

“Hush, lower your voice! I have also heard the rumors that there might be a few young sacred beasts that came from those big cities in the North. I don’t know whether it is true or not.”

“I heard on the grapevine that it was because the young Dragon Kings had made an appearance in those warbeast castles before. I suppose those people brought the sacred beasts here in hope of challenging the young Dragon Kings.”

“Is that true?! Those young Dragon Kings that came from the dragon island actually appeared here? How many have shown up?”

“I don’t know how many have showed up, but they definitely did make an appearance. Those people definitely brought the young sacred beasts here to challenge the little Dragon Kings. You should know that if they let the young sacred beasts fight with the little Dragon Kings, it will definitely allow the young

sacred beasts to grow up faster.”

“It really makes people look forward to it. You think it’s possible for a sacred beast more powerful than the Dragon Kings to appear? Otherwise it is impossible for those people to take the risks.”

“I can’t wait! If that is really true, I daresay the warbeast castles in other big cities will respond instantly and rush towards Celestial City. When that time comes, there will definitely be a good show. Just think about it, the strongest warbeasts from a few dozen big cities, sacred beast versus sacred beast, dragon king versus dragon king, sacred beast versus dragon king. There’s so much to look forward to!”

.....

Everyone in the restaurant was discussing spiritedly. It was exactly the time for dinner, every kind of news spread the fastest at this kind of occasion.

Xiao Chen felt this meal was really worth it. He got to hear many useful information. The Dragon Kings had appeared at this place, but which ones could they be? When he was still on the dragon island, Xiao Chen had seen those eleven Dragon Kings. He even knew who those Dragon Kings were following.

However, he heard that a chaotic warfare took place after the divine ship sent those people back to the immortal’s mainland. In order to fight over the Dragon Kings, even demigods had made their moves. Some Dragon Kings had probably changed owner a long time ago. It was still unknown whether Lawrence and Yizhen came out unscathed.

Sitting by the window, everything on the main street could be seen clearly. Although the color of the sky had already darkened, the stream of people was still flowing without an end in sight. Many warbeast arenas were already brightly lit.

“Bastard fatty.....” Xiao Chen shouted. He actually saw the bastard fatty Zhuge Liang. That guy was currently holding a snow-white tomcat and taking a stroll. Behind him were a few bulky men leading a few lesser dragons. He looked like a self-indulgent guy.

“What the f—, WHO dares insult me?!” Surely, not many people had called this

bastard fatty like this before. That's why he started to look for the person immediately after hearing "bastard fatty". He spotted Xiao Chen on the second floor of the restaurant just as he raised his head. Zhuge Liang's eyes immediately glinted with gold radiance, as if he had seen a big pile of gold coins laying right before his eyes.

"So it was brother Xiao, hahaha..... this is too good, I finally see you again." It was easy to tell the bastard fatty was very surprised. His two eyes emitted green light as he shouted, "Did you bring Tenax with you?"

When Xiao Chen and the bastard fatty left the restaurant together, they heard people talking behind their back, "Isn't that the fatty from Amber Warbeast Castle? That guy's eyesight is very keen. Don't tell me, those little beasts with the youngster just now are some rarely seen warbeasts?"

Haha....." The bastard fatty was especially joyful. When he looked at Tenax, it was as if he had been slapped by money and beautiful women. After that, he turned his head back to look at Xiao Chen, and said, "Brother, I'm really too happy to be able to see you again. Last time was really too close. Damn it, we actually got lost in the uncultivated jungle and almost couldn't make it back anymore. Forget about it, we should have a good talk tonight. This night is on me, this fat brother will let you play until you drop."

The fatty was carrying the snow-white tomcat and walked beside Xiao Chen. He introduced from time to time, "When it comes to the most flourishing district, look no further than this area of Celestial City. There's no place better than this. I'm not just talking about the warbeast castles. The best restaurants, red light districts, and casinos can be found here. Hehe, this fat brother will bring you to the best place to have fun....."

Looking at the bastard fatty's smile, Keke really wanted to go up there and scratch him for a little while. It was stopped by Xiao Chen just in the nick of time. The tough little dragon was also grinding its teeth at the fatty constantly.

Not long later, they arrived in front of a dazzling castle. Xiao Chen was a little dumbstruck. This..... seemed like a castle only the imperial household would be permitted to build, if it was in the mortal world, that is. It was really too grand and magnificent.

“Hehe, how about it?” The fatty smiled — that was a lascivious smile no matter how they looked at it — before he continued, “This is the Moonflower Castle, we will let loose at this place tonight. After a few days, we will go to the Spellbind Castle to appreciate some flowers. Hehe..... brother, I am indeed spending money in large amounts. You must know that even I am only willing to come to this kind of place once or twice a year. The standard here is the absolute best in the entire continent.” 1

Chapter 140 – Transcendental Beauty

The Moonflower Castle occupied too much space, it was practically a temple in heaven. Carvings of dragons and phoenixes lined up at both sides of the marble steps, all the way from that golden entrance to the main street. This was definitely not allowed in the mortal world. Only the imperial household could make use of dragon and phoenix marble steps.

The glazed roof tile and golden door were gleaming with luster. The magnificent castle was unusually imposing, but it didn't feel overwhelming. Outside of the golden door, sixteen good-looking girls were standing on both sides of the marble steps. In each side were lined eight girls. Their attitudes could even be said to have nothing in common. Some were passionate and busty, others were sweet and attractive, there were also some cute and charming ones. It was extremely alluring, each of them had their own merits.

"Hehe..... How about it?" The fatty smiled complacently and said, "These are only the little ones used for entertaining the customer. The real beauties are in the castle."

The marble passage and golden door made those lovely young ladies even more beautiful and seductive in contrast. It truly deserved to be called the highest quality brothel as the fatty had said.

Xiao Chen secretly clicked his tongue and followed the fatty into the castle. The inside could be said to be richly ornamented, the gold and jade were glorious in splendor. It was not something the red light districts on the mortal world could compare to. This was entirely built with the imperial castle in mind.

The fatty already passed that tomcat to his subordinates. And those subordinates automatically stopped outside of the main hall. They didn't follow them into the castle, it seemed like people of their status were not allowed to enter.

Within the castle, huge flower vases were lined up in front of the screens. 1 The surfaces of the flower vases were smooth and crystal clear. There were even some very rare pictures of celebrities hanging on the walls. The clients did not make any noise, the sound of moaning couldn't be heard, this didn't seem like a brothel at all.

“So it was actually Lord Zhuge who had graced us with your presence.” A beautiful lady around the age of twenty five or twenty six came to greet them. She didn’t have the bewitching smile commonly found on prostitutes. It was the kind of light smile that made one feel comfortable. Her red lips, white teeth, and glittering eyes were very pleasing.

Even in the mortal world, Xiao Chen had never went to the red light district before. He could be said to have lived his life cleanly. However, he had also heard of a few things regarding the red light district. Was this the rumored brothel keeper? But she didn’t look like one no matter how he looked at her. She didn’t have that kind of seductive charm, her image was more like that of a sweet-tempered and talented girl.

“Shirley! Long time no see. You still remember me? Little brother missed you so much.” Zhuge Liang’s pair of eyes immediately lit up.

“How can I forget about Lord Zhuge, you are one of our esteemed clients.” Her smile contained a hint of flattery. It caused the fatty’s stout body to shudder. He couldn’t help but take two steps forward. It seemed like he wanted to take one more step, but he still endured it in the end. He seemed somewhat apprehensive as he chuckled and said, “Shirley, you sure know how to talk. With my social status, I can only come a few times annually. Every client here is from some renowned family or another, I do not deserve to be called an esteemed client.”

“Hehe, Lord Zhuge is too modest. Everyone knows about Zhuge Liang from the Amber Warbeast Castle; a pair of discerning eyes, the most capable huntsman. In a short few years, you have already found more than ten extraordinary warbeasts. You are the star of Celestial City.”

The fatty started to chuckle, clearly feeling very cheerful.

“Lord Zhuge, you still haven’t introduced this friend of yours to me.”

“My bad, my bad. He is Xiao Chen, a practitioner with unlimited potential. He even has the financial backing of a rare warbeast.” The fatty chuckled and introduced to Xiao Chen, “This is one of the eight most beautiful flowers in the Moonflower Castle, Lady Shirley. She is a famous person in Celestial City.”

Hearing the few words, “rare warbeast”, lady Shirley was clearly excited, but that peculiar expression disappeared quickly. She smiled lightly and said,

“Greetings to Lord Xiao. Lord Xiao seems like a character of strength, one look is all I need to see that you’re a talented person. I’m sure your name will spread all over Celestial City in the future.”

“Greetings to miss Shirley.” Xiao Chen was very calm, but he was secretly observing this girl. That was because when she just entered the room, her expression changed slightly when she looked at Xiao Chen. Could it be that she had heard of him before? Xiao Chen became wary of her.

Shirley stared at Tenax with her clear eyes. The astonishment in her eyes was hard to cover up, she seemed to be very amazed and said, “This must be that rare warbeast you were talking about. Although I don’t understand too much about warbeasts, I have heard of many things. Based on this basis, I have a feeling that if this little beast is nurtured properly, its name will definitely shake the entire world sooner or later. Congratulations in advance, Lord Xiao.”

“Then can we please ask of lady Shirley to compromise, and allow us to go in with the little beasts?”

“No problem. If it was anyone else, I would definitely not allow it. Warbeasts are not allowed in the Moonflower Castle, but just this time, I will make an exception for both of you. After all, such a rare warbeast should be kept beside you.” Soon after, she smiled gently and said, “Please come in, I will no longer waste your valuable time.”

There were many halls in the Moonflower Castle, each occupied a wide area. After passing through this hall, Xiao Chen and company were led to the back. The halls in the courtyard were linked by the hallway. Little bridge was built above the running water. The pavilion was filled with mountains of flowers, it could be said to be refined yet beautiful.

“Was that courtesan just now the brothel keeper?” Xiao Chen asked the fatty in a low voice.

Zhuge Liang jolted for a moment. He looked at the pretty girl who was leading the way before he said to Xiao Chen with a voice only the two of them could hear, “Mother f—! Lower your voice buddy! It’s fine as long as you know, but if they hear what you said, they might peel off our skin! The power behind them is quite big. This Moonflower Castle is definitely powerful enough to stand side

by side with a few warbeast castles.

For a brothel to actually be this large-scale, Xiao Chen was seriously a little shocked. Looking at the fatty's apprehensive appearance, it was easy to tell that this "Flower Castle" not only looked imposing on the outside, even the power inside must be one that not many people dared to provoke.

"Oh, I understand. I can already tell, that courtesan was indeed out of the ordinary. No matter how I looked at her, she didn't look like a prostitute. Her image was more like that of a talented beauty than a brothel keeper."

It seemed like the pure girl who was leading the way in front heard these words, she turned around to cast a glance at Xiao Chen.

When the fatty heard these, he hastily grabbed Xiao Chen's hand and said in a low voice, "I say brother, stop speaking nonsense! This is not the kind of brothel you think it is. The courtesans here have really high status, they normally don't meet with just any clients and only exchange a few words with the esteemed guests. You mustn't provoke them, they will never sell themselves short. Only the area behind here is the real brothel."

After passing through four halls in total, Xiao Chen and company finally came to a stop. They could already hear the sound of singing and dancing at this place, and yet they were still unable to hear the sound of moaning.

Someone came to receive them in the big hall. A beautiful girl using a tray to hold up a booklet arrived in front of them. She said with a melodious voice, "Please choose your courtesan."

The fatty was startled and asked, "We can choose today?"

"That's right, courtesan Shirley has instructed us to properly entertain the two lords." The girl was only fifteen to sixteen years old, she was at a delicate age. The girl was sizing up the two of them curiously.

"Brother, we sure have good luck today." The fatty smiled and explained to Xiao Chen, "There are ten big gardens in the Moonflower Castle. Normally, it is the girls in the gardens who choose the person they want to meet, not the other way around. Only those first class clients get the privilege to choose." 2

Xiao Chen found it a little hard to understand. Why was the root and branch

inverted? How did they do business like this? Was it because the men who came to this place were cheap? It was actually them who got picked by the courtesan instead. He felt that it was too absurd. Who was the one that got to enjoy in the end?

As if he could see Xiao Chen's dissatisfaction, the fatty smiled and said, "Even if we don't get the right to choose, the girls here will not let the clients leave disappointed. Otherwise how would they dare to do this." Soon after, he lowered his voice, "No matter what kind of business, as long as they can make it to the top, they will have this kind of boldness and vision. Of course, they will ultimately guarantee the client's satisfaction."

"Did the lords make up their minds?"

The fatty flipped the beauties list, and then he said, "Then I will choose the Intoxicating House from the Rose Garden."

Following a crooked lane that lead to an isolated place, they passed through two castle halls. The fragrance of flowers ahead was thick and penetrated deeply into their hearts. There was a small stream and the flowers were colorful and lovely. Naturally, the one that bloomed the most abundant was still the rose. The fragrance from hundreds of flowers lingered in the rose garden.

The fatty explained to Xiao Chen, "There are ten big gardens in the Moonflower Castle. Each garden has a few bedrooms or women's chambers. The one I chose is the Intoxicating House of the rose garden. I have already heard one of the girls there is delicate and charming, the other one is lucid and elegant. They are a rare ice and fire pair. Definitely the two queens of this rose garden."

The quality was so carefully selected, Xiao Chen was extremely amazed. This place was really out of ordinary.

"Please enter." A cunning voice rang out from beside them. Xiao Chen turned around just to see a youngster with red lips and white teeth. However, that voice really left a bad impression, it was too sissy.

The fatty Zhuge Liang laughed secretly and explained in a low voice, "This is the court eunuch of the rose garden. He can walk around the garden, but cannot enter the bedroom or chamber."

Xiao Chen felt a little dizzy, they even had a court eunuch. This..... was completely built according to the standards of the imperial castle.

There were three halls in the rose garden, namely; Intoxicating House, Thousand Sweets Chamber, and Graceful Chamber. Although there were a limited number of courtesans, the expenditure was really high. A single bedroom or chamber could cost an ordinary people up to half a year of their living expenses.

Walking past the quiet flower garden with dwarf bamboos growing alongside the road, they arrived in front of the entrance to the Intoxicating House. The court eunuch stopped and did not continue forward. The bluish-green curtain was spread open by the two servant girls at both sides as they invited Xiao Chen and company into the house.

It was already nighttime. Regardless of the garden or within the house, the bewitching rose lamps were already lit up.

With regards to the two who brought along two little beasts, the servant girls were very curious and kept sizing them up.

“Please enter the art hall.” The servant girls led the way in front.

The fatty started to explain again, “The art hall is the place where we can appreciate art in the Intoxicating House. After that, we will go to the bed chamber. Hehe..... Let us go drink and appreciate some art first.”

When Xiao Chen and the fatty stepped into the splendid and magnificent hall, a jingling sound rang out. It was a gentle and beautiful sound, as if it was the sound of nine fairies descending.

“Your enchanting beauty has intoxicated the mortal realm.

When the spring breeze blows, the willows sway,

Bravery is short-lived while a woman’s love is everlasting,

My will to fight has wavered.....” 3

The musical notes from the lute entered their ears. At the same time, a bewitching song started to play.

A faint fragrance was drifting in the castle hall. It was as enticing as the sweet

smell of orchids. On top of the classical stage, there was an elegant girl with black hair that flowed like a waterfall and pupils like that of water. She was brimming with wisdom and single-mindedly devoted to playing the lute. Without any trace of carelessness, there was only the flowery rhythm of the verse.

“This is the Intoxicating House’s lady Lyria.” The fatty introduced in a low voice. At the same time, he chuckled and said, “How about it? This trip is worth it, right? This kind of girl is usually kept hidden from the public eyes, there’s no way we can see her on ordinary days.”

Xiao Chen lamented, this kind of girl was indeed hard to see. If she was put elsewhere, nobody would be able to tell she was a courtesan. She looked like a girl from a wealthy family, a princess that was raised in a noble house. However, from what the fatty was saying, Lyria was merely one of the queen of flowers in the rose garden of Moonflower Castle. One couldn’t help but feel shocked and exclaim in admiration.

The fragrance drifted into the hall as a figure came out from behind the screen with graceful dance steps. Her three sizes were well proportioned. She was so beautiful that it made one feel dizzy. Her figure was as pretty as a picture. Her fiery long hair fluttered about like the passionate flame. Her beautiful face was incomparably sweet and charming. Her pair of eyes were so clear, as if they could start talking any time. Her exquisite nose stood out. She was licking her moist red lips with her tongue, it could even be said to be extremely lovely. Her snow-white neck was like jade, and her boobies stood upright. Her waist was thin and curvy, and her buttocks were perfectly round. She had long and slender legs.

This was definitely an alluring woman. She wore a black fishnet style skintight dress, which exposed most of her snow-white skin. Her exquisite curves were clearly outlined, a white scarf was draped over her shoulders and fluttered along with her dance steps. It made her flicker with unlimited youthfulness and vitality.

Her fiery long hair and snow-white skin, when paired with the black fishnet style skintight dress and the fluffy white scarf, it gave people an intense visual impact.

“This is Carmina. Just like Lyria, she is the queen of the rose garden.”

She was really as passionate and bold as fire. The complete opposite of Lyria.

While the musical notes of the lute were playing, Lyria was also sizing up the two clients with her beautiful and intelligent eyes. Her jade-like fingers were skipping on the string like the fairies, it was gentle and coordinated. Words failed to describe how spectacular it was.

While Carmina's dance grew bolder and more passionate, her graceful, delicate body had already danced over. She twirled around Xiao Chen and the fatty like an exquisite butterfly.

The music and dance from the queens of flowers could already be considered the best treatment, there was no need for any flowery words. This was already enough to intoxicate a man.

Xiao Chen could already tell; Carmina should be a practitioner, and a pretty powerful one to boot. Otherwise it was impossible for her sweet and charming body to be this flexible. Dancing around in circle, Carmina had already got beside Xiao Chen. She twisted her hands around Xiao Chen's body and made a very daring action; she lightly pecked Xiao Chen's earlobe. Her body was incomparably hot, and carrying with it, a hint of fragrance. Her hands twisted around Xiao Chen like a vine. The eyes of the fatty, who was just at the side, already widened. He gulped down the saliva with difficulty.

Chapter 141 – Intoxicated

Xiao Chen did not resist, his body was very relaxed. He was not an inflexible moralist. He faced all of these with a smile, feeling the youthful energy of Carmina who tangled with him. Her fiery hair gently brushed past his face, it felt soft and ticklish. The body contact made him feel enraptured.

Carmina was like a lively fairy. While revealing a charming smile, she twisted her jade-like body. After falling into Xiao Chen's embrace, she whirled away with a graceful dance step. Looking at the fatty who was already dumbstruck, she giggled and lightly clapped her hands.

Eight beautiful young ladies walked into the hall in a line. They looked to be at their prime, at around eighteen to nineteen years old. They were each holding two plates on their hands and delivered sixteen exquisite dishes. There were also two bottles of fine liquor.

Carmina twisted her soft and slender waist as she got beside the jade table. She pulled Xiao Chen along and sat together with him. She was practically sitting in Xiao Chen's embrace. This sexy and graceful pretty girl was really extremely captivating.

Looking at the fatty who was laughing foolishly, Carmina lightly tapped the jade table. Four young ladies appeared in the hall with lively dance steps. They centered around the fatty and pulled him beside the jade table. The fatty was laughing mischievously all along.

Drinking fine liquor with the accompany of beautiful women, this kind of situation was truly the ultimate pleasure.

Carmina smiled sweetly, her entire body was so tender it felt like a drop of water. She stretched her arm and raised it gently, her jade-like body was almost leaning against Xiao Chen's chest. She extended her slender fingers to hold onto the wine cup, then she delivered it towards the side of Xiao Chen's mouth as she said with a sweet voice, "Please enjoy." She looked at Xiao Chen with her bright and intelligent eyes without blinking.

The fatty on the other side was also surrounded by four girls. One of them even sat on his lap. It made the fatty's head spin. Looking at how Carmina was

treating Xiao Chen, the fatty was so surprised that his fats trembled. It seemed like he was the one who had received the lady luck.

Although he was accompanied by a beautiful woman and was sitting in a cluster of flowers, Xiao Chen still remained very calm. Carmina's ability as a practitioner was promising as expected, she was actually at the realm of Exuvia already. Although it was hard to guess her real power, it was already enough to answer a certain question. To make a practitioner like this to greet the client with a smile, there must be a big problem. It could even be said that the Moonflower Castle was not an ordinary place.

The bastard fatty on the other side had already toasted again and again with the four girls. The lovely laughter and the sound of toasting blended together. The fatty's eyes were already emitting green light as he swept his glance past the four beautiful girls.

"Why is Lord Xiao so quiet? Have a drink." Carmina was like a beautiful snake. Her snow-white arm was holding the wine-cup before Xiao Chen's eyes and made a beautiful maneuver. Even if she was sitting beside Xiao Chen, part of her limbs were still able to make such a beautiful posture.

"Brother, you should let it all out. You don't know how envious is this big brother of you. How I wish I could just switch places with you." The fatty smiled and said, "Miss Carmina, I'll leave my brother to you."

The young girls who were around the fatty opened their mouths to say in succession, "All of us will offer one cup to Lord Xiao."

For a moment, this place was bustling with noise and excitement, how very lively. The bewitching dance, when paired together with the beautiful song of the lute, it was truly intoxicating.

At the distance, there was a fairy maiden as beautiful as the ice and snow. Nearby, there was a bewitching maiden that was sexy and bold. The sound of cheers filled the Intoxicating House.

Xiao Chen was not an inflexible guy. He was only taking a guess at how powerful the Moonflower Castle was, so he was absent-minded for a short while. Now that he had regained his consciousness, he completely let loose. This was the so-called 'to join in the fun'. Being too old-fashioned was not good for

people and himself.

“Your enchanting beauty has intoxicated the mortal realm.

When the spring breeze blows, the willows sway,

Bravery is short-lived while a woman’s love is everlasting,

My will to fight has wavered.....”

Carmila danced lightly like a butterfly. When paired along with the pleasant song, it was enough to intoxicate a man. She started to dance right beside Xiao Chen. The other girls were also wrapped around the fatty as they started to dance. They even pulled the fatty and made him dance along clumsily.

And just at this time, a few more girls appeared. They sat in front of the few musical instruments on the classical stage and started to play the song in place of Lyria. Lyria herself stepped into the center of the hall and started to dance. Her dance was very elegant and substantially different from the passionate dance of Carmina. Her movements were as gentle as the wind, like a willow that had been brushed into motion.

At the same time, another four girls came into the hall. They got behind Lyria and started to move as in a dance with their frail bodies. Carmina brought the other four girls along with her to Lyria’s side.

In but a moment, the hall was filled with music and dance, it made one unable to free themselves from the intoxication. Especially when Lyria, who possessed a beautiful voice, also joined the dance, it really made one feel the extraordinary charm. The discrepancy between her and Carmina was too big, which gave people an extremely distinctive perception.

What made people even more intoxicated was that, Lyria also entangled herself with Xiao Chen. A girl who seemed ice-cold actually possessed this kind of attitude, it really made one surprised.

He could feel that soft body as well as the delicate fragrance. Such an intimate body contact could make anyone’s imagination run wild.

The fatty at the side was very astonished. After thinking for a while, it seemed like he thought of something.

Only until Lyria had separated from Xiao Chen, and joined up with Carmina to dance in the center of the hall did the fatty said in a low voice, “Something’s not right, they never treated any client like this before.”

Xiao Chen didn’t say anything, but he had raised his guard. He could only think of one possibility. The people of this place might have already heard of his achievements on the dragon island. But it was nothing to worry about, that was not a secret. If one had enough power, they could probably find out everything that happened on the dragon island. The only thing he was concerned about was that he had no idea what they were planning. Could it be that they wanted to entice him, or could they tell that Keke and Tenax were out of the ordinary?

Keke and Tenax at the side didn’t understand what was going on at all. They only curiously watched the dancing-girls while sitting on the soft chair.

While appreciating the pretty girls dancing in front, the fatty chatted with Xiao Chen. Their topics mostly covered some things pertaining the warbeasts.

“The circumstances in Celestial City right now are very complicated. The Dragon Kings actually made an appearance. There are even quite a few people who brought their sacred beasts here. If Tenax can come out on top. Oh, that will be so.....” In the end, the fatty was talking in his sleep.

“Do you know how many Dragon Kings have come altogether?”

“More or less around two. I investigated for a long time, but I couldn’t find their origins. I couldn’t even find any records of the two Dragon Kings’ battles. It is classified as top-secret by a few warbeast castles. Even my family is no exception. Those antiques didn’t want me to get in touch with the Dragon Kings.”

Xiao Chen frowned as he heard these. He originally wanted to use the fatty’s connection to get to the bottom of this, but he never thought they’d be this cautious.

“Tenax definitely cannot clash with those sacred beasts at the moment. What we should do now is to quickly awaken its hidden potential. From a professional’s point of view, its power has been greatly suppressed. I believe that if we develop it properly, it will absolutely not be inferior to those sacred beasts.” The fatty had become serious for once. Looking at Tenax at the side, he

came to this conclusion.

Xiao Chen was toasted by those girls in the Intoxicating House unceasingly. He started to feel a little dizzy. It seemed like they knew he was a practitioner, so they didn't permit him to use his secret arts to break down the wine. In the end, he helplessly looked for an excuse to go out and take a breather. He wanted to distil the wine.

The moonlight was gentle. The entire sky was filled with stars.

Just at this time, he actually saw a familiar figure. That person was also standing beside the flowerbed and distilling the wine.

"What are you doing here?!" The voice was as elegant as the sounds of nature, but it was filled with hostility. There was a hint of surprise and anger, it seemed like that person felt animosity towards Xiao Chen.

Xiao Chen was surprised, it was actually Yan Qingcheng who was dressed up as a man. He laughed at once and said, "So it was you, chick."

Although the beautiful Yan Qingcheng was dressing up as a man, it was still impossible to conceal her beauty. Her smooth skin, her clear eyes, her slender body, as well as her beautiful face, they were like the fresh blooms after winter. She was as beautiful as the naturally formed jade. She was truly elegant and ethereal. The men's clothes only served to enhance her beauty. Right now, she was like a goblet of intelligence. It even made the bright moon in the sky lose its splendor.

When Xiao Chen said the word "chick", he was being very sarcastic. In this kind of place, it made the word even more meaningful. It made Yan Qingcheng extremely angry.

"You... you... shameless beast!" Yan Qingcheng was very furious, she felt humiliated.

Xiao Chen found this to be very amusing. In the past, they were either in a life and death battle or he was suppressing her with overwhelming strength. This was his first time seeing this side of her, he wanted to tease her even more, "What? Is this unacceptable? Little girl, you don't have the qualifications to say that to me. Didn't you also come to this kind of place? But I am curious, why did

a girl come to this kind of place? Could it be because you have a peculiar ‘taste’?”

It seemed like Yan Qingcheng had drunk too much, her face was flushed and her eyes were somewhat watery. Hearing these words from Xiao Chen made her so angry that her feet became unstable. After swaying for a little while, she cursed in a low voice, “You scoundrel.... You immoral beast! Do you think everyone comes here only to do bad things like you?!”

There were three halls in the rose garden; Intoxicating House, Thousand Sweets Chamber, and Graceful Chamber. Xiao Chen looked around and found that Yan Qing Cheng came from the Graceful Chamber. He laughed and said, “Then what did you come here for? To recite poems and paint with the others? Or to come and have a tea party?”

“It’s none of your business!”

“I guess you do have a peculiar taste after all.....”

Swish!

Yan Qingcheng transformed into a purple light and slashed at Xiao Chen five times with her palm blade. She left behind one elegant afterimage after another in the rose garden. But the series of attacks were all blocked by Xiao Chen. In the end, he even grabbed her wrist.

“Let go! I’m not going to argue with you. This is not an ordinary place, nobody dares to cause trouble here.” Yan Qingcheng said in a low voice. She was furious and resentful that her wrist had been grabbed, but she didn’t dare to raise her voice.

It was easy to tell that she was drunk. Her cheeks were flushed, and the fragrance of the girl had been covered up by the smell of wine. It was obvious that she had a little too much to drink.

“Don’t make your move if you know you can’t beat me.” Xiao Chen turned around and left. At the same time, he mumbled, “Be careful. A girl shouldn’t come to this kind of place. Your patriarch had betrothed you to me.....”

Although the voice was low, Yan Qingcheng could hear everything clearly. She already drank until her head went dizzy, there was no hint of her usual clear-

headedness as she shouted, “Don’t talk nonsense. Otherwise I’m not done with you!”

“I am not making this up. Didn’t you start practicing the Obliterate Demon Absolute God already? Your patriarch already told me, you cannot be too far away from me..... When that time comes, other than me, who else can you marry.....”

Although Xiao Chen whispered with a faintly discernible voice, it was heard by Yan Qingcheng. She immediately blowed up, “How can the patriarch be like this, he even told you these..... Xiao Chen, you are talking nonsense, I’m going to kill you at all cost!”

“Hah! As if I’m scared?!” Xiao Chen looked at her with a provocative glance, then he continued to walk towards the Intoxicating House. He thought about the reason why Yan Qingcheng came to this kind of place while walking, there must had been some reason.”

Yan Qingcheng forced the wine out of her body, then she also walked towards the Intoxicating House, and said, “Fine! I really am not done with you today, but we will not fight with martial arts. Since we are at this place, we will follow the rules here. Let’s have a drinking contest.”

Xiao Chen saw Yan Qingcheng ran over. Although she had already forced the wine out of her body system, she still hadn’t really sobered up. He only looked at her provocatively. The frivolous words that came later caused Yan Qingcheng to run over while panting with rage.

“Little girl, can you really?”

“Didn’t expect that this scoundrel was this repulsive. I will make you drunk for one month straight!”

When the fatty saw that Xiao Chen came back with a youth, he was in a daze. On the other hand, Lyria and Carmina had a peculiar expression. It seemed like they had figured something out. The eight gorgeous dancing-girls at the side had incomparably passionate eyes. That was because Yan Qingcheng was seriously too beautiful and charming.

After a long time later, the fatty started to chuckle. He could already tell that

this was a genuine stunning beauty. He whispered to Xiao Chen, “Brother, you are so capable. This kind of outstanding beauty can really make one feel ashamed of one’s inferiority. She’s so beautiful that it makes people feel dizzy just looking at her. And you are actually able to bring her to this kind of place.....”

Yan Qingcheng didn’t say much after she entered the hall. She just kept pouring wine and drank ten cups in succession. After that, she looked at Xiao Chen provocatively. Each cup could hold a bottle or two of wine. In other words, she downed half a kilo of strong wine in one breath.

Xiao Chen also didn’t say much and drank ten cups in succession. Looking at the two drinking, Carmina, Lyria, and the other girls cheered for them. The fatty even incited them.

This was a chaotic drinking bout. Not long later, Carmina got beside Xiao Chen and said, “Where did this pretty friend of yours come from? Her alcohol tolerance is quite high. I went to the Graceful Chamber just now and all the sisters were dead drunk on the ground. They were all done in by her.”

“Everyone in the hall, come and drink.” While Yan Qingcheng didn’t have the intention to let Xiao Chen go, it seemed like she wouldn’t let the fatty, Lyria, Carmina, and the others off either.

Carmina and Lyria had a barely tolerable expression. They made the beautiful girls at the side go up and drink with Yan Qingcheng. But Yan Qingcheng grabbed the two of them, and didn’t let them escape. It seemed like she wanted to make Xiao Chen drunk and make the two of them go down with him. As for the fatty, he was already seeing stars.

“I know you girls are practitioners, no one is allowed to cheat in a drinking bout. I will not let you go and purify the wine.” Yan Qing Cheng looked at everyone provocatively, but her cheeks were already flushed.

It was pretty lively within the Intoxicating House. The fatty was the very first to fall down on the red carpet not far away. He was hugging two gorgeous girls with saliva overflowing from his mouth.

Another drinking bout was about to begin. A stunning beauty dressing as a man, while drinking along with two exceptionally beautiful girls, she forced Xiao

Chen to drink. It was exceptionally bewitching.

Yan Qingcheng's alcohol tolerance really made Xiao Chen dumbstruck. He resigned to his fate and fell on the ground. He was extremely angry as he thought to himself: Mother @#%¥, this woman... sure can drink. I'm actually drunk...

In the end, Yan Qingcheng propped up Carmina and Lyria who were already drunk. She emitted two rays of peculiar light from her eyes. If Xiao Chen was clear-headed, he would have known that it was a hypnotization technique. It could make one speak out the secrets in their heart.

She looked face to face with Lyria, then she asked in a barely audible voice, "Talk, is it true that the Moonflower Castle is hiding a Dragon King.....?"

"Yes... That's right..."

Yan Qingcheng was also spent. After getting a satisfied answer, she also collapsed and fell towards Xiao Chen.....

The hall gradually became quiet. Other than the three girls on the classical stage, everyone else was already drunk.

Keke and Tenax were a little puzzled. They were enjoying the fine food at the side and quietly looked at these events unfolding.

The three girls on the classical stage looked at each other in dismay. After that, they walked over and took a glance at Xiao Chen first. One of the girls said, "He has the heroic spirit of a man, but not as handsome as the other one."

Their sight fixed on Yan Qingcheng's body. Looking at her dream-like face, one of the girls sighed, "Is he really a man? If he is actually a woman, I would lose all my confidence. He's really too pretty."

They couldn't help but caress Yan Qingcheng's jade-like face with their slender fingers. However, they retracted their hands as if electrocuted, and shouted in surprise, "A woman, she's actually a woman!"

"No wonder. How can a man be this pretty? She's really too beautiful!"

"I bet only the legendary flower empress in the Moonflower Castle can be compared to her."

“The empress of the Spellbind Castle should also be comparable.”

Looking at the beautiful Yan Qingcheng, the three of them were very jealous.

“Making my heart beat for nothing. And she’s actually a woman. Hmph! Unforgivable.”

Hearing these words, the youngest among them who were only sixteen or seventeen years old giggled naughtily and said, “Why don’t we do this instead?”

1

Speaking until here, they started to fiddle with Yan Qingcheng’s posture.

Yan Qingcheng was originally on top of Xiao Chen, but after getting fiddled by them, their posture became incomparably dubious. Not only was Yan Qingcheng caught in Xiao Chen’s embrace, one of her hands was inserted into Xiao Chen’s cloth. And Xiao Chen’s bulky hand was buried into Yan Qing Cheng’s bra by that naughty girl.

“Hehe... I look forward to the time they wake up.”

“Aren’t we a little too wicked? Hehehe.”

“No, it’s pretty fun. Hehe.....”

After the three girls left the hall. Keke and Tenax’s eyes lit up. They quietly left this place and moved stealthily into the depths of the Moonflower Castle. 2

Chapter 142 – Too excessive

This was bound to be a chaotic night. The snow-white little Keke and Tenax moved swiftly in the shadows without making any sound. They were a bizarre race to begin with and their inherent intelligence allowed them to completely avoid danger.

The Moonflower Castle was vast and filled with one hall after another. All kinds of beauties gathered at this place, it was truly the paradise every man yearned for. An alluring fragrance lingered in the vast halls.

However, the two little beasts were not interested in these. They relied on their instinct to keep forging ahead, because the question asked by Yan Qingcheng when she was still conscious was clearly transmitted to their sharp ears. They wanted to find the Dragon King that was hidden in the Moonflower Castle.

But the halls and gardens of the imperial castle-like establishment were really too big. They spent a really long time inspecting every nook and corner, but they were still unable to pinpoint their target. They could only feel it vaguely.

“Water.....”

Under the peaceful night, within the Intoxicating House, Yan Qingcheng seemed to be sleep talking. Right now, she was entangled with Xiao Chen and their position was very dubious.

The others were also in a drunken state. Only the fragrance of flowers lingered in the main hall. It was very quiet.

In the latter of the night, the two little beasts found an underground labyrinth. They could feel the breath of a Dragon King coming from the underground labyrinth with their sharp spiritual sense. And just at this time, a few shadows rushed over from ten big gardens. The two little beasts discovered the men coming and decided to withdraw quietly.

Only after they saw the few men enter the underground labyrinth in succession did they follow suit. However, because of the gloomy beast roar that was transmitted from the underground labyrinth, they quickly ran back to the Intoxicating House like startled rabbits.

The Moonflower Castle was no longer peaceful. On this very night, at the deepest parts of the halls, a few dozens of human figures swayed on the ground and in the sky. But the disturbance only lasted for a moment, it was easy to imagine the formidable power of the Moonflower Castle.

The morning sun shone upon the world. The sunlight shone through the crystal glass of the Moonflower hall, and was reflected by the mirrors within the hall. It made the radiance of the rising sun sprinkle over every corner of the hall.

Yan Qingcheng woke up feeling hazy, she could feel that she was embracing a hug pillow, but something felt off; Why was there body temperature? She was clearly still muddle-headed. After dazing for two seconds, she slowly opened her pair of charming eyes. In that instant, she almost let out a shriek.

She actually slept in Xiao Chen's embrace for one night. This scene could almost drive one crazy. For a proud woman like her, it was practically impossible to imagine. But she was still an uncommon woman to the end. She was able to remain calm and unmoving in this situation. After a careful observation, she found that Xiao Chen was still soundly asleep.

She felt ashamed and resentful as she pulled her slender hand out of Xiao Chen's cloth. After that, she lifted her lily-white right palm. She really wanted to slap him and completely dispose of this guy who always suppressed her. She had suffered so many humiliations and grievances because of this man.

However, she felt powerless in the end and dropped her arm. Obliterate Demon Absolute God had already started, the other party was her vessel. If something happened to him, she would meet the same fate. Right now, their fates were interlinked, for better or for worst.

Yan Qingcheng was extremely angry as she separated herself from Xiao Chen, but she didn't dare to make any drastic movements. If the other person involved was roused from his sleep, it would be even more awkward.

However, the big hand that extended slightly into her cloth caused her to grind her silver teeth. A shadow hung over her beautiful face. Although the hand wasn't touching her body at this moment, god knows if she was safe the entire night.

"This pig head, he slept like a log!" Yan Qingcheng expended a great deal of

effort to push over the thigh that was over her body. But just at this time, Xiao Chen also seemed to have woken up. It looked like he was stretching, both of his arms were extended.

She didn't have enough time to move that big hand away from her cloth. And now she discovered to her astonishment, that big hand had actually.....

"Kya.....!" Yan Qingcheng let out a cry.

She kicked Xiao Chen away at once, then she jumped up like a startled rabbit. Although her posture was extremely elegant, her beautiful face looked exhausted.

Xiao Chen opened his eyes in a daze. Yan Qingcheng's glare looked like it could kill. After stretching his arms for a bit, Xiao Chen said in a daze, "I am aching all over, feels like a Tyrannical Dragon was lying on top of me the entire night."

Yan Qingcheng was extremely angry, she could literally flip out at any moment now.

"You... bastard!"

However, Xiao Chen's next words caused her to lose her will to be angry. She wished she could just run away immediately.

"Just now I had a strange dream; I caught a big white rabbit....." Xiao Chen looked at his right hand and said to himself strangely, "It felt soft and tender....."

"This immoral man should just go to hell!" Yan Qingcheng's long hair flowed down like a waterfall. It was jet-black and bright. But her face was already bright red like she had one drink too much. Her pair of eyes were watery, and she actually acted the same as a normal girl when she was angry. She held on to her plump chest firmly, as if she was afraid to be attacked.

"What does it matter to you if I caught a rabbit in my dream?!" Xiao Chen was still looking at his right hand, seemingly reflecting on the aftertaste.

"Drop dead!" Yan Qingcheng felt ashamed and resentful as she threw a fruit on the jade table towards Xiao Chen. After that, she turned her slender body around and ran out of the Intoxicating House like a gust. Her voice transmitted from far away, "Xiao Chen, you just wait. As long as you are still in Celestial City,

this lady right here isn't done with you yet!"

"Hahaha....." Seeing Yan Qingcheng run away in a sorry figure, Xiao Chen roused himself from his dazed state. His expression was incomparably sharp, he was obviously wide awake as he laughed at the top of his lung.

Just at this time, Carmina and Lyria also woke up in succession. They revealed a faint smile, but it seemed a little ambiguous.

The fatty broke away from the girls at his side and crawled up. He was at a complete loss and said in a daze, "This is such a great loss, we actually got drunk and slept for the night here. This is not good, lady Lyria, lady Carmina, this is really a great loss. We actually didn't enter the chamber."

The lucid and elegant Lyria, the lovely and sexy Carmina; they only smiled and said at the same time, "You can't blame us for this. It was you who got yourself drunk."

The color of the day had already brightened up. After freshening up for a bit, Xiao Chen and the fatty left the Intoxicating House.

In the rose garden, the fragrance of flowers permeated the air, the birdsongs were pleasant to listen to. The pavilions and the bridge over the running water appeared exceptionally harmonious under the morning sun.

"Lord Zhuge, please come visit Moonflower Castle again."

"Brother Xiao, we will definitely meet again."

From the Intoxicating House, the pleasant voice of the beautiful Carmina and the classy Lyria could be heard.

On the most bustling street of Celestial City, there was a stream of people even early in the morning. This place was always like this; the daytime had the daytime's activities, the nighttime had the nighttime's passion.

"Brother Xiao, just where did that little girl who dressed up as a man come from? She actually got all of us drunk. It is such a pity!" The fatty was still feeling very regretful for not entering the chamber. He was extremely angry as he said, "Wait till I get a promotion, I will definitely live there everyday. So much so that the legendary empress might even come to see me. Wuu~ Wuu~ It was all that

little girl's fault, but she was so beautiful to the point where it seemed sinful. Is there anything between the two of you?"

Listening to the fatty's chattering, Xiao Chen really wanted to laugh out loud. However, he couldn't really bring himself to laugh, because he saw Yan Qingcheng again. She was clenching her teeth and glaring at him on the other side of the street.

"Wait a moment, I will be back soon." Xiao Chen walked over there and looked at Yan Qingcheng, whose beauty was enough to make the sun lose its splendor. Then he asked, "Are you waiting for me?"

"Pooh! You immoral guy, who would wait for you!" Although she was still in men's clothes, she was just as beautiful. Yan Qingcheng's cheeks were flushed as she said angrily, "The patriarch's message; If you encounter any danger in the Celestial City, just tell them you are the Vindex of the Undying Sect." She was very dissatisfied with the patriarch's decision, and said with annoyance, "The patriarch is really too much, I really don't know why he treats you like this. I seriously want to punch you in the face."

Xiao Chen laughed heartily, he really liked seeing Yan Qingcheng depressed like this.

"Just you wait, I will make you pay sooner or later!" Yan Qingcheng cast an angry glance at Xiao Chen, then she disappeared at the corner of the street as soon as she turned around.

"Brother Xiao, I have some urgent business. I will come and find you tonight." The fatty waved his hand across the street. He shouted towards Xiao Chen, "You stay at that tavern, make sure you don't change location." Soon after, he hurriedly left with an underling.

Xiao Chen brought the two little beasts along and leisurely walked on this bustling street. Looking at the stream of people come and go, he kept pondering in his heart: "I expect not long in the future, the Celestial City will go through a turbulent time. With the Dragon Kings and Sacred Beasts gathered here, the experts will also gather here accordingly." He had a premonition that the clouds would inevitably gather from all directions.

After having their breakfast, Xiao Chen and company entered a marketplace

filled with thunderous roars of beasts. There was a vast crowd at that place, that was a free market where they could buy and sell warbeasts.

It was really too noisy, this place was incomparably rowdy. At places where a big crowd gathered, there was a huge cage with an exotic giant creature within.

“Ceh, those people are too old-fashioned.” A handsome blond was walking side by side with a blue-haired girl. A few attendants were following behind them.

Xiao Chen was not far away from them. He could hear their conversation clearly.

“How could a really good warbeast be locked in a cage? The more powerful the giant creatures, the harder it is to lock them up. So what if they are ten meters long, it is merely to scare those who don’t know the ropes.” The voice of the blond guy seemed to be filled with disdain.

The blue-haired girl curled her lips resentfully, “Then why did you come here in the first place?”

The blond guy looked forward with his ocean blue eyes, and said, “Of course I’m here to dig for treasures. Let’s go to the place where they sell the cubs. Maybe we might get lucky and find some high quality warbeasts. Those sellers might not know the warbeasts’ quality. In the past ten years, two people were able to buy a young sacred beast here.”

“Really? How can that be?” The beautiful blue-haired girl blinked her big eyes. She was brimming with surprise and was not entirely convinced. 1

“Cousin, you just arrived at the Celestial City and don’t understand the circumstances, but that was the truth. The south desolate region is different from the other places. This place is surrounded by thousand miles of primitive forest, with many exotic beasts roaming around. This place is one of the best locations to look for warbeasts. A lot of mountain people made a living by catching wild beasts. They would spend all year round looking for exotic beasts in the mountains and sell it in the town. Of course, it is impossible for them to catch the powerful exotic beasts, but they have their own methods. They can frequently find some young intellectual beasts. And if they are lucky, they might even find some rare cub. Maybe you might find it hard to believe, the young

sacred beasts I told you about earlier were picked up by the mountain people in the great mountain. They didn't know the value and sold it as ordinary cubs here at the Celestial City. If it was seen by those who knew the ropes, they would have undoubtedly found a great treasure among the pile of cheaply-priced old books."

"Ceh, ten years and only two little sacred beasts were found. You also want to come across this kind of lucky stroke?" Although the blue-haired girl was excited and looking forward to it, she still had to deliver the last blow.

"I didn't say I wanted to try my luck and dig out some sacred beasts. One can only come across such things in the right place at the right time. However, it is true that we can frequently find some pretty powerful young intellectual beasts here."

Xiao Chen secretly nodded his head when he heard these. This place was indeed a good place for a treasure hunt. Since there was no special event around the proximity, he brought the two little beasts and casually followed the two of them towards the area where they bought and sold cubs.

The standards at this place were clearly much higher. There were no metal cages, nor beast roars. On the contrary, there were a lot of small crystal houses. There were all kinds of little animals at this place, some of them were only as big as the palm, and some hadn't even opened their eyes yet.

Goodness gracious!

Xiao Chen felt a little speechless. It seemed like the warbeast industry was really completely standardized. Even the cubs were carefully selected for quality. Xiao Chen found that, after he arrived at this place, many people were sizing up Tenax and Keke beside him.

"Let's go and see if we can find some treasure." Xiao Chen smiled and whispered to the two little beasts, "I will be counting on your insight today."

"Come and see, it's a young Aurarius Wolf!" A one foot long golden little fox with an ominous glint in its blue eyes was locked in a small crystal house. And its owner was trying to peddle it.

"The ancient and exotic Alba Rhinoceros, come get it while it's still young." To the side, in a small crystal house, there was a white rhinoceros about one meter

long. Its body was almost transparent and flickering with specks of radiance from head to toe. It was also being peddled.

“Tricollus 2, the intellectual species that knows how to use magic.....” Next was a little lion with golden fur, its entire body was sparkling as if it was made out of gold. Its three heads were exactly the same, fierce and extraordinary. Its body length was no more than fifty meters long, and its owner was also trying to peddle it.

Xiao Chen could already tell, those little beasts were very uncommon. It seemed like they were sealed by some kind of power. Otherwise their owner wouldn't even think of putting them in the small crystal houses. Anyone could tell these little beasts were very powerful at first glance. That's why so many people were surrounding them. Of course, the price was naturally sky-high.

Xiao Chen took a deep breath after taking a quick look. He definitely couldn't afford it at all, that was indeed a sky-high price!

The starting price was actually a hundred thousand gold coins!

All of a sudden, Keke started to run. It ran forward without even looking back. The stream of people there was sparse in comparison.

When Xiao Chen caught up, he found that Keke was currently flipping over a little tortoise with white shell. The little tortoise was about the size of a fist. It was rolling all over the blanket that was spread on the ground. 3

Seeing that the little tortoise was not put in a small crystal house, Xiao Chen immediately rushed over there and shouted, “Boss, how much is the tortoise, I'm buying it!” 4

Chapter 143 – Winning Over a Beautiful Attendant

Seeing Keke like this, Xiao Chen immediately wanted to purchase the white shelled tortoise. One must know that the snow-white little critter had always been the nemesis of any spiritual items. Its insight was always spot on. Keke had most likely discovered the little tortoise's uncommon trait. Otherwise, how would it be so interested in this little tortoise?

However, Xiao Chen was afraid that it would arouse the seller's suspicion, so he burst into loud laughter and said, "I have been searching for so long. Haha, I have finally found a white-shelled tortoise. I hear that white tortoise soup is a great tonic."

The white little tortoise on the ground trembled slightly, as if it had been terrified, but no people took notice of it.

And after the few buyers who just got over wanting to ask for the price heard this, their face immediately became dull as they moved back. The seller even rolled his eyes and said dispiritedly, "I say little brother, this is a warbeast, not some tonic. I think you are at the wrong place."

"No, no. Since you are going to sell it, might as well sell it as a drug ingredient."

Whether it was the shopkeeper or the people beside him, they became speechless as they heard him.

"Alright, how much are you willing to pay?"

"A tortoise about this size... I will take it for two gold coins."

"You... Do you think you are buying vegetables? Just scram!" The seller helplessly waved his hand.

"What, two gold coins are still not enough? You can buy a sumptuous feast with two gold coins. Although a white tortoise is rare, it shouldn't be too expensive." Xiao Chen casually flipped the little tortoise over. He found that this fist-sized little thing was really a little outstanding. Its pair of black eyes flickered and it looked very intelligent. It was looking at him timidly, as if it was scared to be turned into a soup.

"Buddy, what I have here is a warbeast. The price you opened is too ridiculous.

You had better just move aside.” The seller thought he had encountered a scammer.

“This little tortoise is a warbeast? It is only fist-sized, no sharp teeth nor sharp claws, how can it fight? Who are you trying to deceive? You can’t just go and randomly grab anything to sell here.”

The shopkeeper also felt very embarrassed and said, “Although it is not very powerful, it is still a warbeast. It can defeat opponents much bigger than itself.”

Hearing these, seven to eight people immediately surrounded the stall.

Xiao Chen asked indifferently, “What did it defeat?”

“It defeated a vicious dog and a golden pheasant.”

“My god, what kind of joke is this? The little warbeasts that other people are trying to sell are valuable breeds, capable of killing giant monsters around seven to eight meters long. What about yours? It really makes one speechless. In the end of the day, this little tortoise only knows how to imitate the dog and steal the chicken. Just look at the way it pulled its head back, it looks like a little thief.”

The people at the side roared with laughter. Nobody stood in a circle to continue watching, everyone had scattered without exception.

The shopkeeper flushed with anger as he heard these. He tried to justify himself, “I originally planned to sell this little tortoise in a ‘buy one get one free’ sale. I didn’t plan to cheat anyone and sell it by itself. How about you buy this young Grand Wolf instead, I will give you this little tortoise, free of charge. I don’t care if you take it home to stew it or to impress the ladies, it is a good thing.”

“Hey boss, you sure are interesting. I will offer five gold coins, I only want to buy the little tortoise to make a stew. As for the little Grand Wolf, just forget about it. I don’t want to eat dog meat.”

“Just take it and scram!” The shopkeeper waved his hand strongly. He really couldn’t stand Xiao Chen anymore. If he let Xiao Chen stay for a moment longer, the people around would start thinking he was selling tonics instead of warbeasts.”

“Then please unlock the chains. Is it necessary to go as far as locking up a little tortoise?” Xiao Chen found that on the little tortoise’s white shell, there was a small hole near the position of its neck. It was tied up with a black and meticulous chain.

“I will say this in advance, if it gets away after I unchain the lock, then it is not my business anymore.” The shopkeeper muttered resentfully, “This little tortoise was really bizarre. When it ran, it was as fast as a gust. I originally thought it was something good. But who knew, it only knows how to imitate the dog and steal the chicken.”

“So it was true?” Xiao Chen began to laugh.

“Exactly, I lost so many gold coins due to it.”

“Hey, this little thing is quite greedy.” Xiao Chen carefully sized up the little tortoise. He could already tell that this white little tortoise was out of the ordinary, because no matter how he looked at the chain and the tiny hole on its shell, they looked quite old.

Only after he paid the shopkeeper and grabbed the little tortoise with his hands did Xiao Chen ask, “Boss, where did you catch this tortoise?”

“I bought it from a drug dealer.”

“This is really a drug ingredient? That means I was right since the beginning.”

The shopkeeper revealed a rarely seen embarrassed expression and said awkwardly, “When that drug dealer excavated a rarely seen old ginseng king, this little tortoise was also dug out at the same time.”

“My god, it was dug out?!” Xiao Chen pondered for a while, then he asked, “Were you the one who put on the chain?”

“No, it was already there when I bought it. It should be that drug dealer who put it on.”

Xiao Chen didn’t say anything else. He carried the little tortoise, and left along with Keke and Tenax. Just by relying on his feelings alone, he felt that he had just struck a big fortune!

He was actually unable to destroy those tiny chains. With his current ability, it

was a little inconceivable. Soon after, he observed carefully with his keen spiritual sense and found small letters that couldn't be seen with naked eyes on the iron chain. That chain was definitely not put on by the drug dealer.

After walking for a while, Xiao Chen found an anomaly with his keen intuition. There were actually people tailing him from behind.

"Who could it be?" Xiao Chen remained calm and collected. He continued to walk at the same pace.

The power levels in the Celestial City were complicated and very tricky. Not only was there the powerful Warbeast Castles, there were also a few practitioner institutions. So much so that there were even crowned brothels like the Moonflower Castle and the Spellbind Castle. The most important thing was that all of the major powers had deployed some people to the south desolate region, including big sects like the Undying Sect. It was seriously a very complicated place.

"Lord Xiao, please come to a halt."

Xiao Chen turned around and found that the one running over was a youngster who he was not acquainted with. The youngster seemed like a person of mixed blood; with long blue hair and black pupils. Seemed like that person was born with an innate sense of arrogance and superiority.

"You need something from me?"

"My family's old father asked for you."

"Who is your family's old father?"

"You will know if you meet him."

"Sorry, if you don't want to say it, I will not even give it a second thought."

The youngster carried an air of arrogance and said, "In this Celestial City, nobody dares to defy my family."

Xiao Chen turned around and ignored him. He continued to walk and said, "If I say I'm not going, then I'm not going." Facing such a hostile invitation, he didn't want to take his chances.

"Don't you regret it." After saying these, the youngster left at high speed.

Within the Celestial City, in a place filled with castles, the voice of an old man transmitted from within a big hall, “He’s not coming?”

“That’s right, and his attitude was very arrogant.” That was precisely the man who extended an invitation to Xiao Chen.

“Hoh... quite an impetuous youngster.” The aged voice was as calm as an ancient well.

“He is looking down on us, we can’t let him off that easily.” The young man complained.

A young girl’s voice resounded in the big hall, “He is the Vindex of the Undying Sect. According to the major power’s unwritten rule, the previous generations cannot lightly touch the youth generation. Otherwise it will lead to an all-out war, it will become very chaotic. Uuu, this guy is quite troublesome. According to his display on the dragon island, his power should be at least Exuvia Sixth Celestial Layer or Seventh Celestial Layer. He could be considered an expert among the youth generation.”

After a while, that old man’s voice rang out, “According to what happened on the dragon island, that snow-white little critter is very unusual. It should be just as powerful as a Dragon King, our Warbeast Castle really needs it. The older generation definitely cannot make their move, otherwise the Undying Sect will not sit back and watch. We can only let the youth generation settle this among themselves. Or maybe..... you guys should think of a way to pull him here.”

The young man retorted, “Hmph! So what if he has reached Exuvia Seventh Celestial Layer? We have a young expert here that is as famous in the south desolate region as the Solitary Sword Demon. Killing him is just as easy as chopping vegetables. Just let us youth generation handle him by ourselves.”

The young girl’s voice followed up, “No, unless it is absolutely necessary, we must not do this.”

“It’s too late. By the time I came back, my little sister already left.....” The young man’s voice carried a hint of mockery.

“How can she go with her current ability? How could you let her go? This will become a big problem.....” The young girl seemed a little resentful.

“That guy will only move if we let her suffer a bit.”

.....

Xiao Chen was still leisurely taking a stroll and looking at all kinds of exotic warbeasts. But just at this time, he suddenly felt a peculiar fluctuation coming from the sky.

Many people raised their head to look up. They only saw a colorful giant bird that looked like a red-crowned crane descending. It was actually flying towards Xiao Chen.

Xiao Chen appeased Tenax, then he pressed Keke down before he lifted his hand to launch a golden sword-qi towards the sky. The multi-colored giant bird quickly dodged to the side and landed not far away. It caused many people in the surroundings to take shelter one after another.

“So you are that arrogant Xiao Chen?” The young lady with blue hair was as prideful as a little phoenix. She walked over while crossing her hands under her well developed breasts. She was petite, but her curves were exquisite. She looked very sweet with her long eyelashes and her vivid big eyes, but her expression was too arrogant.

Xiao Chen was sure that he never met this girl before.

“Eh? Isn’t that the little troublemaker from the Mander Family?”

“That’s her alright. Her family is the sole holder of a warbeast castle, which is the symbol of strength. So it’s only normal if she’s a little bossy and domineering.”

“This girl is such a troublemaker.”

.....

“Do you have business with me?” Xiao Chen asked.

“My seventh brother came to invite you to my house, and I heard you were arrogant?”

Xiao Chen was speechless, when did he ever act arrogant?

“Hmph! Don’t think just because you are the Vindex of the Undying Sect,

nobody would dare to do something to you. There is no rule between the peers, I will teach you a lesson today.” The blue-haired girl walked over with elegant steps.

Xiao Chen thought for a little and was able to speculate a lot of things. It seemed like the older generation from every major power couldn't make their move carelessly. If that was the case, he could seize this opportunity! If the youth generation came to cause trouble, he could beat the young ones without worrying about the old ones.

Thinking thus far, Xiao Chen asked indifferently, “Which family's spoiled little brat are you? Always causing trouble all over the place, what if someone catches you and sells you off?”

The blue-haired girl was clearly used to ordering people. Hearing Xiao Chen's words, her curvy eyebrows immediately creased and she reprimanded, “This guy is really too hateful. Just wait till you see my power, I must teach this rich playboy a proper lesson.”

Xiao Chen was speechless. This little brat really knew how to distort the truth deliberately. Just who was the rich kid, and who was the castle bodyguard? But as his power raised, his mental state also improved. It was not easy to make his mood swing. He laughed and said, “You spoiled brat, you are looking for a beating.”

The blue-haired girl glared at him with her vivid big eyes, then she said angrily, “You are just as my seventh brother described, pretentious and arrogant. Hmph! This young lady will teach you a lesson.”

“Stop talking and come. I'm getting tired of waiting.”

Xiao Chen's easygoing attitude made the girl even more furious. She said, “I don't want to fight with you with nothing to gain. Why don't we make a deal? If I beat you black and blue, you will give that cute little lion to me.” She looked at Keke without restrain. She exposed an incomparably delighted expression, her big eyes already bent into the shape of a crescent moon.

“What if you lose?”

“How can this young lady ever lose? Nobody of the same generation ever won

against me.”

“More like, other people let you win. Haha...” Xiao Chen laughed out loud. He felt that this brat was very interesting.

“Come! If I lose, I will give you my prized crane.” The young girl pointed at the multi-colored crane not far away before she continued, “That is a super warbeast.”

“Good, give me your worst.”

“You have the cheek to look down on me.” The blue-haired girl was like a specter. Her speed was very fast as she threw herself towards Xiao Chen.

Xiao Chen was shocked, that young lady was not as weak as she looked. She had actually reached Exuvia Fourth Celestial Layer, but the difference between them was still far too big. His figure swayed slightly and Xiao Chen left an afterimage in his original position. The blue-haired girl did not panic, she whirled high up into the sky. She danced as graceful as the angel in the sky as she sent one hundred and eight palm strike towards Xiao Chen.

However, all of these were stopped by a single palm blade. Xiao Chen lightly waved the palm blade and sent her flying away. At the same time, the palm swept past her ear. The ear accessory was taken off and appeared in the palm of his hand.

“Ooooh! She lost... she lost...!”

“That pipsqueak from the Mander Family lost.....”

The crowd all around the place started to make a ruckus.

The blue-haired girl could only stamp her feet due to anger.

“Alright, I didn’t pay attention. I will let you take the win this time, by a fluke. My prized crane belongs to you for the time being. One more time, I will win it back.”

Xiao Chen was amused by this sweet, yet arrogant brat. He smiled and said, “What else can you lose?”

“Become his wife if you lose!”

“Marry him if you lose!”

.....

The crowd was adding fuel to the fire and shouted all at once. It caused the blue-haired girl to look at them resentfully.

Half an hour later, within the Mander Family; a few youngsters were having a willy-nilly discussion.

“Little sister caused trouble again. She lost her beloved rainbow crane and it was directly sold by that repulsive guy in the warbeast market. That was but a super warbeast!”

“Someone actually dared to purchase little sister’s thing?”

“What else do the rich kids in the city not dare to do?”

“What’s worst is that little sister lost something else.”

“What else did she lose?”

“Not sure, I only know that she has become that shameless man’s attendant. She is currently out there shopping with him!”

Chapter 144 – Lecher

In a short half an hour later, Xiao Chen had already become a celebrity in the warbeast street. He actually made Katalina, the Mander Family's baby girl, into his attendant. It made the spectators flabbergasted. They were secretly exclaiming that this youngster seriously had guts. Although the crowd was just adding fuel to the fire, he actually dared to do it. He's really getting tired of living or what?

What's more, this youngster, whose origin was unknown, actually did not understand the current circumstances. He was openly taking a stroll everywhere with the beautiful attendant. He appeared free and relaxed. It made the group of youngsters so envious that they started to drool.

"This arrogant guy is really too evil!" The blue-haired girl furrowed her curvy eyebrows. Her vivid big eyes contained a hint of anger as she shouted, "You actually dared to make me your attendant?!"

"If you agree to bet, you must accept to lose. You must understand this logic. If you want to back out, you are free to leave. I didn't force you to stay. But if you want me to cancel our bet, that's a no go!" Xiao Chen had an unruly expression. After that, he went for a walk with the two little beasts, checking stuff out left and right.

"Admit defeat, admit defeat!" The crowd behind them shouted at the same time.

"Attaboy, just you wait, you will come to regret this later." The blue-haired girl was no longer as prideful as a little phoenix. She was practically an ostrich at the moment. She lowered her beautiful face as much as possible and followed behind Xiao Chen, afraid that someone might recognize her. But how was that possible? Following behind them was a big crowd of rich kids spreading the news while laughing hehehaha, as if people didn't already know. All of these rich kids had old grudges with the blue-haired girl.

Xiao Chen turned his head around to look at the crowd of rich kids following behind. He yelled at one unreasonably handsome boy, "Pretty boy..... speak up if you need something."

That youngster was indeed very handsome. His age was about the same as Xiao Chen's, he looked only about twenty years old. His long hair flowed down like waterfall, his skin was as pale as the snow, and his eyes were like limpid autumn waters. He had a slender figure, if not because of the Adam's apple, Xiao Chen might mistook him as a beautiful girl in men's cloth. He was seriously so beautiful that it was completely messed up. Even the young ladies would get jealous looking at him.

"Buddy, I am called Fairsky. We may be familiar with each other, but business is business. You cannot randomly call out to me. Otherwise, I'm not done with you." That extremely beautiful hedonistic son walked over. Although he was speaking like this, he was still smiling. Just now, it was him who bought the rainbow crane for six thousand gold coins. It was easy to tell that he had some powerful backer. He was intentionally opposing the blue-haired girl, Katalina.

"Pretty boy, just you wait. I am not done with you yet. Nobody dared to buy it, but you actually dared to buy my rainbow crane and ruin my reputation. Hmph! When my elder brother returns, I will make him flatten you." Katalina furiously shouted at Fairsky.

Xiao Chen could tell that they had a few conflicts in the past, but he didn't care about those. Xiao Chen warmly said to Fairsky, "Pretty boy, I need your help. This is my first time in Celestial City so I'm not familiar with a lot of things. I want to buy a real estate, can you introduce some to me?"

"No problem, leave it to me." The handsome Fairsky promised unreservedly. He was obviously not an ordinary guy. He had already made out Xiao Chen's extraordinary strength. He came from a big family, and was interested in making friends with this kind of people.

The south desolate region had thousands of miles of territories, there was no lack of land, but that was outside of the Celestial City. It was a different story inside the Celestial City, in it, land could even be said to be extremely expensive.

Not only did all the wealthy ones in the south desolate region wanted to move to this place, even the aristocrats and millionaires from the mainland wanted to buy a real estate here. That was because there were many ancient legends in Celestial City. Legend has it that this was the Imperial City where the dragon

veins gathered. There was a great benefit to live at this place, but nobody was able to speak out the particulars.

With two gold coins, one could fill their desk with a first class feast. One could very well imagine just how much wealth six thousand gold coins represented. Even so, Xiao Chen owed Fairisky five thousand gold coins after purchasing a courtyard.

It was as costly as eleven thousand gold coins!

However, Xiao Chen was rather fond of the three courtyards, the pavilions, and the bridge in the garden.

“Don’t feel bad about it brother. It is because I want to get on your good side, and know that you are on friendly term with that bastard Zhuge Liang, that I am willing to part with my treasure.” The unreasonably beautiful Fairisky seemed a little reluctant and said, “Do you know what kind of place this is?”

Speaking until here, his eyes suddenly lit up. It was extremely inharmonious with his beautiful appearance as he whispered, “This is but the Celestial City’s educational street. Raise your head to look across the street. Take a look at what’s over there.”

There was an unending ancient fence on the other side. There were lots of huge ancient castles beyond the fence. It looked nothing short of the Imperial City. The entrance was facing right here, exactly in front of Xiao Chen’s house. Looking through the gate that was widely open, they could see some young men and young ladies.

“This is the renowned North Style Academy. Adjacent to it are the Wargod Academy and the White Elk Academy. If you ask where to find the most expensive territory in Celestial City, look no further than this educational street. The three big academies are right here, the girls inside are as beautiful as the clouds! If not because my tigress fiancée knows about this place, I wouldn’t resell it to you even if you killed me. Sitting at the gate every day at nightfall, looking at the beautiful ladies entering and exiting the academy one after another, such bliss. When you are bored, you can even sneak into the three big academies. Just thinking about it fills me with happiness!”

Pfft, Xiao Chen was really speechless. This unreasonably beautiful youngster

was really such a lecher. However, it was true that his heart was itching when hearing his words. In regards to men, this place was really a treasure. It was truly a beautiful thing to stand in front of the gate to look at the beautiful ladies come and go quietly.

“Lecher!” The blue-haired Katalina curled her lips and said, “You and that pig head Zhuge Liang always come here to act as voyeurs. Both of you are already in the three big academy’s blacklist. If not because they know you have the warbeast castle behind you, the people here would already cut you into eight pieces. Pretty boy, just you wait. I will let that mad woman Pamela know you called her a tigress.”

“You dare.....”

.....

The blue-haired Katalina left gloomily. Even though Fairsky’s ridicule was not effective, she still ran away. Using that brat’s words, Xiao Chen didn’t seem like a good guy. He actually walked together with this perverted pretty boy. Her chastity would be in danger if she stayed at this place any longer. She would come back to settle the debt several days later.

“How did that brat get enrolled in the North Style Academy?”

“She is a student of the North Style Academy. But because she is the baby girl of the Mander Family, she is wild and barbarous. Skipping class is quite common for her.”

Fairsky also left.

Xiao Chen had finally settled down in Celestial City at last.

Everything was readily available in this courtyard. There was no need for him to decorate it again. When everything had finally calmed down, he began to fiddle with the white-shelled tortoise. After calming his heart, he shut his eyes and gripped that black chain with both hands. He used his spiritual sense to probe the black chain.

The dark iron chain was only as thick as a few hair strands, but at this moment, it seemed to have been magnified ten million times as it drew closer to Xiao Chen. In front of his keen spiritual sense was a pitch black as far as the eyes

could see.

Within the darkness, many small letters were gradually emitting glorious rays of light. It was so bright that Xiao Chen felt his third eye had been pricked. It was a little hard to discern those letters.

Gritting his teeth, Xiao Chen kept calming down his undulating mind and made himself enter an ethereal state. He tried his best to probe forward with his spiritual sense.

Pain!

Extreme pain!

It felt as if the spiritual sense was being eroded!

As if the body was about to be ripped apart!

The sweat gushed out from his pores unceasingly. In the blink of an eye, Xiao Chen was thoroughly drenched. This made him feel worse than going through a desperate fight. His entire body was already trembling violently, as if he could collapse and fall apart at any time.

“Dragon.”

Xiao Chen finally saw the letters on the black chain clearly, but other than the “dragon” that frequently appeared, he couldn’t recognize the other characters! The complicated calligraphic style and strokes were practically like that of a divine document. Who knows how many centuries ago were these old characters used. He was simply unable to understand the meaning of these words.

The letters were densely packed. The black chain was only as thick as seven or eight strains of hair, and only about one foot long. It was actually carved with old characters from who knows when. Ordinary people were simply unable to see it at all with their eyes.

Even someone at Xiao Chen’s level, if they didn’t have an especially powerful spiritual sense, it was also impossible for them to pry into this secret.

Out of ordinary, this was definitely out of the ordinary!

After Xiao Chen withdrew his spiritual sense from that endless black zone with some difficulty, he almost collapsed. Only until one hour later did he recover.

What made him surprised was that his spiritual sense seemed to have become much more condensed. His mind was feeling very refreshed!

Prying at the secret of the iron chain could actually help him develop his spiritual sense. He felt that it was necessary to make it a compulsory course for his daily activities.

After taking a bath, Xiao Chen looked at this fist-sized white-shelled tortoise. He was no longer looking at it contemptuously.

“Could it be a dragon?!” He had this kind of unfathomable thought in his heart. It was a very ridiculous conjecture, it was a bold and imaginative line of thought. The main reason was because he saw many “dragon” characters carved on the iron chain. And the tortoise was locked up by this iron chain.

“Who cares what you are, since I bought you, I will call you ‘Larcenist’ from now on.” Looking at the little tortoise sticking its head out and looking around sneakily, Xiao Chen gave it this kind of name.

Tenax was not concerned in the least. Keke was always rolling here and there as it looked at the tortoise. It seemed like Keke wanted to find some kind of secret or treasure from the tortoise’s body. However, Keke also couldn’t find anything special, it was just some kind of premonition only. It didn’t really sensed any substantial thing.

When night fell, the sunset dyed the sky red.

The fatty and Fairsky laughed heartily as they arrived at Xiao Chen’s residence. They sat on the balcony of the third floor contentedly and pulled Xiao Chen along to look at the students going through the gate of North Style Academy. Their eyes lit up unceasingly.

“Wow! That girl is too beautiful. Those curves. That shape. It’s too sexy!”

“Hoh, here comes a pretty girl from a respectful family. She’s quite youthful, and she has a special taste. Alas, it’s such a shame that she’s wasted on a cow dung. There’s an ugly man beside her.”

“Quick, look! That is definitely the most beautiful figure seen from behind. Just looking at her back makes one’s imagination run wild. Look at the way she walks, graceful and elegant. Just looking at her makes me drool. My god, why is it her?

Mother f—! It's that shameless girl, such a bad luck. Nobody is coming out anymore when she showed up."

.....

The bastard fatty and pretty boy were practically two lechers. Their drool overflowed non-stop as they kept assessing the girls.

"Brother, you are so strong." After half a day later, the fatty finally regained himself. He faced Xiao Chen and said, "You actually beat the baby girl from Mander Family and treated her as your attendant. It was truly satisfying, haha..... I always hoped someone would stand up and teach her a lesson, it seems like the Heavens have finally opened its eyes. Such a pity I didn't see it with my own eyes. Otherwise, I would definitely taunt her nicely. Haha..... but brother, you should be careful. That brat is as crafty and unruly as it comes. Your average people don't dare to provoke her. Did you know? She has a blood brother who is reputed as one of the strongest youths in the south desolate region. Other than that freak Solitary Sword Demon and a few others, nobody can stand up to him."

Goodness gracious!

Xiao Chen only realized it now, it seemed like he got into quite a troublesome situation.

Mander Family was in control of the "Beast King Castle", it was one of the major powers in Celestial City. Katalina was directly related to the Mander Family, she was pampered by the elders of the family, and moreover, with her unparalleled big brother whose name had spread throughout the south desolate region, she became especially ill-mannered.

"Quick, look! Another one with an exquisite body came out." Fairsky shouted.

The fatty and Xiao Chen also couldn't help but take a look without delay.

"Oh my god!"

"Mother f—! Why is it that brat Katalina, such bad luck!"

The fatty and Fairsky seemed to have shouted at the same time.

"Come, let me formally introduce you." The fatty turned his head to face Xiao

Chen and said, “This is Fairsky from the ‘Antarctic Warbeast Castle’. He is a genuine hedonistic son. Just like Katalina, he is the direct descendant of a renowned family. Unlike me, who is far from the core of the family.”

After a brief introduction, the three of them started to converse like close brothers.

“We must make the most of our time to train Tenax. I heard that three months from now the Celestial City will hold a large-scale warbeast competition. You will gain a generous reward for every win you achieve. This is no longer a contest between a few warbeast castles. Even the people from a few big cities in the northern side will come. I even heard it will be a battle between sacred beasts. Of course, they will be ranked accordingly. From what I heard through the grapevine, the Dragon Kings and powerful sacred beast with little to no difference in power level will engage in a life or death battle.....”

“It will definitely shake the whole world. Rather than saying it is a warbeast competition, it would be better to say it is the confrontation between the major powers. It is definitely a perfect stage for them to compete fiercely and display their power.....”

“Without a doubt, Celestial City will enter turbulent times! I heard many powerful youth practitioners will come along with the elders of their respective clan. It might very well lead to a big confrontation between the youth practitioners.”

Xiao Chen was very expectant for this day to come.

“You arrogant fellow, I am here again!”

The three of them were still in the middle of the conversation when the blue-haired Katalina burst into the courtyard. She poked her tiny waist into the building and blinked her watery big eyes as she shouted loudly, “Xiao Chen, my elder brother will come and have a decisive battle with you. Come down here at once and accept defeat. The venue is at the public square of the North Style Academy. Don’t forget to bring that cute little lion along.”

“My god, that brat really went to look for her elder brother. We are in deep s—.” The fatty shrank back.

Fairsky's hand shook momentarily and the tea spilled on the ground.

“What is there to be scared about, let us go and take a look.” Xiao Chen's power had increased drastically in recent days. He really wanted to find a powerful opponent to have a few bouts. And that blue-haired girl's brother was an existence on the same level as the Solitary Sword Demon. It was just as he wished.

“Come, let us go to North Style Academy's public square.”

Chapter 145 – Four Grand Experts

The North Style Academy was founded eight hundred years ago. It was one of the most powerful forces in Celestial City nowadays. It was said that the academy was founded by some scattered practitioners at that time.

The founders all possessed extraordinary strength. They did not have a powerful backer, all of them were some uncommon “hermit”. When facing big sects with long history, their individual power seemed somewhat weak. Precisely because of this very reason, some like-minded people gathered together and founded the North Style Academy in the Celestial City. After several hundreds years of growth, they had already turned into a big sect in the south desolate region. It could even be said to be incomprehensible.

In these eight hundred years, the North Style Academy had taken in numerous styles of training methods. After the elders in the institution studied them intensively, they created a few dozen top-notch techniques by getting rid of the weeds and keeping the flowers.

As for the Wargod Academy and the White Elk Academy adjacent to the North Style Academy, they both had their own histories.

The North Style Academy took up a huge space. The ancient fence was like a city wall and extended to both sides without an end in sight. The main gate was tall and imposing. It was just directly in front of Xiao Chen’s residence, only separated by a street.

Going across this educational street, Xiao Chen and company entered the North Style Academy with the baby brat of the Mander Family in the lead.

It was already the evening, the course of the day in the North Style Academy had already ended. It was the time for the students to relax. A lot of young men and young ladies were entering and exiting the academy. When they saw the blue-haired Katalina, many people greeted her rather warmly. It was easy to tell that she had quite the reputation in this academy.

There were also a lot of people staring at the fatty and Fairsky with unfriendly gazes. It was easy to tell that these two hedonistic sons were not very well-received. Even Xiao Chen who was following them got glared at a few times.

“Come, come, want to see an expert’s showdown? Want to see an Eight Celestial Layer expert persecute the perverts? Then come with me!” The blue-haired Katalina shouted as soon as she entered the North Style Academy, and waved her hands at everyone present.

“My god, does this brat from the Mander Family have to be this cruel?” The fatty felt a little uneasy. He and Fairsky were a pair of peeping toms, they frequently came to this place to steal a glance at the beautiful girls. So much so that they even came to take a stroll in the academy sometimes. Although they didn’t do any immoral act, their public reputation was nothing short of bad. When people started to surround them from all sides, he started to have a little guilty conscience.

Fairsky was not particularly scared. After all, he was a practitioner with considerable strength. Although he was somewhat crestfallen, he still had a faint smile on his beautiful face. It seemed like he couldn’t care less.

“Little brat, where is your big brother? Hurry and lead the way.” Xiao Chen didn’t care if there was an audiences or not. It made no differences.

“Come, everyone come with me to see our academy’s absolute expert defeating the perverts.” The baby girl of the Mander Family shouted with all her might. As if she had already anticipated Xiao Chen’s crushing defeat, she used this as a pretext to vent.

More and more people gathered. Everyone followed them into the inner part of the academy.

It must be mentioned, the North Style Academy was really out of the ordinary. Along the sides of the road, they passed by one hall after another. He had already seen seven or eight dojos, and even three extraordinarily beautiful gardens with different styles; The rocky mountain was simple and unadorned, the clear spring flowed into the huge courtyard, the fine woods were verdant, and the pavilions were as faintly discernable as the underground palaces of ghouls.

“Go to the central dojo, everyone come and watch.” The blue-haired young lady was getting more and more excited as she saw more people rushing towards them. She cast a provocative glance towards Xiao Chen and said, “You

arrogant hedonistic son, you will be defeated today. Who told you to humiliate me, I will return it to you in a moment.”

Xiao Chen found it to be somewhat laughable. This brat was truly headstrong and unruly.

But the fatty and Fairsky were already in doubt. The fatty whispered, “Is that freak really back? That doesn’t seem like it, it is impossible for him to be this bombastic. He would definitely not let this little brat act arbitrarily regardless of the rules.”

Fairsky asked doubtfully, “Katalina, is it really your big brother that wants to have a showdown with Xiao Chen?”

“Of course!”

The central dojo was extremely big. There was a sapphire-like lake beside the big hall. It appeared solemn and calm, lotus flowers were growing in the lake. The boat at the side of the lake caused a few ripples. The dojo was brimming with murderous aura. That was the aura left behind by the practitioners of the North Style Academy over many years.

Katalina, Fairsky, and everyone else had already come to a halt. Only Xiao Chen continued to take large strides into the center of the dojo. He stood in the center without saying a word as he swept his eyes over everyone.

Just at this time, a shocked voice suddenly transmitted from the crowd, “It is actually the four grand experts!”

“It really is the four grand experts!”

.....

The fatty and Fairsky were also a little flabbergasted. They faced Katalina and said, “What’s wrong with you? Why are they the experts of the North Style Academy? And four of them appeared at once, where is your big brother?”

“You tell me, among the four of them, who’s not my brother?”

“They are only your cousins, and not your blood related brother.”

“But they are also my older brothers, and they are not any weaker than my blood related brother.” Katalina was smiling gleefully.

The fatty was a little depressed and said, "Xiao Chen is dead for sure."

Fairsky faced Katalina and said, "This brat from Mander's Family, aren't you a little too shameless? You actually went to find him. He is already thirty years old, he is already one generation older than us. Why don't you just go and find your uncle directly?!"

"Nonsense, big brother Lambda is only twenty nine years old. According to the unwritten rule of the mainland, he should still be considered the youth generation. Asking him to deal with Xiao Chen is not undue." Katalina's face was filled with a smile. Her pair of beautiful big eyes already bent into the crescent moon shape.

"F—! An expert half a generation older..... The Mander Family is despicable!" The fatty cursed in a low voice.

The four grand experts entered the field unhurriedly. They surrounded Xiao Chen from four sides.

Lambda stood with his hands at the back. His expression was cold and proud. Though he couldn't be considered as handsome, he possessed the air of an expert.

The other three were also six to seven years older than Xiao Chen. They looked like they were around twenty five to twenty six years old. Their temperament was also out of ordinary.

Hearing that it was Lambda and the others at the central dojo, many other students rushed over at high speed. They wanted to see who actually dared to confront Lambda, an Eighth Celestial Layer expert.

"All four of you can come at once!" Although Xiao Chen's voice was not loud, it clearly resounded in the dojo.

There were already eight hundred people gathered at the site. They caused an uproar as soon as they heard these words. Wasn't this youngster being too arrogant? He actually planned to fight the four grand experts by himself. One must know that Lambda was an Eight Celestial Layer expert. Only a few would be able to stand up to him among the youth generation.

"Who is this guy? He's actually so arrogant."

“I heard he won over that baby girl from Mander Family as an attendant. He really has guts. Does he not fear that once that brat’s freak of an older brother comes back, he will go find him to settle the debt?”

“Don’t need to wait for Katalina’s freak of an older brother to come back. This Lambda should be more than enough. He’s also an Eight Celestial Layer expert.”

“Just where did this Xiao Chen guy came from?!”

Xiao Chen’s name already spread all over the North Style Academy in an instant. Many male and female audiences were making inquiries about his origin.

The pervert group, Fairsky and the fatty; their eyes were turning left and right. The fatty couldn’t hold back anymore and said, “So it is actually that easy to attract beautiful young ladies, just look at those beautiful girls..... Alas, I wonder when will I be able to make them pay attention to me.”

“Wait ‘till you succeed your family’s Amber Warbeast Castle, the beautiful girls will naturally crowd around you.” Fairsky mercilessly brought him back to reality.

In the field, Lambda raised an eyebrow and said calmly, “I am almost ten years older than you. If I really make my move, it will be nothing more than bullying. I will let my three friends over there to fight with you one on one. If you can win, then I will not make things difficult for you.” He was very conceited. He responded to Xiao Chen’s ravings just now with these words.

“Then the three of you can come at once.” Xiao Chen was very calm, his words were very direct.

“This Xiao brat, don’t be so arrogant. Lambda was being modest to you, and yet you don’t know what is good for yourself. Let me, Rex, be the first to answer you!” A blue-clothed man with black hair moved like the wind. He left behind a blue afterimage in his original position and rushed towards Xiao Chen.

“Rex made his move, twenty five years old, Sixth Celestial Layer expert!” The people outside the field were making a racket. Many people knew he was the North Style Academy’s expert.

“He’s most proficient in the Ichor Blade. Quick, look! He’s about to execute it!”

A blood blade was rumbling like a bloody cloud, it was drizzling with bloody

fog. The space in front of Rex was engulfed by the color of blood. The red lightning was crisscrossing in the dojo. Eighty genuine light blades slashed the air. The frantic bloody sword waves gathered together and formed a terrifying blade screen as they were launched towards Xiao Chen.

The surprised yell of the audiences already transmitted from the outside of the field. One sword-qi after another slashed through the space. The glorious radiance already caused everyone to narrow their eyes and watch what was happening in the field nervously.

No complicated maneuver, no intense collision as they expected, and no shocking energy fluctuation. They only saw a glaring ray of light flickering within the bloody light. Xiao Chen's palm actually passed through layers upon layers of the blade screen and destroyed the sword-qi without making any sound!

“Demonic Seal!”

“It is actually the Undying Sect's Demonic Seal!”

“When did an expert like this emerge from the Undying Sect?!”

There were some experienced and knowledgeable persons outside of the field. They already cried out in surprise.

Demonic Seal, the methodology was not affected by the body. As long as the heart was not extinguished, the body would not extinguish! It was a valuable secret art for the weak to resist the strong!

“This guy's power is more profound than Rex's. He's using the unrivalled secret arts, his superiority is unquestionable!”

.....

When everyone was shouting in surprise, Xiao Chen took a step forward. When he flipped his hand over, Rex's bloody blade broke down like fragile glassware. His entire person was like he had sustained a lightning strike; his body trembled violently before he was sent flying away.

With only a single strike, a Sixth Celestial Layer expert was defeated!

Numerous spectators caused an uproar. Many of them didn't dare to believe the fact before their eyes.

“Rex was actually defeated, one hit knock out!” 1

.....

Hearing the racket at this place, many more people in the academy rushed over.

Chapter 146 – Human-shaped Tyrannical Dragon

One hit knock out!

Xiao Chen stood calmly on the field, and Rex, on the other hand, was sent flying away. Lambda, who was at the side, transformed into a streak of light and rushed over there to catch Rex. Traces of blood could be seen spilling from the corner of Rex's mouth. Although there was no danger to his life, he clearly couldn't fight anymore.

It was extremely noisy outside of the field since a while ago. Everyone was incomparably shocked. Rex was a student of North Style Academy. A Sixth Celestial Layer practitioner could already be considered an expert in the academy. It's not that there was no one who could surpass him, it's that he was defeated in a single move. It was only natural that people would be flabbergasted.

The news spread out really fast. In a short period of time, almost a thousand people already gathered at the central dojo.

"I will go next!" Another one of the four grand experts stepped forward. Medium build, somewhat thin, ordinary appearance, but his eyes possessed a hint of sharpness. He announced his name as he entered the field, "I am Maple." This person was very straightforward. He didn't say any superfluous words and his figure turned illusory in an instant. It was as if his entire person had transformed into a shadow. It made people unable to seize his aura.

The spectators already started their heated discussion.

"Maple is a natural Psychic. A Sixth Celestial Layer expert. Only a few in the institution are a worthy match for him. He's in control of a terrifying divine ability!"

"He can hide his own whereabouts, and kill people from the shadows!"

.....

These people were discussing in a low voice, so it was only natural that the two in the field didn't hear it. Under everyone's attentive gaze, Maple's figure suddenly disappeared and became invisible.

The sunset glow dyed the sky red. The red afterglow shone upon the dojo and made the entire field scarlet red. Everyone was dumbstruck, they couldn't find Maple's vestiges anymore.

Just at this instance, Xiao Chen suddenly moved. He quickly moved away from the center of the field, and landed five meters away as light as a feather. A glaring ray of light swept past the place he was just standing a moment ago. Clearly, Maple had launched a razor-sharp attack.

But after missing the target, that ray of light disappeared in a flash and didn't leave behind any fluctuation. Xiao Chen couldn't help but knit his brows.

The field turned quiet all of a sudden. The spectators had stopped their discussions and watched everything quietly. This was a special match, Xiao Chen might be powerful, but the opponent was invisible. He still possessed a certain threat to him.

“Crackle!”

A dazzling lightning slashed through the air. The lower hem of Xiao Chen's cloth turned into ash in an instant. If he was half a step slower, his body might have turned into charcoal. Nobody doubted the power of that lightning. The smell of ozone drifted in the air.

Dodging one attack after another by a hair's breadth, Xiao Chen furrowed his brows again.

The dojo became extremely quiet, so much so that everyone's breathing sounds could even be heard. All the spectators were nervously paying attention to every details, because the outcome of the battle might be decided at any second.

Rip!

A resplendent sword-qi suddenly appeared in the empty space and slashed towards Xiao Chen's neck. But the instant it approached, Xiao Chen's body bent in an unfathomable arc like a soft vine and avoided it by a hair's breadth. Following that, he turned around as quick as a cheetah and pounced at the direction where the sword-qi came from.

Although the sword-qi already faded away, and Maple's vestiges had

disappeared a long time ago, Xiao Chen seemed to have already locked onto him. He headed straight for a certain space. Without any unnecessary movement, he attacked with a punch; simple and direct. The fist was crystal clear and emitted a glorious radiance. A “rattling” sound could be heard as he ruthlessly smashed down on the empty space.

A groan could be heard. Maple’s figure reappeared as he fell back at lightning speed. One of his arm was twisted in a weird position. His bone had obviously been broken by Xiao Chen’s punch.

“Very good!” This was Xiao Chen’s evaluation of Maple. Even though the opponent was only a Sixth Celestial Layer, he possessed the ability to make himself invisible. This was something Xiao Chen regarded as important.

However, Maple was feeling incomparably furious when he heard these. The opponent was a few years younger than himself, and yet the way he spoke was like an elder giving directions to the younger generation. “Again!” He didn’t think he had been defeated yet. He concealed his figure at lightning speed and disappeared on the spot again.

“You are not my opponent.” Xiao Chen spoke towards an empty space. It caused Maple who was hiding there to jolt. He hastily changed his position.

Seeing that he didn’t plan to pull back, Xiao Chen didn’t waste his breath anymore. He had already executed his presence perception divine ability at this time. Maple’s every actions were clearly caught by him.

If Maple knew that Xiao Chen deliberately sealed his spiritual sense just now, he would definitely be dumbstruck. He would never have thought that Xiao Chen was using him to sharpen his reaction speed. He simply did not regard him as an opponent on the same level.

Of course, Xiao Chen would never openly declare he had this kind of divine ability. He would never let others know that he had the ability to detect other’s presence without sound and sight.

Boom!

An energy storm spread all over the dojo, Xiao Chen’s fist had sent the invisible Maple flying away. The sound of rattling bones resounded clearly in the dojo.

Maple's other arm also drooped down. At the same time, both of his legs were deformed and there were many fractures all over his body.

The spectators made a huge ruckus. This guy known as Xiao Chen was practically a human-shaped weapon! Maple's strength was extremely outstanding in the North Style Academy, there were really very few who could actually suppress him.

However, he was beaten by Xiao Chen as if he was a scarecrow. This was somewhat unbelievable. Could this guy's body actually be made out of steel?

Looking at Xiao Chen's lofty figure, as well as his handsome appearance, he didn't seem like a vicious person that underwent the steel skin training. However..... his performance was extremely vicious like that of a beast. A little bit more and his tendons would have detached from the bone!

The unreasonably beautiful Fairsky took a deep breath, then he muttered, "This dude is really fierce!" He turned his head to face Zhuge Liang at the side and said, "Fatty, you better be careful. When the time comes, you better don't come up with any noxious plan against the tough little dragon. Otherwise you wouldn't even be able to keep your swine arms and legs anymore. If you run into him, careful that your pig head might even be smashed."

"He's practically not a human!" The blue-haired Katalina at the side widened her watery big eyes. She bit her red lips with all her might. Her pearly white teeth were crystal clear, and her cute little nose were twitching. She appeared somewhat adorable. She resentfully mumbled to herself, "Don't tell me this guy is made of iron? He's so strong. Will cousin be able to beat him.....?"

At the moment, the North Style Academy was already like a boiling cauldron of voices. More than half of the students had rushed over. The dojo was already filled to the point that not one drop of water could trickle through.

North Style Academy was a close neighbor with Wargod Academy and White Elk Academy. The news of the confrontation between the four grand experts and an unknown expert already spread to the other two academies. Many students had already climbed the wall and rushed over. They wanted to see which madman dared to come "pick a fight" with the North Style Academy.

It was impossible for Maple to continue fighting. It looked as if he was

practically stomped by a Tyrannical Dragon, there were fractures all over his body.

The third person entered the field with large strides. He had a tall stature and a rough appearance. He possessed an air of a bandit. That person was very straightforward and said, “Ryuuji, en garde!”

Bang!

He attacked with the fist. The fist cut through the space like a comet. The purple radiance left a streak of light like a rainbow.

Xiao Chen didn’t dodge it, he met the attack head on with his own fist. The firmly clenched fist was glittering and the skin was as clear as jade. Although it did not erupt with battle aura, it still emitted a thunderous rumbling noise.

Bang!

A direct confrontation! The two fists collided together! Xiao Chen did not move a tiny bit. Ryuuji on the other hand, fell back seven to eight steps. His arm was trembling like crazy. Although his right arm did not suffer a fracture, the swelling was very obvious. His right palm was suffering from an internal bleeding.

Everyone outside of the field took a deep breath.

“This guy is practically a human-shaped Tyrannical Dragon!”

“Ryuuji is a Seventh Celestial Layer expert, he is nicknamed as the Iron Fist, but he was actually pushed back by this guy’s fist. He’s a beast!”

“Ryuuji could be considered the strongest in our academy. He’s actually being pushed back by that guy. He’s really such a beast!”

“Wrong, Ryuuji is a Seventh Celestial Layer expert. He is the strongest among the outer courtyard. The two trump cards that are secretly fostered in the inner courtyard should be stronger than him.”

Without a doubt, Xiao Chen’s fist had pushed back the strongest in the outer courtyard and dominated all the spectators.

“This violent gorilla, he’s practically a wild beast!” The Mander Family’s baby girl muttered apprehensively in a low voice.

Swish!

The sound of air being slashed transmitted outwards. Ryuuji actually soared into the sky. He was floating in midair and lifted his hand to shoot down one purple light after another towards Xiao Chen. Many people outside the field were very shocked. It was obvious that other than a few people, nobody knew that this martial arts expert was also a Psychic.

Ryuuji didn't dare to have a direct confrontation with Xiao Chen anymore. He flew in a circle in the sky, diving down occasionally, in hope of draining Xiao Chen of his strength.

However, that was just his wishful thinking. When everyone cried out in surprise, Ryuuji was already dumbstruck. Xiao Chen actually unfolded a pair of energy wings and soared into the sky, flying directly towards him.

"My god! This human-shaped Tyrannical Dragon is practically unrivalled! He can actually fly!"

"You don't understand anything, that is the Undying Sect's miraculous technique. He actually mastered the Undying Divine Wings. That is practically the bane of all Psychics and Spell Masters. A human-shaped Tyrannical Dragon that knows how to fly is too terrifying!"

.....

If Xiao Chen listened attentively, he would surely get angry. Everyone had already treated him as a human-shaped Tyrannical Dragon, an unparalleled vicious beast.

Ryuuji wanted to dodge, but since the Undying Divine Wings had already been unfolded, where else could he run? Xiao Chen's speed was really too fast. Everyone only blinked their eyes for a moment, and Xiao Chen already clashed with the Seventh Celestial Layer Ryuuji. Sword-qi were brandished left and right between them. The surging aura pervaded the air, and the strong light dazzled the eyes.

The energy flow in the sky rumbled violently. It surged up unceasingly and produced thunderous explosions.

Ryuuji was a Seventh Celestial Layer expert after all. He exchanged a few dozen

blows with Xiao Chen, but he was still unable to withstand it in the end. He was sent flying away by a roaring fist, blood sprinkled everywhere.

All the spectators were practitioners, their eyesight were especially sharp. They had already seen Ryuuji's deformed arms. Clearly, both of his arms were fractured.

"Ryuuji also suffered a fracture!"

"This guy is way too strong. I doubt even the two trump cards in the inner courtyard can beat him."

"Mother f—, this guy is a real beast!"

At this time, many students from the Wargod Academy and the White Elk Academy had also arrived. After looking at this scene, they started to cry out loud one after another.

"Dude, you are so strong. Even the number one expert in the North Style Academy's outer courtyard has been defeated by you. Come on, bro! You might as well go straight to the inner courtyard."

"Bro, let us have a friendly chat later. I am from the White Elk Academy."

"Buddy, you are practically a human-shaped Tyrannical Dragon. Too strong! You even left the North Style Academy's experts speechless. This big sister will root for you!"

.....

When everyone from the North Style Academy heard these people's words, they glared at them in succession.

"Oi, that brat from the Wargod Academy. What are you roaring about?!"

"This guy from the White Elk Academy, you still dare to come to our academy? Did you forget what happened last time? You sneaked into our academy's female dorm and was chased off after you took a beating."

A female student interrupted, "Ceh, it's not like the North Style Academy is a restricted area, why wouldn't we be here? Hey, the tyrannical bro in the field, fight on! Later we will go to the White Elk Academy and this older sister will introduce some pretty juniors to you."

.....

It was very noisy outside of the dojo.

Among the unbearable noise, Lambda walked into the field. Although he was not very handsome, he had a different kind of temperament. He was incomparably calm and possessed the air of a master.

“I said that if you could beat the three of them, I would not make things difficult for you today.”

“You might let me off today, but you will probably come find me again tomorrow.”

“I indeed plan to make a future appointment to have a contest with you.”

“I knew you would say that. There is no better day than this, let’s settle this today, once and for all.”

The two’s voice clearly transmitted to the outside, the dojo immediately quieted down.

Who was Lambda? An Eighth Celestial Layer expert. If he did not just graduate from the North Style Academy, the number one expert in the outer courtyard was definitely him.

Lambda smiled faintly and said, “Good! Very straightforward. Then we’ll do it today. Do you need to rest?”

“No need, let’s begin right away!” Xiao Chen took a single step forward. As if he had the Ground Shrink divine ability, he covered ten meters in a single tiny step.

Strong wind rose as his right hand made a diagonal slash. The right hand was flickering with a glorious metallic luster. Xiao Chen didn’t dare to look down on Lambda, he was an expert on the same level as him.

Swish!

Lambda was as light as the leaf carried by the wind. He moved along with the wind and drifted eight meters apart. Xiao Chen jumped high into the sky, and swept over with both legs in front. His legs looked as if they were made out of steel, if anyone received a direct hit from that, their bones would inevitably be

shattered.

Lambda had obviously seen through it; Xiao Chen was very wild and violent. His power was formidable, yet unrestrained. He was unwilling to exchange blows with him. He shifted a few feet horizontally, and then jumped high into the sky. He made a somersault in the sky, his legs were like a pair of scissors. They separated into two sides and cut towards Xiao Chen's waist like a pair of scissors.

All of these happened in two shakes of a lamb's tail 1, it was unimaginably fast. Many people could only see a few afterimages, they couldn't see the specific movements of the fight clearly.

Xiao Chen was really cool-headed. Scissors leg was the most basic attack pattern. Every martial artist knew it possessed unparalleled power, but only a few could use it properly. Xiao Chen did not panic, he did not dodge. On the contrary, he suddenly shifted horizontally in midair, increasing his speed as he knocked against Lambda.

"This guy is really too fierce!"

"Strong! This dude is the real deal!"

"Truly a human-shaped Tyrannical Dragon! So crazy!"

.....

The experts outside of the field had seen everything clearly. A lot of people were having a discussion. Especially those from the White Elk Academy and the Wargod Academy, they had no qualms when they opened their mouths to speak.

Xiao Chen rushed forward like this, his waist directly ran in between Lambda's two legs. This was the most spicy method to neutralize the scissors leg. Before Lambda's leg could cut him, his body would have already bumped into his weakest spot. 2

"Wild beast!" Katalina mumbled.

One after another, many people cried out in alarm.

Lambda was an expert after all, he never thought Xiao Chen would be this fierce. He quickly adjusted his posture and as if his body had suddenly weighed ten thousand kilograms, he quickly fell towards the ground and avoided Xiao

Chen's fierce attack.

At the same time, Xiao Chen dived head first. Both of his palms were as sharp as blades. The resplendent rays of light made his two palms flicker like jewels.

The surging energy looked as if it had materialized. It was smashing down like a ten ton giant hammer. The ground was making a cracking sound. The invisible energy already caused a fissure on the ground, one after another huge cracks appeared.

The strong breeze caused Lambda's long hair to flutter hysterically. It was already impossible for him to dodge. That mountain-like energy had already enveloped him from above. He could only exchange blows with him, there was no room for cowering.

"Bang!"

As if two mountains had collided, the turbulent gale and energy surged up violently. The bright rays of light caused everyone to cover their eyes. The terrifying incorporeal power spread out wildly.

The innermost spectators suffered the aftereffects, their body trembled as they got pushed back involuntarily. Many people were affected, the dojo burst into disorder.

In the center of the field, after Xiao Chen and Lambda exchanged a fierce blow, the two of them tangled together like two streaks of lightning. The afterimages and shadows of the palms swirled in the air. The glaring rays of light exploded unceasingly.

The two exchanged one intense blow after another.

"They're flying... they're flying!"

"It's the El Volar Cloth. I never thought that Lambda actually had this kind of rare item."

Cries of alarm transmitted from the outside. Lambda actually jumped and flew into the sky. Xiao Chen unfolded the Undying Divine Wings and also defied the laws of gravity. The both of them began to fight in the sky.

Almost all of the students of the North Style Academy had arrived at the

central dojo. A lot of experts from the White Elk Academy and the Wargod Academy also arrived. Even the older generation experts of the academies were startled and began to pay close attention to this fight.

“Xiao Chen, you are finished!” Lambda was so confident that it couldn’t be described with words as he yelled, “Yin Yang Element ——— Annihilation!”

Xiao Chen felt very uneasy, he also yelled, “God Slayer!”

Chapter 147 – Imprint of Dao

God Slayer, although it was only a single technique, it was extremely profound. This technique was developed after numerous hard work and revisions. This was a highly generalized essence of the invisible Dao. Rather than an attack pattern, it might be better to say it was the materialized form of the “Imprint of Dao”!

Xiao Chen had practiced the God Slayer, the Chaotic Patterns, the Demon Suppression, and the Death Blow for quite some time now. Although he could already comprehend some of the mysteries included among these and use them to attack the enemies, it could also be said that he hadn’t really engraved this Imprint of Dao into his very being.

He had comprehended the Imprint of Dao’s killing method, but he still hadn’t grasped the real essence. After all, this was really too hard. They were battle stances without a form, even those of Immortalis realm would have difficulties comprehending the true meaning behind these.

Although the Imprint of Dao didn’t get engraved into his being, Xiao Chen was able to get a deep understanding in regards to the method to restrain enemies after nearly one year of training. Especially the Imprint of Dao’s first technique, the God Slayer. He was able to comprehend it the most.

When facing a powerful enemy at the Eight Celestial Layer, Xiao Chen had never underestimated him once. The moment he heard the other side shouting the name of the skill, he felt a sense of danger enveloping him and didn’t hesitate to launch God Slayer, one of the four major techniques.

The more dangerous the situation, the calmer Xiao Chen became. In a world of nothingness, his inner world became a piece of blank, as if he had detached from the battlefield and became a spectator. However, his hand had already executed the Imprint of Dao.

God Slayer, it was a remarkable technique. The first move of the four major techniques, just as its name implied, the main aspect lied in the word, “Slayer”. One after another multicolored radiances illuminated the sky in a flash.

Although the sun had already set in the west, and the color of the sky already darkened, this area was incomparably bright. It was as if there were countless

stars converging in midair. The glorious radiance that illuminated everything like the sun was exceptionally beautiful.

However, this wasn't really the divine kind of beauty, this was the ray of death as seen in a perilous situation. The tranquility was broken in a short moment; the thunderous light rumbled in the sky and the murderous aura soared.

The violent energy went out of control. As if there was a fissure, the dojo started to shake violently. It was easy to imagine just how fierce the confrontation in the sky was this time around.

This technique of Lambda, Yin Yang Annihilation, could be said to be one of the top-notch mystic arts under the heaven. It was a very unpredictable ability. If an average person was to receive this attack, even their bones would cease to exist.

One of his palm was pitch-black like ink, the other one was as clear as white jade. Two completely different colors appeared on his left and right palms. A tsunami-like violent energy burst out and induced a seven-layered energy storm. It felt as if the space itself had twisted, as if the door to hell had opened in the sky as it tried to engulf Xiao Chen.

Everyone on the ground could feel the powerful pressure and energy turbulence. It could be said that the fluctuation from the Yin Yang Annihilation was the very first to drop down and cause the fissures on the dojo.

It was a very terrifying move. Lambda merely flipped his palms a little, and such a frightening aftermath was the result.

Xiao Chen clearly saw an underworld temple floating in the sky. In front of the gloomy ancient temple, those huge and sinister demon sculptures appeared vivid and lifelike. A gigantic black door seemed to be opening towards Xiao Chen.

This was definitely the most bizarre battle Xiao Chen ever had. A single Yin Yang Annihilation technique could actually draw out such a terrifying illusion, it was truly outrageous. The powerful attractive force behind the gate seemed as if it was about to crush him.

The Imprint of Dao, God Slayer, cut through the darkness of the ancient temple like a golden sun. It streaked across the vast sky on top of this illusion, weakening the destructive force unceasingly!

The rays of light emitted by the God Slayer were especially eye-catching in the darkness. Each and every ray of light actually looked as if they were real swords and blades. However, they were miniature-sized swords and blades. The longest was only three inches!

It was very bizarre! There were countless divine swords and heavenly blades, but none of them looked identical. All of them were unique in their own way, it was as if they had pierced through space-time and arrived from the ancient era.

It was a bizarre confrontation. It was a confrontation between illusions! However, the power coming from the illusions were real.

Lambda was endlessly shocked. Yin Yang Annihilation technique was Mander Family's foundation. The reason Mander Family didn't fall for several hundred years in the south desolate region, the reason they became more and more powerful, it was closely related to how they were in control of this divine art. Only with enough power would their family be able to stand taller and steadier.

Yin Yang Annihilation was a mystic art from the ancient legends. Its name had shook the south desolate region for countless years. It was obtained by someone in their family inadvertently.

Facing someone on the same level, so long as they executed this move, even the Time Benders and Void Masters had to fall back. As for the other people, it was needless to say it, there were only a very few capable of fending it off.

However, today, Lambda was completely dumbstruck. The underworld temple illusion that emerged in the empty sky was slowly collapsing. Those thousands upon thousands of three inches swords and blades destroyed every obstruction and crushed anything in their path.

The space crumbled apart!

After ten continuous collision sounds, the sky slowly recovered its former tranquility. Traces of blood could be seen spilling from the corner of Xiao Chen's mouth. This was the first time he had sustained an injury after his secret arts had advanced by leaps and bounds.

Lambda had a really pale face. He stood in the sky unmovingly, then he suddenly fell backwards while a big mouthful of blood spurted out. He fell from

midair head first.

It was very obvious that he lost, he was completely defeated!

“It’s over!”

“The Eighth Celestial Layer Lambda has actually been defeated!”

“The rankings of the youth generation experts in the south desolate region is going to be revised! Xiao Chen’s name will be engraved right behind that freak from the Mander Family, the Solitary Sword Demon, and the others.”

“One more twenty odd years Eighth Celestial Layer expert!”

“How formidable!”

The North Style Academy’s central dojo had already turned very rowdy. Everyone was endlessly shocked. Xiao Chen defeated the four grand experts in a consecutive match, and even downed Lambda. The rankings of the top-notch youth experts in the south desolate region would have to be revised!

“Oh my god! Can this freak actually be about the same level as Katalina’s eldest brother?” Zhuge Liang pulled his neck back with a bit of lingering fear.

Fairsky heaved a sigh. He was a pretty powerful practitioner himself, so he understood the situation the most. He said, “Why don’t you give up now? For him to be this powerful, he must have a great power backing him up. Otherwise, how could he obtain such a powerful secret art. The older generation experts in the south desolate region have misgivings about each other. They would not make their moves as they wished. Killing a few people from the youth generation is going to be a walk in the park for him. I advise you to not get any crooked thoughts towards the tough little dragon.”

“Brother!” The blue-haired young lady, Katalina, quickly ran towards the center of the field.

Lambda, who just fell from the sky, had already been received by someone. Looking at Katalina who was getting closer, he forced a weak smile and said, “Never thought he was this strong.....”

“Brother, are you alright? This is all my fault. After big brother comes back.....”

“He was already holding back just now. Otherwise I wouldn’t even live to see

another day.....”

At a distant place, a few old men from the North Style Academy were looking at each other. Then their expressions became serious. One of them was muttering to himself for a while before he said, “That move just now... was it the God Slayer?!”

“It, it’s very likely!”

“Yin Yang Annihilation technique has shaken the south desolate region. Never had it occurred to me that it would come across a nemesis.”

“Lambda must have held back a little. We can’t be sure of the outcome.”

“Might I remind you, Yin Yang Annihilation is the Mander Family’s secret treasure!”

.....

The dojo was extremely noisy, the students from the North Style Academy, the Wargod Academy, and even the White Elk Academy were having a dispute. The North Style Academy suffered a huge defeat, and the words from the students of the other two academies were inappropriate. It almost led to a conflict. They almost spurred into action by the negative remarks, and even wanted to make the experts that the North Style Academy secretly fostered to come out and fight.

Seeing that Xiao Chen was descending from the sky, Fairsky and the fatty ran over there quickly.

“Let’s get out of here quickly. You have made your name known with this fight today, but it’s going to get very troublesome now. It is better to lie low until the fuss dies down.”

Xiao Chen nodded his head. Taking Tenax and Keke along, he followed the two of them and quickly ran towards the outside of the North Style Academy.

Nobody dared to stop Xiao Chen. The tyrannical display just now gave them a lingering fear. Nobody wanted to have their arms and legs broken.

After exiting the North Style Academy’s gate, the fatty let out a long breath and said, “Brother, if you are this strong, you should have told me earlier. Heh

heh, now I can openly come to this educational street to look at the young sisters. What's more to be afraid of....." Thinking about this point, the fatty let out a mischievous laughter.

The handsome Fairsky smacked his forehead. He was having a slight headache as he muttered, "I really don't know if it was a good idea or bad idea to arrange your house at the educational street. It will definitely be bustling with noise and excitement later on." He turned his body around and said, "I originally wanted to invite you both to the Spellbind Castle, but it is better to lie low for now until the fuss dies down. Otherwise we might cause some trouble. We should have a proper gathering several days later."

Without a doubt, Xiao Chen's name had already been posted on the bulletin board of the three big academies. A lot of people were paying attention to him. These past few days, he had led a reclusive life and indulged in training all day long.

Of course, there were times when he had to go out, such as to go out and eat. He was unwilling to upset his own stomach. He went out to eat every single day. Despite how he was staying low-key and found some unassuming place to eat, some troubles still couldn't be avoided.

"The person in front, halt!"

A few soldiers ran over. Their full-bodied armors were giving off a metallic shine, the longswords in their hands were shiny.

"We suspect you might be related to a vicious case, please come with us."

These people were definitely up to no good. Looking at the sneer on the soldiers before his eyes, Xiao Chen could easily tell that they were intentionally framing him.

"Do you guys have any evidence?"

"You'll know once we get there, hurry it up."

Mother f—! Xiao Chen was a little annoyed. Someone was making trouble for him on purpose. Although he didn't care about these soldiers before his eyes, he didn't want to kill them in the middle of the street.

That's right, thinking about it carefully, he really couldn't act recklessly. As for who had the most power within the city walls, it was definitely the lord of Celestial City.

"Hurry!" One of the ordinary soldier at the side roared with impatience.

Xiao Chen looked at them calmly, then he said in a deep voice, "Let's see if you guys can keep up this arrogant act."

"I am the soldier of Prince Li 1, even if I kill you right here and now, I will not be condemned!" One of the soldiers had a very fierce expression.

"I dare you to say it one more time?!" Xiao Chen took a step forward. When he was in the mortal world, he even dared to kill an imperial princess, let alone the soldiers of some prince in the world of immortals.

Although these soldiers were arrogant and bossy, they felt their entire body break out in cold sweat after Xiao Chen's sharp eyes swept past them. A few of them were flapping their mouths, they actually swallowed the foul language that they were about to say.

Chapter 148 – Madman

It was impossible to kill them in the middle of the street, but it was even more impossible not to retaliate after being provoked by the few soldiers!

Xiao Chen did not break out and followed them to the riverside at the inner city. The captain, along with a few soldiers, were waiting there. After seeing Xiao Chen, the captain didn't offer any explanation whatsoever and tried to lash Xiao Chen's face with the horsewhip. At the same time, the captain yelled, "This thing doesn't know life from death!"

"Slap!"

The captain stared blankly. His whip hadn't even touched the other person yet, and a big handprint already appeared on his face. The slap on the face resounded loud and clear.

"You dare to hit me?!" The captain found it a little unbelievable. He was extremely angry as he lifted the whip to lash at Xiao Chen one more time.

"You asshole!"

Under this kind of circumstances, Xiao Chen felt that they were unable to talk things out. There was no need to talk, there was nothing to talk about.

"Slap!"

It was another big slap in the face. Xiao Chen slapped the captain on the face ruthlessly.

The captain's whip still hadn't touched Xiao Chen yet.

"Damn it!" Two slaps on the face made the captain so angry that his veins were practically about to burst open. He was the soldier of Prince Li, he had never been treated like this. It was always him who beat the others, never had there been anyone who dared to touch him.

"Slap!"

It was yet another big slap in the face. The captain could literally see stars floating before his two eyes.

"Shring! Shring!"

In the surroundings the sound of the soldiers drawing their swords could be heard. Eight soldiers lifted their shiny longswords and quickly approached. Without waiting for the captain's order, they ruthlessly tried to cut down Xiao Chen.

“Clang! Clang! Clang.....”

The ringing sound of metal resounded. Eight shiny longswords were snapped off one after another. All of their faces changed color immediately. Seeing Xiao Chen actually broke their longswords with his palm, they knew they had encountered a huge disaster.

“Slap! Slap!”

Xiao Chen had already grabbed that captain by the collar. Without any superfluous words, Xiao Chen continuously slapped him four times. Then he said very fiercely, “Who do you think you are? Do you honestly believe that being the soldier of the prince is that amazing?!”

“Boy, you committed a huge crime. Release me at once!”

“Huge crime?!” Xiao Chen sneered, “Just who do you think you are?!”

Looking at the captain's vengeful expression, Xiao Chen flared up. While gripping onto him, he slapped him in the face two more times. It caused the captain to lose his bearings.

“I am the soldier of Prince Li. The crime of offending Prince Li is beheading!” The captain was still very stubborn and roared at Xiao Chen. At the same time, he was struggling to get free, but it was impossible for him to get away from the clutches of an Eighth Celestial Layer expert like Xiao Chen.

“And here I thought you were the emperor or the representative of the imperial court!” Since he had already beaten him to a pulp, how could he back out now? Xiao Chen slapped him another four times. A few of the captain's tooth already flew out a long time ago.

The eight soldiers at the side were flabbergasted. They were cowering at the same time. When had they ever received this kind of treatment in the National Capital of Terra? They had a sense of foreboding as they silently cursed; the south desolate region was really incomparably uncivilized. They even dared to hit

the soldiers of Prince Li, not even regarding it as a matter of any importance.

After losing half of his teeth, the captain finally caved in. He didn't dare to retaliate anymore and answered every question that was asked.

"Is that true? It was not incited by your lord, instead you were entrusted with this mission by the townspeople?"

"I swear, everything I said was the truth. I shouldn't have accepted that five hundred gold coins due to greed. That wretched swine sought out my help and said that they wanted to teach the scammer a lesson. How was I supposed to know it was an expert on your level.....?"

In the end, the captain had said everything that needed to be said. He knew he had provoked a fierce person. At this south desolate region, they refused to accept the beneficial influence of the sovereign. If the other party was truly barbarous and killed him on the spot, that would be too unjustified.

"Tell me everything you know about that guy."

After the captain finished explaining, Xiao Chen grabbed him and violently flung him into the river. As for the other eight soldiers, after they suffered a certain level of physical pain, Xiao Chen also threw them into the river.

It was really too much to kill people within the city walls without a qualm, so he did not harm these people's life, but this kind of punishment couldn't be avoided. Although the other party were the soldiers of the prince, he wasn't scared at all. The south desolate region could even be said to be a remote region where the central power could not reach. The geographic environment was really too remote.

Although the Celestial City was a great power in the southern part of the immortal's mainland, it was still out of the supreme ruler's reach. Therefore, the Celestial City had always been half-independent. The city lord ruled half of the south desolate region. The major powers at this place didn't even take Terra Empire seriously.



The Dragon Kings unexpectedly appeared in Celestial City, there was even a glimpse of quite a few little sacred beasts. As well as the warbeast tournament

that would begin three months later. It stirred up the clouds from all directions. Many people were rushing over from the northern side.

Terra Empire's Prince Aeon of the First Rank had a successful political career and was in possession of an extremely powerful warbeast. Although he was dissatisfied to pay lip service to the lord of Celestial City, he still came to Celestial City and was one of the first powerful figures to arrive.

Celestial City was a half-independent nation, the city lord Liu Daoming had never shown any respect towards the imperial family. Prince Aeon of the First Rank was very discontent with him. That was because the city lord of Celestial City was actually playing deaf-mute and didn't go to greet him. Although Aeon came to the south desolate region in secret, a lot of major powers in the city already knew about it, so how could the city lord Liu Daoming not know?

Aeon was only twenty plus years old, and he already had great status. How could he not get angry to receive this kind of treatment? However, he was enduring it silently for the past few days. He already got in touch with a few major powers. Today, in order to show his good faith, he invited the youngsters from a few influential families to dinner.

Even if these families had great influence, they were still the residents of Terra Empire after all. Therefore, it was a given that they would proactively make the youngsters in their family attend. Consequently, they were not worried of offending the city lord, Liu Daoming.

This was a private gathering, every attendant was an elite of some influential family.

Just at this time, Aeon suddenly received some news. He was so angry that his complexion changed abruptly as he shouted, "Imprudent!"

Not all the invitees were present yet. Only a few had arrived just a moment ago. Seeing Aeon's ugly expression, a beautiful girl opened her mouth to inquire, "Is something the matter, you Highness?"

"Someone threw our personal soldiers into the river." Although Aeon's words were calm, every young men and women at this place were not any ordinary person, how could they not feel his repressed emotions?

“Hoh? Just who would be so daring to offend the prince’s prestige?” A man who seemed to be a little drunk asked.

Aeon had already endured this kind of treatment from the city lord Liu Daoming for several days now, and this kind of thing happened today, he was in an extremely bad mood.

“Come!”

Without a doubt, the one who threw the prince’s soldiers into the river was Xiao Chen. He was currently wandering around the town, looking for the ruffian with a scarred face as described by the captain.

He found the ruffian quite easily, because the scarred face was usually roaming about on that street. He didn’t even try to hide. Xiao Chen could already guess a few things so he didn’t make his move impatiently. He intercepted the ruffian in an unassuming alley. The scarred face did not see his visage clearly.

After sealing the scarred face’s acupuncture points, Xiao Chen fiercely punched him on the face first. Then he shouted, “Have you ever bribed Prince Li’s soldiers?”

The scarred face was already beaten to a pulp. He had momentarily been “blinded” and couldn’t see anything. He answered Xiao Chen’s every questions obediently.

The scarred face was the little ringleader of a certain major power in the city. However, the one who incited the scarred face to handle this matter was another person.

“So that was really the case.....” Xiao Chen was a little angry. He didn’t want to continue the investigation, because he knew that the schemers should have already erased their traces.

Prince Li’s soldiers, scarred face, and the one “behind” scarred face, they were just some insignificant side characters. However, it was true that they came from some rather influential families.

Someone was setting up Xiao Chen, and making trouble for him on purpose. If he acted on impulse and continued to investigate, he would have offended a large quantity of nobodies. Although the nobodies were not scary, they could

still be put to some special use sometimes. It was hard to say, who knew if he might end up provoking the major powers affiliated with them.

Like now for example, Prince Aeon of the First Rank was already furious. He endured city lord Liu Daoming's treatment for several days already. And now a "ruffian" in Celestial City actually dared to make a move against his soldiers. This was really intolerable. If this was spread out, he would become a laughing stock. It's not that he didn't think of the possibility that this was the provocation of the city lord, but he had to respond to this kind of provocation.

This was the power of nobodies. As it should be, the few imperial soldiers described Xiao Chen as the "evil tyrant" of the city.

When the prince's imperial bodyguards led a squadron of soldiers to go arrest Xiao Chen on the streets, the youthful Prince Li was feeling a bit rueful; Did he made a big fuss over a minor issue?

When Xiao Chen was intercepted by this squadron on the street, he immediately raged. The so-called Terra Empire had already granted Celestial City half-independence, and these people actually dared to exert their influence on the main street so arrogantly without distinguishing between right and wrong. Such a tyranny. If they were so courageous, they might as well just go and retake the Celestial City.

"Please tell your so-called prince to go back and investigate properly. Ask the soldiers whom I beat what was really going on! I am a low-profile person, I do not want to cause any unnecessary trouble, but that doesn't mean I am afraid of getting involved!"

Low-profile, that was definitely a sign of mockery! That was what everyone in the prince's squadron lamented about; "low-profile" my ass, you don't even pay any attention to the prince, much too arrogant!

There was nothing to say, they immediately exerted their influence. All of these people rushed up at once. They expected to beat this city's evil tyrant into submission very soon.

However, other than the prince's imperial bodyguards being Exuvia Fourth Celestial Layer experts, the others were the so-called "elite troops". They were nothing more than ants compared to the practitioners, how could they ever

hope to seize Xiao Chen?

In only a moment, plenty of people were lying flat on the main street. Even the prince's imperial bodyguards were no exception. Xiao Chen stepped on their bodies without a trace of politeness, then he said, "Tell this to your prince, I am a very low-profile person, don't provoke me!"

Mother f—! The people lying on the ground really wanted to curse at him. Low-profile, that was obviously a sign of mockery! Just who was this person? He's crazy!

Less than half an hour later, when Prince Aeon of the First Rank saw this group of badly battered people, he was so angry that even his nose distorted.

"He said that he is very low-profile? He asked me not to provoke him?!" After smashing the coffee table in front of him, he roared furiously, "A hoodlum in the city actually dares to be so discourteous to me, he's courting death!"

However, he suddenly recalled something and said to the personal guards, "Go and investigate those few people properly. Find out what is really going on."

Aeon knew these soldier's revolting behavior. That military officer who came back first definitely was not speaking the truth, but he did not feel like looking into it. After all, they were still his people. Before they punish the dog, they had to pay attention to the owner first. It was precisely because he wanted to find the evil tyrant in the city to settle the bill. However, this time, since that hoodlum asked him to investigate properly, then he might as well do as he said. Maybe there was really some inside story.

"Your Highness, why are you angry?" A young man inquired.

There were more or less eight to nine young men and young ladies invited to the evening party. These were the elite figures of certain influential families. Despite their young age, they were very experienced.

"A hoodlum in the city is looking down on our authority!" Aeon already determined that it was prompted by city lord Liu Daoming. He asked these people with a very ugly expression, "You guys are citizens of Celestial City, have you ever heard of the hoodlum called Xiao Chen?"

These young men and young ladies were stirred up. After hearing these words,

each of them had a different expression.

“Ah, it’s him!” A blue-haired girl cried out in surprise.

“Katalina, you have heard of this hoodlum? Is he very famous in this city?” Aeon asked. He was quite fond of this baby girl from the Mander Family. He felt that this beautiful young lady was frank and sincere. She was not sophisticated like the others.

“Of course I’ve heard of him. He is definitely a super bad hoodlum. The most famous evil tyrant in the city!” Katalina was panting with rage. At the same time, her cheeks were a little flushed.

The other young men and young ladies from the other families only revealed a faint smile, but they didn’t say anything. People on the upper circle like them could get wind of anything.

A few days ago, the baby girl from the Mander Family experienced hardship. She bet herself and became other people’s attendant as a prize, these people had already heard of it.

It was impossible for Aeon to miss these people’s peculiar expression. He opened his mouth to ask the man beside him, “Zhuge Ming, do you know this guy?”

That youngster seemed like he had drank a little too much. His complexion was really pale, and there were dark circles under his eyes, but no one dared to look down on him. They all knew his family was very powerful.

“Oh? I’ve heard of this guy, it seems..... he’s very arrogant!” Zhuge Ming said unenthusiastically.

Everyone present had different opinions, but they knew that Zhuge Ming was intentionally hoping that Xiao Chen would rise in revolt.

“Hoodlum, evil tyrant, arrogant.....” Although Aeon was very furious, he slowly calmed down. Everyone present was the younger generation from some major power in the south desolate region, this egotistical guy coming out from their mouth was definitely not as simple as a hooligan.

“Fairsnow, do you know this guy?” Aeon asked again.

This was an extremely beautiful girl. If Xiao Chen was present, he would definitely be very shocked. That was because this girl looked exactly like Fairsky. Her beautiful face, her snow-white skin, her clear eyes and long eyelashes, her lily-white nose, her rosy lips, and her beautiful black hair that flowed down like a waterfall, she was precisely Fairsky's twin sister.

"Oh? I seem to have heard of him." Fairsnow frowned.

"Reporting in, Lady Yan Qingcheng has arrived."

"Please enter!"

Fairsnow smiled and said, "Your Highness might want to ask Lady Qingcheng, she might know something."

Stunning!

That was Aeon's first impression of Yan Qingcheng. The girl who came from the Undying Sect was really too beautiful. Her beauty could even captivate the birds and beasts, hide the moon and shame the flowers. In addition to the other extremely beautiful ladies in the hall, the entire hall seemed to have become more dazzling.

Chapter 149 – Arrogant and Egotistical

The ladies in the hall were all extremely beautiful, they were unmatched in the south desolate region. Aeon was the prince of the Terra Empire, he had seen countless of beautiful ladies, but even his heart skipped a beat at this moment.

These past few days, city lord Liu Daoming didn't come to see him. It seemed like he didn't even care about this prince. Aeon's anger was accumulating over the past few days, but after seeing the beauties of the south desolate region chatting with each other, he suddenly had a different thought. If he could take these ladies in the hall as his concubines, how happy would he be. His heart skipped a beat, but he silently heaved a sigh soon after.

What kind of person were these girls? They were the cream of the crop from some super major powers. These major powers were not so simple that they were only limited to the Celestial City. The entire south desolate region was ruled by them. The south desolate region was an ancient region brimming with legends. The people at this place would never obey the Terra Empire. Although the empire was powerful, their influence still couldn't reach this place.

The uncrowned kings of the south desolate region were precisely these people's clans. In a sense, these young peoples were on equal footing with him. Even if he used some underhanded methods, obtaining one or two was his limits. Taking in all the beauties from the south desolate region as his concubines was nothing more than a pipe dream. Even the emperor was not capable of it!

After everyone had seated, Aeon asked, "Qingcheng, do you know this guy called Xiao Chen?"

Addressing her in such a way, as well as that gentle tone, few people in the hall realized something. 1

The corners of Fairsnow's mouth lifted into a smile. She felt relieved. If this young prince were to make a pledge with her family and tried to rope her in with everything he got, she would be very troubled. As the children of an influential family, they had to comply with some of the family's orders, especially when it came to women.

Zhuge Ming who looked like he had too much to drink frowned a little. Who

didn't like a stunning lady? As a man, it was only natural for him to be attracted. Especially towards this kind lady that came from a big faction like the Undying Sect. If they could form an alliance, that could be very beneficial. But after he thought about it for a while, he thought it was not worth it. This was the prince of an empire after all. If he wanted to go to the northern side, there was a need for him to support Aeon. It was not like Yan Qingcheng was the only beauty in the south desolate region. The few high-class ladies in this hall all had powerful backers.

These gentlemen and ladies all revealed different expressions momentarily.

Yan Qingcheng thought that Aeon had learned about the events on the dragon island, about the matter that she had once been captured by Xiao Chen. Every time she thought of this, she would feel very angry and humiliated. And now, being asked in front of so many people, her cheeks became a little flushed.

Indeed, there were two or three people at present who knew about some events that occurred on the dragon island. They were the core members of some major powers after all. They could get their hands on many classified information. But not everyone knew about this. When they saw her expression, they felt very astonished and thought that there must be some "story" between them.

"This guy is pretty powerful, he is not someone who willingly puts himself at a disadvantageous situation." Yan Qingcheng said as such. These young elites were unable to figure out why she would say something like this.

"There are indeed a lot of talented individuals hiding in the south desolate region. Today, this Xiao Chen actually oppressed our personal guards." Although Aeon's words were calm, the people at present could feel his anger. Maybe it was because of Yan Qingcheng's expression in the beginning that caused this young prince to be even more resentful.

"Our mansion also has a few outstanding talents. They are very dedicated to the path of Daoism and have followed us to the south desolate region. We want to experience the mystic arts of a very able person in the south desolate region. Let's have them compete with this Xiao Chen, what of everyone's opinion?"

Aeon was the prince of Terra Empire. He had great responsibilities at such

tender age, he was not an ordinary person. These words had displayed his authority as he conveyed some information to the south. At the same time, his last words to seek for other's opinion was to inquire if these people had any connection with Xiao Chen, so as to avoid any internal conflicts.

“Hehe, of course it's good. I can't wait for this battle to take place.” Katalina was smiling innocently. Everyone felt a bit speechless. How could the Mander Family send someone like her? She was obviously not fit to be the representative of the family. Perhaps, she was the only one at present who would make such “irresponsible remarks”.

Zhuge Ming revealed a faint smile and said, “This might be a good idea.....”

The other few also nodded their heads. Although they didn't say anything, they had given their consent. They all had different purposes, so what if Xiao Chen was to provoke this prince? Xiao Chen definitely had the support of a major power. They were more than happy to see this happening.

Fairsnow looked at this event with a smile, she didn't say anything.

Yan Qingcheng knitted her brows. She wanted to say something, but after seeing everyone's attitude, she pondered over it for a while and didn't declare her position.

Aeon was carefully observing everyone's attitude. After he understood everyone's position, he smiled calmly and said, “If that's the case, then I will send someone to invite that Xiao Chen.”

He had a lot to think about. No matter if this Xiao Chen guy was ordered by the city lord Liu Daoming or not, he had to pinch back once or twice. After all, his personal guards being trampled on was an undeniable fact.

After staying low-key at home and training for a few days, Xiao Chen was met by an unreasonable event. He was very furious today. Unconsciously, he arrived at the warbeast street.

The three skeletons, Keke, and Tenax didn't follow him and stayed at home.

In regards to those warbeasts that were unheard of, it always gave people a sense of novelty. Xiao Chen was constantly evaluating those extremely powerful cubs, imagining what kind of realm they could reach after growing up.

But just at this time, someone broke his mood again. It was actually the people of Prince Li.

As a result of knowing the former was not a person to be trifled with, the personal guard that came this time didn't dare to be arrogant or bossy. However, that kind of superiority was undisguised. This made Xiao Chen feel very disgusted and directly refused to comply. What's so amazing about a prince? This is the Celestial City, not the Terra Empire, what can you do to me?!

"Not going, no time!"

These personal guards were immediately dumbstruck. Wasn't this guy a little too arrogant? Was this the guy who claimed to be low-key? He actually didn't give the prince any face. He was way too arrogant and egotistical.

"This brother, please make the trip with us. Our lord really wants to meet you."

"Is this how you invite people? The first time you come and make trouble for me, the second time you came to seize me. Even a clay figure can lose its temper!"

"Wasn't it all a misunderstanding before? Please take no offense of it." To be able to make these personal guards say these, it could already be considered an exception. These people were already used to being arrogant in the Terra Empire, they had never lowered their voice to speak with others before.

"I really don't have time." Xiao Chen really didn't want to go. If he went to other people's territory, once they fought, he would most likely get the worst of it.

After saying these, Xiao Chen turned around and left.

"What's so amazing about him? Isn't he just a hoodlum that can fight a little? If the commanders were to be dispatched, let's see if he could keep acting so arrogant." Someone whispered at the side.

Xiao Chen got furious immediately. These guys needed a serious spanking.

"You guys better stay away from me. Don't even let me catch sight of your irksome figures again."

The small-time captain among these personal guards was embarrassed and

furious, but he still maintained a smile as much as possible. However, those proud soldiers behind him couldn't stand it anymore, they were mumbling resentfully in succession.

"I have never seen such a lunatic before."

"That style is truly befitting of the barbarians."

"The prince is only giving us more work than it is necessary. Why did he insist on inviting him over? He could just directly dispatch a few commanders to put him out of commission and drag him back."

"Looks like the commanders really need to be dispatched."

.....

Damn your maternal grandfather!

Xiao Chen immediately got furious. He already understood everything. The reason that Prince Li sent people to call for him was actually because he wanted Xiao Chen to have a showdown with the others. Calling him to the mansion and having their underlings fight with him, while Prince Li and the noble guests would drink wine at the side as they watched the battle.

They were making fun of him! Just who were they taking Xiao Chen for?!

"Ping! Pang! Clink! Clang!"

They were beaten to a pulp. More than ten soldiers of Prince Li were lying flat on the ground after they got beaten by Xiao Chen. After that, Xiao Chen ruthlessly stamped on them again and again. Broken arms and legs were unavoidable. The busy street burst into a clamor. A lot of people surrounded them and watched.

"Isn't this the guy who won over the Mander Family's baby girl as an attendant?"

"This guy is truly appalling, he actually beat up Prince Li's personal guards to a pulp."

"Just where did this guy come from? His conduct is so high-profile."

"Feels so great. Just looking at it, is enough to vent my anger."

.....

After the dozen or more personal guards returned in defeat, Aeon almost flipped the table at once. Xiao Chen was seriously not giving him any face by sending his personal guards packing. Just who was this guy? That mother f—! He was practically a lunatic! Enough was enough!

“Your Highness, I will go fetch him for you!” The youth behind Aeon, whose age was about twenty seven or twenty eight years old, stepped forward. His appearance was so-so, but he had a hint of sharpness.

“Very well, Nishikawa. You go and bring him to me.” Speaking until here, Aeon knitted his brows again. It seemed like he recalled something. Then he said, “Liu Haibo, you go with him.”

Today, he had embarrassed himself over and over again in the presence of a few guests. He already lost his temper a long time ago, but since he already knew this hoodlum was not to be trifled with, he dispatched two newly recruited young experts.

Right now, Xiao Chen was already walking side by side with Fairsky. It must be mentioned that the Antarctic Warbeast Castle was very powerful. Fairsky had already received some news and understood what was going on after finding Xiao Chen.

He knitted his brows and said, “This guy is very fearsome. I don’t have any favorable impression of him. He actually wanted to woo my sister, I really want to teach him a lesson.”

After finding out everything about the prince from Fairsky, Xiao Chen pondered for a moment and said, “If they come to invite me again, I will go with them. Let’s see what he can do to me.”

“Un, I will get in touch with some hedonistic sons in the city lord’s manor. Let’s see if I can request one of them to come with me and let them have a talk with that fearsome prince.”

Hearing these words, Xiao Chen immediately smiled.

“The chance of success is slim. Those hedonistic sons are not idiots. They are not easy to deal with. They will most likely take advantage of a crisis for some

personal gain.” Fairisky pondered for a while, then he bid farewell to Xiao Chen and departed.

Nishikawa led a group of people and found Xiao Chen immediately after they stepped out. He was actually walking towards them along the main street.

This was really so irritating. Could this guy be deliberately hanging around nearby, waiting for his chance to beat up some people?! Thinking thus far, Nishikawa and Liu Haibo quickly went to welcome him.

“Are you Xiao Chen?”

“That’s me. I heard your Highness wants to meet me no matter what, so I will go and see him.”

“Hmph! Your Highness is not someone any average person can meet just like that!” Nishikawa clearly showed his intention to make a move at the main street.

Just who do you think you are? Speaking to me with such an attitude. If not because your Highness dispatched people to disturb me, to invite me, do you really think I would come here on my own accord? Xiao Chen directly ignored him and walked forward.

“Did you not hear what I said?!” Nishikawa shouted from behind.

“Who do you think you are? Your words are nothing more than dung!” Because of the events that happened today, Xiao Chen was already very furious. As a result, his words were very vulgar.

He didn’t even turn his head back as he continued to advance.

Nishikawa almost couldn’t hold back anymore. He was extremely furious. This hoodlum was really too savage. He actually dared to talk to him, Prince Li’s deputy commander, in such a disrespectful way. He was indeed a barbarian of this land.

But he was stopped by Liu Haibo beside him. He said, “Since this guy wants to enter the prince’s mansion, there’s no need for us to make our move now. Afterwards, we can make him suffer a crushing defeat in front of numerous guests. Wouldn’t that disgrace him even more?”

“That’s right!” Nishikawa was gnashing his teeth.

The group of people walked towards the prince's mansion with extreme anger.

The so-called prince's mansion, was the real estate purchased by Aeon in Celestial City. Because Celestial City was too famous, the super aristocrats from the North and West had established their estates at this place.

The prince's mansion occupied a wide space. The layout was very exquisite. There were western style buildings that looked like castles and also eastern style buildings like pavilions. The halls were all interconnected. Chinese-Western fusion, gardens of totally different styles, it gave people the feeling of novelty.

The fountain sprinkled jets of water into the air. Below the stone bridge, the stream was flowing and golden carps were swimming to and fro. The marbles were piled up and the fine woods were flourishing. Rare flowers could be seen everywhere.

Nishikawa and Xiao Chen entered the prince's mansion side by side. Both of them were extremely furious and didn't say a single word along the way.

Without anyone reporting Xiao Chen's arrival, he directly crashed his way through and entered Aeon's entertainment hall.

Within the hall, a really thick gold carpet was spread on the ground. The esteemed guests each had their own table and sat cross-legged. As the host, Aeon was sitting at the center and a total of ten esteemed guests were sitting on each side of the hall.

After he saw the elegant Fairsnow, Xiao Chen obviously blanked out for a moment. He knew that this beautiful girl with lily-white skin was certainly Fairsky's older sister. Soon after, he saw the beautiful Yan Qingcheng. After sweeping his eyes over the hall once, he sat beside the blue-haired Katalina without any qualms.

"Little attendant, you haven't been discharged of your duties yet, why haven't you reported to my residence during the past few days?"

Seeing that Xiao Chen sat beside her, Katalina frowned immediately. And now, hearing such words coming from him, her beautiful cheeks immediately became as red as apple. She panted with rage and said, "You... This bastard, I will settle this with you later!"

Arrogant, absolutely arrogant! This guy actually crashed in like this and boldly sat down, ignoring Prince Li that was in the center of the hall.

Zhuge Ming, Fairsnow, Yan Qingcheng, and the others all had different expressions. Everyone knew there was going to be a good show to watch.

Chapter 150 – Who's the Opponent

Such an action from Xiao Chen was out of Aeon's expectation. He practically didn't put this Prince Li in his eyes at all and acted as though there was nobody else present. Even Zhuge Ming, Fairsnow, Yan Qingcheng, and the others at present were endlessly shocked.

"Why must this guy sit beside me?" The blue-haired Katalina mumbled to herself. Her cheeks were flushed. She knew that the news that she had lost to Xiao Chen and became his attendant had already been spread to this circle. And now, when this guy mentioned it again, it was truly a little vexing.

"Good, very courageous." Aeon was the prince of an empire, he calmed down rather quickly.

"It's just so-so, the number three of Celestial City. Personal guards killing people in the middle of the street regardless of the law and of natural morality. If he is ranked two, who would dare to compete to be first? The prince of Terra, possessor of a huge power. With a wave of his hand, the nobodies in Celestial City all become restless, even the third ranked has to pull over." Xiao Chen couldn't give a damn about it and sat besides Katalina. He lifted the wine cup without a trace of politeness.

"Hey, that's my wine cup!" The blue haired young lady was humiliated and angry, but she didn't dare to make any move. She knew Xiao Chen was difficult to deal with and that she would be embarrassed again.

Everyone present was incomparably shocked. This guy really had the nerve to do as he pleased. He actually dared to mock Prince Li without any qualms.

Prince Li's deputy commander, Nishikawa, really wanted to rush over there, but Aeon stopped him with an eye signal. He could only let his rage accumulate.

"This brother is seriously doing as he pleases....." said Zhuge Ming while focused on drinking a cup of wine.

Xiao Chen heard this and turned his attention to him. He only saw a guy with pale face and really dark circles under his eyes. He obviously looked like he had drank too much.

“How should I address this brother?” Xiao Chen felt that this guy was an eyesore. This seemed like a guy who didn’t like a frontal confrontation. The words just now were obviously an underhanded tactic.

“Zhuge Ming of Amber Warbeast Castle.” Zhuge Ming announced his name and affiliation.

“Oh, you resemble Zhuge Liang.” Xiao Chen said arbitrarily.

Suddenly, the expression of a few people in the hall shifted. Katalina even laughed secretly. This guy really didn’t know how to show mercy when he opened his mouth.

Just who was Zhuge Liang? He was a very well known bastard fatty in Celestial City. With a face that looked like a steamed bun, a big nose, small eyes, and thick lips. Although he appeared very merry, he was several hundred miles away from the word “handsome”. Wasn’t this tantamount to scold Zhuge Ming as an ugly fatty?

In fact, Zhuge Ming was not really that fat. His appearance was also not bad. Being evaluated like this, he was clearly cursing him on purpose.

Xiao Chen heard Zhuge Liang mention it before, that Zhuge Ming from the main family seemed to be at odds with him. The reason he said this was most likely related to that time.

“So you are Xiao Chen?” A purple clothed youth revealed a faint sneer and said, “Last time you went to North Style Academy right? It’s a pity I didn’t get to meet you.”

“Oh? How should I address this friend?” Xiao Chen paid him no mind. He was more than happy to see this kind of circumstances. It was far better if those with enmity showed themselves.

“A disciple from the inner institution of the North Style Academy, Lancelot.”

“Oh, it really is a pity. However, I will go to the North Style Academy frequently.”

Katalina had to hand it to this guy. Aiming for the person but not the face, this guy would actually go this far. He defeated the four grand experts of the North

Style Academy in a consecutive battle, and the meaning of his words now were easy to see.

The other people all had different expressions. Today was more exciting than they had expected.

Aeon watched all of these calmly. He profoundly understood, how could this be a simple hoodlum? And just at this time, he also received the secret report. He found out everything Xiao Chen had done recently. However, it was impossible for him to not issue a valid response. He didn't flare up immediately, on the contrary, he clapped his hands and said, "Please enter, Lady Carmina, Lady Lyria."

The good show had yet to come, but some people at present were already dissatisfied.

Everyone present watched all of these unfolding with a calm demeanor. This young prince did not launch an attack towards Xiao Chen immediately. It seemed like he wanted everyone to enjoy the singing and dancing first. It was hard to guess what he had planned

The jingling of girdle ornaments resounded. An intoxicating fragrance transmitted over. One of the girls had a fiery figure while the other one was lucid and elegant.

Zhuge Ming and the other guys at present knew these two girls.

The girl with a slender and curvy figure was Carmina. Her crimson long hair was red-hot and fluttered like the flame. Her beautiful mien was incomparably flirtatious. Her pair of watery big eyes seemed as if they could speak. The other girl wore a white dress more beautiful than the snow, very fashionable. Her black hair was like the waterfall and her pupils were like limpid autumn waters. She was brimming with a hint of wisdom. That was Lyria of the Intoxicating House.

These two were the queens of the Intoxicating House. It was usually very hard to meet them even if people were to go to the Moonflower Castle. But now, they had actually left the Moonflower Castle and arrived at the prince's mansion. It was easy to tell how much power Aeon possessed from this.

These two girls could even be said to be rather famous. But due to the

existence of a few beauties in the hall, they didn't stand out as much. Despite that, the ice and fire pair was still exceptionally stimulating.

Along with the music played by Lyria, Carmina started to dance. The sleeves of her dress were fluttering in the breeze, she danced as lightly as the butterfly. Her watery big eyes were passionate as she swept it past everyone in the hall, extremely charming. Her snow-white neck, her swaying breasts, her thin waist, her perfectly round buttocks, and her slender legs enhanced her charm.

Not long later, Lyria also came down from the stage after someone stood in for her. She danced her way to the middle of the hall. Her postures were wondrous. Along with her snowy white dress, it made her seem like a fairy dancing high in the clouds.

Soon after, two stimulating singing voices resounded. Carmina and Lyria's voices were incomparably sweet;

“National beauty of heavenly fragrance, old dreams encompassed.

A Chilling rainfall, a fallen parasol tree,

Gone is a beauty's youth to old age,

The playing of a lute breaks one's heart,

As the courage of a warrior and the soul of a musician remains but a dream.....”

At the same time, eight youthful and pretty girls walked into the hall in a straight line. After that, they began to dance gracefully.

Although those eight girls' purpose was to enhance Carmina and Lyria's brilliance, they were still good looking in their own way. Each of them was of different races. That tall and busty girl was a blondie. Her skin was lily-white and gave people unlimited temptation.

That eastern girl with slender figure had black hair that flowed like a waterfall. Her delicate neck and graceful features were indescribable. It was hard to describe her classical charm with words.

There was also a beastkin with a cat tail and a pair of cute hairy ears. It could even be said that she brought a sense of freshness among the cuties. She had an

irregular charm that couldn't be described with words.

There was also a girl from the Jungle Tribe. Her green hair was bright and beautiful, her tender skin was like the water, and her bright eyes were like the stars. Her beauty was truly enchanting.

Xiao Chen noticed that Carmina and Lyria were glancing at him from time to time with a smile. He was very much relaxed as he sat beside Katalina. He softly said to the baby girl of the Mander Family, "So, when will you settle the bill?"

"You....."

"You, what you? I am serious. Someone came to cause trouble for me today, was it incited by someone in your family?"

"Nonsense. If our family wanted to take care of you, there would be no need to go through so much trouble. We could eliminate you by directly sending a peerless expert."

"An expert on the level of Lambda?"

"Hmph, don't be so complacent! We have as many experts as the clouds in our Mander Family. Don't think you are so special."

"Forget about it, brat. I will not make you feel embarrassed today. Just introduce these people to me in a low voice. The more detailed, the better."

Looking at Xiao Chen and Katalina quietly chatting, the others were very astonished. They felt that this beautiful lady from the Mander Family was a little different than usual.

Not long later, Xiao Chen was shocked to find out these people's identities. Zhuge Ming represented the Amber Warbeast Castle, Fairsnow represented the Antarctic Warbeast Castle, Katalina represented the Beast King Castle, Lancelot represented the North Style Academy..... All of these ten young men and young ladies represented ten major powers.

The beautiful singing voice was pleasant to listen to. The dancers' movements were elegant. Xiao Chen did not feel a sense of crisis. He drank and ate as though there was nobody else present.

"Reporting in, the city lord has arrived."

“Oh? Liu Daoming finally knows about my arrival at Celestial City?” Aeon coldly snorted and said, “Let him in.”

“Haha.....” With a loud laughter, a young man with a purple qipao gown entered the hall with large strides. He smiled and said, “Liu Yu pays his respect to Prince Li.” Though he said pays respect, he merely cupped his hands. He didn’t salute at all. Although Celestial City was already half-independent, it was still a part of Terra Empire. Such an attitude from the purple gowned young man was very disrespectful. He didn’t give Aeon any face at all, such arrogance!

“You are the third child of the Celestial City’s lord?”

“It is I, Liu Yu.” After saying these, Liu Yu didn’t wait for Aeon to say anything else. He only minded his own business and walked towards Xiao Chen. After that, he chuckled and sat beside him.

Katalina felt a little depressed. Why did this guy also sat at her table? Why did these two big men insisted on cramming in? It made her feel awkward. These two were definitely here to cause trouble, who knew if they would take it too far.

The others only looked on with calm demeanor. Without a doubt, with Liu Yu’s appearance, it would become more lively.

“So this is brother Xiao, I came specifically to meet you.” Liu Yu was practically the same as Xiao Chen, acting as though nobody else was around.

Xiao Chen replied warmly. The purple gowned youth before his eyes was very interesting, this would definitely be a very good ally.

Liu Yu was handsome and had a stalwart build. His most outstanding characteristic was that he had a rebellious look. Otherwise, how might it be possible for him to sweep the floor with Aeon’s face.

Prince Li’s face was ashen. This Liu Yu was merely the third son of the city lord Liu Daoming. And he actually dared to treat him with such disrespect. It was easy to imagine what Liu Daoming was thinking. He was positive that Liu Daoming wanted to become completely independent from Terra Empire.

“How audacious! You have the impertinence to act so rudely!” Deputy commander Nishikawa shouted loudly. At the same time, he drew his shiny longsword and walked over with large strides.

Seeing that Aeon did not stop him, the other deputy commander, Liu Haibo, also followed closely.

The singing and dancing already stopped. Carmina and Lyria fell back with the eight girls. They didn't want to be involved in this dispute.

"Move aside!" Xiao Chen was still sitting upright, but his right hand already pulled out the black broken sword and slashed diagonally. A jet-black sword-qi ripped the air apart like the black lightning. It clashed against the shiny longsword in a split second.

A brittle noise resounded almost at the same time, as if they were synchronized. The longsword in Nishikawa's hand shattered inch by inch. In the end, only the sword shaft was left.

"Nice sword!" Liu Yu praised.

Xiao Chen did not so much as glanced at Nishikawa who was holding the sword shaft. He directly faced Aeon and said, "Is this how you treat your guests? Don't disturb me when I'm chatting with a friend."

After he stopped talking, Liu Yu and himself laughed out loud.

These two were really wild! Just where did they think they were? This was not the city lord's manor, it was the prince's mansion!

"You were only relying on the sharpness of the divine weapon, let's go out and settle this!" Nishikawa discarded the sword shaft in his hand.

"Didn't you invite me to the prince's mansion for this very purpose and to restore your honor? You only have to make a move, there is no need to put up a pretence. But I think finishing you off here is more than enough." Speaking until here, Xiao Chen stood up and sent a punch towards Nishikawa.

The strong wind was just like a tsunami, it actually produced a thunderous roar. Some interesting and appealing furnitures in the hall immediately swirled in the air.

Fairsnow and the other guests were incomparably shocked. This Xiao Chen really didn't know how to hold back. He clearly showed that he wanted to cause havoc. He actually made his move at this place. Without a doubt, he wanted to

tear this building down.

“Bang!”

Nishikawa’s right palm and Xiao Chen’s fist collided. A loud bang resounded. Following closely, Nishikawa was pushed back four or five steps. His expression changed again and again.

Xiao Chen followed up with lightning speed. The moment he swept his right foot, another gale surged up violently. The doors and windows were broken into pieces. Everyone at present had already changed countenance. Xiao Chen was powerful. Such a power was too extreme and very rare among the youth generation!

The rumor was true! This guy had reached the Exuvia Eighth Celestial Layer!

Everyone at present thought that it was dubious when they heard that Lambda was defeated. They thought that maybe he was not in his best condition at the time, but they were finally convinced at this very moment. Xiao Chen was a genuine Eighth Celestial Layer expert. Even if one surveyed the entire south desolate region, a person who had reached this stage at such a young age, there were definitely not more than five!

“Bang!”

Nishikawa was forced back twice as much distance by Xiao Chen’s second strike. The ground under his foot already cracked, one after another huge cracks extended for a few meters. Moreover, his face was incomparably flushed and blood spilled from the corner of his mouth.

“This is how it is. Didn’t you keep saying you wanted to fight with me? You have the nerve to be so arrogant with only this much power.” Xiao Chen sneered at him. His disdain was undisguised.

Nishikawa was extremely furious. He opened his mouth to spit out the blood. The ominous glint in his eyes was burning like the flame. He threw himself over again as nimble as a cheetah.

This time, Xiao Chen did not make any complicated maneuver. He just sent a straight punch.

“Bang! Bang.....”

With every punch, a part of the hall would be destroyed and Nishikawa would be pushed back unceasingly. When the seventh punch landed, he was unable to move all of a sudden. Both of his arms ruptured, and as if there was no bones in his body, he immediately slumped on the ground.

Everyone present was a practitioner. They immediately realized that all the bones in Nishikawa’s body were no more. He was completely destroyed, he definitely wouldn’t be able to live much longer.

This was too terrifying. Nishikawa was the deputy commander of the prince. How could he be weak? He was an Exuvia Seventh Celestial Layer expert, but he was actually broken into pieces by Xiao Chen with merely seven punches.

Such a power really made these VIP’s of the same age feel a bit terrified. Xiao Chen was definitely one of the most terrifying youths in the south. Among his peers, other than the Solitary Sword Demon and a few others, who else could stand up to him? He would definitely become an influential figure in the south desolate region twenty years from now!

Deputy commander Liu Haibo mustered his courage and stepped up, he had no choice but to go.

This time Xiao Chen immediately drew the broken sword. The jet-black knife blade was incomparably cold. He drew a beautiful trajectory and one bewitching radiance after another was emitted. A thunderous roar resounded in the entire hall, it was quite deafening.

Liu Haibo seemed to know that it would be difficult to deal with the attack. He didn’t dare to face it head on and quickly dodged to the side as he hacked with his sword. However, Xiao Chen’s speed was really too fast. The broken sword was raised diagonally and destroyed the longsword in a flash. His body even left an afterimage behind as he appeared at Liu Haibo’s right side. All the while sending a vertical slash.

Blood splashed everywhere. Liu Haibo’s right arm was severed from the body.

“Argh.....!” The miserable shriek was exceptionally ear-piercing, but his body did not stop moving. He wanted to move back immediately.

However, Xiao Chen didn't want to give him any chance. With the speed of lightning, the thunderous noise resounded in the hall again. Following closely, blood splattered all over the place. Liu Haibo's other arm was chopped off.

Liu Haibo fell back with dishevelled hair and blood all over his body.

When the jet-black sword-qi flashed again, the head flew up and the body fell among the pool of blood. The steaming blood was gushing out like a waterfall.

All of this happened too quickly. A deputy commander was beheaded in merely four slashes!

This made the peers especially frightened. This kind of power was too scary. Katalina even started to have doubts; would her big brother really be able to beat this madman before her eyes easily?

The broken sword swept across. The dazzling sword-qi destroyed the entire hall. After everything had calmed down, Xiao Chen grabbed the broken sword with his long hand and quietly stood on top of the ruins. His long hair fluttered along with the breeze as he coldly swept his eyes across Aeon and the rest.

Too arrogant! He directly tore down a hall in the prince's mansion.

All of the young men and young ladies at present were the elites from some major powers. They watched all of these unfolding in silence. Nobody declared where they stood.

"Wuxing Feng, kill him!" Aeon's face was extremely ugly. His voice was incomparably cold. He was already beyond angry.

A black haired man came out from behind Aeon with large strides. His expression was sharp, his long eyebrows touched the temples, and his eyes were as bright as the stars. This was a young expert with similar characteristics to Xiao Chen.

"Wuxing Feng, it's actually him!"

"Wuxing Feng has actually come to the south!"

"The outstanding talent of the north!"

"He is reputed as the undefeatable youth warrior!"

.....

The sound of deep breathing could be heard. These young elites of the south revealed a shocked expression and cried out in surprise one after another.

Fairsnow, Yan Qingcheng, Katalina, and the others revealed a peculiar expression as they observed this rumored outstanding figure. There were even rumors regarding him in the south, he was the household name of almost every youth.

Chapter 151 – Unparalleled Strength

Although there were great talents that matured slowly in this world, that was only the minority after all. Talent, it was usually manifested in juvenile stage and made them stand out from the masses.

That was all the more so in the path of Daoism. As long as one had a divine ability, they would surpass the majority of their peers. Therefore, people paid particular attention to the youths that were in the forefront positions. That was because in the twenty or thirty years to come, they might become an all-powerful figure.

Especially the twenty odd years practitioners. These distinguished figures were subjected to constant observation. Such as Windfeathers, Zhao Chongyang, and the Solitary Sword Demon of the south. Their strength was indisputable. There was hardly anyone who could stand up to them among their peers.

Although Lambda in the Eight Celestial Layer could also be considered a powerful youth, his age was still a little too old. What people cared about was potential!

If a twenty odd years person was put up against a thirty odd years warrior and still came out on top, that was what people paid the most particular attention to!

Wuxing Feng, his reputation was really too great. He was the legend of the north. It was true that none among his peers could stand up to him. Of course, the so-called “north” did not mean the northern part of the immortal’s mainland. Rather, it was to the north of the Celestial City; the Terra Empire that was only thousands of miles away.

Although the territory in the north was not much bigger than the south desolate region, it was not densely covered by primitive forest like the south. The north was a rich and powerful country, with high population, and concentrated towns.

In this kind of genuine nation, the warriors had to trample on the glory of countless people to make themselves stand out. After all, the population was really too high.

Wuxing Feng, nobody from the youth generation knew of his true strength. He had never been defeated among his peers. When confronting his enemies, he always finished the battle within a second! All he needed was a few strikes!

This kind of figure was nothing in the eyes of the older generation, but he was practically a god in the eyes of the youth generation. In the north, there were only one or two young warriors capable of standing up against him.

Nobody expected that Aeon would bring someone like this to the south.

Wuxing Feng 1, with a tall and straight stature, long eyelashes, and star-like pupils. Although he was very calm, the moment he showed himself, everyone could feel a huge pressure weighing down on them. He did not do it deliberately. This was naturally developed!

Looking at his attitude, it seemed like he was not submissive towards Prince Li and was completely treated as an equal.

The elites at present seemed to have realized something. Wuxing Feng came from an ancient clan and possessed extremely huge power. An outstanding talent of his age wouldn't choose to become the prince's commander.

When he made an appearance, everyone could link it to many things. Maybe Prince Li did not come to the south merely for the "warbeast tournament". It was very possible that he was given some kind of royal mission. As for Wuxing Feng, seemed like his job was to deal with the young warriors of the south. Maybe the Terra Empire wanted to suppress the youth with the youth, thereby displaying the absolute strength of the empire. This might be a sign that they wanted to regain the south desolate region.

The older generation must not get involved in the battles of the youth. This was the unwritten rule of the immortal's mainland. Otherwise many young warriors might have already been strangled to death in the cradle. This unwritten rule was indispensable.

"Xiao Chen, I've heard of you." With a dull expression and bright gaze, Wuxing Feng already walked in front of Xiao Chen and stood there quietly.

"I haven't heard of you." Xiao Chen said casually. The two of them really had a striking resemblance. Their body stature, black hair, long eyelashes, and sharp

gaze were similar.

Everyone at present was shocked that Wuxing Feng had actually heard of Xiao Chen already, and yet, Aeon didn't know about him. It was made clear that he had nothing to do with Aeon. He was really not a very good fit as a "commander". As such, they could also tell that the people of the south had underestimated Xiao Chen. That was because he had actually caught the attention of Wuxing Feng.

At the same time, everyone was shocked by Xiao Chen's words. This Xiao Chen was really..... too arrogant! He actually spoke to Wuxing Feng with such an attitude and said that he had never heard of him. Wasn't this a little too much?!

Wuxing Feng smiled. His snow-white teeth and handsome face seemed to be glittering. The pressure engulfed all directions like a storm. Everyone couldn't help but retreat backwards. The ruins on the ground were rumbling. The debris and broken beams under Wuxing Feng's feet floated up unceasingly before they broke into tiny pieces.

Only Xiao Chen and himself were left in the field.

"Alright, now that you know me, you will never forget about me in the future."

Hearing his words, everyone at present knew what it meant. According to the rumors, he wouldn't kill an opponent which he regarded as important. He wanted to spare their lives and challenge them again in the future. That's right, that was the point of view of the victor. As for losing, he had never considered it.

Looking at this powerful, calm, and handsome man, a few beauties outside of the field felt that their heartstrings had been struck. Their beautiful eyes possessed a strange glint.

"It is impossible not to get acquainted with you anymore. Come! This battle cannot be avoided." Xiao Chen wasn't really an egomaniac. He could feel an unprecedented pressure. This powerful opponent was really very formidable. He might be in for a trouble today.

A simple punch. Wuxing Feng's movement was very slow, his punch was slowly pushing on, but that powerful pressure was as sharp as a knife blade. It made the spectators far away feel extreme pain on their cheeks.

Before the right fist, the strong wind and golden rays of light were smacking Xiao Chen like a fierce ocean wave. The forceful aura couldn't be stopped.

This was a true expert. Or at the very least, there was really no one among the peers who could stand up against him. It made Xiao Chen feel an unprecedented pressure. Although the opponent's golden fist was pushing on very slowly, it sealed off all of his ways out. If he dared to dodge out of the way, then that fist which had accumulated an unimaginable amount of power would definitely increase its speed to an unfathomable level and deliver a fatal blow to Xiao Chen. There was no opening for him to break out, a punch with boundless pressure, a punch that couldn't be avoided!

God Slayer!

Xiao Chen used this technique without the slightest hesitation. He felt a huge pressure and had no choice but to spare no effort to shake it off. Wuxing Feng was forcing him to go all out.

From this, they could tell that Wuxing Feng was a powerful figure. Even in a battle, he wanted to direct everything and force his opponent to stake it all.

Countless golden radiance flickered, the three inches swords and blades made out of concentrated golden rays of light were filled with an ancient vibe, as if they were ancient divine weapons that just got unearthed a moment ago. Untold numbers of swords gathered together and formed a golden sea of swords. They surged forward with great momentum.

Everyone was shocked. The elites had already heard of this; Xiao Chen used a never seen before technique to break the legendary mystic art of the south, the Yin Yang Annihilation. It was precisely this technique right before their eyes. Hundreds and thousands of swords, it was truly terrifying.

“Crack! Crack...!”

The debris of the ruins floated up. After that, they unceasingly exploded into tiny pieces!

The hundreds and thousands of swords sliced everything in their path!

A resplendent divine ray emitted from Wuxing Feng's eyes. He suddenly launched his slowly approaching right fist with sudden force. It was as quick as

lightning. The golden ocean wave became fiercer than ever. Its presence was really omnipresent as the golden ocean wave materialized and sealed off the entire space in the front. It was clashing with those untold numbers of swords unceasingly.

A big collision!

Golden sword versus golden ocean wave!

The earth trembled violently. Every spectator was forced to fall back quickly. One after another, huge cracks appeared on the ground and kept extending towards a distant place. Moreover, a golden storm already broke out in the sky. It was as if a golden sun had just exploded.

“The Fist of Iron, it is the real deal!”

Outside of the field, everyone had an uncommon bloodline. However, all of them were unable to remain calm. Many people practiced the Quintus Techniques 2, but only one ancient clan had mastered the most profound of them all. That was precisely Wuxing Feng’s clan.

The Quintus Techniques. They were claimed to be capable of turning the sky and earth upside down!

As if a huge earthquake was taking place, the violent golden billows wreaked havoc all over the place and crushed every tangible thing.

After Xiao Chen and Wuxing Feng exchanged a single blow, they moved as fast as lightning and had a fierce confrontation under the glaring gold radiance. They left behind one afterimage after another. In the end, only the light remained, not even their shadows could be seen. The two of them were like the lights of destruction. Everywhere they passed by, everything was destroyed and crushed. Nothing could bar their way.

The hall turned into dust, the running water evaporated, and the greenery disappeared without a trace.

When the golden storm faded away, the two of them were standing in the center of the field. They looked into each other’s eyes without blinking. Wuxing Feng’s expression did not change, it was still the same as before.

Xiao Chen's battle intent was high. Just now he had ran into a great danger. This guy before his eyes was really too powerful. He almost couldn't stop that fierce and violent attack. If not because the God Slayer was extremely mighty, and sealed those golden billows, the outcome might be unthinkable.

He was not scared of this kind of opponent. On the contrary, his blood was boiling. This opponent had aroused his battle intent. He was getting fired up.

Wuxing Feng wore the same expression as ever. He slowly launched another punch. An earth-shattering dusky qi-wave tried to swallow up Xiao Chen.

"Fist of Earth!"

"It is the genuine Earth Style Ability!"

One of the spectators cried out in surprise.

Parry! Xiao Chen used the Demonic Seal, using as little power as possible to guide the power of the earth to resist the all-powerful Fist of Earth.

However, the Fist of Earth was really too powerful. The dust seemed to have enveloped the entire world and was going to swallow up Xiao Chen. No matter how he much he resisted, he was unable to neutralize it.

"Boom! Boom! Boom..."

The big collision had begun. The dust filled the entire sky, but that was not real sand. They were materialized from the Fist of Earth's radiance.

Xiao Chen fell back, and Wuxing Feng followed up in a split second. When he brandished his fist again, green radiance glinted. That was the Fist of Wood!

He made a mysterious maneuver. The Fist of Wood seemed to glow with the vitality of mother earth, it seemed to contain the power of life. All of it was directed towards Xiao Chen, the boundless energy couldn't be stopped. The green splendor was dazzling.

And Wuxing Feng seemed to have become incomparably lofty in contrast. Xiao Chen fell back again, seemed like it was not easy to ward off the attack.

Every spectator could feel how powerful Wuxing Feng was. The eyes of a few beauties were flickering repeatedly. Aeon even revealed a smile. 3

Chapter 152 – Breakthrough to Ninth Celestial Layer

The world was filled with vitality, the green divine light was bright and dazzling, as if a green sea of trees was floating in midair. However, that kind of exuberant sight was only in regards to the spectators. To Xiao Chen, who was the target of that light, it was the ray of death.

The inexhaustible life energy gathered towards Xiao Chen and gave him a huge pressure. There was nowhere to run, and nothing to use as a shield. That ray of light wanted to swallow him up.

“Chaotic Pattern!”

Xiao Chen shouted loudly. The second move of the four major techniques had finally been used in battle for the first time. The Imprint of Dao, it was just like a divine light from beyond the heavens that cleaved the empty air and the inexhaustible green light. It was as if it was being manipulated by an invisible giant hand.

The energy of life became chaotic in that very instant. In the end, it actually tore a huge hole in the inexhaustible green light. Xiao Chen broke through from the green sea. The Chaotic Pattern’s invisible giant hand also appeared at this time. It transformed into a grey plume of light and vibrated as it was launched towards the green ripple.

It was finally over. The Imprint of Dao “Chaotic Pattern” had stopped the Fist of Wood.

Xiao Chen was incomparably shocked. This Wuxing Feng was really too powerful. This was his most powerful opponent to date. He actually couldn’t gain any advantage in this fight.

The Quintus Techniques were really worthy of its reputation as the oldest mystic art!

The Quintus Fist in the mortal world was merely a superficial skill. It was far too inferior compared to the one in the world of immortals. In this world, the mystic arts really emerged endlessly. Moreover, they were all first-rate martial arts. The techniques handed down in the mortal world were nothing compared to this world’s.

If he had not grasped the four major techniques, it seemed like it would be hard to establish himself in this world!

Wuxing Feng was also incomparably shocked. In his imagination, not many people could resist his Quintus Fist. This person before his eyes gave him too many surprises. The Demonic Seal, God Slayer Technique, and Chaotic Patterns Technique were incomparably profound. They were definitely not inferior to the Quintus Techniques. If the opponent's ability was as profound as his, he should be able to exhibit even more power.

He sent out another punch with his right fist. It wasn't too slow nor too fast. Endless amount of water enveloped the world. It seemed like Wuxing Feng had blended into the blue rays of light.

Fist of Water!

It was as if the water ripple was omnipresent. The materialization of the Quintus Fist was like the torrential wave, it spread far and wide over the prince's mansion as it enveloped Xiao Chen from all directions.

This was the bizarre power of the Quintus Techniques!

This was not a magic spell nor a spiritual spell. Rather than a "skill", this was a "path". A "path" completely cultivated from the "martial arts". Specifically, it was a "martial way" tempered from a right-handed martial skill. It was the embodiment of the invisible truth.

The legendary Quintus Techniques were capable of turning the sky and earth upside down. When this techniques were exhibited before everyone's eyes, it had validated that this legend might not be empty words. If Wuxing Feng could manifest this technique to the pinnacle in the future, its power would be unimaginable.

A rumbling sound transmitted from the sky as if there were thousands of men and horses. That was the sound of the raging sea. Endless amounts of blue light waves rolled over and over. It fell diagonally from the sky like the milky way falling from the Ninth Heaven.

Xiao Chen shouted loudly, "Demon Suppression!"

He ran into his greatest opponent today. It forced him to reveal almost all of

his trump cards. The third move of the four major techniques, Demon Suppression, was used in front of his enemy for the first time.

Black rays of light seemed to have rushed out from a hazy chaotic space. It was very quiet, but the pressure directly assailed the soul. It was rolling over and over in the endless blue ocean like a black dragon.

Like dragons returning to the sea, the Demon Suppression burst through the Fist of Water. A single word “Suppression” had threw the essence of water into disorder. But even in disorder, the power of the Quinctus was still rushing forth from all sides, about to gobble up Xiao Chen any moment now.

The black Demon Suppression technique created a dusky space. It was like a land of death. White bones could be seen everywhere and the vibe of death lingered on. The power of water was completely absorbed by this illusion.

Whether it was real or an illusion, nobody could make a clear distinction. The power was raging violently as it destroyed everything in the surroundings.

Xiao Chen felt a sharp pain all over his body. His chest felt stuffy as he was unceasingly pushed back. This time, he was forced into a disadvantageous position once again.

When all the illusions faded away, as if Xiao Chen had been struck by a thunderbolt, his body was pushed back for more than ten meters. A dozen or more footprints were left on the ground. There were huge cracks around each footprint. His body was swaying slightly, and it seemed like he could bite the dust at any moment.

Wuxing Feng stood in his original position. His expression remained unchanged. It was easy to judge who had the upper hand.

All the spectators were overwhelmed with shock. The outstanding talent from the north was really too strong. He actually steadily suppressed Xiao Chen, who was an Eighth Celestial Layer expert. Just how much more powerful could he be? Everyone’s heart was palpitating.

Just like the wind and lightning, the fabled young warrior Wuxing Feng left behind an afterimage and appeared in front of Xiao Chen. He directly sent a powerful punch. This time, he did not use the Quinctus Fist, because he could

already tell that Xiao Chen was at his limit. There was no need to reveal his last move, the Fist of Fire.

“You are already very powerful. Among my peers, those who can make me use four out of five of the Quintus Fist are only a handful.”

With pressure as heavy as a mountain, Wuxing Feng was like a sacred mountain that was too high to reach. The fabled outstanding talent of the north was not an ordinary man.

“Bang!” 1

Xiao Chen was sent flying away. He bumped into a rock at a distant place. There were bloodstains at the corner of his mouth. He felt a little dejected and sour. He was actually unable to contend against Wuxing Feng with the peak power of Eighth Celestial Layer. It seemed like the opponent’s power was really higher than his.

This was the test of absolute strength, he lost fair and square.

Wuxing Feng was absolutely not an arrogant guy. Although he steadily suppressed his opponent, he did not hold back or loosen up at all. Each of his punch contained his full strength. He didn’t give his opponent any chance to retaliate.

“Bang!”

Xiao Chen raised his arm to defend, but was sent flying away again. His arm bone seemed to have suffered a fracture. A hall collapsed as his body crashed into it.

The elites who were watching at the sidelines felt secretly apprehensive. None of them had ever thought that Wuxing Feng was this powerful. Xiao Chen was retreating in defeat all the way. He was already detained by an invisible power and was forced to be on the defensive side. Each attack was like a huge hammer smashing on his chest. Who knew how much blood had already spilled from the corner of his mouth.

Although Wuxing Feng had a calm expression and possessed a bright smile, he was still very cruel when he made his move. He didn’t give his opponent any chance at all.

“I said I won’t kill you. But since you are still alive after so many punches, then I might as well finish up with the last punch. I will grant you the experience of surviving the entire series of the Quinctus Fist.”

That was not at all pretentious, nor was it a taunt. As far as Wuxing Feng was concerned, he definitely had the qualification to say this in the northern nation. It was not a disgrace for the peers to lose to an outstanding youth full of sagas. It was considered an honor if they could survive a few of his Quinctus Fist.

Hearing this kind of confident words, the elites at present all had different thoughts. Zhuge Ming, Lancelot, and the others felt a little frustrated. As a man, standing on the summit and looking down at the whole world was an honor.

As for Yan Qingcheng, Fairsnow, Katalina, and the other beauties, their eyes were flashing. Even if this guy possessed a threat to the south, the girls were still attracted to him. A man had to be this powerful and confident. The prerequisite was that they had to have enough strength to back it up.

Xiao Chen’s two legs felt as if they had stepped into the underworld. He was firmly confined by the divine power of the five phases. Even if he wanted to unfold the Undying Divine Wings and fly, it was impossible. He was forced to meet Wuxing Feng’s next attack head on.

The Fist of Fire!

The conflagration heated the horizon until it turned red. The glaring red-qi was flickering, as if it was set on burning everything in the world. It was omnipresent and trapped Xiao Chen within.

Never give the opponent any chance! This was Wuxing Feng’s doctrine when facing an opponent from start to finish. One must spare no effort in a confrontation!

Xiao Chen was very angry. To others, it might be a test of strength and a glory to receive five attacks from the Quinctus Fist. But to him, it was a humiliation!

He didn’t want to lose, he must not lose!

The peak power of the Eighth Celestial Layer, how could it lose?!

Death Blow!

He utilized the last of the four major techniques. The Imprint of Dao seemed to flow into his mind. A resplendent ethereal light burst forth along with his anger. A powerful energy burst forth.

Death Blow, it destroyed every visible thing.

The omnipresent flame was broken down into one stream of light after another. They glinted in the sky like shooting stars. The sky was incomparably gorgeous. The blaze covered the entire sky and spread everywhere like fireworks.

The unparalleled energy surged forth and fluctuated. A great pressure engulfed the entire mansion.

He actually blocked the Fist of Fire!

This made everyone very surprised. Xiao Chen already sustained serious injuries. He already lost a lot of blood in his fight with Wuxing Feng. How could he possibly stop the Quintus Fist?

After the rays of light faded away, Wuxing Feng was standing in the field unmovingly. Xiao Chen already fell onto the ground with his back. Both of his arms were fractured, but at the same time, a resplendent divine radiance erupted from his body like a raging flame.

As if representing his anger and humiliation, a raging flame ignited on the surface of his body. At the same time, an extremely rich and powerful energy forcefully rushed out to the surface of his body. It made his entire body shrouded by brilliant rays.

His body trembled violently, as if he had broken some kind of shackles. Xiao Chen could hear a brittle noise within his body. The peak power of the Eighth Celestial Layer had broken through the shackles. It allowed him to make a breakthrough in the middle of this life and death battle.

He had been racking his brain to breakthrough the shackles, but he still failed to rise to Ninth Celestial Layer. However, he actually succeeded at this very moment. Wuxing Feng's last attack sent him flying and broke his two arms, but it also seemed to have opened the door to a certain treasure in his body.

It was already impossible to close it now. The era of the Ninth Celestial Layer had arrived!

The joints were making noises as the bones trembled. The broken arm bones actually reconnected. It was growing, restoring, and became as good as new under that glaring radiance. The skin was as clear as the precious jade, it was flickering with splendor.

It was as if Xiao Chen had rose from the ashes. His seriously injured body recovered in an instant. In the middle of this life and death battle, he completed his transformation!

An incomparably rich and powerful energy surged up within his body. It surged on like a large river and felt like it would erupt from his body. Every inch of his skin contained an extremely terrifying energy. His body was like divine steel that had been tempered for thousands of years. At the same time, it also felt like a vast ocean that contained an endless amount of worldly essence. His entire body flickered with brilliance.

The instant Wuxing Feng sent Xiao Chen flying away, he felt that the circumstances had turned for the worst. He, who was standing calmly all along, rushed over there like the flickering light and passing shadows. Not giving his opponent any chance was his doctrine.

However, all of these just now happened in a split second, it was impossible to stop it anymore, even if he had already brandished his fist and tore the space with the all-powerful Fist of Iron.

However, Xiao Chen's transformation already completed at this time. He unfolded the Undying Divine Wings and soared into the sky.

"Haha....." The laughing sound was deafening. The surging sound wave pierced through the vast sky. The tremor caused the ruins on the ground to shake. Xiao Chen's messy hair was flying upward, the glints in his eyes were sharp, and his lofty figure was standing in the sky. Among the holiness, there was a huge pressure.

Without any superfluous words, Xiao Chen unfolded the Undying Divine Wings and dived down fast. His fist carried a mighty wind, as if it had attracted the heavenly thunder and hellfire. A large expanse of glaring purple-qi poured down in torrents.

It was a simple punch, but also a punch with nothing held back. It contained an

extremely powerful force!

Ninth Celestial Layer. To many of the youth generation, it was a goal too high to reach. However, Xiao Chen had finally broken through to this realm. He was merciless and did not spare any effort when making his move. He did not get careless just because his strength had increased.

Two fist clashed! A thunderous roar exploded! Wuxing Feng's figure shook violently. The ground under his foot cracked as he was pushed back. Every time his foot dropped onto the ground, it felt as if a huge mountain was shaking. He was pushed back five steps before he stopped.

Swish!

With a flash of light, Xiao Chen landed on the ground. He stood at the opposite side of Wuxing Feng. There was no need for any delirious ravings, that was too childish. The powerful pressure and formless aura was enough to explain everything. After Xiao Chen had went through the Ninth Celestial Layer's transformation, he had the upper hand in raw power.

Tiny light streams were flickering unceasingly on the surface of his body. He was still slowly going through the last transformation.

All the spectators were incomparably shocked. The situation reversed so quickly, it was totally out of their expectation. They had personally witnessed an Eighth Celestial Layer expert breaking through to the Ninth Celestial Layer. This was the realm everyone yearned for even in their dreams.

Transforming in the middle of a life and death battle, this was something that only a warrior truly unafraid of death or a madman dared to do. Today, Xiao Chen had went through this kind of experience.

Ninth Celestial Layer expert, what did this mean? With the most conservative estimates, they could have easily ranked among the top three of the youth experts at the south.

Swish!

Leaving an afterimage in his original location, Xiao Chen appeared in front of Wuxing Feng. He brandished his right fist with all of his might and sent a straight punch.

Wuxing Feng did not panic in the slightest. On the contrary, his eyes had a divine glint and an astonishing battle intent burst out. He lifted his fist to fend off the attack.

Looking at his temperament, all the spectators were overwhelmed with shock. The outstanding talent of the north was really a Ninth Celestial Layer expert. No wonder he could steadily suppress Xiao Chen, who was at the peak of the Eight Celestial Layer.

Chapter 153 – Fall of a Hero

Xiao Chen broke through to the Ninth Celestial Layer. Everyone was incomparably shocked. Transforming in desperate straits, advancing to a new domain in a life and death battle, this was a practitioner's most dangerous experience. Without huge courage or willpower, it was impossible to get through.

After advancing to the same level, Xiao Chen was no longer fearful of Wuxing Feng. He was as quick as the thunder, his figure disappeared like the lightning and closed in with every step. He made his move brazenly, no longer shrinking back.

Swish!

Like a meteor catching up to the moon, Xiao Chen quickly appeared in front of Wuxing Feng and sent a fist covered with gold radiance towards his chest. The space appeared to be distorted. The surroundings seemed to turn somewhat fuzzy. The oppressive gale directly caused the debris and broken beams on the ground to break into pieces and let out creaking noises.

Wuxing Feng lifted his fist to meet the attack. Two fists intersected and produced a sonorous metal noise. The glorious brilliance radiated. The two seemed to be draped in a layer of gold radiance. They looked like two wargods in a fierce battle.

They separated quickly. Wuxing Feng felt a numbness in his arm. He was secretly shocked at Xiao Chen's great power. The Quintus footwork was incomparably exquisite. As if he was capable of teleporting, he disappeared into empty air with each step he took. He broke away from the mighty Xiao Chen in two or three steps.

The skills were almost like the profound truth, his motions were mysterious and unpredictable. Wuxing Feng adjusted his posture a little and his legs were executing the Quintus steps. His body was just like a stream of clouds as he attacked Xiao Chen again. He didn't want to remain passive. He had been unparalleled since birth and always took the initiative to attack. He didn't want to take it lying down.

With an extremely powerful Quinctus Fist, he leapt forward and firmly locked onto Xiao Chen's chest. The dusky qi of earth spread out, the power of the Fist of Earth wanted to run through Xiao Chen's chest. At the same time, he lifted up the right knee with all of his might. The knee was aiming for Xiao Chen's lower abdomen.

The dusky sand was omnipresent, but this was not a genuine sandstorm. This was a terrifying earth energy made from dreadful rays of light. The attack was as quick as the thunder. The simultaneous attack with the fist and the leg had sealed off Xiao Chen's every move.

Xiao Chen moved a little sideway, facing Wuxing Feng's fist with both hands. At the same time, he shook his hips to abruptly release the power he had accumulated. As if he had released a bowstring, his body was suddenly filled with power. At the same time he sandwiched the Fist of Earth with both arms, his right leg struck at the opposite direction.

"Clang!" As if two divine metals had been struck together, Xiao Chen's right knee clashed with Wuxing Feng's left knee. The dusky qi of earth and gold radiance dissipated at the same time. It was spilling like a wide expanse of aurora.

The two's movements were as fast as lightning. At the same time he fell back a little, Xiao Chen jumped two meters high. Just when he was about to descend, he twisted his waist with all his might and swept his leg across. A horizontal kick! His left foot was like a mace as it swept towards the right side of Wuxing Feng's head. It was an extremely brutal attack that caused fear and trepidation. If it was a direct hit, not to mention human flesh, even adamantium would break apart.

Wuxing Feng slightly lowered his head. After he dodged this attack, he suddenly made a somersault and sent an overhead kick towards Xiao Chen's chest. Xiao Chen's figure was still in the sky and there was not enough time to move. Such a brutal attack really caused people to be tongue-tied.

Xiao Chen was not afraid at all. If he unfolded the Undying Divine Wings, he could easily soar into the sky. However, dodging was not his style. While in the sky, he shifted his body half a meter to the side. He was not willing to move back any more than this. After that, both of his legs joined together like an

unbreakable awl as he directly stabbed towards the chest of Wuxing Feng, who was still upside down.

Wuxing Feng was forced to fly backwards in that position. All of these happened too quickly. From the beginning to the end, it all happened in a split second. They left behind a wide expanse of afterimages in the sky.

After that, Xiao Chen stomped on the empty air. He actually took more than ten consecutive steps in the air and chased after Wuxing Feng. His body was slanted as he swept across Wuxing Feng's upper body. He wanted to cut his body off.

Anger bubbled up within Wuxing Feng. It was always him who forced his opponents into the corner, but today, it had turned around. This opponent was more vicious than him. He was incomparably sharp. Wuxing Feng abruptly turned his body around, then he jumped high into the sky. He didn't want to fall back. He sent a somersault kick and slashed towards Xiao Chen's attack.

"Bang!"

The sky exploded with dazzling radiance. The two were separated.

"God Slayer!"

Xiao Chen was really too fast. The instant he landed, he attacked again. He directly executed God Slayer, one of the four major techniques. After advancing to the Ninth Celestial Layer today, his attack power was no longer weaker than the opponent's and he made his move brazenly. He wanted to overwhelm his opponent with absolute strength and give him a taste of his own medicine.

"Fist of Iron!"

Wuxing Feng shouted loudly, his black hair was like a waterfall that was flowing backwards 1. The sharp glints in his eyes were like swords. The right fist with glorious gold radiance was launched.

The violent clash was like an earthquake. It made the mother earth burst open. Wuxing Feng was forced to fall back five steps. Xiao Chen did not fall back, on the contrary, he continued moving forward.

"Chaotic Patterns!"

He shouted loudly. Xiao Chen once more clashed with Wuxing Feng.

“Fist of Wood!” Wuxing Feng’s eyes sparked with electricity 2. His fist erupted with resplendent green radiance. Two fists clashed! In that instance he felt his arms getting numb. His body trembled slightly as the surge of energy seemed like it wanted to intrude his body.

Wuxing Feng was shocked as he fell back one more time. Xiao Chen had become dominant and didn’t want to spare him. He shouted his next move, “Demon Suppression!”

The gale carried by the fist was incomparably wild. It ferociously smashed towards Wuxing Feng’s face. Wuxing Feng had no choice but to block it with the Fist of Water.

It was as if there was a sudden clap of thunder in the sky when the two clashed head on!

The dazzling energy storm swept towards all directions. Wuxing Feng fell back, Xiao Chen followed up again!

A continuous attack with the four major techniques and the Demonic Seal. It was obvious that Xiao Chen wanted to get revenge for the “clash” before. The so-called “using an opponent’s own methods to obtain retribution”.

One ferocious punch was followed up by another!

The energy burst out unceasingly. Dazzling multicolored radiances shrouded their surroundings. It was rolling over and over like the stormy sea.

Every spectator was incomparably shocked. The two powerful warriors gave them too many surprises. Especially Xiao Chen who actually turned a losing battle around and steadily suppressed the outstanding Wuxing Feng. It was too unexpected.

Loud roars burst out unceasingly. Xiao Chen was as quick as lightning. His fist became heavier with each consecutive blow. Wuxing Feng was finally unable to bear it anymore after the eighteenth fist. Blood spilled from the corner of his mouth.

“Ah!!!”

“How is this possible?!”

The elites of the south and Aeon’s people cried out in surprise. The fabled outstanding talent of the north was actually no match for Xiao Chen.

His attacks were sharp and closed in with every step. Xiao Chen’s messy hair flew upward as he brazenly made his move. He didn’t give Wuxing Feng any chance to dodge. All of the sharp attacks were connected beautifully. It gave Wuxing Feng no other choice but to receive the attack. He was unable to dodge, unless he was willing to put his life on the line and receive one terrifying punch head on.

After the thirty sixth punch, Wuxing Feng let out a bellow of rage. He was finally unable to stand it anymore. His body was sent flying away. A big mouthful of blood spurted out from his mouth.

“Hey!” Xiao Chen followed closely. His movement was extremely sharp. He launched an attack just as fierce as before, without any flashy move. An invisible “power” enveloped Wuxing Feng. He wanted to force the opponent to receive it head on, giving him no chance to dodge, unable to dodge.

Another nine consecutive punches. Wuxing Feng was continuously coughing up blood. Xiao Chen felt extremely content. He had already avenged his previous defeat by beating him into this sorry state.

Just at this moment, everyone already had different expressions. Their gaze hinted their different thoughts. They had deeply engraved Xiao Chen’s power into their brain.

“Bang!”

With one last punch, he sent Wuxing Feng flying away!

A bunch of blood sprinkled in the air. Wuxing Feng had already crashed into a few big halls.

Xiao Chen jumped into the sky and swooped down. With a powerful punch, he buried Wuxing Feng into the ground. Only half of his body remained to be seen on the surface of the ground.

After that, another seven consecutive strikes. The mother earth burst open.

Wuxing Feng was forced into the underground 3. A river of blood was spilling out from the hole.

Everyone was flabbergasted. Did the outstanding talent of the north get defeated just like this? A fabled figure, a young warrior full of exciting sage, finished just like this?

Without a doubt, Wuxing Feng's reputation was really great. Everyone at present didn't dare to believe it. The undefeatable genius of the north was actually blown into the ground and beaten until he coughed up big mouthfuls of blood.....

"You forced my hand!" An ice-cold voice transmitted from within the cracks. Wuxing Feng was like a wounded beast as he let out a bellow of rage. The mother earth burst open. With bloodstains from head to foot, he rushed to the surface 4.

"Fusing the five phases is still impossible for him, but I can barely fuse two phases. You will pay for this! 5" Wuxing Feng had already lost his calm demeanor. He spread out both of his arms. The left hand with the Fist of Water, the right hand with the Fist of Fire. The water and fire fused, a powerful attack was put forth.

Rumbling sounds filled the heavens and earth, there were thousand layers of stormy waves!

The blue radiance and raging flames enveloped the sky. All of them were thrown at Xiao Chen.

Swish!

Xiao Chen unfolded the Undying Divine Wings and soared into the sky. The corners of his mouth curved into a sneer as he said, "Don't even mention two phases, so what even if you can fuse five phases?"

Unfolding the Undying Divine Wings, Xiao Chen flew against the stream and headed towards the eye of the storm. He executed the Demon Suppression and the Chaotic Patterns towards Wuxing Feng, the source of the fire and water.

Everyone was incomparably shocked. This Xiao Chen was really too intensive, he was actually facing the legendary Quintus Fusion head on. Although there

were only two phases, the power was still incomparably astonishing. Two phases fusion, Wuxing Feng was not very accustomed with it, but he was still capable of bringing out its potential. According to rumors, they said he defeated a formidable opponent with this move. Since then, no one had seen him using this move again.

“Aqua Ignis!”

Wuxing Feng’s shout was transmitted from the eye of the storm. The Fist of Water and the Fist of Fire combined. Xiao Chen and Wuxing Feng shook violently. Their bodies continued to tremble.

“This is it!” Just as Xiao Chen’s voice resounded. His expression immediately changed, because he found that the power he neutralized was only the first wave. Right now, another power was violently surging up.

At the same time, the qi of fire and water lingered under the eye of the storm, under Wuxing Feng’s feet. They transformed into a blue and red light as they lifted his body up from the ground.

The second energy wave surged up violently!

Xiao Chen’s eyes were sharp. He sent a ferocious punch and neutralized the second wave.

However, Wuxing Feng was actually lifted off the ground with the power of fire and water. He was pushed into the sky by the two energies of the Quintus qi. At the same time, his crossed hands burst out with the third wave.

Xiao Chen shouted loudly, God Slayer and Demon Suppression were executed at the same time. Both of his hands were shaking uncontrollably. Two different powers spiralled up and clashed with the third wave.

A brittle noise resounded. The energy wave shattered.

However, the third wave was obviously not the end. It seemed like it was just the beginning. Multicolored radiance circulated all around Wuxing Feng’s body, he was like the incarnation of a Quintus wargod. His battle intent was skyrocketing. He crossed both hands again and burst forth with the fourth wave.

Very clearly, the next wave was stronger than the last!

However, Wuxing Feng also paid a huge price. He was coughing out big mouthfuls of blood. This proved that he was in a terrible shape. This kind of water-fire fusion power was not something that he could completely control at his current state. If he was not forced into a corner, he definitely wouldn't use this rashly.

It was a double-edged sword!

Xiao Chen's expression also became heavy. He didn't know how many more incoming waves were there. He had no choice but to resist with everything he had.

Everyone on the ground was incomparably shocked. Wuxing Feng could actually defy the gravity, they had never heard of it before. If not because a powerful variable like Xiao Chen had appeared in the south and forced Wuxing Feng to launch his most powerful technique, perhaps no one would ever know about this divine ability of his!

The fourth wave finally burst forth. Xiao Chen was surrounded by the energy wave. Left hand with the Chaotic Patterns, right hand with the Demon Suppression. He executed his moves brazenly and neutralized the energy wave again.

It was an intense confrontation. The ground battle changed into a sky battle!

The two in the sky flew higher and higher. They exchanged one blow after another.

Five waves, six waves, seven waves, eight waves.....

Wuxing Feng coughed a big mouthful of blood, and Xiao Chen was also coughing out blood unceasingly. This Wuxing Feng was really too crazy. He already executed eight waves, and yet, he didn't have any indication to stop.

After the ninth wave, Xiao Chen finally felt like he was about to collapse. If it was not because he had advanced to the Ninth Celestial Layer, he might have been crushed a long time ago. This Wuxing Feng was really fanatically crazy!

He was really too powerful among the peers, almost unparalleled!

Too strong!

Xiao Chen was stained by blood all over. The powerful pressure caused traces of blood to seep out from his skin. He had practically become a bloodman. But was still able to fend off the ninth wave.

Nine was equivalent to the highest number, but it did not stop right there. The tenth wave was coming! Xiao Chen almost went crazy. He couldn't shrink back, he mustn't shrink back. He burst out after unfolding his full power.

In the end, he was able to stop the tenth wave!

He coughed out a big mouthful of blood. Xiao Chen's injuries were not light.

Of course, Wuxing Feng paid a bigger price. He was coughing out blood from start to finish. By forcefully using this water-fire fusion forbidden move, his body suffered a grave injury.

The eleventh wave was incoming! 6

Xiao Chen was incomparably exhausted. After detecting the approaching danger, it really made him want to collapse on the spot. This Wuxing Feng was consuming his own life to fight him. This was a move that would end up with both sides suffering.

However, he still couldn't help but admire him. Such a powerful and bizarre attack; one wave after another, stronger than the former. And he actually executed eleven waves.

The invisible truth, the Imprint of Dao was flowing sluggishly in Xiao Chen's mind. His frantic movements gradually became more stable, both of his hands drew a beautiful maneuver. At this most dangerous time, Xiao Chen made his body and mind enter an ethereal state. He displayed a posture entirely different from before. No longer frantic, no longer violent, his body was like the formless cloud and the blowing wind, completely out-of-this-world.

However, at the moment when he was about to attack, the energy that burst out from both his hands was as frenzy as before!

Crumble!

The eleventh wave finally fell apart!

Meanwhile, Wuxing Feng was also at his limit. One after another, terrifying

wounds appeared on his body. He couldn't control his own power and suffered the side effects as a result. It was finally over. He stood high in the sky and faced Xiao Chen. After a light sigh, he said, "They say that... there are a lot of extraordinary talents in the south. Although it is an uncivilized territory, the practitioners here are not weaker than the north's!"

Everyone on the ground looked up at the sky. Since the two young warriors were high in the sky and were very far from the ground, they couldn't hear the conversation between the two. However, they could vaguely tell that this battle was coming to a close!

"On the way to the south desolate region, a young warrior from the south blocked our way and challenged me. The battle ended in a tie, with both of us seriously hurt."

Xiao Chen was incomparably shocked. He asked, "Who is that person?" There was actually a Ninth Celestial Layer young warrior who intercepted Prince Li's party and confronted Wuxing Feng. Such a madman!

"I don't know." Wuxing Feng shook his head and said, "Since I made my public appearance until now, I have never lost once. However, it is beyond my imagination to get one draw and one loss after entering the south for ten short days, it's so frustrating." He fixed his eyes on Xiao Chen and said, "If I did not possess a serious injury and held back at the beginning, I wouldn't have lost today. I will not lose!"

Xiao Chen finally understood why he could barely fend off his attacks with the power of the Eight Celestial Layer. The other party was seriously hurt. If it was not because Wuxing Feng was holding back, he might not have been able to advance to the Ninth Celestial Layer!

"If I am in my peak condition, I will not lose even if you advance to the Ninth Celestial Layer! You won't be able to stand up to me!" Wuxing Feng was very unwilling.

Xiao Chen faced Wuxing Feng and shook his head, "I will not lose!"

At this very moment, Wuxing Feng finally hit his limit. He fell head first from high altitude after the last words were said.

Without waiting for Xiao Chen to move, a green radiance rose from the ground. An old man grabbed Wuxing Feng and retreated.

The spectators knew, this battle was over. Xiao Chen had won!

Everyone was very astonished. The fabled undefeatable Wuxing Feng was actually defeated by Xiao Chen.

Zhuge Ming, Lancelot, Yan Qingcheng, Fairsnow, Katalina, and the others had incomparably complicated expressions. They had witnessed everything and felt very perplexed.

Especially the beauties of the south. Each young lady had a hero in their heart. Wuxing Feng had made his name known in the north and the south since he was a juvenile. He was a peerless young expert with the most epic saga and had unavoidably left a deep impression in their heart. But today, this hero had collapsed right in front of them.....

Chapter 154 – Body Refinement

The outstanding Wuxing Feng of the North was defeated!

A young expert with epic sagas was actually defeated by an unknown youngster in the south. This outcome was really too unexpected. Perhaps a lot of people would find it hard to accept if this was to spread out.

Xiao Chen calmly stood in the sky. After adjusting his breathing for a while, he wiped the blood that was at the corner of his mouth. Then he unfolded the Undying Divine Wings and left at high speed.

Including that old man who could fly, nobody chased after him. This implied that the unwritten rule of the immortal's mainland had great influence. The average older generation experts didn't dare to randomly make their move against the youth generation.

However, if he dared to attack Prince Li in the future, then those older generation experts would certainly kill him without batting an eye. Only... he didn't know if that older generation expert was a Psychic or a Spell Master. If he was a Martial Artist, then it was really too terrifying. After all, he had previously displayed the ability to defy gravity.

Xiao Chen had left. Aeon had a really ugly expression. This was really way out of his expectation. How could Wuxing Feng lose? Why did he lose? It was unimaginable. Wuxing Feng was almost unparalleled among his peers in the North. Except for one or two persons, he was practically invincible.

A youth with long black hair and ice-cold expression silently walked out from an attic. He arrived beside Aeon and said, "Ten days later, I will challenge Xiao Chen."

When Aeon turned his head and noticed that it was 'him', he shook his head and said, "No! Wuxing Feng already lost, you cannot make your move as you wish anymore. After all, Windfeathers, Zhao Chongyang, and the Solitary Sword Demon of the South haven't make their move yet."

On the other side, the elites had complicated feelings. This battle had too great an impact on them. The fall of Wuxing Feng brought about Xiao Chen's glory. A south desolate region expert would suddenly emerge from this.

There was no hero that could remain undefeated, the undefeatable saga of the north was smashed at this point. Xiao Chen's name would thereby spread all over the world. Perhaps there was a need to rerank the top three of the south.

Fairsnow, Katalina, and the other beauties were slightly disappointed. The former genius of the north fell right before their eyes. Like a cloud dispersed by the wind, their dreams had been shattered. That's how it should be, there was no such thing as an undefeatable hero.....

Yan Qingcheng was feeling the most complicated. She really hoped that Xiao Chen would lose, but she didn't want him to sustain a serious injury. She hoped that she could borrow Wuxing Feng's strength to vent her resentment. However, she found that during the course of the fierce battle, her mood was fluctuating violently. It was very hard to understand it clearly.

After unfolding the Undying Divine Wings, he covered several dozen meters in a flash. Xiao Chen returned to his room in the shortest time possible. He grabbed Keke who was snoring like a pig, then he called Tenax and the three skeletons over, requesting them to stand guard outside the door. After that, he began to execute the secret art to heal himself.

Although he defeated the opponent, he was still injured by that crazy Wuxing Feng. Moreover, the condition of the injuries was very grave.

The eleven energy waves formed from the fusion of the Fist of Water and the Fist of Fire were extremely powerful. Even if Xiao Chen had advanced to the Ninth Celestial Layer, it was not easy to fend it off. In the course of the battle, he had continuously spat out seven to eight mouthfuls of blood.

His body burst with a splendid radiance. His skin was flickering with a brilliant lustre. The flow of energy looked as if it had materialized and wrapped his body within. The worldly essence came together from all directions and rushed towards Xiao Chen's body. He was restoring his body with the essence of the sun, the moon, and the plants.

It was possible to see it with naked eyes; specks of green light were drifting around the flowers and plants in the garden, even the trees on both sides of the nearby street were affected. This was a crazy plundering, Xiao Chen's body was like a magnet depriving everything in the surroundings of their life essence.

It lasted until two hours later, his body was pulsing with searing divine flames. The raging inferno ignited with a glorious radiance. Only now did the condition of his injuries stabilize.

The injuries he received this time were very grave. If not because he had once absorbed the essence of a few dragon eggs, which made his vitality far more vigorous compared to ordinary people, he might have been in big trouble this time around. Even his power might be affected and would require a long time to recuperate.

The divinized acupoints seemed to possess infinite vitality and stabilized his wounds in a short time. Xiao Chen let out a long breath as he pushed the door open.

He must recover as quickly as possible. Otherwise who knew what would happen in this Celestial City.

Xiao Chen grabbed Keke and soared into the sky. He unfolded the Undying Divine Wings and flew outside of the Celestial City.

The boundless south desolate region; no signs of human habitation could be seen for thousands of miles away. The entire region was covered by barren hills. The Celestial City was like a resplendent pearl located in the middle of nowhere. It was surrounded by an endless sea of trees.

Outside of the city was an unending mountain wood. Xiao Chen found a mountain with a flat top and landed there.

A waterfall let out a deafening sound from the imposing mountain top ahead, plunging three thousand feet down from the precipice to the foot of the mountain.

On the other three directions, the green mountain-like valley was exuberant, the roar of the wild beasts lingered on, and the figure of the monsters could be seen from time to time.

Xiao Chen had a really serious expression as he told Keke, "I want to train here. Don't let any beasts approach me. You must secure my safety."

The snow-white little critter blinked its eyes without a care in the world. After that, it nodded its head in affirmation. Its snow-white body left a few

afterimages on the flat mountain top as it was sizing up the surroundings.

Xiao Chen relaxed his body. His mind submerged into an ethereal state and he became illusory very quickly. It was if he had blended into the nature and became a part of this mountain.

The snow-white little Keke curiously blinked its glittering big eyes as it looked at the flowers, grasses, and trees unceasingly trembling all around it. Large quantities of plant essence emerged and one green radiance after another lingered on the mountain top.

The exuberant forest was filled with plants everywhere. It was brimming with boundless plant essence. One after another, tiny green specks were drawn into Xiao Chen's body. The vigorous life force circulated in his body, delivering endless amounts of life energy to his flesh, inner organs, and bones.

With the elapse of time, the green life energy from all directions could be seen clearly with naked eyes. A dense green mist lingered on Xiao Chen's surroundings.

Two days had passed. Xiao Chen's injuries were fully recovered and his body was surging with energy, but he still continued to train.

Night-time, the moonlight was hazy. The bright moonlight spilled down. Although the roar of the beasts kept resounding from a distant place, Xiao Chen was still as motionless as the boulder. At this moment, his mind was in peace. The four major techniques, God Slayer, Chaotic Patterns, Demon Suppression, and Death Blow left a mark in his sea of consciousness. It made his comprehension of the four major techniques even more profound than ever.

The Imprint of Dao, hard to carve and polish, impossible to grasp, but one could slowly approach it with an ethereal frame of mind.

This was one kind of comprehension, one kind of experience. Xiao Chen felt that his mental state was rising to a higher level. His body was not moving, yet his mind was moving. It seemed as if the entire world had become brighter.

Every kind of feeling came thick and fast.

Among the bright stars in the sky, a meteor streaked past. It was only for a moment, but it was gorgeous. Xiao Chen's mind was stirred up accordingly. Life

was like a dream, just like the shooting star. The ordinary lifespan was only of a hundred years, it came and went so fast. Compared to the universe, it was really too short.

The transformations of the world passed by quickly throughout the time. Who would still remember that short duration of life? Compared to the everlasting world, that period of life experiences was really too insignificant.

However, it was short yet beautiful. Life was just like a shooting star, it was also possible to shine brightly and advance towards a single direction for all eternity.

Life could also be everlasting!

One must go down the correct path and rouse up to the light of immortality!

Xiao Chen had grasped an Imprint of Dao, he had found the path that he should take and cut open the layers upon layers of dense fog. His mental state had rose yet another flight of steps.

Time passed by quickly. Seven days passed by in the blink of an eye.

The moonlight was like the water. Under the same starry sky, Xiao Chen's mental state was not at all the same.

These past seven days, he couldn't feel the elapse of time. He seemed to have blended into the nature. His body and mind had become one with this flat mountain top. He was connected to this primitive mountain range and became a part of the world.

It seemed as if he could hear the sound of the trees and flowers, as if he could understand the inner voice of the birds and beasts, as if he could feel the pulse of the mother earth. It was as if he had really become one with this thriving world. As if he had already become a leaf, a flower, a tree, or a mountain. It seemed as if he had been sitting there since the ancient times.

The breeze brushed past lightly, every kind of flower fragrance slowly spread out in the forest. Xiao Chen was having the dreams of a butterfly ¹. He didn't know if he had become a part the mountain range, or if the mountain range had become a part of him.

The gentle moonlight was like the water ripple, it made this forest seem as if it had been covered by a layer of indistinct silk. Xiao Chen stood on the summit and looked up at the unlimited starry sky. He seemed to have passed through the bounds of space and had entered that unlimited starry sky.

The radiance of the morning sun broke the darkness.

Rays of golden light spilled on the primitive mountain woods. The unlimited vitality spread out like a ripple. The cries of the apes and the roars of the tigers, the chirps of the birds and the screeches of the insects, the lively world revealed itself before Xiao Chen's eyes. He had already awakened.

He faced upwards and let out a long howl. Xiao Chen's body was like a vast body of water, the vital energy gathered from all directions like rivers running into the sea. The essence of the sun, the moon, and the plants all gathered together. One after another faintly discernible sacred radiances were circulating within Xiao Chen's body. They were replenishing his physical body like a sweet dew, making his inner organs, bones, and flesh to overflow with a layer of splendor.

Since his mental state had already been upgraded, he was tempering his corporeal body!

Endless amounts of worldly essence flowed into his flesh over and over again like a river. In the end, as more worldly essence gathered, the river gradually solidified and became sharp blades as they streaked across his flesh. 2

Sharp pain!

Endure!

It was as if there were countless swords passing through Xiao Chen's flesh and bones unceasingly. His body was tempered over and over, as if his human flesh was being forged into an everlasting body.

Another seven days had passed. The spiritual energy dispersed to all directions.

Like the cloud dispersed by the wind, it was as if nothing had happened at all.

"Let's go, it's about time we return to the Celestial City. You gluttonous little thing, you didn't protect me and actually went to search for spiritual items."

Xiao Chen carried Keke in his arms, and Keke was carrying a pile of reishi mushrooms and old mountain ginsengs in its arms.

“Squeak! Squeak!!” The snow-white little critter protested.

“After the battle, I have been missing for more than ten days. I’m sure something interesting should have happened in the Celestial City.” Xiao Chen unfolded the Undying Divine Wings and flew towards the Celestial City.

Chapter 155 – Rainbow-colored Dragon Cocoon

Celestial City was very old, no one knew in which era it was established. So much so that they didn't even know how it had emerged in the south desolate region. There were a lot of unimaginable epic sagas regarding this place. And due to its grand scale, the sagas spread far and wide, turning it into the most famous city in the immortal's mainland.

When he flew close to the Celestial City, Xiao Chen could keenly feel the breath of vicissitudes. Although he also felt it the first time he arrived at Celestial City, it was far from comparable to now.

In front, it felt like there was an indomitable giant fast asleep over there. Yet, at the same time, it felt like an ancient space had formed into another world.

As if the oceans were surging with dreadful foaming billows, as if the boundless continent was in turmoil, the fluctuations which caused people's heart to beat wildly penetrated the ancient space and rushed towards the present, towards the future.

It was hard to describe this feeling with words. Only by feeling it carefully would one be able to understand this inconceivable pulsation. The Celestial City was like a huge and ancient living body.

After ten odd days of training, Xiao Chen's mental state had climbed a new flight of steps. His spiritual sense became much more condensed and more powerful than before. This was the main reason why he could feel the Celestial City's aura much clearer than before.

Although he was not able to breakthrough the Ninth Celestial Layer, his power still increased by a lot. Especially in regards to his spiritual power. It made him come to a realization substantially different from before. Of course, in regards to the seven days he sacrificed to temper his body, it also improved to a level wherein the ordinary people couldn't begin to fathom. To have knife blades made out of spiritual energy to keep battering the flesh and the bones...

Destruction, restoration, destruction..... so on and so forth. As if his body was a block of divine iron going through numerous revisions to eliminate the useless parts and leave behind the best features. It made his body even more tempered,

as if his blood and flesh had really went through a rebirth. Xiao Chen's corporeal body was turning into a treasure.

That's right, that was not an exaggeration. This was the fact of reality.

If he kept training like this, then his body would change into a treasure, becoming a human weapon not only in name but also in reality. If he could train till the pinnacle, let's not even talk about divine weapons, even going head on against the legendary divine artifacts wouldn't pose any danger to his life.

Xiao Chen firmly believed, if he ran into a Ninth Celestial Layer expert again, his odds of victory were very high. These days, since his spirit and body had been promoted to a higher level, an ordinary expert on the same level would most likely not be his opponent.

Of course, this world was not lacking of genius. Someone like Wuxing Feng couldn't be judged by common sense. Quintus Techniques seemed to be able to contend against the four major techniques. If the other person recovered to the peak state and went through another transformation, he would still be an exceptionally frightening opponent.

Xiao Chen still had a long path ahead of him. He just entered the Ninth Celestial Layer recently. There was still the four major realms; Historia, Zephyrus, Nirvana, and Immortalis. If he wanted to breakthrough the boundary of life and death, he still needed to crash his way through several bottlenecks.

The flourishing Celestial City was bustling with noise and excitement. Looking at it from a bird's eye view, the stream of people was bustling with activities. Every street was a boiling cauldron of voices. The merchants from the north, the pharmacists and hunters from the south, the hermits from the west, all people with many different types of objectives were moving about in this famous city of the mainland.

The warbeast tournament would begin in another two months. The practitioners from all over were gathering at this place.

At the entrance of the grandiose North Style Academy, beautiful girls were entering or exiting non-stop. There was no lack of people like Zhuge Liang and Fairsky pacing back and forth in the vicinity, peeping at the beautiful ladies.

Xiao Chen landed on the courtyard. The three courtyards were extremely quiet. Sweeping the courtyards with his powerful spiritual sense, he quickly found the three skeletons and Tenax. With a flap of his Undying Divine Wings, he arrived at the second courtyard.

The three skeletons felt his aura and pushed the door open. They seemed to be in a very sorry state. The skins they wore as disguise and clothes were utterly squashed, as if they had been through a fierce battle. The spiritual light in their two eyes were also a little dim.

Tenax didn't come out. Hinted by the three skeletons, Xiao Chen crossed a bridge and saw the tough little dragon lying on the ground in a pavilion. It was lying there by itself and licking its wound.

Its injuries were very grave. There was one terrifying wound after another all over its body, as if it was cut by sword-qi. Despite knowing that Tenax wouldn't be endangered with a serious injury, that Tenax could arouse its hidden potential by going through a tribulation, and that it was beneficial for the tough little dragon, Xiao Chen was still a little angry.

Who did this? They actually dared to come to his residence and ruthlessly make their move.

It was easy to tell, the rock garden and pavilions at this place had once been destroyed. A new rock garden and pavilions were replaced in the shortest possible time. Even those flowers and plants were replanted.

The fresh blood flowed all over the place. It dyed the marble floor of the pavilion dark red. He could still smell the stench of blood.

Xiao Chen walked around the pavilion and discovered the seriousness of this matter. Tenax's pair of big eyes were a little dim. It was helplessly using its tongue to lick its forelimb that was nearly cut off. The terrifying wound on its chest was still dripping blood even now. It was easy to imagine how grave was the injury at that time.

If it was any other intellectual beast, they might have died a long time ago.

"Squeak! Squeak!!" Keke shouted angrily. It jumped in front of Tenax and widened its pair of glittering big eyes, as if it was asking something.

Xiao Chen crushed the reishi mushrooms and old mountain ginsengs in Keke's arms and smeared Tenax's wounds with them. He was patiently treating its wounds.

"Creak~!"

A noise resounded from the entrance of the front yard. Fairisky poked his head from behind the door and walked in sneakily. His action was incompatible with his beautiful appearance. He walked over to the central courtyard carefully.

"I need an explanation, what is going on here?!"

The sudden sound caused Fairisky to stiffen due to fear. Soon after, his beautiful face turned into a smile and said, "Brother Xiao, you... are really still alive?"

This guy made people a little speechless. To say such ominous words the moment they met.

"Seriously, is that how you speak to people?"

"Hey, you can't blame me for that. After you beat Wuxing Feng, the genius of the north, you had been missing for more than ten days. The grapevine said that even if you won, you ended up paying a disastrous price and might have perished already."

After missing for more than ten days, this kind of rumors actually started to spread. Xiao Chen was a little surprised.

"Who charged into my place and wounded Tenax? Was it the people of the Mander Family or people sent by Aeon?" After coming to the Celestial City, Xiao Chen had a conflict with the baby girl of the Mander Family. Moreover, he ended up hurting her cousin, Lambda. However, according to the brat's naughty personality, she definitely wouldn't be this cruel. He felt the most likely one to make a move was Aeon.

"It was....." Fairisky was mumbling as if trying to hide something.

"Who was it?" Xiao Chen could tell he was hesitating.

"It was a brat from the Zhuge Family who doesn't know anything and a scum from the Reagan Family." 1

“Zhuge Family?!” Xiao Chen’s face became heavy. He only knew that bastard fatty Zhuge Liang and that drunkard Zhuge Ming from this family.

“This has nothing to do with the fatty. Although due to his discerning eyes and the ability to dig out warbeasts, he has a given position in the Zhuge Family. But according to his bloodline, he cannot be counted as a direct descendant. There was no way for his conduct to be this aggressive. What’s more, he is acquainted with you. That is even more reason why he wouldn’t do something like this.” Fairsky was slowly explaining.

The matter was very simple.

The matter regarding how the fatty had an eye on Tenax was leaked out by his subordinates. Since his insight was always accurate, no matter if it was the people in the Zhuge Family or outsiders, they wouldn’t doubt him. As a result, when this rumor was heard by the direct descendant, Zhuge Kun, he wanted to snatch Tenax before him.

But Zhuge Kun had also heard this; this was the warbeast of a man known as human-shaped Tyrannical Dragon. Those few days the news of Xiao Chen defeating Wuxing Feng was spread to a limited extent, he couldn’t help but feel a little apprehensive towards this kind of young warrior.

However, a few days later when he heard on the grapevine; that although Xiao Chen had won, he ended up dead ultimately due to the seriousness of his injuries. This made Zhuge Kun unable to sit down anymore, because he had once made an old warbeast master from their family with a good eyesight to secretly observe Tenax. And his conclusion was very astonishing; Tenax had an unlimited hidden potential! It might be a young sacred beast not inferior to the Dragon Kings.

This news was really too enticing, what did it mean? It went without saying!

Zhuce Kun was very apprehensive of the Ninth Celestial Layer Xiao Chen. He didn’t dare to make his move rashly. After waiting for more than ten days and since Xiao Chen still didn’t make an appearance, he conspired to take Tenax away secretly.

Hofmann of the Reagan Family had the same goal in mind. On the same night, the two of them met up in this courtyard and began fighting over the little

sacred beast. As a result, two more people arrived. Zhuge Kun and Hofmann of the Reagan Family teamed up to fend off the two on the main street.

In the end, large quantities of very able persons from the Undying Sect hurried over. Soon after, even the governor of the city lord got involved. Only then did this disturbance come to an end quickly.

All of these happened last night. They came quickly and left just as quick.

“Reagan Family.....” Xiao Chen felt that it sounded familiar. He suddenly thought of those few people he met on the ancient road eight hundred miles away from Celestial City. Wasn’t that guy who called himself Kadiva from the Reagan Family? At that time, he wanted to take Tenax away by force. As a result, all of them were killed by Xiao Chen.

“Which troops did the other two plunderers come from?”

“There’s no wind about them. They’re most likely not from Celestial City. They should be experts from the north who came to participate in the warbeast tournament. Otherwise the Undying Sect and the city lord’s governor should have recognized them.” Speaking until here, Fairsky laughed and said, “Now that you are back, I bet some people are in for it, heh-heh...”

Since the older generation experts couldn’t make their move randomly, if Xiao Chen was to make his move while disregarding the consequences, it would definitely cause some people to be scared.

“To be honest, this little sacred beast is really too extraordinary. On that night, a lot of experts wanted to get it. Afterwards, because they couldn’t get it, they changed their goal and wanted to kill this little guy. As a result, it was seriously injured and on the verge of dying. No people thought that it would survive with that kind of wound in the chest. However, it created a miracle.” Speaking until here, Fairsky shook his head and said, “This tough little dragon is really too proud. It didn’t allow anyone to treat its wounds.”

Xiao Chen had returned safe and sound, so rumors would start spreading like wildfire. Fairsky had already sent the experts guarding in the vicinity away.

“Where is that bastard fatty?”

“The fatty feel embarrassed to see you. After all, Zhuge Kun is from his family.”

“Tell me the whereabouts of Zhuge Kun and Hofmann.”

The injuries Tenax received this time were really too grave. After a careful inspection, Xiao Chen found that five of its viscera and six bowels were completely destroyed. According to common sense, that was definitely certain death.

However, it was still clinging on to life. Its current state looked so miserable, so very pitiful.

After Xiao Chen's mental state had been raised by a level, it wouldn't be very easy to irritate him. However, he still felt very angry at the moment. Those people were really too cruel. He welled up with an intense killing intent.

Fairsky had already left. Xiao Chen was very carefully tending to Tenax. He hoped that it could get over this crisis quickly.

Another two days and two night passed. Tenax's vision was lifeless all along. It lowered its head to lick at the wounds. It made people anxious just looking at it.

Xiao Chen thought of a way to save Tenax. Maybe only the dragon's sacred tree could save its life!

Xiao Chen fixed the seven-colored sacred tree at Tenax's chest. After one day and one night of attempts, he finally achieved that “synchronous pulse” with the sacred tree, just like that time on the dragon island. However, his goal this time was not to bring the little sacred tree into his body, but to implant it in Tenax's inner organs.

The glorious radiance glinted, dense mist circulated. Under the flickering of the rainbow-colored radiance, the little sacred tree slowly “flowed” into Tenax's body from the wounds as if it had melted.

With his third eye, Xiao Chen could clearly see the little sacred tree merging with Tenax's inner organs. On the palm-sized tree trunk, there was a black leaf, a white leaf, a jasper leaf, and a golden leaf. They were flickering with a gentle divine radiance and illuminating those destroyed organs brightly.

Keke's big eyes were perfectly round. It was very shocked as it looked on. It didn't understand how the sacred tree could grow in the flesh and blood.

The hazy radiance slowly pushed Xiao Chen's palm away. The rainbow-colored sacred tree completely cut its ties with him. Then it formed an inseparably close connection within Tenax's body.

The pavilion was filled with brilliant lights and vibrant colors. The dazzling radiance was lingering on Tenax's body. One after another ripple-like fluctuations were slowly discharged.

Tenax's entire body was covered with terrifying wounds. Crystal clear liquids actually flowed out at this time. Those were not blood. After a careful observation, those were actually rainbow-colored sticky liquids.

Not long later, the crystal clear liquids covered the surface of Tenax's body. Soon after, something shocking happened. The overflowing liquids actually wrapped Tenax within and formed a rainbow-colored sphere. No matter how they looked at it or thought about it, it looked like a huge cocoon.

A rainbow-colored dragon cocoon!

Chapter 156 – Tenax’s Astonishing Transformation

The rainbow-colored sacred tree and Tenax’s pulsation were synchronized as they fused together. Words failed to describe how miraculous it was. One after another rainbow-colored sticky liquids actually flowed out from those terrifying wounds. A faint fragrance pervaded the air. Just getting a whiff of this fragrance made one’s mind clear.

Just like when a thousand year ginseng ripened, this was a smell that would intoxicate people. When the rainbow-colored dragon cocoon was taking shape, it seemed like it was accompanied by a slight vibration. The base of the pavilion seemed to be shaking lightly.

After everything finally calmed down, the rainbow-colored dragon cocoon emitted brilliant lights and vibrant colors. The strong fragrance made the entire courtyard incomparably fragrant. The gluttonous Keke really wanted to take a bite. After the snow-white little critter revolved around the rainbow-colored dragon cocoon, its glittering big eyes were filled with amazement. Its long eyelashes flickered unceasingly. In the end, the refreshing fragrance made it unable to restrain itself anymore. After stealing a glance at Xiao Chen, Keke quickly grabbed a portion of the dragon cocoon.

The black liquid, white liquid, green liquid, and gold liquid had blended together. The liquid was as sticky as honey and made Keke’s little paw shine with a glistening radiance. The splendor dazzled the eyes. Keke closed its eyes and sniffed that intoxicating fragrance. As if it was drunk, Keke moved its little paw that was smeared with the rainbow-colored liquid towards its mouth.

Something astonishing happened. Under the flickering stream of light, the glorious rainbow-colored liquid vaporized. It actually evaporated from Keke’s little paw, turning into a stream of light mist as it hung in the air. In the end, it blended into that dragon cocoon.

Keke was very unwilling, it still wanted to grab a portion of the crystal clear and sticky liquid, but it was stopped by Xiao Chen. The snow-white little critter seemed to know it mustn’t act recklessly, so it didn’t make any trouble this time and began to watch quietly at the side.

The rainbow-colored dragon cocoon was completely made out of the colorful

liquid. Although it was pressed down on the marble ground of the pavilion, it didn't deform. It was a perfect circular shape. Moreover, it was not contaminated by any dust. The faint radiance had repelled any impurity.

Roughly two hours later, the rainbow-colored liquid began to solidify and changed into a solid rainbow shell. Keke's expression was very rich. Its little mouth immediately turned into an "O" shape. Although this was not the rainbow-colored egg, it looked extremely similar to the rainbow-colored egg. One must know that Keke was born from a genuine rainbow-colored egg. Even Xiao Chen was rather shocked. It was very obvious that Tenax was undergoing an evolution, but this kind of outcome was really too unexpected.

"Crack!"

A brittle sound transmitted outwards. Below the rainbow-colored egg lookalike dragon cocoon, the solid marble ground cracked. Even the base of the pavilion started to shake again.

After everything had calmed down, one multicolored radiance after another rushed forth from the cracks and gathered at the rainbow-colored dragon cocoon.

"Dragon veins!"

Xiao Chen was very shocked. Looking at this materialized spiritual energy, he recalled some kind of legend. Below the mother earth, there was the dragon's vein. Within the veins, there's a dragon. Of course, that was not a real dragon. This dragon was completely made out of spiritual energy.

No matter how much magical power one possessed, it was still very difficult to find the dragon's vein. It was the treasure of the mother earth. It was hard to find one even within millions of square kilometers. Moreover, it was flowing unceasingly. For it to stop at one place for several hundred years was a very rare occurrence.

If the geomancy master 1 could grasp the movements of the dragon's vein and bury the dead at the place where it stopped. Legend said that the later generation of the dead would be blessed with good luck. The legendary imperial vein was related to this legend.

Of course, even if they could predict the dragon's vein movements, it was practically impossible to grasp it. With a little change in topography, it would be rerouted millions of miles away.

Xiao Chen couldn't help but lament. The rainbow-colored treasured tree truly deserved to be called the dragon's treasure. It was actually able to attract the spiritual energy within the dragon's vein.

If the dragons could fuse with the materialized dragon-qi, the benefits were gargantuan. The rainbow-colored sacred tree finally revealed a secret that couldn't be leaked to outsiders.

Without a doubt, there was currently a dragon's vein under the Celestial City. Otherwise, even if the little sacred tree could attract the dragon-qi, it was impossible for it to gather them from thin air without the presence of the dragon's vein.

Although the dragon-qi was very weak, it was just enough for Tenax's evolution. Like a firework that was hanging in the air, the dragon-qi flowed steadily into the rainbow-colored dragon cocoon.

Xiao Chen didn't dare to leave this place. He was afraid that something unexpected would occur. Keke was shocked at first, but soon after, it was brimming with curiosity. It also quietly stood guard at this place.

Time passed like this for one day and one night. The rainbow-colored dragon cocoon produced "cracking" sounds and slowly began to crack. The evolution this time was far quicker than imagined. It was actually over in just twelve hours. Xiao Chen was very expectant. Who knew how much stronger would Tenax become after this evolution. Without a doubt, its life was no longer in danger.

Just at that very instant, the rainbow-colored radiance burst forth. The brilliance caused one to be unable to open their eyes. The rainbow-colored dragon cocoon was shattered. Moreover, the radiance on the dragon cocoon faded away in a split second and the light quickly pulled back. The originally brilliant jade shell was now looking very dull. In the end, it actually disintegrated and turned into ashes.

The rays of light glinted. A white dragon that looked like it was carved out of milky white jade struggled free from the dragon cocoon. Tenax had a huge

transformation, it appeared completely different from before. It changed from black into milky white. It looked as if there were water ripples flowing on its scales. It was glorious and dazzling. 2

Its head looked much more similar to the Ancestral Dragon. That single horn on its head disappeared. It actually grew a pair of milky jade dragon horns that couldn't be differentiated from the genuine Ancestral Dragon's horns.

It still possessed a panther-like body, but the glorious splendor flowing on its body made it known that its body was brimming with formidable power. That terrifying power overflowed just from the slightest movement it made.

The most astonishing thing was that, the tail that was covered by milky white scales was no longer crocodile-shaped. It actually changed into the Ancestral Dragon's tail! This was too astonishing. One must know that the eleven Dragon Kings on the dragon island still had crocodile-shaped tails. For Tenax to have this kind of transformation, it really made one flabbergasted.

Xiao Chen came to a conclusion in that very instant. Tenax had evolved into a Dragon King!

The twelfth Dragon King was born on this very day!

That's right, it was no longer an ordinary dragon. If those eleven Dragon Kings had not undergo any changes after they left the dragon island, then Tenax might be more powerful than them now. Because, it had undergone one evolution ahead of the eleven Dragon Kings, that was, the Ancestral Dragon's tail!

Ancestral Dragon head, leopard-like body, Ancestral Dragon tail. It was covered with milky white scales from head to toe, as if it was made out of the most delicate white jade. To describe it with one word: Perfection!

Keke's tiny mouth was wide open. After rubbing its big eyes in doubt, it ran over there and pinched Tenax's tail. It looked at this one meter long resplendent jade dragon with its eyes suspiciously.

No need to doubt, Tenax had become more beautiful than before. It was no longer unsightly and unremarkable. It could even be said that it was just like the ugly duckling transforming into the white swan.

The only thing that remained the same was its attitude, it became prouder

than ever. Its eyes were incomparably sharp. It seemed to be very satisfied with the evolution this time. With a light step, it transformed into a white light and leapt more than ten meters away. Its speed was extremely fast.

Xiao Chen walked over there and placed his hand on Tenax's panther-like body. He carefully inspected the pulse within its body. The terrifying energy pulse was more forceful than he had imagined. It was like a raging ocean wave which made the radiance circulate on the surface of its body like water ripples.

Ninth Celestial Layer! 3

Tenax's power was actually comparable to a Ninth Celestial Layer expert!

When they were on the dragon island, those little Dragon Kings were only around Sixth or Seventh Celestial Layer. After one year, if they hadn't undergo any changes, then Tenax should have surpassed them already.

But that possibility was very low. Those eleven little dragons should have progressed considerably. After all, their bloodline was extraordinary. It was impossible for them not to improve.

Xiao Chen had a feeling, although Tenax's evolution this time was very shocking, it was impossible to throw off the eleven Dragon Kings too far behind. It was very possible that the eleven Dragon Kings had already reached the Ninth Celestial Layer. It was hard to say if Tenax would be much stronger than them.

Xiao Chen couldn't help but lament. The dragons were indeed a terrifying race. Their innate ability was not something that any other race could compare to. One must know that Tenax and the eleven Dragon Kings were only born a little more than a year ago!

It was very obvious that Tenax had become very powerful. If paired with the dragon martial skill it had grasped, it might not fall far behind the genius of the north, Wuxing Feng.

Just at this time, the gentle rainbow-colored light flashed. The rainbow-colored sacred tree emerged from Tenax's body. Keke was very happy. Lightly waving its little paw, the treasured tree flew over there. It turned the sacred tree up and down, trying to take a good look at it.

"You must work hard, don't sleep all day long. Otherwise the sacred tree will

lose its value in your hand.”

“Squeak...!” Keke protested resentfully.

Actually, Xiao Chen already knew that the snow-white little critter had a special training method. Sleeping was equivalent to training. It was also improving all these time, but it just didn’t have the opportunity to show off.

Just like usual, Keke placed the treasured tree on the cracks in hope of drawing in the dragon-qi. At this moment, the spiritual energy still hadn’t completely dispersed. However, just at that very instant, the little critter cried out in fear and quickly used the confinement technique to seal the little sacred tree. They only saw a dragon-shaped light winding around the treasured tree, trying to pull it underground.

Xiao Chen hastily rushed over there and used his palm to slam at the cracks, dispersing the dragon-qi. From this, it could be seen that there was a certain risk to draw the dragon-qi. If they were careless for a moment, they might lose the treasured tree.

What made Xiao Chen most regretful was that, due to the commotion that night, the white-shelled tortoise that was locked up in the house had escaped. He was unable to find any traces of it. 4

After resting and reorganizing for a day. Xiao Chen prepared to take Keke and Tenax to go out the next day. But just at this time, Xiao Chen felt that it was a bit troublesome. No matter how they looked at it, Tenax looked like a genuine Dragon King. If they just went out like this, it would inevitably attract too much unwanted attention. One must know that this was not just any ordinary intellectual beast. It was a Dragon King! If this news were to spread out, it would have too great of an impact.

In the end, something surprising happened. Tenax’s body actually let out “snapping” sounds and the joints all over its body moved. It actually transformed into a one meter long milky white imperial horse.

It took the shape of a fine horse. Except that it was covered by milky white scales from head to toe, as well as that pair of Ancestral Dragon Horns, it looked like a very fine divine steed.

Tenax actually had this kind of ability, it was out of Xiao Chen's expectation.

However, despite this, the milky white imperial steed still attracted a lot of attention on the main street.

In the bustling educational street, a lot of students were among the stream of people. Xiao Chen wandered on the main street leisurely. This time, Tenax had profited from a disaster and undergone a major evolution. Because of this, Xiao Chen's anger and killing intent already waned. He had already calmed down, but he wouldn't let Zhuge Kun and that scum from the Reagan Family off that easily.

"Let's go find that son of a b— from the Reagan Family first!" He already heard from Fairsky that the scum from the Reagan Family was a student from the White Elk Academy. Pushing his way through the stream of people on the educational street, he quickly arrived at the renowned White Elk Academy of the Celestial City.

The ancient perimeter wall was brimming with the vicissitudes of time. The lofty gate of the White Elk Academy was twenty meters tall. These ancient buildings had eight hundred years of history. They already existed since the academy was founded.

Even though many students in the North Style Academy knew about Xiao Chen because of the battle with Lambda last time, it didn't mean that the students of the White Elk Academy knew about him. After all, only a minority of the students from the White Elk Academy went to watch the battle last time.

Seeing Xiao Chen standing in front of the gate with an imperial horse, a lot of students stopped to watch.

"What is this dude trying to do? No matter how you look, it seems like he wants to pick a fight."

"It really looks like he wants to intercept a student in our academy here. Who knows how much gold coins he received to come and give vent to other people's anger."

Hearing the student's discussion, Xiao Chen was a little speechless. Could it be that people frequently invited experts to come and deal with the students of the White Elk Academy?

What made Xiao Chen most surprised had yet to come. A rather handsome guy walked over and talked intimately, "Brother, I can tell you are a super expert from a single glance. You must be at least a Fifth Celestial Layer. Who are you planning to beat today? How about I introduce a business to you? A lot of people here really want to take care of that guy called Fairsky. This guy frequently comes and harasses the beautiful girls. If you can take care of the pretty boy, earning a hundred gold coins would not be a big problem. Oh, that's right... if you can take care of the Zhuge pig head while you're at it, you might be able to earn a lot more."

Xiao Chen didn't know whether to laugh or to cry. Could it be that becoming a hired gun was already one kind of professions? Interesting... those two guy's reputation was really that bad.

"Do you know Hofmann of the Reagan Family?"

"Ah, you mean that scum of the Reagan Family? Go ahead! Beat him until he's half alive. That guy is the dreg of society. He raped quite a number of beautiful female students before. He even has a few lives in his grasp."

"Then, can you tell me where he is?"

"He hasn't shown his face for the past few days, but I know he frequently goes to a certain place. There's a place called the 'Paradise Spa' in the city walls. He goes there frequently to past time."

Xiao Chen left this place quickly. That student behind him palmed his fist 5 excitedly and muttered to himself, "There's actually someone who dares to touch that scum Hofmann. If only he could beat him half to death. Oh, this person must definitely be influential!"

The Paradise Spa was very well-known in the Celestial City. This place was filled with fine woods, and the pavilions were neatly decorated. With a faintly discernible mist, the entire place looked fantasy-like. The scenery was picturesque. The three hills in Celestial City were located at this place, although all of them were only one to two meters tall. The surroundings were enclosed by a wooden fence. The Paradise Spa occupied a wide space. It was without a doubt, the property of the city lord.

Xiao Chen quickly arrived at the Paradise Spa. The ones who came to this place

were wealthy and respectable people. They didn't allow anyone with house pets to enter. Xiao Chen ran into an acquaintance at the mountain entrance. It was Liu Yu, the third son of city lord Liu Daoming. They once stood on the same ground to defy Aeon.

"Haha... so it was brother Xiao. It felt so great when Wuxing Feng was defeated. I watched that battle from beginning to end. If it was anyone else, I definitely wouldn't let them bring along a warbeast, but for you, I will make an exception. Oh? Is this a legendary imperial steed? Could it be a sacred beast?" Liu Yu looked at Tenax doubtfully.

"How can it be a sacred beast. It is only an intellectual beast that's a little stronger."

Just at this time, within the Paradise Spa, a few old men just came out from the piping hot spa. After Liu Yu saw them, he faced Xiao Chen and said, "Brother Xiao, there's a few guests I must personally entertain today. I will drink with you some other day."

"Alright, you go do your thing."

"You all remember this, if Lord Xiao comes here in the future, everything will be free of charge. Moreover, you must take him to the VIP area." After he gave the instruction to the people at the entrance, Liu Yu wore a respectful expression and went to greet the few elders that were taking a walk.

The steam was plentiful at the Paradise Spa. The fragrant flowers and plants were exuberant. Each hot spring was separated by trees and vines. Many halls could be seen everywhere.

Xiao Chen entered with Tenax and Keke. Turning left and right, he entered the so-called VIP area. Just at this time, he suddenly found a few acquaintances. It was actually Yan Qingcheng and Fairsnow. They were currently soaking in the hot spring among the floras in the front. The refreshing fragrance of flowers directly assailed his sense of smell. At the same time, he could hear the whispered conversation of the girls.

"Did I take the wrong turn?" Xiao Chen felt that this situation was far from good. How did he end up walking into the female spa?

\

Chapter 157 – Paradise Spa

The faintly discernible mist, the fragrance of flowers. The Paradise Spa was filled with rarely seen flowers. Lots of vines intertwined together to form a natural screen which separated each VIP area.

Xiao Chen had indeed crossed the boundary. When he saw Yan Qingcheng and Fairsnow, who were covered with towels, he knew that the situation was far from good. Fortunately, his ability was profound. With a flap of his Undying Divine Wings, he quickly flew more than ten meters away.

Keke and Tenax looked at each other in dismay. They lowered their heads and turned back.

Fortunately, nobody took notice as this occurred. Otherwise a huge disturbance would arise.

After Xiao Chen took off the clothes and soaked in the hot spring, a beautiful maid came and delivered a good wine. This was a beastkin, her fair skin was as tender as the water, and her pair of cute ears were hairy. Behind her was a fox tail. After the beautiful beastkin maid lightly put the wooden tray with the good wine on the hot spring, she asked with a gentle voice, “Do you need any other service?”

“Hm?” Xiao Chen was shocked, but when he looked at the maid’s watery big eyes, he immediately had a flash and said, “No need.”

“Oh... very well, if you need anything, just pull this bell rope. We will rush over and satisfy any request.” The maid twisted her waist and left.

The mist was hazy. Xiao Chen was soaking in a warm hot spring, leaning against the wall while looking upward, taking a whiff of the refreshing flowery fragrance, and taking a sip of the wine on the wooden tray. He felt very much relaxed. This was indeed one kind of pleasure.

“Let’s relax the body first. After that, we’ll go find the scum to settle the score.”

It must be mentioned that the arrangements of the Paradise Spa were very pleasing to the eyes. With the hills, the gardens, and the flowery fragrance, it

was just like a Pure Land in the bustling Celestial City.

One must know that with the mist lingering on like this, it was very hard for those delicate flowers to survive. But this place was filled with all kinds of flowers, the fine woods were lush and verdant, and the vines folded over in layers.

The excellent wine was fresh and tasty, Xiao Chen seldom had this kind of opportunity to relax. The pores all over his body had opened up, his entire body felt incomparably relaxed. For a long time now, his body was always in an extremely stiff state. When he was drinking by himself at this moment, he actually felt a little drunk in the hot spring.

Right at this moment, he thought about many, many things. He arrived at the world of immortals very unexpectedly, what path should he take from hereafter?

He really wanted to return to the mortal world. He longed for his parents, his friends, and the people he was familiar with. Even when he thought about a few of his enemies in the olden days, he no longer thought that they were that hateful anymore.

Just, how to return to the mortal world? The information he got after arriving at this world made him feel powerless. Even after breaking through the bounds of life and death, after reaching the realm of Immortalis, it was still impossible to open a spatial rift to the mortal world.

With the power to open a spatial rift, going from the mortal world to the world of immortals was like going along with the flow. But going from the world of immortals to the mortal world was like going against a torrential current. The difficulty of the two was not on the same level.

“Even if it is impossible, I still want to go back and take a look.” When Xiao Chen entered the world of immortals, he was always advancing towards this direction. That was what had been driving him to train so hard, he hoped that one day he could make it to the Immortalis realm.

Like Lan Nuo who had stopped aging and achieved immortality at the age of thirty, not even one had appeared in a millennium. She was truly an extremely gifted fairy. Especially in the mortal world where the spiritual energy was lacking, to be able to reach this realm under that kind of circumstances, it made Lan Nuo

even more otherworldly. She was a peerless genius not only in name but also in reality.

Xiao Chen did not have extravagant hope that he could breakthrough to the Immortalis realm at the age of thirty. The time limit he set upon himself was before reaching forty five years old. This was already a goal too high to reach for any ordinary people.

Xiao Chen had no choice but to be strict with himself. He was already twenty one years old, and his parents were already nearly fifty years old. Who knew if his parents would still be in this world twenty four years later. He was not allowed to waste too much time.

The next twenty four years were a human's most important years. It was the time when they entered the middle age. Who knew if that girl in the mortal world would already become other people's wife during this time?

Just like flowers were perishable, young beauties would also grow old.

The romance they once shared, it would be mercilessly shattered with the passage of time. Xiao Chen didn't have any extravagant hope. If she still remembered a guy called Xiao Chen after twenty four years later, he would be contented.

"Twenty four years... I sacrificed my youth to train, but I still can't see the ending."

Xiao Chen had a forlorn feeling. He helplessly heaved a sigh. Those clear eyes, those long eyelashes, that sincere smile, that delicate rear view, they were slowly getting further apart, slowly fading away. Xiao Chen exerted his strength to pull the long hair, then he suddenly lifted his head.

"I'm just bringing trouble to myself. I just need to know that I liked her once, that's more than enough." It must be mentioned that Xiao Chen was strong-willed. He quickly casted his downcast mood away.

"I hope you can find a man who you can truly trust." Xiao Chen's eyes seemed to cut across space-time. As if he could see that girl again.

After that, he pushed the wooden tray away and began to train in the hot spring. If people saw him like this, they would definitely say he was a battle

maniac.

Keke was also soaking in the hot spring comfortably. And Tenax also seemed to feel relaxed. They exposed a satisfied expression and swam in the hot spring. In the end, Keke swam over to the wooden tray. It grabbed the wine cup and gulped down the wine. As a result, the snow-white little critter choked until its big eyes gleamed with tears. It threw the wine cup on the spot and ran away from the hot spring like a wisp of smoke.

Xiao Chen did not fully indulge himself in training. He quickly detected someone was getting near. It was that beastkin girl with hairy ears.

“My lord, I’m here to deliver the wine.”

“Just put it over there.”

When the maid put the tray on the water, Xiao Chen asked, “Is that scum from the Reagan Family here?”

“This... Are you talking about Master Hofmann?”

“Yes, I’m talking about that scum.”

“This...” The maid was hesitating, it seemed like she was having a hard time deciding whether to answer or not.

“Don’t worry, I will not cause havoc here. From your expression, I can already tell that the scum is here.” Xiao Chen’s words were very calm, but it still gave people an extremely forceful feeling as he said, “Go tell him that I will not look for him, instead he should to bring his ass here!”

“You..... You sure?” The maid felt her heart thumping like crazy. Just who was this guy? He was actually so arrogant. That was the scion of the Reagan Family, just how many people would dare to provoke him?

“That’s right, just say it like this!”

“What if he asks for your name?”

“He knows who I am. If he don’t know, then he’s screwed!”

“Oh... alright... I will go immediately.” The maid lost her head out of fear and ran away. She felt that this guy must definitely be a madman.

When the maid arrived at the VIP area seven, a few hedonistic son were currently teasing a few beautiful women in the hot spring.

“Is Master Hofmann still around?” The beastkin maid was fully aware of these hedonistic son’s bad habits. She was apprehensive of these scions who made such brazen moves in full daylight.

“Heh-heh, so it is a beastkin chick. Come and accompany this young master.” A little fatty, who harbored malicious intentions towards the beastkin maid, smiled and said, “This young master is fond of a woman from a different tribe.”

The beastkind maid quickly lowered her voice and said, “Master Zhuge, someone is looking for Master Hofmann, do you know if he’s still around?”

“Heh-heh...” A few hedonistic sons laughed at the same time.

A few flirtatious girls also giggled. One of the girls pouted and said, “He’s in the room.”

Not far from the hot spring, there was a small wooden house. The house was covered by vines and looked to be in harmony with nature. A moaning sound was transmitted from the small wooden house. Just listening to it made one flush with excitement.

“Hofmann, someone is looking for you.” The little fatty harbored malicious intents and shouted loudly.

“Don’t disturb me!” An impatient voice transmitted from the small wooden house.

“You are really not coming out? It’s a beastkin chick. If you don’t come out, I will take her.”

“Bang!”

The door of the small wooden house was pushed open abruptly. A blondie which a wrapped bath towel around himself, hastily walked out with large strides. He had a lot of body hair. The ones in his thigh and chest were nearly one inch long. They were thick and rather scary. With his lofty build, he looked like a gorilla.

“Tsk, tsk. It really is a beastkin chick. Haha...” Hofmann laughed out loud. He

quickly walked over. Behind him was a black-haired girl with messy clothes. A single glance was enough to tell that she was a charming lady. When she twisted her waist, it was moving about like a water snake. Her entire face was filled with lust.

“Master Hofmann, s... someone wanted you to go over there.”

“Huh? What’s going on?!” Hofmann immediately stopped smiling. His eyes became vigilant and asked, “What is it?”

“This... I do not know. He asked you to go over there. At VIP area two.”

Listening until here, Hofmann thought about it carefully and asked in a deep voice, “What did he tell you? Recite everything he said word by word.”

After he heard the beastkin maid recite the words, Hofmann became furious and shouted, “Mother f—! Just who is that arrogant bastard! He actually dared to call me a scum and make me go over there? Is he tired of living?! He actually dared to speak conceited nonsense. That mother f— has gall!”

From the hot spring came the laughter of the little fatty, “Your moral standing is really the worst. You have offended so many people that you actually don’t know who it is.”

Hofmann glared at him and said, “Zhuge Kun, stop making sarcastic remarks. You did just as much bad deeds! Not only two or three times, instead people are coming to get back at you almost everyday. Can you still even remember clearly how much trouble you’ve caused?”

From the hot spring, a young man holding a pretty girl in his arms said, “This guy is indeed very arrogant. If he dared to speak like this, he probably has the backing of some major power. I think it might be someone you guys had provoked recently.”

“I have provoked too many people, how am I supposed to know who this is.” Hofmann cursed fiercely and put on a bathrobe. Then he said to the brothers in the hot spring, “Come, let’s go and take a look together. We will teach this bastard a lesson.”

After pushing away those hot girls, the few of them walked away from the hot spring and headed towards Xiao Chen’s VIP area two in a group.

“Isn’t this bastard too arrogant? He actually dared to ask me, Hofmann, to drop in and apologize. Is he tired of living?!” He hadn’t arrived, but his voice already transmitted over. With the thick hair exposed in his chest, it made the lofty Hofmann look like a gorilla.

Xiao Chen took a glance at him. Then he found an acquaintance. Among the four of them, there was a man with a barely passable appearance. That was the Mander Family’s baby girl Katalina’s so-called seventh brother. This guy had once invited Xiao Chen to the Mander Family as a guest at the warbeast street with a rather haughty attitude. As a result, Xiao Chen didn’t go and it led to a series of events.

Xiao Chen did not respond to Hofmann, he looked at Katalina’s seventh brother and asked, “We have met before, how shall I address you?”

“Austrian.” For some reason, Austrian did not reveal Xiao Chen’s identity.

“Announce your name one by one.” Xiao Chen’s words were very indifferent. He carried a commanding tone, just like a general rebuking the new recruits.

“Who the f— do you think you are?!” Don’t you dare talk so big, you want to die?!” Among the four, a black-haired man with many freckles revealed a sinister expression and said, “Remember my name, it’s Lidong Bo. I am not someone you can provoke, if you don’t have anything important, you better stop acting like our boss.”

Speaking until here, he took a step forward. It seemed like he wanted to slap Xiao Chen who was still in the hot spring.

“Slap!”

The slap resounded clearly. It was a big slap in the face, but it was not Lidong Bo who did it. Instead, Xiao Chen ruthlessly slapped Lidong Bo on the face, causing him to splash across and drop into the hot spring with a plop.

“How dare you!” After Lidong Bo fell into the water, he quickly jumped up and shouted with rage, “You f— — bastard, you are dead for sure this time.”

Xiao Chen did not respond to him. He faced Hofmann and company, then he said, “Announce your names by yourselves.”

“F—, just who do you think you are? The great me is called Hofmann.” The tall Hofmann repressed his anger and stepped into the hot spring. He sat opposite of Xiao Chen. He had incurred the hatred of many people. He wanted to see what this know-it-all could do.

“I am called Zhuge Kun.” The little fatty was very easy-going as he slowly stepped into the hot spring.

Xiao Chen found it quite amusing. How did the Zhuge Family produce this many fatties? This one had outdone both Zhuge Liang and Zhuge Ming combined, his waist measurement, that is. The excess fats on his cheeks trembled with every slight movement. Xiao Chen originally wanted to go find this guy, but he never thought that he would be together with Hofmann. This could save a lot of trouble.

Lastly, Austrian also entered the hot spring.

Among the four of them, Lidong Bo and Hofmann were the most enraged. That guy directly in front of them was too arrogant. They really wanted to beat him up immediately.

“Boy, if you want to court death, this is not how you do it.” Hofmann stared at Xiao Chen coldly. He was carrying a hint of contempt. As long as he gave the order, more than ten of his bodyguards would rush in immediately and turn Xiao Chen into mincemeat. This was the reason of his confidence.

“I really don’t understand. This gold-haired gorilla is so arrogant, how did he live until now.” Xiao Chen heaved a sigh. It almost caused Hofmann to die from an excess of anger, he almost caused him to choke to death.

“F—!” Hofmann really wanted to jump over there immediately, but he endured and smiled brutishly, “Very well, I will play with you for now.”

“Keke, go and catch the guys outside. Hm?” Xiao Chen stared blankly for a moment. He found that the snow-white little critter had disappeared from who knows when. He felt that something bad was about to happen. This little thing was the best at causing trouble. Just where did it go in the blink of an eye? The next door seemed to be where the beauties were soaking. Could it be that it had ran over there to stir up trouble?

At the hot spring next door. A few beauties were in a fluster as they surrounded the snow-white little critter floating on the water. 1

“Catch it, quick! Just a little bit more...”

“Over there, don’t let it go!”

“Aww, I almost caught it.”

The snow-white little critter was having a lot of fun in the water. It caused the few girls to run and jump all over the place. They disregarded their dignity and surrounded it.

Those snow-white slender thighs, those smooth delicate arms, those thin and curvy waists, the towels dancing in the air, and those soft boobies swaying left and right, it was a sexually arousing scene.

If a man was standing at this place, he would definitely not be able to bear it. If he did not die from blood loss, he would faint from overexcitement.

Pitiful Keke, it had gulped down two big mouthfuls of wine due to curiosity. As a result, its throat was burning. It escaped from the VIP area two and wanted to find some gourmet food to press down that spicy hot taste of the wine. It unexpectedly came to the few beautiful ladies’ hot spring and immediately cleaned up their desserts. But as a result, it caused the group of girls to surround it. All of them had stars in their eyes. They looked like they would embrace the little critter with all their might as soon as it was caught.

The snow-white little critter could differentiate between good and bad, it knew that they didn’t have any evil intention. On the contrary, they seemed to be very fond of it. But precisely because of this, it made the little critter more afraid of them. It didn’t want to use its divine ability to deal with them, so it was running all over the hot spring.

Only Yan Qingcheng did not participate in this, because she recognized Keke and knew who it belonged to. She rolled her beautiful eyes a few times, then the corner of her mouth gradually curved up.

“Plop!”

“Kya! How did I suddenly fly up and fall into the water?”

Keke still made its move in the end. After using the confinement technique to seal the movements of two girls, it ran back to VIP area two like a wisp of smoke.

Chapter 158 – Hoodlum meets Madman

It should be mentioned that Hofmann really did a lot of bad things. Murder and arson, occupying people's properties by force, just a little bit more and he would also have done away with human life. He had done all kind of misdeeds. It seemed like people dropped in to seek revenge almost everyday.

The event from a few days ago — regarding how he received the news at the last minute and went to fight over Tenax — he didn't take it to heart. Since he didn't succeed, and he wasn't the only one who did it, he didn't take this action seriously. If only he knew who this “stubble” in front of him really was.

“Who the f— are you?” Hofmann had a ferocious expression. He was used to oppressing others and was unable to tolerate other people speaking normally in front of him. Only by making people nodding their heads and bowing before him could it be considered normal.

“Your mouth is awfully repulsive!” With a flash of light, a sharp and clear noise resounded. A clear slap mark appeared on Hofmann's face. He almost fell into the hot spring. That was a strong slap on the face.

“F—! You dare to hit me?! This mother f— is courting death!” Hofmann could also be considered an expert. Exuvia Fourth Celestial Layer was enough to let him sweep the floor with ordinary practitioners. Getting a big slap on the face like this by others, it was simply a humiliation. His face completely distorted as he pounced towards Xiao Chen very fiercely.

Just what was Xiao Chen's power level? Exuvia Ninth Celestial Layer! When compared to Hofmann, the difference was just like night and day. Xiao Chen's impression of this guy was an all time low. He just leaned his back on the wall of the reservoir and raised his leg to send out a kick. Layer upon layer of the leg's afterimages flashed before Hofmann's eyes. It made him startled and fearful. He was actually unable to dodge with the power of Fourth Celestial Layer.

Hofmann was kicked straight in the face. He got a nosebleed immediately as he was sent flying backwards. With a “plop”, he fell into the hot spring. Hofmann was tearing up due to the pain. It felt as if his nose had shattered into pieces. He

almost couldn't open his eyes.

"Mother f—! Someone come and chop that guy into pieces for me!" Hofmann shouted loudly. When had he ever suffered this kind of loss, it was always the other way round. For this to happen today was something he could never imagine.

"Someone come and kill this scoundrel!" Lidong Bo at the side also shouted loudly. If not because Hofmann asked him to restrain himself, he would have done that ages ago. Just previously he had also received a big slap in the face. When he was calling for help, he cursed inwardly: This f— Hofmann, serves you right. Just now when the great me got thrashed, you made me restrain myself. Trying to pretend to be a big shot, now that you've shamed yourself, serves you right!

In that instant, more than ten human figures rushed in. At the same time, Keke sneakily returned. Looking at how lively this place was, it thought those few witches had sent people over to catch it. Just when it wanted to run away, Xiao Chen called out to it.

Xiao Chen originally wanted to ask Tenax to take care of those people, but once he notice that Keke had returned, he shouted, "Come back. Seal these people's movement for me and let them soak in the hot spring. He momentarily forgot to ask where did it go and if it caused any trouble.

Rainbow-colored light flickered. More than ten human figures were fixed in place, then they were thrown into the hot spring. Soon after, an invisible power pushed their bodies under the water. The bubbles rose to the surface unceasingly. Soaking in the hot spring had somehow turned into drinking the hot spring.

Xiao Chen leisurely leaned against the wall of the reservoir. He poured the good wine and drank it by himself.

"Just who are you?" Hofmann's face had changed. This avenger was clearly different from the others. His power was deep and unmeasurable. In addition, he had this kind of bizarre little critter. He looked like someone important.

"You still don't know who am I?!" Xiao Chen sneered and said, "Didn't you try to steal my sacred beast a few days ago?!"

“You... You are Xiao Chen?!” Hofmann’s expression changed yet again. He looked at the milky white divine steed at the side. Then he looked at Xiao Chen doubtfully. This divine steed might be a very fine horse, but it was definitely not that tough little dragon. And precisely because of this, he had never linked this person’s identity to Xiao Chen.

Xiao Chen seemed to have noticed his doubt. He said in a deep voice, “You guys killed my sacred beast, one with unlimited potential! Say... how will you guys compensate for this?”

“You... talk nonsense! How could that be a sacred beast? It was only an ugly lesser dragon!” Hofmann’s tone was no longer as unyielding as before. He didn’t dare to throw up any more vulgar words from his mouth. He had heard of this person before his eyes. A lot of people had been discussing about him these days. He was a madman who had even made Wuxing Feng crawl on the floor. He was definitely a super dangerous person.

Xiao Chen’s face twitched due to anger, he shouted coldly, “An ugly lesser dragon? Then why did you guys try to take it away forcibly?!” Speaking until here, his palm immediately moved. The lofty Hofmann was slapped in the face and was sent flying away. He fell into the water with a plop.

At the side, Lidong Bo’s face was deathly pale. He really didn’t expect that they would have provoked the legendary human-shaped Tyrannical Dragon. That was a Ninth Celestial Layer freak! Besides, just by looking at his family background, he couldn’t even be compared with Hofmann and didn’t have anything to rely on.

“You mother f—!” After Hofmann fell, he got so angry that his face turned completely ashen. After he got up, he pointed at Xiao Chen with his index finger and said, “Mother f—, I will admit defeat today. But I will not let it end like this, just you wait!” After he finished talking, he turned around and wanted to leave.

Xiao Chen sent another slap to his face. The rays of light flashed through and Hofmann was hit again. His cheeks were swelling profusely as his sorry figure fell into the hot spring.

“You dare to act like a hoodlum? You dare to play harsh and unreasonable? You don’t have enough qualifications!” Xiao Chen said coldly, “Who said you can leave? Without my permission, don’t you dare take another step!!”

Hofmann had completely lost his face in front of his bad friend. He was practically going to be driven mad. He cursed again after he stood up, “This mother f— is courting death! I am from the Reaga-”

Xiao Chen did not hold back this time. He violently waved his hand and a stream of light flashed through. Hofmann was pulled in front of Xiao Chen by an invisible power. Xiao Chen grabbed him and slapped him ten times in succession. Hofmann’s face was swelling profusely. It became purplish and congested.

“You dare to use vulgar words to talk to me? Are you tired of living...?”

At the side, Lidong Bo, Zhuge Kun, and Austrian broke out in cold sweat. This person was really too aggressive. He actually grabbed the scion of the Reagan Family like a little chick and beat him. His savagery was higher than the sky.

They did this kind of things quite frequently. Mostly to humiliate the weak or the victims. These people couldn’t do anything to them because their status and power were far below them.

This was the first time they saw someone as wild as Xiao Chen. When all was said and done, the Reagan Family was still an ancient family that was ranked high in the Celestial City. They had great influence in the south. And he was actually beating up their scion just like this. Seriously too savage.

“@#%¥” Hofmann was extremely furious, but once he saw Xiao Chen’s ice-cold gaze, he abruptly repressed his anger. He could feel the breath of death enveloping him. This guy in front of him was really too terrifying. That kind of ice-cold gaze penetrated into his very bones.

Without a doubt, the guy before him was a madman. He didn’t care the least about the family behind his back. If he dared to utter a hoot one more time, he might be killed ruthlessly!

“Why did you stop cursing? Go on, I dare you!”

“I.....” Hofmann became completely listless. His heart was deeply penetrated by fear. This Xiao Chen was absolutely not a Buddhist. One wrong word and he would be killed. How would he dare to continue speaking conceited nonsense. “You asked what’s to be done right? I want to settle the misunderstanding from a few days ago with you privately.”

“Misunderstanding? Hmph!” Xiao Chen snorted coldly and pushed him away. Hofmann fell into the water in a short while, but this time, he did not dare to act rashly after getting up.

“You, come over here!” Xiao Chen reseated and drank a cup of good wine. Then he beckoned Lidong Bo to come over with his finger.

This behavior made Hofmann and Lidong Bo want to curse him: Such arrogance, did you think you are a big shot in Celestial City?

Lidong Bo was scared witless as he walked over there. He was not as arrogant as he was before. The person before his eyes must be the fiercest among the fiercest. If he had known earlier, he absolutely wouldn't be the first to stir up trouble.

Xiao Chen lightly patted his face and said, “Weren't you trying to slap my face earlier? Didn't you say I was courting death? How come you are so scared now?”

“Bang!”

Xiao Chen sent Lidong Bo flying with a kick, causing a big splash.

“Come over here!”

Lidong Bo's face was both pale and green as he walked over again.

“Slap!”

Xiao Chen sent him flying again with another slap. Only after a long time later did Lidong Bo get up again.

Xiao Chen was not trying to bully the weak, nor was he being ruthless. The main reason was that none of these people had good personalities. Hofmann usually spent his days raping female students, murdering for money and setting fire on people's properties. He had done all kinds of bad deeds. There was no way his gang of scoundrels could be any better than him. If not because he felt apprehensive, Xiao Chen would have already hanged these dregs of society at the street for all to see.

He felt that he was already being lenient by doing only this much. There was no reason to show mercy to such utterly heartless people. No longer paying any attention to Lidong Bo, Xiao Chen raised his head and drank a cup of good wine.

Then he beckoned Zhuge Kun and said, "It's your turn, fatty."

His figure was not tall. This Zhuge Kun was like a landmine, every time he walked, his fatty meat would tremble. He wore a smile across his entire face and said, "Brother Xiao, last time was really a misunderstanding. But don't worry, I will definitely satisfy your request."

"Stop talking nonsense. My warbeast is dead, what can you use to repay me, how can you make me satisfied?!" Xiao Chen's goal was to teach these hedonistic sons a lesson. Even if he had to make up a lie, he wanted to beat them up.

At the side, Tenax was looking at everything coldly. If not because Xiao Chen was currently putting them in order, it would have already rushed over there itself.

Brother Xiao, listen to me....." Zhuge Kun was from the direct line of the Zhuge Family, his status was very extraordinary. When had he ever spoke in such a servile manner? But since he was trapped at this place today, he had no choice but to act like this. He must immediately think of a way to get out of this damnable place.

"Slap!"

It was as if Xiao Chen was enchanted by the slap. A big slap mark appeared on Zhuge Kun's face. As they said... when beating people don't hit the face, but Xiao Chen just had to slap them on the face.

Zhuce Kun got a nosebleed immediately, but he was still wearing a smile as he stood up. He said, "Brother Xiao, show some mercy. I am Zhuge Liang's cousin. Last time was really a misunderstanding. Please listen to me patiently. I believe we can become good friends..."

"Becoming friends with you people? I'd rather kill myself! Don't you guys have any moral standing?!"

Xiao Chen had a heroic figure as he sat in the hot spring. His durable body flickered with a bronze-like splendor. It seemed as if young dragons were winding around his well built body. It made him seem energetic and powerful. His long black hair was naturally draped over his shoulders. The long eyebrows touched

his temples. His clear eyes were as sharp as the sword.

Right now, in Zhuge Kun and company's eyes, they felt that he was a demon. It made them feel as if they were being watched attentively by a wolf.

Hoodlum meets Madman was the best way to describe this. That's right, if they were hoodlums, then Xiao Chen was an exceptional madman. It made them feel powerless.

In the VIP area two, the "madman" was taking care of the hoodlums, while the beauties at VIP area one were having a hushed discussion.

"Where do you think that little critter came from? It was so cuuute!"

"I know right? That snow-white appearance looked as if it was carved out of white jade. And that hairball flickered with a bright and beautiful luster. It made me want to hug it tightly."

"That's right, I really want to keep it as a pet. That snow-white little critter looked really intelligent."

The pretty girls were already infatuated. It seemed as if they had already embraced Keke in their arms. They did not hide their inner desires. Without any outsiders present, they did not care about being seen. Their lily-white arms and legs, shapely breasts and buttocks, were completely revealed. It was a sore sight for the eyes.

The baby girl of the Mander Family, Katalina, was rolling her big eyes non-stop. She had a bright expression as she said, "Why don't we go out to take a stroll? Who knows, we might be able to find it. Even if it has an owner, we can still buy it off. With a group of beautiful girls like us, who would say 'no'?"

She had already recognized it as Xiao Chen's pampered little critter. The reason she suggested this was to seize an opportunity to give Xiao Chen some trouble. As she spoke, she used her lily-white arms to shake the calm Fairsnow, who had exposed most of her snow-white skin. Then she said, "Don't act so calm, there's no outsider here. What do you think of my idea? You going or not?"

"Go, of course we will go! We must find that snow-white little critter." Two girls at the side supported this idea.

On the other side, Yan Qingcheng was looking at all of these with a smile. She just joined their little group recently, and didn't declare where she stood. However, she was of the same opinion as the blue-haired Katalina. Her beautiful face revealed a peculiar expression. She could already imagine Xiao Chen's sorry figure as he was troubled by the girls. She thought it was about time to teach this hateful scoundrel a lesson.

Chapter 159 – Touch Upon the Bottom Line

When the sixth slap was coming, Zhuge Kun shut his mouth. He knew he was just wasting his breath. He cursed inwardly, “Mother f—! Who do you think you are? You even dare to anger the scion of Zhuge Family and won’t let me go. Once I get out of here, I will find someone to pinch you to death!”

As if he could read his mind, Xiao Chen slapped him another twenty times before coming to a stop.

“I only hit the face.” Looking at the pig head in front of him, Xiao Chen said uncaringly.

“You... come over here!” Xiao Chen pointed at Hofmann.

Hofmann was so angry that the roots of his teeth were itching, but he had no choice other than yielding to him.

Xiao Chen told Zhuge Kun and Hofmann, “The both of you slap each other twenty times. If I am satisfied, we’ll call it a day with this.”

Their face immediately twitched. With their status, they actually got humiliated like this again and again. Their eyes burned with rage.

“What, still haven’t had enough? You want me to do it myself?!”

“We will do it ourselves!” Zhuge Kun immediately cut in and with a “slap”, he slapped Hofmann in the face.

“Did you skip your meal? Hit harder!”

“Slap!”

“Ouch! You f— — Zhuge pig head. You really dared to hit me harder?!” Hofmann turned his hand over and slapped his face in return.

“Slap... Slap...”

The noise rang out constantly. The two of them seemed to have forgotten each other’s status and thrashed each other to give vent. The slapping sound never stopped. Only after they slapped each other more than thirty times did they stop.

Right now, their eyes were already “sealed”. The flesh around the eyes swelled profusely. They were only able to form tiny slits with their eyes. Their eyes looked like two bloody gourds.

“Alright, that’s enough. I didn’t expect you guys hate each other this much.” First, Xiao Chen ridiculed them, then he said, “Now, let us talk. Let’s see how we can settle the problem from last time.”

Austrian let out a breath of relief. It seemed like Xiao Chen didn’t have the intention to hit him.

But Hofmann and Zhuge Kun almost jumped up. What did he mean talk about the problem from last time? Then what was that earlier? Could it be that they had been hit for nothing? Could it be that it had only just begun? The two of them almost burst out.

“Tenax is a sacred beast, but you guys killed it. The both of you prepare one million gold coins each.”

“@#%¥!” Hofmann was so startled that he blurted a foul word right away.

“One million?!” Zhuge Kun was so shocked that he nearly fainted in the hot spring.

Just how much was one million gold coins? Even if they were beaten to death, they still couldn’t come up with such a sum. Their family had great influence in the south. Although they were not the first successor of the family, they were still the direct line of descendant. Despite that, their own assets only added up to approximately ninety thousand gold coins respectively. One million gold coins was really too far from them, unless they were in control of the family.

Two gold coins were enough to have the highest quality feasts. One could very well imagine what a ridiculous sum was one million gold coins.

“What, you guys have objection?” Xiao Chen sneered and said, “Sacred beast is priceless. Even if you have money, you won’t necessarily be able to buy it! In such a big wasteland and mountain range, no more than two or three can be caught in ten years time. Let’s not even mention the rarest young sacred beast. If they are breed properly, in a few dozen of years or up to a century, they will definitely turn into the most loyal and most powerful partner. What you guys

killed was a sacred beast, do you understand?!” Xiao Chen extended his tone on purpose and roared at the two in front of him.

Zhuge Kun cursed inwardly: Mother f—! This guy is like a lion when he opened his mouth. Only a ghost would believe that is a sacred beast. Even if that is true, it is definitely still alive. Otherwise, how could you sit here so calmly and hit us like bamboo sticks? He’s obviously blackmailing us!

Hofmann was feeling just as sullen. He was always the one blackmailing others. Murder, firebombing, rape, he had done all kind of bad deeds. Why did he get such a bad luck today to run into this freak. He vowed to himself: Don’t let me get out of here alive, otherwise I will not stop until you are dead!

“My entire assets only add up to eighty thousand gold coins.” Zhuge Kun bit his lips and said, “I don’t have that much even if you kill me.”

“I also only have eighty thousand plus gold coins.” Hofmann was so sullen that he wanted to cough out blood. His words sounded so very familiar. Wasn’t this the tone people usually used to talk to him? Just what’s going on today? How did he become the target of extortion? Oh how times had changed.

“Well then, each of you pay eighty thousand gold coins upfront. Ask your men to go get it. I will wait here.”

Speaking until here, Xiao Chen fished up two guy with swelling tummy from the water. The two of them were Sixth Celestial Layer practitioners and usually abused their power. They were the personal bodyguards of these scions. However, they were really too miserable today. They were made to drink a bellyful of hot spring water.

Xiao Chen repeated what he said earlier to these thirty years old men. The two of them looked at him resentfully. Then they looked at their respective masters.

“Now get out of my sight.” Xiao Chen shouted coldly.

Only until the two of them left did Zhuge Kun, Hofmann, Lidong Bo, and Austrian regained themselves. This... This guy was actually playing for real! He actually dared to send them to collect money from two big families!!

He was actually serious. Was this guy nuts?!

So be it if he beat up the scions of two big families, the older generation could only turn a blind eye to it. That was, after all, the problem between youth generation. However, this guy actually dared to drop in and ask for a large sum of gold coins. They had seen someone crazy before, but not this crazy!

The older generation experts could not easily get involved with the problem of the youth generation, but that also had a “limit”. Only a foreign guest like Xiao Chen, who “didn’t fully understand” the rules of the immortal’s mainland, would dare to “do things at his own pace”.

The older generation experts couldn’t interfere as they wished, that was only because of some unwritten rules. However, if it affected the family’s reputation, they would have an excuse to make their move.

Zhuge Family and Mander Family were one of the first rate distinguished families in the south. They cared about their face very much. If Xiao Chen snatched away a few thousand gold coins from Zhuge Kun and Hofmann in private, then so it be. That was still the problem between the youth generation. However, to send someone to two big families to ask for a large sum of gold coins in bright daylight, that was touching upon the bottomline.

After a middle-aged man in the Reagan Family received this news, he frowned in the study room and asked, “Where did this Xiao Chen come from? He’s actually so arrogant!”

At the side, a black-clothed man who seemed to have blended with the shadow reported, “According to the investigation, he came from the mortal world and displayed extraordinary power on the dragon island.”

“That came out from his own mouth. I am not too convinced that he really came from the mortal world. With such a tyrannical behavior, it gives me a really bad feeling. Maybe... He came from the deepest part of the south!” The middle-aged man revealed a worried expression.

“According to our investigation, when they departed from that ancient town at the south sea, they mysteriously disappeared for about a month. They arrived at Celestial City in exactly thirty plus days. We couldn’t find out where did they go during these period of time.” The person in the shadow answered.

The anxiety on the middle-aged man’s face became heavier. He muttered to

himself, “They mysteriously disappeared for one month, they must have returned to the deepest part of the south. My speculation might be true. Thirty years ago, that person came from the deepest part of the south and made the younger generation of an influential family in Celestial City suffer. Because of this, a huge disaster almost broke out!” 1

“My lord, you are saying... the ancient legend passed down in the south is real? The legend regarding how few of the strongest hid in the deepest part of the south?! But... Didn’t they say those group of people had been sealed? All of them... completely... sealed on that island since ancient times?!” The person in the shadow felt a little tongue-tied. He stumbled over his words.

“There’s a lot more ancient secrets regarding the depths of the south than you can imagine!”

At the same time, in the Zhuge Family. Zhuge Kun’s father also frowned.

“One month of blank space... Don’t tell me that boy really came from the depths of the south? His action is practically the same as that guy from thirty years ago.” 2

The person beside him asked respectfully, “My lord, is it true that there’s a few ancient mythological figures in the south? They really didn’t die?!”

“They were the few “sovereigns” at that time. Getting out alive was extremely possible. Even if they no longer exist in the world, leaving a one or two descendents behind is not a big problem.”

“No wonder no one can ever come back from the depths of the south alive.....” The person beside him felt a little apprehensive.

Zhugé Kun’s father heaved a sigh and said, “There’s still a lot of secrets in the depths of the south that we do not know of. That clan is not the only one there!” Speaking until here, he turned his head and shouted angrily, “This bastard has done so many bad deeds, it is time to teach him a lesson. Tell him to wipe his own ass by himself, I will not meddle in this issue!”

In VIP area two of the Paradise Spa, Zhuge Kun and Hofmann exposed a triumphant smile.

This Xiao Chen was really a madman, he actually dared to send people to the

two big families to ask for a large sum of gold coins. Maybe one or two old farts in the families would come out personally, let's see if he could still keep up with this act at that time.

Lidong Bo and Austrian also looked like they were getting ready to watch a good show. Madman, we don't dare to provoke you now, but let's see if you can get the last laugh. If you provoked an old fart from the family, you are going to be screwed!

However, after the Sixth Celestial Layer experts returned with the news, Zhuge Kun and Hofmann immediately became flabbergasted. The words from their families were almost identical: Wipe your own ass by yourself, don't rely on the family to wipe your ass for you. They were completely dumbstruck. Until the Sixth Celestial Layer experts repeated these words in their ears quietly did they regain themselves.

Just where did this Xiao Chen come from? He actually made their father a little apprehensive. Could it be that he has a really deep background?!

Seeing their expression, Lidong Bo and Austrian's mood to watch a show was destroyed. They could roughly guess the result. They found it a little inconceivable.

"You guys actually didn't bring me the gold coins. The two of you can continue drinking!" Xiao Chen directly forced the two Sixth Celestial Layer bodyguards into the hot spring. And on the other side, more than ten guards with round belly were gagging and spitting out water.

"Looks like the two of you cannot accept this. Then I will continue to soften your muscles and bones." Xiao Chen smiled as he walked towards Zhuge Kun and Hofmann.

"St... Stop! This time for sure, I will send someone to get the gold coins." Zhuge Kun clenched his teeth and ran over to one of the guards that were right in the middle of coughing out water. He told him, "Go find my housekeeper and ask him to deliver the gold coins."

Since it was already like this, Hofmann also instructed his underlings to do the same without delay. He was so sullen that he wanted to cough out blood. He made an oath silently, "As long as I can get out from this damnable place

smoothly, I will definitely find someone to kill this savage scoundrel and get back all the gold coins, not leaving a single piece behind.”

At the same time Zhuge Kun and Hofmann’s hearts were bleeding, they were also feeling puzzled. Why did their family ignore their pleas? This didn’t make any sense!

But how could they know that Xiao Chen’s action was exactly the same as a certain someone thirty years ago. He was suspected to have come from the same place and made their father endlessly apprehensive.

Not more than half an hour later, two groups of people walked towards VIP area two of the Paradise Spa, each of them was carrying a sack of gold coins. It caused a lot of people who entered the Paradise Spa to feel flabbergasted.

Xiao Chen felt a little speechless. With this much gold coins, he wouldn’t be able to carry all of them by himself.

“Are you guys crazy? Are you guys trying to make fun of me deliberately? Go convert them into banknotes!”

“Huff! Huff!” After catching their breath, the two groups of people retreated quickly.

However, the news hereby spread out. Those who could afford to come to this place were those who had a certain status. Many of them were in Zhuge Kun and Hofmann’s circle. There’s no lack of young masters or scions. There were also plenty of upper-class ladies and celebrities. So much so that there were also a lot of powerful figures who came from other regions for the warbeast tournament in Celestial City.

“Hey, did you know? Two dregs of society ended up disastrously today. They were forced to pay several tens of thousands of gold coins to redeem themselves.”

“Have you heard? The two scums from Zhuge Family and Reagan Family were beaten up today!”

“Big news! Big news! Zhuge Kun and Hofmann got beaten up until their mother couldn’t recognize them anymore. Right now, they have no choice but to obediently exchange their life with gold coins.”

“Those two are usually so savage, I knew it would cost them dearly one of these days. However, that Xiao Chen is indeed a madman among the madman.”

“Those two guys lose their face completely. However, that Xiao Chen is really so brave! He actually dared to do this.”

In a short amount of time, almost everyone in Paradise Spa had heard of this. It was impossible for Xiao Chen not to be well known anymore. In addition to how he defeated the genius Wuxing Feng before, his reputation rose sharply.

Chapter 160 – The Persistent Beauties

At this moment, Xiao Chen had already received the golden banknote with seventy nine thousand gold coins from Zhuge Kun, as well as the golden banknote with eighty three thousand gold coins from Hofmann. He made Keke put them into his cloth not far away.

Such a big harvest! Xiao Chen felt accomplished and had an especially bright smile. However, Zhuge Kun and Hofmann felt that their hearts were bleeding.

“You guys can pay the rest slowly. I believe with your personalities, the both of you won’t leave a written contract.” Xiao Chen originally didn’t plan to cause too big of a disturbance. After all, this was the problem between the youth generation. To receive this much money was already out of his expectation. He didn’t count on receiving the remaining amount. If by any chance he provoked the figures of the older generation, that would be bad. What he didn’t know was that, he had already broken the rules. It was just that... due to a freak combination of factors, the fathers of the scums became very apprehensive of him.

When Zhuge Kun and Hofmann heard this, they had the urge to cough out blood. Still wanted more gold coins? In your dreams! They vowed to immediately find someone to kill this insufferably arrogant bastard once they got out.

“I have almost settled everything with these two. It’s about time I set things straight with both of you.” Xiao Chen turned his head to stare at Lidong Bo and Austrian.

Lidong Bo felt his scalp going numb. The scions of two big families were already beaten to such a submissive state, and his family fell short of their families by a lot, he didn’t have that much gold coins.

“I... I don’t have that much gold coins!” Lidong Bo felt that today he was very unlucky. Just why did he take the lead?!

“I know you don’t have much. Come and sign this contract. You are owing me twenty thousand gold coins!”

“I.....” Seeing that Xiao Chen’s eyes sharpened, he immediately lowered his head and said, “I will sign it immediately!”

“Un, I’ve already prepared the pen and ink.” With a wave of his hand, the pen and ink flew over from not far away. He came totally prepared. It made the few of them completely dumbstruck.

“Austrian..... you also come and sign. You owe me twenty thousand gold coins.”

“Wh... Why do I have to sign? I didn’t provoke you.” After looking at Xiao Chen’s unyielding means, Austrian had a little of a guilty conscience.

“Hmph! If it wasn’t because you were sowing the seed, why would Katalina come to make trouble for me? How would I end up fighting with Lambda at the North Style Academy? Hurry up and sign, you owe me thirty thousand gold coins.”

“Didn’t you say twenty thousand gold coins just now?”

“Time is money, if you still don’t sign, then I will increase it to forty thousand.”

“I’m signing, I’m signing!”

While the two of them were signing, they hated Xiao Chen to the extreme. This was not a small amount! Their hearts ached so much. However, it was fortunate that they didn’t have to pay it immediately. Maybe this arrogant guy would be killed once he left this place, then they would have nothing to be scared of.

Just like before, Xiao Chen made Keke put the contracts into his clothes.

All of a sudden, lovely voices transmitted into the VIP area two. After that, a beautiful blue-haired girl actually charged in valiantly.

Xiao Chen and the rest were stupefied as they fixed their eyes on her while in the hot spring.

“Katalina!” Austrian cried out, “Why did you come in?”

It was precisely the baby girl of the Mander Family. She very valiantly burst into the VIP area two.

“I heard you were being beaten along with those two scums, Zhuge Kun and

Hofmann, I came here to save you!”

That lively little brat was really too valiant! In front of a few grown-up men in the hot spring, she had a content expression on her face. So much so that she was even comparing who had the most sturdy chest muscles.

Zhuge Kun and Hofmann tried to woo Katalina once, it could even be said that they were drooling over this youthful young lady. However, they still didn’t manage to woo her after suffering losses several times. They had the urge to cry right now, why must they run into her in such an awkward situation? They had utterly lost their face. They were not as pretentious as they were before, how they wished they could just submerge their heads in the water.

“Sisters, come in quickly. They have already put on their clothes. The cute snow-white critter is here.” Katalina revealed a sharp expression.

The sound of footsteps could be heard as four beauties walked over.

“Katalina, what are you planning to do?” Austrian knew this cousin of his was usually eccentric, but how could this be considered helping him? She was clearly trying to embarrass the guys at this place. However, this brat was seriously getting more and more daring. This was the men’s spa for god’s sake!

Actually, the beauties had arrived at the VIP area two at an earlier time and had already heard about those news.

“Katalina, you want to die? You actually dared to deceive us.”

Those beautiful girls pouted playfully, but none of them moved back. All of them were looking at the guys in the water and giggling. Their bodies were covered up by bathrobes. The graceful curves, the delicate bodies, the faintly discernible arms and legs, it was full of allure.

Zhuge Kun, Hofmann, Lidong Bo, and Austrian wished they could find a hole in the ground and hide in there. Their heads almost submerged into the water. This was too embarrassing. Why did they have to run into them at a time like this? How they wished they could swallow Xiao Chen alive.

Xiao Chen looked at Katalina, Fairsnow, Yan Qingcheng and the other girls dumbfoundedly. These girls were really too bold!

“Oh please~ This is the men’s area, you girls came to the wrong place.” Xiao Chen didn’t mind about coming into contact with beautiful ladies, because that was one kind of pleasure. However, if they were being studied attentively by the girls, that was a different story. They felt uncomfortable all over.

“Hehe...” Katalina giggled as she walked over. Her long blue hair was still dripping wet and was naturally scattered on the shoulders. She just came out from the hot spring not long ago, she was still soaked from head to foot. The sweet scent of the girls pervaded the air.

“The guy surnamed Xiao, didn’t expect to meet you here. This is truly an inevitable clash between opposing factions. What, scared now?” Katalina had a provoking expression. She cast a sidelong glance at Xiao Chen with her big, beautiful eyes. This sight could really hook one’s soul.

“As if!” Xiao Chen smiled mischievously and said, “Katalina, you owe me twenty thousand gold coins. Now, sign the contract.”

Hearing these, Zhuge Kun, Hofmann, Lidong Bo, and Austrian were dumbstruck. Was this guy crazy? How daring of him to extort money by taking advantage of everyone’s weaknesses. Even a robber wouldn’t do it to such an extent!

“Who owes you what?!” The blue-haired Katalina flared up immediately and pointed at Xiao Chen. Then she said, “Are you trying to take advantage of me? I didn’t cause trouble for you, and yet, you want to extort me. Such abomination!”

“You mysteriously came to cause trouble for me several times. Moreover, you lost to me and promised to become my attendant for a month, but you refused to acknowledge it and didn’t keep the promise. Now, sign the contract. Bring me twenty thousand gold coins and our business will be settled.”

“Go to hell!” When Katalina heard the word “attendant”, she wanted to bare her fangs and pounce on him like a cat that had its tail stepped.

“It is impossible to deny it anymore!” As Xiao Chen was saying these, he calmly sat in the hot spring, but with a wave of his right hand, a glorious radiance enveloped Katalina. He wanted to pull her over.

Zhuge Kun and Hofmann at the rear were completely stunned. This guy was actually playing for real! He even dared to make a move against the baby girl of the Mander Family, this... was too crazy! Too unbelievable!

Katalina screeched and tried to resist without delay. She didn't mind looking down at the guys in the hot spring like this, but if she was pulled into the hot spring by Xiao Chen, then that would be too shameful. Just thinking about it made her feel fearful.

At the rear, Yan Qingcheng, Fairsnow, and the other girls hastily made their move to help Katalina. Red, green, purple, and yellow rays of light dazzled the eyes. They clashed with the clear radiance sent out by Xiao Chen at the same time. Resplendent rays of light exploded on the hot spring, a surge of energy fluctuation rushed forth.

Fortunately, they made it in time. Katalina escaped successfully and didn't get caught by Xiao Chen. This gave her a lingering fear. She panted with rage and stared at Xiao Chen, "This guy named Xiao actually has the cheek to do it for real! I'm not done with you today!"

"I can see it." Xiao Chen replied without a care in the world.

Katalina's pure white bathrobe rolled up and exposed her pair of lily-white legs. They were slender and exceptionally eye-catching. Even her yellow underwear was exposed.

Katalina let out a screech and hastily straightened out her cloth. After that, she extended her slender finger and pointed at Xiao Chen, "Attaboy, you have the guts. You dare to take advantage of this young lady. I will not let you get away with this!"

"Oh please! Who is taking advantage of who? Would ordinary people come barging into the men's spa like this?"

"You, I....."

"You, what you, I what I, you owe me twenty thousand gold coins."

"Khh... This is so infuriating! Sisters, let's take care of him together!" Katalina's charming face was flushed. Although she had a furious expression, she was still very charming.

Just at this time, Lidong Bo suddenly lifted up his head and yelled towards Fairsnow, “Cousin, save me.”

“Lidong Bo, you... how come you are here?” The graceful Fairsnow was very surprised. Just now she had never noticed this cousin of hers who was lowering his head like the ostrich.

“I...”

“Enough, you don’t need to say anything. I got it.” Fairsnow had a tall figure, elegant and beautiful, like a delicate fairy maiden carved out of divine jade. She turned her head to face Xiao Chen and said, “Xiao Chen, is it possible for you to let Lidong Bo go?”

“Sure, there’s no problem. I have already settled everything with him.”

“Sis, he made me sign a twenty thousand gold coins contract.”

“Eh? Brother Xiao, care to explain?” Although Fairsnow had already heard some news from the outside, she didn’t expect that this dishonorable cousin of his was also involved.

“Oh, nothing much, just paying back the debts.” Xiao Chen replied casually, then he turned his body around to sneer at Lidong Bo, “Your future prospects look promising. A grown-up man hiding in the hot spring, pleading the cousin for help. Heh!”

Just at this time, Katalina’s face suddenly brightened up. She whispered to two girls behind her, and then they turned towards the snow-white little critter together. They directly ignored the guys in the hot spring.

“Whoosh!”

Keke ran beside Xiao Chen like a wisp of smoke. It was baring its fangs at the few girls. However, it didn’t look scary at all. On the contrary, it looked especially naughty and adorable.

“What do you girls want? Keke is my partner.” Xiao Chen looked at the girls vigilantly.

Katalina rolled her big eyes, her long eyelashes flickered unceasingly. Then she shouted, “Catch it! That snow-white little critter doesn’t have an owner. It

escaped from the warbeast street last time and was caught by this guy.”

Everyone knew this was a lie, but the beauties needed this as an excuse. Not only because they were very fond of this snow-white little critter, it was also because they thought that Xiao Chen was really too arrogant. The ones who got trampled at this place was not only Katalina’s cousin, there was also Fairsnow’s cousin and a beauty from the Zhuge Family’s cousin. In addition, Yan Qingcheng was originally discontent with Xiao Chen to begin with. The girls made their move without restraint once they found an excuse.

Their goal was to take away the snow-white little critter forcefully while taking care of Xiao Chen at the side.

The girls could even be said to be very intelligent and crafty. After they attacked Xiao Chen at the same time, they quickly fell back and grabbed Xiao Chen’s clothes. They wanted to throw it out of this hot spring area at once. They wanted to humiliate Xiao Chen. 1

“Crap!” Xiao Chen couldn’t help but let out a curse. There were golden banknotes in his cloth with several tens of thousands of gold coins. There were even a few contracts that were worth more than a few pennies. These absolutely must not be lost.

You girls want to play? Then I will play with you!

Just at this time, Xiao Chen made a move that shocked the heaven and caused the devil to cry. The girls were stunned in an instant, and then their faces turned pale before they let out a shriek. 2

Xiao Chen boldly stood up from the hot spring, then he shouted, “Put the clothes down!”

Such boldness! It made Hofmann and Zhuge Kun behind him feel as if they were struck by a thunderbolt. It made them turn as still as a clay figure! This guy... was such a bastard, how could he do this... just how?!

Hofmann and Zhuge Kun admitted that they were not good people, they had done a lot of bad deeds, but even they had never been this ferocious. The few girls in front of them, they were the most beautiful girls in the south. Who would casually defile them? But this guy actually had “no pang of conscience”, he was

too fearless!

Xiao Chen stood up and quickly put on the bathrobe that was not far away. Then he rushed forward.

Presently, all three sides were very anxious. Hofmann, Zhuge Kun, and the others felt resentful because that arrogant guy actually dared to be so rude. Those were the girls that they were pursuing all along. Katalina, Fairsnow, and Yan Qingcheng felt unpleasant because that Xiao Chen was too shameless. He actually dared to be so “bold”! Xiao Chen felt anxious because those girls were running away, but they never let go of his clothes. Those clothes possessed more than ten thousands of gold coins, he must not let them get away with it no matter what.

Chapter 161 – The Depths of the South

The sound of shrieks, the sound of cursing... It was a piece of chaos!

Xiao Chen unfolded the Undying Divine Wings and quickly chased after the girls. When he found that his clothes were with Katalina and Fairsnow, he immediately made his move.

Two hazy radiances transformed into huge dragon claws that tried to grab their waists. Katalina was extremely angry, she waved her hand to produce a pink radiance. Fairsnow also produced a green-qi. The two girls only wanted to run away from that place. But they were totally oblivious to the fact that the clothes in their hands were the reason why Xiao Chen was chasing them.

With a few brittle noises, two hazy radiances successfully engulfed the beautiful Fairsnow and the youthful Katalina as he pulled them back.

“Let go! Don’t come near me!”

“Give me back my clothes!”

Xiao Chen caught the two girls, but their postures were a little indecent. The materialized dragon claws bound their little waists tightly. Although the claws hadn’t really touched them, it was already more than enough to make the two girls flush with anger and fuming with rage.

“Xiao Chen, I’m going to kill you!” Katalina kept struggling. Her snow-white bathrobe drooped down and exposed her supple chest. That beautiful arc was really enticing.

“It’s completely exposed.” Xiao Chen said casually and extended one of his hand to fix her bathrobe very seriously. Then he said, “Very... ‘satisfying’.”

“You...” The blue-haired Katalina immediately fainted.

“Young lady, can you please return my clothes?” Xiao Chen exposed his snow-white teeth to Fairsnow and smiled brightly.

The beauties of the south fighting over his clothes. It smelled fishy no matter which angle they looked at it.

Fairsnow had a slender body with graceful curves. She was busty and extremely beautiful. Her height was only a little shorter than Xiao Chen. Her graceful bearing was many times more elegant than other beauties, it could even be said that she was extremely beautiful. She was a genuine beauty.

Her dripping wet long hair emitted a sweet fragrance. Her snow-white skin was as smooth as the baby's skin. It felt as if there were fogs winding around in her misty eyes. Below her delicate nose, her bright red lips appeared incomparably sexy. She lightly bit her lower lip with her pearly white teeth and spoke to Xiao Chen softly, "Quickly let go of me." She was trying to remain as calm as possible.

She had already tossed Xiao Chen's clothes on the ground. She was really scared of this daring man in front of her, but even under this kind of circumstances, she was still calm and collected. She didn't cause too much of a disturbance.

Before Xiao Chen could let go of her, Fairsky's excited voice resounded from the VIP area two, "Xiao Chen, I came to watch how you collect the booty..."

His voice was awfully urgent. Fairsky seemed to be rushing over at astonishing speed. However, the sound came to an end spontaneously. After that, a flustered and exasperated yell was transmitted, "Xiao Chen, I'm going to kill you! You actually dare to defile my sister!"

Fairsky already passed through the flowers and trees. He rushed over with lightning speed.

If it was any other people, this misunderstanding definitely couldn't be cleared, but Xiao Chen was very calm. He removed the materialized dragon claw and took a step forward to support Fairsnow. Then he said, "Careful, watch your steps."

Fairsky was extremely angry and shouted loudly, "Xiao Chen, you..."

"You, what you? Don't jump to conclusions. It's not what you think it is. If you don't believe me, you can ask your sister."

After Fairsnow was freed, she immediately told Fairsky, "There's nothing going on between us, I will take my leave first." Even if there was something, she wouldn't be able to say it out loud. Moreover, there was really nothing to begin with.

Seeing that both of them were so calm, Fairsky looked at this and that doubtfully. Only until Fairsnow's figure was gone did he regain himself. He fiercely faced Xiao Chen and said, "I definitely was not mistaken, you were trying to defile my sister. Xiao Chen, I warn you. We may be acquainted, but if you dare to touch my sister, I will kill you!"

"That sounds like a challenge. If I have nothing better to do, I might as well go give it a try."

"You dare!" Speaking until here, Fairsky looked at Xiao Chen with shock. Then he said, "What are you doing?"

Right now, Xiao Chen was skillfully spreading a piece of paper and ink on the ground. Then he grabbed the fainted Katalina's little hand, smeared her thumb with ink, and left her thumbprint on a piece of white paper.

"It's nothing important. She owes me money. I just made her leave behind a contract."

Fairsky was dumbstruck.

Far behind, Zhuge Kun and Hofmann were stupefied. This f—— Xiao Chen was really too arrogant. He wouldn't even let a beautiful lady go. This was what they called "to not discriminate between gender" 1! He actually dared to treat the Mander Family's baby girl like this. And what made them the most speechless was that, Xiao Chen grabbed Katalina's lily-white hand and did not smear just one piece of paper. He smeared one piece after another. There were at least eight or nine sheets of papers.

"Let's go, there's nothing left to do." Xiao Chen did not think that he was going over the top. After he completed all of these tasks skillfully, he put on his clothes and left together with Keke and Tenax. Fairsky followed after him closely.

A lot of people in the Paradise Spa were rushing over to this place. Xiao Chen nimbly dodged everyone and left the building.

On the way back. After Fairsky had heard the series of events, he had the urge to cough out blood.

"Xiao Chen, you... aren't you a little too violent? This... play, you cannot play like this. Are you not scared that you might provoke the old farts in the Zhuge

Family or the Reagan Family?”

When Fairsky heard Xiao Chen’s explanation. He had this unfathomable expression and said, “You... Just who did you hear that from?! The older generation figures will not make their move, but there’s a limit. The prerequisite is that you must not be too excessive. I am really speechless... I advise you to hurry and pack up. Otherwise you are going to be screwed!”

“Since we are friends, I will help you this once. I will find someone to negotiate for you.” After he finished speaking, Fairsky left.

However, Fairsky quickly returned to Xiao Chen’s residence. He made a racket as soon as he arrived, “Xiao Chen... you are too ungrateful!”

“What’s wrong? I didn’t do anything to your sister. I didn’t use that much power to grab her. When I supported her waist, I also did it lightly.....”

“Xiao Chen, I will kill you! Where did you grab my sister? Why did you hold her waist?!” The beautiful Fairsky immediately became anxious.

Xiao Chen felt a little speechless. It seemed like there was no need for an explanation. This guy didn’t seem to come and condemn him of the matter regarding his sister. It seemed like a cover up would only make matters worse.

Only until a long time later did Fairsky calm down.

And only at this time did Xiao Chen find out from Fairsky that he had been misunderstood by some people. They actually thought that he had an extraordinary status.

“You came from the depths of the south?!” Fairsky said resentfully, “You are too ungrateful. We have been friends for so long, and you actually did not tell me your real identity.”

Speaking until here, Fairsky lowered his voice and spoke discreetly, “Since you are from that most terrifying place, then Tenax should be a Dragon King right? It must be their later generations!’

Xiao Chen quickly digested these informations. He more or less understood his “identity” by now. He muttered under his breath, “That’s right, I come from the depths of the South. This is my current position, and in the future too...”

During the time Xiao Chen was muttering to himself. It was as if a tsunami had taken place at the south sea.

A big and tall youth, with a sword in his hand, was beating himself against the raging waves with a slash of his sword. The rubble floated up, and the giant waves roared with the explosion of a terrifying energy. The ocean was split into half, the seawater poured down in torrents from both sides. A smooth avenue led directly to the depths of the green ocean.

“I, Dugu Jianmo 2, can finally come out of the closed door training!” It was precisely that person who had returned from the dragon island one year ago, the Solitary Sword Demon.

Not far from him, there was a young Dragon King with tiger-like body and Ancestral Dragon head. It faced upwards and let out a roar. It was precisely that Red Dragon King that followed Dugu Jianmo. It was the most savage one among the eleven Dragon Kings. The crimson scales were glorious, steaming rays of crimson light pulsed up and down of its body, as if they were raging sacred flames. Its roar was as earsplitting as the sudden clap of thunder. In fact, it was clearly much stronger compared to the time it was on the dragon island.

At the same time, in the middle of the primitive forest, the wild beasts were snarling and monsters were running away. A black-haired youth with a steel-like body was charging at a group of monsters. His bare upper body was covered with blood.

He was very wild!

Seven to eight meters wild beasts were nothing more than a scarecrow to him. They would be tore into half as soon as he reached out his hand to grab them. A few random strikes was enough to bring down a few huge monsters.

He was very demonic!

His wild nature made people afraid of him. His skin that flickered with a bronze-like splendor was completely encroached by thin blood. His eyes were even more savage than the beast's, they flickered with a sharp and ice-cold glint.

As if he could use Ground Shrink, the bronze-like demonic body, that was encroached by blood, left one afterimage after another in the desolate forest.

Blood was spilled everywhere he passed through. The group of wild beasts was running away unceasingly. Lots of huge corpses were left on the ground. The blood had already stained the forest with its color.

He was practically a killing machine!

Lastly, only after his terrifying demonic body directly bore through a ten meters long primal beast did he stop the massacre.

He arrived in front of a giant waterfall. He stood right under the thousand feet waterfall and let the torrential current pound against his bronze-colored demonic body. His ice-cold glance seemed to be capable of splitting the water screen. Two terrifying glints were emitted from his eyes as he looked at the direction of the Celestial City.

“It is about time that I, Windfeathers, return to the Celestial City!” With a punch, the thunderous waterfall seemed to be flowing backwards for a split second.

North of Celestial City, eight hundred miles in the wasteland, a youth was sitting atop a rocky mountain quietly like an ancient sculpture.

No life fluctuation could be felt from his body. His ash-colored long hair came off just like the withered flowers and plants. His body was full of dust, as if he had been there for endless years. It seemed he had already been petrified.

It lasted until the black clouds were blown away by the wind, the light driven off the darkness. His body was illuminated by the light. The birdsong resounded in the mountain woods. He burst forth with vigorous vitality in that very instant. The dust on his body flew upward and filled the whole sky.

Those dried up greyish hairs all scattered along with the wind. An aqua blue hair immediately trailed over his shoulders and flickered with a bright blue luster. They appeared incomparably healthy. 3

This was an exceptionally handsome young man. He stood up and looked towards the direction of the Celestial City. Then he muttered under his breath, “I have already confronted Wuxing Feng, who’s next.....” 4

Chapter 162 – I am Dragon

The south desolate region, god knew just how many secrets were hidden in the millions and millions of mountain range. Endless amounts of fairy tales spread out from here. It left behind many beautiful and terrifying tales for the later generations.

At present, the top three youth experts of the south had ended their training as if agreed by chance. They made their way back by going towards three different directions respectively. Their target, the Celestial City!

From the north came Wuxing Feng. There was even a grapevine saying that another two of the most powerful experts from the north had come to Celestial City in succession. Their goal was to fight with the strongest of the youth generation from the south.

The reason they gathered in Celestial City was precisely because of Windfeathers, Dugu Jianmo, as well as that handsome blue-haired man.

The warbeast tournament getting closer was also tantamount to the showdown between the strongest of the youth generation getting closer. Excluding the south and the north, there might be even more outstanding youths appearing from every corner of the vast mainland.

Without a doubt, Celestial City would be enveloped by a hurricane. The warbeast tournament might very well develop into a tournament between the practitioners.

It was natural for humans to make war and the warbeast tournament was started by humans.

The youth generation was the most energetic generation. Their confrontation would attract a lot of attention. Some young warrior's life would be as beautiful as the shooting star, but only for a brief moment. While other young warriors' would inevitably be as long-lasting and as bright as the stars. None could stop their rise and fall. The victor now could end up being the strongest in this land a few dozen years later. They might be able to obtain some clues on who to watch out for.

Fairsky had already left. Leaving Xiao Chen thinking by himself for a very long time. The news leaked out by Fairsky were very unexpected to him. He already decided to use this as a “cover up” and let them misunderstand as they wished. Maybe he should take more initiative to mislead them. It was very important to have this kind of identity!

Although the layout of the residence was not big, the arrangement of the gardens was very delightful. Xiao Chen was taking a walk. He passed through a few pavilions in the central courtyard, passed through a wisteria tree tunnel 1, and walked over a marble bridge. Clear water gushed out from the mouths of a few stone beast sculptures and flowed into the pond below the bridge.

Suddenly, Xiao Chen widened his eyes. He was surprised to see that white-shelled tortoise who had run away.

Under the arch of the marble bridge, the white-shelled tortoise was happily chasing after a shoal of goldfish.

What made Xiao Chen most surprised was that, the fist-sized little tortoise’s movements were not like that of a tortoise at all. It was more like that of a spirit wearing a tortoise shell. Its movements were very agile and natural.

“This...”

What made Xiao Chen even more stupefied was that, it was actually doing a backstroke on the pond. All four of its limbs were very agile. It did not appear the slightest bit clumsy at all.

“Is this... really a tortoise?” Xiao Chen couldn’t seem to believe his own eyes. This sneaky little tortoise was really too strange! He unconsciously revealed a smile after staring fixedly at it for quite a few minutes.

Xiao Chen was gobsmacked when he tried to fish it up. The white-shelled little tortoise disappeared like a flash of lightning. Just a slight movement and it scuttled across the field. Its speed was truly unimaginable. Keke and Tenax tried to catch it several times, but ended in failure. It could practically be described as “coming and going without a trace”.

Moreover, what made Xiao Chen more shocked was that, the black divine chains were no longer locking it up. It already came off from the tortoise shell

and was left on a water-lily on the pond.

The white-shelled little tortoise was looking at Xiao Chen sneakily. It seemed to be smiling. That's right, it was smiling! It did not seem nervous nor scared at all!

"How did this happen? What is going on?"

Only after the three skeletons appeared and gesticulate unceasingly did Xiao Chen finally understood what was going on. When Tenax was seriously hurt last time, the white-shelled tortoise drank a lot of Tenax's blood. After that, it sneaked away and by the time it appeared again, those chains already came off.

Xiao Chen was very shocked. After thinking for a little bit, he asked the easy-going white-shelled little tortoise, who was on the stone bridge, as if he was talking to someone, "Larcenist, you are already free. Why did you come back?"

Although Xiao Chen looked calm on the surface, his heart was in a turmoil. After all, according to his speculation, this might be a sealed dragon! At present, it had already been liberated, but it didn't regain its original form. So he was not worried that it would possess any unreasonable destructive power.

With a flash, it seemed as if the fist-sized little tortoise had cut through the empty space and appeared in front of him. After that, it sneakily carved three ancient characters on the slab.

This made Keke's big eyes turn perfectly round. After that, it used its hairy little beast paws to rub its glittering big eyes. Tenax also revealed the same shocked expression.

They were flabbergasted! Looking at the strokes of the ancient characters, it had a striking resemblance to the sacred writings of the distant past. Xiao Chen only recognized that "dragon" character that had never changed since ancient times.

After analyzing it for a really long time, Xiao Chen read it aloud with shock, "I... am... dragon!" 2

"You..."

When Xiao Chen doubtfully guessed the other two characters, he immediately revealed an unfathomable expression. Although his mental state was

substantially different than the olden days and had been upgraded by a lot, he still couldn't help but be shocked.

His original speculation had been confirmed!

With a flash, the white-shelled tortoise left an afterimage on the little bridge 3 and disappeared.

Early the next morning, someone came to pay a visit. It was a grey-haired old man with childish face. It was hard to speculate his age. He might only be fifty to sixty years old, but looking carefully, he looked like he was more than a hundred years old. Although he was an old man, his deep blue pupils were like that of the ocean.

This old man was very extraordinary. This was Xiao Chen's first impression. He guessed that he might be the clan leader or elder of some major power. And that he most likely came because of Xiao Chen's identity.

After hearing the old man's purpose in coming, Xiao Chen found that he guessed wrongly. The old man did not come for him, but rather the three skeletons, Qinguang Wang, Yanluo Wang and Lunhui Wang.

"I am a Psychic 3 proficient with the Law of Life, I want to communicate with the three skeletons frequently..."

This old man was very friendly and tactfully stated his intention. Although he said that he wanted to communicate with the three skeletons, Xiao Chen could feel that he wanted to accept them as apprentices. It seemed like he was in love with them. That's right, he was in love! That expression was undisguised. 4

Xiao Chen was very shocked, how... did this old man fall for the three skeletons?

The spiritual light flickered. The old man was actually able to communicate with the three skeletons via spiritual link!

The result was as expected, the three skeletons wanted to go train with the old man.

"You don't need to worry, if you want to see them, you can go to the North Style Academy just across the street at any time. I will be at the depths of the

academy.” The old man wore a smile and said, “Their souls are very powerful. When I was training by myself quietly in the late nights these days, I could always feel their energy fluctuations. I was only able to find them at this place due to curiosity.”

After listening to the old man’s brief explanation, Xiao Chen could more or less understand what was going on. It was impossible for him to block his path, this was a good thing. According to the old man, the three skeletons might reborn one day in the future. This was an opportunity!

When the old man left with the three skeletons, the bastard Zhuge Liang arrived with a smile across his entire face. He looked at the rear figure of the old man and muttered, “Brother Xiao, who is that old man? Why does he look like a portrait in my house.”

Soon after, the handsome Fairsky also arrived.

After they heard Xiao Chen talk about that old man, the fatty almost fell head first.

“That elder is still alive?! This... is definitely him, the person in the portrait my family owns.” The fatty had a very positive tone.

“Just who is that old man?” Xiao Chen’s interest was hooked by him.

“I only know he dwells in the North Style Academy. A Psychic who studied the law of life intensively. He had once saved my great great great great grandfather’s life.” 5

Fairsky’s head was already spinning. His great great great great grandfather, just how old was that person?!

While Xiao Chen felt that this was very unexpected, he was glad that the three skeletons had followed the right person.

“Xiao Chen, you better be cautious.”

This was Fairsky and Zhuge Liang’s advice for Xiao Chen. Although Hofmann and Zhuge Kun were reprimanded by their fathers, that they were not allowed to stir up any more trouble before they could ascertain Xiao Chen’s identity, but how could these two dregs of society listen and obey? They wanted to take care

of Xiao Chen after secretly gathering the henchmen.

After that, the two of them left.

Soon after, Xiao Chen took Keke and Tenax along as he flew towards a mountain range outside of the Celestial City. He wanted to continue training. He intended to take care of the scums after he got back.

This decision almost made Hofmann and Zhuge Kun choke themselves to death! They set up everything with great difficulty, but couldn't find the person in question. It was just like when one had clenched their fist tightly, ready to launch at any time, but only to end up hitting the air.

They had power but were unable to exert it. In the next few days, Hofmann and Zhuge Kun were so depressed that they almost coughed out blood. They felt too dejected.

In the barren mountain woods, Xiao Chen left Keke and Tenax alone as he charged into the primitive mountain range. He was sitting quietly under a huge waterfall. He bared his chest and let the torrential current that fell from the three thousand feet precipice to pound against his body.

The three thousand feet tall waterfall, in front of the overhang, the white torrential current was surging forward like a magnificent army with thousands of men and horses. It was deafening. With such a height, the downward force was unimaginable, but Xiao Chen was sitting there like an immovable boulder. The huge waterfall was hammering his body like a huge hammer. His body was flickering with a crystal clear brilliance.

For ten days straight, he remained motionless!

Xiao Chen was not merely training his body, he was also training his mind. He remained at peace with himself under the deafening sound of the waterfall. His spiritual sense was condensing and rising to a higher level.

On the eleventh day, Xiao Chen opened his eyes. They were as sharp as the edge of a sword. His body flickered with a glorious radiance. With a clear whistle, his long black hair fluttered hysterically and the huge waterfall actually flowed backwards in that instant!

Chapter 163 – The Floating Isle

The waterfall around Xiao Chen flowed backwards momentarily. After that, as if it had become static, spiritual energy gathered from everywhere and concentrated in the waves. It blended together with the mist and formed a dense holy radiance.

Breaking away from the wave, Xiao Chen leapt over to the mountain woods. These eleven days, he had much accomplishment. Not only his spiritual sense, even his body had become much stronger and was heading one step further towards the legendary treasure body. He felt that he was getting closer to the peak of Exuvia Ninth Celestial Layer!

That's right, despite how his body and spirit were even more powerful than before, he still didn't breakthrough the Ninth Celestial Layer. The rumored "great plains of the realm" was already blocking his path. It was very hard to make a breakthrough

The five major realms, Exuvia, Historia, Zephyrus, Nirvana, and Immortalis had nine Celestial Layers respectively. Advancing one Celestial Layer within a certain major realm was like climbing from a shorter mountain to a much taller one. Although it was very hard, it was not impossible to climb. Every time they make a breakthrough, they could feel their power increasing rapidly.

However, rising from one major realm to another was very challenging. The difficulty of rising from an ordinary practitioner to Exuvia was unimaginable. Rising from Exuvia to Historia was just as such.

Although Xiao Chen was already at the Exuvia Ninth Celestial Layer, and seemed to be just one step away from Historia, it was not as simple as climbing over a tall mountain anymore.

Right now he had to cross over a "mountain" that was as tall as all nine Celestial Layers combined before he could genuinely break into the Historia realm. From climbing over a mountain to crossing over a big field just as high, it was easy to imagine how far was the road ahead. The big field could be understood as a "huge mountain", or maybe it could be said to be a lot of

“mountains”.

The Ninth Celestial Layer of every major realm was like this. It was a very challenging hurdle.

If it were other people, they might not be able to break through this major realm even with a long time of training. They might end up dispirited and disappointed. However, Xiao Chen’s spiritual sense was very sharp. Although he was unable to break through to the Historia realm, he could clearly feel that his power was forging ahead vigorously. That was purely from the body and spirit. He was no longer placing particular emphasis on strength.

Not only did he not become dispirited, it made him even more happy. What could be a more joyous occasion than the evolution of one’s body and spirit? This was the road one must follow in the course of evolution. Only by accumulating enough capacity to arouse the body’s hidden potential would one be able to really break through to the Historia realm.

A Ninth Celestial Layer expert that continuously rose to a higher level even after reaching the peak, this was enough to make him stand at the top among the young experts of the south. Moreover, he was one of the very few fine woods found at the summit! 1

After resting for a little in the desolate forest, Xiao Chen found Keke — who was soundly asleep while holding a big stack of spiritual items in its arms — several hours later. It must be mentioned that this snow-white little critter was really too intelligent. No treasures could ever escape from its discerning eyes. This entire south desolate region was practically a gold mine as far as Keke was concerned.

This was a scene that would even make the Gods jealous. The colorful light flickered unceasingly. Keke was almost buried by those mouth watering Amethyst Ginseng Kings, Rainbow Zoysias, and Gold Orchid Fruits. The fragrance was very refreshing. In the middle, Keke was soundly asleep like a child.

Soon after, Xiao Chen spent another few hours to find Tenax, who was riddled with scars. To make a Ninth Celestial Layer Dragon King sustain such injuries, it was easy to imagine how intense was the battle.

However, Xiao Chen was still feeling at ease. He knew that there were no

tyrannical monsters that could kill Tenax in this mountain range. Zhuge Liang had given him the map of the desolate region around Celestial City. A lot of forbidden areas were marked with a red cross.

This was the training program drew up by the fatty Zhuge Liang for Tenax. It was all about desperate struggles in the wild, and was not only limited to the battles in the warbeast castles. It must be mentioned that this fatty really had good taste for the warbeasts, and was also very knowledgeable. He knew how to bring out their hidden potential with the most effective methods.

Zhuge fatty felt that Tenax was not the same as the common warbeasts, and only this method could really help it evolve unceasingly.

After resting for a day, Xiao Chen took Keke and Tenax along as they flew back to Celestial City 2. The house had been rummaged, it was obvious that people had paid a visit while he was gone. Xiao Chen felt that it was most likely Hofmann and Zhuge Kun.

That's right, it was exactly the doing of their henchmen. Those two scums of society almost choked to death these past ten days. They had power but were unable to exert it. It was not easy to find a few senior cousins in the family to help them, and yet, they found that Xiao Chen had disappeared.

Xiao Chen paid it no mind as he openly left home with Keke and Tenax. However, he found that something seemed to have happened in the Celestial City, the number of practitioners decreased by a lot. Even if he wanted to put Hofmann and Zhuge Kun in order, it was impossible. They had also disappeared without a trace.

After asking around, he found that a shocking news had arrived from the depths of the south. Someone had discovered the traces of a divine temple. And there were actually two young sacred beasts roaming around at that place.

In such a big south desolate region, only two or three sacred beasts could be found in every ten years. However, two of them suddenly appeared all at once this time. And they were the most precious young sacred beasts that could be raised with ease. This was definitely a shocking news. In addition to the traces of the divine temple, it was even more shocking.

The young sacred beasts roaming around the vicinity of the divine temple, how

could they even be compared with the common sacred beasts? Their ancestry might be related to the deities, or perhaps they might be the deities themselves.

The so-called ancient deities were not necessarily referring to the human deities only. As long as one was powerful enough to make the immortals tremble in fear, not only the rare sacred beast with noble blood, even the plants could also be addressed as such.

If that was the case, then the two young sacred beasts were definitely the strongest among the sacred beasts.

According to legends, there were several types of sacred beasts capable to be claimed as the equal of the dragons! At that time, Buddhist Yizhen once thought that Keke was the cub of one of those few races.

If those two young sacred beasts were really from such a race. If they could subdue these young sacred beasts, then their future would be unimaginable.

The strongest race. Just thinking about it made one's blood race.

A great number of major powers in the south had made their move. Some older generation experts couldn't sit around any longer. Many of the younger generations accompanied the experts in their clan and forged ahead.

A lot of experts that originally came from foreign lands for the warbeast tournament also made their way to the depths of the south in succession.

Without a doubt, a lot of people would lose their life because of this. Maybe entire barren hills might be encroached by the thin blood. One must know that when the Ancestral Dragon Ship returned at that time, a bloody battle that lasted for a few months broke out. The sandy shore was dyed red by the thin blood. When Xiao Chen returned a few months later, there were still people fighting fiercely at the coast.

The dragon island had a god sealing power, so the older generation experts didn't dare to go ashore personally. However, the divine temple in the south did not have such restrictions. It caused numerous experts to go and provide assistance in the first moments.

Of course, it could even attract the attention of a few old farts. The remnants of the divine temple was the main reason. Perhaps they might find some

shocking discoveries from the remnants.

“Let’s go, we should also go join in on the fun. We will only follow at the rear to watch the show. We won’t be participating.” 3

Almost all the youth generation in Celestial City had rushed over there, how could Xiao Chen not go? He believed that a lot of interesting things would definitely happen.

Target, the depths of the south!

There was no need to ask for directions. Distinctive traces were left behind on the road towards that direction.

The south desolate region spanned over thousands of miles. Millions of mountains, and thick jungles covered the entire region. The ancient trees covered the sky, the cries of the apes and the roars of the tigers rang out unceasingly. All kinds of monsters were roaming about. There were a lot of exotic primal beasts.

Xiao Chen walked in the primitive mountain range with a leisure pace. He did not unfold the Undying Divine Wings at first. Because, he didn’t have the intention to fight over those two young sacred beasts that might very well be the later generations of the “deities”. Doing that was tantamount to throwing his life away!

The Dragon King War, that was a bloody battle that lasted for a few months. Only until all parties had acknowledged who they ultimately belonged to did they settle the dispute. It was definitely not a simple matter to decide who these two young sacred beasts belonged to. At the very least, a few major powers in the south would send their people to fight over them. With Xiao Chen’s current strength, he was practically unable to shake them up.

The journey went very smoothly. He didn’t run into any danger on the way. Xiao Chen was flying sometimes and walking in the mountain woods other times. He arrived at the depths of the south desolate region a few days later.

Of course, the so-called “depths” was only figurative. It was merely two thousand miles away from the Celestial City. It was impossible to really enter that fabled forbidden area. Nobody dared to really enter the deepest part of the

south!

The ancient trees reached high into the sky. Each tree was about three hundred meters tall. There were even vines as thick as a water jar. One vine was enough to wrap around half of a hill. It was a really primitive forest. It was usually impossible to find the traces of anyone at this place before.

The remnants of the divine temple revealed themselves!

A huge broken stone inscription was standing in the desolate forest. A few ancient characters were carved on the surface. Each stroke seemed to have crossed the space-time continuum and arrived at present. That was the breath settled after the vicissitudes of time.

It was a shame that Xiao Chen couldn't recognize those few characters at all. But he could be sure that the characters on the black chains that locked up the white-shelled tortoise were from the same era. The calligraphic style was practically the same. It was the sacred writing of the distant past.

After arriving at this region, he could clearly detect a few human figures swaying in the primitive forest from time to time. It indicated that he was getting close to the destination.

After passing through a few more mountains, Xiao Chen arrived at the destination.

The scene in front made him very shocked. There was an island floating in the air. Although it was only about five to six kilometer square, it was suspended on top of the primitive mountain range. It appeared very inconceivable.

The ash-brown island was just like a piece of huge meteorite. There was no breath of life on the island at all. It was only a little more than a hundred meters tall. It was far from being as tall as the mountain range in the vicinity.

Xiao Chen soared into the sky and overlooked that floating isle not far away. Not a speck of greenery could be seen on the isle. There was only a solitary ruin. That should be an imposing palace a really long time ago. It should be the residence of the deities during that time, the so-called divine island.

It was hard to imagine how it could still remain floating in the sky after endless years had passed.

Below the divine island was also a ruin. It had clearly been rummaged by people before, but not a single shadow could be seen at this moment. Everyone had went after the two young sacred beasts.

Xiao Chen descended from the sky. He brought Keke and Tenax to the ruins on the ground.

The broken debris, the pieces of monoliths, everything clearly indicated that magnificent buildings once stood at this place.

Who knew if those people had any harvest, if they had found something from these ruins. Xiao Chen did not worry about personal gains and losses as he slowly walked around.

Suddenly, he shuddered!

He felt a bone-chilling fear!

An exceptionally terrifying aura shrouded Xiao Chen in a flash!

All of these was so sudden. It happened in the twinkling of an eye.

A gale blew up all the debris on the ground. A terrifying black tornado appeared in the vicinity of the ruins and rushed over at astonishing speed.

Xiao Chen was very shocked. That black gale was really too fast and rushed over all of a sudden. He immediately raised his power to the limit, but without waiting for him to make his move, he could already hear Keke's angry cry, as well as Tenax's roar.

The black gale that carried the debris and fragments of the forest trees actually blown Keke and Tenax away. It blew past Xiao Chen and didn't hit him. Its target was only the two little beasts.

In that instant, Xiao Chen could only see a huge beastly figure in the black gale, as well as the black scales that glittered like frost and snow. He wasn't able to make out anything else.

He was extremely shocked. That seemed to be a very terrifying beast. Xiao Chen immediately unfolded the Undying Divine Wings and chased after it.

Out of his expectation, the black gale was too frantic and quick. It destroyed everything in its path and actually broke away from the ground. After that, with

a speed that couldn't be seen with naked eyes, it charged into a distant location, then it changed directions and completely disappeared. 4

It was too fast! Xiao Chen was unable to catch up even after unfolding the Undying Divine Wings. Moreover, he had no idea where did that black gale disappear to.

Damn it! Xiao Chen was extremely furious. They actually took Keke and Tenax away. Just who or what was that?

After unfolding the Undying Divine Wings, Xiao Chen raised his speed to the limit. He flew past one mountain range after another, wanting to search for traces of the black gale.

However, he was disappointed. He couldn't find any traces at all.

They actually snatched Keke and Tenax away. This made Xiao Chen extremely furious. When he recalled that vague glimpse, he slowly calmed down. That huge beastly figure and glittering black scales indicated that it was not done by a human! This... he thought about many, many things. This matter might be very complicated.

Chapter 164 – Sui ren Gimlet

Xiao Chen was incomparably frustrated. The two little beasts were taken away just like this. He stood in the empty sky silently and swept his eyes over all directions. He had gotten along with the two little beasts for such a long time already, the sudden separation made him really frustrated.

The black beastly figure, the ice-cold scales, with only such little information, Xiao Chen firmly memorized it in his heart. He was determined to train properly. If he made some accomplishment sometime in the future, he would definitely come back to search for the two little beasts. But he was not hopeful, it was obvious at first glance that the madman in the black gale was not someone he could handle.

Xiao Chen landed on the floating isle and surveyed the scene from an elevated position. Although he didn't hold much hope, he still wanted to wait for a few days. It would be great if those old farts who had entered the desolate region came into contact with that madman. Although the chance to triumph was very uncertain, there was still a tiny bit of possibility.

All of a sudden, Xiao Chen felt that something was very strange. The package he was carrying on his back was suddenly shaking. When he opened it up to take a look, it was actually the black cloth. The cloth was black not because it was not clean, but because the cloth was encroached by blood, and due to the vicissitudes of time, it had turned pitch black.

It was actually Sui renshi's burial cloth!

The sacred cloth encroached by blood he obtained from the dragon island. Of course, there was no way to ascertain if it was really Sui renshi's burial cloth. This was only the demon's deduction at that time, as well as Xiao Chen's speculation.

If his speculation was correct, then without a doubt, Sui renshi died a long time ago. However, there were a lot of legends regarding the immortal's mainland. Most of them pointed towards this region. In other words, the south desolate region. Legend said that Sui renshi had lived in seclusion in the south desolate region all along.

Looking at this black sacred cloth encroached by blood, Xiao Chen was endlessly shocked. One must know that since he had obtained this cloth, he had never seen it showing such an anomaly. Even when they were sailing on the Taboo Ocean.

And this ordinary looking blood-stained cloth actually showed an abnormal fluctuation for the first time today.

When he grabbed this blood-stained cloth in his hands, it moved by itself without the wind. Then, with a “flapping” sound, it started fluttering like a black banner in the air.

The mountain woods were very tranquil. There wasn’t the slightest of breeze. Even the divine island suspending in midair didn’t have any abnormal energy fluctuation. However, the black cloth was fluttering violently under such circumstances, as if it was being waved by a pair of invisible hands.

Xiao Chen grabbed one end of the cloth to let it flutter with a “crashing sound”. Then he observed the surroundings cautiously and attentively. His spiritual sense was released and swept through all directions.

No abnormal circumstances in the surroundings, no one was approaching. Except for the beast roars that could constantly be heard from the surroundings, nothing around this place seemed inappropriate.

What’s going on?

Could it be that someone was spying on him in the dark?

Was it related to the burial cloth?

After Xiao Chen silently swept his eyes over the surroundings for fifteen minutes, he negated this conjecture and thought about a different possibility. Could this place be the reason? Could it be that this divine island was related to Suireshi’s burial cloth?

The brownish-black divine island was like a piece of meteorite. There was not the slightest breath of life on the isle. Only the fragments of debris that seemed to stand as a testament to its glorious past.

“Flap! Flap! Flap!”

The burial cloth suddenly shook violently, as if it wanted to break away from his hand. Xiao Chen hastily strengthened his grip, but his body was still moving towards the direction the burial cloth was fluttering.

Their destination, the center of the ruins!

It was as if the black sacred cloth had intelligence. It was pointing towards one direction and leading Xiao Chen to the center of the ruins at every step.

At this moment, Xiao Chen's heart was thumping like crazy. The ancestral god's burial cloth was guiding him forward. It seemed like he was going to run into an out of the ordinary opportunity. He never thought that this ordinary-looking burial cloth actually had intelligence. He was under the impression that it was just an ancient cloth encroached by sacred blood.

When Xiao Chen arrived at the center of the divine island, and after he stood on top of a ruin, the blood-stained cloth suddenly shook violently and forcibly separated from his control. It flew out of his palm and gave rise to a gale in the center of the divine island. The black sacred cloth shook violently in the air. The debris in the ruins were lifted up from the ground and danced in the empty sky.

All of the debris in the ruins were cleared.

The black sacred cloth was stretched and became as straight as a javelin. It was pointing at the base of the ruins.

The base was entirely made by piling up solid mountain rocks. However, they had been polished. The edges and corners were not crude and they were piled up neatly. It made the base seem heavy and firm.

Xiao Chen was already certain, there was definitely something down there!

But he didn't know if there were any dangers involved. After experiencing a little too much, he had become all the more cautious and timid. That was because strange things were likely to appear in this kind of ancient remains. After that experience in the ghost town, he always felt a lingering fear whenever he saw ancient buildings.

A strong wind rushed forth, Xiao Chen split open the base while flying in the sky. He had already unfolded the Undying Divine Wings and was floating in the sky. If something bizarre were to happen, he would withdraw from this place in

the first moments.

The boulders were sent flying as the base was split open by him. The black layers of soil on both sides were blown away by the surge of energy and the base revealed itself. There was nothing special below, not the slightest anomaly. However, just at this time, the black cloth shook even more violently. After it gave rise to a violent gale, it suddenly stopped. Then it fell towards the ground so quick as if it weighed a thousand kilograms.

It fell like this among a pile of rubble and covered a certain area.

After watching quietly for a while, Xiao Chen did not find anything inappropriate. He landed in front of the burial cloth and lifted it up.

With a “crash”, the black cloth pulled out a stone wedge.

It was a very ordinary stone. Greyish in color, and appeared very rustic. It was as thick as two fingers and as long as a palm. One side was a little pointed and it looked like a stone gimlet. Of course, it looked more like a stone wedge. It was originally used to fill in a gap in the base. However, it was actually hooked up by the black cloth.

Xiao Chen didn't pay much attention to it. He thought that there should be some other secret hidden under the base, but after lifting the huge rocks, he couldn't find anything special. All the while, the burial cloth trembled unceasingly while covering that ordinary-looking stone wedge.

The stone wedge!

This... Xiao Chen was very surprised. Could this ordinary-looking stone wedge actually be the reason that this intelligent sacred cloth was shaking?

But this was just an ordinary piece of rock! The kind that could be found everywhere in the mountains! Moreover, the one who build this palace also considered it as a waste material. He didn't treat it as anything great, and only used it to fill in the gap on the ground.

How did it become like this?

Xiao Chen remained puzzled despite much thought. He couldn't find anything particular even after observing for a really long time. His sharp spiritual sense

also couldn't find any energy fluctuation, it was just a normal rock.

Xiao Chen was obviously the last to reach this place. A lot of practitioners had already arrived before him and rummaged through this divine temple. If there was any treasure, it was very unlikely for those old farts to miss it. How could there be any good thing remaining after the place had been searched attentively by everyone?

However, the burial cloth pointed at this ordinary-looking stone. Even if it was an ordinary stone, Xiao Chen couldn't think of it as one anymore. He held the stone in his hand and turned it upside down to examine it. After a careful examination, he found that this ordinary stone was a little light. It was a little like the wood.

"Eh? It's a wood?"

With this thought, Xiao Chen found to his surprise, that it looked more like a block of wood that had been polished. The more he looked, the more he believed it was a greyish ancient wood.

It was too bizarre, how was it that he was unable to differentiate it between an ordinary stone or wood? Was it a stone or a wood, it was hard to tell.

He threw it towards a boulder. The boulder didn't break up as he expected and the rock wedge fell not far away. There was nothing unusual about it.

Xiao Chen decided to put it away carefully. Although he was unable to make out its usefulness for the time being, it shouldn't be an ordinary item.

In the vicinity of the divine island, no more practitioners were appearing. It seemed that all of them went to chase after the two young sacred beasts. This caused Xiao Chen to laugh at himself, "You guys went to fight over the sacred beasts suspected to be from the strongest race, and I am here picking up a stone."

After waiting quietly on the divine island for two days, Keke and Tenax never returned. Xiao Chen's delusion had been shattered. He decided not to wait any longer. It was time to go take a look at the depths of the desolate region.

In the following day, he found the traces of some practitioners. It was precisely from those who came to track down the young sacred beasts. Of course, these

people were not all that strong and fell behind. Those powerful ones had already disappeared into the depths.

At the same time, Xiao Chen unexpectedly found a few natives who lived in this mountain woods. They lived a very primitive life, just like the barbarians. And it was at this kind of small tribe that he saw a certain scene. It was as if he was struck by a thunderbolt immediately. He saw that this primitive little tribe was drilling wood to make fire!

In that instant, it was as if a lightning had illuminated Xiao Chen's sea of consciousness. He felt his blood racing momentarily!

That ordinary-looking stone-wood he obtained from the ruins no longer looked like an ordinary item anymore. He already knew what it was! How did Suirenshi achieve the truth? It was because of this!

This seemed like the sacred item he achieved the truth with, the Suiren Gimlet!

Thinking back to its shape; it looked like a rock, yet not a rock, it felt like a wood, yet not a wood. Xiao Chen immediately linked it to the Suiren Gimlet that the ancestral god had achieved the truth with.

Every person knew about the story of how the ancestral god made fire by drilling the wood at that time.

But it seemed like this sacred item had never been described with much detail. It seemed like nobody had ever thought of it as a sacred item. It didn't seem to possess any formidable power. The ancestral god had never used it to deal with an opponent back in those days either.

But all in all, this was definitely not an ordinary artifact!

Just when Xiao Chen was getting excited thinking about it, the roars of a dragon were transmitted from the depths of the primitive mountain range.

It was Tenax!

Xiao Chen was pleasantly surprised to the extreme. He unfolded the Undying Divine Wings and rushed forward as quick as lightning.

In the earth-shattering primitive forest, the dragon roar reverberated. It was just ahead. Xiao Chen quickly passed through one mountain wood after another

and arrived at that place. He found that Tenax and Keke were safe and sound. Apart from them, there were actually another three little beasts behind. Ancestral dragon heads and ancestral dragon tails, covered by glittering scales from head to foot.

It was actually three young Dragon Kings!

But regarding these three Dragon Kings, Xiao Chen had never seen them on the dragon island before. It was impossible for Xiao Chen not to recognize them. He was certain that he had never seen them before.

Xiao Chen simply didn't dare to believe his own eyes. This was enough to make him stupefied. Just where did Tenax and Keke find these three Dragon Kings?!

It really made one too speechless!

Chapter 165 – An Eye for an Eye

Three never seen before Dragon Kings!

They were just like Tenax, not only was the ancestral dragon head so obvious at first glance, even the ancestral dragon tail had already transformed. Just what was going on?

They obviously only brought eleven Dragon Kings back from the dragon island. In addition to Tenax who evolved later on, there should only be twelve of them in total. Just where did the three of them suddenly pop out from?

Xiao Chen had doubts in his heart, but he quickly understood what was going on. Legend said that a few ancient dragons might be living in the deepest part of the south. They were able to escape from being sealed on the dragon island. They were the kings of the dragons!

From the look of it, the legend might be true. Regardless of whether those kings were still alive, they had definitely left their bloodline behind. Moreover, it was a very noble bloodline.

The origin of these three dragon kings was really too big. In some kind of sense, their background was even greater than those young Dragon Kings from the dragon island.

The moment Xiao Chen thought of these, he wanted to keep this secret for himself. It was hard to understand if one didn't go through a series of events. Just two valuable young sacred beasts could cause the practitioners to kill one another. Let alone these three Dragon Kings.

That line of thought was good, but it was not easy to be put into practice. Xiao Chen could clearly feel the enmity coming from the three Dragon Kings. The powerful dragon-qi caused the beasts in the vicinity to be scared stiff. The entire mountain woods turned extremely quiet.

The three little Dragon Kings growled at Keke and Tenax. They exposed a deep hostility and battle intent. After that, the three of them took a quick look at each other with hostility and then separated into three different directions and

rushed into the primitive forest. Their speed could be said to be as fast as lightning as they left behind three afterimages in the forest. They disappeared in the twinkling of an eye.

It seemed like they were only ordered to see the two little beasts off. As they left without a hint of reluctance.

Although he felt a bit regretful, Xiao Chen also didn't have any other choice. The origin of the three Dragon Kings was too extraordinary, he didn't want to try his luck.

At last, Xiao Chen could roughly guess who was it that took away Keke and Tenax.

Keke and Tenax did not care about the departure of the three Dragon Kings. On the contrary, they were looking towards a certain direction unceasingly.

The snow-white little critter was very cute. It seemed to have lingering fears as it pulled its neck back. It was rare for it to expose a scared expression as it stealthily looked backwards. It was very obvious that the two of them had been taught a lesson. Tenax also wore a peculiar expression as it turned its head around from time to time. It seemed like they knew someone was watching them attentively.

Recalling the black gale, that huge beastly figure, and those glittering black scales, Xiao Chen was well aware of what it was. He didn't ask them anything. He didn't want to be meddlesome. He just brought the two little beasts and quickly left this place. Only until they walked for a hundred miles did the two little beasts finally relax and reinstate their former attitudes.

The sacred beast's intuition was the keenest. Through this, Xiao Chen knew that the existence that couldn't be provoked behind them was really gone now.

"Just what was going on?" Only now did Xiao Chen ask them.

Keke immediately squeaked and gesticulated, it seemed very excited.

Xiao Chen spent a long time to understand. The little critter's interpretation was very interesting. According to its line of thought, that was a big demon, a super big demon king!

It was a little unclear though, when Keke moved its hands and feet to describe, it felt like that that was an evil existence that could give rise to a calamity.

Tenax was also behaving strangely. It seemed to be pondering. No matter what Xiao Chen asked, it remained silent.

There was no other choice, Xiao Chen could only find out the circumstances from Keke. In the end, the information he got was a little shocking.

The snow-white little critter told him that the super big demon king was very powerful. The demon king had threatened it several times these past two days. It had also lectured Tenax once. According to the snow-white little critter, that was a hateful big bastard.

Keke angrily recounted the grievances and gestured unceasingly.

The big demon king could fly. It had brought them to a very distant location where they entered a forest that was emitting multicolored radiance. That place had a lot of spiritual items that made the snow-white little critter drool. After that, they met the three Dragon Kings there and a fierce battle broke out between them.

Keke did not hold back and sealed the three Dragon Kings. As a result, it was restrained by the big demon king. And on the other side, Tenax had a desperate fight with the three Dragon Kings. In the end, the four little dragons were on the verge of dying, but they were healed by the big demon king with an “unfathomable” method.

Afterwards the big demon king ruthlessly taught the five little beasts a lesson before he sent the two little beasts back. Moreover, he made the three Dragon Kings see them off.

Half a day later, Xiao Chen brought the two little beasts back to the divine temple. He had previously found the Sui ren Gimlet at this place. This was a very shocking discovery so Xiao Chen decided to return to this place and search every nook carefully.

But the two little beasts were not interested in this. Very soon, they charged into the primitive forest respectively. Tenax went to find monsters to battle while Keke went to look for spiritual items.

The breeze brushed past lightly. A “rustling” sound was transmitted from the primitive forest. Xiao Chen couldn’t find any new discovery on the divine isle so he went to the ruins on the ground and searched carefully.

Just at this time, his keen spiritual sense caught an ice-cold killing intent. Without making any sound, a human figure appeared beside the ruins like a specter. His entire person appeared faintly discernible like a shadow. He stood there and looked at Xiao Chen quietly.

At the same time, a peculiar aura was transmitted from the sky and a dusky fog drifted over. A human figure was hidden within the fog, floating in the sky. Only the ice-cold glint in his eyes passed through the gray fog and coldly stared at Xiao Chen.

In that instant, a murderous aura rushed forth from the forest. Two human figures covered by a hazy green radiance slowly walked over. Four people trapped Xiao Chen in the middle of the ruins.

A powerful pressure enveloped him in a split second. Xiao Chen turned pale with fright. This was a very terrifying aura, some kind of “domain” had already covered this space and suppressed him!

It was as if his body was being bound. He was unable to unfold the Undying Divine Wings and soar to the sky. He was trapped in a domain.

A cold sweat flowed down. Xiao Chen knew that he had run into some experts. The four of them were out of the ordinary. They actually worked together and laid out a “domain” to seal off this space. This kind of power was beyond him. At the very least, he didn’t have this kind of ability.

Swish!

A ray of death was launched from that drizzling fog in the sky. It was as swift as the lightning. Without waiting for Xiao Chen to make any movements, that ray of death ruthlessly sent him flying. Traces of blood spilled from the corner of his mouth. He was wounded with a single hit.

It was very obvious that the power of the Psychic in the sky far surpassed his. They were not someone he could take on!

The three on the ground had already closed in around him. The person in the

shadow was illusory and couldn't be seen clearly. The other two had green-qi lingering around their whole body, making it just as hard to see their real visage.

The person in the shadows waved their palm and hacked at Xiao Chen. The spiritual energy in the sky seemed to be sucked dry. After that, all of them launched towards Xiao Chen.

“Bang!”

The tyrannical power was omnipresent, it was impossible for Xiao Chen to dodge. It sent him flying and made him cough out a big mouthful of blood. He got up from the ground slowly and wiped the blood at the corner of his mouth. Xiao Chen coldly swept his eyes at the four persons and said, “Who are you? Why do you want to kill me?”

“You deserve to die!” The person in the dusky fog said coldly.

“We will take care of you slowly.” The two persons with green-qi lingering on their bodies advanced simultaneously. They made their move at the same time. Two green radiance crossed together as they were launched towards Xiao Chen.

Although he couldn't fly and was trapped in this special domain, Xiao Chen could still move to some extent. Just like jumping up from a swamp, Xiao Chen dodged that attack with some difficulty and at the same time, he executed the Death Blow of the four major techniques. A glaring brilliance was launched immediately.

However, in front of absolute strength, even the most exquisite secret art was unable to do anything. The enemy's power was far greater than Xiao Chen's. The crossing green radiance immediately sent Xiao Chen flying and he coughed out a big mouthful of blood again. Xiao Chen felt that his inner organs were destroyed. He was feeling acute pain all over.

The four of them far surpassed him. It seemed like they had no intention of ending his life immediately.

With four powerful experts making their move on him, Xiao Chen was unable to resist at all. The four of them were definitely at the level of Historia. Killing him was not that hard.

That person who was hiding in the shadows all along was really like a specter.

His movements were so quiet. He suddenly appeared in front of Xiao Chen like a ghost and grabbed his long hair. After that, Xiao Chen was sent flying with the palm of the hand.

Humiliation!

Absolute humiliation!

Xiao Chen felt his blood boiling. Not only was his body injured, he was also being oppressed by others like this. It made him want to let out a roar.

The person in the drizzling grey fog had an ice-cold glint in his eyes that was as sharp as the sword. With a flash, that person's figure appeared in front of Xiao Chen like a lightning and sent a drop kick.

Although Xiao Chen spared no effort to dodge and attacked with the Chaotic Patterns, he was still unable to resist. A powerful spiritual power was protecting that person's right leg. It broke through Xiao Chen's resistance in an instant and ruthlessly sent him flying.

The two on the ground with green light radiating all over their bodies moved again at the same time. They ruthlessly stepped on Xiao Chen's body simultaneously.

"Snap!"

"Snap!"

Two crunchy sounds reverberated. They snapped Xiao Chen's arms with a powerful stamp.

It was an undisguised humiliation. The opponent could definitely kill him easily, and yet, they insisted on tormenting him slowly.

The gap was really too big!

Xiao Chen knew these four persons were really too powerful. They were definitely not on the same level as him. At the very least, they must be an expert of the Historia realm. Killing him was a piece of cake.

They were definitely not persons of the same age. Even if those in the youth generations were exceptionally gifted, it was impossible for them to defeat him this effortlessly.

Four Historia realm experts, it was hard to guess their true identities. They made Xiao Chen get caught up in a critical circumstance.

“Bang!”

The person in the shadows stepped forward like a ghost and ruthlessly kicked Xiao Chen’s breastbone. The power of the “domain” was like a swamp as it trapped the seriously hurt Xiao Chen. It made him unable to muster any strength to resist and dodge.

As if they could hear the sound of the breastbone breaking, Xiao Chen was kicked high up into the sky. A bunch of blood splattered everywhere in the sky.

Humiliating!

Xiao Chen felt threatened by death. He was feeling extremely angry. This loss was only because of the gap in their age. It was because the others were one generation older than him. They had trained much longer than him. Therefore, their strength far surpassed his. However, there was nothing he could do.

The person in the dusky fog landed on the ground and joined up with the other three on the ground. Then they pressed on towards Xiao Chen all at once.

Four pairs of eyes emitted an ice-gold glint. The sound of sneering reverberated in the ruins.

“I am already a dead person in your eyes. There’s no need to hide anymore. Can you guys let me see your true identities? At least let me die while knowing what I did wrong.” Xiao Chen stood up and looked at them calmly.

“Who do you think you are? You are not fit to see our real visage. You know full well what you did!” The person in the shadows took a step forward and ruthlessly sent Xiao Chen — who was under the influence of a more powerful “domain” — flying with a kick. After that, with one step covering seven to eight meters, that person ruthlessly stamped on Xiao Chen’s arm.

“Snap!”

The sound of snapping bone could be heard.

Carrying on, the two persons shrouded in green radiance stepped forward together and lifted Xiao Chen up. They made their move at the same time and

with two “snaps”, Xiao Chen’s shoulder blades were broken. It made his two arms droop down powerlessly.

“Boy, us killing you would be as easy as killing a tick!” The two of them ruthlessly sent him flying with a slap on the face.

Xiao Chen coughed out a big mouthful of blood, then he sneered, “So you guys are from the scums’ families. You must have come to avenge your disappointing scions! Those scums are really hopeless. If I didn’t guess wrongly, you guys are more than forty years old and still, your ability until now is only at the level of Historia. And you have the face to brag in front of me?! If you guys were twenty years younger, about the same age as me, even the four of you together wouldn’t be fit for me to raise my finger!”

“Shut your mouth!” That Psychic who landed on the ground protected his body with a light barrier and rushed over with the speed of lightning. He ruthlessly grabbed Xiao Chen’s long hair. And then, with a knee to the face, Xiao Chen was sent flying, while blood was spraying from his mouth and nose.

“The four of you are merely mixed fish. Your total age combined would be more than several hundred years already. And yet, the four of you can only handle a younger generation like me by acting together. You guys will never become a real expert in your lifetime. You can only do this kind of shady things in the dark.” Although Xiao Chen was getting wounded unceasingly, his eyes had an undisguised contempt. All of this was only to stall for time, to make the four torment him due to wrath and not kill him immediately.

Chapter 166 – Retribution

This kind of look made the four of them feel very unpleasant. Xiao Chen's wounded body got hit again.

"Who do you think you are? Do you think you are unparalleled with just the power of Exuvia Ninth Celestial Layer?"

"Today, we'll taunt you until you die!"

The ruthless sound reverberated in the ruins.

While Xiao Chen was coughing out blood, he sneered, "Exuvia Ninth Celestial Layer may be nothing, but can you guys find a youth expert around my level in your family? I can sweep the floor with every youth in your family. Give me a few more years and even all of you would be nothing more than a poop at the side of the road."

Xiao Chen did not lose because he did not have enough power, but rather because the enemies were too strong and were one generation older than him. The reason he kept arguing against the four was merely to stall for time.

As if it had hit their sore spot, the four of them relentlessly hit him again to humiliate Xiao Chen. A few more of his bones were shattered.

"The older generation cannot rashly make their move against the younger generation. You guys really want to go on regardless of those rules? You really want to continue this shameless act till the very end?" Xiao Chen's eyes were brimming with contempt.

"Hmph! Rules are not alive, humans are alive! Nobody will know even if we kill you now! There's no one except the beasts within a radius of ten meters. Even if you die, you will die for nothing! Un, everyone will think you lost your life in the south desolate region fighting over those young sacred beasts."

"You guys are really shameless. Using four middle-aged men to deal with the next generation like this. As expected, the scums are born from the same tree!"

His sneer echoed in the ruins. The four of them stared at Xiao Chen with an ice-cold gaze.

“You can continue to flaunt your mouth. We will torment you slowly. Let’s see who ends up suffering more!”

“You guys can torment me now, but the four of you are also screwed.” Xiao Chen sneered and said, “Didn’t your family always harbor suspicions about my identity? I can tell you now, I came from the depths of the south!”

“Impossible!” The middle-aged person in the shadows was clearly shocked as he said, “We already investigated you thoroughly. You came from the mortal world, and not from the deepest part of the south.”

“You guys can go to the depths of this desolate region and ask. Someone definitely saw me when I showed up in the mountain woods with four young Dragon Kings. They are the young Dragon Kings that came from the deepest part of the south!” Xiao Chen’s voice was very cold, “You guys think that humiliating me is nothing? Just wait and see, you guys will definitely be wiped out without a trace!”

Hearing these, the four of them stopped involuntarily and didn’t make another move. That Psychic soared into the sky and quickly flew towards the depths of the south.

The other three quietly stood there, not making any sound.

In merely fifteen minutes later, that Psychic flew back and nodded towards the other three. Then he said, “Someone saw him make contact with a few Dragon Kings for a brief moment. I killed two of them, but from what the two were saying, there’s another two who saw it. They already left a long time ago, I am unable to find them.”

The gazes of the four were incomparably cold. They looked at Xiao Chen simultaneously. Their mood was constantly changing between hesitation and determination.

Just at this time, Xiao Chen suddenly shouted, “Seal the four of them!”

The four of them wanted to make their move immediately after hearing these, but the dazzling rainbow-colored radiance dropped down from all directions and submerged this place in a split second. The four of them were sealed within a glorious radiance.

The snow-white little Keke had returned! It was carrying a golden ginseng king about half a meter long. It was glaring at them furiously. Not far away, Tenax was also letting out a growl. It looked at them with an ominous glint.

“Good!” Xiao Chen clenched his teeth and said, “Keke, you just keep them like this for a while. I will personally dispose of them!”

The “domain” laid out by the four Historia level experts had already disappeared. It was completely dispersed by Keke’s mystical power. It was completely replaced by the rainbow-colored “prison”.

Xiao Chen clenched his teeth and struggled to sit down. After that, he began to adjust his breathing. Waves of jewel-like splendor emitted from his body. The bones produced a “cackling sound” and after executing his secret arts for a brief moment, the fractures were temporarily fixed. It was barely enough to let Xiao Chen move.

Pulling out that jet-black broken sword, Xiao Chen walked forward with unsteady steps. Without thinking twice, he directly chopped four left palms.

“Ah!!!”

“Ah!!!”

The miserable shriek reverberated in the ruins.

“Don’t worry, I will not let you guys die so quickly.”

The four had never thought that the snow-white little critter with Xiao Chen actually had the power to seal them. This was simply unbelievable. The pain from the bloody cut off palms made them break out cold sweat unceasingly.

“It seems like the four of you are very fond of humiliating people. I will serve you guys carefully today and let you enjoy this kind of pleasure yourselves.”

Xiao Chen really hated these four people to the extreme. With another wave of his jet-black broken sword, four left ears were cut off. At the same time, the hazy radiances shrouding the four person dispersed and revealed their real visage.

The four of them all had blonde hair, and around forty or so years old. Pain filled their whole face.

“So it is the Reagan Family’s people. I originally thought it was Zhuge Family’s. I

will definitely not let Hofmann off this time!”

The four of them had bitter expressions as they stared at Xiao Chen fiercely.

“I am very displeased with your expressions. If you were begging for forgiveness or crying out in pain, maybe it would alleviate a little of my resentment.” Speaking until here, Xiao Chen waved the jet-black broken sword in his hand again.

“Pfff! Pfff!”

The blood splashed everywhere. Four legs were chopped off by Xiao Chen. Right now, he didn’t show any mercy or distraught. Just now, the four of them tormented him and broke the bones all over his body. He had already built up a bellyful of rage.

“Ah!!!”

“Ah!!!”

The sharp pain made the four of them let out a miserable shriek. They were unable to bear this kind of pain.

“I slapped Hofmann in the face, but that is because he is guilty and deserves to be punished. Murder and arson, raping female students, he has done all kind of bad deeds. If not because I was apprehensive of your family, I would have hanged him alive on that very day!” Xiao Chen’s words were very cold, “You guys humiliated me, only to take revenge for a scum. What kind of reasoning is that? Now I will give you a taste of your own medicine. Didn’t you guys want to torment me until I die? I will let you guys taste it yourselves.”

Xiao Chen consecutively waved the sword four times and shattered many bones in their bodies.

Since they were mortal enemies, there was no need to be merciful.

Being merciful to the enemies was the same as being cruel to oneself. Xiao Chen was determined to not let them off. With a raise of a hand, the sword dropped down on them. Their right legs were also separated from their bodies. The blood splashed very high and dyed the ruins red.

“Xiao Chen, you bastard!”

The four of them cursed.

“Didn’t the four of you say that killing me was as easy as crushing a tick?”

Xiao Chen waved the sword again. Their arms were also chopped off. The blood gushed out unceasingly. The bloody mist pervaded the forest.

Xiao Chen carried the four of them and threw them beside an anthill. The poisonous ants in the forest were very violent, they crawled all over the four person’s body in a moment.

The miserable shrieks made one’s scalp feel numb. It sounded exceptionally painful and miserable.

Fifteen minutes later, Xiao Chen walked over and said, “I will relieve you of your pain!”

With the raise of a hand, the sword dropped down. After four black lights flickered, four heads were chopped off. The heads flew diagonally and dropped at the tip of a tree far away. The bloody mist drifted in the forest.

Xiao Chen brought Keke and Tenax along as they left this place. After that, he began to heal his wounds in a hidden precipice. Fractures were not a horrible injury for a Ninth Celestia Layer expert like Xiao Chen. He also practiced in the Vajra, as he wanted to train his body to the point it was capable of standing off against divine artifacts, as a result his body was the most resilient. In merely three days, his bones were completely reconnected. During this time, the joints were letting out cackling sounds and sounded especially scary.

These past three days, quite a commotion was raised in the south desolate region. Four experts from the Reagan Family were beheaded. Their heads hanging on the treetop attracted a lot of attention.

After another night of recuperating, Xiao Chen returned to the Celestial City with Keke and Tenax on the fourth day. He was not interested in those two young sacred beasts believed to be from the strongest race. He didn’t want to stay at that place and trod through mud and water anymore.

Just when he returned to the Celestial City, he ran into an acquaintance. It was the lofty Dugu Jianmo. He was currently holding a double-edged sword and confronting someone. It was a youth with demonic nature. It gave people the

feeling of complete wildness. At the outer area, there was another youth with blue hair. He was looking at everything with a smile.

A lot of practitioners gathered in the surroundings.

“Dugu Jianmo and Windfeathers are about to fight!” Someone at the side commented in a low voice.

When Xiao Chen got closer to the battlefield, Dugu Jianmo, Windfeathers, and that blue-haired youth seemed to have felt something. They turned their sight towards him simultaneously. Xiao Chen could feel a powerful pressure. The power within his body was aroused.

“Rumble!”

The four experts let off a powerful energy fluctuation. A “domain” actually appeared in the field!

At the same time, the genius of the north, Wuxing Feng, also arrived with two more people. Just at this time, he also let off a powerful energy fluctuation.

“Rumble!”

The invisible “domain” had been reinforced one step further.

“Interesting!”

A rebellious voice was transmitted from not far away and another person walked towards the field from a different direction!

At this moment, the “domain” evoked by the strongest youth warriors suddenly became stronger in a flash!

Chapter 167 – Stand Out From The Masses

The heaven and earth suddenly became dark, as if the netherworld field was about to swallow up the mother earth. It became pitch-black within a radius of a hundred meters. The terrifying “domain” enveloped this area.

Just at this very instant, everyone who got caught up in this “domain” seemed to have lost their sense of hearing and eyesight. They couldn’t hear anything with their ears nor could they see anything with their eyes, as if they had become disabled.

The ordinary practitioners who got trapped in this field were very terrified. This kind of feeling was the most inappropriate in regards to the practitioners. They had been deprived of their sense of hearing and vision.

This was entirely caused by few of the strongest youth experts. They were still unable to create a “domain” by themselves, but when several of them got together — even if they were hostile towards one another — they were able to let off the most powerful spiritual sense and power, which brought about this terrifying scene before their eyes.

One must know that they were distinguished persons in various regions. There were hardly any equal among their peers. They might even become influential figures in certain areas in the future. Their potential could be said to be unlimited. The domain that appeared now was the hidden potential that was hibernating within their bodies. It was the manifestation of their divine power in advance.

The domain was set into motion violently. It was like the great waves of the ocean. Then, with a few sudden vibrations, the ordinary practitioners were all flung away. Soon after, several human figures moved at lightning speed within the pitch-black domain. They were as swift as a ghost.

“Clink!”

Xiao Chen raised up the broken sword to block the blow. It felt as if he was struck by a thunderbolt. His opponent’s figure also trembled. After that, he left behind an afterimage as he retreated.

Dugu Jianmo!

He made his prowess as a swordsman known to the whole world. His swordsmanship was unparalleled among his peers.

Just now, it was him who clashed with Xiao Chen. The surrounding space distorted and became fuzzy, as if the space was being squeezed by someone.

“Rumble!”

As if there was an earthquake, someone rushed towards Xiao Chen. After his foot fell to the ground, the earth burst open. That person was just like a steel demon. His savagery caused people to be appalled.

That person was tall and thin, but it felt as if there were thousand tons of weight behind his attack as it crashed down like a mountain!

“Clang!”

As if the space was ripped apart, the turbulence circulated at high speed and let out an incomparably ear-piercing noise.

The newcomer suddenly sent a punch towards Xiao Chen’s head. Words were unable to describe how aggressive and tyrannical he was. It was as if he didn’t care about anyone under the heavens. That naturally included Xiao Chen. It could even be said that he was looking at the whole world disdainfully out of the corner of his eyes while making his move at will.

It was actually Windfeathers, that wild and demonic youngster! He didn’t attach importance to anything in his eyes, it was as if he was the only one in this world, and the others were nothing more than stepping stones.

Xiao Chen restrained the restless Keke with the hand that was holding the sword. Then he sent a punch with his other hand unhurriedly. It was a test of strength! The body was a treasure, the fists were for protecting that treasure. With one punch, strong wind spread across all directions. A resplendent radiance seemed to rip apart the darkness of the domain. The violent energy caused the surface of the earth to burst open unceasingly!

“Clink!”

When the two fists collided, they actually let out a metallic sound. It was as

deafening as the sudden clap of thunder. It caused many practitioners' eardrums to buzz and go deaf momentarily.

Windfeathers distanced himself after one attack. Without much delay, he immediately charged towards the next opponent.

Xiao Chen stood there motionlessly, prepared to receive the next person's strongest attack.

For these top-level young warriors to get together, it was something very hard to come by! Right now, in this dark, nefarious domain, everyone was looking for a chance to make their move. They wanted to test the power of their greatest enemies in the future.

As the strongest warrior in their respective regions, then they would inevitably traverse the world. These people were bound to cross swords.

“Rips!”

A glaring light tore the darkness apart and swept towards Xiao Chen. This was from a very powerful Psychic, this was a very rare and bizarre ability — the Light of Destruction. It was specialized in stripping somebody of their life. The terrifying light was like the scythe of the Grim Reaper.

However, it was impossible for him to reap Xiao Chen's life with a single strike. The jet-black broken sword swept across his view. The resplendent sword-qi rolled out like the torrential river and clashed with that glaring Light of Destruction. Just like the melting ice and snow, the two energies fell apart in a flash.

“Hah!”

Another terrifying light beam swept towards Xiao Chen. The light of death rushed over from another direction. It was yet another terrifying young expert. Xiao Chen was more happy than fearful as he responded unhurriedly. While maintaining the status quo, he confronted everyone's attack from all directions.

Just how many young experts were there in the dark, gloomy domain? Nobody knew for sure. At present, the figures in the domain were leaping all over the place with speed as fast as lightning. Only the terrifying spiritual spells and the resplendent sword-qis ripped apart the darkness from time to time.

In a brief instant, everyone in the domain had already carried out the most thrilling clash.

At this moment, time seemed to have stopped. However, it suddenly sped up again in the next instant.

“Rumble!”

After a loud sound, the dark domain collapsed. Nobody knew who was the first to rush out of the domain. Following closely, human figures leapt towards all directions and dispersed.

Everyone in the domain had retreated in that very instant. When the dark domain completely faded away, only Xiao Chen and the two little beasts remained.

The breeze brushed past lightly. Xiao Chen stood on the field calmly. His tall and straight body was motionless. Only his black hair was fluttering along with the wind.

Traces of blood spilled from the corner of his mouth but Xiao Chen stood there unmoving for a good while before he wiped the traces of blood. After that, his body suddenly exploded with a burst of glaring light and his light injuries instantly healed. This was the power of vajra. Every time he was wounded, his body would become more resilient.

He knew that those people had also sustained injuries. After launching their strongest attacks respectively, none of them came out unscathed.

“Let’s hope nobody can breakthrough to Historia realm in a short time...” Xiao Chen muttered under his breath. These people already reached Exuvia Ninth Celestial Layer, they were on the same level as him. Just one more step and they would enter the incomparably vast whole new world.

But these people knew, that it was very, very hard to make a breakthrough. There was a huge protective screen blocking their path. Not only did they need time to breakthrough, what they needed even more was a stroke of luck.

“Let’s go!”

Xiao Chen unfolded the Undying Divine Wings. He soared into the sky with

Keke and Tenax as he flew towards his residence.

Only now did the spectators let out a cry of surprise.

“Dragon King, that was a Dragon King!”

“A never seen before Dragon King.”

“Don’t tell me... rather than eleven Dragon Kings, there are twelve?!”

.....

Xiao Chen didn’t want to cause Tenax to feel wronged again. A dragon was a dragon! There shouldn’t be a need to disguise itself as a horse or a tiger. It was time to restore it to its original appearance. There was no need to cover up its drive! Want to scheme against Tenax? Go ask that big demon king in the depths of the south first!

He believed that the news should have already spread to a limited extent. Those who had sufficient power should have already received the news that Tenax and three young Dragon Kings were walking side by side in the south desolate region. If they think they have enough power to confront that existence in the depths of the south, then let them go ahead and come up with some devious schemes. Otherwise, they could only feign ignorance.

There were only about two more months before the warbeast tournament began. The people that should come should have already arrived. At present, numerous experts gathered in Celestial City. The practitioners from every regions were gathered in the south. A huge storm was about to break out.

Xiao Chen was behind closed doors for three days. He had indulged in training these past few days, wanting to take a step into Historia realm in one go. The scene where he was tormented by the four experts of the Reagan Family constantly irritated him. Xiao Chen wanted to break into that even wider domain as soon as possible.

He knew that those Ninth Celestial Layer genius were of the same mind as him. They wanted to be the first to break into the Historia realm and overpower the young generation!

“Xiao Chen, are you crazy?” Fairsky looked at him bewilderedly and said, “You

are only digging your own grave by doing this!”

Fairsky was a practitioner, in regards to the martial way, he was very clear about all kinds of taboos. When he heard that Xiao Chen actually wanted to use spiritual items to break through, he promptly opposed against the idea.

“I am very normal. I know what I am doing.” Xiao Chen was very calm.

“You... really don’t know or are you faking it?” Fairsky looked at Xiao Chen in puzzlement and said, “What people should abstain the most in the martial way is a ‘shortcut’. As long as you want to become a practitioner with great accomplishments, you must breakthrough with your own strength. Through hard work and not by relying on external forces. This was the crystallization of the predecessor’s wisdom.” 1

Fairsky said, “I don’t believe you are unaware of these reasons. Spiritual items might allow oneself to obtain great power in a short time, but if there’s a gain, there’s also bound to be a loss. By the time he obtained that dream-like power, it also meant that he lost the qualification to become the strongest. The power he obtained from an external source became a shackle that prevented him from developing his own power. It became a chain that made him unable to breakthrough forever. Doing this is equivalent to sealing your own future path. Do you really not understand the crystallization of the predecessor’s wisdom?”

“Of course I know about this.” Xiao Chen replied calmly, “but my ‘way’ is different from that of the masses!”

“Is your training method very special? Do you think you have surpassed all of the predecessors?”

“It’s not because of the training method.” It seemed like Xiao Chen didn’t want to reveal too much.

Looking at how Xiao Chen obstinately persisted on going about things the wrong way, Fairsky shook his head and said, “If you were other people, I wouldn’t even try to advocate you. But you are out of the ordinary, being this willful will only get your fingers burnt. What a warrior needs apart from an excelling constitution is a will to never give out. If your power is stuck at a certain level sometime in the future, how will you be able to bear it for eternity? You will ultimately be destroying yourself!”

Fairsky heaved a sigh and said, "Among the quotes from the crystallization of wisdom, some quotes are truer than the truth! 'Warriors are not afraid of loneliness, they are most afraid of standing at a standstill forever.' If you really want to cling to this course so obstinately, you will eventually understand the meaning behind this quote."

"What I want to do is to walk a path the predecessors didn't dare to take. Why must I follow the path of the predecessors?" Xiao Chen looked at the clouds and said, "Everything you said, I've heard of them before. I know that continuing down this path is not wrong. What I want to say is, my martial way is also not wrong. I am speaking as a fact. I have tried to take some spiritual items before, and indeed, my path had been sealed for a short period of time. However, I didn't believe that it was a dead end and continued to train hard. And the result? My power was like the river water that burst out of the dam, it was unstoppable. I kept making breakthroughs after breakthroughs. I had smashed the so-called chains, I had overcome the so-called shackles, and I took a step into a new peak."

"You are too stubborn." Fairsky felt very helpless. He tried to advise him one last time, "With your current power, there's hardly anyone among your peers that can stand up to you. Just keep going down this path, and your future outlook will be unlimited. Why must you make a breakthrough so hurriedly?"

"You still don't believe my words, but you must know that my analogy is not wrong." Xiao Chen explained, "This so-called 'shackle' or 'chain' is similar to an invulnerable 'dam'. It is a well fortified 'dam' that cannot be destroyed. It cuts off the river and blocks the path. In this case, the most possible outcome is that the river will change its course and rush upstream, break away from the river mouth and flow into disorder. This is the self-destruction you were talking about. However, if you can hold on to your own body, rely on that inextinguishable torrential river, and focus on pounding against that invulnerable dam, it is not impossible to overcome the obstacle. At this time, if the accumulated torrential river surges on, not only can you break through the dam, you can even force open some of the 'hurdles' downstream. It could even be said to be a smooth and rapid progress!"

Fairsky was totally speechless. Of course, that was not because he was convinced, but rather, he felt helpless. He knew that it was pointless to continue

persuading him. He said, "What you are doing is a dishonest practice."

"There's no such thing as the so-called wrong path. There are three thousand main paths, so why should we follow the path set by the predecessors? If we follow every step set by the predecessors, there's no way we can ever surpass them. Of course, the 'way' I am currently practicing is definitely not the only 'way' in the future. It is constantly evolving because I believe a lot of people have already practiced this kind of 'way'. What I want to do at the present stage is to have the courage to walk a different 'path', and practice a different 'way'."

"In the end, this is still a dishonest practice."

"The way that I want to practice is not the 'indirect route' that you are thinking of. The 'way' I want to practice is the 'main path' that comprises all living things in the world. I don't want to confine myself in a small world, I want to grasp everything in the big world." Xiao Chen said very casually, "Small as in a blade of grass, or a tree. Big as in a long river, a huge mountain, the vast ocean, or all living things in the big world. Any one person is only an insignificant part of this big world. In the eyes of the world, what differences does it make? How to differentiate foreign materials from itself? The 'way' of the predecessors derives from main path. But my 'way' comprises the whole world. It contains everything, accepts anything... the so-called truth, should ultimately be, for all living things to be in harmony..."

Fairsky did not feel like saying much anymore.

"Don't worry, I will not build up a 'huge dam' all at once. I will do it like before, slowly building up the small dam, slowly pounding against it, and slowly breaking through."

Letting Zhuge fatty to purchase the spiritual items was not a problem. With his connections, he should be able to get something good. Xiao Chen had more than hundred thousand gold coins with him. He had given it all to the fatty.

In regards to this, even if the whole world was opposed to it, Xiao Chen still had one who supported him. That was precisely Keke. The little critter cheerfully lifted four of its little beast paws to approve. 2

It must be mentioned that the fatty's work efficiency was very high. On the second day, he had already delivered a batch of spiritual items. Of course, the

expenditure was also very astonishing. He had spent eighty thousand gold coins in one go. Half of the gold coins were already spent.

It was easy to see from this. It was impossible to train like this without money!

The most expensive spiritual item among this batch was an Amethyst Ginseng King. According to the estimate, it should be very old. Fifty thousand gold coins were spent on this alone.

“This is beyond reasonable limits. Zhuge Liang, you sure you haven’t been scammed?”

“The seller wouldn’t even sell it if there was one gold coin less. Reportedly, this old ginseng is very bizarre. When the seller purchased it, he had heard from the old native who excavated the mountain ginseng that the old ginseng king was excavated along with a white tortoise. You must know this, the people who excavate ginsengs pay particular attention to these. If they can excavate an old ginseng guarded by living animals, be it a snake or a rat, it is enough to say that the old ginseng is a rarely seen spiritual item. Even more so when it is the rarely seen long lived white tortoise. That intelligent tortoise is an auspicious animal! It was a pity that the old native did not know of these. He sold the white tortoise separately. Otherwise, as that seller had said, if that white tortoise was still around, he wouldn’t even sell it for less than a hundred thousand gold coins.”

Xiao Chen stared at it blankly, then his mind burst into a frenzy. What white tortoise guarding the old ginseng? That was evidently a dragon! If that was true, then wouldn’t this old ginseng be a genuine article?

Xiao Chen wasn’t the only one who had realized this. Tenax had also figured it out. It was no longer acting cool. Its pair of dragon eyes already turned soft as it looked at that pile of spiritual items together with Xiao Chen.

However, they found that the old ginseng king had disappeared. They suddenly turned their heads around to find the incomparably infatuated snow-white little Keke. It was embracing that old ginseng king firmly while drooling. Its expression was brimming with happiness and satisfaction. It seemed like it would faint from happiness.

Xiao Chen yelled hurriedly, “Wait!”

The snow-white little critter was already prepared to take a bite. After hearing this, it turned its head around to cast a doubtful glance. However, it was still unable to resist the temptation and took a small bite with a “crunch”.

In that instant, a colorful light soared up and the entire courtyard was filled by that bewitching aroma.

Naturally, the little critter would never eat without sharing some with the others.

Chapter 168 – The Might of Dragon Ginseng

The snow-white little critter had a look of happiness and satisfaction across its entire face. The half an inch long amethyst old ginseng firmly embraced by it was almost as big as the snow-white little critter itself. Keke puckered up its cute little nose and took a bite of the ginseng with a “crunch”. In that instant, a colorful light soared up and filled the entire courtyard with a bewitching aroma.

This kind of bizarre event was really too astonishing. The multicolored light actually enveloped the entire courtyard. It was as if Keke was embracing a multicolored sun. The refreshing fruit fragrance made people endlessly intoxicated. The heavily scented fragrance was too strong. It was as if it had seeped deep into people’s bones in an instant and made them completely intoxicated.

The external layer of the old ginseng was amethyst in color, but the interior was flickering with multicolored brilliance. There was absolutely no ginseng flesh, there was only a honey-like sticky liquid. The bright, sticky, and colorful liquid slowly flowed out from the old skin.

At this moment, even the people on the main street were able to smell this bewitching fragrance.

Xiao Chen, Keke, and Tenax were completely revelled in enjoying the old ginseng. This was truly worthy of being the spiritual item guarded by the dragon, it was too extraordinary.

The sticky multicolored liquid dissolved immediately after entering the mouth. That kind of flavor was too wonderful for words. Xiao Chen felt the pores all over his body open up. His whole body felt incomparably relaxed. The liquid dissolved into countless specks of light in his mouth, and rushed into hundreds of veins in his four limbs.

“Gulp...” The fatty swallowed the saliva with all his strength. How he wished he could rush over there at once to snatch a bite or two.

Fairsky, who was usually keeping his manners in check, was also not much better at this moment. He forced himself to turn around and secretly swallowed

his saliva.

“There’s enough for everyone, you guys should also come over here.” Xiao Chen smiled as he called out to the fatty and Fairsky.

The snow-white little Keke was a little unwilling. It was willing to share it with Xiao Chen and Tenax, but not so much when it came to other people. It cast a side glance at the two with its big black eyes, then it exerted itself physically to swallow up a big mouthful of multicolored liquid. In that instant, it involuntarily shut its eyes and groaned unceasingly as if infatuated.

“Forget it. I will absolutely not rely on external forces in my martial way.” Fairsky refused.

The fatty swallowed his saliva with all his strength and said, “I really want to eat it, but I am not a practitioner. I’m afraid I won’t be able to bear this kind of spiritual item. I usually only eat tortoise stew but I still end up with a fierce nosebleed. I’m afraid I won’t be able to enjoy this kind of good thing.” He felt rather regretful as he swallowed his saliva.

Looking at his gluttonous appearance, even Keke exposed a scornful expression. Xiao Chen smiled and tore a small piece — about the size of a fingernail — from the old ginseng. He passed it to the fatty and said, “Why not try a little.”

“Okay!” The fatty was very straightforward. He immediately swallowed it after receiving it.

He ate very straightforwardly, he also fell very straightforwardly. He seemed to be making a big fuss at the same time he turned over on the ground, “Hot! Hot! Hot!! It is comparable to a vitality soup stewed with one thousand tortoises. I can’t stand it anymore!”

Looking at the fatty again, he was having a nosebleed and his entire body was turning red, as if he was getting cooked thoroughly.

Fairsky hastily rushed over to help. And at the same time something unexpected also happened to Xiao Chen.

Of course, it was not like the fatty who couldn’t handle something so strong. Rather, a powerful gravitational force occurred in his body and directly gobbled

up the essence of the multicolored liquid.

The divinization of the acupoints that hadn't occurred in a long time showed up again!

The Baihui Acupoint 1 at the top of the head was an important acupuncture point in the human's body. At this moment, it was just like a bottomless pit as it crazily absorbed the powerful spiritual energy that had just entered Xiao Chen's body. The inexhaustible life essence was like a river flowing back to the ocean. All of it concentrated on a single direction! At last, it was condensed into a speck of resplendent light. The Baihui Acupoint was getting divinized at high speed!

It was much faster compared to the divinization of the other acupoints in the past. Xiao Chen felt a little helpless as it was happening again. He was unable to control this powerful spiritual energy according to his will. All of it gathered towards a certain point and divinized a certain acupoint, independent of his wishes.

It didn't end with just this. A black vortex actually appeared on the Toil Palace Acupoints 2 on Xiao Chen's left and right hands. They were crazily depriving more than half of the old ginseng king in his hands.

Keke and Tenax were quick enough as they grabbed the other half. The remaining part was immediately transformed into one resplendent light after another as they rushed into the black vortex at the hollow of Xiao Chen's palms.

The Toil Palace Acupoints were located at the dead center of the palms. Its position was very special. At this very moment, the black vortex on Xiao Chen's both hands made them seem like the hands of a demon. Words were unable to describe how bizarre it was.

The essence was gathered at lightning speed. The multicolored liquid was all transformed into brilliant rays and assimilated into his body. Afterwards the pitch-black vortex slowly faded. In its place, two specks of resplendent multicolored light were fixed on the hollow of the palms. The Toil Palace Acupoints on both hands were completely divinized. Compared to the other acupuncture points, they were like lamps in the dead of the night!

Keke and Tenax shared the other half of the old ginseng king equally. The first half was completely plundered by Xiao Chen's three major acupoints. The three

specks of light had fused perfectly with the acupoints. The light specks were the acupoints, the acupoints were the light specks. They were completely divinized and when compared to the ordinary acupoints, they were like three bright moons in the night sky!

Half of the multicolored old ginseng king was actually able to divinize three major acupoints. It was easy to tell just how much life essence it contained. One must know that the eggs of the Tyrannical Dragon, Eight-Clawed Tyrant Dragon, *etc.* were only able to divinize a single acupoint each.

This was practically a Dragon Ginseng!

Xiao Chen profoundly felt the mysteriousness of his secret art again.

He wasn't able to refine the tremendous essence and use it to increase his own power. All of it was gathered in the acupoints and formed the three resplendent light specks. However, Xiao Chen was not disappointed. After all, that huge volume of spiritual essence was still amassed into his body and not wasted.

Just at this time, as if mysterious arteries and veins appeared in his body, the divinized acupoints were all connected.

The Shang Hill Acupoints in the left and right foot, the Center Palace Acupoint in the chest, the Shoulder Well Acupoints in the left and right shoulders, the Toil Palace Acupoints in the left and right palms and the Baihui Acupoint at the top of the head. The eight major acupoints formed a resplendent light speck. At this very moment, they pulsed violently, and emitted glaring rays of light that directly burst out from his body.

It made Keke and Tenax who were closest to him to jump up with fright. The eight major acupoints seemed to be linked up by an unseen vein!

The life energy was actually circulating between the eight major acupoints. That kind of connection couldn't be seen with the naked eyes, and yet, he could feel it very clearly. That life energy continually flowed at great speed between the eight major acupoints.

The life energy was exceptionally vigorous!

Xiao Chen felt as if he had nine lives! The vigorous life energy made his skin circulate with glorious brilliance. Even his flesh and bones were filled with

abundant multicolored light. It was as if they had been thoroughly tempered.

Every inch of his skin was brimming with power. It was as if his body was made out of adamantium. Vaguely, Xiao Chen could feel like he was reborn.

Vajra!

The divinized acupoints upgraded Xiao Chen's Vajra technique. Although he did not obtain that enormous essence and thereby broken into the Historia realm, Xiao Chen's body had still undergone a transformation. The ordinary spears or swords wouldn't be able to injure his body anymore.

His physical body had reached a freakish level. Only a very few among his peers could have physical body as powerful as his.

The life energy was even more astonishing. If he was to sustain injuries now, they would be healed in the shortest possible time.

The body was a treasure box, the inside contained treasures.

Nobody knew how much secrets the body was hiding. Nobody knew the true limits of the human body. Historia, where one unearths the treasures in one's body and opens the doors to the hidden potential of the human's body!

Xiao Chen, it was as if he was already looking up at that dazzling treasure, as if the treasure of life was waiting for him to unearth it.

The price to pay for the divinization of the acupoints was too demanding. After leaving the dragon island, Xiao Chen felt that this kind of opportunity was hard to come by without the dragon eggs. However, he found a new hope today.

The human body possessed three hundred and sixty five main acupoints. If each and every one of the main acupoints changed into a light speck, if three hundred and sixty five main acupoints were divinized, what kind of transformation would take place? Xiao Chen was all the more looking forward to that day.

When everything finally calmed down, it seemed like there were divine flames throbbing in Xiao Chen's eyes. The divine light flickered in his eyes!

When he remained in one place, his body was like a lofty mountain, majestic and motionless. When he moved, it was as if the stars had fallen on mother

earth and shattered everything in their path.

Xiao Chen's body flashed and disappeared from the courtyard. Afterimages appeared in every directions in the sky. The space seemed to have been ripped apart. He seemed to cut through space as he moved.

The fatty whose nosebleed had finally stopped had an annoyed expression as he said, "This is unreasonable! People eat the old ginseng and become so healthy and active, while I get a nosebleed."

Fairsky was instead getting envious. He felt that Xiao Chen's state seemed to have improved to some extent.

"Your power level increased?"

"No, only my body became more powerful. The power and speed have increased by a wide margin."

"That is still not considered leveling up?"

"No, Historia is where we open up the treasures in our body. I haven't pushed open any doors." Speaking until here, Xiao Chen faced Fairsky and the fatty, then he said, "Can you guys scout out Dugu Jianmo, Katalina's freak brother, Windfeathers, and the other people's residences for me?"

After listening to Xiao Chen's brief explanation, the two of them finally realized. He actually wanted to find all the strongest warriors of the youth generation, and not only those few from the south.

Three days ago, the strongest youths had showed up in Celestial City. They had gathered together for a short duration and triggered an unforeseeable domain. Xiao Chen's targets were these people.

"Are you crazy?" Fairsky looked at Xiao Chen with shock, because he could already feel the battle intent coming from the other person's eyes.

"I urgently need to wage a fierce battle. I can already see a whole new world right before my eyes. I only need to push myself to the limit to break into that new world in the shortest amount of time."

"If you want to challenge them, why is there a need to make me scout out all of them?" Fairsky looked at him doubtfully. He had a bad premonition.

At last, Xiao Chen's words made Fairsky's premonition come true.

"I am not going to challenge them. I am going to kill all of them! One after another. After ten continuous battle, I might come back here on the verge of dying." Speaking until here, Xiao Chen said to Keke and Tenax, "Tonight, the both of you don't go anywhere. Just wait for me at home. I will definitely be back to recuperate before daybreak. At that time, if someone wants to break into this residence, come one kill one, come two kill two!"

"This is too crazy!" Fairsky was a little flabbergasted.

Chapter 169 – Infernal Corpse

Xiao Chen's decision was very crazy. Not to challenge, but to kill all of them. One battle after another, ten continuous battles, wanting to transcend his limits through life and death battles. To rise to an even wider world, to achieve the evolution of the body and mind.

However, if he was a little incautious, he might die in Celestial City today.

The evening approached quickly. The fatty and Fairsky had already sent people to search out the majority of the people's residences.

Xiao Chen was standing at the courtyard all along as he watched the afterglow of the sunset. He might open the door to the treasure in his body after the battle. He might even end up on the verge of dying, just like this setting sun that didn't last for long.

He urgently needed this battle. He didn't want to attempt nothing and accomplish nothing in the limited time available. Reaching Immortalis realm at the age of forty five was easier said than done. He didn't have an iota of time to waste. The limited life must not be wasted. He must become the strongest in the shortest time possible.

Whoosh!

A stream of air circulated in the courtyard at lightning speed as a ray of white light cut through the space. The white-shelled tortoise had a very vivid expression, like that of a human. It seemed to be very angry as it ran around the courtyard at lightning speed. It was as swift as the wind. 1

After that, its clear black eyes were firmly fixed on the old ginseng skin on the ground. It crawled over there slowly, brimming with unwillingness, regretfulness, and resentment.

And then, it actually stood up, like a palm-sized gnome. It quickly swept its eyes past everyone in the courtyard. Of course, including Keke and Tenax.

"Eh? It's a white-shelled tortoise. This couldn't be the one that guarded the old ginseng right?" When the fatty saw this little tortoise with strange origin, he felt

very surprised and said in doubt, “When I was buying that old ginseng, the seller told me that the white-shelled tortoise was already sold by the pharmacist separately. How is it possible for it to show up here? This is too regretful, if we could stew this white-shelled tortoise with that old ginseng, it would definitely be the most exceptional tonic!”

Whoosh!

The white-shelled tortoise was as quick as lightning. It jumped into the sky and stood there like a human. It twisted its waist and bent its arm before it sent out two punches in rapid succession.

“Pow! Pow!”

“Ow...!”

Two punches hit the rim of the fatty’s eyes. Zhuge fatty immediately yelled in pain like a wolf. Then he shouted in anger, “Mother f—! What is this tortoise? How can it do shadow-boxing?!”

The fatty’s eyes were jet-black. They were completely bruised and looked like the panda’s eyes.

“Mother f—! I was actually punched by a tortoise!” The fatty was really angry. This kind of unimaginable thing actually happened to him. It was completely unexpected. 2

Xiao Chen and Fairsky burst into loud laughter. The snow-white little Keke was already rolling on the floor laughing. Only Tenax stared at the white-shelled tortoise without batting an eye.

“I beat, I stamp!” The angry fatty lifted his leg to stamp the little tortoise that was standing upright on the ground.

Whoosh!

“Ow...!”

Zhuge fatty was punched again. The white-shelled tortoise jumped up as swift as the wind and brandished its fist violently to hit the fatty’s nose.

“Oh god! I’m bleeding... I’m bleeding... I actually got hit by a tortoise until I got a nosebleed?!” The fatty let out a long howl from the pain. In regards to this

outrageous thing before his eyes, he felt it was a little unbelievable and cast an angry look at the little tortoise on the ground. That white-shelled tortoise was also staring at him angrily. The scene made one unable to restrain a smile.

“This bastard tortoise, just where did this evildoer came from? My god! I’ve never seen something so bizarre before!” Speaking until here, the fatty cast an angry look at Xiao Chen and Fairsky, “You two are still laughing? Come here and help me catch the tortoise! This is a devil. Mother f—, I actually got hit by a tortoise and you guys are still not coming to help me take care of it.”

“That’s enough, I recognize this tortoise. Although you got hit by the tortoise, it’s nothing to be ashamed about.” Xiao Chen knew that this was absolutely not a tortoise, but a dragon!

“No! I can’t let it pass like this!” The fatty was unwilling to forgive.

While Fairsky was looking at the fun, he stepped forward and wanted to grab the little tortoise. As a result, he also got punched twice on the face with a “Pow! Pow!” sound. The white-shelled tortoise was really so fast that it made one dazzled. They were unable to catch its movements.

“An evildoer, it’s really an evildoer! Even Fairsky’s pretty face was hit by the little tortoise.” The fatty was so shocked that he didn’t know what to say anymore.

Xiao Chen was also very surprised. The little tortoise’s speed had really reached an unimaginable realm. If its power also caught up with it, then this little tortoise would definitely become a very terrifying existence.

The white-shelled tortoise angrily ran around the courtyard a few times. It was very unwilling as it looked at the old ginseng skin one last time, then it looked at Tenax and Keke again before it left as fast as lightning.

When the disturbance from the little tortoise was over, the color of the sky had already turned dark. Xiao Chen adjusted the condition of his body to the peak stage. Then he soared into the sky and flew with extreme speed in the night sky.

First target, Prince Li’s mansion!

Wuxing Feng, Li Daoyuan, and Liu Ziliang, these were the three genius from

Terra. They were the strongest youth experts below the age of twenty five in Terra Empire.

Looking at Celestial City from the sky, it seemed as if everything below was shrouded by a dense dragon-qi, as if it was really a sovereign city made by heaven. A great number of houses were brightly lit, making it bright under the dragon cloud.

Moving as swift as the wind, Xiao Chen streaked across the vast sky and left behind a few afterimages as he entered Prince Li's mansion.

It must be mentioned that the Zhuge family and the Fair family were very powerful. They were actually able to clearly outline the layout of the prince's mansion. Xiao Chen directly advanced according to that information.

His steps were as light as a feather as he noiselessly landed on the courtyard. The night breeze was carrying the scent of the orchid. The aromatic smell pervaded the entire courtyard. Xiao Chen picked off a leaf and carved four words on it: Come out and fight. After that, he used the light to emphasize the words.

3

Swish!

Almost at the same time, a figure rushed out of the building and appeared in front of Xiao Chen like a ghost.

Xiao Chen immediately soared into the sky. That figure behind followed him closely and flew high into the sky. At the same time, in the darkness, another figure stealthily ascended in the dark sky.

When they were already far away from the ground, a sneer resounded in the sky, "Xiao Chen, are you seeking your own death? Three days ago, that light of death at the city gate was unable to take away your life, and three days later, you actually dropped in by yourself so impatiently? I was about to go find you myself!"

The one speaking was one of the three strongest youth warriors in Terra Empire, Li Daoyuan. He was a very terrifying Psychic.

"Stop talking nonsense, I am here for the kill today. I won't go back until I see some blood. 4" Xiao Chen fought for the purpose of fighting today. Unfolding

the Undying Divine Wings, he transformed into a lightstream and rushed over there.

He executed the Death Blow immediately. The four major techniques contained the supreme Imprint of Dao. That was a glorious and world-shattering technique. It contained unparalleled power.

“Crackle! Crackle!”

The skill was almost like a path. One energy radiance after another burst out like hundreds and thousands of lightnings dancing wildly.

“Hmph! In front of the light of death, your so-called most powerful killing techniques are useless!” Li Daoyuan sneered again and again. His figure was like that of a ghost as he rushed over and shouted, “Light of Destruction.”

In the pitch-black night sky, a glaring ray of light ripped the darkness and swept towards Xiao Chen. This was a very rarely seen bizarre energy — the Light of Destruction. It was specialized in striping people of their life. It was as scary as the scythe of the Grim Reaper.

A noiseless collision. Then the energy waves rolled over and over violently. The sky seemed to have turned into boiling water. The entire sky was shaking. Xiao Chen and Li Daoyuan were blown away by the powerful energy waves.

The glaring rays of light were like a sun hanging in the night sky.

The instant that Xiao Chen flew back, he quickly came to a halt and then, as if his entire person became one with the broken sword in his hand, he cut through the sky and shattered everything in his path. He passed through the layers upon layers of energy waves and directly went after Li Daoyuan.

The dazzling sword-qi dropped down like the Milky Way falling from the Ninth Heaven, it was huge and resplendent. The sword-qi was slashed down vertically towards Li Daoyuan’s head, as if he wanted to chop him into half.

Li Daoyuan was surprised at Xiao Chen’s speed. He quickly dodged to the side and executed the Light of Destruction. Once again, the heavy breath of death spread out and covered up the sky like thick stagnant water.

Xiao Chen was not fearful. He made his move boldly and swept the broken

sword in his hand across all directions. With power to swallow up the mountains and rivers, the resplendent sword-qi shattered everything in its path. All the light of death crumbled.

“This is too easy!” Xiao Chen calmly spat out these four words.

Li Daoyuan didn’t have any particular mood swing. At this very moment, his pair of eyes suddenly flickered with bloody red light. His pupils and the white of the eyes faded away. Only two terrifying red lights could be seen. He seemed especially demonic and terrifying in the night sky.

“The power from the underworld, blend into my body!” Li Daoyuan’s voice was very low, yet it was very heavy, as if it was reverberating from the underworld. Words failed to describe how frightening it was.

The black fog quickly gathered from all directions and surrounded Li Daoyuan. In the endless darkness, only two blood red lights could be seen. That ice-cold gaze was fixed at Xiao Chen. There wasn’t a trace of human emotion. There were only the breaths of destruction and stillness.

That didn’t seem like the eyes of a human, but rather the eyes of death that came from the underworld!

Li Daoyuan let out a low shout as he quickly rushed towards Xiao Chen. It was like the roar of an evil spirit from the underworld. He was wrapped up in the inexhaustible underworld fog. His entire person was already situated in absolute darkness.

The black fog rolled over and over violently. As if Li Daoyuan had transformed into a vicious corpse, he actually gave up the various kinds of spells that the Psychics possessed and engaged with Xiao Chen in close combat like the martial artists.

Clang!

Thump!

Clink! Clang!

His body was more solid than the adamantium. It seemed like it was no longer the flesh of a human body. When his arm clashed with Xiao Chen’s broken

sword, a metallic sound actually reverberated.

The black underworld fog was rampaging. Xiao Chen was unable to probe Li Daoyuan in the black fog clearly with his spiritual sense. He could only see a pair of bloody red light penetrating the dark fog and staring at him coldly.

This scene was very bizarre. Xiao Chen couldn't feel any fluctuation of life from the other party's body. That seemed to be nothing more than an ice-cold corpse, a demonic corpse that came from the underworld!

Clang! Clang! Clang...!

The sonorous noise echoed in the sky unceasingly. Li Daoyuan's ice-cold arm was striking against the side of the broken sword continuously. His and Xiao Chen's speed were so fast that only a hazy black fog and a slender figure could be seen changing from one position to another unceasingly as they left behind afterimages.

Ice-cold like the corpse!

After Xiao Chen put away the broken sword and used his fists to clash with Li Daoyuan, he found that his body temperature was much lower than expected. He couldn't feel the flow of blood at all. That was the distinctive feature of a corpse.

This was an evenly matched battle. Xiao Chen didn't care if his opponent was a corpse or a human, what he sought was a powerful opponent of the same age. At present, he was not feeling uneasy due to the strength of the enemy. On the contrary, his battle intent was getting higher and higher.

It was a lightning quick and wild battle!

The moment he reached out his hand, the moment he lifted his leg, a thunderous noise resounded. It was as if the worldly power was spreading out because of him!

God Slayer!

Untold numbers of three inches long materialized swords pierced towards the ice-cold corpse all at once.

The air was shuddering, it seemed as if the space was about to shatter. The

God Slayer nowadays was much stronger compared to the past. After all, Xiao Chen's power was increasing on a daily basis.

This was a battle intent that evolved from the soul and was entrusted to the countless swords and blades.

Rips! Rips!

The space-ripping sound never stopped. At the same time, the black fog that enveloped Li Daoyuan's body surged up violently in front of his body. It actually transformed into a black whirlpool. It was like a primal beast opening up its huge mouth to swallow the countless rays of light.

A glint emitted from Xiao Chen's pair of eyes. He had seen it really clearly this time. Although Li Daoyuan's movements were as fast as lightning, his joints seemed to be very uncoordinated. His body really seemed as stiff as an old corpse.

Moreover, his surrounding space was actually cracked. One after another, minute traces of black-qi rushed forth from those cracks, as if it was really connected to the other world — the netherworld!

What kind of bizarre ability was this? He was actually able to borrow power from the underworld. It made Xiao Chen really shocked, but he was not fearful. Only this kind of powerful enemy could make him fight with everything on the line!

"Haha..." A loud laughter was transmitted from not far away. The person tailing behind Xiao Chen and Li Daoyuan finally revealed his visage from the shadow of the night sky. He laughed and said, "Li Daoyuan executed the forbidden technique, Infernal Corpse. It seems like he is intending to kill. Xiao Chen, you are dead for sure."

Xiao Chen coldly cast a backward glance. He found a Spell Master there. He had also exchanged a single blow with him at the city gate three days ago. This should be the last of the three great experts from the Terra Empire, Liu Ziliang.

Liu Ziliang did not plan to hide behind the walls and watch the battle from a safe distance. After restraining his smile, his eyes emitted an ice-cold glint, then he made his move viciously. Following his incantation, nine huge lightnings as

thick as a bowl cup were launched towards Xiao Chen's back. He was merciless and wanted to take Xiao Chen's life with this first move.

He didn't seem to feel that besieging Xiao Chen was a kind of disgrace. On the contrary, he smiled coldly and said, "You who are surnamed Xiao, I always wanted to kill you, but I wasn't able to find a suitable chance all along. Now, with myself and Li Daoyuan transformed into the battle corpse, killing you is as easy as killing a dog!"

Swish!

Xiao Chen unfolded the Undying Divine Wings. With speed as fast as lightning, he left behind an afterimage and actually shook Li Daoyuan off. After that, he flew straight towards the nine lightnings as thick as a bowl cup.

He clashed directly with the terrifying lightning!

His eyes were filled with unlimited killing intent.

Chapter 170 – To Advance Courageously!

Li Daoyuan seemed to have really become a corpse, completely driven by fighting instinct. All of his other awareness had disappeared. Unwilling to let go of Xiao Chen, he rushed over for the kill.

Nine lightnings as thick as a bowl cup submerged the two of them, making the both of them bear it together.

At the same time, the eight major divinized acupoints in Xiao Chen's body seemed to burst out with incomparably dazzling rays of light. The inexhaustible energy of life rushed forth and enveloped his body in a flash.

“God Slayer!”

“Chaotic Patterns!”

Holding the broken sword in his right hand, Xiao Chen integrated the two major techniques into the sword skill and slashed violently. His pupils were incomparably cold. He resisted the nine terrifying lightnings with his powerful body and the tremendous life energy. Then he got not more than thirty feet away from the Spell Master Liu Ziliang.

The ice-cold sword ruthlessly streaked across the sky. The blood burst forth, an arm soared up, and the sky was dyed by the color of blood.

“Impossible!”

Liu Ziliang fell back at lightning speed. He was holding his broken arm and let out a groan in pain. The blood gushed out non-stop and the pain made his expression distort.

Xiao Chen was totally putting his life on the line. He directly crossed over the blockade of the nine lightnings and broke through to arrive in front of Liu Ziliang. Although the corner of his mouth was spilling blood, he was able to inflict heavy damage Liu Ziliang in the shortest possible time.

Xiao Chen knew someone was hiding in the dark since the beginning. He didn't want to face two experts at the same time. Doing that was really too dangerous. Therefore, even if he had to risk it, he must dispose of one person first. Although

Liu Ziliang was not killed, his fighting strength had already declined by one level.

The Infernal Corpse of Li Daoyuan also crossed over the blockade of nine lightnings as thick as a bowl cup. He wasn't able to tell if Li Daoyuan suffered any injuries, but at least his movements didn't slow down as he threw himself at Xiao Chen.

Xiao Chen was using the Dragging Sword Technique. He lifted his hand towards the back as he turned around. The sword-qi was like a star streaking past mother earth as it transformed into a glaring divine light that diagonally slashed towards Li Daoyuan's neck.

Li Daoyuan was completely driven by battle instinct. His keen intuition detected this sword's power and shifted twenty feet to the side, just barely avoiding the tip of the sword. After that, he pounced from the side.

After Xiao Chen crossed over the lightning, his Undying Divine Wings were already at the peak state. His speed transcended the Spell Masters and Psychics. He dodged Li Daoyuan's attack again as he went after the heavily injured Liu Ziliang.

Swish! Swish! Swish!

One afterimage after another appeared in the sky. Liu Ziliang endured the pain and kept changing his position to dodge. He wanted to draw closer to Li Daoyuan. After unexpectedly suffering a heavy injury, he was only able to exhibit seventy percent of his strength. He didn't dare to face Xiao Chen anymore.

However, it was impossible for Xiao Chen to give him this chance!

His speed was faster than Liu Ziliang and Li Daoyuan. Disregarding Li Daoyuan's pursue and attack from behind, Xiao Chen chased to kill Liu Ziliang like a death god.

Liu Ziliang was an absolute expert among the experts. Hardly anyone could reach his level among his peers. However, tonight was very unfortunate for him. He got careless because he totally never expected that Xiao Chen would actually take the risk to bore through nine lightnings that were as thick as the a bowl cup and gave him a fatal strike.

From his perspective, Xiao Chen was completely putting his life on the line. He

was a gambler. This kind of heavy injury made Liu Ziliang very sullen. He didn't even get the chance to reveal his true strength!

However, what Liu Ziliang didn't know was that Xiao Chen was not betting with his life. That was because Xiao Chen absolutely had that kind of capital. The vigorous vitality allowed him to keep the injuries at the minimum, and moreover, recover at an astonishing rate. Although he was coughing out blood, it didn't have much influence on Xiao Chen's strength. The eight major acupoints circulated with resplendent life essence simultaneously and healed his wounds very quickly.

This was a very shocking scene, Li Daoyuan was pursuing and attack Xiao Chen from afar, Xiao Chen was chasing to kill Liu Ziliang. It seemed like they were each mind their own businesses and were completely neglecting the others.

"Die!" Xiao Chen shouted loudly, "Demon Suppression" integrated with the sword technique and directly shattered the light screen formed by the magic spell. A wisp of black light brushed past Liu Ziliang's neck. His long hair fluttered along with the wind as a big chunk of it was cut off. A shallow cut appeared on his neck. He was nearly beheaded.

"Kill!"

It was another loud shout. The jet-black broken sword swept across the sky. The sword-qi was like a beam of light.

The brilliance was very dazzling. Liu Ziliang chanted an incantation inwardly. Rays of light fell down from all directions to resist Xiao Chen's violent attack.

However, the broken sword was unstoppable. The inexhaustible light screen was split open as easily as splitting a rotten object. A passage was directly opened up. Xiao Chen rushed into the light screen in the blink of an eye and attempted to behead Liu Ziliang.

Liu Ziliang was so frightened that his soul literally jumped out of his body. He was unable to muster any strength. After losing one arm, the sharp pain made it hard for him to concentrate. His strength was far inferior than before and was simply unable to withstand Xiao Chen.

The fight among experts was a fight to strive for a decisive opportunity. Liu

Ziliang's strength declined greatly and lost the decisive opportunity, how could he ever hope to stand up to Xiao Chen now?

“God Slayer!”

“Demon Suppression!”

“Chaotic Patterns!”

Xiao Chen shouted loudly. Three out of four of the major techniques assimilated with the sword skill simultaneously. The broken sword was as terrifying as the scythe of the Grim Reaper right now. The jet-black rays of light seemed to rip apart the sky.

The deadly blade was brandished mercilessly.

The barrier fell apart completely. Liu Ziliang was in despair. His speed was inferior to the other party, his strength at the moment was also not as good. It was extremely difficult to fend off this strike from Xiao Chen!

“Pfff!”

The blood splashed everywhere. Xiao Chen directly chopped Liu Ziliang in half at the waist.

“Impossible!” Liu Ziliang let out the final shriek of despair. He came to kill Xiao Chen, how could he die like this? He didn't dare believe the fact before his eyes. In a situation where two great experts were making their move at the same time, the other party actually concentrated on dealing with him like this and killed him on the spot!

While wearing an expression of unwillingness, the glint in Liu Ziliang's eyes gradually became dimmer.

“Pfff!”

The blood splashed all over again. Xiao Chen brandished the sword vertically downward and divided that two parts into four!

Stopping at high altitude, he turned his body around to gaze coldly at Li Daoyuan, who was chasing after him. Xiao Chen raised his longsword towards the sky and confronted him again.

After killing an opponent, his move became bolder than ever. Xiao Chen faced the Infernal Corpse with a vertical slash from the jet-black broken sword. The sword-qi soared up. One sword-qi after another already formed into an energy wave and erupted unceasingly.

“God Slayer!”

“Demon Suppression!”

“Death Blow!”

Three major techniques fused as one. Xiao Chen concentrated that kind of destructive power into the jet-black broken sword and pressed forward courageously.

I am unparalleled!

Leaving no way to retreat, completely sealing his own way fall back, this strike must settle it, it must produce an outcome!

It was a life and death battle of a fierce man!

Not only was he fierce to his opponent, he was also fierce to himself. He was forcing himself to produce the greatest power in the most desperate situation.

One slash sealed all ten directions!

Li Daoyuan was unable to dodge. His ghost-like figure in the black fog continuously made inconceivable movements. His body seemed to have deformed. His adamantium-like palm sandwiched the broken sword from an extremely tricky angle.

But the power from the fusion of the three major techniques was unstoppable! With the addition of Xiao Chen’s fourth technique, Chaotic Patterns, even something as strong as the Infernal Corpse was unable to bear it.

The palms were unable to sandwich the broken sword. The jet-black sword-qi broke into the black fog. With a “clink”, the sword chopped diagonally on Li Daoyuan’s left shoulder.

The edge of the sword violently cut the flesh, and yet it was unable to chop off his arm. The broken sword was stuck inside. This made Xiao Chen very shocked. Just what kind of state was Li Daoyuan’s body in? He was actually unable to chop

him in half even after fusing a few major techniques. His body was really too powerful.

God Slayer, Demon Suppression... the steady flow of power was surging forward like the torrential river. The broken sword pressed down like a mountain that weighed over thousand tons. It was continuously increasing in power. Xiao Chen wanted to chop off one of his opponent's arm no matter what.

“Roar...!”

The Infernal Corpse let out a voice for the first time. It faced upwards and let out a loud roar that shook the vast sky. The messy hair fluttered and the bloody glint in the eyes became even colder. He spared no effort to twist his body to shake Xiao Chen off.

That arm of Li Daoyuan was not cut off. Although Xiao Chen left behind a terrifying wound, it wasn't bleeding at all. His body had completely corpsified, the blood was already flowing no longer.

Taking a step in the empty sky, as if he was really stamping on the ground, the sky actually shook with Xiao Chen's steps. That was the outburst of the worldly energy. Xiao Chen's bearing was getting more and more magnificent.

After that, in that very instant, sword-qi soared up. Xiao Chen brandished the sword in succession and slashed Li Daoyuan with eighteen sword strikes. Eighteen resplendent rays of light streaked across the vast sky like meteor shower.

The people gazing at the starry sky in Celestial City was very surprised. The rays of light from these shooting stars were too gorgeous! They actually illuminated one side of the sky.

“Clang! Clang! Clang...!”

The sonorous metallic sound lingered on. Li Daoyuan's arms and Xiao Chen's broken sword clashed unceasingly. He continuously neutralized eleven strikes, but that unmatched sword-qi gradually suppressed him.

The remaining seven hits struck him like the lightning, they were unstoppable!

“Pfff!”

The continuous strikes hit the target, seven sword strikes chopped Li Daoyuan's body. However, they did not hit the same position as Li Daoyuan successfully scattered the attacks.

One after another, terrifying wounds appeared all over the demonic corpse. The last two strikes actually caused it to bleed. That revealed the Infernal Corpse was about to wear off and crumble. Li Daoyuan was about to resume his original corporeal body.

Xiao Chen prepared to make his move again, but just at this time, someone stepped on rainbow-colored magic cloud and soared into the sky. That person held on to Li Daoyuan, who was already unable to prop himself up.

"Wuxing Feng!" Xiao Chen's eyes emitted two glints. He raised his longsword towards the sky and stared at his former powerful opponent. After that, he took large strides forward and advanced in the empty sky.

"Xiao Chen, must you kill to the last one?" Wuxing Feng's expression was very cold as he continued, "I really want to make my move, but you are wounded. Defeating you like this is very dull."

Xiao Chen didn't say much. He knew Wuxing Feng was not arrogant. The other party really had the power to back him up. Although he defeated Wuxing Feng once, the other person involved also made a progress. To fight until last man standing, he might need to go through a very painful battle. Xiao Chen would never forget the fierce battle from last time.

"Kill!"

It was impossible to shrink back!

Xiao Chen lifted the sword and brandished it. God Slayer directly aimed for Wuxing Feng's chest.

Wuxing Feng's eyes sparked with electricity as he executed the Fist of Earth. The drizzling yellow rays of light was surging up like inexhaustible dust as it swept toward Xiao Chen.

"Clang!"

The sword and fist collided as an ear-splitting noise was produced. It was as if

the heavenly thunder was ripping the sky apart.

There were countless afterimages and colorful rays of light. When Xiao Chen was fighting with Wuxing Feng, inexhaustible energy storm rumbled in the sky.

The sword light amassed and seemed to have formed a continuous mountain of swords. The sword-qi filled the entire sky.

Wuxing Feng's Quintus Techniques were even more powerful. One punch contained one of the five major element; iron, wood, water, fire, and earth. It was the most ancient profound ability. Its brilliance was brought out by this genius of the Terra Empire, Wuxing Feng.

The glorious past of the Quintus Techniques will be recreated!

Turning upside down, Xiao Chen swung his leg and swept his right leg across to clash with Wuxing Feng's Fist of Fire. The rumbling sky seemed to be ignited by endless conflagration. The entire sky was burning with raging flame.

There's not much to choose from between the two of them. They were still formidable opponents, it was impossible to decide victory or defeat in a short time.

Wuxing Feng had already pushed away Li Daoyuan, who regained his consciousness, and fought with Xiao Chen with everything he got.

Xiao Chen had already put away the broken sword. He planned to face Wuxing Feng's Quintus Techniques with his fists!

Two great experts were having an intense battle in the sky. In the blink of an eye, hundred moves were executed. However, they were still unable to decide win or loss. The energy waves rolled over and over violently.

Finally, Wuxing Feng shouted loudly, "Kill!"

Five continuous punches, with the next punch slower than the former, but the power of each punch increased. The punches pressed forward like a huge mountain. This was the Quintus Techniques he comprehended recently. There were too many secrets in this ancient art waiting for the later generations to comprehend.

Xiao Chen spared no effort and also launched five punches. Demonic Seal, God

Slayer, Chaotic Patterns, Demon Suppression, Death Blow, five divine radiance illuminated the horizon. The sudden clap of thunder burst in the sky. The lightning flashed and burst forth with terrifying light of death.

This was bound to be a chaotic night.

After five punches, the two of them coughed out a few mouthful of blood. Then, the both of them fell back, no longer making a move. After standing at opposite side for fifteen minutes, Wuxing Feng left without turning his head back. Xiao Chen didn't pursue and attack. He just silently adjusted his breathing for half an hour, then he flew towards a different direction.

The second target, Windfeathers!

Flying at extreme speed, he flew past the brightly lit buildings at low altitude. Xiao Chen appeared in the middle of a castle. That was actually the "Moonflower Castle". Windfeathers was meditating in the castle-like brothel.

This was bound to be a sleepless night. If people knew Xiao Chen was consecutively engaging in a life and death battle tonight, it would inevitably cause a huge wave.

A crazy man doing a crazy thing!

Chapter 171 – I am Unparalleled!

The Moonflower Castle, it was a castle-like brothel. The entire territory was filled with one hall after another. This place was brightly lit, the gold and jade were in glorious splendor. It was richly ornamented. The dancers moved rhythmically to the music. The sound of the zither and flute was melodious. It was a beautiful sound.

This was an extravagant brother. This place had the best liquor, the tastiest delicacies, the most flexible dancers, the most beautiful singing voice... this place had a lot of the “best”. Of course, the best of the “best” was definitely the beauties.

This place had the wildest beauties. Vigorous and elegant like the female leopard, very wild; This place had the hottest women. They were as untamed as the wild horse, ready to die to preserve their chastity; This place had the most talented beauties. Willing to converse with you about romance of life. Willing to accompany you as you poetize or paint a picture until the dead of night. It was a place for scholars’ work.

Pure-hearted young ladies, extraordinarily beautiful woman, talented girls, young married women... This was a place that would even intoxicate the Buddha’s disciple.

Xiao Chen stood on top of a grand castle calmly as he looked up at the starry sky. It was as if he had disconnected from the lower world and found himself in a different space.

The night sky was quiet and cold, while the ground was brimming with activities. His heart was in tranquility. He could feel it and comprehend it to some extent. His mind was located in front of the immortal’s watch tower, his body was in the middle of the extremely wide human society.

Training was not only about strengthening the body, it was also necessary to train the mind. His body was in the middle of the noisy human society. Sometimes, he must follow his heart’s desires and act as he wished, destroying every obstruction and restriction. Sometimes he must transcend worldliness and

stand high in the clouds to look down at the noisy human society, using an overbearing attitude to watch every living being.

One must train the body, train the mind, and practice swordplay to press forward!

Xiao Chen already adjusted his wounded body to the peak condition. He flew gracefully under the night sky and left behind an afterimage. Without making any sound, he took a step into the courtyard.

This was a place he's familiar with. It was the Intoxicating House affiliated with the Moonflower Castle's rose garden. That was Lyria and Carmina's castle. Windfeathers was currently at this place.

The entire garden was filled with rose. The fragrance permeated the air.

Xiao Chen walked forward with large strides. Lyria had undoubtedly revealed her skill with the zither at this very moment. The musical tone was very pleasant to hear. It made people immerse in one kind of fantastic mood. The spring flowers were in full bloom and the scenery was very beautiful. A dazzling young lady was smiling in the cluster of flowers..... it was a very vivid scene. Along with the flow of musical notes, it was as though she was just right before the eyes.

"Halt!"

Windfeathers' voice transmitted from within the castle.

The music stopped. Carmina also stopped her fervent dance.

At this moment, Windfeathers bared his chest and was drinking alone. It seemed as if there were young dragons coiling around his sturdy bronze-like body. He appeared robust and powerful. His body was brimming with explosive power and his skin was flickering with a jewel-like splendor.

This was a youth brimming with wilderness. His eyes were like that of a beast's and emitted a heart-racing glint. It was cold, bright, and vicious!

Windfeathers turned his body around and yelled towards the outside, "Since you've arrived, might as well come in."

Xiao Chen opened the door and entered. He was calm and collected as he sat on a mink fur imperial throne. He looked straight at Windfeathers with eyes as

sharp as the sword.

“Eya... Brother Xiao has come...” Carmina walked over gracefully with her curvy, exquisite body. Her thin waist twisted left and right like a water snake. Her speech was very intimate and sweet, “Little Lan, what are you girls doing? Come over here.”

She needn’t instruct them. Those quick-witted girls at the side already used a tray to deliver the fine liquor and delicacies hastily.

Windfeathers was sweeping his eyes over Xiao Chen like a wild beast. The temperature in the hall seemed to be dropping rapidly. It caused few of the girls to break out in cold sweat unceasingly. He stood up to look down at Xiao Chen, and said, “You want to make a move here?”

“Anywhere is the same.”

“Killing you will not bring disgrace to my fist!” Windfeathers was this confident. He had an overbearing attitude and looked down on his peers. Three days ago, he attacked Xiao Chen at the city gate with this kind of attitude. He was wild and demonic!

“I am unparalleled!” Xiao Chen didn’t want to say much. He stood up directly and walked outside.

There was no wind, but Windfeathers’ long black hair fluttered by itself. A scary battle intent burst out in that instant. He said coldly, “Good, this kind of attitude is not bad. As far as I am concerned, you must die. I am unparalleled, you are already one of my targets. Even if you don’t come find me tonight, I will go find you myself!” After he finished speaking, he drank one cup of strong alcoholic drink, then he ruthlessly threw the wine cup on the ground as he took large strides out of the building.

Lyria and Carmina cast a quick glance at each other and followed the two out of the castle.

“Two of you are distinguished heroes. The fight tonight is bound to shake the south. My Moonflower Castle has a ‘public lake’, the two of you can fight there.” Lyria was wearing a white dress. It was lightly brushed into motion by the night breeze. She was as elegant as the fairy.

Carmina was even more direct. She twisted her soft waist and giggled, “Hehe, a fight that will shake the south, how can a hero not have a beauty to accompany? Sister Lyria and I are willing to stay at the edge of the public lake and root for you with the zither and flute.”

“If only you girls will invite me to the woman’s chamber tonight. I am very expectant.” Windfeathers’ face was brimming with wilderness.

“Hehe, if we are going to invite, we will only invite the victor.”

“Good, just wait for me in your room tonight.” Windfeathers’ expression became all the more wilder. The glint in his eyes became more and more vigorous. He turned his head over and gazed at Xiao Chen coldly, “For the battle tonight, these beauties will accompany us. The winner will get another great delight.”

The intoxicating fragrance drifted along with the wind. Carmina’s giggle was transmitted from a distant place. Her flirtatious expression was extremely bewitching.

The luminous moon was hanging high up in the sky. Beside the public lake, Xiao Chen and Windfeathers were standing face to face.

The moonlight was like a wisp of mist. It made a layer of hazy splendor envelop the clear lake. It was indescribably ethereal and ambience.

There’s nothing to say, there’s no need to say anything.

Windfeathers bared his upper body. His steel-like demonic body was brimming with power. It was hard to speculate his full power. With a single step, he disappeared from his original position. Only a faintly discernible afterimage was left in the sky. His speed was really too fast!

One punch!

It was a very random punch, ruthlessly aimed at Xiao Chen’s head! The ground started to shake, waves suddenly appeared on the surface of the lake, a powerful energy fluctuation that could topple the mountains and overturn the seas burst out in a flash.

Windfeathers was like an immemorial demonic mountain. His entire person

was brimming with an unpredictable power. At the moment, it seemed as if he weighed thousands of tons. The ground fissured along with his random punch!

The demonic body left behind an afterimage and directly appeared in front of Xiao Chen. Instead of moving back, Xiao Chen was going forward and faced him with the same kind of punch.

“Bang!”

When the two fists collided, it was just like the sudden clap of thunder that fell from the Ninth Heaven. The deafening sound cut through the vast sky. The castles in the vicinity were trembling. A dozen or more human figures quickly rushed over, but with Lyria and Carmina’s wave of the hand, they immediately retreated silently.

Windfeathers was wild like the ferocious beast, vicious like the fierce dragon. His demonic body was as quick as lightning. He exchanged blows with Xiao Chen boldly.

The ground was getting fissured unceasingly. Windfeathers was really too strong. Each step of his would inevitably cause the ground to shake. This was the wildest opponent Xiao Chen had encountered to date.

This was a ferocious beast not only in name, but also in reality!

“Bang!”

The wind given rise by Windfeathers’ punch was really too heavy. Each punch would leave a red streak of light behind. It was as terrifying as layer upon layer of bloody waves. Every time he moved, it was as if a volcano was erupting. His speed was also so fast that it was against reason.

He was abnormally strong and violent!

The musical notes that sounded like clashing swords reverberated. Following closely, the music from the flute resounded. The sound of the zither and flute harmonized. The music sounded like a magnificent army with thousands of men and horses galloping. It completely offset the kind of tense atmosphere in a life and death battle.

Xiao Chen jumped high into the sky. Then he stamped the air and strode in the

sky. Each step was heavier than ten thousand tons. He ruthlessly attempted to stamp on Windfeathers' chest.

This was the most ferocious killer kick in the world of martial arts!

Although this was a widely known move, only a few was capable of bringing out its full potential. If used by a genuine expert, this was definitely a terrifying killer move. It shouldn't be used lightly, as it could easily reap one's life!

The killer kick, with a single kick, the mountain split apart!

Xiao Chen only took three steps and the space was already distorted. Although he was two meter high, the ground already fissured unceasingly. And furthermore, the public lake at the side was boiling. The lake water was rolling over and over violently!

Xiao Chen was striding forward in the empty sky. As he took the fourth step, the wind rumbled. It was as if a storm was given rise in the sky as the thunder surged on. An indescribable pressure flooded the lake shore.

"Roar!!!"

Windfeathers was as wild as a fierce dragon. He actually directly lifted his fist to face Xiao Chen's right foot. The pressure from the fist, that was as heavy as the mountain, caused the space to distort. The space faintly broke into pieces.

The ferocious fist firmly clashed with Xiao Chen's right foot. However, Xiao Chen's eyes were as sharp as a sword. He also raised his power to the limit and didn't shrink back. That was because he didn't give himself a way to retreat. This battle could only press forward but not retreat!

While the right foot was bearing that crazy power, he already swept his left foot. The fifth step stamped towards Windfeathers' chest as firmly as before.

After the one year of secluded training in south desolate region, Windfeathers had gained abundance of insight. His Demon Beast Art already rose to an all new level. He was very confident with his own power.

He still lifted his fist to resist. It was a direct confrontation!

The exploding sound rang out unceasingly. The mother earth seemed as if it was being crushed by a huge mountain. It kept breaking up unceasingly!

Xiao Chen kept stamping with the killer kicks. The space was rumbling. In the end, tiny cracks even appeared in the space. Windfeathers earnestly faced all his kicks head-on as he fell back unceasingly. Until finally, both of his legs were completely submerged in the ruptured ground. Half of his body was directly bombarded into the ground level by Xiao Chen.

It wasn't because his power was not equal to Xiao Chen, but rather because Xiao Chen's main assault this time was too sharp. Moments of howling wind and torrential rain made him rather passive.

However, after receiving all of Xiao Chen's killer kicks, Windfeathers became vigorous and lively again. With a long shout, his black hair fluttered wildly as the surrounding ground quickly exploded. He jumped up and charged towards Xiao Chen wildly.

The clangs of the zither sounded like an ancient battlefield had descended at the lakeside. As if there were millions of mighty soldiers charging forward, as if the blood was spurting out and the bones were getting crushed... The music was very seasonal.

“Bang!”

As if a meteorite fell into the public lake, along with the two great experts' earth-rending battle, a torrential wave was stirred up at the lakeside. The white drizzle of water droplets appeared especially hazy under the moonlight.

Windfeathers was as cold as a fiend, as wild as a beast. He left behind one afterimage after another and already rushed into the lake with Xiao Chen. They were battling on the surface of the lake! Every time when the lake water was unable to bear their weight anymore, they only needed to lightly step on a lotus leaf to lift themselves up.

It was close to an air battle!

On the surface of the lake, under the moonlit night, there was the great confrontation between the strongest youths of the south desolate region!

Fighting fiercely until now, the both of them had already build up enough power. Windfeathers' surrounding space gradually twisted and became fuzzy. A glaring bloody radiance enveloped him. That was actually some kind of bizarre

“domain”! It was reeking with blood and breath of brutality. Windfeathers’ hair danced wildly. He was like a blood-soaked Asura.

Domain, that was a divine ability that gradually opened up when one reached the Historia realm. Only extremely few genius in the Exuvia realm had the luck to manifest this kind of potential in advance. Without a doubt, the wild Windfeathers was unconditionally one of the strongest among the peers.

Xiao Chen had once seen a youth expert with a domain before. Because of this, he wasn’t too shocked. A long time ago, on the dragon island, he had seen Dugu Jianmo creating a mysterious “domain” when he waved his sword. Besides, Xiao Chen’s very own “presence perception” was also considered the manifestation of the Historia realm’s hidden potential in advance.

Not one person was the Heaven’s sole favorite. Everyone possessed a different ups and downs of life. When Xiao Chen had an accomplishment in the martial way, someone else would also have an out of the ordinary opportunity and progressed with their heads held high. In the end, everything depended on their tenacity and efforts.

I am unparalleled!

Windfeathers, he was the wildest among his peers. He indeed had enough power to be proud of, truly had the right to look down on the youth generation.

When the bloody domain was executed, the stench of blood changed the surroundings in a flash. The heaven and earth lost their colors. Every directions were set in motion because of it!

Thousands and tens of thousands of beast shadows appeared behind him. He already made a very big accomplishment in the Demon Beast Art he practiced. During this one year of secluded training, he was fighting at close quarters with the wild beasts everyday. So much so that he even consumed some of the legendary primal beast’s souls.

The Demon Beast Art refined the beast soul!

Because of this, he learned this terrifying bloody domain — The domain of the beast!

“Xiao Chen, go to hell!” His body was in the domain. Windfeathers’ figure

couldn't be seen at all. There was only a scarlet red domain that looked like the raging flame. At the same time, it looked like thousand layers of bloody wave rolling over and over. There were countless beast shadows in the domain, baring their fangs and claws, facing upwards and roaring.

It seemed like it could directly assault the soul. An extremely terrifying power charged towards Xiao Chen along with Windfeathers' wild movements.

Under the moonlit night, Xiao Chen stood there, straight and tall. His eyes were as bright as the stars as they emitted two sharp glints. He was not afraid. The overflowing battle intent burst out. An extremely powerful energy caused the lake water to turn over. His killing intent was soaring!

When encountering someone stronger than oneself, they must become stronger! 1

A chance upon an opponent with this kind of domain, Xiao Chen was like a wargod that had just awakened. His entire body burst forth with resplendent rays of light. The North Star light screen passed through his body and draped over his body like an ancient battle armor given a new lease of life. It was flooding with baleful aura!

Every time the battle armor enveloped a part of his body, it would produce a sonorous metallic sound. In the end, the North Star light screen completely enveloped Xiao Chen's body!

Chapter 172 – Suppressing the Demon Beast

The North Star light screen, a dazzling divine light, just like a golden battle armor, it was emitting inexhaustible amount of baleful aura!

North Star light screen, it was also known by Xiao Chen as Sealed God light screen. It was once regarded as an extremely important technique, but in the wake of the four major techniques, the North Star light screen was situated at the edge of Xiao Chen's battle skills. However, this time, with the further reinforcement of the divinized acupoints, the vigorous life essence was circulating within the eight moon-like acupoints unceasingly. The North Star light screen seemed to have received nourishment from these, it was several fold stronger than before.

Like an ancient armor that was give a new lease of life, it already formed the North Star light shield, and transformed into a dazzling battle armor.

After the Sealed God light screen had regained its brilliance, this was the first time Xiao Chen donned an armor to face the enemy! He could feel how terrifying and powerful was Windfeathers. This was a demonic young expert that couldn't be judged by common sense. The domain that could only be used after advancing to the Historia realm was not something any average person could fend off!

Just at this time, Windfeathers had already arrived. The scarlet beast domain exploded with a heart-racing fluctuation. A sharp and yet terrifying fiendish aura pounced over directly. Layer upon layer of bloody waves dyed the sky red. The blood red divine flame was jumping about.

The sound of a great number of beasts galloping reverberated. It was ear-splitting. There was even a surge of sound wave given rise by the bellow of the beast. The terrifying sound wave actually made the lake water split open unceasingly. In that instant, Xiao Chen felt a splitting headache. The sound wave actually passed through the physical body directly and attacked his soul!

In the end, the North Star light screen also enveloped Xiao Chen's head completely. Only his pair of eyes were not covered, they were flickering with a

cold glint.

“Bang!”

Even the sky was trembling. Windfeathers pressed on with the domain. His power was really too astonishing. With one punch, the space completely distorted. The domain was capable of affecting the space and burst out with the strongest power.

Xiao Chen jumped into the sky and brandished the God Slayer repeatedly. The scarlet blood-qi was broken unceasingly. Then, he dived down from the sky, head first. It's a test of strength! He didn't have the slightest amount of intention to fall back.

The domain was driven by a bizarre power. Within the range enveloped by it, every pressure from outside was neutralized by it to the greatest limit. And the power commanded by itself was reinforced unceasingly.

“Rumble!”

The lake water was boiling. The inexhaustible bloody light soared, a great number of beasts roared, the lake water actually evaporated and gave rise to endless white mist. The entire lake surface was shrouded by the mist.

Xiao Chen was sent flying by a powerful impact. Windfeathers trod on the surface of the lake and his body appeared like a streak of bloody shadow. He was as swift as the wind and lightning.

“Go to hell!”

Windfeathers was this crazy. The Demon Beast Art seemed to be connected to the movements of the world. Within the bloody light, it seemed as if he was possessed by the Demon God and linked up with the worldly power. Surge of worldly energy gathered from all directions. Because of the field, it gathered. Because of his fist, it burst out.

He brandished his demonic fists continuously. Thirteen punches, with the next punch stronger than the former. A torrential wave surged towards the sky from the public lake. The lake was actually split in half by him. The mud at the base of the lake was exposed. One sixth of the lake water actually surged towards the sky because of his attack.

Xiao Chen leapt over gracefully as he quickly adjusted his stance. He was actually going against the bloody rays of light and pounced directly at Windfeathers. It was not because he was acting recklessly, but rather he felt that he could hold out against Windfeathers. He only needed to get as close as possible to find the weak point of the domain.

God Slayer!

Demon Suppression!

Death Blow!

Three major techniques fused as one and was concentrated on Xiao Chen's two palms. An earth-shattering power surged on and on like the stormy sea, and yet it was also like a meteorite streaking across the vast sky. The inexhaustible divine light drowned the small lake. It made the bright moon and starlight in the sky to lose their splendor.

It was omnipresent!

Xiao Chen did not hold back at all this time. It seemed like he had utilized all of his power.

But the scarlet beast domain was really too bizarre. As if it was a world of its own, the inside was a collection of supreme laws. He actually disregarded the boundless energy wave.

Layer upon layer of huge energy waves seemed to have hit the empty space. The scarlet blood-qi throbbed and welled up with an overflowing bloody light.

Windfeathers bore through the layer upon layer of stormy seas. Every time he took a step, he'd appear on the other side of the lake. He quickly rushed in front of Xiao Chen. The "Chaotic Order" of the Demon Beast Art was executed. It rumbled with a loud sound as the bloody rays of light burst out. The shadow of an ancient primal beast let out a roar and charged towards Xiao Chen.

An explosive noise transmitted outwards. Although Xiao Chen resisted with all his might, he was still sent flying away and coughed out a big mouthful of blood.

"Ha... Haha... Hahaha..." Windfeathers faced upwards and let out an extended laugh. He was insufferably arrogant. He revealed himself from the bloody beast

domain and said coldly, “I have already learned the domain. How can you fight me? How will you fight me? Killing you is not at all difficult. In the face of my scarlet beast domain, all of your power is like flowers in a mirror and the moon reflected in the lake. They will not work on me. Because it is simply impossible for you to rip apart my beast domain. You — cannot — do it!”

The music from the zither and flute became heavier. The tinkling and blowing sound drifted along with the wind at the quiet lakeside.

Xiao Chen wiped the blood from the corner of his mouth. The glint in his eyes burned more fiercely than ever. He didn’t have a trace of foreboding feeling. His undefeatable battle intent became more and more vigorous. He exactly needed this kind of enemy tonight. His blood was boiling at this very moment. Judging from his nature, he was a madman, just that he didn’t usually display it.

Ordinarily, people don’t offend me, I don’t convict them. That was his rule of life. Right now, his madness was driven out.

Xiao Chen stood on the surface of the lake and forged ahead by stepping on the ripples. His bearing was getting more and more vigorous. In the end, a blazing ray of light actually rose from his body. It was rushing up the sky like a huge sword.

His entire person had entered the strongest fighting mode.

God Slayer!

Demon Suppression!

Death Blow!

Chaotic Patterns!

Four major techniques were executed at the same time. The target was only a single point! And that was precisely Windfeathers’ throat.

Although his view was blocked by the bloody mist, Xiao Chen’s keen spiritual sense had already firmly locked onto that point!

God Slayer, untold numbers of tiny multicolored light condensed to form the swords!

Demon Suppression, as if the gate to the pitch-black hell was widely open, one

sacred writing after another were lined up in the air and pressed forward!

Death Blow, as if the empty sky was smashed to pieces, one after another cracks could be found throughout the sky. It seemed as if it had opened up a new space by itself!

Chaotic Patterns, by means of numerous complicated techniques, a profound and indescribable Imprint of Dao was launched. The yin and yang were reversed. One light beam after another were swept towards the bloody light unceasingly. It actually wanted to cut open the scarlet beast domain from the opposite direction!

The four major techniques were all concentrated on a single point of Windfeathers' throat. The burst of power was unimaginable! It was boundless like the abyss and the ocean. The momentum couldn't be stopped!

Overpowering every obstruction, destroying every tangible thing!

Windfeathers finally changed his stance and fortified his domain. He felt an extreme danger oppressing him, especially his neck. He actually shivered due to this and a tiny layer of goose bumps appeared on his skin.

He fell back like a ghost. He could even be said to be as swift as the shooting star as he disappeared from the original position in a flash.

But Xiao Chen was like the shadow following the body. He already firmly locked onto Windfeathers. The four major techniques fused together and burst out at the same time. It was pointed straight at his throat.

Windfeathers' face changed again and again. He was wild like the vicious beast. He had abundance of gain while training at the depths of the south for one year. He was keeping company with the wild beasts all day long and possessed a keen intuition like that of the beast's. He was most sensitive to dangers.

Swish! Swish! Swish!

The two of them changed position unceasingly. It seemed as if two shadows were tangled together in the public lake.

“Bang!”

The fusion of the four major techniques finally burst out. Windfeathers protected his throat with one hand, and used the other hand to maintain the scarlet beast domain in order to receive this powerful attack.

The both of them were sent flying and coughed out a few mouthful of blood respectively.

“This is the feeling I’m seeking for!” Xiao Chen muttered under his breath. Although he was wounded, his expression became brighter. He felt that the door to the sealed treasure in his body was pushed open forcefully and a tiny crack appeared. The seal on the door has loosened!

Windfeathers stabilized his figure and didn’t say anything. He trod on the surface of the lake, one step at a time. His speed was very slow, but it was exceptionally heavy. It was as if one huge mountain after another had descended on the lake. This was an indescribable pressure which made people unable to breathe.

The scarlet beast domain was expanding unceasingly. One after another, fierce spirit beasts ran out and surrounded Xiao Chen. The public lake was submerged by the beast domain!

Looking from a distant, this place was soaring with bloody light. The scarlet domain had trapped Xiao Chen within.

Xiao Chen was not afraid. When he thought that the door in his body had slackened just now, those eight divinized acupoints actually emitted dazzling rays of light.

The Baihui Acupoint at the top of the head, the Shang Hill Acupoints at the ankle of his feet, the Shoulder Well Acupoints at his shoulders, the Toil Palace Acupoints on his palms, and the Center Palace Acupoint at his chest were linked up by a few light beams. Unlike before where he could only feel and unable to see, the linkage could now be seen clearly with naked eyes.

Those golden lines had linked the eight divinized acupoints together. The linkage between the head, the four limbs, and the chest formed a “big” character, which literally looked like “大”. The golden light ray penetrated the body, and the North Star light screen became all the more powerful. It formed a golden battle armor that was almost just as real.

The life essence was like a flood that burst out of a dam. It was surging forward violently and rushed through every part of Xiao Chen's body in that instant. The power that should have been exhausted was completely recovered and became more powerful than ever.

The blazing rays of light completely submerged Xiao Chen. Although that scarlet beast domain had enveloped him, it was unable to draw near!

This was a life energy as boundless as the ocean. Xiao Chen's body had received the purest baptism in that brief moment, making him more powerful than ever.

The glints in his eyes were resplendent. He was adorned with a golden divine armor. Xiao Chen's fingers were as sharp as the blades. With a single step, his body directly appeared beyond eighty feet. He went after Windfeathers and actually overcame the confinement of the scarlet beast domain.

"Impossible!" Windfeathers exposed a shocked expression.

"Bang!"

His palm was like a blade and shook continuously. The spiral-like energy charged into Windfeather's fist, and spiralled towards his body. It stubbornly cut open that layer of scarlet bloody-qi on the surface of his body.

"Pfff!"

Windfeathers violently coughed out three big mouthful of blood. His body shook as he was sent flying backward. He didn't dare to believe it and said in shock, "Domain, you actually learned the domain just now?!"

He felt that this was the power of the domain. It directly destroyed his scarlet beast domain.

"There's nothing special about a domain. There's no such thing as an unparalleled divine ability in this world. There's only unequalled man!" Xiao Chen marched forward and brandished the palm blade again. The resplendent sword-qi slashed towards Windfeathers' chest diagonally.

"This is definitely a domain!" Windfeathers released a new scarlet beast domain and exchanged blows with Xiao Chen's palm blade.

“Rumble!”

The explosive sound transmitted outwards. The public lake was drowned by the divine radiance. Windfeathers and Xiao Chen coughed out blood at the same time. However, Windfeathers fell back while Xiao Chen took a step forward!

Only advancing and not retreat! Xiao Chen was seriously too resolute, his greatness could even be said to be as bright as the rainbow.

Eight divinized acupoints were linked up by a golden line. They seemed to have formed a new divine artery. His power was multiplying without end and imitated a real domain.

Although it was not a domain, it wasn't weaker than a domain!

After the essence hidden in the eight divinized acupoints circulated around the body several times, all of them returned to the acupoints. However, that imitated domain did not disappear and merged into the North Star light screen. The rays of light burst out from the golden divine armor had the same properties as the scarlet beast domain. The surrounding space was affected. It was difficult for other power to come in, and yet he was able to manifest his power to the highest limit.

In fact, Xiao Chen's biggest gain this time was the golden line in his body. It connected the eight divinized acupoints. Just what kind of changes would occur in the future? It's hard to tell at the moment.

The palm blade left a streak of light in the air like the rainbow. Xiao Chen was getting more and more vigorous.

Xiao Chen used raw power against raw power. He made his move boldly and attacked Windfeathers violently!

Windfeathers always relied on raw power, but now he was countered by Xiao Chen using his own method. Incomparably tyrannical.

Two great experts exchanged another hundred blows in the blink of an eye. Their fight caused the lake water to surge towards the sky.

Windfeathers was being suppressed by Xiao Chen!

This defeat couldn't be described with words. That was because Xiao Chen

completely used power to resist power. He faced his opponent head-on and used Windfeathers' strong point to suppress him.

Crazy? I'm more crazy than you!

Fierce? I'm fiercer than you!

When one was defeated in their own specialty, it was the most unbearable.

"Roar!!!"

Windfeathers faced upwards and bellowed. He leapt high into the air and exchanged three more blows with Xiao Chen.

"Bang!"

"Bang!"

"Bang!"

Under the deafening sound, under the glaring light, the bone snapping sound clearly transmitted to their ears.

Windfeathers was sent flying away. His fists were trembling slightly. Four of his fingers actually broke.

And Xiao Chen's palm was also incomparably painful. There was a crack in his palm bone. He could clearly feel the flesh at the location of the crack jerking. However, he did not hesitate to lift his injured palm to cut at Windfeathers.

Helpless!

Angry!

Windfeathers' broken fists were trembling unceasingly. He tried to grip his fists, but he was unable to bring five fingers together. In the end, he faced upwards and let out a long roar before he ran towards the Moonflower Castle. He was leaping over the castle roofs like a ghost.

Xiao Chen's killing intent already welled up for a long time. He unfolded the Undying Divine Wings and quickly rushed over there. He caught up to Windfeathers very quickly.

"Bang!"

With a wave of the palm blade, Windfeathers' lofty demonic body was directly sent flying by the energy wave as he coughed out blood. However, at the same time, he fell outside the perimeter wall of the Moonflower Castle's courtyard. Seeing a river in front of him, he rushed over there without the slightest hesitation and jumped into the river head first.

Almost at the same time, Xiao Chen also jumped into the river. However, his keen spiritual sense was unable to detect Windfeathers. The presence perception actually lose its effectiveness.

Without stay for long, Xiao Chen rushed out of the river, then he calmly stood in the sky to adjust his breathing, and heal his wound.

Only until half an hour later did he open his eyes again.

Not far away, Carmina swung her hips and walked over gracefully. Lyria, who was wearing a white dress that prevailed over the snow, was also standing in front of the Moonflower Castle's gate.

"Brother Xiao, we are intending to give the victor tonight a big gift." Carmina was extremely lovely. Her watery big eyes blinked as she gazed at Xiao Chen.

"I will take note of the big gift today and come to receive it some other day." After he finished speaking, Xiao Chen soared high into the sky and flew towards a distant location.

"The next one, Dugu Jianmo!"

Only until Xiao Chen had left for a long time — several hundred meters at the downstream — did Windfeathers struggle to crawl out from the mud at the river base. He was covered in mud all over. He was like a wounded beast. There were ominous glints in his eyes. After that, he let out an extremely furious roar.

He was feeling very sour. The magnificent Windfeathers, he had already learned the domain, he was known as the unequalled young warrior of the south, yet he was actually forced by Xiao Chen to hide in the mud at the river base. This was a gargantuan blow to him!

"I want to become stronger! I — want — to — become — stronger!" Windfeathers faced upward and let out a sorrowful shout.

At the same time, a faintly discernible dragon roar transmitted from the underground labyrinth of Moonflower Castle. The sharp glint in Windfeathers' eyes was chilly as he looked at the towering halls at the distant.

Chapter 173 – The Lonely Sword Demon

The dim light of night was like the water, the starlight was bright.

Xiao Chen was flying at high speed in the sky of the Celestial City. He flew past a few nocturnal birds and arrived in front of an old residence.

This was an old residence with several hundred years of history. The wall was made up by piling ash-colored mountain rocks. The tall rocky wall seemed very rough. And the buildings within the wall was also not at all tastefully chosen. All of them were made by piling up polished boulders. There's no gold nor glazed tiles. Let's not even mention if it was richly ornamented, it was simple and unadorned. It was hard to believe how this kind of huge, ancient, and rocky residence would appear in the flourishing Celestial City. It was excessively simple and plain.

This was the Solitary family's sole residence in the Celestial City.

The number of people in the Solitary's family was very scarce. There was always one descendent in each generations, but it only lasted until Dugu Jianmo's generation. The history changed for the better, the Solitary family actually bore three children in this generation, and all of them were male.

Dugu Jianmo's eldest brother left the house with a sword at the age of fifteen. There's no news about him for eighteen years straight. Even Dugu Jianmo's second brother left the south at the age of thirteen. He crossed over the Terra Empire at a young age and entered the even wider North territory. He entered the legendary land of the illustrious heroes. He left for sixteen years and never returned to the south.

Dugu Jianmo was independent since childhood. When his big brother left to travel to the other end of the world, he was only four years old. When his second brother traveled to the distant land, he was only six years old. The entire old residence was lifeless. There's no servants nor playmates. There was only his uncommunicative father who sat by himself in the sword chamber all day long. Since five years old, not only his clothing, he even had to take care of his own food.

Without any familial love nor friendship, he grew up by his lonesome self without any cheers and laughs.

When Dugu Jianmo was ten years old, after his father passed all the sword skills to him, he left and never returned like his grandfather and great-grandfather, leaving no traces behind. As for his mother, he had never seen her before. The three brothers were personally brought home from the outside by their father.

Dugu Jianmo's childhood was dull gray. Only his father and himself lived in such a big ancient castle. And after ten years old, the only thing accompanying him was a sword. 1

He was this lonely since childhood. As far as he was concerned, the sword was more important than his life. It was his only friend since childhood. The sword was his other half!

The ancient castle was very dark. The buildings completely made out of piling boulders were very tall and blocked a wide expanse of the gentle moonlight. It made this place seem very gloomy.

Within the ancient wall, in front of a huge castle, an imposing figure was standing there, alone. The simple and unadorned sword was pierced into the bluestone floor. Dugu Jianmo was looking up at the starry sky motionlessly. His entire person seemed like a wood statue.

After a good while, he sat on the ground cross-legged, with his back facing the ancient yet huge castle. He pulled the sword out from the ground and placed it on his knees. He gently stroked it over and over with a very devoted expression.

Dugu Jianmo was feeling very unsettled tonight. The ancient castle made him recall a lot of things. All these dull memories could make one feel lonely.

The memories from childhood resurfaced in his mind. When he was two years old, he tumbled on the ground and was badly bruised, everyone ignored him. When he was three years old and fell into the bone-chilling glacier, his father fished him up and didn't comfort him at all. He was tossed aside at the ice-cold ancient castle to whimper alone. When he was five years old, he had to take care of his own food. When he was extremely hungry, he even wolfed down half of the raw goose meat. When he was six years old, he had to bear the pain of the

sword piercing his bones. When he was seven years old, he was thrown into the desolate region and forced to face the wolves alone. He always returned with blood covering his entire body... Of course, what he recalled the most was still the loneliness. It had accompanied him for twenty two years!

His past was dull gray and lonely... when Dugu Jianmo was young, he always fantasized a kind and beautiful mother appearing beside him sometime in the future, with a lively and kind-hearted big sister to talk with him unceasingly.

However, all of these were nothing more than fantasy! Only the ice-cold sword had accompanied him for twenty two years.

Xiao Chen entered the sky of the ancient castle and calmly swept his eyes over the bottom. He quickly found the lone figure under the shadow of the huge castle. He could vaguely see two crystal clear tears rolling down Dugu Jianmo's cheeks. This made Xiao Chen very surprised. As ruthless as Dugu Jianmo — he was killing without batting an eye on the dragon island — he actually had this kind of unknown side.

“Ah!!!” All of a sudden, Dugu Jianmo faced upwards and let out a shout. He seemed to be in a frenzy. His black hair flew up as the sword in his hand caused the space to distort. A mysterious domain shrouded the shadow of the castle in that instant. The entire castle was shaking violently accordingly.

“Sky Mastery, Heavenly Body; Earth Mastery, Dragon Rise; Humanity Mastery, Temporal Upend!” At this moment, Dugu Jianmo recovered his former expression, grave and stern. His ice-cold tone reverberated in the ancient castle, “Sword! It is my only way of life! Sweep the whole world with the sword! Turn the Heaven and Earth upside down!”

Xiao Chen slowly descended. He stood in front of the huge ancient castle and looked straight at Dugu Jianmo.

With a single sword, he overpowered everyone in the south and it was difficult to find anyone on his level among the peers. Dugu Jianmo already put away the domain and thrust his sword into the bluestone ground in front. He fixed his eyes on Xiao Chen coldly.

Without any words, the both of them understood each other's way of thinking. Right now, they were at the stage of overcoming an obstacle. They were at the

most crucial point of breaking into Historia realm.

I am unparalleled! This was their common way of thinking. In regards to power, they were already at the peak stage of Ninth Celestial Layer. They only needed to cut off the devil's whispers in their heart to realize the genuine breakthrough and open up the treasures in their body.

Defeat every opponents. This was their common way of thinking at this stage.

Right now, it was basically needless to say anything. There's only one thing to do, fight!

Rips!

The sword that was stuck in the ground suddenly started to tremble. After that, it flew towards the sky by itself. The originally dull sword left a streak of rainbow as it illuminated the night sky.

It was too bright!

The divine radiance was dazzling. As if the sword had a soul, it cycled around the sky and violently slashed at Xiao Chen. The sword-qi was like a light beam. It was just like one after another lightning falling from the sky. The light from the lightning was harsh and dazzled the eyes. The blazing sword-qi interweaved and formed a deathly net. Its momentum was extreme.

Xiao Chen emitted two cold glints from his eyes and said in shock, "The Daoist School's Airborne Fencing?!"

"The Airborne Fencing is nothing. In the face of my Solitary swordplay, it's just a minor art!" Dugu Jianmo was like a greater demon. Standing in front of the huge castle, he wore a cold and proud expression.

Xiao Chen pulled out the jet-black broken sword and slashed eighteen times in succession. The sword-qi was as dazzling as a cluster of shooting stars falling on mother earth. The ancient castle was brightly illuminated.

"Clang! Clang! Clang...!"

The clashing sound of metals lingered on. The broken sword and metal sword clashed unceasingly. A series of sparks burst forth.

All of these happened at lightning speed. Xiao Chen's body already

transformed into a faint radiance. The broken sword and metal sword even burst forth with one ray of light after another. It appeared as if a lot of huge waterfalls were flowing backwards. Those aura and radiance of the sword-qi were dancing across the sky, boundless and majestic.

The ground was fissured, the ancient castle was shaking.

After thirty three strikes, the metal sword cut through the air and returned to Dugu Jianmo's hand. The instant he grabbed the metal sword, it was as if Dugu Jianmo had been granted the second soul. His entire person seemed to have suddenly become much taller. It gave people an extremely bizarre feeling, as if a lofty giant had suddenly appeared in thin air. It gave people an incomparably huge pressure.

“Whoosh.....”

Cold glint streaked past as Dugu Jianmo took a step forward. The metal sword produced an ear-splitting whistle as it was waved by him. That was because the speed was really too fast, making the sound of cutting through air sounded like the whistle of the ghost. The thick and solid sword-qi surged forward like a thunderous Milky Way. It was unstoppable. This space was practically almost split open by the sword-qi.

Three pavilions not far away instantly collapsed due to the overflowing sword-qi. The dazzling sword radiance was really too tyrannical. The boundless power was unimaginable. The air shook violently, as if the space itself might be ripped apart at any time.

A cold glint flickered in Xiao Chen's eyes. He grasped the sword with both hands and jumped up high. After that, he faced the sword-qi with a vertical slash.

“Cling! Clang!”

The sword-qi and blade-qi clashed. It was as if the metal sword and broken sword had clashed together. That was a clear metallic sound, so much so that it was carrying the ringing sound of the metal.

A glaring light burst out in the sky. It made people unable to open their eyes. The intense energy swept across the sky like the raging waves. Even the mother

earth fissured unceasingly.

It was as if the heaven and earth had turned upside down!

Xiao Chen streaked across the sky and continuously hacked at Dugu Jianmo with the broken sword, aiming directly for his waist.

When facing Windfeathers, it's a must to use the fist. While facing Dugu Jianmo, even if he didn't have a double-edged sword, he must use the single-edged sword!

The broken sword left behind a streak of rainbow as it was swept diagonally downward. It was dazzling.

Dugu Jianmo raised the sword diagonally. The metal sword clashed with the broken sword. An exceptionally eccentric power spiralled upward. Xiao Chen felt as if his entire arm had been struck by a thunderbolt. A blazing ray of light enveloped his arm from the metal sword. The broken sword narrowly flew out from his hand.

“Clang!”

The battle-qi suddenly broke out and made the light of the broken sword even more glaring. Xiao Chen forced that spiralling power back, then he instantly jumped and used the dragging sword technique to hack at Dugu Jianmo's neck.

A black light swept past, but it only hit the afterimage. Dugu Jianmo raised his sword towards the sky as he stood on the bluestone surface motionlessly. However, the surrounding space already distorted. Following closely, that place turned into a piece of darkness and his figure disappeared. The metal sword had spread out a domain!

As he reached the maximum height of the jump, Xiao Chen dived down fast. At the same time, the Sealed God light screen transformed into a battle armor and covered his body. The divine flame was throbbing. That was not a domain, yet it was not weaker than a domain.

God Slayer, Chaotic Patterns, Death Blow, and Demon Suppression. Xiao Chen could already use them in battles unhindered. He needn't deliberately integrate them into the sword skill anymore.

He swoop down in a perfectly straight line. The broken sword was aimed at the Baihui Acupoint at the top of Dugu Jianmo's head.

The dazzling sword radiance was as boundless as the vast ocean. The pressure pressed down from everywhere. The mother earth began to sink with a "rumbling" sound!

The sword radiance enveloped a radius of one hundred feet. Everything within the range was destroyed and sunk two meters deep. Dugu Jianmo stood in the caved in hole motionlessly. Just now, he waved his sword nine times in succession and routed all the sword-qi that charged towards him.

Unparalleled metal sword!

He was unwilling to waste any ounce of strength. In the end, he only moved his body a little sideways. He didn't want to make any unnecessary movements at all and just waved his sword towards the sky.

"Clang!"

The glaring rays of light possessed a powerful force of impact and produced an ear-splitting sound!

The broken sword in Xiao Chen's hand and the metal sword in Dugu Jianmo's hand clashed fiercely. Dugu Jianmo's lower half was forced into the underground by that powerful impact. On the other side, Xiao Chen was lifted up by that huge power. However, Xiao Chen forced himself to fall in that very instant. With somersault, both of his legs stamped towards Dugu Jianmo's chest.

"Hah!" Dugu Jianmo let out a cold snort. The surrounding floor completely burst open. He jumped up and lifted his metal sword to confront the approaching kicks.

Xiao Chen quickly shifted horizontally and stepped on the metal sword with both legs. Then he turned around and swept his sword downwards. Quick and fierce, steady and brutal. The sword radiance fell on mother earth like a comet and illuminated the entire ancient castle. It was so dazzling that one was unable to open their eyes.

Dugu Jianmo stamped the ground fiercely with his two legs. With a big quake, one huge fissure after another spread out in all directions. Two huge castles

nearby collapsed with a loud rumble. His entire person quickly sunk into the ground and the shock blew Xiao Chen away.

Within the rolling smoke and dust, Dugu Jianmo walked out from the huge pit, one step at a time. He fixed his eyes coldly on Xiao Chen. His domain was not effective, it almost made him suffer a loss. While watching Xiao Chen's light armor attentively, he wordlessly nodded his head.

"Fastest Under the Heaven!" These four words seemed to possess unlimited magic power. Legend said that among the swordplay of the Solitary clan, there's a swordplay that was claimed to be the fastest in the world!

With a loud shout, Dugu Jianmo's figure suddenly disappeared. Xiao Chen was unable to catch his silhouette at all. However, his keen spiritual sense knew where the danger was coming from. He quickly brandished the sword in his hand.

"Clang!"

Just in time to resist that sharp sword-qi.

However, it didn't stop with just that. Dugu Jianmo completely disappeared at this point. On the ruin formed by the fallen ancient castles, only the soaring sword-qi remained. At this moment, the entire ancient castle was filled with criss-crossed sword-qi.

The fastest swordplay in the world, continuous assault! There were cold glints everywhere. The figure of the person couldn't be seen, only the blazing sword-qi were raging on.

The explosive sound transmitted outwards unceasingly. The mother earth was caving in. One sword-qi after another completely cut apart this ruin. The soaring rays of light were exceptionally glaring. Looking from a distant, the Solitary family's ancient castle seemed to have countless lights linking up with the starry sky. On the other hand, it also looked like the heavenly flame had descended at this place.

The sword-qi were too concentrated. A tyrannical Sword Demon. A terrifying swordplay!

Chapter 174 – Pasteur, the Ancient Divine Spear

Xiao Chen was completely relying on his spiritual sense to defend. Wherever he felt the danger came from, it's where he hacked the broken sword.

The blazing sword-qi and resplendent sword radiance interweaved together and formed layer upon layer of energy billows, wrecking havoc in the night sky. The starlight and moonlight in the sky had completely been covered up.

The aura of death at this place was skyrocketing. The glint of the swords was dazzling.

Under the untold numbers of sword-qi; these four words, "Heaviest Under the Heaven!" came out from Dugu Jianmo's mouth. Legend has it that the Solitary clan had the heaviest swordplay under the heaven!

As soon as he retracted fastest under the heaven swordplay, Dugu Jianmo's figure became visible. The metal sword slowly pressed down like a huge mountain. People could obviously see the attack very clearly, yet they were unable to dodge.

Heaviest under the Heaven, one sword sealed off all ten directions!

"Bang!"

The intangible domain was excessively heavy. The earth burst open, even the halls in the vicinity broke into pieces unceasingly. A huge light beam seemed to directly pierce into the heavens. This was the sword-qi of the heaviest sword!

Xiao Chen's expression was particularly grave. He didn't dare to be careless in the slightest amount. His state of mind slowly calmed down. His mind turned into a blank. Everything before his eyes disappeared, so much so that even Dugu Jianmo had disappeared. The only thing remained in his sight was the sword that slowly pushed forward.

Slowly, Xiao Chen finally brandished the broken sword in his hand. It was not the four major techniques, nor the Demonic Seal. This was a swordplay executed by him instinctively after clearing his mind and submerging in some kind of mysterious realm. It was a revelation swordplay!

It could be understood, but not described. It was produced by the battle instinct under this kind of special circumstances. Just by relying on intuition alone, this was definitely a very powerful swordplay!

The movement of the two was very slow. The metal sword and longsword slowly clashed together.

At this critical life and death moment, the two seemed as if they were uninvolved.

They were very calm in the face of adversity.

The two of them were not tense or worried. They did not feel apprehensive at all, nor did they feel uneasy. Their mind was calm, expression was undisturbed.

The heaviest sword under the heaven and the swordplay executed by Xiao Chen in an ethereal state finally clashed.

At this very moment, a hard to describe pressure shrouded all directions in a flash. The sword-qi directly pierced the heavens! It appeared especially bright in the night sky. Everyone in this region of the Celestial City noticed this bizarre event.

“Rumble!”

It reverberated like the explosion of Heavenly Thunder!

The soaring sword-qi was indistinguishable from real lightning. It had truly linked up the sky and the earth.

If the two huge light beams were charged down from the sky instead, the Solitary clan would inevitably be razed to the ground!

Despite that, many buildings still collapsed. Many huge cracks appeared even on the tall and ancient wall. That was a world-shaking strike! Xiao Chen and Dugu Jianmo were sent flying by the impact. They coughed out blood unceasingly. Just like a dried leaf falling gently, they fell onto the pool of blood listlessly.

However, their eyes were exceptionally bright as they jumped up at almost the same time.

Broken sword versus metal sword, Xiao Chen and Dugu Jianmo clashed.

The sonorous noise never stopped. Xiao Chen immersed himself in that mysterious realm again, completely casting away the four major techniques and relied on his instinct to brandish the sword. The dazzling sword-qi pierced the night sky, running amuck in the sky like a raging river.

Dugu Jianmo was in the same state. He shook off the unrivaled ancient swordplay passed down by his ancestors. The sword intent dispersed by the metal sword was already not limited only to the Solitary sword intent anymore. It already transcended and broke away from this category. He completely walked out of his own way of the sword.

The sword radiance was resplendent. The cold glint was glaring. Countless rays of light blossomed in the night sky. It was gorgeous and exceptionally beautiful. But it was terrifying and frightening all the same. Every sword sweep was sufficient to rip apart a huge castle and destroy everything in the path!

The intense battle persisted without an end in sight. In the sea of sword-qi, Xiao Chen and Dugu Jianmo exchanged no less than several hundred bouts. However, they were still unable to decide victory or defeat.

Xiao Chen immersed in that kind of mysterious realm and freely brandished the sword. The sword intent was absolutely not inferior to the four major techniques. This was the liberation of the battle instinct, this was the sublimation of the martial intent. This was the evolution and quick advance of his battle ability.

That was not to say the sword intent released from this kind of mysterious condition surpassed the four major techniques. It was only that the sword intent exhibited the greatest power in this kind of situation and was most fitting for this fierce battle at present.

There's no such thing as an unparalleled mystic art. Everything depended on the opponent. In the battlefield, there's a myriad of changes in an instant. Only by using the most suitable move at the right time would one be able to bring out the greatest power. Even the most simple move could become the most deadly attack.

They were evenly matched!

The domain and sealed god light screen were ineffective. The two staked all

their Exuvia level power in this fight! Dugu Jianmo was firm and persistent. His might was unmatched. He made his name renowned in the south with a sword. There was hardly anyone among his peers that could stand up to him. The experience from his childhood would never part with him.

Sword, that was his entire life!

The two had already fought for an hour. Their bodies were stained by blood all over. When they waved their swords, beside the thunderous noise and the surging sword-qi, there was also a great pressure. The blood vessels on their skins were damaged by the pressure. And who knew just how much blood had they lost already. However, the two of them were tenacious, they wouldn't waver just because of this. They had an unrelenting expression.

“Clang!”

When the swords clashed, the broken sword and metal sword flung off from Xiao Chen and Dugu Jianmo's hands simultaneously. The both of them suffered a bone fracture in their hands. Their injuries were equally grave.

The glint in Xiao Chen's eyes was clear as he emitted two resplendent divine-qi. From his perspective, the Solitary clan's forte was the sword. Now that the metal sword had been rid of, it was equivalent to eliminating Dugu Jianmo's sharp teeth. 1

The vigorous life energy rushed towards the fractured right palm. Then, with a “snapping” noise, the metacarpal bones reconnected. Of course, it was impossible for it to become as good as before immediately. However, it was enough for him to make a move. With speed as fast as lightning, he struck Dugu Jianmo.

Dugu Jianmo's palm let out a similar noise and healed at the same time. He attacked with the injured palm, his fighting strength did not diminish.

“My body is my sword!” Dugu Jianmo laughed grimly, “Even with no sword in my hand, there's still a sword in my heart. All tangible things in the world, be it a blade of grass or a stick, I can turn them into my divine weapon!”

Speaking until here, Dugu Jianmo actually picked up his speed. He reached an inconceivable speed in that instant. While joining his hands together, he rushed

towards Xiao Chen.

At this very moment, Xiao Chen was shocked. That was because what he saw in the front was an illusion. Dugu Jianmo's entire body actually transformed into a divine sword. It was glinting with resplendent radiance as it rushed towards him.

It was not at all possible for Dugu Jianmo to transform into a divine sword. The only possible explanation was that this was the manifestation of his future divine ability in advance. This was merely the fledgling stage of his future divine ability. It brought about some kind of illusion, but it was sufficient to show how terrifying the Sword Demon was.

It must be mentioned that Xiao Chen was very gifted in regards to battle. The more dangerous the situation, all the more calmer he became. His state of mind quickly calmed down and immersed in an ethereal state in that instant.

Everything in the world seemed to have disappeared. Only that unstoppable divine sword appeared in his line of sight. It seemed as if time had slowed down, including that lone sword that was pushing forward!

Xiao Chen was calm to a frightening level. He remained motionless until that divine sword was just about to touch his body. He waved his left hand lightly. It was a very elegant palm blade. He made his move as bold as before, but the domineering move was entirely different. It was as if an exiled immortal was casting divine spells without constraint. It was incomparably ethereal, extremely graceful.

A mysterious and profound palm blade. Completely relying on instinct, he executed an otherworldly blade!

“Clang!”

The palm blade and divine sword transformed from Dugu Jianmo's body clashed. The two were sent flying by the impact at the same time.

Dugu Jianmo wiped the blood at the corner of his mouth and shouted coldly, “Not only my body is the sword. All tangible things in the world are my divine swords! Kill — Kill — Kill — Kill — Kill!”

The fragments of the ruins; the debris, the rocks, and the beams... All of them floated up and emitted a heavy murderous aura. They already transformed into

sword light and were launched towards Xiao Chen.

All tangible things in the world — even the blades of grass and sticks — all of them transformed into divine swords!

If it was any other Ninth Celestial Layer experts, after fighting for an hour, they might not be able to continue fighting anymore under such a tyrannical display.

However, Xiao Chen was still scarily calm. His mind was empty, his body was as cold as the sword and moved according to his heartbeat. The sea of consciousness had dominated his body.

It was a very bizarre mental state. He felt as if his heart had already flew out of the battlefield, as if his soul was standing on a faintly discernible cloud and looking down at everything calmly.

However, his body was moving. Very smooth and fluent movements, very mysterious and profound techniques. The ethereal palm blade, the graceful stance, it was as if the sweet dew had fallen onto the lonesome desert, as if the morning sun had ascended on the spacious and empty plain.

All of these was so smooth, so harmonious. Everything was so perfect!

The graceful palm blade didn't let any debris, rocks, or broken beams to slip past... All the tangible things that transformed into the sword body had been cut off with pinpoint accuracy!

The big swings only left behind silence in the world. At present, Xiao Chen's attitude was also like this, unusually calm and indifferent, as if he was not connected with this event.

However, one strike hundred down! He completely routed these untold numbers of divine sword made from every tangible things!

Dugu Jianmo beckoned and the metal sword flew into his hand. He coldly looked face to face with Xiao Chen. He felt that this might be his most dangerous battle since birth. He strongly felt threatened by death.

After Xiao Chen broke through the "thousand swords", he stood against the wind. His long hair fluttered by itself as he looked at Dugu Jianmo calmly.

"Kill!"

Dugu Jianmo prepared the final move. Victory or defeat would be decided with this!

The domain laid out by the metal sword pressed down with huge pressure. Xiao Chen's sealed god light screen glinted with brilliant rays to resist the sword's domain.

All of Dugu Jianmo's thick black hair erected. On his metal sword, layer upon layer of sword-qi rushed towards Xiao Chen like stormy seas.

Xiao Chen still found himself in an ethereal state. He faced the approaching blazing sword radiance with the palm blade. Although he was in a critical circumstance, he appeared to be calm. Vaguely, he felt that kind of state was the doorstep to Historia realm!

Suddenly, an extremely bad premonition rushed into Xiao Chen's mind. Even if his body was in this kind of mysterious and wondrous state, his unshakable state of mind was also unable to keep calm anymore as the shadow of death floated up in his mind.

Xiao Chen didn't even think about it and his body immediately flew to the side, as graceful as an exiled immortal.

However, it was still too late!

An incomparably red divine spear emitted blazing divine-qi. As if endless amount of scarlet blood were igniting in the surroundings, it dyed half the sky with its color. That kind of spear transformed into a bloody-qi and flew over.

"Pfff!"

Although Xiao Chen avoided being hit in the vital part, his left rib was still penetrated from the back by the divine spear that was dripping with blood. He was sent flying along with a powerful force and was pinned on the ground more than hundred meters away.

Blood splashed everywhere and dyed the mother earth red.

After the divine spear that was pulsing with bloody divine-qi was pinned onto the ground, it trembled violently for a while before it finally calmed down.

Xiao Chen was pinned onto the ground!

“Pasteur, the ancient divine spear?!” Dugu Jianmo cried out in surprise. After that, he turned around to look towards the darkness not far away.

A brown-haired youth slowly walked out from the darkness with heavy steps. His body was very rugged. He bared his left arm and his muscles were bulging like young eastern dragons. He wore a sneer on his sharp face.

“That’s right, this is the ancient divine spear, Pasteur. The ancient spear that had once killed gods!” As the brown-haired youth walked, he said coldly, “It has been encroached by not only the blood of one god. Up until now, those blood still didn’t dry up and flows on the ancient spear all along.”

What pinned Xiao Chen on the ground was Pasteur, the ancient divine spear. It was a really bizarre divine spear. Nobody knew what material it was forged from. Its entire body was actually scarlet red and carved with ancient sacred writings. One blood-qi after another circulated on the divine spear. The most bizarre thing was that, there was really fresh blood dripping from the spear’s body unceasingly. It was flickering with a bewitching bloody glint. Pasteur, the ancient divine spear with flowing divine blood that never dried up!

“Why did you mount a sneak attack from the back?” Dugu Jianmo did not feel grateful at all.

“Because he must die. He cannot live past tonight. The divine spear guided me here to punish the demon!” 3

“I only ever heard of the divine spear being used to kill gods. I never heard anything about punishing demon. Don’t tell me Xiao Chen is a god?” Dugu Jianmo said sarcastically. In regards to the sneak attack mounted by this brown-haired youth, he had an undisguised contempt in his eyes. He pierced the metal sword into the ground and raised his guard.

“Anyway, he must die. My elder brother and I had been searching for him separately tonight, but his speed was really too fast. He continuously fought in one place after another. Only now did I manage to find him.”

Just at this time, an ice-cold voice transmitted from the front, “You have an elder brother right? Then you won’t be lonely if I send the both of you to hell!”

Both of Xiao Chen’s hand were encroached by blood. Nobody knew if it was

the divine blood or his own blood. He exerted himself physically to pull the ancient divine spear and stood up slowly. The ancient divine spear passed through his rib and trembled along with his movements.

“You are still alive?!” The brown-haired youth was very shocked, then his complexion turned cold as he said, “Then I will kill you personally!”

“It’s a pity you didn’t kill me in one strike. You will not get a chance like this again!” Xiao Chen stood up. The cold glints in his eyes and his voice sent chills down the spine. His voice sounded like a demon that came from the underworld, “You, and your elder brother, must die!”

Chapter 175 – Oneness of Heaven and Humanity

Pasteur, the ancient divine spear, was as red as blood. It had once killed the venerable god, and not merely one! It was eternally encroached in divine blood that couldn't be washed clean. It was the god killing ancient spear of legend.

Now, it suddenly appeared at this place. Everything seemed that kind of unusual.

The brown-haired man was not very tall, but he was very robust. He bared his left arm outside of his clothes. The bronze-like muscles were bulging and seemed to possess explosive power.

He wore a sneer on his not so handsome face. His eyes emitted two glints as he stared at Xiao Chen who walked over slowly.

At present, Xiao Chen's battle clothes were stained by blood. His lofty body was completely dyed red by blood. Pasteur had pierced his left ribs and broken two of his rib bones. A large amount of blood flowed out from that wound.

However, it seemed as if he couldn't feel the pain at all. He walked over with slow and steady steps. The bewitching scarlet radiance emitted from the sacred writings carved on the spear body made him seem more firm and persistent in contrast.

Under his long eyebrows, his eyes were ice-cold like the sword. The intangible "power" was as heavy as the mountain, and as vast as the boundless ocean. The omnipresent killing intent firmly locked onto that brown-haired youth.

"Boom!"

"Boom!"

.....

With every step he took, the earth trembled slightly. Xiao Chen was moving slowly like a huge mountain. The heavy pressured made one unable to breath.

Gradually, the brown-haired youth's complexion abruptly changed. He found to his shock, Xiao Chen's footsteps possessed an indescribable magic power. The

footsteps actually synchronized with his heartbeat. In the end, the heartbeat and footstep completely matched up.

“Boom!”

“Boom!”

.....

This was one type of sound technique. Xiao Chen had already made his move!

At this very moment, he seemed to have already merged with this piece of land. He could feel the pulse of the mother earth and united as one!

His footstep sound penetrated into mother earth, guiding the boundless power accumulated within the earth and made it ascend to the surface!

It was a very rhythmic footstep sound. It was slow, yet powerful and heavy. When one step touched the ground, this space seemed to shake along with it. The brown-haired youth's qi and blood rushed up. His face was as red as the blood. He felt as if his heart was about to jump out from his throat.

At this very moment, his heart seemed to be under someone else's control, as if it was being grabbed in someone's palm, it was getting crushed by a powerful force.

Oneness with Heaven and Earth!

Xiao Chen seemed like he had already assimilated the truth and realized the law of earth!

Merging with the heaven and earth, perceiving the Imprint of Dao, and archived oneness with heaven and humanity. At this very moment, Xiao Chen's every movement seemed that kind of natural and harmonious. He seemed to be in control of this very space. His body and mind blended into a bizarre domain.

“Rumble!”

All of a sudden, Xiao Chen stamped on the ground fiercely. The step was much heavier compared to before!

“Pfff!”

The face of the brown-haired youth was incomparably flushed. His two eyes

almost popped out. He opened his mouth and puffed out a big mouthful of blood. His body shook violently in that instant. He almost fell down on the ground.

“Rumble!”

Although Xiao Chen already sustained serious injuries, his bearing had reached an unprecedented height. His entire person standing on this land seemed as if he had really “achieved the truth”!

“Ah!!!” The brown-haired youth let out a huge roar. He wanted to break away from this indescribable pressure. If this kept up, his heart would explode. His heartbeat was completely under the control of the footsteps. He must break away from this situation.

“Rumble, rumble, rumble, rumble, rumble!”

Just at this time, Xiao Chen took five consecutive steps forward. The next heavier than the former. The steps synchronized with the pulse of the mother earth!

The brown-haired youth was unable to bear it anymore. He faced upwards and let out a bellow with all his might. He wanted to use the sound wave to shake off that unbearable pulse.

However, these five steps were apparently as heavy as the huge mountain. The pressure couldn't be resisted!

“Ah!!!”

The brown-haired youth coughed out a mouthful of blood. It was as if his body had been rammed by huge mountains as he was sent flying horizontally.

The bloody divine spear was still stuck on Xiao Chen's body as he walked over, one step at a time. An unimaginable power surged in this space. Every steps of his spurred on the power of this land!

“Bang!”

The brown-haired youth who fell on the ruins punched the ground with all his might. After that, he violently coughed out three big mouthfuls of blood. As if he was struck by a thunderbolt, he was sent flying backwards.

He finally broke free from that indescribable pressure, escaped from what seemed like the god realm.

He hadn't really made his move yet and he already sustained some injuries. There was an undisguised cold glint in his eyes. He looked at Xiao Chen like a wild beast and said coldly, "After getting penetrated by Pasteur and suffered a heavy damage, will you be able to make your move the second times, third times, or fourth times?"

"It's more than enough to kill you."

"Ha... haha...." The brown-haired youth laughed out loud and said, "Just now I was too careless and fell into your battle rhythm. Let's see what else can you do to me now?!"

Dugu Jianmo was carrying his sword in his arm and stood at the distant. As if it was a matter of no concern to him, he wore an indifferent expression.

Xiao Chen walked forward slowly. The scarlet Pasteur was stuck to his body all along. It's not that he didn't want to pull it out, it's that he didn't dare to pull it out. He was afraid that the instant he pulled it out, his three energies would also be drawn out instantly.

This divine spear had injured him too heavily. It penetrated his left rib, snapped off his rib bones, even his tendons had suffered damage and his power had been affected greatly. If it was not because of the vigorous life energy, he might be crushed by that great impact from the ancient spear at the very beginning!

Regarding this ancient spear, Pasteur, there were many legends regarding it. According to the ancient legend, this scarlet ancient spear was a sacred tool from some small tribe in the West. The small tribe had a very long tradition and each generation, an innate demigod would be born.

Legend has it that they had enough strength to fight off the descendant of ancient deities. The ancient divine spear was one of the weapons handed down from the clan. One must know that this clan had once killed many deities!

It could be said that Pasteur had an out of the ordinary origin. Only that the brown-haired youth was unable to manifest its true power.

"Haha... You are really like an arrow at the end of its flight. If I didn't guess

wrong, you didn't even dare to pull out the divine spear!" The brown-haired youth laughed grimly in a loud voice.

Xiao Chen was seriously in a grave condition, but his spiritual power was getting increasingly powerful. Although his body was inflicted with serious damage, his bearing was as majestic as the blazing sun.

"My gratitude for presenting me with the divine ancient spear. Pasteur will become my spoil of war, and you will inevitably die under this very spear!"

Speaking until here, Xiao Chen's figure suddenly disappeared. He got in front of the brown-haired youth with a single step and brandished his palm blade down. At the same time, his other hand was used to stabilize the divine spear, making it unable to tremble as he pierced it towards the brown-haired youth.

The palm blade didn't give rise to any wind. It was as light as a feather, as if he didn't put any effort into it. There was only a faint layer of light. There's no thunderous air splitting sound.

On the other side, the ancient divine spear was completely opposite. The bloody radiance was incomparably glaring. The bloody-qi was launched forward for several meters, launching towards the brown-haired youth who quickly dodge. He was nearly pierced by the bloody-qi.

"Remember this, the one who killed you is Molika!" After the brown-haired youth's shout, he rushed forward like a ghost. He was rushing straight for the ancient spear, Pasteur. He wanted to grab the pole of the divine spear and lift Xiao Chen up on the spot.

However, how could Xiao Chen give him this chance? He didn't make any unnecessary movements. In fact, he didn't dare to make any excessive movements. He lightly slid his left foot towards the rear and rotated half a step slowly. Then he took a step forward with the right foot. His left hand gripped onto the bloody spear that penetrated through his left rib and drew one after another bloody pictures in the sky. A piece of bloody curtain fell down from all directions.

It was bright red and incomparably glaring. The blazing spearhead was compelling. Xiao Chen, who was penetrated by the ancient spear, actually used it as his own weapon and sealed off the brown-haired youth's path.

“Hey!”

Molika shouted coldly as he sent one punch towards the bloody screen. He was originally a Ninth Celestial Layer expert to begin with. Although he was injured by Xiao Chen’s initial sound attack, his power didn’t get affected much, so he didn’t have any qualms to attack head on. He wore a cold smile on his face. He was sure that the heavily injured Xiao Chen couldn’t bear it.

However, he was a little disappointed.

Xiao Chen’s movements was like moving clouds and flowing water. He shifted a few meters to the side with movements as light as a feather and swept over from the side with Pasteur.

Needless to think, Xiao Chen could already freely immerse into that ethereal state as when he fought with Dugu Jianmo earlier. One sword-qi after another revolved like the starlight. At the same time, they shrouded Xiao Chen like a misty haze. At this very moment, his entire person seemed to have transformed into an unsheathed unique sword.

There’s no enemies before his eyes, only a single target, nothing more than a scarecrow, It didn’t cause his state of mind to fluctuate excessively. That was a target he must behead. That was nothing more than a target!

His expression was ice-cold to the point of scary. When Xiao Chen immersed himself in this profound state, his battle instinct was raised to the highest level. Everything was that smooth, he was no longer berserk, no longer domineering, but among the gracefulness, his killing intent increased without let-up!

“Pfff! Pfff!”

Xiao Chen slid past from the side, drifting like the clouds. After his bloodstained battle clothes lightly swept past, he slashed vertically with his left palm and ruthlessly clashed with Molika twice.

Molika found it a little unbelievable. Xiao Chen actually dared to face him head on. However, in reality, he knew he was wrong. When Xiao Chen was in this state, he was really too terrifying. The two strikes made him feel as if he was struck by thunderbolts. His right palm almost broke up.

The dawn of Historia realm!

Xiao Chen was on the eve of touching upon the Historia realm. This was the conclusion Molika arrived at! He must kill Xiao Chen, right now, right here! He must not tarry any longer. Otherwise, this enemy would become his greatest nightmare in the future!

It was a fierce battle, a desperate fight!

Xiao Chen's vitality was as vigorous as in the past. It seemed like he was not affected in the slightest amount. He was as calm as the water. His pupils were as cold as ice. His body was as unyielding as sword!

Although he was heavily injured, it was as if he had stepped into a new domain. Xiao Chen's every movement was incredibly smooth.

A clear whistle transmitted from a distant place as a human figure rushed towards the Solitary castle with lightning speed. The brown-haired youth jumped over the Solitary clan's lofty stone wall and pounced towards Xiao Chen violently.

And just at this time, two terrifying glints suddenly emitted from Xiao Chen's eyes. His left hand released the ancient spear that penetrated himself. Both of his hands changed into palm blade and slashed towards Molika.

Molika's eyes were filled with bloodthirsty glint. His elder brother had arrived. Xiao Chen was dead for sure! However, it seemed like there was already no need for his elder brother to make his move. That was because at this very moment, he actually grabbed the ancient spear that penetrated Xiao Chen's body. He gripped it firmly and violently flung Xiao Chen up. His face was brimming with a ruthless smile.

However, Molika's smile immediately stiffened. Xiao Chen, who was lifted up by him, was as heavy as an immemorial demonic mountain and pressed down on him. He felt his arms were about to break. Xiao Chen's hands already firmly gripped onto the pole of the scarlet ancient spear as he pressed down ruthlessly. The spearhead originally pierced through Xiao Chen from the back anyway. At this moment, it touched upon Molika's abdomen with unstoppable force.

At this very moment, Molika was brimming with fear!

"You dare to harm my brother?!" A sudden shout transmitted from not far away. Molika's elder brother, Youlan Mu, already rushed over at lightning speed.

His eyes were fierce.

At present, everything in the world had already disappeared from Xiao Chen's eyes. His mind only had one conviction. And that was to pierce Molika's body with the spearhead!

A boundless and unimaginable power fell down from every directions. Although his state of mind was calm and ethereal, the power stored up in Xiao Chen's body pressed down like the Milky Way falling from the Ninth Heaven. The torrent couldn't be stopped!

Youlan Mu cried out desperately, "Little bro!"

Even if his speed was fast, he was still slower than the speed of the ancient spear. The bloody divine spear pierced one inch at a time, and then with a "Pfff," it pierced into Molika's body!

Molika felt shocked and heartbroken at the same time. He never thought the already heavily injured Xiao Chen was actually this terrifying. He was still unable to fight against him! In regards to power, he was inferior. In regards to stamina, there was an even bigger disparity. He was practically not Xiao Chen's opponent at all, despite the other party being heavily injured!

The blood splashed everywhere. The bloody spear, Pasteur, penetrated Molika's abdomen. Xiao Chen stood on the ground. His messy hair danced crazily. While bearing the sharp pain, he faced upwards and let out a long roar. The bloody spear passed through his left ribs, then he grabbed it with both hands and violently lifted Molika up!

Chapter 176 – Ancient Three-Layered Seal

Xiao Chen lifted Molika up in the air, blood splashed everywhere. Not only did it made Youlan Mu — who just got over a moment ago — so angry that his eyes were about to crack, it also made Dugu Jianmo — who was watching the fight from a distant — to emit two glints from his eyes. He was carrying his metal sword and exploded with battle intent.

Molika was suffering from an extreme pain. His abdomen was completely penetrated. And due to Xiao Chen's tyrannical power, his intestines were pounded to pieces. He was a Ninth Celestial Layer expert with vigorous vitality, it was impossible for him to die in a short time. As such, this was simply a torture. It was a hellish suffering!

The miserable shriek reverberated unceasingly in the Solitary's ancient residence. Molika was breaking out in cold sweat all over. More than half of his body was stained by blood. His expression was listless.

Youlan Mu's stature was very lofty. His appearance was similar to Molika. Although he couldn't be considered handsome, he had a trace of wild nature. He glowered at Xiao Chen with his ice-cold pupils, and shouted, "Release him!"

With regards to this kind of words, Xiao Chen just simply ignored it. It was completely meaningless! He released one of his hands and gripped the ancient spear single-handedly. The other hand was used to draw a few dots on his body, stopping the blood from gushing out from the wound.

"Release my younger brother!" He stubbornly repeated the same words. Although this might sound like a nonsense in the eyes of an expert — because nobody would change their decision just because of this — Youlan Mu had no other choice but to act like this. This was his flesh and blood younger brother, he was already thinking of compromising.

"Speak, why do you guys want to kill me? If you want to challenge me, it's impossible for you to mount a sneak attack from my back, so why?!" Speaking until here, Xiao Chen's eyes became incomparably sharp. It directly penetrated into Youlan Mu's sea of consciousness.

“There’s no particular reason. Pasteur the ancient spear guided us here to put the demon to death!”

“Don’t deceive me!” Xiao Chen let out a cold snort. Then he shook the bloody spear, making Molika shout out in pain repeatedly. He continued to speak in a cold voice, “The ancient spear had once killed gods, but it had never bore through a demon once. Do I look like a god to you? Why did you guys try to assassinate me from behind?”

Seeing Molika being trampled on, Youlan Mu was unable to keep calm anymore. He said with a very complicated expression, “It is our wrong, I will solemnly apologize to you here. Please let me younger brother go.”

“Speak!” With only one word, then Xiao Chen shook the ancient spear again. Blood immediately flowed out from Molika’s wound, causing him to let out a miserable shriek.

“My younger brother wants to marry Yan Qingcheng, but he had been told by the elders of the Undying Sect stationed in Celestial City, that she has already been betrothed to you.” 1

Hearing this, Xiao Chen stared blankly for a while, then he helplessly sighed: Mother f—! This way can also invite a disaster? This feels so wrong! Can I think of this as a fact? Otherwise, the suffering this time is just so not worth it.

“Anything else? It couldn’t be this simple right?” Xiao Chen didn’t believe that was the only reason.

“When Hofmann and my younger brother were drinking, he said there will be a big reward for eliminating you!” Youlan Mu didn’t hesitate in the slightest as he disclosed the main culprit.”

“Hofmann of the Reagan Family?”

That’s right.”

“It seems like this scum of society really don’t want to live any longer!” The killing intent in Xiao Chen’s eyes was undisguised. Now, the animosity between him and the Reagan Family was getting deeper and deeper. After killing that four Historia level experts, he knew that the member of this family must have hated him to the core. However, because they were afraid of the terrifying existence in

the depths of the south, they didn't dare to act blindly without thinking.

"Anything else?" Xiao Chen swept his eyes over Youlan Mu coldly and said, "I don't believe these two are the only reasons. I am not very convinced!"

Youlan Mu was already pressing his luck. He stared at Xiao Chen coldly and said, "When my brother held onto the ancient spear Pasteur, he can gain a spiritual power similar to prophecy. He felt that in the future, you will become our greatest enemy. If we don't get rid of you now, it will cause us trouble to no end!"

"So, in the end, you guys also wanted to kill me yourselves." Xiao Chen laughed grimly and said, "He can see the future when holding onto the ancient spear Pasteur? That's just a bunch of nonsense! It's merely a reason to eliminate me. If he can really see the future, then why did he not forecast his own defeat?! He can't even grasp his own future, so how can he boast so shamelessly that he can see the future!"

"Hmph!" Youlan Mu snorted coldly. If Molika's life was not under Xiao Chen's control, there's no way he would swallow his anger like this.

"I believe such a divine spear is not something you brothers are capable of controlling at the present time. How can the elder from your family let you guys take it as you pleases?"

Just at this time, Molika endured the sharp pain and said weakly, "Bro... I can't make it anymore... my internal organs has already been completely destroyed by the spear..."

"What?!" Youlan Mu's eyes immediately became sharp. To receive this kind of news after speaking so much, it really felt like he was hit by a thunder from the clear sky.

"You can't blame me for this." Xiao Chen said very calmly, "Just now we were facing each other in a life and death battle, who would dare to hold back? He originally wanted to kill me anyway. There's nothing injustice about it if he get killed by me now."

"I won't stop until one of us is dead!" Youlan Mu was seething in anger. There's no need to continue talking. He soundlessly got in front of Xiao Chen like

a ghost and attacked with a palm chop. With a sudden clap of thunder, the rays of light flickered.

Xiao Chen swung the ancient spear Pasteur and created a bloody light screen. It was surging forward like layer upon layer of bloody waves. The sound was deafening.

Youlan Mu almost grinded his teeth into pieces. Xiao Chen actually faced the enemy with his brother still stuck on the spear. His younger brother's body burst open right before his eyes.

"Ah!!!" He let out a wild roar as he fell back. His entire body was shuddering violently. He gazed at Xiao Chen and said coldly, "You are too fierce, too cruel!"

"Am I now? Everything I do is honorable. Your brother used an ancient spear that once killed the gods to mount a sneak attack on me, what's your thought on it?" Xiao Chen's expression was very calm. It was as if he was talking about something very common and said, "If you think this is cruel, then you shouldn't have entered the world of martial arts. This world itself is a sad melody. When you are killing, you should be prepared to be killed." 2

Youlan Mu almost went berserk. His long brown hair erected one after another. His eyes were incomparably bloodthirsty. He said with a very menacing voice, "I will offer your heart and liver to Molika! Truth be told, I was the one who get the premonition by holding onto the ancient spear Pasteur. It was me who wanted to kill you! Now, you must die!"

"How will you kill me? Can you do it? Your younger brother had said something similar, it looks like you are bound to have the same ending as him." It was needless for Xiao Chen to tell him off, that was completely meaningless. Everything still depended on actions.

At present, he was very confident in himself. Although he was seriously hurt, he had already touched upon the edge of Historia realm. His fighting ability had increased by a level. Unless he fought with someone like Dugu Jianmo — warriors who were about to take a step into Historia realm — it was very difficult for him to feel threatened.

"Boom!"

Youlan Mu pounced over like a ferocious beast. His eyes were scarlet red. He wanted to fight over the ancient spear Pasteur.

The divine flame was throbbing on the bloody spear. Xiao Chen raised his hand and lightly waved it. The mysterious maneuver gave rise to a skyrocketing murderous aura.

The bloody radiance soared into the sky and filled the air with murderous aura!

The bloody screen enveloped every inch of space within the radius of a hundred feet. The bloody energy billow was like raging waves beating against the shore.

“Break!” Youlan Mu shouted loudly, “Ancient Three-Layered Seal!”

Three divine radiance swept over like a net and directly exhausted the soaring blood curtain. Youlan Mu’s expression was fierce. He shouted almost hysterically:

“Sky Seal!”

“Earth Seal!”

“Humanity Seal!”

The three divine radiance swept past every resistance. Even the ancient spear Pasteur had been stopped.

Sky Seal, sealing the essence of the sky, such as the sunlight, the moonlight, and all kinds of spiritual power! There was hardly any energy fluctuation left in Xiao Chen’s surroundings. That space was completely sealed. He couldn’t absorb the spiritual power anymore.

Earth Seal, sealing the pulse of the mother earth. The divine power of the mother earth was sealed underground and couldn’t rise to the surface. It was completely sealed. Xiao Chen was also unable to borrow the power of the earth anymore.

Humanity Seal, directly sealing Xiao Chen himself with a light beam brimming with boundless power. Xiao Chen was submerged by endless purple radiance.

The Ancient Three-Layered Seal was the battle skill of an ancient clan with power to contend against the gods. It was a bizarre battle skill that manipulated

the power of heaven and earth. However, if one was not a direct descendent of the clan, it was impossible to manifest its true power.

Youlan Mu's master came from a small tribe in the West. Tradition has it that the people from that tribe was the descendant of the ancient clan. As a result, they would have inherited some ancient battle skills. Youlan Mu possessed great talent. Although he hadn't entered the Historia realm, he had already opened up parts of the treasure in his body. In addition to that, with the skills forcefully instilled into him by his master, it made him able to use the "Ancient Three-Layered Seal" easily.

He sealed Xiao Chen in a short while!

At a distant place, Dugu Jianmo emitted two cold glints from his eyes. He watched all of these without batting an eye.

At present, Xiao Chen was like a clay statue. His lofty body stood there as he couldn't even move an inch. The ancient spear in his hand was flickering with a bewitching red light. The gleaming light of the ancient sacred writings engraved on the spear was circulating, as if it was alive. Vaguely, it seemed to be throbbing. On the surface of the spear, the divine blood was flowing!

It seemed as if Youlan Mu was suffering from heat exhaustion. Using his own power to seal the worldly energy of the surrounding space and sealing Xiao Chen at the same time really exhausted too much power. After accomplishing these, he already didn't have much strength left.

"Heh-heh... heh-heh-heh..." Youlan Mu laughed coldly. He slowly moved his body in front of Xiao Chen and said, "Where's your confidence now? In the face of my 'Ancient Three-Layered Seal', nothing can stand before me!"

"Break!" Along with his shout, the 'Humanity Seal' attacked fiercely. Xiao Chen coughed out a big mouthful of blood on the spot. The glaring purple light wrapped him up, as if it wanted to crush him.

"Cling! Clang!"

Youlan Mu pulled out a longsword and ruthlessly stabbed Xiao Chen's chest.

"Pfff!"

“Pfff!”

Two bloody light splashed out simultaneously. The longsword stopped before it even pierced deep enough into Xiao Chen’s body.

Blood gushed out non-stop as the ancient spear Pasteur pierced through Youlan Mu’s heart!

“Impossible...” Youlan Mu couldn’t believe what was happening as he muttered, “This is absolutely impossible...”

“You relied on your so-called ‘Ancient Three-Layered Seal’ too much. If I am not heavily injured, you wouldn’t even be able to seal me for a split second! I ——— have already touched upon the genuine Historia domain!”

The endless purple light vanished like smoke in thin air. Xiao Chen broke away from the seal and lifted Youlan Mu with the ancient spear Pasteur. After that, his body burst open in the air.

“Many thanks for helping me accomplish my aim. Only after the bone-chilling winter would the spring flower bloom. It was you two brothers who allowed me to get this close to Historia realm. I feel like I can immediately touch it by reaching out with my hand!” Xiao Chen’s voice was very deep and low.

After he finished speaking, he dragged his injured body to turn around to cast a glance at Dugu Jianmo profoundly. After that, he walked out of the Solitary’s ancient castle with large strides.

Tonight, the injuries he sustained were really too grave. The bones in his hand were broken by Dugu Jianmo’s attack. The left rib was pierced by Molika with the ancient spear Pasteur. His chest was stabbed by Youlan Mu with the longsword. Furthermore, there’s the dreadful internal injuries. There were slits all over his inner organs.

The ice-cold voice transmitted from behind, “Safe trip, don’t let someone kill you midway!”

Xiao Chen didn’t turn around. He immediately unfolded the Undying Divine Wings and soared into the sky. He was actually waiting for Dugu Jianmo to make his move. However, this response from the other party made him feel very grateful.

Nobody was left on the scene. Dugu Jianmo's figure seemed to be very lonely
3. He carried his metal sword and walked forward, slowly waving his swords on the ruins, as slow as he wanted.

Over and over, until he repeated the same motion for hundred times, he seemed to have comprehended something. After that, he lightly waved his sword towards the ground. As a result, the corpses on the ground actually evaporated without a sound. They scattered like ashes along with the breeze, leaving no traces behind.

Xiao Chen unfolded the Undying Divine Wings, with the ancient spear Pasteur in his hands, as he streaked through the sky. Now, it was already impossible for him to continue battling. The condition of his injuries was too grave.

How many battles was not important, the important thing was the result. He had already achieved his aim, the door to the treasure in his body already opened. Now, it all depended on how he dig out the treasures.

It was already past midnight at the moment. When he landed on the courtyard, the snow-white little Keke and Tenax rushed over with lightning speed. In addition, the white-shelled tortoise also showed up sneakily. It was secretly sizing him up on top of a pavilion.

Xiao Chen reached out his hands into his chest to take out a multicolored phoenix feather. His shaking hand was set down on the tallest rock in the courtyard. The divine feather of the phoenix might be his safety charm for tonight, it's about time to put it to good use! 4

Chapter 177 – Opening up the Body's Treasure

Pasteur, the ancient spear with flowing divine blood, was thrust on the bluestone floor in front of Xiao Chen. The divine blood dripped unceasingly, then the blood transformed into specks of red light and disappeared in thin air. It was constantly overflowing with killing intent that came from the distant past.

Without a doubt, the ancient spear that had once killed the deities possessed an unimaginable power. However, the two brothers were unable to manifest its true power. It was truly what they call 'falling into oblivion' at their hands.

Xiao Chen had reason to believe this kind of ancient spear was not something they could control. Their master or family elders must be somewhere in Celestial City. Moreover, it seemed like they might be up to something. Otherwise, why would they bring the god killing weapon to this place?

At present, Xiao Chen didn't want to think over these too much. He sat cross-legged in the courtyard and slowly immersed in the mysterious, yet profound state.

Millions and millions of starlight sprinkled down. The starry sky seemed to be closing in. In front of Xiao Chen was one resplendent ray of light after another streaking across the sky. Those were the shooting stars as they faded away, those were the fallen lives, those were the shattered dreamland...

Xiao Chen's spiritual sense seemed to have streaked past the nine layers of heavens and passed through the outer space. It was as if he had entered that boundless starry sky. His spiritual sense was condensing, as if it was transforming into a resplendent star in the sky.

He seemed to have rose to the cluster of stars. This kind of feeling was really too strange. It seemed as if every star was corresponding to the life on earth. Could it be that the stars were really closely bound to the life on mother earth? It was certainly not like this. It was merely because of the cause and effect of all living things.

Xiao Chen's spiritual sense seemed to cut open the dense fog in the starry sky as he gradually rushed towards a treasure flickering with bright divine radiance.

That's right, he suddenly realized, this was not whatever starry skies, it was his

sea of consciousness! He was getting close to the sealed treasure!

Was the human's sea of consciousness corresponding to the universe? Why was it so similar to the cycle of the cosmos? Could it be that every living thing was a standalone little universe by itself? That seemed to be the case, it really had striking resemblance.

Wouldn't that mean everyone was made up of a universe of their own?

Xiao Chen's train of thought was caught up in a labyrinth as he roamed in his sea of consciousness. Rushing over the North Star Constellation, jumping over the Royal Amethyst Star, looking down at this universe from a great height, then looking up at the vast sea of stars, he felt he was so very tiny at this place.

Was this the sea of consciousness sealed in the depths of human body? No wonder it was sealed, this place was really too vast, it was very easy for people to lose themselves at this place. It seems like the human's potential was really unlimited. In regards to the big universe from the outside, the sea of consciousness could correspond with them one by one.

The world was just as big as the volume of the mind. All living things lived in the heart. As Xiao Chen looked up at the starry sky, he had an indescribable feeling.

The door to the treasures was embedded in the middle of this sea of stars. Just how majestic and boundless would the other side of the door be? He no longer thought of himself as tiny, because all of this was contained in his mind, grasped by him, controlled by him.

A towering castle stood in the middle of the sea of consciousness. Xiao Chen rushed over there in a straight line, pushing open the gate of the castle.....

Keke was bored to death as it yawned [^1]. Its hairy head touched the ground from time to time. Obviously, it was already tired beyond recognition. On the other side, Tenax was quietly crouching on the flowerbed. Its pair of eyes in the darkness seemed like two glittering pearls.

As for the white-shelled little tortoise, it had a posture that would cause people to cough out blood. Although it had the tortoise shell, its movement was unusually nimble. It was actually lying on the back, with one leg crossed over the

other! [^2]

Two of its tortoise legs were very long. Its legs were falling forwards and it seemed to be very relaxed. One of its tortoise arm was resting under its head. The other tortoise claw was grabbing onto a reishi mushroom it had stolen from who knows where. It was gnawing at the mushroom with great relish. From time to time, it would secretly look all around. Its pair of tortoise eyes were like glittering black gems. It was rolling its eyes to cast a glance at all directions.

This... was practically not how a tortoise would act! Its deceitful appearance was no different from a sly human!

Tonight, the moonlight was gentle, the starlight was resplendent.

The breeze brushed past lightly, the fragrance spread from the cluster of flowers and plants.

A slight air splitting sound transmitted from beyond the courtyard. The sleepy Keke immediately roused up from its sleep. Its glittering big eyes were perfectly round as it fixed its attention ahead.

With two whooshing sound, two human figure jumped over the wall and entered the courtyard.

When Tenax was about to make its move, Xiao Chen made his move first.

The bloody spear that was thrust into the ground suddenly blossomed with dazzling bloody light. The murderous aura soared up. With a “clang”, the ancient spear Pasteur lifted up from the bluestone floor by itself. Then it transformed into a frightening light beam and left behind a bloody red afterimage. With a “Pfff,” the two who just entered the courtyard were pierced!

The blood splashed everywhere. After the ancient spear Pasteur pierced the two, it transformed into a bloody light beam again, and with a “ringing” sound, it was thrust into the bluestone floor in front of Xiao Chen.

“Air... airborne fencing?!” The two of them had an unfathomable expression. Their eyes widened in front of the death’s door, wanting to grab on to something. After all, they were Exuvia Fourth Celestial Layer practitioners. Although they were far from comparable to the Ninth Celestial Layer expert like Xiao Chen, but... a single encounter, just a single encounter! And they were

ruthlessly killed. This made them unable to accept the truth!

Could it be that Xiao Chen had really broke through to Historia realm? That was their last question before death.

Although Xiao Chen was opening up the treasures in his body, he could still feel everything happening on the outside world clearly. The method he used to kill the two was enlightened by Dugu Jianmo. If his spiritual sense was powerful enough, every tangible thing in the vicinity could become his weapon.

This was the great power of the spiritual sense. His spiritual sense continued to absorb the essence of the treasure in his body, becoming all the more condensed and powerful!

Xiao Chen knew, the event regarding him challenging Ninth Celestial Layer experts in the night would definitely alarm a lot of people. Some people could guess that he wanted to make a breakthrough. In order to prevent him from smoothly breaking through to Historia realm, they might even come to exterminate him at the most crucial moment!

The breeze brushed past, the fragrance of flowers covered up the stench of blood. Xiao Chen's heart was very calm from start to finish. The road to immortality was a very harsh road. Who knows just how many people would die midway.

Xiao Chen's spiritual sense was sharper than ever. After entering the grand and lofty castle in the sea of consciousness, he felt a subtle change was taking place in his body.

The flow of blood suddenly speed up. Vaguely, he could hear a rumbling sound transmitting from his blood vessels. That was a sound produced by the flow of blood. It clearly transmitted into the sea of consciousness.

There was also the thumping sound of the heart, the trembling sound of the internal organs..... At this moment, he felt one divine radiance after another rushing out from the treasure's door, flowing into his flesh, baptising his internal organs. Even his bones were not left out as they was submerged by the divine radiance.

This was a transformation, this was a sublimation, this was an evolution!

This was the process of breaking the shackles of human body, transcending oneself, and taking a step into the whole new world.

Xiao Chen's spiritual sense became keener than ever. He saw a goldfish in the lotus pond waving its tail, stirring up a few tiny specks of dusts at the bottom of the pond. He saw a night orchid slowly blooming among the flowerbed, with very slight amount of pollen falling from the pistil. He saw a nocturnal bird in the sky, flying gracefully with an insect in its beak. And that the insect's leg was encroached by a little bit of blood.

Although those sceneries were very far away and very minute, everything in the surroundings appeared as clear as day in Xiao Chen's mind. The minute world seemed to be just before his eyes.

Forge ahead!

The power of the treasure was opening up!

He's about to step into the doorstep of Historia!

Just at this time, in front of that grape vine frame at the courtyard, a shadow appeared. That shadow seemed like it appeared from the thin air. It was very sudden.

There's no life fluctuation transmitting outwards, no ripples of life, if not because of the pitch-black human shadow at that place, others were practically unable to tell someone was standing there.

Tenax slowly pressed onward. Keke also raised its guard. The two sacred beasts felt dangers approaching.

All of a sudden, two divine radiance burst out from under the grape vine frame, directly launching towards the rock in the garden. Looking at that multicolored feather pinned on top of the rock, an elderly voice transmitted outward, "Multicolored divine feather, the phoenix clan..."

The powerful pressure pressed down like Mount Tai. The entire courtyard was silent, as if everything had been sealed by an unfathomable power.

It lasted only for a while, then that mountain-like pressure suddenly disappeared. The shadow under the grape vine frame disappeared without a

trace, as if it had never been there to begin with.

The cool breeze flowed, carrying with it, the fragrance of flowers and plants.

“Swish! Swish! Swish!”

Three people jumped into the courtyard, separating into three direction and surrounded Xiao Chen from all sides.

“Rips!”

Divine light flashed. Keke had made its move. The rainbow-colored light screen was launched forward and shrouded the three who just entered the courtyard like a tornado. Tenax was nodding its head and wagging its tail as it rushed over, leaving behind a silvery light.

“Ah!!!”

The miserable shriek resounded. The three of them were ripped apart by Tenax.

It’s coming!

The dangerous moment was coming!

Xiao Chen knew, those who received the news were going to make their move from this moment onward.

The bloody mist drifted in the air. Without making any sound, on top of that white marble bridge at the courtyard, someone shrouded in shadow appeared there. With great astonishment, beside him was actually a Dragon King!

It was an Azure Dragon King flickering with green dragon scales. Its battle intent was soaring as it stared at Tenax unwaveringly.

Was this not Lawrence’s Azure Dragon King? Why did it appear at this place? That person shrouded in shadow was definitely not Lawrence. Their aura was completely different! [^3]

“Haha...”

A long laugh transmitted over. Another figure jumped into the courtyard. The arrival was a middle-aged man. The powerful pressure emitted by him made the pavilion nearby collapse.

“Roar...!” A deep and low beast roar resounded as a golden furred ape jumped into the courtyard from a different direction. It was only one meter tall, but it seemed to be very sturdy and fierce. Its gold fur was glorious and dazzled the eyes. Its ice-cold pupils emitted two cold glints as it gazed at Keke fiercely, without batting an eye. Noiselessly, a shadow appeared beside the golden ape. That person’s body was entirely shrouded by hazy fog and their visage couldn’t be seen.

Chapter 178 – The Descendant of Deity

The last few who intruded did not say a single word and directly pounced towards Xiao Chen. They were merciless and aimed for a fatal blow all at once. The sword-qi were exceptionally dazzling in the night sky.

Xiao Chen couldn't remain sitting anymore. He stood up and grabbed the ancient spear Pasteur as he took a step forward. He waved the ancient spear with momentum of total annihilation. The thunderous storm roared as bloody light filled the entire sky.

“Pfff! Pfff!”

The blood splashed everywhere as four corpses fell on the courtyard. They were each around thirty odd years. Their throat seemed to have been cut by a knife blade as the bloody spear swept past. These four practitioners were more or less around the level of the Sixth Celestial Layer. As far as Xiao Chen was concerned, they were nothing. They were obviously dispatched by their sect to interfere with Xiao Chen's breakthrough.

“Roar...!”

The Azure Dragon King let out a roar and pounced over. The target ——— Tenax! Azure divine radiance flashed like a raging inferno. Its pair of eyes were ice-cold, as if it had already forgotten it was once acquainted with Xiao Chen.

Tenax proudly swung its head as it let out a dragon roar and pounced over.

“Swish!”

The person in the shadow flew upwards swiftly and disappeared in a short while. It seemed like he was only delivering the Azure Dragon King to this place.

The Azure Dragon King let out a muffled roar. Its pair of dragon eyes were actually filled with bloodlust. The two Dragon Kings clashed fiercely. One after another, green divine radiance burst out unceasingly. The Azure Dragon King had obviously unlocked quite a few divine abilities peculiar to the dragons. This one odd year, its power had advanced by leaps and bounds. It was no longer the same little cub from the Dragon Island anymore. Moreover, its tail had already evolved into the Ancestral Dragon tail.

And on the other hand, Tenax did not burst out with any divine radiance. It was completely relying on the unique dragon martial skill to fight at close quarters. It was like a seasoned practitioners, every step it took was extremely profound. One couldn't help but exclaim in admiration. Those were the most effective footworks. And its attack was also incomparably sharp. The claws, the tail, the head, and even its horns were moving in sync. Each part of its body was a sharp weapon in its own right. As it clashed with the Azure Dragon, even if it was facing one dragon magic after another, it did not fall behind a tiny bit. On the contrary, it was steadily pressuring the Azure Dragon King!

The dragon martial skill was an extraordinary skill!

Keke moved back to Xiao Chen's side, sweeping all directions cautiously with its big black eyes.

There were only two more enemies left at the site. One of them was that rough-looking middle-aged man. In fact, his power was definitely at the Historia realm. Otherwise it was impossible for him to show up. Just the energy fluctuation emitted by him was already enough to destroy a pavilion.

The other one should be a young girl. Although her body was covered by a black fog, Xiao Chen was still able to make out her silhouette. At present, his spiritual sense was especially keen, he had already realized this was a very beautiful girl. It's just that... the other party was intentionally concealing herself, so it was not possible to see her hazy visage clearly.

The golden-furred ape beside the mysterious girl looked very powerful. It's just that... its expression was too vicious. It stared at Keke coldly, as if it wanted to devour the little critter.

"Squeak!"

The snow-white little critter panted with rage. It was a very discontent tone. It waved its little beast paws without restraint. The rainbow-colored light screen quickly launched towards the one meter tall golden ape.

In that instant, the golden light flashed. The ape's body seemed to have transformed into metal. Moreover, inexhaustible amount of divine flame was rising from its body. It let out a growl and also waved one of its beastly claw.

The golden ray of light transformed into a light blade and ruthlessly cut towards the rainbow-colored radiance.

“Pfff!”

A dull noise transmitted from the sky. The rainbow-colored light screen was temporarily held back by the golden light blade.

This made Keke really angry. Its glittering big eyes burst forth with two divine glints. It was no longer looking lively and mischievous. In a flash, it became serious and earnest as it pushed its little beast claws forward with all its might. The rainbow-colored radiance instantly increased in size dramatically and kept the golden light under control in a short while. After that, it was launched towards the golden ape.

Xiao Chen was very shocked. Although Keke had gained the upper hand, it was already enough to tell how powerful and terrifying the golden ape was. It was actually able to hold Keke back, even for a short while. This had never happened before. One must know that nobody below the demigod level had ever blocked the rainbow-colored radiance. It was always one swipe, hundred down. As long as the rainbow-colored divine radiance was launched, nobody could stop it.

What kind of sacred beast was this? It was actually so mighty. Its divine ability was really exceptionally powerful.

“Howl...!”

The golden ape faced upwards and let out a long howl. The golden light all over its body became brighter. It forcibly stopped that rainbow-colored light screen that was about to cover it up, making the rainbow-colored light screen unable to touch it for the time being.

With a soft sigh, that mysterious girl started to talk, “Is it possible to make the snow-white little critter stop? I actually don’t have any evil intention. I just wanted to test Goldie’s strength.”

The voice was very sweet and very pleasant to listen to. Under normal circumstances, this should be a peerless beauty.

However, tonight was too delicate. Who could say for sure she was really not an enemy? Even if she’s a peerless beauty, she’s nothing more than a skeleton in

front of Xiao Chen at present. He remained unfazed. Everyone who arrived at this place had temporarily been labelled by him as enemy.

Xiao Chen ignored the words of the mysterious girl.

“Swish!”

The rainbow-colored radiance fell down and instantly enveloped the golden ape. It was being trapped within the rainbow-colored radiance, unable to move an inch. Following closely, Keke waved its hairy little beast paws and lifted the golden ape into the air from a distance. The rainbow colored-radiance firmly imprisoned the golden ape. Then it was ruthlessly smashed onto the ground by Keke.

“Bang!”

The smoke and dust filled the air as the golden ape jumped up. It faced upward and let out a furious roar. The golden fur all over its body erected. It looked very violent. One after another, golden rays — that looked like sword-qi — rushed out from its body.

“Goldie, don’t move!” The mysterious girl stopped the furious golden ape. She extended one of her lily-white hands to quell its anger. Only then did the golden ape slowly calm down.

However, Keke hardly appreciated the kindness. It was waving its little beast paws angrily, about to make its move again.

Xiao Chen hastily put a stop to it. As long as the mysterious girl no longer made her move, he was also unwilling to continue this massacre.

Now, the middle-aged man standing at the side let out a sneer, “I originally thought you only have a rare Dragon King at your side. Never have I thought that pampered little critter is also this powerful. I really underestimated you.”

“Squeak...” Keke felt that it had been disrespected. It was shouting furiously, as if it was saying, “What about you?!” Then it waved its little beast paw with a whoosh and firmly trapped the middle-aged man within the rainbow-colored radiance.

The middle-aged man had an inconceivable expression. He finally experienced

the snow-white little critter's power first-hand. However, he did not believe it was able to seal a Historia level expert like him.

But now, it was too late for regret!

"How is this possible? It's still so young!" This was the lamentation in the heart of the Historia level expert.

"Rumble!"

Keke smashed the Historia level expert onto the ground all of a sudden. After that, it imprisoned him again with the rainbow-colored divine radiance, lifting him into midair and smashing downwards repeatedly. Even an ironman would break into pieces like this.

After a few dozen times, the middle-aged man was already bleeding from his nose and mouth.

Xiao Chen made Keke stop and asked the middle-aged man, "Which clan are you from? I'll only ask this once, silence means death!" It was very straightforward, he didn't drag the issue.

"Hmph!" The middle-aged man gave a cold snort in return.

Xiao Chen did not say any more nonsense, he directly walked in front of the rainbow-colored light screen and brandished the ancient spear that once killed the gods in his hand. With a "Pfff," the ancient spear pierced the middle-aged man's chest. Blood gushed out non-stop.

He didn't pierce the heart, but it was also a deadly blow.

"Don't kill me! I am from the Reagan family, I am Hofmann's uncle! Among the few corpses in the courtyard, two of them are also from my family." In the face of death, the middle-aged man no longer have an air of arrogance. Not only did he straightforwardly declared his identity, he also provided unnecessary information.

"Pfff!"

Xiao Chen shook the spear in his hand and directly pierced the middle-aged man's heart. The middle-aged man let out a miserable shriek. The glint in his eyes gradually became dimmer as he muttered under his breath, "You are so

ruthless... I already told you everything, yet you still killed me..."

"I told you, I will only ask once and didn't want to talk nonsense. I gave you a chance, but you didn't grasp it. I killed you as promised." Xiao Chen directly split him in half with the divine spear. After that, he muttered, "This enmity with your family is set in the stone!"

On the other side, Tenax and the Azure Dragon King had already decided victory or defeat. Tenax defeated the Azure Dragon King with the dragon martial skill. It tore apart a large area of flesh and finally used its pair of horns to launch a divine radiance that knocked down the Azure Dragon King.

During the entire fight, Tenax only used the dragon magic once, it was indeed incomparably proud.

"Keke, seal it and don't get it get away!" Xiao Chen shouted.

Keke launched a divine radiance and enveloped the Azure Dragon King in a flash, sealing it for good.

Xiao Chen knew something must have happened to Lawrence. And relying on his instinct, he felt that a problem had also arises with the Azure Dragon King. They must not let it go and search for clues in the future.

The courtyard finally became quiet.

The mysterious girl said with a very pleasant voice, "Your Dragon King seems to be different from the other Dragon Kings." However, she was more concerned about Keke. She softly sighed and said, "This cute snow-white little critter is also out of the ordinary. It actually defeated Goldie."

Xiao Chen didn't say anything, but Keke was very discontent. It clicked its tongue as it cast a glance at the golden ape with its big black eyes.

This manner immediately made the golden ape furious. If it was not stopped by the mysterious girl, it absolutely wanted to settle this with the snow-white little critter once and for all.

"If you know about Goldie's origin, then you might not despise it as much anymore." The mysterious girl seemed to be very fond of Keke. She spoke softly, "Goldie is the descendant of a deity." 1

Hearing this, Keke was not bothered by it, but Xiao Chen was very shocked as he asked, “There’s a divine isle hovering in the depths of the south. The descendant of the deity you are talking about, are you referring to one of those young sacred beasts found at the vicinity of the deity’s historical remains?”

“That’s right, Goldie is one of them.”

Xiao Chen couldn’t help but look at the girl in a new light. She actually subdued the descendant of a deity. One must know that a lot of older generation figures were fighting over them at that time.

As if she could read Xiao Chen’s mind, the girl explained, “It was subdued by my elders. The other one is not the same race as Goldie. It was took away by other people.”

“You come here tonight only for testing Goldie’s strength?” Xiao Chen asked.

The girl was very magnanimous and her voice was very sweet, “My information network spread far and wide. I have received the true information of what happened on the dragon island. I know there’s a snow-white little critter that possesses great magical power. As such, I wanted to bring Goldie here and let it have a contest with the snow-white little critter.”

These words made Keke feel very snug. It showed a rare bashful expression and blinked its glittering big eyes unceasingly.

“With the snow-white little critter’s current strength, it is enough to rank among the top ten of the young sacred beasts on immortal’s mainland!”

The mysterious girl had a very high evaluation of the snow-white little critter, but on the other hand, Keke was dissatisfied. Only top ten? It would be more appropriate to say it was number one. Keke puffed its chest out proudly.

As a result, it was kneaded in the head by Xiao Chen, who was full of smiles. Keke immediately let out a resentful squeak.

Xiao Chen was very happy. Even the descendant of deity was defeated by Keke. This little critter had unlimited potential! Maybe it might be an exotic beast on the same level as the Ancestral Dragon!

“Xiao Chen, are you willing to go to the north with me? I can give you riches

and honor.” The mysterious girl started to talk. She seemed to be very serious.

2

“Riches and honor are earned through hard work, not given by others.” Xiao Chen shook his head and said, “I am used to this easy-going lifestyle, I don’t want to be constrained by others.” He could already tell that the mysterious girl had an out of the ordinary status. He didn’t want to be linked together with any large conglomerate or nation.

However, that was only his thinking for the time being. Who could say for sure what would happen in the future?

The mysterious girl nodded. She took Goldie along and left without speaking.

Only a few corpses were left in the courtyard as it regained its former tranquility.

Xiao Chen held on to the ancient spear Pasteur as he stood there. The divine blood flowed down from his hands unceasingly. The sacred writings on the ancient spear emitted bewitching radiance that reflected upon the starlight.

The shifty eyes of the white-shelled tortoise on the pavilion were perfectly round. It was looking at those sacred writings without batting an eye. After that, it racked its brain as it revealed a pensive look.

Under the moonlight. Xiao Chen’s entire body was flickering like a gem. His bones produced “cackling sound” as the broken bones were reconnected. His flesh squirmed as his corporeal body was undergoing a transformation!

The true evolution towards Historia domain had begun!

Endless brilliance had enveloped him. At this moment, the holy aura filled the entire courtyard. Even the starlight in the sky seemed to have become dimmer.

“Cough...” The cough of an aged man resounded as a shadow appeared under the grape vine frame. The new arrival muttered under his breath, “I have returned. The protection of the phoenix clan? Hah! I don’t really believe they possesses that great of a magic power and is really capable of finding out everything that happened tonight.”

The terrifying vibe shrouded the entire courtyard in a flash. The splendor on

Xiao Chen's body was suppressed and became dimmer.

“Swish! Swish! Swish!”

Three human figures jumped into the courtyard 3. It was actually Qinguang Wang and the other two skeletons! Following closely, a grey-haired old man with childish face walked into the courtyard. He was precisely that old Psychic who took away the three skeletons. He was all smiles as he said to the shadow under the grape vine frame, “You really don't believe the phoenix clan is capable of it? All your moves and everything that happened tonight will be recorded clearly. The phoenix girl will come and find you to settle this score sooner or later.”

“I am very unwilling to let it go like this!”

“Your child is really too bossy and lack discipline. Otherwise, why did five Historia level experts have to die like this? Unable to distinguish right from wrong, unable to recognize others' good intentions.” The old man was all smiles and looked very benevolent. Then he continued, “Of course, this young fellow is also very excessive. He is very heartless and should be punished.”

The shadow under the grape vine turned his head around and asked Xiao Chen coldly, “Are you really from the depths of the south?”

Xiao Chen's expression was indifferent, neither servile nor overbearing as he said, “That existence in the depths of the south had once given me a pointer or two. Other than that, we don't have much of a relation.”

Hearing these, that shadow under the grape vine frame turned around and left at once. He rose into the sky like a wisp of smoke and disappeared in the blink of an eye.

“Hehe...” The benevolent old Psychic walked over with a chuckle. He patted Xiao Chen's shoulders twice, then he turned around and left with the three skeletons.

Qinguang Wang, Yanluo Wang, and Lunhui Wang gesticulated towards Xiao Chen unceasingly. Meaning: We will come find you again after learning some powerful divine abilities. After that, they waved at Keke and Tenax to say good bye.

That figure under the grape vine frame had left and returned, but this time, he

had left for real. Xiao Chen knew it was finally safe for tonight!

Exuvia and Historia level practitioners might not know what did the multi-colored divine feathers on the rock represent, but that figure under the grape vine frame definitely knew!

The starlight was really bright tonight. Xiao Chen bathed in the holy radiance of transformation and stood at the courtyard with the ancient spear like that for one night.

This night, was bound to be a very unusual night. The event regarding Xiao Chen challenging several Ninth Celestial Layer experts at night-time was already known by many people.

It would inevitably cause some groups to flare up.

As expected, Zhuge fatty immediately ran over the next morning, making a big fuss.

“Brother, you are too strong! You are too strong! Your crazy play during the night caused many families in the city unable to sleep! You are too strong...” The fatty was so excited that he didn’t even know what he was saying anymore. In the end, there was only that one sentence: “You are too strong...”

Soon after, the beautiful Fairsky also ran over. After he saw the ancient spear Pasteur, he was so shocked that his eyes almost popped out. He cried out in surprise, “This mother f— is... the ancient spear Pasteur?!”

“There’s an important banquet tomorrow. I got this invitation card for you at the last moment. I will take you there tomorrow night.” The fatty was talking endlessly. In brief, he was already a little high early this morning.

“The two of you help me do something first.” Xiao Chen continued, “Help me put this ancient spear up for auction.”

“Are you crazy?!” Fairsky and the fatty were stupefied and shouted simultaneously.

Chapter 179 – Auctioning the Ancient Weapon

Pasteur's ominous name had spread far and wide, it was a genuine good at fair price. In regards to the practitioners, it was a priceless treasure. If they could obtain it and exhibit one tenth of its might, their power would rise by one fold!

The ancient clans of the legends were an extremely mysterious and powerful race. Their populations were as sparse as the phoenix feather and unicorn horn. However, they were powerful enough to contend against the deities. Along with the vicissitudes of time, the aforementioned race vanished without a trace. It was very hard to find a pure-blooded ancient race anymore. However, their glory had never been forgotten by the people.

The ancient race possessed earth shaking ancient battle skills. The ancient weapons once used by them were very attractive to the practitioners. Reportedly, there were not more than five ancient divine weapons being handed down to the outside world. Pasteur being one of them.

If it was really put on auction, then it would undoubtedly cause a huge commotion! Let's not even mention the others, many older generation figures would certainly join the fray as well. Legend has it that the ancient spear's killing intent contained the inextinguishable spirit of the ancient race. If they could analyze one or two, then they would gain endless benefits. In addition, when the ancient spear reached its full potential, it was known to have the might to kill even the gods. It was unlikely for anyone to not be tempted by it.

"Do you guys really think that I can keep the ancient spear?" Xiao Chen was very calm. He knew that by keeping this hot potato, he wouldn't gain the slightest benefit from it. On the contrary, he might invite more disaster.

Many people had guessed that he was from the depths of the south and had some connection to those few legendary existences. However, not everyone believed in this. In addition, the phoenix's divine feather could force some super powerful warriors to fall back, but it couldn't completely guarantee that everyone would withdraw because of it.

Especially Exuvia and Historia level practitioners. They hadn't reached that kind

of heights yet and didn't know about those legendary existences, so they weren't as apprehensive as the older generation figures.

Holding on to Pasteur would only bring more trouble than necessary. At the same time, would the real owner give up on the bloody spear because of this? Absolutely not! As long as he got the news, he would definitely make an appearance immediately. Perhaps, he might even be on the way already.

"Such a pity. It's a god killing ancient weapon for god's sake! A murder weapon handed down from the ancient race! The treasure everyone in the mainland yearns for, even in their dreams! To be unable to take hold of it, it's really too regretful!" Obviously, after a burst of emotion, the fatty also called to mind the seriousness of the matter. However, the bloody spear was really too attractive. Even if he was not the one possessing it, he also felt very regretful. Especially when he thought about the divine blood flowing unceasingly on the ancient spear. If they could take control of it, the sense of accomplishment would be indescribable.

Xiao Chen grabbed the ancient spear Pasteur and said, "It seems like the so-called spirit of the ancient race was already wiped out by the others. I can only feel a weak trace and already memorized it. Now, this is just nothing more than an unstoppable ancient weapon for me. There's nothing particularly special about it."

"It possesses formidable power capable of killing gods! If we really put it on auction, it will definitely give rise to a huge commotion!" The beautiful Fairsky was also very excited. His glossy cheeks were flushed like that of a stunning beauty. His handsome face really made people feel that the heaven was unfair.

Fairsky and Zhuge fatty were definitely not slow on the uptake, they profoundly understood the seriousness of the matter. Just as Xiao Chen had said, perhaps the real owner of the ancient spear might already be on his way. As such, both of them used their connections and immediately set up the arrangements according to Xiao Chen's wishes. The faster, the better. As for whether their families would also fight for it, that was not something they put into consideration.

Obviously, Xiao Chen's plan was not as simple as fishing out all the major

powers. This hot potato would certainly give rise to a huge wave. Many major powers might even fight on the spot. Maybe some people would even fight in secret.

Xiao Chen's goal was precisely to stir up a disturbance! The more chaotic, the better!

On this very day, a huge commotion broke out in Celestial City. Someone actually wanted to sell the ancient race's treasure! Pasteur's ominous name had been spread for endless years, it was a famous treasure in the world of martial arts. Those news indeed caused countless people to lust after it.

As the warbeast tournament was fast approaching, the composition of the practitioners in the Celestial City at the moment was very complicated. There were a lot of outsiders. And adding the major powers that were complicatedly rooted at this locality, this news really caused an unusually lively sensation.

"Honrado Auction House" had more than a century of history. They already expanded beyond the south desolate region and had many branches on the mainland. Honrado Auction House was very imposing, with two guardian lion statues weighing more than a thousand tons located at both sides of the vermillion entrance. The lofty gate was similar to that of the castle's and people were continuously going through the entrance.

Within the wide auction hall, there were more than a thousand seats. Although the news were spread out in a rush, it was already full house by the time of noon. The hall was a boiling cauldron of voices. Many big families had dispatched a representative. Of course, the majority of them were hermits. Almost everyone in the hall were practitioners.

"Are they really auctioning the ancient spear Pasteur?"

"I heard that this ominous weapon was in the hands of a small tribe at the western part. Legend says that they are the descendants of the ancient race. How is it possible for it to circulate around?"

"Someone must have taken it forcibly. Just which madman did it?"

"Just who would be this courageous? They actually dared to scramble for the ancient spear Pasteur. And moreover, put it on auction publicly. This is too

crazy!”

“The ancient treasure will definitely make people fight over it. There will definitely be a bloodbath!”

.....

As such, a lot of people were discussing about it.

Without a doubt, the mysterious seller was everyone’s focal point. The news regarding Xiao Chen consecutively challenging Ninth Celestial Layer experts last night was already spread among a small circle. His crazy action made many people endlessly shocked.

However, those who knew he had snatched the ancient spear Pasteur was only a handful. It didn’t get spread around.

Honrado Auction House’s operating capability was very efficient. In the shortest possible time, they had spread out the news across the entire Celestial City. Even more people were making their way towards the auction house. There was already no place to sit in the hall. The latecomers could only stand. In the end, even the place to stand had been filled to the brim.

Honrado Auction House did not hesitate to give their all to publicize the item. That was because this commission would bring them a large sum of money. Of course, the most important thing was still reputation! Auctioning the ancient spear Pasteur would bring about an unimaginable popularity for them! As such, they even invited a few beauties to emcee. At present, Fairsnow was taking the stage and was explaining the origin and might of the ancient spear Pasteur.

Fairsnow’s figure was slender and curvy. She was wearing a white one-piece dress which enhanced her beauty. Her refined manners caused all kinds of flowers to lose their splendor.

“I believe everyone has heard of the god killing ancient spear Pasteur...”

Actually, there was no need for explanation, everyone who arrived already knew about it. The beauties were only used to attract more eyeballs. It must be mentioned that the Honrado Auction House possessed great power, they were actually able to invite the most beautiful girl from the Fair family.

Afternoon, the auction started on time.

“Initial price is a hundred thousand gold coins. The minimum increment bid is one thousand gold coins...” Fairsnow’s voice was very sweet. With an agile movement of her hand, she pulled the yellow curtain behind her with a swish. Immediately, the ancient spear flickering with blood red radiance revealed itself.

A biting cold killing intent filled the entire hall in a flash. A mysterious expert shrouded by white mist carried Pasteur and walked to the center of the stage to put on a show for everyone.

With a light wave, a bloody divine qi soared up and penetrated the roof in a flash.

“Swish!”

With a light sweep, a wide expanse of bloody wave surged forward in all directions. The entire stage was immediately submerged by the bloody light.

“Swish!”

The instant the ancient spear was pulled back, all of the bloody light disappeared.

“I did not load it with any magic power at all, I only waved it a few times lightly. Its killing intent and might, everyone can very well imagine. This is Pasteur, the ancient spear that once killed the gods!” A muffled voice transmitted from the white mist. It made people unable to determine their age nor their gender.

Without a doubt, this was an expert. A powerful expert invited to secure the ancient spear Pasteur.

“Now, I will load it with magic power and let everyone see its true power.” Speaking until here, he grabbed Pasteur with both hands and soared into the sky. After that, his entire person burst out with resplendent divine radiance.

At the same time, Pasteur emitted a bloody light that caused the roof to vanish in a puff of smoke. A two meters thick bloody light beam soared into the sky. It was as if the light beam had pierced through the skies!

At this moment, many people in the Celestial City had seen this huge bloody light beam. Its power was really too intimidating. It caused many people to

tremble with fear and almost crouch down on the ground.

Especially those in the auction hall. They felt all the more apprehensive. That sharp murderous aura, as well as that inextinguishable battle intent, it caused many people to limp weakly on the ground.

The soaring bloody light, an ominous weapon that once killed the gods, the ancient weapon possessed unimaginable power!

The hall turned extremely quiet. Only until the bloody light disappeared for a long time did people gradually come around. The divine blood was dripping from the ancient spear unceasingly. It made a lot of people hold their breath. It was too oppressive and shocking.

“I bid one hundred and ten thousand gold coins!”

“You want to buy Pasteur with only one hundred and ten thousand? I bid one hundred and fifty thousand gold coins!”

“One hundred and sixty thousand!”

“One hundred and eighty thousand!”

“I bid two hundred thousand!”

.....

The situation was really too dynamic. Nobody increased the price by one thousand gold coins, they directly used ten thousand pieces as the unit.

The price increased unceasingly. The ancient spear seriously attracted too many people.

Many people only came to this place to watch the show, because it was simply impossible for them to place a bid on something that pricey. The front competed like wildfire, while many people discussed in a low voice at the back.

“Just who is this mother f— — spendthrift? They actually put Pasteur up for auction?!”

“What if it was obtained from a scramble? Of course there’s a need to sell it as soon as possible!”

“Who would be that courageous to fight over it? Do we have that kind of

miracle man in the south who dared to go plunder Pasteur from the descendents of the ancient tribe?”

“What if someone from that tribe came to Celestial City with Pasteur...”

“Bringing Pasteur to Celestial City? That is a killing artifact for god’s sake! Don’t tell me someone wanted to make a big movement in the south? They wouldn’t be thinking of fighting over the Dragon Kings during the warbeast tournament right?!”

“Who can know for sure...”

“Just who would be this exaggerated? They actually dared to snatch the Pasteur from the ancient clan and put it on auction.”

.....

Everyone wanted to know who was the seller, because this action was really too crazy.

“I bid four hundred thousand gold coins!”

“Four hundred and fifty thousand!”

“Four hundred and seventy thousand!”

While it was getting crazy in the auction house, Xiao Chen was calmly inspecting the Azure Dragon King’s injuries.

Other than the external injuries that it received from Tenax, its internal wounds were also very grave. This was the reason it was defeated so quickly last night. The condition of its injuries were very serious. Moreover, its spiritual sense was very messy, as if its awareness was being manipulated by someone. It had suffered an enormous psychological damage.

Xiao Chen frowned. Just who was that guy last night? It seemed like his goal was only to deliver the Azure Dragon King. He left and never returned after sending the Dragon King off. Just what did he wish to accomplish? No matter what, the most important thing at the moment was to give medical treatment to the Azure Dragon King.

Half an hour later, Xiao Chen sealed off the Azure Dragon King’s five senses and let it sink into deep sleep. Then he walked out from that room.

In regards to auctioning Pasteur, Xiao Chen did not do it on impulse. Would they feel grateful if he returned it to them? Definitely not! He already killed their people, there was nothing more to discuss!

So what if he was the one selling it? Who asked them to not be stern with their disciples and let them “randomly wave” a lethal weapon everywhere. Xiao Chen had seized the ancient spear after receiving a sneak attack, nobody could say anything regarding this.

Of course, the real owner definitely had no time to care about these. Thinking of a method to get back the ancient spear was his first priority.

It could be expected that the family who ultimately obtained the ancient spear would be a powerful figure. Otherwise it was impossible for them to take possession of it as this would only serve to make an enemy out of the real owner.

Money, Xiao Chen must earn it. Situation, he must throw it into disorder. Revenge, of course he must give it back. One stone three birds, of course he must sell it.

“It’s too crazy! It has already exceeded six hundred thousand gold coins!” Zhuge fatty was very excited. The fat meat all over his body was trembling as he rushed in.

Soon after, Fairsky also returned and said excitedly, “If this keeps up, even millions wouldn’t be impossible! This is too crazy!”

“At the moment, the overwhelming majority of the people don’t even know who the seller is yet. However, you have already become a millionaire in Celestial City!” The fatty was drooling as he said this to Xiao Chen with a smile, “You must invite me to Moonflower Castle three times every month. Otherwise I will publicly declare you as the seller!”

“Filthy!” Fairsky clicked his tongue disdainfully.

“And you are not filthy? You frequently come to the educational street to peek at the female students!” Zhuge fatty retaliated.

“I am merely admiring them, I didn’t have any dirty thoughts. But yours is an undisguised filthiness!”

“The fatty is indeed filthy.” Xiao Chen nodded his head. Then he asked Fairsky, “How old is your older sister?”

“What did you say? Don’t even think about it!” It was as if he had stepped on Fairsky’s tail. His eyes immediately sharpened.

“I am only admiring her. I didn’t have any dirty thoughts. What you are thinking is filthy!” Xiao Chen replied casually.

Hearing his own words being used against him, Fairsky’s beautiful face was brimming with rage. He warned, “Xiao Chen, I am warning you. Don’t you dare touch my sister!”

Zhuge fatty sneered at him, “You address her as older sister, and you sound so serious about it too. You were only born fifteen minutes later than Fairsnow. And who was it that said he couldn’t wait for his ‘younger sister’ to get married as soon as possible because he couldn’t win in a verbal argument a few years back.”

“Bastard fatty, scram!”

The fatty’s mouth was very undisciplined, he chuckled as he told Xiao Chen, “Fairsnow is a peerless beauty in the south. Along with Yan Qingcheng who just arrived at Celestial City, they are known as the two pearls of the south. Bro, I think if you put some effort into it, you have a very high chance of becoming Fairsky’s brother-in-law.”

“Fatty, I will kill you!” Fairsky was in a rage. At the same time, he turned his head to look at Xiao Chen and said, “If you dare to touch my sister, I will kill you at all cost!”

“This guy likes a challenge. The more challenging it is, the more he likes it.”

Just at this time, a sweet scent was carried over by the wind. The peerless Yan Qingcheng pushed the door open and entered with graceful steps.

Her purple dress made her seem like a person in a painting. Her perfect figure was like the proudest masterpiece of the heaven. Her black hair flowed down like a waterfall and her pupils were very deep. Her snow-white skin was as smooth as fine jade. Seeing her after a long while, Yan Qingcheng appeared more beautiful than ever. Her entire person seemed like a goblet of intelligence. She possessed

an indescribable spiritual energy.

“I received orders from the sect to deliver an invitation card to you.”

It was very breathtaking. The fatty was unconsciously wiping the corners of his mouth, fearing that his drools would leak out unknowingly. In the end, he covered it up with a cough, “I already got an invitation card for Xiao Chen. We will definitely participate in that banquet tomorrow evening.” Speaking until here, he whispered to Xiao Chen, “The beauties of the south will gather at the banquet. At that time, Fairsnow will...”

“Fatty, you go to hell!” Fairsky sent the fatty flying with a kick.

Chapter 180 – Disturbance

Ever since she came across Xiao Chen, Yan Qingcheng ran out of luck through and through. First, she was caught as a slave and was put in a difficult situation. Then, she was forced to train the Obliterate Demon Absolute God. On the surface, Xiao Chen was her vessel, but in reality, she was controlled by Xiao Chen. Since then, she was unable to do anything to him.

Although it was unlikely for Yan Qingcheng to harbor killing intent, every time she thought of these, she would still get so angry to the point that the roots of her teeth were itching. In the past, she also had an ambitious ideal, but now, she only had one desire; to master the Obliterate Demon Absolute God as soon as possible and break away from this awkward relations with Xiao Chen.

Looking at her former top ranked enemy getting stronger and stronger, Yan Qingcheng felt all the more powerless. She had already heard about Xiao Chen's crazy action last night. In order to breakthrough the Ninth Celestial Layer, he went all over the place challenging the youth experts. He engaged in several life and death battle in one night, oppressing one powerful enemy after another in succession.

Although she didn't get the exact information, Yan Qingcheng had an indistinct feeling that this hateful guy before her would most likely break through the bottleneck successfully. If that was the case, it would be all the more challenging to break away from Xiao Chen. The first requirement to break away from the restriction of the vessel was to surpass the vessel in power.

"Thank you!" Xiao Chen received the invitation card and said to Yan Qingcheng with a smile, "I'll treat you to something another day."

"Hmph!" Yan Qingcheng let out a cold humph. She shot a glance at him with her limpid water eyes. Then she swung her beautiful hips as she turned around. Her ice-cold voice contained a hint of taunting, "You are not thinking of inviting me to the Moonflower Castle to have a meal right?"

"Hehe..." Xiao Chen did not mind and said with a very sincere expression, "We are a family anyway, it's the same wherever we go."

Yan Qingcheng stamped on the ground with her slender body and turned around immediately, “Who are family with you?!”

Xiao Chen said very calmly, “The elders from your family said it with their own mouth that you are already betrothed to me. Because of this, someone tried to mount a sneak attack on me with the god killing weapon, Pasteur. I narrowly lost my life in the hand of this ancient weapon! This kind of thing already happened, there’s no way your Undying Sect can refuse to admit it anymore. Or did you have a sudden change of mind?”

“You...” Yan Qingcheng said furiously, “I never heard of this before. You better stop acting so shamelessly, otherwise don’t blame the Undying Sect for showing no mercy.”

“Very well, I will go to the Undying Sect with you now and ask your elders face-to-face. If they are not intent on marrying you off, then why are they setting me up like this?” Xiao Chen did not feel embarrassed at all and talked confidently.

If Yan Qingcheng was stronger, she really wanted to teach Xiao Chen a lesson or two. However, right now, she could only let out a humph, unfold the Undying Divine Wings, and run away without turning back.

“Go after her quickly!” Zhuge fatty said as he was wiping his drool.

“There’s no reason to chase after her now. If I have free time several days later, I will directly go to the Undying Sect to receive my wife.” Xiao Chen replied very bluntly, but nevertheless, he had an indifferent expression.

His voice transmitted clearly to Yan Qingcheng, who was flying in the sky. When she heard these words, her beautiful body inclined towards the side and narrowly fell from the sky.

“Xiao Chen, why don’t you drop dead and dream on!”

“Whether it’s a dream or not, you will know once you go back to your sect several days later.”

Looking at the absolutely beautiful figure making her getaway, Zhuge fatty said with envy, “To be able to marry a beauty as equally famous as Fairsnow, it’s worth it even if I end up dead.”

“Bang!”

At the side, Fairsky directly sent the fatty flying again with a kick. “You bastard fatty, you really are the worst. For the past many years, you were actually fantasizing about my sister all along...”

“Filthy! This is called a secret crush, do you understand?” The fatty was explaining as he climbed up from the ground. He had a confident expression and did not feel embarrassed.

During the afternoon, the Honrado Auction House finally dropped their curtains.

The price reached in the auction was eight hundred thousand gold coins.

The instant they received this news, Zhuge fatty immediately jumped up and shouted, “Black-box operation, it’s definitely black-box operation!”

The fatty patted his thigh and said with certainty, “According to the momentum this noon, let’s not say one million gold coins, even reaching 1.5 million wouldn’t be that hard. How come it reached a deal with only eight hundred thousand gold coins? There must be some dark secrets!”

Fairsky was also very furious. He had once went to the scene to find out the situation. He knew this price level was relatively low compared to the actual value of the ancient spear Pasteur.

As a result, when the people they sent to find out the inside story returned, the two of them immediately became speechless. That was because the Zhuge family and the Fair family were suspected to be involved in this dark secrets.

Few big families in Celestial City worked together to manipulate the price under-the-table. Their powerful force made the other competitors choose to give up grudgingly.

Within the Celestial City, the old bastards from a few big families worked together to obtain the ancient spear Pasteur. They were preparing to do a collaborative research on this ominous weapon that was passed down by the ancient clan.

After all, the price of the ancient spear Pasteur was too high. Even the big

families would feel dizzy just looking at the amount. That's why they played this kind of dirty hand.

Zhuge fatty and Fairsky felt a bit awkward. After all, their respective families were involved.

Xiao Chen did not feel particularly furious. A lot of things in this world couldn't be done in earnest, otherwise they would die an unsightly death.

However, the old bastards from the big families still gave Xiao Chen some face. They sent someone to pass on a message to Xiao Chen: Don't need to worry about the true owner of the ancient spear Pasteur, we will take care of him.

Xiao Chen had yet to reach that height, so he didn't know how would the elders cope with it.

Relatively speaking, this outcome was pretty good. He received eight hundred thousand gold coins without any foundation. No matter how they put it, this was still an extravagant amount.

However, Xiao Chen knew these large sum of gold coins would be spent like running water. That was because he wanted to buy spiritual items. And this time, he was no longer buying any ordinary old ginsengs or reishi mushrooms. He entrusted all the money to the fatty, telling him that if he wanted to buy, he should be buying those rarely seen spiritual items!

After hearing how Xiao Chen wanted to spend these money, the fatty still felt heartache even though the money was not his. He kept muttering to himself, "He's really such a spendthrift! There are so many well off families in the south, but I have never seen anyone spending so crazily on spiritual items before."

Without a doubt, Xiao Chen was a genuine spendthrift in the fatty's eyes, and a crazy practitioner beyond redemption in the eyes of Fairsky.

"You sure there are really that kind of legendary items?" After all, the amount was too enormous. Even Xiao Chen was afraid of spending but getting nothing in return.

"As long as you are willing to pay, the goods will definitely be worth your money. In the Celestial City, there are at least fix to six rare spiritual items! What kind of place do you think is the south? A Pure Land where the spiritual items are

growing within thousands of miles of territory, so of course they are the genuine articles! I am talking about those few over there, they are the most valuable treasure in this store. Each of them cost two to three hundred thousand gold coins. Even those big families would feel heartache to buy it. That's why nobody was interested in them all along. Only a real spendthrift like you would spend money on them like it is nothing."

According to his prediction, eight hundred thousand gold coins could more or less divinize three of his acupoints. However, he had to plan carefully and buy the right stuff.

I will let you handle this matter. I'm not afraid of spending, but you must make sure they are the genuine articles!"

Any ordinary spiritual items only had a little effect on Xiao Chen. What he required was an absolute gem like the dragon ginseng. However, those kind of things could only be found serendipitously.

"Alright, I will help you cut down the price of these nine articles in the next two days." This was the first time the fatty was in control of this much gold coins. Although it was not his money, he still felt his back getting very stiff.

In the evening, the Celestial City burst into disorder. The ancient spear Pasteur had been stolen!

The representative of the buyer was turned into meat paste on the spot. It seemed like everyone was not able to react in time as a black shadow swept along with the bloody spear towards a distant location.

It was extremely noisy. A lot of experts were dispatched, but they were unable to catch up to that black shadow.

Only until the evening did the rumor spread out. The true owner of the ancient spear Pasteur made his move and got far away from Celestial City after snatching the bloody spear.

This night was just as noisy as the last.

Of course, the leading role tonight was no longer Xiao Chen. It was that super powerful warrior from the small tribe of the west. According to the grapevine, an old bastard from a certain family was heavily injured by the true owner of

Pasteur. He was coughing out blood incessantly.

Although a lot of experts were chasing all the way, the outcome was very disappointing. They didn't manage to get back Pasteur.

This was a sleepless night for many people.

However, Xiao Chen was sleeping very soundly. He already got hold of a huge amount of gold coins. Even the commission had already been paid for by the major families. The loss of the ancient weapon was no longer related to him.

The true owner made his move against the buyer and shifted his enmity to them. In regards to him, there were no better news than this.

The next day, this event was known by everyone in the Celestial City. The few major families lost their faces, but there's nothing they could do about it. 1

Leaving the south and go after him in the west? That's impossible! Legend said that although the tribe was small, they were still the descendant of the ancient race. Even though their blood was already not as pure, they were still not a bunch that could be easily provoked.

"Interesting, so interesting!"

"Haha, this is a gargantuan mockery."

.....

Many people rejoiced in other people's misfortune. There were also many people feeling very regretful. They were not able to keep the god killing weapon in the south, that's such a pity.

The evening of the next day, that important banquet mentioned by the fatty was about to begin.

The venue; Mander family's mansion.

The warbeast tournament was about to begin. Mander family, Zhuge family, and Fair family were the owners of three major warbeast castles in the Celestial City. The Mander family was in control of the Beast King Castle, the Zhuge Family was in control of the Amber Warbeast Castle, and the Fair family was in control of the Antarctic Warbeast Castle, they were in charge of the warbeast tournament this time. Before the tournament, they hereby conducted a banquet

and invited many celebrities, as well as major competitors.

The starlight flickered in the night sky. Mander family's ancient castle was imposing. It gave off a heavy pressure like a lofty mountain under the dim light of the night.

"Please present your invitation card." The head of the imperial guard strictly inspected every guest's invitation card at the entrance.

When Xiao Chen arrived with the fatty and Fairsky, they just happened to come across Hofmann and Lidong Bo at the entrance. When Hofmann saw Xiao Chen, his eyes turned red as he turned around to glare at him ferociously.

Endless stream of people were entering and exiting the ancient castle of the Mander family. Naturally, each and every one of them were aristocrats with some influence and powerful practitioners. Of course, there were no lack of upper-class women and young ladies.

The wide hall was a dazzling sight, it was not crowded even with several hundred people attending the banquet. The light spilled by the crystal chandelier made the hall incomparably gorgeous in contrast. Numerous aristocrats and practitioners were divided into groups of three or four. They bumped their cups repeatedly and had a lively chat.

In the front, there was a tall and extremely handsome youth with aqua blue long hair. Even if he was in a crowd, he still stood out from the masses. He possessed an indescribable temperament.

Obviously, he was very popular. There's a lot of people surrounding him. More than half of them were female, he was surrounded by well developed young married women and good-looking young ladies. However, although these beauties were graceful, the passion in their eyes were not in agreement with their status.

"Did you see it? This is the freak from Mander family, Katalina's flesh and blood brother." Fairsky introduced to Xiao Chen.

This was not the first time Xiao Chen had heard people addressing Katalina's eldest brother like this. This was obviously a handsome youth, but he was actually called a freak in the world of martial arts. It was easy to imagine how

powerful and dreadful he was.

He had encountered him at the city gate of Celestial City once. That time, numerous Ninth Celestial Layer experts had clashed with Xiao Chen once, but this blue-haired youth didn't attack him at that time. It made Xiao Chen unable to grasp his true strength.

"This guy... you actually dare to come to my house?!" A lovely young lady with blue hair flung her beautiful long hair with one hand and got in front of Xiao Chen while panting with rage.

"Why can't I come? I received an invitation." When Xiao Chen saw Katalina, he couldn't help but recall that 'event' at the Paradise Spa, and a smile bloomed on his face.

Katalina's lively big eyes immediately welled up with fury. She could guess what Xiao Chen was thinking from his expression.

"This repulsive guy is really too despicable!" Speaking until here, she turned around and shouted towards that blue-haired youth, "Big bro, come over here, this guy is bullying me."

When the blue haired-youth heard these, he smiled towards the few girls beside him and walked towards Xiao Chen and company's direction.

Not far away, Hofmann and Lidong Bo revealed a smile.

On the other side, Fairsnow and the other beauties also turned their head over to watch closely.

Chapter 181 – I love Lan Nuo

In the dazzling hall, the crystal lamps were flickering with dream-like luster. The aristocrats and celebrities were toasting repeatedly with the wine goblets in their hands.

A few acquaintances were looking closely at this direction, observing Xiao Chen, Katalina, and her freak of a big brother. Those acquaintances included Austrian, Hofmann, Lidong Bo, Zhuge Kun, Fairsnow, Yan Qingcheng, and so on.

The blue-haired pretty boy was free and easy. He smiled at the surrounding girls to express his apology as he walked towards Xiao Chen and company.

“What is that freak called?” Xiao Chen asked Fairsky. He wasn’t even aware that Katalina was scowling at him.

“This... cough, cough... He’s called Lazio.” Fairsky coughed. He seemed to be reminding Xiao Chen that Katalina would flip out if he called her big brother as a “freak” in front of her.

“You are the freak! All of you are freaks!” The Mander family’s baby girl stared straight into Xiao Chen’s eyes and glowered at him. She was cursing unceasingly, but of course, her voice was very low. After all, this banquet was held at their house, she didn’t want to cause too much of a disturbance.

Lazio walked over with a faint smile and hinted a toast at Xiao Chen.

Xiao Chen also toasted with him. However, he was still chatting with Fairsky in whispers, “He don’t look like a freak.”

Looking at Katalina, then at the freak who was almost before his eyes, Fairsky smiled awkwardly. And Katalina’s forehead was already covered with black lines. She pulled Lazio and acted like a spoiled child, “Big bro... he’s bullying me, and he even called you a freak.”

Lazio had an out of the ordinary appearance. Tall and muscular, but not to the point that his muscles were swelling. He could be rated as a pretty boy. His aquamarine long hair was brilliant, and his eyes were as bright as the stars. He possessed a special trait that even if he was standing in a sea of people, people

could notice him at a glance.

It must be mentioned, people with extraordinary gifts was indeed different from your average people. Without a doubt, Lazio was classified as this kind of people. He smiled and lightly pinched Katalina's lovely nose. Then he said, "Isn't that what everyone is calling me? I'm sure you are deliberately making trouble again."

"Big brooo..." Katalina was shaking Lazio's hand and acted coquettishly, "This guy is very bad. He injured brother Lambda, extorted money from cousin Austrian, and he even bullied me at Paradise Spa. You must teach him a lesson for me."

The blue-haired Katalina widened her lively eyes as she bit her red lip with her pearly white teeth. In addition to the way she creased her lovely nose, it was very cute. If not because she was a little young, she might be considered the third pearl of the south, up there with Yan Qingcheng and Fairsnow.

Lazio was not a freak. At the very least, he had good manners and gave people a good impression. This was Xiao Chen's first impression of him.

"So this is brother Xiao. These days, I heard so many things about brother Xiao's famous name until my ears almost got calluses."

"It's an honor to meet brother Lazio at last. Nice to meet you."

Seeing the two being polite and amiable, Katalina mumbled to herself resentfully, "Big bro, you really won't help me...?"

Lazio gently stroked his younger sister's blue hair and said, "Alright, stop making any more mischief. I have something to discuss with brother Xiao, you go and say hello to your good sisters over there."

"Big brooo..." Katalina muttered under he breath resentfully. Then she twisted her lovable body around angrily and left.

Not far away, Hofmann and Lidong Bo were also very disappointed. They originally thought the freak of the Mander family would make an appointment to fight with Xiao Chen. Never had they thought the two would be so polite to each other and formed a peaceful relation.

After she got beside Fairsnow and the other beauties, Katalina said while panting with rage, “That guy is too hateful. Sister Fairsnow, just now Xiao Chen said you are too tall.”

“Hehe...” Before Fairsnow could say anything, someone at the side already made fun of her, “Katalina, just now you must have lost the argument right? What? You want to come here and pull some allies? Even if that guy don’t have an eye for things, he wouldn’t find Fairsnow’s perfect figure to be no good.”

Few of the girls started to giggle.

“Brother Xiao, why don’t we go and take a walk?” Lazio issued an invitation.

The moonlight was gentle as the clear radiance spilled down.

Behind the ancient castle was a garden, heavily scented by the fragrance of flowers.

“Brother Xiao, did you come from the mortal world?” 1

“Why are you suddenly asking me?”

Lazio was standing on a stone bridge and looking at the flowing stream. Then he said, “I don’t have evil intention. I wanted to ask about someone from you.”

“Oh? Who is it?” Xiao Chen walked slowly under the moonlit night. He walked past the stone bridge and jumped onto the observatory to look up at the unbounded starry sky. He felt as if he had returned to the mortal world.

“A dream-like fairy.” Lazio stopped here as he revealed a peculiar expression. He seemed to be a little intoxicated as he said slowly, “She’s called Lan Nuo. I want to know about her past.”

Under the bright moonlight, for the handsome Lazio to reveal this kind of expression, if those young married women and young ladies in the hall had seen it, they would definitely be jealous and bewitched.

Xiao Chen was a little surprised. Lazio had actually come across Lan Nuo. He asked calmly, “When and where did you meet her?”

One year ago, I was fortunate to run into her once at Celestial City. However, all traces of her completely disappeared since then. She was like a fairy from the highest of the heavens. I only met her once, then she disappeared without a

trace.” Lazio sighed regretfully and said, “I know a girl like her wouldn’t belong to a single man for eternity, even a god was not fit for her!”

Being called by others in the world of martial arts as a freak, he always wore a confident attitude in front of everyone. However, at this moment, Lazio’s bearing was poles apart from usual. He was actually feeling regretful and frustrated. That sad expression was undisguised.

“Lan Nuo, the wise and able person of Yanhuang Dynasty. She was exceptionally charming, a natural born genius, At the age of twenty, she traveled around the world with a sword, none were able to fight her on equal term!” Xiao Chen’s words were very smooth as he looked up at the starry sky calmly. His gaze seemed to pass through the space and could see the mortal world as he continued, “The same year, she practiced the legendary Divine Dominion and caused her power to become half crippled. Her body gradually became weaker. Soon, she looked for a method to break the life and death moment with her great wisdom. In the end, she resolved to freeze herself in a bottomless ice valley. A miracle happened thirteen years later, Lan Nuo came out of the ice cave full of vitality. She stayed young forever and successfully tricked death. She was frozen for thirteen years and time passed just like a snap of a finger. Her peerless beauty didn’t undergo any changes due to the vicissitudes of time!”

“According to legend, the mortal world is deficient of spiritual energy. However, she actually gained the power to create a spatial distortion in such a short period of time! She is indeed a genius among the geniuses.” Lazio was deeply moved and said, “Since entering the world of immortals, she could even be said to be free and unbounded! I don’t know what kind of heights can she reach, but I believe in ten years, she wouldn’t need to fear the god of this world anymore! Perhaps, there’s no need to wait for ten years, three... two... maybe even one year is enough!”

That was the actual situation. Since the ancient times, how many in the mortal world had actually broke the bounds of the world and entered the world of immortals? There was only a handful! Every single void traveler was certainly an illustrious individual for all eternity.

Nowadays, the founder of many famous sects in the world of immortals came from the mortal world.

Every time he thought of these, Xiao Chen had a doubt. Since the mortal world was deficient of spiritual power, then why was there so many world-shaking figures from the mortal world? And even after those people arrived at the world of immortals, they were still sweeping the floor with all living things. How should be categorize the mortal world more appropriately? Maybe... in the ancient past, the mortal world was also an illustrious holy land!

“Anything else? I want to know more.” Lazio stood on the stone bridge, looking at the luminous rose in the front. Every kind of flowers blossomed and the fascinating fragrance drifted in the air.

“That’s all. Lan Nuo is a mysterious girl.”

“Facing a girl like Lan Nuo, has brother Xiao never been tempted once?”

“I haven’t reached the same height as her. I don’t have any extravagant hope. My future, I need to develop it step by step.” Xiao Chen was very calm. He was unwilling to speak much more regarding this topic.

Lazio smiled, then his bearing changed in that instant. That frustration completely disappeared as he regained his confident expression. He said, “I actually want to fight with you, but today is not a good day. How about a round of formal match instead?”

“Bring it on!”

Xiao Chen was on top of the observatory. He turned around to face Lazio.

“Spiritual Battle!” Speaking until here, Lazio’s aquamarine long hair suddenly fluttered backward. His expression suddenly became incomparably sharp as he emitted two ice-cold glints similar to the sword-qi.

A pressure originated from the spirit pressed down on Xiao Chen like an immemorial primal beast. It was fierce yet explosive!

Vaguely, it felt as if there were thousands of souls howling in grief, yet it also felt like the roars of the wave. It was extremely powerful.

Xiao Chen instantly understood how Lazio received his freak title. On the outside he looked gentle and cultivated, but when his battle intent burst out, he was actually this coarse and wild. His power was close to the point of freakish!

In regards to Spiritual Power, Lazio had already went beyond the category of Exuvia. His Spiritual Power condensed and materialized into divine swords, it was unstoppable!

Xiao Chen was as calm as a lofty mountain. The Spiritual Power was slamming him like vast ocean, with great and powerful momentum, and yet, he remained unfazed. No matter how many thousands of divine sword or waves you throw at him, it was all like rivers entering the ocean. His power was deep and beyond measure.

The quiet battle of the two caused the plants in between to wither at once. Soon after, the flowers soundlessly turned into dusts. It seemed as if there was never any vegetation at that place to begin with, only the dusts!

“Rumble!”

The white marble bridge burst up and collapsed. Lazio jumped back, his face a little pale. The observatory also burst up and was on the verge of collapsing. Xiao Chen’s face was also covered with sweat. He jumped up and landed on top of a pavilion.

Following that, a blazing divine light burst out between the two. That was the force of spiritual power!

The divine light was dazzling!

It made even the moon and the stars in the sky lose their splendor!

The fluctuation of the spiritual power was as vast as the ocean!

This could even be said to be an extremely dangerous battle. A little mistake and their consciousness would be crushed, flattened, and they would become a living dead.

After no less than fifteen minutes later did everything finally calm down.

The two of them no longer resisted. The pavilion had turned to dusts, the lotus pond had dried up, the flat marble ground even caved in for at least ten meters soundlessly.

Between the two was a huge gorge!

“Historia?” Lazio looked at Xiao Chen with amazement.

Xiao Chen did not reply. Only after pondering for a while did he say, “Your spiritual power already broke into the realm of Historia.”

“My spiritual power is powerful as it should be. That’s because I am a Psychic.”

Far away, the scions of a few big families shook their head. Hofmann said regretfully, “What a pity, why are they not continuing? Mother f—! Is that bastard really that strong? I really want to squeeze him to death! It seems like the freak from the Mander family didn’t gain any upper hand. This is inconceivable.”

Lidong Bo also heaved a sigh and said, “It really make one apprehensive. Why is no one putting him in order? Could the rumor be true? That he has some relationship with that existence in the depths of south.”

“So what if he has friendship with them?” Hofmann’s eyes flickered with ominous glint and said, “There’s still methods to toy with him to death and won’t give rise to that person’s suspicion.”

“Ceh, stop putting on airs.” A sneer transmitted from the side as a young lord said, “I have heard this from the elders in my family. That your old fathers actually wanted to make their move. As a result, they pulled back the way they came from.”

“Cackle, cackle...” The sound of Hofmann grinding his teeth could be heard. Then he shouted fiercely, “Five Historia experts from my family died. We can’t let this score end like this. I will find someone to squeeze him to death sooner or later!”

On the other side, Yan Qingcheng, Fairsky, Zhuge Liang, Fairsnow, Katalina, and the others also watched the spiritual battle just now.

Zhuce Liang ridiculed, “The baby girl from Mander family, it seems like your big bro is out of form today. Shame to the good name of the unparalleled freak.”

“Bastard fatty, don’t provoke me! You think I don’t dare to beat the crap out of you?” Katalina was glaring at the fatty angrily. However, due to her sweet appearance, even when she was acting savage, she still appeared very cute.

“That’s right. Katalina, is your older brother holding back on purpose? How can he be no match for Xiao Chen?” The young lady at the side could even be said to

be blindly worshipping Lazio.

“Love-struck fool!” After the cold voice, a tall and stalwart figure holding metal sword walked over from the hall.

“You shut—” Behind that young lady, Katalina shouted “Hold it!” and covered her mouth.

“Do you want to die? Don’t you know who he is?”

“Who is that bastard?” The young lady was very furious.

The other young married women and young ladies were also very angry. 2

“He is Dugu Jianmo! Two years ago, at a banquet, the eldest daughter of the Liu family acted arrogant and bossy, and that woman was directly beheaded by that guy.” Katalina whispered.

“Ah, it’s him!” Obviously, all the women knew about Dugu Jianmo’s behavior. All of them shut their mouth right away.

Chapter 182 – Joy and Delight

When Xiao Chen returned to the hall, a waitress delivered a fine liquor to him. The golden beverage was as thick as a honey. When it slid down the throat, there was a blazing feeling, and then it transformed into a sweet fragrance, flowing along with the breath. That feeling was too wonderful.

Zhuge fatty walked over and clicked his tongue, “Tsk! Mander family sure is wealthy. This ‘Gold Dream Dew’ cost as much as half a year of the common family’s living expenses.”

Fairsky also walked over and said with his lips sticking out, “Hofmann is scowling at you.”

Sure enough, Hofmann was staring at him very fiercely.

Xiao Chen raised his head to down this Gold Dream Dew and then walked over there with large strides.

“Don’t act recklessly!” Fairsky warned him. This place was not an ordinary location.

The moment he got nearer to Hofmann, Katalina and the other girls just happened to turn their heads over there. They were very clever and knew what was going on with a single glance. They giggled as they watched on.

Hofmann was together with a group of scions from the major families. He looked at Xiao Chen provocatively and mumbled under his breath noiselessly.

“Mother f—! This son of a b— is cursing you?” Zhuge Liang was very furious.

Xiao Chen looked at Hofmann’s performance very calmly. The other party was indeed cursing him with filthy speech.

“What is he cursing? Interpret for me, Fairsky.”

“He was calling you a bastard, saying that if you have the guts, then go over there. The latter part is very unpleasant to hear.” Fairsky was also extremely displeased with Hofmann.

The nearby were all young people, many of them had noticed the situation at

this place.

Xiao Chen turned his head to ask Katalina, “Hofmann is really cursing me?”

“Of course. Do you really need us sisters to interpret for you? I didn’t expect you are so stupid, you don’t even know how to do lip reading!” Katalina said without holding back. Then she giggled and started to interpret. She was more than happy to see Xiao Chen blowing up. She was very willing to pour oil on the fire.

Katalina and few other girls from the major families started to interpret what Hofmann was saying earnestly. Of course, they were adding oil while interpreting.

“He said it, you scoundrel, come over here if you have the guts!”

“Coward, come and hit me if you dare!”

“Watch it boy, I will make you wish you were dead sooner or later!”

“Why is this boy so scared now, why did he not dare to come over? Come over and hit me if you have the guts!”

“Come over and hit me, you joker!!”

.....

Hearing these, Xiao Chen smiled and said towards Fairsnow and the others who remained quiet all along, “All of you heard it right? I didn’t misinterpret. With so many people to testify, that guy over there is asking me to go over there to hit him. It was the baby girl of the host, Katalina, who personally interpreted for me. It’s definitely not a mistake! Since he wished for it, as a gentleman, I will fulfill his desire!”

As he was speaking, Xiao Chen walked over there with large strides.

“Ah?!” The people at the side were stunned.

The fatty and Fairsky on the other hand, started to laugh.

Katalina was screeching, “Xiao Chen, you bastard! You have the impertinence to make use of me!”

“I say, brothers and sisters, is there anyone who wants to hit him? Then follow

my lead, there's no need to feel apprehensive. This guy was begging to be hit!" Speaking until here, Xiao Chen already got within the group of scions and made Hofmann fall onto the ground with a slap. Then he started to trample him violently.

"Ow-uuu..." Hofmann let out a pained sound similar to the howl of the wolves. He was exceptionally miserable. Never had he thought Xiao Chen would really dare to hit him.

"We really can beat him?" One of the scions not far away asked like this. Hofmann was usually very arrogant, so he naturally had many enemies.

Of course, everyone at this place can testify!"

With a "hustle" and "bustle", more than ten male and female surrounded Hofmann and trampled him violently.

Hofmann's miserable shriek practically didn't sound like it was produced by a human.

Among the participants, the young ladies were much fiercer than the men. Every one of them was wearing an excited expression, as if they were playing a very interesting game. A game where they were trampling on a sandbag and wishing every step could make the sandbag spill some sand. 1

Katalina was using her lily-white hands to knead her temples. She was having a slight headache as she said, "This guy is too wretched, he's actually using me!"

"I think this guy is very treacherous!"

"He's worst than Dugu Jianmo!"

A few good friends of Katalina supported her, but there were also a few traitors among them. Few of them already ran over there excitedly and participated in trampling Hofmann.

"My god! Brother Liu, you also dared to hit me?!"

"This slut from the noble house, where do you think you're kicking? You want to cut off my line of descent? Ow-uu..."

While Hofmann was howling in grief, he didn't forget to fight back fiercely with words. Of course, that only served to increase his beatings.

When few of the scions at the side watched on, their faces changed abruptly. They wanted to help, but after looking at Xiao Chen, who was like the death god, each and every one of them shrank back. Now they know, this guy couldn't be trifled with, couldn't be provoked! Otherwise, they would die an unsightly death.

Xiao Chen did not hold back at all when he made his move. In only a moment, he had snapped thirteen bones of Hofmann. After that, he calmly moved back and let those ladies and gentlemen who felt animosity toward him to continue beating him.

After he swept his eyes past these scions, they immediately kept quiet out of fear. In their eyes, Xiao Chen was more scary than the unreasonable Dugu Jianmo.

"Lidong Bo, when will you pay up the twenty thousand gold coins you owe me?" Xiao Chen looked at Lidong Bo with a smile that was not a smile.

"Ah, this... I will pay back as soon as possible." Lidong Bo was ashamed, angry, and terrified all at the same time.

"That won't do, you must give me an accurate timeline!"

"Within ten days!" Lidong Bo's face was flushed.

"Good, that's settled then. I always keep my promise. What I hate the most is people who break their promise. I wish you will not disappoint me." His words were very cold. This was an undisguised threat.

"Austrian, when will you pay back the thirty thousand gold coins." Xiao Chen shifted his gaze to Katalina's cousin.

These scions felt that Xiao Chen was really too arrogant. This was but the Mander family's ancient castle, and he actually forced the scion of the Mander family to pay back the money at this place, he's too crazy.

"I will give it to you within ten days!" After saying these, Austrian turned his head angrily and left.

"Ow-uuu... so painful... I'm about to die!" The voice let out by Hofmann already couldn't be classified as a human's voice anymore. He wailed like ghosts and howled like wolves.

The disturbance at this place had already attracted a lot of attention. However, the overwhelming majority of the people felt unconcerned and let matters rest. Only until the master of the Mander family learned about this matter did he come to put a stop to it hurriedly.

That was precisely Katalina and Lazio's father. He was a dignified-looking middle-aged man. He had similar aqua-blue long hair and although he was middle-aged, he still looked very soldierly and confident.

"Stop it! What's going on here?"

Only now did Hofmann's nightmare come to an end. He was badly mutilated from head to toe. He didn't even look like a human anymore, it could even be said to be a tragic sight.

The people of the Reagan family rushed over from the VIP lounge as soon as they received the news. They felt flustered and exasperated when they saw Hofmann. One middle-aged man swept his eyes all around and shouted, "Who did this? You actually dare to create a disturbance in the Mander family's banquet. Are you not giving any face to the Mander family?"

He immediately pulled the Mander family in. He wanted to make the Mander family settle this and punish the perpetrator.

At this time, many older generation figures who were discussing about the warbeast tournament also walked over from the VIP lounge.

"You can't blame other people, it was Hofmann himself who wanted people to beat him!" Among the crowd, one of the scions mumbled in a low voice.

"What are you saying? Come out here and speak loudly!" The one standing there was Hofmann's flesh and blood uncle, how could he not be angry?

"That was indeed the case, Hofmann wanted others to beat him!" A young lady raised her voice.

"That's right!"

"That's just how it is!"

"He was begging to be hit!"

.....

Every participant shouted all together. These young people all had powerful background. With these many people together, they were not afraid of the Reagan family at all.

If you don't believe us, you can ask Lady Katalina of the Mander family. As the daughter of the master, I don't think she would tell a lie."

Someone pulled Katalina into it as their shield.

"Katalina, come over here. Tell me what is going on." Her dignified father cast a glance at her.

Katalina moved over there gloomily. She turned her head around to take a quick look. She found that Xiao Chen was actually lifting a wine goblet and watching the show, away from the group of people. He didn't seem to have the intention to join in. This made her very frustrated, but she also had no other choice at the moment. She must not stir up more trouble than this. It's best to smooth things over as quickly as possible while Hofmann was still unconscious.

"Hofmann was possessed. He insisted on getting hit!" The sharp and clear words echoed in the hall. It immediately gave rise to a roar of laughter.

"Carry this disappointing thing back!" Hofmann's uncle shouted angrily at this two underlings, then he rushed into the VIP lounge without turning back.

"Let's continue the banquet. I hope everyone can forget about the unpleasant moment just now!" Said Katalina's father.

"That was very pleasing just now!" It must be mentioned, there was a few talent among the participants, such a response immediately gave rise to a cheerful talk. The tensed-up atmosphere from just now immediately dissipated.

The music resounded as the light in the hall dimmed. Then the dancers took the stage gracefully.

Many young men and young ladies already took part in the dance.

Xiao Chen felt out of sorts. He came from the mortal world. The differences between so-called code of ethic between the male and female were very big. Looking at these young people dancing in the hall, he felt a little unbelievable.

"This hateful guy, would you dare to dance with me?" Katalina was as proud as

a little phoenix. She walked over with her well developed breasts and looked at Xiao Chen provocatively. Her stature was petite, but her curves, her long eyelashes, and her vivid big eyes made her seem very sweet. Her only downfall would be her arrogance.

“.....” Xiao Chen was a little speechless. What not to dare? He immediately pulled her hand and walked into the dancing field. According to the mortal world’s code of ethic, there’s nothing for him to lose.

However, Xiao Chen’s dance really made people less than impressed. He almost threw Katalina away with a single whirl.

“You want to die? You are practically like a beast!” Since they were already in the dancing field, Katalina let out an astute smile and said, “Xiao Chen, if I shout insolence right here and now, how do you think people will look at you?”

“I don’t think you would do such senseless thing.” Under the dim lighting, Xiao Chen wore an indifferent expression.

“What if I do something more extravagant?” Katalina harbored malicious intent as she smiled.

Xiao Chen raised his guard. If he really let this young lady act arbitrarily, he might really be stuck in a dilemma. Pure power immediately rushed into Katalina’s body from his two hands, confining her verbal ability and restricted her four limbs. Her dance steps were completely manipulated by Xiao Chen.

“Oh dear, since you want to ruin my reputation, I will help you accomplish it in advance.” Xiao Chen harbored malicious intents and pinched her ample butt a few times. Katalina almost teared up due to the pain.

She knew her buttocks were definitely bruised. Moreover, she could clearly feel that this scoundrel Xiao Chen was carving a few “words” on her soft flesh. It was actually these few words: “Xiao Chen’s little attendant”.

Katalina was driven mad!

To try to gain an advantage only to end up worse off. She had really suffered a big loss tonight. This loss was hard to put into words, she couldn’t even tell her big brother about it.

The worst thing was that she couldn't raise her voice at the moment.

This guy was too wretched! He's actually still pinch— no, groping!

While embracing Katalina in his embrace, Xiao Chen could smell the fragrance of the young lady. Since this girl wanted to scheme against himself, Xiao Chen was not an inflexible blockhead, he should levy the "interest" with no trace of politeness.

Just at this time, Katalina's father found them at this place. His face turned sinister at once when he just happened to see Xiao Chen and Katalina.

Mother f—! Youngster, where do you think you are putting your hand? On my daughter's buttocks! And still being so dishonest, you tired of living?

Although Bailey had good temper, he still couldn't hold back his urge to let out a curse after seeing this scene: This youngster is such a grandmother's bastard. He actually dares to so assail my Mander family's baby girl so boldly, such a scum! Furthermore, this brat Katalina is really outrageous, how could you let him touch you like this?

Of course, he had wrongly accused Katalina. Due to the obstruction of the other dancers, Bailey couldn't see Katalina's current situation clearly.

When Bailey arrived with a sinister face, Xiao Chen calmly let go of Katalina.

The moment Katalina regained her freedom, she wanted to bare her fangs and pounce over there immediately. In the end, when she saw her father with an ugly face, she immediately had the urge to cry.

"Xiao Chen, go to the VIP lounge with me." Bailey turned around and left after saying these.

Katalina shouted from behind, "Dad, teach him a lesson for me. He was bullying me!"

"Hmph!" Bailey let out a humph with an ugly face. He didn't even turn around.

"Be a good girl and stop playing around. Think about the time and situation. Wait for me to come back." Xiao Chen knew Bailey was having a misunderstanding. He immediately wanted to make matters worse as he took on a kind and doting attitude.

“Go die! Go die! Go die!” Looking at Xiao Chen leaving with a smile across his face, Katalina really wished she could bump into his back. She yelled towards his rear figure, “Mister Xiao, just you wait, I’m not finished with you!”

After entering VIP lounge number ten, Bailey didn’t show Xiao Chen any goodwill from start to finish. He said very coldly, “I know you have a Dragon King. I invite you here because I want to ask whether you will participate in the warbeast tournament or not.”

“I haven’t decided yet. I treated Tenax as my partner, I didn’t want to go against its desire. I still have no idea whether it’s willing to participate or not.”

Bailey remained expressionless as he handed over a silver plate, “Since it is a sacred beast, there’s no need to participate in the knockout competition. You can directly enter the grand battle. To participate or not, that is up to you. Take this silver plate with you. If you are unwilling to participate, you can just throw it away.”

Very clearly, the ugly faced Bailey didn’t want to say much to Xiao Chen. After he’s done with his business, he asked him to leave right away.

Xiao Chen laughed mischievously and didn’t say much. He left right away after putting the silver plate into his pocket. Naturally, after he came out of the VIP lounge, he directly left from the back door to avoid the Mander family’s baby girl.

After returning to the residence, Keke had also returned. The little critter had an important mission tonight: To scout the Mander family’s Beast King Castle. After it got back, the little critter gesticulated at Xiao Chen excitedly, letting him know what it heard and seen. Xiao Chen became well aware of the situation after hearing these.

“Tenax, do you want to participate in the warbeast tournament?”

The proud little dragon nodded its head.

Keke also mimicked the gesture by patting its plump little belly, and then proudly puffed up its chest.

“You also want to participate?”

“Squeak!” Keke nodded its head seriously.

The time passed quickly. These days, Tenax was always confronting with the Azure Dragon King. At the same time, it was using the dragon’s divine ability to help the Azure Dragon King regain its mind.

The knockout competition of the warbeast tournament already began. The Celestial City turned very lively. There were interesting beast battle everyday!

Chapter 183 – The First Divine Ability

The black clouds rumbled at nightfall. The clouds as black as the ink were almost touching the ground.

It seemed like a storm was imminent.

Not a single soul could be seen on the main street. Such a big Celestial City seemed to have sunk into deathly silence. All the sounds have disappeared.

There was an indescribable pressure pouncing over to the mother earth from the dark horizon. It was as if the mother earth had been shrouded by a layer of dense fog in a flash.

At Xiao Chen's residence, Fairsky and Zhuge fatty hurriedly bid farewell. The both of them had ugly an expression as they warned Xiao Chen not to rashly go out when the rainstorm approached at night.

When he asked why, the two of them were also not very clear. They said it was an old tradition passed down in Celestial City, that there would be one or two unusual rainstorms annually. In order to avoid getting frightened, it's best if everyone don't go out to walk around, regardless of the ordinary peoples or the powerful practitioners.

Just before leaving, Fairsky said in a low voice, "The elders said it themselves, this city might be a real Celestial City of the legend. The name is not given randomly. Just quietly stay in the house and nothing would happen. The resident of the city already got used to this. It's only once or twice annually."

After that, he hastily left with the fatty.

The black clouds were getting lower and lower, as if they had already touched the ground. However, the sound of thunder still couldn't be heard. There was only a heavy pressure, as if there were hundreds of thousands of big mountains descending slowly.

Everywhere in the city was in absolute silence. It was as if Celestial City had lose its liveliness, not a sound could be heard anymore!

An indescribable palpitation gave rise to a bone-chilling fear!

Keke and Tenax felt very uneasy. They seemed to have felt something bad as they kept looking up at the dark sky from the courtyard.

Xiao Chen felt this scene was somewhat familiar. At that time when the ghost town appeared on the dragon island, it seemed just as oppressive and frightening.

Ghost town?!

Celestial City?!

As he thought of this, Xiao Chen suddenly had a flash. According to rumor, nobody knew when the Celestial City was constructed. They did not have any historical records, they only knew it had already existed for countless years. However, that tall and ancient city wall was still in good condition even after going through the vicissitudes of time.

Could it be that... the Celestial City and the dragon island's ghost town were ancient cities from the same era?

Then, doesn't that mean, this city had already been through the vicissitudes of countless eras since the day it was build?

Was it really a mysterious ancient city of the distant past?

Xiao Chen had a feeling that his conjecture might really be true!

Keke and Tenax vigilantly watched the dark sky. Their expressions seemed to be very grave.

Xiao Chen also felt very uneasy, but this kind of feeling was a lot different compared to the time when the ghost town appeared on the dragon island. At the very least, he didn't feel the vibe of death. There was only a foreboding feeling, it felt as if there was a huge lifeform about to awaken from its ancient slumber.

"Rumble!"

The lightning suddenly flashed in the sky. One criss-crossed lightning after another cut through the dark sky and tore apart that heavy atmosphere from just now.

The downpour descended, the heaven and earth was covered by a curtain of

water, and the tempest began.

The whooshing sound of the wind sounded scary. The tiles of the roof were making crashing sound as they were blown by the wind. All the rainwater were blown in the sky until they were rolling up and formed jets of water similar to the waterfall.

Of course, all of these could only be seen due to the brilliant rays of the lightning. After the flash of lightning disappeared and sunk into darkness, they could only hear the terrifying sounds and unable to see anything.

As dark as the ink! It seemed as if Celestial City had been covered by an opaque black cloth.

Just at this time, the jet-black broken sword at Xiao Chen's waist suddenly trembled violently, as if it wanted to streak across the vast sky and leave.

Xiao Chen was very surprised. This pitch-black, abnormally heavy, yet ordinary-looking broken sword actually started to tremble today. It was a little bizarre.

One must know that the broken sword was only a little more than one feet long, yet it weighed more than a few hundred kilograms. If it was not filled with magic power, it wouldn't even be able to cut down an ordinary metal, let alone the divine weapons. It looking very much mediocre until now. It had never manifested anything unusual before.

Of course, those so-called divine weapons also couldn't cut down this broken sword.

Apparently, it's neither weak or strong.

Xiao Chen reached out with his hand and firmly grabbed the sword shaft. He could feel the jet-black broken sword trembling violently in his hands. An ancient vibe seemed to throw itself in his face. Soon after, he could feel an extremely sharp sword-qi!

A resplendent ray of light directly cut open the empty sky. It streaked across the darkness and was launched towards the pitch-black sky.

It was still and quiet, no peculiar fluctuation transmitted from the dark sky. It was as if the endless darkness had swallowed up the sword-qi.

Just at this time, Xiao Chen suddenly felt an intense battle intent rushing into his mind from the broken sword. Some kind of instinct urged him to go to the courtyard and began to practice with the sword.

“Swish! Swish! Swish!”

The sword-qi was as bright as the lightning as it was rumbling in the darkness and surging forward in the heavy rain. The broken sword in Xiao Chen’s hand seemed to glow with the radiance of life. It was like a raging black dragon as it violently emitted one divine radiance after another!

What the broken sword passed to Xiao Chen, rather than battle intent, it was more like sword intent! It wasn’t really a sword technique, but it conveyed one kind of creative concept to Xiao Chen. It was one kind of creative concept that belonged to the sword!

It could be understood, but not described. Xiao Chen was immersed in some kind of fantastic state. Nobody was teaching him the sword technique, but he was waving freely and unconstrained in accordance to that sword intent in his mind. The broken sword left a streak of rainbow as it slashed past. The pitch-black sword body was flickering with resplendent divine radiance. Xiao Chen felt that he had no choice but to draw the sword, and wave it without constraint. He wanted to arouse the skyrocketing killing intent and battle intent.

“Rumble!”

The lightning flashed in the sky. Xiao Chen was waving his sword alone under the heavy downpour. One sword radiance after another rushed straight into the dark horizon. The murderous aura sent shivers down the spine. The sword-qi were unstoppable!

Just at this time, along with the deafening thunder, Xiao Chen could hear an almost indiscernible sound of close quarters combat. In the endless dark sky, under the flash of lightning, one ancient figure after another appeared. Each of them was wearing an ancient armor and holding a divine weapon in their hand. A lot of people from ancient times were fighting fiercely in the sky!

Keke and Tenax also rushed under the heavy rain as they looked up at the horizon nervously.

The broken sword in Xiao Chen's hand never stopped. Looking up at the horizon, he continued to wave the sword as he watched the faintly discernible battle.

With a "buzz", the rainbow-colored sacred tree on top of Keke's head suddenly flickered with brilliant rays. After that, a golden ray of light soared up and was launched into the high altitude. It was actually that golden divine halberd with skyrocketing murderous aura! It was flickering with glaring golden light, as if there was a golden flame throbbing on the weapon body.

Following closely, with an explosive sound, the black fog pervaded as a Metal Engraving rushed out of the rainbow-colored sacred tree. It flew up into the night sky in that instant.

The golden divine halberd and the jet-black metal engraving, those were the divine artifacts that went missing on the dragon island since ancient times. On that day, Keke recklessly caused trouble and these two ancient artifacts had once destroyed one mountain range after another. It narrowly led to a huge disaster.

Never had they thought, these weapons had also broke away from the dragon island along with them. Keke had never thought of this possibility before. At this moment, it was so excited that it was squeaking randomly.

Xiao Chen was also very shocked. Two divine artifacts were actually hidden in the rainbow-colored sacred tree. That was too unexpected.

After the golden divine halberd and jet-black metal engraving rushed into the sky, the image of the fierce battle in the sky instantly faded away. After that, the rumbling of the thunder also disappeared in split second. The sound of the wind also stopped. The world had sunk into complete darkness.

The golden divine halberd and jet-black metal engraving, these two ancient artifacts seemed to have faded away along with the thunder and the ancients.

"Squeak..."

Keke was calling out anxiously under the heavy rain. The rainbow-colored divine radiance had enveloped it. Not a drizzle of rain could fall on its body.

The sword radiance flickered for the last few times. Xiao Chen put away the

sword and laid down. The sword intent in his mind had been thoroughly aroused. As he looked up at the pitch-black sky with heavy downpour, he could be certain now, Celestial City was definitely an ancient city of the distant past. Otherwise how would it have such a mysterious side? At this very moment, the pressure enveloping the heaven and earth bore a remarkable resemblance to the characteristic of the dragon island's ghost town. The only thing lacking was the vibe of death.

It was exceptionally oppressive. Although there's no thunderous sound in the sky, the downpour actually began to fall to the ground noiselessly. The splashes appeared on the ground in thin air. It was exceptionally quiet. The world had become deathly still.

However, it was during this extremely abnormal situation that Xiao Chen felt his body was letting out a shattering sound. He actually made a breakthrough to Historia realm under this kind of suffocating situation!

As if some kind of shackles had been broken, he had finally overcame the last bottleneck and completely entered this domain. The unsteady state was now stabilized!

One gem-like radiance after another lingered on his body. The bones in Xiao Chen's body were letting out snapping sounds as his flesh squirmed frantically. This was a natural response when his body undergo a real transformation.

Historia was the realm where one began to open up the treasures in their bodies. Henceforth, the divine abilities would spring up in large numbers!

Just at this time, Xiao Chen's first divine ability after breaking through to Historia realm appeared.

Weapon Fusion!

The broken sword in Xiao Chen's hand seemed as if it was melting. It transformed into resplendent sword-qi and blended into Xiao Chen's body.

Xiao Chen was gobsmacked. It was not because he didn't understand the situation. It was because he knew this divine ability was too rare. He absolutely never thought his first divine ability would be the legendary Weapon Fusion. This was the treasure body every practitioner yearned for even in their dreams.

However, thinking carefully after the shock, it was not too unexpected. That was because he was following the path of Vajra, so the divine ability he obtained would naturally be related to it.

Weapon Fusion, according to legends, it could change any divine weapons into a part of his body. Of course, that was only the initial stage. Along with the increase of power, it was completely capable of smelting any divine weapons and made a certain part of his body possess all kinds of properties from the divine weapons!

As a result, the human body itself would be equivalent to the heavenly sword!

Chapter 184 – Smelting Three Divine Artifacts

Clairvoyance, Clairaudience, and so on were comparatively common. Telepathy, Undying Technique, and the others were comparatively rarer. As for the legendary Reincarnation, Time Control, Extreme Speed, and other such divine abilities were even rarer.

The Weapon Fusion learned by Xiao Chen after breaking through to Historia realm could be considered a rarely seen divine ability. It was the most fitting ability for his one and only way.

Historia, the realm where one slowly open the sealed door in their bodies and dig out the treasures stored within. All kinds of legendary divine abilities required them to train painstakingly before they start to open up gradually.

The first divine ability gave Xiao Chen a nice surprise. He was even more looking forward to the divine abilities he would get in the future!

The jet-black broken sword transformed into sword-qi and circulated within Xiao Chen's body according to his will, it was like a surging river, then again, it was like a clear stream. With a flash, the broken sword appeared in Xiao Chen's hand.

Right now, Xiao Chen naturally didn't have the capability to thoroughly smelt the broken sword. If he had enough power to completely smelt the broken sword and fuse it with his flesh, then this broken sword would no longer exist in this world. It would become a part of his body.

“Swish!”

With a flash of light, the broken sword entered Xiao Chen's left palm. When he waved his left arm lightly, a resplendent sword-qi was launched diagonally and let out a whistling sound. The unceasing torrent of sword-qi bubbled out and formed a dazzling light screen which cut through the curtain of rain with its unstoppable power!

He couldn't smelt the broken sword, but with the jet-black broken sword hidden in his left palm, it was as if he was wielding the jet-black weapon in his

hand. He no longer had to fear the divine weapon. At the same time, he was able to injure his enemy imperceptibly.

Weapon Fusion, since the body was a small universe by itself to begin with, it was possible to fuse everything within the body. After reaching certain heights, not only could he refine all kinds of divine weapons, even refining an immemorial magic mountain and store it within the body was not a problem!

Xiao Chen broke through to Historia realm and the first ability he received after opening the seal was definitely a very formidable and rarely seen divine ability.

Since he couldn't refine the broken sword for the time being, Xiao Chen walked into the house to take out an ordinary-looking dagger. After that, according to his will, the dagger melted instantly and fused into his right palm. Lightly waving his palm towards a chunk of wood beam, it was cut off in a flash.

The dagger was thoroughly refined. Xiao Chen felt his right palm had the sharp property of the dagger. This was simply unimaginable. If he could smelt a lot of divine weapons and fuse it with his body, wouldn't he become a living weapon, a moving armoury?!

This kind of divine ability was too freakish!

Next, Xiao Chen continued to smelt a few more swords. The result was as he had speculated. All of them fused into his flesh.

The pitch-black sky was incomparably oppressive. A screech suddenly resounded from the endless darkness and shook the entire Celestial City. The screech was very imposing, it sounded as if it fell from the highest of the heavens, then again, it also sounded as if it smashed the void and came from the ancient times.

Carrying on, the thunderous lightning burst out. One huge lightning after another appeared in the dark sky and made the sky brightly lit.

A divine halberd and a metal engraving burst out with dazzling rays of light in the sky of Celestial City. They attacked in criss-crossed pattern and instantly destroyed the endless shadows in the sky. Those were the shadows of the prehistoric peoples wearing ancient armors.

Was it an illusion?

Nobody knew.

“Sigh...”

Celestial City suddenly shook violently for a while. If it was if a huge living body was sighing. After that, all the lightning rushed towards the mother earth and entered the Celestial City.

When the lightning gradually became dimmer. Xiao Chen had seen it clearly. All the shadows of the ancients had been augmented again and then they transformed into one light stream after another as they flew towards Celestial City, blending into the ancient city under the dim light of night.

The tempest stopped at this point. During this pitch-black night, something inconceivable had indeed happened in the sky. However, compared to that time in the dragon island’s ghost town, this was nothing. It was not frightening, nor could it be regarded as unfathomable.

However, this was only on the surface. Xiao Chen had profoundly felt a boundless power shrouding the Celestial City. It was absolutely not inferior to the dragon island’s ghost town on that day.

That means this ancient city was hiding a great secret unknown to anyone.

Otherwise, it was impossible for the golden halberd and metal engraving to rush into the night sky. They were spiritual antiques, surely, they must have realized something one wished to keep secret.

The torrential black light flickered as the jet-black metal engraving fell from the dark sky, directly rushing towards the rainbow-colored sacred tree on top of Keke’s head.

Don’t look at how the snow-white little critter was usually muddle-headed, it was actually very clever. It had once personally experienced the power of the jet-black metal engraving and was fearful of it. The snow-white little critter immediately ran away from this place with a swish.

The jet-black metal engraving did not smash over as they imagined. It was as if it had treated the rainbow-colored sacred tree as its vessel. It became slower over time, and finally, it suspended in the courtyard.

Keke looked at it curiously. After that, it was pleasantly surprised as it transformed into a streak of light and rushed over there. It wanted to put away that jet-black metal engraving. Just at this time, Xiao Chen suddenly had a flash and shouted, “Keke, wait a moment.”

The little critter doubtfully landed on the ground and looked at Xiao Chen in puzzlement.

“Let me give it a try.”

He just comprehended the Weapon Fusion a moment ago. Xiao Chen wanted to give it a try and see if he could take this ancient artifacts into his body.

According to his will, the black light glinted and the metal engraving did not resist at all. It directly fused into Xiao Chen’s left palm. Almost at the same time, Xiao Chen felt his left palm was crushed. The sharp pain almost made him shout out loud. Following closely, the bones let out snapping noise unceasingly as his metacarpal was being reorganized.

At the same time, the jet-black broken sword in his left palm was forced out of his body. Meanwhile, the dagger and swords that were already refined and fused into his right hand slowly rematerialized in his body. After that, they were forced out of the body. However, by the time they fell onto the ground, they had already become a pile of scrap iron. All of them shattered into small pieces.

Such a tyrannical metal engraving. With it alone, no other ordinary weapons were allowed to coexist. Even the jet-black broken sword was forced out.

On the hollow of Xiao Chen’s left palm, a fingernail-sized imprint of the jet-black metal engraving appeared.

The golden halberd was brimming with murderous vibe. It left a streak of golden light in the sky, similar to a heavenly flame. Then it streaked across the vast sky like a meteor. As it fell towards the mother earth, it left behind a tail light and rushed towards the courtyard.

It seemed to have felt the aura of the black metal engraving from the rainbow-colored sacred tree and Xiao Chen. The resplendent divine light was so dazzling that one was unable to open their two eyes. The powerful pressure pressed down on Xiao Chen, Keke, and Tenax like a huge mountain.

Xiao Chen clenched his teeth. He made up his mind and executed the Weapon Fusion again. He made his move against the golden halberd. The blazing divine light glinted unceasingly. Xiao Chen experienced that sharp pain again in his right palm as his bones were being reorganized. The sharp pain made his entire head break out in sweat.

The golden divine light flickered unceasingly. In the end, all the rays of light finally dissipated and the imprint of the golden halberd appeared on Xiao Chen's right palm!

Merging two ancient divine artifacts into his palms, this was a really daring attempt even for Xiao Chen. However, he found to his amazement that it was very hard to control these two ancient artifacts. He was unable to take them out smoothly anymore.

To fuse the two divine artifacts into his flesh, that was impossible! At the very least, he didn't have the ability to do it now.

To manifest the power of the two divine artifacts, that was also impossible. Xiao Chen attempted several times and found that it was hard to manifest the divine power of the golden halberd and jet-black metal engraving. Despite that, his hands had become as solid as the divine weapons.

He was certain, if it was not divine artifacts like the golden halberd and metal engraving, any ordinary divine weapons wouldn't be able to cause the slightest injury to his palms. Perhaps, even the ancient spear Pasteur wouldn't be able to pierce through his palms.

"Squeak..."

Keke let out a squeak resentfully. It jumped onto Xiao Chen's shoulder, grabbed a strand of hair, and blinked its big eyes to convey its dissatisfaction.

Xiao Chen smiled and said, "What do you need these ominous weapons for? Might as well put it in my body. At least they could be put to some use. They are nothing more than collections if you put them in your treasured tree."

The snow-white little critter let out a "Hmph! Hmph!" sound resentfully. Then it extended its hairy little paws and waved it twice in front of Xiao Chen.

Xiao Chen knew what it meant. It wanted to trade them with two peerless

spiritual items.

“Heh-heh, good, no problem.”

From start to finish, Tenax was watching nearby. After the lightning faded away, it already recovered its calmness and aloof appearance.

Xiao Chen attempted to smelt the common swords. As a result, he found that it was possible to bring them into his body. However, if he wanted to refine them, they would turn into scrap iron and be forced out of his body.

With the existence of divine artifacts, no ordinary weapons were allowed to fuse with the body. They could only be stored. The ordinary weapons were too fragile in the face of two divine artifacts.

Xiao Chen laid out all the items he was carrying with him. Which comprised of: Keke’s rainbow jade shell, the jet-black broken sword, Suirensi’s burial cloth, the iron chain used to lock up the white-shelled tortoise, the phoenix’s feather, and Suijen Gimlet. These were very important items, they couldn’t be thrown away.

Xiao Chen carefully attempted to fuse these items into his body. Five out of six items could be put away in his body, but they couldn’t be refined. If he wanted to refined them, they would be forced out of his body. Fortunately, they didn’t end up crushed like those ordinary weapons.

What made Xiao Chen most surprised was the Suijen Gimlet, this sixth item could actually be refined and it was not rejected by the golden halberd and metal engraving. This indicated it was a divine artifact on the same level as them!

1

Xiao Chen endured the sharp pain and fused the Suijen Gimlet into his left foot. A very small imprint of the Suijen Gimlet appeared on the heart of his foot.

It was somewhat inconceivable. The Suijen Gimlet looked like a stone yet not a stone, looked like a wood yet not a wood. It appeared to be nothing special, if it was thrown into the pile of stone, nobody would even take notice of it. However, it was able to steadily occupy a space in Xiao Chen’s body in front of two ancient artifacts.

Xiao Chen was getting increasingly positive. The divine artifact that Suirensi

used to achieve the truth was absolutely not as simple as it looked on the surface. All of it was because he didn't have enough power yet to understand this stone gimlet's true might.

Of course, this so-called refining was not really to be taken in the literal sense. This was only the initial stage, if he really wanted to refine and fuse them into his flesh, it might take a really long time.

The clouds scattered and the starlight sprinkled down. It was as if those bizarre event just now never happened at all.

Chapter 185 – White Tiger

The marble white color of the dawn sky emerged from the horizon as the bright red sun rose from between the mountains. The dazzling sunlight sprinkled down on the Celestial City, making this ancient city with grand history to flicker with a faint gold luster. The entire city was overflowing with thriving vitality, as if it was a wilting ancient tree given a new lease of life.

Early in the morning, every street in the huge city was already filled with stream of people. It became a boiling cauldron of voices not long after sunrise. Another noisy day had begun in the flourishing Celestial City.

The tempest last night, apart from washing the street clean and making the leaves of all kinds of plant more verdant than ever, it didn't have the slightest influence on the inhabitants of the city. Everyone who lived at this place for a long time had already gotten used to this bizarre rain that only happened once or twice annually. They didn't pay much attention to it.

Xiao Chen brought Keke along and leisurely walked into the North Style Academy to get breakfast. This was his daily habit. He was very satisfied to be living at the educational street. The atmosphere from this kind of faculty was most fitting for his training.

Of course, using Fairsky and Zhuge fatty's words, Xiao Chen was also not a "virtuous type". As far as the girls were concerned, he must have some "ulterior motive" for entering the North Style Academy's dining hall and antique store.

Xiao Chen just ignored their words. There was no place more peaceful than the academy. Although he was very young, he would often lament at the fact that it was truly good to be young. There was nobody trying to outwit the others in the academy, everyone was very sincere. Things would become very complicated once he's outside of the academy.

After eating breakfast, Xiao Chen took along two big chunks of roasted meat for Tenax and the Azure Dragon King. Taking two Dragon Kings to go out everyday would cause a huge commotion, so he had no other choice.

Quietly meditating until the sun was as high as three bamboos 1, Xiao Chen

then left by himself for the warbeast street.

The roars of the beast shook the earth. At the present stage, every warbeast arena was packed with people. It was already the final round of the knockout competition. It was the last match to decide the beast kings that would advance to the grand battle.

Dragon King and sacred beast were without a doubt, the king of the beasts. So they didn't need to participate in the knockout competition. They only needed to wait until the knockout competition concluded and directly join the Grand Battle!

After paying a large amount for the ticket, Xiao Chen entered the Antarctic Warbeast Castle. The grade of the knockout competition at this place was very high. Only by winning seven consecutive fights would they be able to advance to the grand battle. There was no need to conduct elimination rounds.

Of course, the knockout competition conducted by the three major warbeast castles had very high standards. Only a true beast king could participate. They always conducted less than ten matches per day.

It must be mentioned, once a warbeast arena had attained the title of "castle", there was indeed a qualitative leap. The entire building was really as magnificent as a castle.

Even with six thousand seats, it was not crowded. The seats surrounded the warbeast stage in a circle with flight of steps, allowing six thousand people to see the true beast kings fighting on the stage clearly.

Of course, since they were called the "warbeast castle", that was not all they had to offer. They had some other three hundred VIP lounges. Every lounge was a dazzling sight. They had set up a big screen on the wall and projected the fight on the stage with a crystal ball made by Psychic. It allowed the people in the VIP lounge to watch everything on the stage clearly.

Moreover, the three hundred VIP lounges were also divided by grade. The best lounge at this place provided many special services. They had invited the beauties from Moonflower Castle to pour wine for you, they had also invited the girls from Spellbind Castle to massage your back. The service was so luxurious that it was unimaginable.

Antarctic Warbeast Castle was the Fair family's biggest industry. Xiao Chen did not disturb anyone after he came in. There were only less than ten seats remaining among the six thousand general seats. However, people recognized him the moment he sat down.

The middle-aged man was Fairsky's housekeeper. He immediately brought Xiao Chen to a VIP lounge. Without a doubt, all the best VIP lounges were already occupied. However, this lounge was not bad either. It was richly ornamented and everything was tastefully chosen.

A big screen was set on all sides of the walls, they could watch the battle from all around. There were even some lovable girls nearby waiting to serve the guests. This was practically a castle. Other than the long talk of the dozen of people, watching the battle was absolutely not a problem.

From this, it was easy to imagine how luxurious was the Antarctic Warbeast Castle. After all, they had three hundred VIP lounges all together!

"Roar..." The roar of a tiger caused the VIP lounge to shake. That sound was completely transmitted from the crystal screen. The White Tiger was only 1.5 meter long. It looked very ordinary, but its roar was very terrifying, it was forceful and vigorous.

The tiger raised its hip, moved its tail to and fro, then it pounced on its opponent. Those were the standard moves of the tiger. It looked very ordinary, but the Winged Leopard flickering with yellow light all over was actually pushed down and got ripped apart by the White Tiger. 2

An ordinary-looking White Tiger, yet it possessed out of the ordinary strength. It easily ripped apart a true beast king. It was easy to imagine how powerful was the White Tiger. Xiao Chen instantly became interested in it.

Without a doubt, this was a young warbeast. It was definitely coming for the groups of cub. Its adversary shall be the sacred beasts and Dragon Kings!

The White Tiger's second opponent appeared. This was a golden eagle, about two meters long. It was like a ball of flame as it was flying in circle above the warbeast stage. After that, with a clear whistle, it transformed into a gold radiance as it dived down fast. Its sharp golden claws were even brighter than the sword-qi, they were sharper than the sword-qi. It was aiming straight for the

ordinary-looking White Tiger's head.

The one meter long White Tiger jumped to the side nimbly and dodged this attack.

“Crack!”

The sound of cracking transmitted outward. The resplendent claws of the golden eagle left a crack on the diamond floor. The surface that was claimed to be as hard as the adamantium was practically like a mud under its talons. The floor was unable to withstand even a single blow.

“Swish!”

The gold radiance flashed as the golden eagle spread out its steel-like wings and swept towards the White Tiger. In the end, the little White Tiger lightly jumped to the side and dodged again. The golden eagle soared into the sky and opened its beak. It actually launched a golden beam of light to attack the White Tiger. This golden eagle was a true beast king, there was no need to doubt its strength. It was able to control the spiritual energy. Compared to the powerful Psychic and Spell Master, it was even more powerful.

The little white Tiger jumped up and nimbly dodged the attack again. The golden light beam directly split open the surface of the stage. The violent energy billow was rumbling. This attack was actually not weaker than the power of the Exuvia Sixth or Seventh Celestial Layer. It was completely capable of fighting against the genuine young sacred beast!

The smoke and dust filled the air. The golden eagle swooped down, its sharp beak was pecking towards the little White Tiger's eyeball, and its pair of glittering talons were aiming for the White Tiger's abdomen. It was incomparably vicious.

This time, the little White Tiger did not dodge. It was actually waiting for the golden eagle unmovingly. Only until the golden light in the sky got within one feet did it suddenly jump to the side. It was unimaginably fast as it turned its body around and pounced back.

Even someone on Xiao Chen's level was shocked. The White Tiger was really too fast. It only left behind two afterimages and soon after, the golden eagle was already pushed to the ground. It snapped the golden eagle's neck with a bite and

then transformed into a streak of white light as it fell back.

The headless golden eagle was rampaging on the ground for a while. Its sharp talons had ripped apart the diamond floor until it was beyond recognition!

“Can you find out who is the owner of this White Tiger?” Xiao Chen asked the beautiful lady waiting upon to serve him. He instinctively felt that, although this one meter long White Tiger might look mediocre, its strength could be ranked among the sacred beast. So much so that it might be more powerful than some sacred beasts!

“We tried to investigate before, but unable to find anything.” The lovely girl cast a glance at Xiao Chen and said softly.

The White Tiger’s next opponent was a young wolf. Although it was also one meter long, it was very magical. Its entire body was flickering with purple light. Just a slight movement and it would emit resplendent purple radiance that made people unable to open their eyes. The most peculiar part was that it didn’t have any wings, yet it was floating in the sky. It was able to defy gravity and fly!

This was definitely an exotic primal beast. This kind of warbeasts were usually powerful and terrifying.

As expected, when the purple wolf let out a long howl, it caused the entire warbeast castle to shake slightly. It was moving like a streak of purple lightning in the sky, shooting down one purple lightning after another to attack the White Tiger on the ground.

The purple wolf was extraordinarily powerful. Although it was evaluated as a true beast king, it already had the strength equivalent to a young sacred beast. It was completely possible to put it under the beast king group!

“Rumble!”

The smoke and dust filled the air. The warbeast stage actually crumbled apart. It was destroyed by the divine radiance of the purple wolf. However, the White Tiger did not receive any injury. It was as swift as a streak of light as it made one unpredictable maneuver after another on the ruins.

It miraculously dodged all the attacks. Then it provocatively tilted its head to the side as it looked at the young wolf in the sky. The White Tiger proceeded to

extend its paw like a human and beckoned the purple wolf.

The young wolf in the sky was also an extremely intelligent cub. It squinted its eyes and launched two more purple light beams. After much consideration, it swooped down over and over again. That was because it was more terrifying in close quarter combat compared to controlling the spiritual energy.

They only saw a streak of purple light rushing towards the ruins in the twinkling of an eye and the dazzling rays of light stirred up the smoke and dust. A roar was transmitted from the ruins.

When everything finally calmed down, when the dust and smoke dissipated, everyone revealed an inconceivable expression. The chest of the incomparably powerful purple wolf was actually cut open. The purple blood flowed all over the ground. The glint in its eyes was getting dimmer gradually. And the White Tiger came out unscathed. Its body was not even stained by a drop of blood.

The White Tiger looked mediocre. There was nothing special about it at first glance. However, it possessed this kind of frightening power. It was scarily strong. Even some of the little sacred beasts wouldn't be this powerful right? This was what everyone was thinking about.

For some reason, when Xiao Chen saw the White Tiger's movements, Tenax's dragon martial skill came to mind. He felt that the White Tiger must have received something similar. Its movements looked ordinary and mediocre, but it was too antiquated. Thinking about it carefully, that was definitely a very valuable ancient martial skill of the beasts!

Chapter 186 – Dragon King's Battle Begin

Today was the last day of the knockout competition. Xiao Chen wanted to see if he could find any exotic beasts that could achieve victory and fight on equal terms with the sacred beasts and Dragon Kings. He didn't expect he'd really run into this kind of extraordinary little White Tiger. This would definitely become one of Tenax's most formidable opponent!

The following matches were lacking suspense. The White Tiger didn't emit any divine radiance at all, it was completely relying on the ancient battle skill to eliminate its opponents. It was very ruthless and didn't leave any of its opponent alive. It had become a terminator not only in name, but also in reality.

Nobody dared to dispatch their warbeast anymore. Sending other cubs to the field was only sending them to their death!

The ordinary-looking White Tiger put an end to the Antarctic Warbeast Castle's match.

Xiao Chen left this place and directly went to the Amber Warbeast Castle. He wanted to go there to find out the current circumstances.

The scale of the Amber Warbeast Castle was not inferior to the Antarctic Warbeast Castle. The halls were connected by the pathways. A huge crystal annulus was embedded on the walls of every VIP hall. The beauties in the halls were sweet and charming, fresh and pure. The fine liquor and delicacies were laid out on the desks. This place didn't seem like a warbeast castle at all.

After arriving at this place, Xiao Chen immediately joined the crowd and watched the match on one of the several thousand general seats.

It must be mentioned, the appearance of the Dragon Kings had a really big influence on the warbeast tournament this time. There were really a lot of people who came to participate with their exotic beasts. They wanted to temper their warbeasts through the battles.

The Lion King on the stage could even be said to be invincible. In three consecutive battles, it ripped apart its opponents in three to five rounds, and

triumphed with absolute superiority.

This was a little lion that looked as if it was made out of gold. It was glittering with golden light from head to toe, as if the raging flames were throbbing. Three of its heads looked exactly the same, mighty and out of the ordinary. Its body length was only a little more than one meter long, but when it was squatting over there quietly, it possessed an unimaginably powerful presence.

Furthermore, the most peculiar part was that, it had a third eye on each of its forehead. The golden lights emitted from the vertical eyes were very glaring! It was as if the eyes contained a terrifying power.

It was another exotic beast! Xiao Chen could already be sure, this Lion King could definitely be placed among the beast kings directly!

As expected, during the last day, the powerful golden Lion King put an end to the Amber Warbeast Castle's match. With it crouching low over there, nobody dared to dispatch their warbeast to the field anymore.

It was too tyrannical and ferocious. It didn't leave behind any survivor.

Xiao Chen left this place and rushed towards the Beast King Castle. That was the industry operated for a few generations by the Mander family.

Originally, there were four warbeast castles in Celestial City. The Reagan family was in control of the "Celestial Warbeast Castle", their reputation could even be said to be very tempestuous.

However, it perished several dozen years ago. The reason was because they had a conflict with that youth who claimed to have come from the depths of the south.

That youth was ridiculously strong. He had beaten almost everyone among the youth generation in Celestial City at that time. He even slapped the scion of the Reagan family until he was almost dead. It caused the Reagan family to dispatch the older generation experts and almost killed that youth who claimed to have come from the depths of the south.

They never thought that they would invite a huge disaster due to this. During the night time, the black gale engulfed the entire Celestial City. Those older generation experts from the Reagan family were crushed in a flash. Even their

family's "Celestial Warbeast Castle" perished in a single night.

At that time, that warbeast castle had no less than three fully grown sacred beasts. Even Nirvana level expert had to fall back. It was easy to imagine how much strength they possessed! However, after the black gale swept past, everything was gone. In the early morning, only the ruins were left behind.

These past dozen years, the Reagan family was continuously trying to rebuild the warbeast castle. Right now, they were already on the verge of making a comeback. However, they were lacking a few sacred beasts to guard the castle.

Xiao Chen quickly arrived at the Mander family's Beast King Castle. This place was very noisy, which was accompanied by hoots of laughter from time to time.

He only found out why after entering the warbeast castle. There was a basin-sized black tortoise on the warbeast stage. The way it was sticking its head out to look around was very comical.

Xiao Chen felt a little dizzy. Why did they even send out an old tortoise to take part in the competition?

However, from the clamor of the crowds, he finally understood what's going on. This tortoise came from the north, its owner had already testified that, this black tortoise was only five years old. It was not as old as people imagined. The most important thing was that it was very powerful.

Just at this time, an Alba Rhino went on the stage. Its entire body was crystal clear and flickered with glorious light. The rhinoceros horn directly launched a lightning and attacked the black tortoise.

"Swish!"

The black tortoise's speed made everyone dumbstruck. It lightly swayed once and its figure disappeared. After that, with a loud bang, it pounded the back of the Alba Rhino. The rhino's bones were snapped at once. Although it was not life threatening, it was impossible for the Alba Rhino to continue fighting.

The Alba Rhino had a powerful body. It was known by everyone that even a divine weapon would have a hard time harming it. However, it was actually defeated by the black tortoise like this, it made everyone utter a cry of surprise involuntarily.

The next match, a violent ape rushed to the stage. It was about two meters tall and covered by scary red fur from head to toe. The ape was flickering with dense bloody radiance and its mouth was even spewing electricity. It could even be said to possess the quality of the king.

However, the black tortoise's performance made everyone very shocked. It was really too fast. It flew upwards swiftly and rammed into the chest of the blood-colored ape until it caved in. The violent ape fell on the stage with a loud bang.

Since then, nobody dared to mock and make fun of this black tortoise anymore. Strength makes right!

In the end, the black tortoise dominated the last match of the day at the Beast King Castle with absolute strength.

The elimination round dropped its heavy curtain on this very day. Five little beast kings were driven out from the standard warbeasts. They advanced smoothly and obtained the rights to participate in the following grand battle!

In merely ten days of rest and reorganization, the warbeast tournament shall begin.

The reward from the grand battle was so generous, it could make people tonguetied.

Every time the little sacred beasts battled, as long as they could prevail over their opponent, they could obtain ten thousand gold coins as the reward.

The one capable of seizing the title of the beast king would be given six hundred thousand gold coins as the reward. Obtaining the position of sub-beast king would be given five hundred thousand gold coins, and the third beast king would be given four hundred thousand gold coins.

In total, the reward summed up to the astronomical 1.5 million gold coins. Of course, it was impossible for the event planner to sustain losses. Since the grand battle had begun, the three major warbeast castles had increased the price of the one-time ticket to twenty gold coins. Each family could receive up to no less than a hundred thousand gold coins per day.

If they held the competition for seven to eight days, even excluding all kinds of

expenses, they would still make a steady profit. It could even be said to be a sudden huge profits!

Naturally, in order to prevent a long drawn out word of mouth, the three major warbeast castles also spent much of their hard-earned savings. This time, they spent a large amount to purchase the relics of a legendary beast king. Legend says it was a sacred beast that once accompanied the Buddha. This relic was left behind by that sacred beast after it broke the realm of Nirvana. This reward would be given to the little sacred beast that obtained the title of the beast king.

Ten days passed in a flash. The order of the battle was decided by draw lots.

Tenax was actually selected for the first battle!

And its opponent was actually another Dragon King! It was a Dragon King flickering with golden radiance!

Everyone flared up at once!

The twenty gold coins were too worth it. At present, all the bad thoughts regarding the three warbeast castles were washed away. No matter how much gold coins they had to spend, they just couldn't miss the battle of the Dragon Kings!

Xiao Chen was also very surprised. He absolutely never thought Tenax would run into such a powerful opponent during the first match. He had once seen this Golden Dragon King. It was the offspring of the Monarch Lion Dragon and was subdued by the older generation experts later on.

Of course, it was more unlikely for Tenax to be unfamiliar with this Dragon King. At that time, on the dragon island, at the vicinity of the sacred mountain, this Gold Dragon King and Crimson Dragon King were having a fierce confrontation. Tenax was extremely proud and aloof on that day. It was unafraid of death and issued a challenge to the two Dragon Kings. As a result, it almost got killed.

After one odd year, the Gold Dragon King's tail had already evolved into the Ancestral Dragon tail. Its body length had reached approximately 1.5 meter.

And Tenax was also no longer that unremarkable black dragon with nothing

but fighting spirit. It already evolved into a powerful Dragon King.

In the end, there were too many people coming to watch the battle of the Dragon Kings, so much so that even the three major warbeast castle's enclosed warbeast stage was unable to contain the twenty thousand plus spectators. At the last moment, they set up several hundred large crystal screens in order to settle this problem.

Even the VIP lounges were fully booked. People booked the lounges three days in advance.

Fortunately, Xiao Chen was Tenax's owner. They had prepared a specialized VIP lounge for him to watch the battle. Otherwise, he could only make Fairsky and Zhuge fatty to help him buy the tickets. With an ordinary method, it was impossible to buy anymore tickets.

On this very day, the ticket scalpers were reselling the tickets for more than ten times the price, but many people were more than willing to get ripped off.

The stage was eighty meters square, it was more than enough for two Dragon Kings to fight fiercely. They had a wide room for freedom of action.

The floor was glittering, it was already enhanced by many older generation experts. Unless one had the power of demigod, it was impossible to smash the warbeast stage to pieces. And the entire warbeast stage was sealed off by a barrier laid out by fifty Psychics. That was to prevent the light beam launched by the Dragon Kings to harm the spectators.

All the preparations were ready. The battle of the Dragon Kings was about to begin.

The divine radiance lingered on the entire body of the Gold Dragon King. It was as if it had been shrouded by golden raging flame. Even though they were separated by the barrier, the spectators could still feel a powerful pressure.

Although it was only 1.5 meter long, its might pressed down as heavy as an immemorial magic mountain. The Gold Dragon King's eyes were incomparably ice-cold, it didn't seem to possess any emotion.

This was a Dragon King that could even cause the deities to shrink back after it had grown up in the future!

This was a genuine sacred beast!

The instant Xiao Chen saw the Gold Dragon King, he felt his heart sunk. This Dragon King was too calm. That was because it was very confident in its strength.

The terrifying Monarch Lion Dragon, once awakened to the truth, they could surpass hundreds of the most powerful races. Everything was like a wisp of smoke in their eyes, they could surpass everything. Right now, this Dragon King was really too confident!

Xiao Chen felt anxious for Tenax. Although Tenax's strength had advanced by leaps and bounds over this past year, its starting point was much lower after all.

The silver rays of light flashed as Tenax showed up on the stage. Its expression was as proud and aloof as it was in the past. However, its battle intent was as sharp as the divine sword. The intangible surge of energy caused the light screen to shake, as if they were on the verge of breaking down.

It made every spectator feel a slight chill, it felt as if there were sharp swords pointing at their throats.

Chapter 187 – Dragon Countersteps!

The Lion Dragon King was frighteningly calm. It was as majestic as a lofty mountain as it coldly gazed at Tenax.

Tenax also stared at the Golden Dragon King without batting an eye.

They had already recognized each other. That kind of aura and battle intent would never change, they were unique to each and every Dragon King!

They did not communicate with the dragon language, nor did they let out a deafening roar. They were sizing each other up in silence like two peerless swordmasters.

Needless to doubt, after the Golden Dragon King — who was originally as calm as an ancient well — recognized Tenax, its eyes were burning with passion. That pitiful little dragon that was weaker than any other little dragons on the dragon island had evolved, and its rate of improvement was much faster than the Golden Dragon King.

“Swish!”

Tenax finally made its move. It was precisely waiting for this chance. Its silver body left a beautiful streak of light as it charged towards the Golden Dragon King. One silvery light on the warbeast stage transformed into a few dozen afterimages.

The Lion Dragon King was as cool as an iceberg. It jumped up in that instant, but instead of backing off, it was closing in and clashed with Tenax. The golden divine radiance illuminated the entire stage.

“Whoosh!”

Tenax suddenly changed direction while in midair, it was inconceivable. That was totally the angle of refraction. Following that, it made a horizontal sweep with its Ancestral Dragon tail.

“Bang!”

The sharp and clear sound spread through the entire stage. Tenax landed on

the ground smoothly. The Gold Dragon King had been ruthlessly hit in the head. Its body was flipping in midair as it fell on the ground.

A terrifying wound appeared on the Lion Dragon King's face. It was a deep cut. More than ten golden dragon scales on its neck had fallen as the blood gushed out. Among the bright red blood, there were actually traces of gold color.

Every spectator became silent. On the other hand, the older generation experts were savoring every particular movement of the two Dragon Kings! They were fully aware of the dragon's potential. Even though the Dragon Kings were still young, they must have inherited some secret techniques that no outsiders could learn about.

And the youth generation was roughly guessing; if it was them, would they be able to dodge that attack just now? The answer was definitely negative. If they had not reached the realm of Historia, it would be very difficult to dodge an attack that fast!

It was extremely quiet on the warbeast stage. The Gold Dragon King didn't seem to realize there was a terrifying wound on its body. It was still gazing at Tenax with an ice-cold expression. However, the golden rays of light emitted by it was getting brighter. It was currently preparing a powerful attack.

Tenax was very calm. It didn't have any particular mood swings as it quietly looked at the Lion Dragon King.

"Swish! Swish!"

The two Dragon Kings moved at almost the same time. The Gold Dragon King threw itself forward. Its right claw was sweeping towards Tenax's chest. Its left claw was curling up slightly, as if it was defending. Then again, it looked like it was preparing to launch a thunderous attack at any given time! It could even be said to possess both offense and defense.

At the same time, it had already opened its mouth and aimed for Tenax's neck with the sharp dragon teeth. On the other hand, the Ancestral Dragon horns on its head were flickering with gold radiance. It looked like it would launch an attack. Then again, it seemed like it was taking a defensive stance.

It must be mentioned, the Gold Dragon King's stance contained both offense

and defense. It was very efficient and unscrupulous. The Gold Dragon King was like a seasoned expert, it made people exclaim in admiration.

Tenax had already rushed into close quarters. It immediately inclined towards the side and rushed to the side of the Gold Dragon King. After that, it swung its draconic body ferociously and rammed against the Gold Dragon King's side. This method was very appropriate. It avoided all the assaults and attacked the enemy where it was most lightly guarded.

“Bang!”

As the body of the two Dragon Kings rammed into one another, they rolled towards the opposite sides respectively. Then, they jumped up almost at the same time and confronted each other again.

“Roar...!”

The two Dragon Kings let out a roar for the first time. Their roars were seriously ear-splitting. The barrier set up by fifty Psychics was destroyed. The dragon roars soared into the Ninth Heaven, the sound was ringing in everyone's ears like the sudden clap of thunder. More than half of the people passed out on the spot.

The experts hastily entered the arena and sealed off the stage with newly constructed barrier.

At this time, the two Dragon Kings already closed the distance between them and clashed!

However, their speed were too fast. Everyone could not see their movements clearly anymore. They could only see a golden ray and silver ray winding together as the two Dragon Kings growled unceasingly on the stage.

Occasionally, the blood would be splashed everywhere. That was the blood of the Dragon King!

Xiao Chen's mood fluctuated along with the two Dragon King's rumble. With his current ability, he was able to see the battle of the two Dragon Kings clearly. Tenax had already received some fatal injuries. Its neck was cut open by the Gold Dragon King's Ancestral Dragon horn. He could vague see the bones through the flesh, the wound was extremely grave.

However, Tenax's power did not diminish. On the contrary, it became fiercer than ever. The silver rays of light had shrouded its entire body. It had executed the ancient battle skill to its full potential. Its power was inferior to the Gold Dragon King, so it could only score a victory by means of skill!

The Gold Dragon King also knew of some dragon martial skills. Despite how it was an inferior version, its tyrannical power was still something Tenax couldn't match up to. After all, it was already 1.5 meter long, while Tenax was only a little more than one meter long. It was the differences between their age.

"Roar..."

The Gold Dragon King revealed its might. Two glaring golden light beams were launched from the Ancestral Dragon horns. Tenax was instantly submerged by the light beams.

"Swish! Swish! Swish!"

Tenax used an inconceivable footwork. At the critical moment of life and death, it actually escaped from the surge of deathly gold radiance. Following that, its footwork became more profound and swift. Each step actually gave rise to a thunderous sound as one silvery light after another appeared under the soles of its feet.

The faintly discernible ancient patterns seemed to have overcome the vicissitudes of time and miraculously appeared at the present time. One draconic pattern after another actually appeared around Tenax's feet. Every time it took a step, the explosive noise transmitted outwards. After that, the patterns under its feet actually moved and formed a sea of stars.

"Swish! Swish! Swish!"

Its movement was outrageous. It was unimaginably fast.

"Pfff!"

It rushed to the left side of the Gold Dragon King in an instant and pierced its abdomen with the silver Ancestral Dragon horns. The blood gushed out right away.

Soon after, Tenax moved back with lightning speed.

The Gold Dragon King let out a roar. It turned its body around and emitted two golden glints from its eyes. After that, the dazzling rays of light shrouded its entire body, in that very instance, it jumped up and took flight!

With the speed of light, the Lion Dragon King left afterimages in the sky as it pounced on Tenax, who was on the ground. The Ancestral Dragon horns emitted gold radiance unceasingly.

The dazzling golden light immediately illuminated the entire stage. Tenax couldn't fly, even though it had marvelous footwork, it was still impossible for it to take flight.

The Gold Dragon King practically went berserk. It was attacking unceasingly with its tyrannical power while swooping down continuously. It was pouncing on that silvery light on the ground.

Xiao Chen felt his heart sunk. This was the so-called one man army. The Gold Dragon King was strong enough, it was completely capable of crushing Tenax with only brute force. Moreover, it also knew a little bit of the dragon martial skills and was very proficient in the dragon's most terrifying divine spell!!

“Boom!”

The violent energy wave surged forward and everyone was blinded by the resplendent gold radiance. The barrier created by the Psychics was shaking and almost broke down. The experts who was on standby at the side hastily went to reinforce the barrier.

The golden light had once again submerged Tenax. It sent the tough little dragon flying away immediately. Tenax's entire body was stained by blood. The silvery light seemed to have become dimmer. Its skin and flesh were split as the dragon scales fell all over the ground. The blood had dyed the stage red.

Every spectator held their breath.

Within the VIP lounge, Xiao Chen was feeling very anxious. He felt a little suffocated.

The Gold Dragon King's ice-cold pupils emitted two terrifying light beams. Its killing intent was undisguised as it transformed into a streak of golden light and rushed over.

Just at this time, Tenax — who hadn't touched the ground yet — suddenly shifted a few feet to the side and barely avoided the Golden Dragon King's certain kill attack. Then it transformed into a silvery light and jumped onto the Lion Dragon King's back in that very instant.

The sharp dragon claws immediately left four bloody scratch on the Gold Dragon King's body. And its head was firmly sticking to the Lion Dragon King's body. It cut open the Gold Dragon King's neck and almost snapped it off!

The opponent had fell for the bait!

Tenax succeeded and found a way out of a desperate situation!

“Howl!!!”

The Golden Dragon King sustained a serious damage. It let out an extremely miserable howl. The golden-qi all over its body was dazzling. It was as if a sun was suspending on the stage as a boundless power burst out.

“Boom!”

The Gold Dragon King exerted itself physically to shake off Tenax. Its weak draconic body swayed as it flew high into the sky.

Tenax was thrown onto the ground, the blood gushed out non-stop. It got up unsteadily, and was dripping with blood from head to toe, but its fighting spirit was unbendable as it looked at the Golden Dragon King in the sky arrogantly.

The Lion Dragon King's ice-cold pupils gradually changed into anger. The pitiful little dragon that was far from a worthy opponent actually gave it such a serious damage today, this was a humiliation!

With its neck narrowly snapped off, it was only one step away from death's door. The Golden Dragon King knew it was impossible to kill this opponent with brute strength anymore. The only sure kill method was to use the dragon's most terrifying divine spell.

The Gold Dragon King was floating in the sky unmovingly. It was unwilling to swoop down anymore. After adjusting its breathing slightly, its pair of horns began to circulate with dazzling gold radiance.

“Rips! Rips!”

One golden radiance after another fell from the sky, they were even more terrifying than the sharp sword-qi. Each golden radiance contained a frightening power. This was the unique divine magic of the dragons!

Everyone could already tell, the wobbly Tenax definitely wouldn't be able to fend off this attack. It could even be said that death was inevitable!

The unyielding tough little dragon did not feel apprehensive at all. It was dragging its injured body and moved at lightning speed. Its speed didn't seem much slower compared to before.

And this time, its footwork became even more eccentric. When its four limbs touched the ground, the silvery light flickered and one after another, the draconic patterns fluctuated unceasingly as the sea of stars appeared under its feet. The specks of radiance dazzled the eyes.

And during this process, Tenax clearly paid a huge price. It coughed out a small mouthful of blood with every three steps!

Just at this time, something astonishing happened. Tenax suddenly executed an unfathomable footwork and it was actually ascending from the ground with every step it took!

It seemed to be ascending towards the sky as those starry diagrams appeared under its feet!

“Dragon Countersteps!”

Some older generation figures in the VIP lounge let out a cry of surprise!

“The legendary sky rending ancient martial skill!”

“Even deities could be stamped under the soles of the feet!”

.....

Tenax changed from one position to another with each step. As if it was passing through empty space, it suddenly changed from one position to another. With only four steps, it ascended to the high altitude.

With the fifth step, it ruthlessly stamped on the back of the Gold Dragon King.

The sound of bones snapping resounded clearly. The Gold Dragon King's body

was split open at once!

With the sixth step, the dazzling gold radiance exploded. At the same time, the blood splashed everywhere. The Gold Dragon King's body completely burst open!

Only the dragon head remained as it fell down from the sky.

Tenax's entire body was throbbing with silvery light as it landed on the ground. It was standing on the stage proudly and swept its eyes past every spectator like a lonesome expert.

The condition of its injuries was very grave. A lot of dragon scales had come off and its bones were exposed in many places. It made people feel frightened just looking at its condition. Tenax walked in front of the Gold Dragon King's head and then it seemed to be muttering softly after lowering its head. That dragon head on the ground emitted a gold radiance and burst open in the sky. Then, it transformed into specks of light and entered Tenax's body.

That was the pure aura of the Ancestral Dragon!

That was not a power, nor a soul, that was purely an "aura" that symbolized the status of the Ancestral Dragon!

The spectators already became panic-stricken, a Dragon King had died!

A legendary Dragon King had been killed right in front of their eyes! One must know that once they grow up, they would become an existence that even the deities wouldn't dare to provoke!

Over ten thousand people were already flaring up. This battle between the Dragon Kings was too suicidal, and also too pitiful. The people were shouting in succession.

At this moment, Tenax had undoubtedly become the most dazzling star. It was the true king of kings. It didn't win by a fluke, it prevailed over its opponent with pure strength.

Chapter 188 – Human Warfare

Looking at this young creature that would one day make the deities shrink back, many people wanted to fight over it and take it for themselves. However, many people already heard this Dragon King was different from the others. It seemed to have some relationship with that existence in the depths of the south. If they harbored any unfathomable motives, they would only be inviting disaster upon themselves.

As Tenax noiselessly swept its eyes over all directions, apart from loneliness, it also felt a little sad. Killing their own siblings and forge ahead by trampling on the carcasses of the other Dragon Kings, that was their destiny!

Only the strongest could survive until the very end!

Otherwise, they could only withdraw from the path of the Dragon King, and stop dreaming of ever becoming the Ancestral Dragon!

At this moment, only Xiao Chen could understand Tenax's grief. It must continue to tread on this cruel path without turning back!

Not for itself, but for the entire dragon race.

The dragons needed a genuine Ancestral Dragon to lift the seal on them!

Every young Dragon King was shouldering this mission. Even if only one of them remained alive in the end, they wouldn't feel remorseful even after their death.

Xiao Chen knew, once that Azure Dragon King in his house fully recovered its consciousness, it would turn into Tenax's next opponent. When both of them were at their peak state, they would fight each other in a life and death battle, killing each other to absorb that little bit of Ancestral Dragon aura.

Without any delay, Xiao Chen quickly walked out of the VIP lounge to get Tenax. He wanted to bring it back to the house as soon as possible.

"Congratulations, congratulations, Tenax has triumphed in the first round." Zhuge fatty jumped out with his entire face covered in smiles. It seemed like he could already see the brilliant rays of that ten thousand gold coins.

“Let’s not talk about these, where is the peerless spiritual items I asked you to buy? Why haven’t I received anything after such a long time? I need them now to assist Tenax.”

As soon as Xiao Chen raised this subject, Zhuge fatty immediately became furious and said, “Those old bastards are really too greedy! Once they learned that I want to buy the Grade Nine Lotus, they actually raised the price from two hundred and eighty thousand gold coins to three hundred and eighty thousand! They seriously thought I am that foolish?! What’s more excessive is that, the other few families also raised their price. They are intentionally trying to cheat us of our money! Damn it! My lips are almost parched just trying to negotiate with them these days. These profiteers are really good-for-nothing!”

“You try to think of some methods as quickly as possible.”

After saying these, Xiao Chen immediately ran towards the backstage. He left as soon as he carried the bloody Tenax in his arms.

They just happened to hear a man’s furious and grievous cursing by the time they left, “I want to kill that Silver Dragon, I want to kill that brat! They must compensate for my Gold Dragon King, oh my Dragon King... how should I explain this to the elders...”

Xiao Chen was not in the mood to respond to this man. He didn’t have that kind of time and mood at the moment. He carried the heavily injured Tenax and soared into the sky. They got back home rather quickly.

He shook Keke to rouse it up from its deep sleep and hurriedly borrowed the rainbow-colored sacred tree from the little thing. Xiao Chen attempted to link up with the treasured tree over and over. He finally succeeded after an hour later and established a harmonious connection with the sacred tree.

The sacred tree glowed with rainbow-colored radiance, and then it was transferred to Tenax’s body. The rainbow-colored radiance flickered as the sacred tree slowly seeped into Tenax’s body. The tough little dragon’s injuries were beginning to heal.

Only now did Xiao Chen finally let out a breath of relief.

Not long later, Zhuge fatty arrived to inform him that the bastard profiteer had

raised the price again. He wouldn't sell it for less than four hundred thousand gold coins. Furthermore, he made it known that this was an extraordinary phase. If by any chance one of those sacred beasts who participated in the competition were on the verge of dying, these peerless spiritual items could be equivalent to a second lives, third lives, or even fourth lives!

"Mother f—! How I wish a thief would just go and steal it from him." The fatty was grumbling resentfully.

"Whoosh!"

The snow-white little critter disappeared with a streak of light.

"Hey, hey, hey, hey..." Frightened, the fatty immediately called out, "Come back here! I was only saying!"

Xiao Chen also didn't manage to stop it in time.

The snow-white little critter had run off just like this!

Leaving the fatty and Xiao Chen behind to look at each other speechlessly. Then, they shouted at the same time.

"Mother f—! Go after it!"

The fatty rushed out of the courtyard, and Xiao Chen immediately soared into the sky.

The snow-white little critter was unable to restrain itself. The last time it went with the fatty, it was already very restless. This time, they knew what was going to happen without even the need to think.

The fatty was really frightened. He kept muttering to himself, "Oh no, oh no, oh no... If we're caught, we have to compensate with double the price!"

Xiao Chen was a little speechless, the snow-white little critter was really too fast. In just a moment, it was already nowhere to be found. It was really not easy to deal with this little critter! He wanted to chase after it, but that option was not viable anymore, because someone had actually smashed their front door and entered the courtyard aggressively. The door almost rammed onto the fatty.

"This is the place, smash it to smithereens and find that silver dragon for me no matter what! I want to make it pay for my Gold Dragon King's life!"

A middle-aged man brought a group of underlings to crash into the house. The fatty was caught instantly and was slapped five to six times in a row. The fatty was utterly confused and almost slumped onto the ground.

“Kid, you live here?”

“My god, you stupid uncle! You dare to hit me? Do you know who am I? Let go of your dog’s claw!” The fatty immediately flared up. Although he was not directly related to the Zhuge family, he still possessed some authority. Nobody ever dared to look down on him, nor had he never suffered this kind of loss.

“I am the guy you are looking for, let him go!” Xiao Chen flapped the Undying Divine Wings and landed on the ground in that very instant. He felt extremely disgusted with this middle-aged man. He was really too shameless, it’s not like he was an ignorant ten years old child. He was already forty plus years old, and yet, he still behaved like this. It was really hard to see him in any favorable light.

“Very good, it is you, I still remember your face!” The middle-aged man laughed nastily. He released the fatty and walked over with large strides, then he said, “Kid, don’t make things difficult for me, just give the silver dragon to me!”

“You sure are shameless. Since you came to participate in the warbeast tournament, you should know the rule. Nobody will be responsible for the death of the warbeasts in the arena, don’t you feel embarrassed to come and find me after the match?!” Xiao Chen really wished he could slap this guy in the face. He had seen someone shameless before, but not this shameless.

“I am definitely getting that silver dragon. Otherwise, you go and personally kill it in front of me!” The middle-aged man was wearing a sinister smile.

“You want to kill Tenax? You will only invite disaster to the person backing you up! If you want to kill, then go and ask that person in the depths of the south first!” Xiao Chen wanted to force this guy to fall back.

“Who are you trying to scare? Other than wild beasts and even more wild beasts, what else is there in the depths of the south? You want us to go and ask the wild beasts?”

“Did you only arrive at the south recently?”

“We covered several thousand of miles and just arrived two days ago.”

Xiao Chen was speechless as he looked at him and said, “I suggest you should go around and ask about that person in the depths of the south first. Otherwise you wouldn’t even know how you die! The elders from your family should have come along right? You should go and ask them about it!”

“We are going to seize that silver dragon before reporting back to the elders!” The middle-aged man laughed nastily and said, “Kid, why don’t you make it easy for me? Give me the Dragon King and go kill yourself!” 1

He clearly intended on killing Xiao Chen.

“I have seen someone shameless, but none as shameless as you!” Xiao Chen almost laughed out loud due to anger. This guy was really a total mess, Xiao Chen really wished he could just slap him in the face.

However, without waiting for Xiao Chen to make his move, the other party was already sending a slap towards his face. If that slap really hit the mark, half of Xiao Chen’s head would turn into minced meat. The gale gave rise by the slap was really too heavy, so much so that it even produced a thunderous noise.

“Swish!”

Xiao Chen moved backwards and landed on the ground as light as the feather.

“Historia?!” The middle-aged man frowned and said, “So young...” He clearly felt a little apprehensive and asked, “Which sect do you belong to?”

“Only now did you ask, isn’t it a little too late? Since you knew I have a Dragon King with me, you should have thought of this question first.”

“Hmph! There’s nothing amazing to have a Dragon King by your side. We got our Dragon King from a scramble!” The face of the middle-aged man became dark as he looked at Xiao Chen and said, “Although you have the Undying Divine Wings, your secret art is definitely not of the Undying Sect’s. Although you have accumulated sword-qi in your body, you are definitely not from the Solitary clan. That’s because you don’t carry a metal sword on your back. In this south desolate region, those are the only two clans that make me feel a little apprehensive. However, we originally have an old grievance with the Undying Sect to begin with. Even though I can guess you have some relationship with the Undying Sect, I won’t feel apprehensive to kill you!”

“Swish!”

The middle-aged man rushed over. The power accumulated in his palm made people feel speechless. The surge of power made this space rumble as the domain directly pounced towards Xiao Chen. He wanted to confine Xiao Chen in the domain.

Xiao Chen did not face him head-on. He unfolded the Undying Divine Wings and soared into the sky. He silently concentrated his spiritual sense on the two killing weapons in his palms. After a few days of probing around, he found that although he was unable to control the jet-black metal engraving and golden divine halberd, he could occasionally make his palm “transform into weapons”.

“Kid, come down here at once. Otherwise I will go in and kill that silver dragon!” The middle-aged man hooted on the ground.

Xiao Chen was unable to feel the aura of the golden divine halberd, but the jet-black metal engraving in his left hand trembled for a little while as his left hand was shrouded by the jet-black radiance.

Xiao Chen didn’t even think twice and immediately rushed over there. That was because he had a very limited time. The jet-black light ball could only be maintained for a split second.

Looking at Xiao Chen swooping down, the middle-aged man lifted his palm upward.

The jet-black radiance glinted. Xiao Chen’s left palm seemed to have been enlarged by several fold. The dark giant palm gave rise to the whistling sound of the wind and directly shattered the middle-aged man’s domain. After that, it knocked against the palm of the middle-aged man.

“Snap!”

“Ah!!!”

The middle-aged man let out a miserable shriek. The jet-black giant palm immediately crushed his right palm!

Xiao Chen did not stop there. The giant palm ruthlessly swept past the middle-aged man’s chest and sent him flying with a bang. A bunch of blood splashed

everywhere in the sky.

At this moment, the jet-black metal engraving finally lose its connection with Xiao Chen.

The middle-aged man had suffered a serious damage. Up to seven or eight of his breastbones were snapped. On the other hand, Xiao Chen felt very refreshed. He originally wanted to slap this guy anyway, he didn't expect his wish was really granted.

The middle-aged man was a Historia level expert after all, even though he suffered a serious damage, he quickly stood up. Although his chest had already caved in, and his right palm was crushed, his fighting strength was still abundant!

“Kid, what was that just now?”

“Why so much nonsense? Aren't you going to kill me and snatch my silver dragon? Bring it on!” Right now, Xiao Chen had taken the initiative.

The middle-aged man smiled coldly. He walked forward with large strides and waved his other arm.

Xiao Chen was no longer moving back, he faced the middle-aged man head-on with his right palm.

With a loud bang, two palms collided. Xiao Chen fell back half a step and the middle-aged man coughed out a mouthful of blood. He was already heavily injured and was unable to go all-out. Even using only one-third of his strength, he would cough out a big mouthful of blood.

Since he had gained the upper hand, Xiao Chen naturally wouldn't hold back. After refining the two ancient artifacts, even if he was not able to utilize them, his palms were still as sharp as the divine weapons due to their existences. This allowed Xiao Chen to directly face the middle-aged man.

The “banging” sound never stopped. Xiao Chen made the middle-aged man lose his will. The middle-aged man was coughing out blood unceasingly. His expression was downcast and looked extremely pale.

In the end, Xiao Chen directly made this middle-aged man pass out. Just when

he wanted to split him in two, Zhuge fatty shouted, “Seal his power and let me vent my anger!”

Xiao Chen sealed his power. After that, he slapped the middle-aged man until he woke up and tossed him in front of the fatty.

The fatty was really unrestrained. He directly sit astride on the middle-aged man’s broken ribs and slapped him continuously.

“You dare to hit me? Don’t you know who am I? Zhuge Liang! Never heard of it? This is abomination, illiterate! Have you ever read the Romance of the Three Kingdoms passed down from the mortal world? That is a masterpiece. You know who am I now? No? You’re infuriating me! Illiterate! I hit, hit, hit...”

“Slap! Slap! Slap! Slap!”

The fatty knew Xiao Chen had the intent to kill. This guy definitely wouldn’t live to see another day, he wouldn’t need to worry about the other party coming back to seek vengeance. Slapping him now was only to give vent to some of his anger.

“Swish!”

A human figure swayed as an elderly man appeared in Xiao Chen’s courtyard.

“Where it is possible to let people off, one should spare them!” The elderly man looked to be around fifty to sixty years old. He looked like a character of strength.

Xiao Chen immediately felt his heart sunk. Could this be the middle-aged man’s teacher? If that was the case, then this could be troublesome.

“I am the elder of the Undying Sect, Liu Qingfeng. I am Yan Qingcheng’s martial uncle. Although this man is at odds with my sect, we are still from the same Demon Sect. It’s fine to fight against each other, but we definitely must not kill.” The old man lightly waved his hand and sent the fatty flying away all of a sudden. He propped the middle-aged man up and said to Xiao Chen, “Don’t need to worry, I will explain the situation to his teacher.”

As he looked on, Xiao Chen simply kept his mouth shut.

Until the figure of the old man almost disappeared, Zhuge fatty shouted, “The

Undying Sect is owing Xiao Chen a wife!”

The old man’s body inclined to the side and almost took a fall. He turned his head around to cast a glance and left at lightning speed.

Xiao Chen nodded his head and spoke to himself, “That’s right, I should pay a visit to the Undying Sect stationed in Celestial City!”

Just at this time, with a flash of white light, Keke showed up with its head sticking out from the edge of the door. Then it scuttled into the courtyard with a whoosh.

“My @#%¥ !” The fatty cried out in surprise, “It, it, it...” He was so agitated that he couldn’t form a proper sentence.

Xiao Chen was also so shocked that his jaw almost dropped as he quickly rushed to the courtyard.

Chapter 189 – Grade Nine Lotus

After rushing into the house, the fatty was so frightened that he almost fainted. Xiao Chen also dropped his jaw.

The snow-white little critter was too extreme. It actually carried a big sack back. The inside of the sack was shining with multicolored radiance and it was bulging. Who knew just how many spiritual items were stuffed into that sack by the little critter.

The big sack was much bigger than Keke. Compared to this nearly one foot long little critter, the 1.5 meter long big sack was too exaggerated!

The sack had already been opened. The snow-white little critter was extremely infatuated. It was rolling around in the sack happily. Its eyes had already turned into crescent moon shape.

The fatty was so nervous that he almost slumped onto the ground. He started stammering, “We’re done for, we’re done for! The ‘Treasure Trove Castle of the South’ has been raided! Keke has stolen all of their first-rate spiritual items. This mother f—..... the value of these items is beyond measure! If we’re caught, we will have to pay for the consequences. We will have to compensate with twice the market price!”

Xiao Chen also felt a pang of headache. With this much spiritual items stolen, it would definitely cause a huge commotion in Celestial City. Settling this peacefully was definitely impossible. Just think about how much was all of these worth?!

Keke’s glittering big eyes rolled around, then it jumped up and stood in between Xiao Chen and the big sack. That means: Don’t think about asking me to return these, I will not do it even if you beat me to death!

Xiao Chen was almost driven mad as he kneaded his temples. This matter was not easy to deal with, one error and they would be in for a great disaster.

“Damn it! Just what was the Treasure Trove Castle doing? There’s so many treasures... don’t tell me that they don’t have an expert guarding their treasures? Are they not afraid of getting robbed?!” Xiao Chen was upset as he

complained.

Zhuge fatty was speechless, your snow-white little critter had raided other people's store, how did you end up blaming the others? The fatty cursed silently and felt a splitting headache at the same time. He helplessly explained, "Did you forget what day is it today? Today is the first day of the grand battle. And the first round was between two Dragon Kings. Almost all the experts in Celestial City have already headed to the warbeast castle to watch the match. The three elders watching over the store are absent. I saw it with my own eyes as they entered the VIP lounge of the warbeast castle."

"Didn't the battle between the Dragon Kings ended quite a while ago?" Xiao Chen grumbled grudgingly.

"The battle between the Dragon Kings has indeed ended, but there's still two more battles between the beast kings. Since they went there already, do you think they would only watch a single round?"

"Keke, you... Sigh!" Xiao Chen felt really helpless, he didn't know how to handle this matter.

On the other hand, the snow-white little critter was very excited. As if it had just won a victorious battle, it jumped into the big sack again and started to toss from side to side.

"This won't do! We must return these immediately, otherwise we will arouse public anger!" Xiao Chen helplessly let out a breath.

"That's right, and we must be fast. We should take this chance and return the items where they belong before the three elders get back." The fatty also felt very urgent. The Treasure Trove Castle was a monopolistic corporation. They had strong financial support and possessed great influence in the south.

"Squeak! Squeak!!" The snow-white little critter was getting discontent. It poked its head out from the big sack and mumbled to itself angrily. It seemed to be saying that it had worked hard to get these and that it definitely wouldn't return them.

The fatty was a little speechless, you call this work hard? You might as well just live in the Treasure Trove Castle!

“This won’t do. Keke, you must return these items immediately. Otherwise the consequences will be disastrous. We will get into big trouble.” Xiao Chen had no choice but to try to convince the little thing.

After explaining in every possible way and making one promise after another, the snow-white little critter puffed its cheeks and finally nodded its head unwillingly. Of course, it was impossible to return them as a whole. That Grade Nine Lotus had been held in custody as expected. In addition, the snow-white little critter gathered a small amount of quality goods from among the big sack. It was going to keep those as snacks.

“Whoosh!”

With a flash of white light, Keke disappeared along with the big sack.

Even while waiting, they were feeling anxious. The little critter had not returned even after half an hour later. In the end, Xiao Chen immediately soared into the sky, fully prepared to rush into the Treasure Trove Castle as if his life depended on it. He didn’t care if he was exposed anymore, the snow-white little critter was more important!

However, just at this time, Keke returned with wobbly steps. Its little belly was plump and it would let out a hiccup occasionally. From time to time, it would turn its head around to recall fondly.

My god!

He realized immediately, after sending the items back, it ate heartily in other people’s place. For the time being, it seemed like they wouldn’t need to pay the “debts”.

“Good, the items have been returned!” The fatty let out a breath of relief. They had kept the Grade Nine Lotus, but it was only one out of the many spiritual items after all. Although it could be rated as an absolute gem, it had been left in the dust for two to three years and never been sold all along. It’s original price was only a hundred thousand odd gold coins. It was only recently, due to the warbeast tournament, that they began raising the price crazily. This kind of loss would definitely cause a big gale, but it was still better than the whole store being raided.

The Treasure Trove Castle had a few branch stores, namely: the Superb Hall, the Airspace Pavilion, the Treasure House, *etc.* Each and every store had valuable spiritual items. The Grade Nine Lotus from the Superb Hall was their family jewel.

Legend says Buddha once had a Grade Nine Lotus. It could seriously be rated as an exceptionally valuable object. After Buddha had refined the Grade Nine Lotus, not only did his body become more powerful, even his power had increased dramatically. This was a sacred item that everyone in the world of martial arts yearned for.

Naturally, the Grade Nine Lotus at the Superb Hall was not this magical. However, it was still a treasure produced by the nature. It was one of the very few giant lotus. Its entire body was crystal clear and sparkling like the jade. The lotus was as big as a basin and felt warm to the touch. It was emitting a glorious radiance like warm jade.

“Alas, it’s such a pity, only the size of a basin. If it was raised for another few dozen millenniums, it might become a sacred item on the same level as Buddha’s giant lotus!” The fatty looked at the treasure with remorse.

This was obviously very unrealistic. Just who would be able to live for a few dozen millenniums? Who would be able to wait for that long? Even immortals were unwilling to wait for countless years. Then what about the merchants? They valued money highly, once they found this kind of spiritual items, they certainly wouldn’t let it continue to grow in the nature.

Zhuge fatty said that this giant lotus was originally formed by an ancient lotus found on the lake of a tall mountain. There were traces of the Buddhists on the huge mountain. They presumed that the Gods and Buddhas must have been there a really long time ago.

Hearing these, Xiao Chen also felt a little remorseful. This lotus might really be related to Buddha’s Grade Nine Lotus. Maybe it was really sprouted from the sacred lotus’ seed.

After peeling off the jade-like lotus, a burst of fragrance filled the air. There were four lotus seeds about the size of a dragon eye fruit within. The seeds were dark green and flickered like jadeite. It was very dazzling. The color of the seeds

was substantially different from ordinary lotus seed, and they were much bigger too. It was indeed a sacred item. The fragrance pervaded the entire courtyard.

The four jadeite lotus seeds immediately made Keke so infatuated that it almost shut its two eyes. It felt that even after returning so many spiritual items, keeping this treasure alone was more than worth it! However, it already didn't have much appetite as it had already ate its fill at the Superb Hall earlier.

Xiao Chen felt that the situation was far from good. He hastily covered up the four crystal clear lotus seeds, then he called Keke, Tenax, and the Azure Dragon King over. He was unbiased and gave each sacred beast one seed. The last one was kept for himself.

"Gulp it down immediately. Otherwise, when the aroma fills the air, it will attract unwanted attention!"

After saying these, Xiao Chen took the lead and stuffed the crystal clear lotus seed into his mouth. The instant the lotus seed entered his mouth, it transformed into boundless spiritual energy and rushed into his internal organs. The spiritual energy was flowing through all kinds of arteries and veins, but in the end, it was all deprived by the Central Pivot 1 along the spine. The glorious divine radiance condensed into a speck of light. The Central Pivot had been divinized!

The exuberant life energy bubbled out and pounded against Xiao Chen's internal body. After that, it established a connection with the other divinized acupoints. The golden thread was like a net of vein as it linked them up!

After fifteen minutes, everything finally calmed down as Xiao Chen opened his eyes. He was no longer surprised by the divinization of the acupoints. It could be expected to happen frequently in the future.

The snow-white little Keke bit the lotus seed like it was eating candy. However, without waiting for it to sample the taste, the lotus seed already transformed into spiritual energy and rushed into its body. This made the little thing feel very regretful. It could only click its tongue while reflecting on the aftertaste.

As for the jade-like lotus leaves that were peeled off, Xiao Chen didn't waste any of them. He pounded them into pieces and spread them on Tenax's wounds. The glossy lotus also contained boundless worldly essence. It reacted to the

treasured tree in Tenax's body as the spiritual energy seeped into its body via the wounds.

It could be seen clearly, the terrifying wounds on Tenax's body were healing as that jade-like lotus wilted at high speed. In the end, it turned into ashes and fell down.

The rainbow-colored radiance flickered as Xiao Chen carried Tenax back into the house. He was expecting a full recovery in one night.

These days, the Azure Dragon King's consciousness was slowly recovering. However, it was still very taciturn, and even a little downcast. It didn't reject Xiao Chen. Clearly, it had already recognized him as an old friend. After it gulped down the lotus seed, the Azure Dragon King silently returned to the house and continue to heal its mental trauma.

The fatty was very envious as he watched the entire process. Unfortunately, due to his poor constitution, he was unable to enjoy the lotus seed.

When night fell, the news arrived from the warbeast castle. The outcome of the other two grand battles had been concluded. The one meter long Gold Lion King killed its opponent in a matter of seconds and advanced to the next round. The little White Tiger also had an extraordinary performance. After going through a fierce battle, it inflicted heavy injuries on the other young beast king and advanced without a hitch.

With the Grade Nine Lotus stolen from the Treasure Trove Castle, a huge disturbance was given rise as expected. It was abuzz with noise since afternoon until the night time. Zhuge fatty had become the first suspect as it should be. Who asked him to go and bargain with them everyday since these past few weeks!

The fatty felt very depressed. He only sniffed the aroma for a while only, and yet, he had already become the primary suspect. On the other hand, the perpetrator went to the Undying Sect as if he was not involved.

The Undying Sect occupied an extremely wide territory in the Celestial City. It was like a landscape garden. There were fine woods within the territory, pavilions and kiosks in the gardens, small bridges over the clear spring, as well as the waterfall. The scenery was very magnificent, it was just like a fairyland.

Xiao Chen cursed silently. In this Celestial City where every inch of land was as precious as gold, every major power's residences, ancient castles, or palaces were bound to have a big garden, with one building connected to another. Just how much wealth did they possess? This was too extravagant!

"It's you?!"

After entering the Undying Sect's garden, Xiao Chen just happened to run into Yan Qingcheng. The beautiful Yan Qingcheng was wearing a one-piece blue striped dress. Her slender body was outlined perfectly. Her lily-white face did not lose the least bit of splendor. Her face without makeup appeared attractive and outstanding. Her matchless complexion could even make a stoneman feel palpitated.

"What, am I not welcomed?" Xiao Chen wore an unruly expression. It was poles apart from his sharp expression when confronting an enemy.

"Of course you are not welcomed at this place!" Yan Qingcheng felt contradicted. Since she started practicing the Obliterate Demon Absolute God, she couldn't be too far apart from Xiao Chen. At the very least, they must stay in the same city. However, she always felt unpleasant whenever she faced this man who once took her as a captive.

"How can you talk like that? Is that how you treat your guest? I am here to take you home as a lifelong partner!"

"You..." Yan Qingcheng was so angry that her lily-white face had turned as red as an apple. Looking at Xiao Chen's negligent appearance, she wished she could go over there and slap him. However, she restrained herself and let out a humph, "Go back and daydream by yourself!" She turned around and left as soon as she said these words.

"Swish!"

Xiao Chen unfolded the Undying Divine Wings and got behind Yan Qingcheng. He didn't say anything and followed her along the way.

"Why are you following me?"

"Why can't I follow you?"

That was a completely unconcerned tone. It made Yan Qingcheng especially resentful. Nobody had ever been this rude to her. Even if others were attracted by her peerless beauty and longed for her, all they did was compliment her and didn't dare to make their move. Yet, how could this guy be so shameless. He was truly hateful through and through!

"Xiao Chen, you..." Yan Qingcheng bit the lower lip with her silver teeth, then she fumed, "If you want to find the elder, just go! If you continue to nag me, don't blame me for calling out for help."

"Why do I feel like this is a little like the drama of the beauty and the evil tyrant?"

"Aren't you the evil tyrant?" Yan Qingcheng was as agile as the butterfly. She flew up gracefully and just when she was about to fly into the depths of the garden. Xiao Chen said:

"You mean I am the evil tyrant? Then how about you point out some accomplished facts, otherwise I will feel like I have been wrongly accused."

Chapter 190 – Marriage Proposal

“You... just go and die!” Yan Qingcheng glared at Xiao Chen. However, Xiao Chen found a hint of craftiness behind her beautiful eyes.

“Swish!”

Like a flickering light and passing shadows, Xiao Chen left an afterimage in his original location and rushed in front of Yan Qingcheng, then he grabbed her lily-white hands. And just at this time, a lightning landed on his original location with a rumble.

“When I was at your Undying Sect’s headquarters, I have already seen this kind of mystic art. You think I will fall for it?”

“Unhand me!”

“No way!”

“Xiao Chen, you scoundrel...”

“If you curse me again, then don’t blame me for turning into a real tyrant and satisfy your expectation!”

“Who’s expecting what? Go to hell, drop dead! You are really too shameless!” Yan Qingcheng was extremely ashamed and resentful as she continued to struggle.

“Let’s go. We’re going to see the elder.”

“If you want to go, then go by yourself. Unhand me!”

“How can you not go? You are the reason I come to your sect today.”

“Xiao Chen, you bastard!” Yan Qingcheng was really a little scared now. This negligent guy actually wanted to go and meet the elder now.

“If was your Undying Sect who spread the rumor that you have been betrothed to me. Because of this, I was almost killed by the ancient spear Pasteur.”

Xiao Chen and Yan Qingcheng flew past the garden in the sky. Their sleeves

were brushed by the wind. The man was handsome, the woman was like a fairy, they seemed to be the perfect match.

“Hey, isn’t that junior sister Yan Qingcheng? Am I seeing things? Why is she flying side by side with a man!”

“Junior sister Yan is actually flying side by side with a man...”

“I am going to challenge that guy!”

.....

There’s plenty practitioners of the Undying Sect below. After seeing this scene, few of the male disciples felt heartbreak.

When Yan Qingcheng heard those words, she narrowly fell from the sky.

“Xiao Chen, you bastard. Let go of me.”

“No.”

The two of them had mastered the Undying Divine Wings. They flew past the gardens at lightning speed and arrived in front of a big hall in the blink of an eye. Then they landed as light as a feather.

The Undying Sect’s elder had already received the report. He sent someone to lead the two into the main hall.

Within the ancient hall, many demon god’s portraits were enshrined. Impressively, the one enshrined in the centermost was a gold statue of the Undying Demon King in battle stance. He looked handsome and outstanding. The lonesome look in his eyes was so vivid that it felt as if it had traveled through time and reflected upon the hearts of the later generations.

Naturally, that arrogant appearance had been carved even more vivid. A hint of loftiness could be seen among the loneliness. It was as if every living things in the world were under his foot, as if nobody in the world deserved to face him at his best!

The Demon King had shaken quite a few generations. When he just founded the sect, he had slaughtered a lot of demon gods. He was very good at power play. He raided the sacred island’s palace alone and was bathed in the blood of the deities. He was genuinely worshipped by the people of the Undying Sect,

regardless of gender and age!

For the men, they wanted to reach the summit and look down on the multitude of hills! This was the dream of every man in the Undying Sect. Who wouldn't want to recreate the former glory of the Demon King?

The girls also became proud and arrogant due to the existence of the Demon King. In their heart, only this kind of man was a good fit for them.

Xiao Chen stood in the main hall and silently paid his respect in front of the Demon King's statue.

"Did you finally start to become aware of your own insignificance in front of the Demon King?" Yan Qingcheng used this chance to shake off Xiao Chen's palm.

"The Demon King is worthy of my respect. This is how a man should be. Proud, ambitious, famous, and powerful. However, I don't have superstitious belief in the Demon King, he is but a man who reached that height through hard work. Everyone has a different path, my goal is not to become the Demon King, I am myself."

"You sure know how to talk. However, it is pointless. Show it with your action, not words!" Yan Qingcheng hurled back.

Xiao Chen smiled and said, "You can witness it step by step when we are together in the future." He resumed his negligent appearance and the sharp expression on his face just now was gone.

"Xiao Chen, I will say it one more time. There is nothing between the two of us. I will definitely make you crouch under my foot one of these days!" Yan Qingcheng had endured silently for a very long time. Nobody had ever opposed her like this. And now, all her inner feelings had finally burst out.

"Haha..." Xiao Chen laughed out loud and said, "In that case, does that mean I should make you crouch under my foot first?"

"You... I'm going to kill you!" Yan Qingcheng's beautiful face was covered with frostiness. Her lily-white body was trembling slightly.

Just at this time, a disciple of the Undying Sect came out from the back of the

palace hall and said, "The master is asking Lord Xiao to come in."

At the back of the palace hall, a sixty plus years old elder with remarkable appearance was quietly sitting on the mat. He was actually that elder who called himself Liu Qingfeng. He had once saved the middle-aged man, who wanted to take revenge for the Gold Dragon King, from Xiao Chen's hand.

He sat on the mat calmly and rolled his sleeve noiselessly. Then, two mats immediately floated up and landed in front of Xiao Chen and Yan Qingcheng.

"Xiao Chen, what is the reason for your visit today?"

Naturally, Xiao Chen couldn't say something as shameful as "receiving my wife" anymore. That was only to rouse up the proud Yan Qingcheng.

"This junior had once been under the care of the patriarch, I ought to come pay a visit to the Undying Sect's branch in Celestial City."

Liu Qingfeng nodded his head and started to chat with Xiao Chen leisurely.

Yan Qingcheng was so angry that the roots of her teeth started to itch. Xiao Chen was teasing her wantonly earlier, but now, he's actually deadly earnest. She originally thought he would act indifferent in front of Liu Qingfeng and not give any respect to the elder of the Undying Sect. If that was the case, then he would be severely punished. However, she didn't expect Xiao Chen would behave himself. He didn't show any disrespect and was chatting with Liu Qingfeng on friendly terms.

Liu Qingfeng said earnestly, "Recently, you've been too reckless. You should learn to hold back a little. There's a lot of things you cannot do rashly."

"The senior's advice, I will take it to heart."

"Oh? You really don't have any other business for coming to the Undying Sect?"

"Of course there is!" Following that, Xiao Chen tactfully conveyed his purpose in coming. Although he didn't say the few words, "To take my wife home," that was clearly what he meant.

Yan Qingcheng almost dropped the teacup in her hands. This guy was really too shameful, he actually dared to bring this matter up!

Liu Qingfeng's hands also shook slightly. Wasn't this guy a little too "straightforward"? Couldn't he be a little more "evasive"?

"Regarding this matter..."

"The ancient spear Pasteur..."

Yan Qingcheng was endlessly resentful. This guy was extremely daring. He actually had the intention of pushing the blame of getting penetrated by Pasteur to the Undying Sect. This was the reason he dropped in to propose marriage.

"Master..." Yan Qingcheng was in an uncomfortable situation. Looking at Liu Qingfeng smiling from beginning to end, she couldn't help but raise her voice.

On the other hand, Xiao Chen was surprised. Liu Qingfeng was actually Yan Qingcheng's master. This was indeed out of his expectation!

"Generally, I don't oppose this marriage!" Liu Qingfeng declared his opinion.

Startled, Xiao Chen immediately looked at him blankly. He didn't expect his proposal would be successful. All of this was only to give vent to his accumulated dissatisfaction. The Undying Sect clearly used him as an excuse to evade the brothers who held the ancient spear Pasteur. Although he didn't dare to criticize them violently, mocking them was still unavoidable. However, he didn't expect the other party actually didn't turn him down.

"Master..." Yan Qingcheng became anxious. It was simply unimaginable for her to marry to Xiao Chen. Even if she had to make a compromise last time, now that she had returned to the immortal's mainland, how could she continue to make herself feel wronged?

"Oh, we must not be too hasty regarding this matter. I feel that it is better to wait till Qingcheng master the Obliterate Demon Absolute God first. When two spend a long time together, love will bloom naturally."

Hearing these, Xiao Chen almost sprayed out the tea in his mouth. Wasn't this old fellow too crafty? If he wanted to refuse, just say it! Why be so corny?

On the other side, Yan Qingcheng was delighted and reproachful at the same time. Master really didn't know how to speak. What "when two spend a long time together, love will bloom naturally"? Who would "bloom romantic feelings"

for this guy?!

Xiao Chen originally came to this place to mock Yan Qingcheng to begin with. He was not so naive to think he could actually take Yan Qingcheng as a wife. Since his goal had more or less accomplished, he chuckled and said, “Yan Qingcheng, you really don’t want to marry me? If you really don’t want to, then I will take my leave.”

“In your dream!” She was as beautiful as the angel and as proud as the fairy. Yan Qingcheng’s beautiful face was brimming with ice-cold expression as she said proudly, “I would rather marry off to a beggar or an army ruffian than marrying you!”

Xiao Chen originally wanted to take his leave just like this. However, after hearing these words from Yan Qingcheng, he felt furious and said with a smile, “Good, very ambitious indeed. So high and mighty! Not long later, I am going to leave the Celestial City. I hope that lady Qingcheng will not follow me along the way again. I don’t want to interfere with your adequate life.”

These words caused Yan Qingcheng to be speechless for a moment. After practicing the Obliterate Demon Absolute God, she was really inseparable from this so-called vessel.

“You...”

As he said these, Xiao Chen had already saluted to Liu Qingfeng and left the main hall.

“Mister Xiao, don’t be so smug! I will find a way to settle this!”

“Then I will congratulate you in advance. Actually, we can already be considered acquaintance. If you can’t stand it anymore, you can continue to be my attendant. Of course, the prerequisite is that you don’t weep endlessly and keep shouting you want to marry me.”

Xiao Chen had resumed the negligent appearance which Yan Qingcheng detested bitterly. He felt that he was a little small-minded just now. After all, he was a man. So be it if he only mocked this arrogant beauty, but it was no worthwhile to take it too seriously. He burst into loud laughter as he soared into the sky and flew towards a distant location.

Yan Qingcheng was gnashing her teeth. How she wished she could pull Xiao Chen down from the sky at once.

“Mister Xiao, I will not let you get away with this!”

“Come and find me any time. I am currently thinking about my future seriously. If you are too late, you can only become a concubine.” As the voice faded away, Xiao Chen’s figure disappeared in the sky.

“Go to hell!” Yan Qingcheng’s smooth forehead was covered with black lines.

The next day, because the snow-white little Keke was snoozing around and missed the time to get on the stage, its qualification to compete was mercilessly stripped off. When Xiao Chen found the little thing, it was soundly asleep at the backstage. He had no other choice but to take it home.

However, the little critter was very dissatisfied. The unwillingness in its eyes was undisguised. Xiao Chen knew he had to pay close attention to it. Otherwise it might cause some trouble again.

Four days later, the grand battle had finally reached its climax. The spectators’ mood were rising up and down every day, and the warbeast castle was filled to the brim.

The first round of the grand battle dropped its curtain at last. On the fifth day, the second round of the grand battle began!

The first battle today was between the Golden Lion King and the black tortoise.

The strength of these two cubs were gravely underestimated at that time. They were the victors of the standard beast kings. Presently, they were genuinely the strongest and most popular among the young beast kings.

And now, these two powerful warbeasts actually clashed. It could even be said to be a fierce battle between giants.

The Golden Lion King looked extremely fierce. Although it was only one meter long, it had a bearing like that of a natural-born king. Similarly, the golden fur all over its body was dazzling, so much so that the gold radiance made people unable to open their eyes. It crouched there unmovingly like an immemorial sacred mountain, which gave people a great pressure!

It had three lion heads and each of them appeared mighty. It made people intimidated at first glance, especially that vertical eyes on its foreheads. When it blinked, the brilliant rays made even the older generation experts to get cold feet. Everyone unanimously determined that, this was definitely an extremely exotic beast. Perhaps, its odds of success were very high even if it faced the Dragon Kings!

As for that mysterious tortoise, nobody dared to look down on it anymore. That was because an older generation warrior had clarified it clearly, this was the direct descendant of the Black Tortoise. It was a natural-born sacred beast and had unlimited potential!

Along with the sound of the drum, this battle had begun. The entire body of the Golden Lion King radiated. Although it hadn't moved a fraction, it had, without a doubt, already became the sole attention of the audience. The stage was brimming with golden radiance. The aura of the Lion King made every spectators feel pressured.

The Black Tortoise was as quick as lightning. It started to rotate like a sharp disk blade as it flew towards the Golden Lion King.

“Swish!”

The Golden Lion King moved with lightning speed. With a swipe of its claw, it ruthlessly hit the Black Tortoise.

“Clang!”

The deafening noise had shaken up the entire warbeast palace. The Black Tortoise's shell was truly indestructible, it was practically impossible to break through.

The qi of earth rumbled as yellowish rays of light appeared around the Black Tortoise. The energy fluctuated violently in the Black Tortoise's surroundings. The essence of earth gave rise to a yellow light, which was launched towards the Golden Lion King. The black tortoiseshell was bewitching. It was so dark that it made people break out in cold sweat. The energy fluctuation passed through the barrier in front of the stage and made every spectators feel palpitated.

This kind of young sacred beast was too terrifying. It already possessed this

much power at present. Who knew what kind of realm it could reach once it was fully grown!

“Boom!”

The aura of mother earth was majestic, the momentum was extremely shocking. In a split second, the Golden Lion King had been sent flying and rammed against the barrier surrounding the warbeast stage.

A burst of violent energy fluctuation rumbled. The barrier almost broke down and the spectators burst into clamor. The Black Tortoise was really too powerful. It was actually capable of manipulating such a tyrannical power.

And surprisingly, the Golden Lion King did not get crushed like they had expected. The glaring golden light glinted as the Lion King shook its lustrous fur. It jumped up from the ground and was practically unharmed!

With the speed of lightning, the Golden Lion King ran across the field and let out a thunderous rumble. The entire warbeast stage was trembling. The Golden Lion King got in front of the Black Tortoise in a split second and brandished its lion claw violently.

“Bang!”

The Black Tortoise was sent flying, but it was still safe and sound. It was impossible to destroy the tortoiseshell.

The eyes of the Lion King glinted as two threatening lights were emitted. It scuttled across the field and bit the Black Tortoise in the sky. Then, it swung its head violently and flung the Black Tortoise. However, the tortoise shell still remained in one piece.

The Black Tortoise amassed the yellowish rays of light again and gave rise to an even more violent earth essence that drowned the Golden Lion King.

“Boom!”

The Golden Lion King was sent flying towards the sky. A mouthful of gold-colored blood was coughed out from the center-head. However, its militaristic body was still as vigorous as before. It didn't have much influence on its performance.

But also because of this, the Golden Lion King became furious!

Along with the world-shaking lion roar, the barrier around the warbeast stage was destroyed. The vertical eye at the Golden Lion King's center-head opened in that instant and a blazing, bloody-qi was launched. It was like a light of destruction that destroyed the Black Tortoise's shell in a split second!

"Bang!"

The entire body of the Black Tortoise burst open!

Crushing defeat!

The Black Tortoise, one most powerful sacred beast that was recognized by everyone, died on the warbeast stage. The Golden Lion King achieved victory with indisputable strength.

The entire stadium turned deathly silent. The Golden Lion King was too powerful!

It barely opened one of its vertical eyes and it was already enough to penetrate the Black Tortoise who was known for its defense. Who else among the young sacred beasts could be a worthy match for it?!

Xiao Chen also felt downcast. Even he was not confident that he would be able to withstand that destructive attack just now! And that was merely one out of three of the Golden Lion King's vertical eyes!

Chapter 191 – Six Saint

The Golden Lion King's performance made every spectator endlessly shocked. When the bloody light swept past, even the Black Tortoise — who was reputed to have the best defense among the beast — was penetrated. This was simply inconceivable.

Unparalleled Lion King!

A lot of people started to shout. It could stand toe to toe with the Dragon Kings, perhaps it might even be stronger than the Dragon Kings. This was the evaluation of the majority.

The Golden Lion could really be rated as the king of the sacred beasts. There was no need to doubt its power. What's more terrifying was that, it had three heads, and two more of its vertical eyes had not opened yet. Who knew what kind of terrifying ability was it still hiding.

The Golden Lion King with unlimited potential!

Many people wanted to find out who was its owner, but regretfully, they were unable to discover any information.

The Golden Lion King was as calm as a lofty mountain. Its entire body was flickering with dazzling gold radiance. It walked towards the Black Tortoise, one step at a time. It ripped the corpse apart with its powerful claws. A yellowish radiance rushed out and was swallowed by the Golden Lion. This was its spoil of war, the essence of the Black Tortoise was devoured by the Lion King.

Naturally, it was impossible for the Golden Lion to learn the Black Tortoise's divine ability because of this. However, it would inevitably be very beneficial for its future prospect.

Only after going through hundreds of life and death battles would a beast king be able to become more powerful. Only by experiencing life and death battles unceasingly would they be able to arouse their hidden potential. Only a grand battle like this could help them develop their talent at high speed.

Of course, the essence of the defeated sacred beasts would inevitably become

the victor's driving force. Their power wouldn't increase immediately, but their life energy would become more vigorous. This was equivalent to increasing their own potential.

The main reason for these young sacred beasts to participate in the warbeast tournament was the Dragon King. If they could devour the dragon-qi, that would be very beneficial for them!

Xiao Chen returned to his residence. He knew that the Golden Lion King would become one of Tenax's most powerful opponent. It was extremely possible that it would be mortally wounded. That Golden Lion's strength was really too powerful.

Tenax had already fully recovered. Not only because it had received the insurance of the dragon-qi, it was also nursed by the rainbow-colored sacred tree. Tenax's body had already grown a little, it was about 1.5 meter long now. It seemed more robust than ever.

Moreover, its silver brilliance gradually changed into the milky white radiance of the jade. Its draconic body seemed to be carved out of suet white jade. The dragon scales were glorious and a powerful energy was circulating on the scales. Without a doubt, Tenax had become stronger after going through that life and death battle.

"Haha..."

A loud laughter transmitted from the doorway. Zhuge fatty carried a greasy paper bag in between his arms and arrived at Xiao Chen's residence with a beaming smile.

"I will treat you all to a banquet tonight!"

"Is there anything distinguishing? We have tasted almost all the delicacy in the Celestial City." Xiao Chen asked with interest.

"Although it's not as rare as dragon liver or phoenix essence, it is still a rare delicacy in this world. Generally, even a sovereign wouldn't be able to eat it even if they want to." The fatty squinted his eyes. He was so happy that his fats were trembling.

"Bastard fatty, don't even think about eating it by yourself." From the outside

came the voice of a young lady. The Mander family's baby girl, Katalina, pushed the door open and entered. Her aquamarine dress made her seem very smart.

Behind her was Lazio, who had been given the title of a freak. This handsome man was usually gentle and cultivated. It was practically impossible to find any traces of a practitioner on him.

Katalina snuggled up to him at his side. Her whole face was filled with excitement. At the same time, she didn't forget to glare at Xiao Chen ferociously.

"Hey, this brat from the Mander family, how come your nose is so sharp? Where did you get the news?" The fatty looked at her suspiciously.

"I originally wanted to make my move earlier, but I didn't expect you were so crafty and was one step ahead of me."

"Haha... I am here." Fairsky also rushed over. 1

These three were the scions from three big warbeast castles. Xiao Chen could vaguely guess what was it.

Sure enough, the following words confirmed his speculation.

"All of your noses are even sharper than the divine hound's! I'll say it first, it is possible to enjoy the delicacy together, but if anyone dare to leak the news, I will never forgive them!"

"Hurry up, I am getting impatient. That is but the legendary Black Tortoise!" Katalina's beautiful eyes were pacing back and forth between the fatty and the greasy paper bag. 2

It must be mentioned that Zhuge fatty possessed remarkable abilities. He actually plundered some of the Black Tortoise's ruptured body. They set up a big iron pot at Xiao Chen's courtyard and began to stew the Black Tortoise!

If people were to know of this, they would definitely be driven mad. Stewing Black Tortoise? That's too crazy!

The aroma of the meat drifted in the air. In addition to the exotic delicacies delivered from the restaurant, everyone was very pleased with this meal.

Naturally, it was impossible for Keke and Tenax to be left out.

The fatty still felt a little empty. He only drank a mouthful of the Black Tortoise soup and he already got a nosebleed. He let out a heavy sigh.

The essence of the Black Tortoise had already been swallowed up by the Golden Lion King. Its body had already turned into a pure tortoise extract. Fairsky and the others didn't need to worry about external source hindering their own advancement.

"That little White Tiger will make an appearance tomorrow. I really hope it will be defeated. At that time, not only will we have tiger meat and tiger bone wine, the most important part is the tiger's wiener. The White Tiger's one... is a genuine treasure!" After the fatty got drunk, he started to babble nonsense. It caused Katalina to kick him twice. After that, she packed some tortoise soup for take-away and left at high speed.

On the sixth day, the little White Tiger made an appearance again.

Its opponent was a beast with lion head, bear-like body, horse-like limbs, and a tiger-like tail. It was a legendary mutated sacred beast, the Tetramutant. It was roughly 1.5 meter long. Its entire body was flickering with four colors, namely; yellow, white, brown, and black. It looked very excellent.

There was no need to doubt its strength. When four of its limbs stepped on the ground, raging flames were produced and it was standing in the sea of flames. The warbeast stage shook as the worldly essence was gathered at high speed.

The White Tiger was very calm. This time, its originally mediocre outward appearance had an astonishing transformation. It seemed to have felt the formidability of its opponent and finally revealed its true strength. The monochrome stripes emitted glorious radiance. The flickering light was very glaring and carried an intangible pressure. The contrasting white and black light reflected upon one another and enveloped the White Tiger completely.

"Divine marks?!"

"It is the White Tiger's divine marks!"

Someone among the audience cried out in surprise.

The White Tiger's divine marks was a "sacred writings" bestowed by heaven. It possessed an unfathomable power. Legend says it was some kind of ancient

characters, which contained the ultimate truth. Of course, since ancient times, only a very few could manifest the divine marks. This White Tiger was clearly different from its peers.

“Alas, seems like there’s no hope for tiger wiener wine!” In the VIP lounge Xiao Chen was located at, Zhuge fatty shook his head and heaved a sigh.

The snow-white little critter was holding a ginseng king skewer in its little paws. That skewer was made by completely basing it on the candied fruits. Its two eyes widened as it curiously sized up the White Tiger through the crystal screen.

“How about it? Do you have confidence that you can defeat it? If you can really make it lie down on the floor, let’s not mention the ginseng king skewers, even if you want to eat the heavenly fruits, I can buy some for you.” 3

Looking at the how the cunning fatty was inciting it like this, Xiao Chen hastily pushed him out of the VIP lounge. Then he turned his head and warned Keke, “Don’t listen to his nonsense. Just behave yourself and stay here. Otherwise I will confiscate all your ginseng king skewers and reishi mushroom cake.”

“Squeak...” Keke nodded its head obediently. However, it was casting a sidelong glance at the fatty’s rear figure with its glittering big eyes.

On the warbeast stage, the fierce battle had begun. The Tetramutant soared into the sky and floated in midair. Divine radiance of four colors lingered on its surrounding. One terrifying light blade after another were launched down unceasingly and attacked the White Tiger like a storm.

This was an exotic beast capable of manipulating the worldly power. It was much stronger compared to the common Spell Masters and Psychics.

“Swish!”

The yellowish divine radiance sent the White Tiger flying. It fell from the sky like the divine flames and engulfed the entire surface area of the stage.

“Bang!”

White divine radiance flickered and confined the White Tiger on the ground. The rays of light had submerged the White Tiger.

“Rips! Rips!”

The brown divine radiance and black radiance were launched simultaneously, targeting the White Tiger’s neck. Four-colored divine radiance flickered on the warbeast stage as the energy fluctuation rumbled violently.

When everyone saw the White Tiger rolling in the four-colored divine radiance, everyone felt that it was impossible for the White Tiger to turn the situation around anymore. It seemed like this battle had already been decided.

However, with the elapse of time, everyone found to their surprise; although the White Tiger seemed very pitiful as it was getting tossed left and right by the four-colored divine radiance, it didn’t sustain any injury due to this.

This could even be said to be a miracle. Under the situation where the densely covered divine radiances were sweeping left and right, it was impossible for the White Tiger to dodge them completely. So how was it possible for the White Tiger to remain unharmed?

Eventually, everyone finally discovered wherein the secret lies. The White Tiger’s divine marks actually dissolved all the attacks! The Tetramutant’s wild attacks were all melted by the divine marks.

Carrying on, along with the earsplitting roar, the White Tiger stood up on its hindlimb. Its entire body was flickering with brilliant rays as it was about to execute a killing move! The White Tiger didn’t want to struggle meaninglessly anymore. Therefore, it unwillingly revealed its powerful divine ability.

The monochrome divine marks actually separated from its body and materialized as a spiritual tiger in the sky. The thunderous roar shook the very space itself! The spiritual tiger completely made out of the concentration of divine radiance soared into the sky and pounced towards the Tetramutant that was floating in midair.

Too fast! That was practically lightning incarnate!

“Pfff!”

The blood splashed everywhere. The spiritual tiger had tore the Tetramutant to shreds. The rain of blood sprinkled down from the sky. The scene was somewhat disturbing. That was too cruel. The mutated sacred beast,

Tetramutant, died with its body completely blown into smithereens.

“Roar...”

Along with a world-shaking roar, the spiritual tiger turned back into the divine marks and returned to the White Tiger’s body.

Specks of light floated up, that was the Tetramutant’s essence. It was swallowed up by the White Tiger. This beast king battle had concluded at this point.

The audience was in absolute silence. The power of the White Tiger was beyond everyone’s expectation!

“Was that External Incarnation?” At last, someone raised the doubt in their heart with cracked voice.

“That is a divine ability more formidable than the External Incarnation!”

All the audience suddenly flared up.

The following beast king battles were just as marvelous.

Dugu Jianmo’s Crimson Dragon King was raised in the depths of the south all along. It was very wild and brutal. It spent the entire day fighting at close quarters with the primal beasts in the mountains. The murderous aura on its body was even heavier than that of the murderer. It killed its opponent with absolute dominance and advanced to the next round smoothly.

Although the Solitary clan seemed to be in a decline, and there was hardly a single shadow to be seen in the ancient castle all year long, nobody dared to make their move against the Crimson Dragon King. People would never forget that spectacular scene from ten years ago; when a group of practitioners carrying broadswords on their back returned while flying in the sky...

In the south, nobody dared to provoke this low-profile family.

Goldie, the descendant of the deity, also defeated its opponent with absolute superiority and advanced to the next round smoothly. This result was not unexpected for Xiao Chen. One must know that this golden ape could resist Keke’s rainbow-colored divine radiance. If it couldn’t rise above the others, then that sacred beast could be rated as S-rank.

They only arranged one or two battles per day for the second round of the grand battle. It drew a lot of attention, especially the last two battles. That was because the leading roles from these two battles had an extremely big background!

The first battle was between the Winged Dragon King and Peacock King. The other battle was between Tenax and Tyrant Dragon King.

When he saw that silver-colored Winged Dragon King, Xiao Chen immediately recalled that beautiful female Psychic, Lanyu. At that time, on the dragon island, the Winged Dragon King had followed her. Could it be that she had arrived at the Celestial City?

Xiao Chen wanted to go and pay a visit to the Winged Dragon King's owner, but when he asked which VIP lounge was the owner located at, he found that the Winged Dragon King had forfeited the match and had already left the Celestial City with its mysterious owner.

This news made a lot of people disappointed. After all, the appearance of the Dragon Kings was this competition biggest highlight.

According to the grapevines, the Winged Dragon King's owner had come across some trouble, that's why they left in a hurry. There's another news saying that, the Peacock King was the descendant of the deity, and that Winged Dragon King's owner didn't want their baby to take a risk, that's why they forfeited.

Only the Peacock King was left on the warbeast stage. It was as beautiful as a multicolored divine flower in full bloom. Its garish divine feathers were glittering with dream-like radiance. With its opponent forfeiting the match, it moved on to the next round smoothly.

Xiao Chen received the news from Fairysky. The elder in their family had once went to the historical remains and personally saw the descendants of the deities. One of them was indeed a multicolored Peacock King.

The rumor was true, the Peacock King on the stage was really the descendant of the deity.

Without a doubt, the gorgeous Peacock King possessed unimaginable strength. At the very least, it shouldn't be weaker than Goldie. Perhaps, it might

even be capable of shaking off Keke.

The last battle of the second round was between Tenax and the Tyrant Dragon King.

Xiao Chen was definitely not unfamiliar with this Tyrant Dragon King. That was the offspring of the Eight-Clawed Tyrant Dragon, and he had once refined one of the Tyrant Dragon egg. This could be some kind of karma.

A disappointing event happened again. The Tyrant Dragon King had withdraw from the battle. It was taken by its owner away from the warbeast castle. Tenax advanced to the next round without a battle. 4

Xiao Chen felt extremely baffled, why did two Dragon Kings forfeit the match? Was it because they were really worried that the opponent was stronger? He was in doubt, could it be that something was about to happen and caused the owner of the Dragon Kings to retreat?

And everyone finally exploded at this time, two Dragon Kings forfeited without cause or reason, this was really too disappointing. Everyone very much wanted to see the battle of the Dragon Kings.

Golden Lion King, Crimson Dragon King, White Tiger, Goldie, Peacock King, and Tenax. These six young sacred beasts moved on to the next round that was about to begin in the next few days. This was the final match to decide for the beast king once and for all.

Finally, the warbeast tournament was entering its final stage. The decisive battle was quickly approaching. The next battle was a chaotic warfare between six sacred beasts. The last one standing would be the king. They would become the supreme king of the warbeast tournament this year, the true king among the kings.

CHAPTER 192 – FIVE-COLORED DIVINE RADIANCE

The Golden Lion King, Crimson Dragon King, White Tiger, Goldie, Peacock King, and Tenax. These six young sacred beasts didn't sustain serious injury in the second round. They could participate in the final showdown without the need of recuperation.

This night, every restaurant in the Celestial City was in a full house. Everyone was incomparably expectant for the final round tomorrow.

A few big casinos even started to take bets on which young sacred beasts would ultimately win. Countless people took part in the betting, with as little as a few silver coins, up to as many as thousand gold coins. This night was very noisy and lively.

Everywhere in the city, including the teahouse and the pub, everyone was talking about the six sacred beasts. Even the common people who didn't have money to go and witness the battle in the warbeast castle personally were having a heated debate. Because, the marketing campaign of the warbeast castle was really too hot. After every battle, they would send a specialist to go and talk about the brilliant process of the battles everywhere in the city.

At present, the Celestial City had practically turned into a warbeast city. Many people were analyzing the past battles of the sacred beasts to speculate which one of them would remain standing in the end. All kinds of analysis and assessment rushed forth like a tide and spread like wildfire.

For this reason, some people specifically written down the details. Xiao Chen had received one and read through it seriously. He felt that the commentary was spot on.

The Golden Lion King had a powerful body and possessed tyrannical strength. Its speed was also beyond compare. It was like a streak of golden light and moved in a crisscrossed pattern, it was hard for its opponent to catch its trails. What's more scarier was that, it possessed an eye of destruction. The instant that vertical eye opened, the bloody light could even penetrate the Black Tortoise, who was reputed for its defense. The Golden Lion King could be said to

be unparalleled!

The most terrifying part was that, it had three heads so there was a total of three vertical eyes. Now, it had only opened one of its vertical eyes. Nobody knew how much power was accumulated in the other two vertical eyes, and how terrifying would it be if they were opened! It could even be said to be the greatest variables in this battle! It made everyone unable to guess how powerful the Golden Lion King really was. It had unknowingly become the favorite among the six sacred beasts.

Crimson Dragon King. Its brutality was obvious to all. Every time it entered the stage, it would certainly kill its opponent without showing any mercy. People had even started to call it the Bloody Dragon King. It was a good fit, due to its scales that were glittering with red light, as well as its soaring murderous aura.

Dragons were originally the most powerful race in itself. This being the case, it was easy to become king at the juvenile stage. The Crimson Dragon King naturally had enough strength to look down on its peers. With the Dragon Martial Skills and the perfect combination of the dragon-specific divine spell, it was practically unstoppable.

The White Tiger looked mediocre, but it was actually out of the ordinary. It practiced the External Incarnation divine ability, and was also proficient in the ancient martial skill. The White Tiger was a very terrifying little beast king, especially the divine marks covering its body. The marks contained the ultimate truth. Nobody knew how many unknown divine abilities it had mastered. Many people speculated that, the External Incarnation was absolutely not the only divine ability it knew, it should have some even more terrifying abilities in its arsenal.

Goldie and the Peacock King; these two young sacred beasts possessed the bloodline of the deities. They were very gifted and people claimed they could become existences that surpassed the deities in the future. There was no need to doubt their power. Moreover, not only did they inherit the rare bloodline from their ancestors, they also inherited many forbidden techniques. This was their strongest point. It was hard to speculate what power level could these young sacred beasts reach in the future.

Tenax, a powerful and proud Dragon King, that was everyone's first impression. Its martial skill was outstanding, its nature was tenacious, and it possessed unlimited potential. The Dragon Countersteps was only the tip of the iceberg. If they really let this little Dragon King went crazy and exerted all of its power, maybe even the Golden Lion King wouldn't necessary be able to resist this battle freak with all of its vertical eyes opened! It could be said that the analyzers had very high evaluation of Tenax. It was the most promising ones among the six sacred beasts.

Every warbeast castle, red light district, restaurant, and casino was extremely noisy even past the midnight.

This night, many people had a hard time falling asleep.

Early morning, the sun rose from the East.

The morning sun had dyed the Celestial City golden yellow. That was the indication that this would be a fine sunny day.

Early morning, Xiao Chen personally prepared Tenax's war meal. Ginseng King skewers, reishi mushroom congee, cinnabar juice, ginseng fruit cake... it was extremely luxurious. If people knew there was this kind of menu, they would literally drop their jaws.

This was enough to satisfy Tenax's palate.

Naturally, Keke couldn't be left out of such a sumptuous war meal. The little thing had crouched at the kitchen to keep watch for quite a while already. Its saliva was overflowing, and its big eyes that was originally brimming with cleverness were now very straightforward.

The final round was imminent, but Tenax was very calm. The energy was circulating on its jade-like draconic body, it had already adjusted its condition to the peak stage.

The sunshine had sprinkled over the Celestial City. The sun was already hanging high in the sky.

Xiao Chen walked towards the warbeast castle with Tenax and Keke.

Today, the decisive battle would take place at the Zhuge family's Amber

Warbeast Castle. They were going to open the sacred beast stage that was lying unused for twenty years. That was a stage specifically prepared for fully grown sacred beasts!

Under ordinary circumstances, it was very unlikely for the warbeast castle to stage a battle between fully grown sacred beasts. No matter how expensive was the tickets sold for, it was not worth it. That was because the loss from the fall of a single fully grown sacred beast was too great. No matter how powerful the warbeast castle was, they were unable to bear this kind of loss.

One must know that a fully grown sacred beast was at least as powerful as Nirvana realm. That kind of expert was really too rare. Their existences were the best deterrence to prevent war! Only some extremely ancient and powerful families would possess at least one or two of such sacred beasts.

Moreover, after a sacred beast was fully grown, it was impossible for them to consider to be in a different tribe. At that time, they would already be treated as a god in one's family. It was simply impossible for them to get enslaved. In fact, a fully grown sacred beast could already transform into human. At that time, they would be enticed by ancient aristocratic families by any means possible to become a member of their family. In regards to this, they would not even hesitate to connect by marriage!

The sacred beast stage was nothing more than a symbol, there's no way it could function as intended.

Rather than saying it was a warbeast stage, the sacred beast stage was more like a public square. It was as wide as five hundred meter square. The surface area was extremely wide. There was more than enough room for the six young sacred beasts to fight fiercely.

There was no seats around the sacred beast stage. In fact, if they really wanted to use this warbeast stage, then that would inevitably be an extremely dangerous battle. It was impossible to let the audience stay in the surroundings.

The Amber Warbeast Castle connected many rooms together. Apart from the VIP lounge, they used their resources to lay out many huge crystal screens in the room. They were going to broadcast the competition at real time.

It was a full house!

Today, the Amber Warbeast Castle was incredibly lively!

Every room was packed with people. There were fifty thousand people who bought the tickets to come and watch the battle.

The outside of the warbeast castle was surrounded by countless people. The figure of people could be seen everywhere in the city. Even if the tickets had already sold out, many people were also unwilling to leave. They wanted to stay at this place to listen the latest report at any time.

Naturally, apart from the Amber Warbeast Castle, every casino was also surrounded by so many people that not even one drop of water could trickle through.

At the present time, the win/loss ratio of the six sacred beasts was almost the same. That was because they were really unable to distinguish which one was stronger and which one was weaker. Of course, if they really counted the statistics, the ratio of the Golden Lion King was slightly higher. Naturally, it was only that little bit.

Xiao Chen was sitting in the VIP lounge and calmly waited for Tenax and the rest to appear on stage. Beside him, Keke was tweaking its ears and scratching its cheeks. It was as restless as a little monkey. It was unable to sit down at this moment. That was because it was really too unwilling. It really wanted to go down there and personally fight with those few young sacred beasts.

Xiao Chen was really scared that it would cause some mishaps. This snow-white little critter really gave people too much to worry about. He used the mysterious iron chain that was used to lock up the white tortoise to bind Keke's little beast paw. Then he locked up the other side of the iron chain on his wrist to secure Keke at his side.

"Squeak! Squeak!!" Keke waved its other hairy beast paw and protested strongly with its glittering big eyes.

However, Xiao Chen just stuffed a cinnabar fruit into its mouth, then he ignored it.

The ginormous sacred beast stage was exceptionally quiet. Along with the rumbling sound, six gigantic iron gates were opened, and the six young sacred

beasts came out from six different buildings as they walked towards the warbeast stage simultaneously.

The silence was oppressive!

During this split second, a bloodthirsty murderous aura had already spread all over the warbeast stage. The six young sacred beasts had already adjusted their battle condition to the peak optimum state.

The Lion King flickering with gold light, the Crimson Dragon King with soaring bloody light, the Peacock King radiating with multicolored divine radiance... each sacred beast was standing at six different positions and appeared very imposing!

They were having a silent confrontation. Without a doubt, the first to move would turn into everyone's target.

Tenax was the very first to move. It ran towards the center of the stage with fearlessness. In its heart, victory or defeat was not at all important. What's important was to challenge powerful enemies, to transcend its own limit, and to undergo a true dragon evolution.

That's right, as far as Tenax was concerned, losing was nothing. It was originally a weak little dragon to begin with. When it was on the dragon island, it couldn't even win against an ordinary little dragon. It advanced one step at a time, going through one life or death battle after another, getting stronger each time and never shrank back. The Tenax today only existed because of that.

The Crimson Dragon King also moved. It was the king of dragons, how could it not understand Tenax's line of thoughts. It had already recognized Tenax as the miserable little dragon it defeated in the olden days. How could it be willing to fall behind the others? It was the natural-born king of dragons. To challenge the extreme boundary was an inherent instinct. Its battle intent was unbounded.

If the two Dragon Kings were humans, they could be said to be very prideful. Their action immediately roused up the other four sacred beasts and caused them to run towards the center of the stage at the same time. They were the strongest of their own kind, how could they fall behind the others?

As they were moving forward, a subtle change took place.

Goldie and the Peacock King slowly drew close to one another. This was within

everyone's expectation. They were the descendant of the deities and had once grew up together, so teaming up at this moment was inevitable.

The Golden Lion King looked at them coldly, then it looked at Tenax and the Crimson Dragon King. The White Tiger was like an ancient well with no ripples as it silently swept its eyes over all directions.

What was most unexpected was that, the two Dragon Kings didn't team up. On the contrary, the hostility between them was even deeper compared to the other sacred beasts. Their proud nature and cruel fate made it so that it was impossible for them to team up.

Green, yellow, red, black, and white; these five colors radiated from the Peacock King's entire body as it flew towards the sky. It remained motionless in the sky above Goldie.

The Golden Lion King was the most intensive. With a world-shaking lion roar, its entire body glinted with dazzling golden radiance as it started to dash. After that, it actually soared into the sky and pounced towards the Peacock King.

It was very astonishing!

The Golden Lion King could actually run in the sky, it was actually capable of defying gravity. The Lion King was stronger than they originally expected. The golden light illuminated the sky like a raging conflagration. With lightning fast speed, the Lion King tried to rip the Peacock King apart with its lion claws. The energy fluctuated violently.

"Swish!"

A streak of green light was launched downwards. The Peacock King had brushed off the extremely bold Lion King. Then it calmly spread its wings and soared higher into the sky.

All the spectators were very excited. Some people had already started to shout. Even the older generation figures were shocked. The might of the Lion King as it ran towards the sky. The divine light swept down by the Peacock King. They were able to see the power of the sacred beasts growing at a terrifying rate, and they recalled some of the legendary unparalleled divine abilities!

"Roar..."

The Lion King let out a roar that shook the vast sky.

The Golden Lion clearly had a killing intent. It vowed to break the Peacock King and Goldie's combination no matter what. It wanted to kill the Peacock King first thing first and was actually planning to directly open the vertical eye at the center-head!

The five-colored radiance flickered as the sky was covered by dense multicolored fog. The Peacock King could sense the danger and increased its speed to the limit. Flapping its pair of wings, one bright light after another surged towards the Lion King like a storm. It wanted to crush the Lion King. The space itself seemed to be trembling!

No matter how fast was the multicolored energy wave, it was still slower than the speed of the Lion King opening its eye. That terrifying vertical eye had finally been opened! A bloody light burst out and directly swept towards the Peacock King!

"Ah...!"

"Light of Destruction!"

"It's over!"

Many people cried out unconsciously.

Who was capable of blocking this powerful attack from the Golden Lion King? The older generation experts aside, even the Historia level warriors had reached the conclusion that they wouldn't be able to get out of this attack unscathed!

However, beyond everyone's expectation.

"Swish! Swish! Swish! Swish! Swish!"

Green, yellow, red, black, and white; these five colors radiated and annihilated everything in its path as they fell downwards! The multicolored radiance actually deflected the bloody light and made the terrifying light of destruction turn towards the empty space.

This was undoubtedly an extremely sensational scene. The light of destruction that was claimed to be unstoppable was actually fended off by the Peacock King. It immediately caused every spectators to cry out in surprise!

“No way!”

“Too inconceivable!”

“Just what was that multicolored divine radiance?”

“Could that be the deity’s forbidden divine ability?”

.....

All the older generation figures already changed countenance. The light of destruction launched from the Lion King’s vertical eye, they had already seen it. Despite that being the legendary forbidden spell, they were not as shocked as the first time they saw it. But that multicolored divine radiance was revealed for the first time, how could they not be feverish?

That was the unparalleled divine ability of the ancient myth. It was claimed to be capable of annihilating all living things in the world!

That’s right, even Gods and Buddhas wouldn’t be able to ward it off that easily!

CHAPTER 193 – NINE LIVES, REINCARNATION!

Back in those days, when that “person” executed the five-colored divine radiance, even the Gods and Buddhas were forced to retreat. It was practically unstoppable!

It could even be said that, in this whole wide world, “he” was one of the persons you wouldn’t want to provoke the most.

As a result, when the Peacock King launched the five-colored divine radiance, everyone immediately became shaken up. Of course, the young people did not get shaken up as much as the older generations. After all, what they saw was nothing more than a powerful divine ability, and on the other hand, the elder’s train of thoughts were soaring. They had seen the roots of the problem and thought about all kinds of possibilities!

The young people were not very familiar with the ancient myths. They were practically unaware of what the five-colored divine radiance represented, nor the origin of the divine radiance.

The older generations were different. They had already guessed who was the Peacock King’s ancestor! This was such a powerful backer! It was so very horrifying just thinking about it; the person who the Peacock King and Goldie were following at present could be said to have run into a great fortune! If they treated the Peacock King and Goldie well, then in the future, they would have nothing to fear in the secular world.

All the spectators had already flared up.

The five-colored divine radiance actually resisted the Eye of Destruction!

It must be mentioned, even the elders were getting feverish. Without a doubt, with the Golden Lion King and the Peacock King’s strength, only a true expert among the elders could make them yield. It was very hard for the Historia level experts to stand up against these two sacred beasts!

This match was truly worth of the name of the warbeast tournament, it really wasn’t merely hanging up false reputation to rake in the money. This match was

true to its value. Even those who were dissatisfied with the previous round had dispelled their negative thoughts.

“Kill!”

“Kill! Kill! Kill!”

.....

Within every halls, in front of each crystal screen, many people were cheering.

The glints in the Golden Lion King’s eyes were incomparably cold. It stood in the sky calmly and fixed its cold eyes on the multicolored Peacock King. Its Eye of Destruction had come across an adversary for the first time. This had never happened before. Because, its background was really too great, it was profoundly aware that its divine ability was very powerful and formidable. It was not very easy to run into an adversary among its peers!

“Howl...!”

The Lion King’s roar shook the sky. It opened that vertical eye again as a streak of bloody light was launched towards the Peacock King.

“Swish!”

The five-colored divine radiance swept downwards. Divine radiance of five different colors glinted as it brushed off the light of destruction. Moreover, the divine radiance shook repeatedly as the Peacock King began its counterattack.

Under the dazzling rays of light, few consecutive five-colored divine radiance instantly engulfed the Lion King. The Golden Lion struggled to get free violently and let out an ear-splitting furious roar as the five-colored divine radiance fluctuated unceasingly.

“The Golden Lion has been engulfed!”

“The five-colored divine radiance has restrained the Golden Lion!”

.....

When everyone was making a clamor, the Golden Lion King’s Eye of Destruction launched the bloody light beams repeatedly. It spared no effort and finally struggled free of the five-colored divine radiance.

The Peacock King was calm and cool, its brilliant wings were flickering. Although it wanted to strike back at this point, it was a little apprehensive of the Lion King's other two vertical eyes. The Lion King's eyes were ice-cold as it fell into silence. It stopped attacking and faced the Peacock King in the sky.

Meanwhile, on the ground, the White Tiger had already launched its attack. The tiger roar pierced through the skies as the divine marks all over its body started to glint. A gale was given rise in an instant and a rumbling sound reverberated as it aimed for Goldie in the front.

From a certain point of view, the Golden Lion King's killing intent was roused up as a result of the Peacock King and Goldie teaming up. It wanted to take the initiative to attack the Peacock King. And the White Tiger had the same line of thought; they must break up this combination. Therefore, it charged at Goldie without thinking twice.

The divine marks burst out with dazzling rays of light. The White Tiger executed the External Incarnation immediately. The terrifying vibe of death spread out and aimed at Goldie's chest.

All the spectators cried out in surprise. The White Tiger used the External Incarnation at the start. That means it definitely had something else up its sleeve. It definitely had an even more terrifying divine ability in stock.

Goldie was very calm. It waved its palm to create a dazzling gold radiance, which instantly shielded in front of its body and blocked the External Incarnation. Moreover, the rays of light became even more brilliant. It wanted to destroy the External Incarnation.

"The deity's great divine ability?"

"Such a powerful ray of light!"

.....

This bout was very intense. The rays of light from the External Incarnation was very dazzling as it repeatedly collided with the golden light screen. However, it moved back in the end with no result to show. Goldie didn't back down 1, the gold radiance enveloped from all directions like a water screen with no holes.

"Rips!"

The White Tiger was sent flying away as the divine marks flickered. Although it had neutralized Goldie's attack, it was obvious that the White Tiger was in a disadvantageous position.

Goldie was originally very violent. It had showed its true nature when it was confrontating Keke before. Now that it had become dominant, it became even more vicious. It crossed the space in a split second and appeared in a different location.

"Rips! Rips!"

Another light screen was launched at the White Tiger. The light was actually mixed together with a lightning about the thickness of nine water jars. This was absolutely not an ordinary lightning. Within the golden lightning, there was a hint of azure. That was clearly the Heavenly Lightning!

"KA-BOOM!!"

The White Tiger dodged just in the nick of time. However, it was still sent flipping over by the aftermath, making it look very pitiful.

"Howl..."

The tiger's roar shook the entire warbeast stage. One character after another appeared on the White Tiger's body. Characters that seemed like black metals appeared in thin air. The White Tiger was surrounded by materialized ancient characters. Those divine marks on its body completely materialized and rippled with an extremely powerful energy fluctuation.

At this moment, the White Tiger's body was as bright as jade, no trace of black lines could be found on its body. All the characters were just like ancient sacred writings as they spread all around the White Tiger, flickering with black radiance.

Goldie remained unmoved. With a wave of its hand, nine heavenly lightnings fell toward the White Tiger.

This time however, the lightnings disappeared without making any sound. The black characters in the White Tiger's surroundings were not at all dazzling. They only flashed a few times and all the lightnings were swallowed up. 2

Everyone could see it vaguely; just now, in the black character's surroundings,

there were small cracks in the space. The lightnings had charged into an unknown space!

Goldie became furious and closed the distance between them. As the gold light and lightning swept over, the energy waves rolled over and over for a moment. The White Tiger was quickly submerged by the violent waves of energy. However, when it finally calmed down, they found that the White Tiger was unscathed. The black characters floating all around it had neutralized the energy waves. Goldie didn't manage to injure it the slightest fraction.

The White Tiger moved its sleek body and got up on its hind legs 3. It walked towards Goldie one step at a time.

“It was transmitted to an alternate space.”

“The White Tiger's word magic opened many tiny cracks in the space and sent all the energy waves into an unknown space.”

.....

All the older generation experts were emotionally moved. It was yet another very rarely seen and formidable divine ability. It must be mentioned that none of these few young sacred beasts were of common birth.

The White Tiger could actually rip the space apart. With this kind of materialized black characters around its body, it was tantamount to gaining an invincible position!

Goldie did not feel nervous as the White Tiger approached. It was waiting calmly.

The White Tiger let out a long roar and pounced over. The ancient martial skill was unconditionally its key strength. It was the most appropriate skill for close-quarter combat.

Goldie's movements were nimble and quick. While facing the White Tiger's attack, it actually swept its leg across like a human. After that, it jumped high into the air and looked downward. The afterimage of its leg actually passed through the black characters and narrowly touched the White Tiger's body, which forced the White Tiger to fall back.

Everyone couldn't help but gasp in surprise. Goldie was also proficient in ancient martial skills. And apparently, it was not the least bit weaker than the White Tiger's. Moreover, its physical body could pass through the black characters. This definitely brought a huge pressure to the White Tiger.

But generally speaking, the black characters were inseparably close to the White Tiger. For Goldie to break through, it was very difficult. In addition to that, the White Tiger was very proficient in the ancient martial skills, it obviously had the upper hand.

“Swish! Swish! Swish!”

Two young sacred beasts moved with lightning speed and clashed with their physical bodies. Goldie didn't use any bizarre divine ability.

“Bang! Bang! Bang!”

When their bodies came into contact, the loud rumble sounded like two huge mountains crashing together. All the spectators were feeling startled. Perhaps even the Historia level expert wouldn't be able to bear this much power.

The White Tiger gradually gained the upper hand. After all, it had sacred writings capable of neutralizing all energy attacks. However, just at this time, Goldie's body suddenly emitted rays of light as it divided into three within a split second, and then from three to nine. 4

Nine streaks of gold light appeared on the stage as the White Tiger was surrounded by nine Goldie.

“Bang! Bang! Bang!”

When nine Goldie clashed with the White Tiger, the impact from the collisions was real. It caused the White Tiger to act with confusion.

All the spectators was in an uproar. This was obviously not External Incarnation. This was the legendary Shadow Partners. It was a great divine ability capable of turning the shadows into a real body. When trained to the peak stage, not only could the clones reach the same level of strength as the real body, it was possible to reincarnate nine times. Each body was equivalent to one life!

This was a freakish S-Rank divine ability! Once mastered, it was equivalent to

nine lives. If facing experts of the same level, the result was as one could well imagine...

“Freak!”

“This is unimaginable. All of these sacred beasts are S-ranked! It is rare to encounter just one in a lifetime, just getting one of them would be more than sufficient!”

.....

Due to this, all the spectators sighed with sorrow. These kind of young sacred beasts, just losing one of them would be a great loss! However, if they wanted to mature and evolve quickly, this kind of battle was the only way. That was because the essence of an ordinary beast king did not have much effect on them. The sacred beasts with unlimited potential required sacrificial victims on the same level!

The more they fight, the stronger they get!

If the young sacred beasts grow up and never experienced any life or death battle, they would be the weakest among the sacred beasts.

Within the VIP lounge, beside Xiao Chen, Keke was feeling restless as it looked at the big crystal screen. It even discarded the ginseng king skewers in its paws. Oh, how it wished it could immediately rush into the warbeast stage.

“Calm down. Don’t think about it, you must remain calm and collected...” Xiao Chen pulled the black chains firmly. He must not let the little thing get out at this time. Otherwise, god knows how much disorder it would cause in its wake.

“Squeak! Squeak!!” The little critter couldn’t remain calm and protested stubbornly. That means: “Calm and collected”? What’s that? I want to sweep the floor with the six saints!

And just at this time, Tenax and the Crimson Dragon King finally made their moves.

The battle of the Dragon Kings shook everyone to the core. They did not try out the opponents like the previous two did. They immediately faced off in a life or death battle!

Tenax executed the Dragon Countersteps at the very beginning. The powerful energy nearly caused the space to distort. The bloody light on the Crimson Dragon King's body soared towards the sky. The bloody light was driven to the sky by a pure "martial" power. The light was moving vertically and horizontally in the sky, and on the ground, making it hard for Tenax to complete the seven steps!

Two Dragon Kings had ascended from the ground and defied the gravity with their respective dragon martial skills. This was very frightening. One must know that they did not use spiritual spells like the Golden Lion King and Peacock King to fly 5. They were flying by completely relying on the ancient martial skills!

Using martial skills to fly, that was the strength only the demigods possessed. However, they were relying on the dragon martial skills to manifest their hidden potentials in advance, thus allowing them to soar at the horizon.

"Pow!"

The Crimson Dragon King harnessed power in its tail and the instant it swept past Tenax, it waved its tail over like a divine blade.

"Swish!"

The Dragon Countersteps couldn't be completed. Every time, it was only able to take up to five steps. Tenax disappeared in thin air and appeared in another location.

The Crimson Dragon King followed relentlessly. It turned its body around and rushed over immediately. Tenax broke out of its dragon martial skills and aimed for the Crimson Dragon King's chest with its dragon claw, while the dragon horns were swept toward the neck.

"Bang! Bang!"

The two Dragon Kings clashed fiercely for a few times in the sky. They were so fast that the older generation figures were a little dazzled. After that, they separated in an instant and appeared in different directions.

The dragon blood splashed everywhere as wounds appeared on the body of the two Dragon Kings.

This was a life or death battle without any fancy moves! It was a true test of strength.

“Swish! Swish!”

As the two Dragon Kings glided in the sky, they seemed as if they were passing through empty space and constantly changed from one direction to another direction. People were unable to imagine how did they accomplish such a feat.

Xiao Chen felt very shocked. Tenax’s growth was extremely fast. It was getting more and more proficient with the dragon martial skills. How could people guard against such a martial art? The only thing it lacked at the moment was raw power. If it had enough power, it could attain an invincible position.

This life or death confrontation made every spectator in front of the crystal screen very excited. The dragons were truly worthy to be called the strongest race. The battle of the Dragon Kings produced a change in everyone’s heart. Even though the two Dragon Kings hadn’t revealed their divine abilities, just this sky battle was enough to prove their formidability. If they revealed the dragon specific divine ability, then everyone would certainly become all the more excited.

“Roar!!!”

Not far away, a lion roar reverberated. The Golden Lion King and Peacock King broke the silence as they resumed their battle.

Something unexpected happened at this time, the Golden Lion King opened its second vertical eye. The black light instantly became the only thing in this region!

“Oh my god, it’s the Revolver!”

“It’s the Eye of Reincarnation!”

“Quick, look! It opened the gate to hell. It wants to send its opponent back to the cycle of life!”

.....

The Golden Lion King’s power was beyond everyone’s estimation. One eye represented destruction, one eye represented reincarnation, it was capable of annihilating any enemy the moment it opened the vertical eyes!

Within the VIP lounge, Keke was unable to sit calmly anymore. It exerted all of its strength to shake Xiao Chen's arm.

"This won't work, stay calm, stay collected..."

"Whoosh!"

This time, the snow-white little critter was very blunt. It didn't listen to Xiao Chen's "nagging" anymore and immediately disappeared in thin air. 6

Xiao Chen was gobsmacked, since when did Keke come to possess this kind of divine ability? He actually didn't know what kind of spiritual spell did the little thing use. It actually disappeared in thin air just like this.

"Oh no!" He quickly looked towards the big screen, to find if the little critter had appeared on the stage.

CHAPTER 194 – KEKE’S DEBUT!

The six sacred beasts had revealed their divine abilities respectively. The match was exciting and nerve-wracking, even the older generation figures were feeling thrilled. Everyone was incomparably excited.

Just at this time, the snow-white little critter that was locked up at Xiao Chen’s side finally couldn’t bear it anymore and disappeared in thin air just like this. Needless to think, he already knew what it was going to do.

Naturally, nobody would notice a snow-white little critter currently wandering around in the warbeast castle. That was because the warbeast tournament was at its apex, the Golden Lion King had opened the Eye of Reincarnation!

The terrifying black light had become the only thing in the surroundings! All the colors had been erased, even the sun in the sky seemed to have become dull in color.

“Wuu... Wuu...” And there were actually the whistle of the ghosts.

“Boom!”

Suddenly, the heaven and earth shook, as if landslide and tsunami just broke out. The energy billows surged forward in a frenzy.

Just at this time, the black light tore the space apart and a huge gate opened widely. An extremely sinister tunnel had abruptly appeared in the sky.

After a short period of deathly silence, a rumbling sound suddenly transmitted from the gigantic black hole, as if an ancient iron door was being pushed open.

“Clink! Clink! Clink!”

The jingling sound of iron chains transmitted outwards. It sounded very eerie, like the evil spirit from the nether world wanted to come out to reap people’s lives.

“Oh my god, it’s really the underworld gate!”

“The gate to the nether world has been opened!”

“That terrifying power actually sucked the opponent into the genesis!”

.....

Everyone was very shocked, even the older generation figures were no exception. The Golden Lion King made everyone feel terrified. A young sacred beast really shouldn't have been able to manifest such a divine ability.

Some of the elders, who were over hundred years old, recalled some legends and shivered in fear. However, they were a little confused; Destruction and Reincarnation, how did the Golden Lion King come to possess these two completely opposite forbidden divine abilities? They were unable to comprehend, it was unimaginable. The speculators felt a chill down their spine.

The multicolored Peacock King let out a long cry. It was radiating with garish light and attempted to fly far away.

However, the Golden Lion King's second vertical eye was really too frightening. The Gate of Genesis had been opened successfully; the rumbling sound of the underworld gate as it was pushed open, and the jingling sound of the iron chain, they carried an extremely terrifying vibe as the black fog rolled over and over. The Peacock King was pulled into the black hole just like this.

The resplendent radiance flashed within the black fog. The five-colored divine radiance that was claimed to be capable of annihilating everything shook repeatedly as it resisted the pulling force of the Genesis.

This was an extremely nerve-wracking moment. Every audience in front of the big crystal screen held their breath. Their mind seemed to have been sucked into the battlefield and followed the Peacock King as it was sucked into the Genesis.

Back in those days, when that "person" from the distant past executed the five-colored divine radiance, even the Gods and Buddhas were forced to retreat. It couldn't be stopped, it couldn't be blocked, it was practically unstoppable!

There was no worthy adversary for "him" in the heaven and earth.

It could be said that the five-colored divine radiance was an unparalleled divine ability. However, the little Peacock King at present was too young after all. Although the five-colored divine radiance was some kind of forbidden divine ability, it was still far from its peak state. It was impossible for the Peacock King to annihilate everything like that "guy" did in the distant past.

One must know that the force it was confronting now was the power of the underworld. This was already no longer the power of the Lion King alone. The Golden Lion used the Eye of Reincarnation to open the underworld gate, the power behind this came from the nether world.

The brilliant rays gradually became dimmer as the underworld gate was closing slowly. That eerie black hole was getting smaller over time and was about to completely disappear.

At this moment, everyone felt a chill down their spine. Many of the elders were taking deep breaths.

This Golden Lion King was definitely not someone at the level of Historia could handle! It was too powerful! This was a sacred beast king that could make people shiver just at the thought of it. If it could mature smoothly, it could reach an unimaginable height.

“Quick, utilize every resource at once, find out all the inside information regarding this Golden Lion no matter what!”

“Go and find out who is the owner of the Lion King!”

“No matter the cost, scoop out every nook and cranny, you must dig out the most valuable information for me!”

.....

In every VIP lounge, many people were giving out similar commands.

And even more were feeling regretful, did the Peacock King really die just like this? It was forced into the Genesis by the Golden Lion King, this was a great loss that made everyone heave a sigh.

Many of the elders felt pained, if they could let the little Peacock King grow up smoothly, perhaps the unparalleled five-colored divine radiance of the distant past could make a reappearance again. To die in a battle like this was really a pity!

The power of the Genesis was disappearing as the sunshine sprinkled down. The underworld gate in the sky was about to be completely shut. The black hole was getting smaller and smaller. In the end, only a black dot was left behind as it

was going to disappear completely.

However, just at this time, a green light was launched from that black dot. Soon after, the ripple-like fluctuation spread out in the sky. The underworld gate that was about to disappear actually started to rumble abruptly as a streak of green light rushed out without resistance!

The underworld gate that had turned into a black dot was forced open in that very instant.

The glaring green light illuminated the surroundings. After breaking free from the power of the Genesis, the Peacock King was blossoming with great number of multicolored radiance. One after another, the colorful radiance were launched downwards from all directions.

Along with the long cry of the Peacock, the heaven and earth suddenly brightened up as if the clouds had been pushed aside. The multicolored Peacock King actually rushed out from the Genesis, it broke free from the underworld gate and returned to this world.

Its tail feathers had already been unfolded. The bright and beautiful colors made everything that was “beautiful” in this world to lose their splendor. And among the unfolded tail feathers, there was a green feather that was especially eye-catching.

Nearly half of the green radiance from the Peacock King was emitted by that green feather. The three inches long green feather was like a holy sword; glorious and overflowing with mighty power. The might from the light alone was enough to make people unable to breathe.

“The Primal Green Feathers of the Five-colored divine feathers!”

“This is... impossible!”

“Didn’t this belong to that “guy” back in those days?”

The elders already didn’t care about their status. The cries of shock could be heard from many VIP lounges.

Back in those days, that “person” was able to annihilate all living things with the five-colored divine radiance. The reason he was unstoppable was not only

because of this, there was something else. That was because he possessed the Divine Feathers of Five Phases. Those five feathers could destroy everything in “his” path as if they were sacred swords.

The Primal Green Feather had cut off the power of the Genesis and allowed the Peacock King to break free from the restrain.

It was as if the multicolored Peacock King had been reborn. Its entire body was pulsing with multicolored radiance and the colorful fog was dense. It seemed as if the graceful bearing of its ancestor in the former days had been recreated.

Nobody dared to vie for the Primal Green Feather. That was because many legends made it clear that, that “person” from the distant past should still be alive. Who would dare to lightly make a move against “his” descendant?

Looking at the green feather that was right at the center of the unfolded tail feathers, the Golden Lion King’s vertical eye was throbbing repeatedly. However, it didn’t open it in the end and started to confront the Peacock King again.

“Roar...”

The Golden Lion King faced upwards and let out a roar. Its voice rolled on in the vast sky like the sudden clap of thunder. It was in its nature to be dominant, it was the embodiment of strength. One eye represented destruction, one eye represented reincarnation, even if the Peacock King possessed the Primal Green Feather, so what? It had more than enough power to contend against the Peacock King.

Suddenly, the Lion King transformed into a streak of gold light and threw itself towards the ground with unspeakable speed. It actually changed target and went for Goldie.

Its primary goal was to break up this team to begin with. The Peacock King at present was not easy to kill, so it changed its target and wanted to kill Goldie while it was off guard.

It was already too late even if the Peacock King wanted to block the Lion King’s path. Even if the five-colored divine radiance was the quickest under the heaven, the Golden Lion’s speed was also at the same level. Since it moved first, it would be very hard for the Peacock King to catch up to it now.

At this moment, Goldie's Shadow Partners had transformed into nine streaks of light and attacked the White Tiger from all around. From time to time, they would break into the ancient characters, giving the White Tiger quite a big pressure.

Facing the Lion King that arrived abruptly, Goldie was caught unprepared. It already saw the opponent opening its second vertical eye. The power of the Genesis was coming down from all directions.

Even if it had nine bodies and nine lives, it wouldn't be able to escape unscathed either, since it was within the range of attack.

The White Tiger was equally furious. The power of the Genesis also enveloped it. As the world was flooded by the black light, the underworld gate opened in the sky above them.

Aside from that, another little critter was exceptionally resentful. That was precisely Keke. It ran around in big circles outside the arena and when it finally slipped onto the stage, it was caught up in the Lion King's attack. And it just happened to be at the edge of the black light. The powerful force nearly sucked it up in an instant.

"Squeak!" The snow-white little critter was extremely resentful. It panted with rage and shouted at the Golden Lion King in the sky. All the while brushing away the black light nearby without going through extra trouble.

In the VIP lounge, Xiao Chen felt a pang of headache as he leaned against the rattan chair. He was slowly kneading his temples with both hands. This little thing still entered the stage in the end.

However, its appearance right now was a little too strange. It was no longer snow-white in appearance, it looked just like a golden little monkey. Looking carefully, it was precisely a golden little monkey. It was originally able to stand on two feet like the humans to begin with. But now, not only did it put on the monkey's fur, it was even wearing clothes and looked out of place.

This was the result of Keke making a big round outside the arena. Xiao Chen didn't want to let it enter the stage, the little critter also understood that he didn't want to get into trouble. Sometimes, Keke was muddle-headed, but sometimes, it was also very quick-witted.

It was not uncommon for warbeast to die in the warbeast castle everyday. The fur of the valuable breeds would be handled appropriately and were sold to the North. Keke ran around the warbeast castle and picked up the fur of a golden monkey. Then it casually draped the fur over its body to serve as a disguise. What made people more speechless was that, it even went to a certain VIP lounge to “borrow” the clothes of a certain young master to put it on itself to prevent the animal skin from dropping off.

With such a disguise, and the way it was walking upright, any person would actually think it was nothing more than a one foot tall golden monkey. If it was not because Xiao Chen was all too familiar with it and was able to recognize it at first glance from its pair of quick-witted eyes, he might even have been fooled.

In every VIP lounge, in front of all the big crystal screens, every spectator were so shocked that their jaws dropped. Where did the little monkey come from? Wasn't there only six sacred beasts? Why did it suddenly become seven?

“Where did the little monkey come from?”

“Illusion, that must be an illusion!”

“No way, I must be getting blurry-eyed. Why are there seven little beasts?”

.....

At this time, the underworld gate had opened again. It was about to engulf Goldie and the White Tiger. The two beasts were no longer fighting and revealed their respective divine abilities to resist that terrifying power of darkness. If they were sucked into the Genesis, this life would be done for. How could the proud and arrogant them be willing to resign themselves to this kind of fate? Especially when the opponent made a sneak attack on them.

The black fog had engulfed the both of them, and the sound of the iron chains gradually became clearer, but the two beasts were sparing no effort to struggle. The resplendent rays of light had illuminated the darkness. Goldie launched one gold-qi after another. At the same time, the characters floating around the White Tiger also started to tremble and gave off terrifying energy fluctuation.

And just at this time, the Golden Lion King had already landed on the ground. As it got closer, the power of the Genesis was getting stronger. It wanted to

force the two beasts into the Genesis no matter what.

However, just at this time, Keke finally made its move. It transformed into a streak of gold light and rushed exactly in front of where the Golden Lion landed. Then, it disappeared in thin air and by the time it reappeared, it was firmly sitting on the back of the Lion King. It was even grabbing the gold mane of the Lion King angrily.

In every VIP lounge, it was as if the sound of jaws dropping onto the ground was transmitted outwards.

Almost every spectator were dumbstruck. Where did this little monkey come from? How did it suddenly ride on the back of the Golden Lion King?

This was too crazy!

Everyone simply couldn't believe their eyes. Just how did this seventh little beast sneak onto the stage? And it actually dared to make a move against the Lion King?!

Everyone was excessively shocked.

The Golden Lion King was unexpectedly disturbed, so it instantly closed its Eye of Reincarnation in shock. Following closely, its entire body was glinting with dazzling gold radiance as it burst forth with glaring divine flame. It wanted to throw Keke off of its back.

However, just at this time, everyone had seen it. The instant the little critter was tossed, it grabbed the mane of the Golden Lion and threw it up as if it was tossing a sack onto its back. The little critter itself landed on its original position agilely. It had a handful of golden mane in both of its paws.

It caused everyone in front of the big crystal screen completely flabbergasted!

It actually tossed the Golden Lion King?! If not for the handful of mane in its paws, everyone simply wouldn't dare to believe their eyes at all.

The extremely daring little critter gave everyone an unrealistic feeling. It caused everyone to feel a little numb in the head.

"I didn't drink that much today, how come I am feeling a little dizzy."

"I... am also feeling my head spinning."

“I must be seeing things just now, I must be daydreaming.” While this guy was speaking to himself, he even pinched his cheek. As a result, he immediately shouted in pain.

“It’s a hallucination. Damn it! Why did the illusion appear again?”

.....

On the warbeast stage, Keke stood on the stage and proudly puffed up its chest.

“Squeak! Squeak!!”

After that, it mumbled to itself angrily.

The voice that sounded like an infant learning how to speak clearly transmitted to everyone’s ears through the big crystal screen.

CHAPTER 195 – ONE VS FOUR!

Keke's sudden appearance caused many people in front of the crystal screens to drop their jaws. The little critter had made everyone stupefied.

That puerile voice was so very clear, and reminded everyone that it was not an illusion.

“Oh my god, that is not an illusion.”

“What's going on? Where did the seventh little beast come from? Could it be Goldie's monkey brother?”

“According to the grapevine, Goldie is the descendant of the deity. Could this even smaller golden monkey also be the descendant of the deity?”

.....

No matter if it was the people in the VIP lounges or the people in the general rooms, everyone directly facing the big crystal screen was getting excited. The seventh little beast had intervened in the match and made everyone feel inconceivable.

“Roar!!”

In the battlefield, after the Golden Lion King was tossed upside down, it flipped over in midair and abruptly landed on the ground. Then it faced upwards and let out a thunderous roar that caused people's eardrums to buzz. This was a disgrace as far as it was concerned. It was actually flung by a one foot long little monkey. Its dignity had taken a huge blow.

“Swish!”

The Golden Lion King opened its vertical eye at the center-head. The bloody light was launched straight at Keke as the color of the sky turned bloody red. All the colors at the direction the light of destruction was launched at, had turned dull. In front of this destructive power, nothing could stop it!

“Whoosh!”

However, out of everyone's expectation, Keke actually faded away in thin air and reappeared in another location. It dodged the light of destruction as if it was

no big deal.

Everyone couldn't help but gasp in surprise. The Peacock King barely resisted the Lion King's Eye of Destruction with the five-colored divine radiance, and yet, the little critter actually relied on speed to dodge it.

Within the VIP lounge, Xiao Chen was astonished. When Keke left earlier, he had found that the little thing's speed was exaggeratedly fast. But now, he was sure that the little thing had grasped a new divine ability. Maybe it was because it could feel Tenax's improvement, so it finally had a sense of urgency.

The Lion King's eyes were incomparably cold. In regards to it, the little thing in front of it was too hateful. So be it if the little critter just dodged its attack, but it was actually waving its little paw in a provocative manner.

"Swish!"

The Eye of Destruction opened and closed repeatedly as the bloody-qi flooded this entire space. Keke's whereabouts was completely dyed in red. The Golden Lion was calm to the point that it was scary as it continuously launched the bloody light. It attacked with nothing held back.

The snow-white little critter got furious. Although it was dressing up like a little monkey, it didn't really want to jump about like a real golden monkey. It was no longer dodging. With a light wave of its little beast paw, a golden barrier appeared in front of it. After that, it actually forged ahead at high speed among the bloody light and charged towards the Golden Lion King.

Every spectator made a huge ruckus, what was that gold light? It actually resisted the light of destruction! The layer upon layer of bloody screen fell apart in the face of the gold barrier, the light of destruction was unable to harm the little critter.

"Whoosh!"

Keke rushed right in front of the Golden Lion and quickly waved its little paw. The dazzling golden light enveloped the Lion King in a flash. Along with the rise of the dazzling rays of light, the Golden Lion was confined by the gold radiance in midair.

Keke waved its little paw with sudden force and directly tossed the Golden Lion

King away.

“Bang!”

The dust flew upwards as the gold radiance dissipated. The Golden Lion was smashed on the ground. The surface sunk and many cracks appeared around the big hole.

In front of every big water screen, it quickly turned chaotic. Almost everyone cried out in surprise.

If they say the little critter tossed the Lion King by a fluke, then this was absolutely not by a fluke. The gold radiance had resisted the light of destruction head-on and directly thrown the Lion King to the ground. This was definitely true strength.

Everyone in the Amber Warbeast Castle had flared up!

Everyone couldn't help but be shocked, they had no choice but to rise in commotion. The Golden Lion King's strength was obvious to all! The Peacock King was proficient in the legendary forbidden divine ability, and it was also in control of a Primal Divine Feather. Only with that was it able to barely resist the Lion King. And yet, Keke tossed it around like it was nothing, everyone couldn't help but be appalled.

Keke was panting with rage and mumbled to itself by squeaking twice.

Every spectator really didn't know how to express their mood anymore. They were totally speechless. It was you who fell the Golden Lion King all right? And you are actually still panting with rage... then that Lion King can just go and cry.

Out of everyone's expectation, the Golden Lion King was calm to the point of scary. It didn't let out a furious roar and only crouched in midair as it looked down at Keke coldly. It was no longer launching an attack nor was it making any more particular movements.

After the little critter mumbled to itself resentfully, it actually ignored the Lion King as it walked towards Goldie and the White Tiger.

As if the White Tiger was facing a great enemy, it jumped back and separated from Goldie as it watched the little critter attentively.

And Goldie already burst into rage. The violent Goldie divided into nine and surrounded Keke from nine directions. Goldie let out a burst of roar to express its greatest dissatisfaction towards Keke's disguise. Especially when the little critter deliberately hid six out of the seven-colored radiance just now. It was obviously pretending to use the same divine ability as itself by revealing only the gold radiance. This made Goldie extremely furious.

When everyone saw the two golden monkey facing each other, they were exceptionally shocked. That's right, they were sure that Keke was related to Goldie. They didn't expect the two of them would actually fight.

The one meter tall Goldie, and the one foot tall Keke, they were both flickering with gold radiance and appeared very magical.

"Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh!"

Nine streaks of gold light moved simultaneously and all of Goldie's shadow partners pounced toward Keke from nine different directions. They were as swift as nine lightnings.

"Swish!"

Keke was even faster as it disappeared in thin air.

After that, it instantly appeared behind one of the gold light and firmly grabbed the tail of Goldie's real body.

"Bang!"

Keke grabbed the tail of Goldie's real body and flung it away. Goldie was smashed on the ground at a distant place.

It was driven mad!

Goldie was very violent. Nine of its bodies moved simultaneously and swept towards Keke at the same time.

Even if you have nine shadow partners, there's only one true body. Keke was not afraid. With a wave of its beast paw, a resplendent ray of light appeared and cut off the nine light beams.

Goldie was so angry to the point it couldn't get any more angrier. It had once seen the little critter's trick. That was obviously the rainbow-colored radiance,

and yet, it insisted on hiding the other six colors to mimic its gold radiance. Naturally, the power did not become weaker in the slightest. Although the color had lessened, the power became more concentrated. All of them were concentrated on the gold radiance.

“Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh!”

Goldie fought as if its life depended on it. One gold radiance fell after another. At the same time, the nine shadow partners even attacked at random. Keke was chased and appeared to be in a somewhat difficult situation for a moment. However, its speed was still way faster in the end as it dodged all the nine bodies.

Those with good eyes saw rainbow-colored light flickering among the brilliant rays. However, it quickly transformed into gold radiance and was launched towards Goldie from all directions. This was not merely a single light screen. Just like when it was dealing with the Lion King, Keke secretly waved its little beast paw to create three layers of gold radiance from the united power of the seven colors.

Confined!

The divine ability that made even the Golden Lion King powerless appeared again. Nine Goldie were completely trapped in midair. The snow-white little critter smashed all nine of them on the ground, then it ran in front of one of the gold lights and ferociously stamped on the other party's tail.

This sneaky action made every spectator stunned and puzzled. Why did it suddenly stamp on the other party's tail? Could it be that the little thing had poured some spiritual power into Goldie's body to seal its power?

Goldie jumped up and let out a bellow due to the pain. Only Goldie knew this hateful snow-white little critter did it out of spite.

Goldie did not admit defeat, it transformed into nine bodies again and rushed over. At the same time, the Peacock King in the sky saw that its partner was no match for the opponent so it also made a move as the five-colored divine radiance fell.

Keke had an eye out for the five-colored divine radiance, after dodging all of Goldie's attack, it waved its little beast paw in earnest and faced the Peacock

King that was in the sky.

All the spectators cried out in surprise as the five-colored divine radiance flickered. Keke actually launched a five-colored divine radiance completely similar to that of the light beam in the sky.

“Where did this little critter come from?”

“Don’t tell me it is also the descendant of the deity, but is proficient in Goldie and the Peacock King’s divine abilities at the same time?”

.....

This made everyone cried out in surprise.

“Swish! Swish! Swish!”

The five-colored divine radiance rumbled repeatedly as the light beams clashed in the sky. In the end, Keke actually pushed back the Peacock King’s five-colored divine radiance.

Subsequently, the Peacock King was sent flying by Keke’s five-colored divine rays of light. It was being thrown towards the high altitude. Only after flying out for more than ten meters did it finally stabilize its figure.

Everyone rose in commotion, this was too crazy!

Only the Lion King remained exceptionally calm in the battlefield. Its eyes were brimming with cold glints as it firmly grasped Keke’s every movement.

Keke waved its little beast paw without the least bit of concern, as if it was saying this was nothing. Such an attitude was really testing everyone’s nerve. It made every spectator feel like they were going to blow up.

Just at this time, the snow-white little critter had repelled Goldie and walked towards the White Tiger without a care in the world.

Everyone immediately flared up. Could this little thing that popped up from who knows where really intended to sweep the floor with the six saint?

Just when everyone was getting excited, six human figures appeared in front of the big crystal screen. Six elders appeared on the battlefield like a wisp of smoke and surrounded Keke from all directions.

In the VIP lounge, Xiao Chen immediately jumped up, he knew something was about to happen!

However, without waiting for him to decide on which course of action to take, a world-shaking clamor had already transmitted outwards from the Amber Warbeast Castle. Almost every spectator in the warbeast castle was shouting.

“Go away! Don’t bother the little beast.”

“Let the competition continue.”

“Don’t make things difficult for the seventh young sacred beast.”

.....

Nearly half of the fifty thousand spectators shouted in harmony. They didn’t care whether or not it was against the rule, it was rare for such a magical sacred beast to appear, everyone urgently wanted to watch the little monkey reveal its might and sweep the floor with the six saint.

The more unpredictable, the better. They didn’t care about who would ultimately be the champion, it was fine as long as the match was interesting.

Very soon, thousands of people rushed out of the room and headed for the warbeast stage. They quickly encircled the stage, and even more people were making their way over. In a short moment, over ten thousand people had assembled.

Other than the two Dragon Kings that were fighting in the sky. Goldie, the White Tiger, the Peacock King, and the Golden Lion King were watching all of these calmly, no longer making their moves.

Being surrounded by the six elders on the spot, Keke looked at them in a daze. It was standing upright with both arms spread out and wore a puzzled expression. So much so that it was even tilting its head. It blinked its glittering big eyes and looked at the divine sword on the back of one of the elders curiously.

Such a lovable and naive appearance immediately made the female spectators around the stage to sympathize with it.

“Kya~! Looking at close distant, it is actually so naive and young.”

“Such a quick-witted big eyes, too cute.”

“Hey, old man, you guys leave! Let this cute little beast continue the match.”

“Are you guys trying to manipulate the result under the table? You want to drive out such a powerful sacred beast? If it did not participate, then the warbeast tournament this year does not live up to the name anymore!”

.....

They had been labelled with a bad name. Despite how the six elders were powerful experts invited by the warbeast castle, they still felt a little powerless in the face of the public anger.

Just at this time, the persons in charge of the three major warbeast castles quickly reached an unanimous decision and allowed the match to continue! At the same time, they dispatched people at top speed to persuade the crowd and made them break up. It must be mentioned that they were very decisive and made the best judgment in the shortest possible time. If they didn't let the little critter participate in the match, then the countless spectators would certainly rise to a rebellion.

However, just when the six experts retreated and when the spectators were about to move back, something happened at Keke's side again. It actually nodded in a friendly manner to everyone and then walked away from the stage while feeling wronged.

“Kya~ The little critter is unhappy.”

“This thing has such a rich expression, it is actually as sentimental as a human, too cute.”

“The little thing feels wronged, it don't want to join the competition anymore.”

“How can this be? I still want to see it sweep the floor with the six saint!”

The persons in charge of the three major warbeast castles quickly appeared in front of Keke.

“We have already given you permission to participate in the match.”

The little critter did not say anything and only shook its head in grievance.

“Why are you not participating? Who is your master?”

Keke still had a grievance expression as it shook its head strongly.

The persons in charge were already perspiring, one of them was wiping the sweat and whispered, “Curse it! Where did this little thing come from? How can we convince it to get back to the warbeast stage? Otherwise the crowd will be furious.”

Hearing these, the snow-white little critter had a crafty glint in its glittering big eyes. It quickly used its paw to carve on the ground.

The persons in charge immediately had black lines over their foreheads. Mother f—! Was this really a little critter or a child prodigy? It sure knew how to act, what feeling wronged? It was clearly desirous of the beast king’s relics!

The picture Keke carved on the ground was precisely the relics of the sacred beast that once accompanied the Buddha.

“You little thing, you sure are crafty. The reason you took part in the competition was for the relics right? Why didn’t you join at an earlier time?”

At present, not only the persons in charge of the three major warbeast castles, even the other spectators had become clear of the little critter’s objective.

Keke proudly puffed out its chest. It didn’t say anything, it just stood there steadily and calmly as it looked at the few people like this.

“So troublesome!”

The few people cast a glance at each other and finally said, “You go and continue the match first.”

Keke didn’t say anything, it just turned around and walked out of the stage.

The faces of the persons in charge immediately turned pale. This little thing really knew how to make things difficult for them!

“Fine! Please go on with the match, if you can defeat the six saint, the relics of the beast king belongs to you!” Then he whispered, “I think everyone should be fine with that... right?”

“Whoosh!”

Keke was very straightforward. The moment it heard these words, it transformed into a streak of gold light and rushed into the battlefield.

Xiao Chen witnessed all of these from beyond the crowd as he wiped the sweat on his forehead. Seriously, this little thing... it remembered his advice, remain calm and collected — you must consider the circumstances.

Fifteen minutes later, the warbeast stage finally calmed down. Everyone had finally retreated, the match will continue. Untold numbers of people were cheering, and on the other hand, the staffs of the three major warbeast castles took actions in a hurry to try and convince the owners of the six saints. After all, the addition of one more sacred beast was a little unfair for them.

In the battlefield, other than the two Dragon Kings, the other four sacred beasts actually had the intention to team up as they coldly fixed their eyes on Keke.

And Keke's behavior was even more shocking, the little critter that seldomly put away its carefree expression walked to the center of the stage solemnly and kept pointing at four sides. It actually hinted the four sacred beasts to come at it simultaneously!

It could even be said to be incomparably arrogant!

It was no longer the humorous little critter. Keke had a rarely seen serious expression that made even Xiao Chen feel a little inconceivable.

“Roar!!!”

The four sacred beasts let out a cry and rushed toward Keke simultaneously.

The Lion King opened its vertical eye. The bloody light burst forth, the light of destruction was launched towards the little critter.

The White Tiger pounced over as the divine marks appeared. The characters filled the entire sky and fell towards Keke.

Goldie flickered with brilliant rays as nine streaks of light tangled up with nine lightnings that were launched toward Keke.

The Peacock King let out a long cry. The five-colored divine radiance that was reputed to be unstoppable was shot at Keke.

The little critter had a dignified expression. Its pair of big eyes that were brimming with cleverness emitted two rainbow-colored radiance. This time, it was no longer hiding its power.

“Swish!”

The rainbow-colored radiance flashed and at the same time, it was launched towards the terrifying light beams that were coming from all directions. The little critter waved its paws repeatedly and the dazzling rainbow-colored radiance became the only color in this world. It made all the other light beams to lose their coloring. One destroys a hundred, the powerful attacks from all around were completely dispelled.

“Whoosh!”

The snow-white little critter had moved. It actually confined the White Tiger and jumped high into the air after stepping on its head.

“Swish! Swish! Swish!”

It faded away in thin air consecutively and abruptly scuttled to the top of the Golden Lion King’s body. During this process, it routed five light of destruction and even forced the power of the Genesis to fall back twice.

Such a performance really made everyone so shocked that they forgot to cry out. Even until a long time later, everyone in front of the crystal screen was still in a petrified state. This was really too shocking.

“Oh my god!”

“This is inconceivable!”

.....

Only until the little critter had smoothly landed on the Lion King’s back did everyone began to shout.

Keke was absolutely not trying to show off or to insult the Lion King. That was because it could feel the third vertical eye of the Lion King that had never been opened until now was throbbing. It wanted to open its third eye! Keke felt threatened by death, and the reason it scuttled up was precisely to target that third vertical eye!

CHAPTER 196 – ALL SOUNDS ARE LOST

Little Keke appeared out of nowhere and got involved in the battle between the six saints. It completely changed the course of the battle with absolute power and caused every spectator to flare up.

This cute little critter revealed an out of the ordinary divine ability. It did not fall behind even when facing four saints simultaneously. At present, it had jumped up and landed on the back of the Golden Lion King. This intense battle set all the spectator's mood on fire. Regardless of male and female, old and young, everyone couldn't help but cry out in surprise. As a result, the Amber Warbeast Castle was filled with noise.

The power of the Golden Lion King was obvious to all. It seemed to have enough power to sweep the floor with Historia level experts. However, it was put in a difficult situation by the little critter. It was out of everyone's expectation for Keke to appear in the middle of the battle. Everyone was shouting in succession.

"Little critter..."

"Little thing..."

"The seventh sacred beast..."

At present, Keke did not dare to lower its guard. It was right in the middle of dealing with the Golden Lion King's third vertical eye. The divine flames were pulsing at the surroundings of that vertical eye, as if it was going to open at any time. Although the powerful energy hadn't been released yet, it already gave people a palpitation.

It was absolutely terrifying!

One eye represented destruction, one eye represented reincarnation, just what kind of power would the last vertical eye contain? No one was able to guess it. However, without a doubt, it would more even more terrifying, even more powerful!

"Squeak!!" Keke seemed a little anxious. Although it had already landed on the Lion King's body, it was still unable to really confine the third lion head. The head

was actually slowly turning around.

Moreover, it was even harder to envelop the surroundings of the third vertical eye with the rainbow-colored radiance. It was as if it had already turned into a world of its own. Other than the divine flames in the surroundings, a lot of characters were actually floating about. The characters contained an ancient desire, as if they were sacrificial writings that were summoning some kind of power from the underworld.

“Swish!”

The rainbow-colored radiance flickered as Keke waved its tiny paws. It attacked the third vertical eye ferociously. The glorious rays of light flickered unceasingly, but it was still unable to disperse that divine flames, unable to confine that vertical eye.

A formidable opponent!

The little Keke had come across an opponent it couldn't easily defeat for the first time.

Within the VIP lounge, Xiao Chen was very nervous, he was afraid that something would happen to the little thing. One must know that the Golden Lion King was still so young, and yet it already have such a terrifying divine ability. Describing it as an S-rank cub was an understatement. Just now, when he passed by the Emyrean VIP lounge, he vaguely heard the elder saying a few words. It seemed like the Golden Lion King had an unimaginable origin!

In the battlefield; although the Golden Lion King had been confined in midair, the effect was not that big on its third head. The vertical eye on that head was about to open!

The little critter had already changed the rainbow-colored radiance to sword-shaped and slashed with it ruthlessly. The brilliant lights and vibrant colors was like a meteor shower that fell all around.

Everyone felt very excited, this was the pinnacle of the sacred beast's confrontation.

“Squeak! Squeak!!” It seemed to have felt that this sturdy “tortoise shelled eye” wouldn't be easy to destroy, so the little thing cried out in a fit of rage and

jumped down to the ground. Then it waved the rainbow-colored light screen to ruthlessly smash the Golden Lion King on the ground.

“Bang!”

The warbeast stage shook violently as the Golden Lion was ruthlessly thrown onto the ground. The dust flew upward and a huge hole appeared on the surface. At the side of the hole, huge cracks about half a foot wide spread out in all directions. It was easy to imagine just how powerful was the force of impact.

At the same time, it was easy to imagine how powerful was the Golden Lion’s physical body. Under the effect of Keke’s extraordinary divine ability, it actually didn’t receive any injury. It shook the fur on its body and stood there majestically.

However, there’s no way Keke would let it take a breather. The rainbow-colored light screen enveloped it again, and without any unnecessary movement, lift and smash! It repeated these movements for dozen of times. Even with a body harder than the adamantium, the Golden Lion King was also unable to bear this kind of torment. After it was smashed on the ground for the sixty-third time, the Lion King already spilled blood from its mouth and nose.

The once powerful and seemingly undefeatable Golden Lion King had been injured by the little critter! It kept trying to open the third vertical eye, the divine flames were lingering on, and the characters were faintly discernible. However, it was unable to open the eye no matter what. It seemed to be exhausting a lot of power. This time, the Golden Lion King’s great effort had been stopped by the little critter.

During this process, the other three were only staring blankly and didn’t make their move. That was because the Golden Lion King was really too powerful. Letting this little thing of unknown origin to put a stop to it was in accordance to their intention.

“Bang!”

“Bang!”

“Bang!”

It was smashed another twenty times in succession. The Golden Lion King had

already lost its will to struggle. Although its eyes were incomparably ice-cold, it was no longer attempting to break away from the light screen. It had already felt that the little critter was more powerful than itself and that it was practically unable to break free.

Its mouth and nose were overflowing with blood. The golden-bright and dazzling mane was already stained by blood. The watery blood was bright and there were hints of gold splendor among the blood.

Regardless of the people in the VIP lounge or the general room, as long as it was the spectator in front of the big crystal screen, their mood had already been set on fire. This little critter was really too crazy, it had overthrown the Golden Lion just like this. If this keeps up, even killing it wouldn't be a problem.

Of course, everyone felt a little regretful. If the Golden Lion was killed by the little thing just like this, it would be such a pity. Many people wanted to see what kind of power was contained in the third vertical eye. They wanted to see the little critter of unknown origin fending off against the Golden Lion's third vertical eye.

After successfully breaking away from the potential threat, Keke was no longer feeling nervous. It just kept beating the Lion King as it pleased.

The three sacred beasts at the side finally made their move. If this keeps up, they wouldn't be able to put the little critter in place anymore. They would be taken out one after another. The Golden Lion King had already received enough lesson.

The White Tiger arrived from the left side. The External Incarnation separated from its body and transformed into countless metallic characters that floated in the surroundings. It gave rise to an energy storm as it pounced towards the little critter.

Goldie's nine Shadow Partners moved simultaneously. The purple heavenly lightning was mixed together with the gold light, then they suddenly united as one and was launched towards the little critter.

The five-colored divine radiance flickered as the Peacock King attacked from the sky. Naturally, that was not just any divine radiance. Even the Lion King's Eye of Destruction and the Eye of Reincarnation couldn't deal with the little critter,

that's why the Peacock King attacked with the Primal Divine Feather that it used to break free from the Genesis.

The little critter's keen intuition felt dangers approaching and disappeared from its original location with a "whoosh". It didn't face their attacks head-on and avoided the terrifying encirclement!

The mother earth was like a piece of easily flammable paper that was put into the furnace, it vanished in a puff of smoke. Without making any sound, a huge bottomless hole appeared in the place that the little critter was standing at just a moment ago.

Keke seemed to have received a scare. It was lightly patting its chest like a human. It took a quick glance at the Golden Lion that was crouching nearby with its glittering big eyes and then rushed towards the three sacred beasts with a whoosh.

It was going to take the initiative to attack.

"Swish!"

The rainbow-colored radiance brushed Goldie off and sent the White Tiger flying. After that, five layers of light screen rushed up simultaneously as it enveloped the Peacock King.

Keke's spiritual sense was very sharp, it had already sensed that among the three sacred beasts, the Peacock King was the most threatening, so much so that it was not weaker than the Golden Lion.

The five-colored divine radiance glinted. Among the divine radiance, a green sword-qi was mixed in. The rainbow-colored light screen was split open as the sword-qi continued to descend.

The sound emitted by the formless sword-qi was not a ripping sound, but rather the rumbling noise of the space getting torn apart. It was ear-splitting, and sounded like a meteorite falling unto mother earth. At the same time, it sounded like there was a tsunami and landslide. The momentum was extremely fast.

The mother earth soundlessly caved in. It was crushed and destroyed by the green light of the Primal Divine Feather.

This was the reason for Keke's unease — the Primal Green Feather.

The little critter leapt towards the sky and the rainbow-colored radiance suddenly became so bright that it was comparable to ten suns hanging in the sky. The little critter wrapped itself within the rainbow-colored radiance and rushed up against the green sword-qi.

This was an extremely dangerous course of events. All the spectators had already seen it, the dazzling rainbow-colored radiance around Keke was melting at lightning speed. Everyone held their breathing and waited for the outcome nervously.

Within the VIP lounge, Xiao Chen's clenched fists were breaking out with cold sweat. He never thought that the little critter was actually this powerful. It actually dared to face the legendary Primal Green Feather head-on. With its ordinarily mischievous behavior, it was a little hard to imagine. This was the first time Xiao Chen knew the little critter had this side to it.

Although the glaring rainbow-colored light screen was dissipating, the little critter made it through the formless sword-qi the instant it was completely dissipated and pounced towards the Peacock King.

However, just at this time, a terrifying energy fluctuation suddenly spread out from the surface. A streak of bloody light and black light made everything in the world to lose their colors. The lights streaked across the vast sky and rushed over in an instant.

The Golden Lion King finally made its move!

Although the Lion King couldn't open the third vertical eye in a short time, it was capable of opening the Eye of Destruction and the Eye of Reincarnation at any given time. When the little critter's defense had fallen to the lowest point, the Lion King made its move. The Eye of Destruction and the Eye of Reincarnation opened in succession.

The bloody light submerged the little critter, the black light opened the gate of hell and enveloped that area!

This sudden change gave everyone a suffocating feeling. It was too sudden. The Golden Lion King's ability to seize the opportunity in battle was too

outstanding that it was somewhat scary. How to guard against such attacks under this kind of circumstances?

The Amber Warbeast Castle had instantly fell into deathly silence, almost everyone had been petrified and looked at the big crystal screen blankly.

All sounds were lost in the heaven and earth, it was extremely quiet at this moment.

Xiao Chen's heart sank!

CHAPTER 197 – UNYIELDING, TRIUMPHANT RETURN!

The bloody light had submerged Keke, the black light had opened the gate of hell. Any traces of the little critter had disappeared in the dark sky.

The multicolored Peacock King let out a long cry, its bright and beautiful feathers were glittering and emitted thousand streaks of colorful rays of light. Its entire body burst forth with dazzling rays of light as it quickly rushed out from that colorless space.

The Golden Lion King did not pay any attention to the Peacock King. It was focusing all of its being on shutting the gate of hell. From within the black hole, what sounded like the rattling of iron chains transmitted outward. The eerie vibe had already broken into the actual world as the Golden Lion tried to seal off the black hole as quickly as possible.

For this reason, it did not hesitate to consume its vital energy. It wanted to close it in the shortest possible time. The entire body of the Lion King was blazing with golden flame as its body slowly ascended into the air and stopped right in front of hell's gate.

It grasped the opportunity and made a firm decision. The Golden Lion didn't want all of its efforts to go down the drain. Its instincts were telling it that the Eye of Destruction was not enough to put an end to the little critter, despite the fact that the other party's defense was at the lowest point at that time. Perhaps, only with the help of the Genesis would it be able to completely get rid of this little troublemaker. If it didn't grasp this chance, it wouldn't be able to get rid of this troublemaker for all eternity.

After a brief moment of silence, everyone in the Amber Warbeast Castle flared up again. The turnaround of the battle was so fast that it was somewhat unbelievable. The Golden Lion King was too vicious, it actually made its move at such a crucial moment.

"Too shameless!"

"Damn it! How did this happen?"

“That sly Lion King!”

“The little critter is too naive, you shouldn’t be the slightest bit careless and merciful on the battlefield. It should have killed that Golden Lion first!”

.....

Xiao Chen’s mind completely blanked out, but he hadn’t fallen into despair. He believed in the strength of the little critter. If the Peacock King was able to make it out, the little critter should be able to do it too!

He was secretly praying that the little critter was not injured by the countless bloody rays launched by the Golden Lion King’s Eye of Destruction, otherwise how would Keke have enough strength to make it out of the Genesis?

The Golden Lion King let out a growl as a gold radiance burst forth from its entire body. It was as if the Lion King had already transformed into a blazing sun. The energy around its body was rushing forth like a torrential river. The vertical eye on its forehead that represented Reincarnation was emitting a black light more powerful than ever!

It was not easy to force the little critter into Genesis, it must not fail. The power it was exhausting at the moment was several folds higher compared to the past. It hoped to save as much time as possible.

“Rumble!”

After the black hole produced a burst of ear-splitting noise, it was shrinking at a high speed. Thereafter, an absolute silence enveloped the sky as all sound was lost. All that could be seen was Hell’s Gate swinging shut.

The multicolored Peacock King was flying at high altitude, Goldie and the White Tiger were calmly standing on the ground. They had no intention of making their move as they didn’t want to wreck the results of the Golden Lion King’s battle at this point in time.

After all, from a certain point of view, the little critter was their most formidable opponent, more so than the Golden Lion. It was an opponent they couldn’t go easy against.

Every sacred beast has intelligence, so much so that they have surpassed

humanities. With regards to opponents around the same level as them, they could brave the challenge to improve themselves. However, if it was an opponent they didn't stand a chance against, they would think of something else and be even more decisive than a human. If there's a chance to destroy their opponent, they wouldn't hesitate to make their move!

Without anyone interrupting, it was smooth sailing for the Golden Lion King. The gate to hell was on the verge of closing.

Many female spectators who could sympathize with Keke were all in despair. Many people had already started to yell. Xiao Chen was clenching his fists tightly, the tip of his fingers were starting to get a little pale. His eyes were as cold as the edge of a blade as he stared at the big crystal screen.

A dragon's roar pierced through the vast sky, it was as if life had been brought back to the spacious and empty plain. The desolate and lifeless atmosphere had been driven away in an instant.

A milky white dragon swiftly flew over from a high altitude like a flickering light and passing shadows, it was as fast as lightning. Tenax took the risk to receive one attack from the Crimson Dragon King in order to break away from it. It was on the fourth step of the Dragon Countersteps as it attacked the Golden Lion.

The sky was trembling, as if a surge of violent energy waves were fluctuating. It was grandiose like the turbulent sea, then again, it was shaking like a huge mountain.

That was the ancient martial skills of the dragon race that had been renowned since time immemorial!

Tenax broke away from its opponent at the crucial moment and came to save Keke. Even though its entire body was covered in frightening wounds, so much so that even its bones were already exposed in some places, Tenax did not have the slightest bit of fear as it faced the formidable Golden Lion King. It pressed forward courageously!

The Golden Lion King coldly shot a glance at Tenax. One of its heads turned over as the Eye of Destruction opened. The bloody light beam pierced the vast sky and swept over.

One's nature determined their fate and the path they would pick throughout their life. Tenax was born for battle and lives for battle. Although it already has sustained serious injuries, it wouldn't shrink back because of this. Tenax had taken the fifth step and the stellar diagram appeared under its foot, carrying with it, a brilliant ray and an extremely powerful energy fluctuation.

The bloody light beam was getting close. However, Tenax took the sixth step unflustered and it just so happened to step on the light beam to face the Light of Destruction head-on.

“Boom!”

The sky and earth trembled, it was as if this region was about to turn upside down.

The bloody radiance dyed the sky red. The power of destruction was present everywhere as it was scattered.

All the spectators were so shocked that their eyes opened wide. There was actually a sacred beast who dared to face the Light of Destruction head-on. This was a little unimaginable.

When the rays of light finally dissipated, Tenax's injuries had become worst, but it did not get killed and was still standing in the sky.

“Oh my god, it actually survived that attack!”

“Even the Black Tortoise that is reputed to have the number one defense was penetrated by the Light of Destruction, how... just how did it survive that?”

.....

Everyone in the Amber Warbeast Castle exposed an unfathomable expression. Tenax faced the Light of Destruction head-on and did not fall!

“It did not die... it really did not die!”

The warbeast castle was drowning with noise.

“It did not die... because it is a Dragon King!”

“The Black Tortoise's defense has fallen behind after all. The dragons always choose to go on the offensive and use attacks to serve as defense. Their attack

power is known to be the best under the heavens! Just now, when it executed the Dragon Countersteps, that was enough to prove that this little Dragon King was determined to fight to the death.”

“The race known to possess the strongest attack power, there’s no way they would shrink back. Just now, it used the dragon race’s ancient martial skill and successfully neutralized the Light of Destruction. That is enough to prove the dragon’s supremacy.”

Tenax’s nature of never admitting defeat made it impossible for the tough little dragon to shrink back, especially when Keke was caught in a risky situation. Although it had fought fiercely with the Crimson Dragon King for a long time — both sides had suffered and were covered in terrifying wounds from head to foot — despite this it still chose the difficult path of exterminating the Lion King.

However, it did not take the seventh step in the end. It was not that it didn’t want to take the step, but rather that it did not have the ability to take another step. It fought with the Crimson Dragon King for a really long time and had consumed too much energy. It had nearly exhausted all of its power.

However, the Golden Lion was also unable to launch the second bloody light beam. In order to seal the hell’s gate as soon as possible, it was unable to waste any more strength.

Tenax launched another Dragon Counterstep from the beginning again and pressed towards the Golden Lion.

And just at this time, with a roar, the White Tiger’s incarnation soared up towards the sky to block Tenax’s path. The Peacock King let out a long cry and radiated with colorful rays. It grabbed Goldie and flew up together to block Tenax’s path, making it so that Tenax was unable to execute the Dragon Countersteps unless it fought with the three sacred beasts first.

Tenax stood proudly in the sky alone, it did not fall back a single step, it just stood there silently and cast a glance at these powerful opponents.

Time wouldn’t wait for anyone, there’s no time to hesitate, it could only press forward while disregarding everything else. Although the outcome was obvious, there’s no way it could shrink back!

A dragon roar shook the vast sky. Although it was still very young, it actually possessed a piercing aura. Tenax decided to forge ahead and struggle desperately!

It executed the Dragon Countersteps to shake off the three sacred beasts!

“Swish! Swish! Swish!” The rays of light were dazzling as the five-colored divine radiance swept over.

Bursting with a roar, the White Tiger’s incarnation pounced over.

Brilliant rays flickered as Goldie’s Shadow Partners launched nine streaks of lightning.

Dragon Countersteps could trample the Gods and Buddhas. It was the secret art of the dragon race and was one of the strongest martial skills under the heavens. However, Tenax was still too young after all, the Dragon Countersteps was far from its peak state and did not possess enough power to push down the three opponents.

“Bang!”

Blood splashed everywhere, Tenax was sent flying by the powerful attacks of the three sacred beasts. Its blood dyed the vast sky red.

Dragon blood fell like rain, and the bones were exposed on many parts of Tenax’s body.

Originally, it still had a very long journey ahead. It had unlimited potential and could grow up slowly. It didn’t have the strength to solo the three saints, but it didn’t want to see Keke, who came from the same island, be sucked into Genesis. Thus, it decided to forge ahead and fight!

Tenax was on the verge of dying, but the glint in its eyes that was gradually getting dimmer suddenly burst forth with brilliant rays the instant it was about to be extinguished.

Waiting for death was not in Tenax’s nature. If it wanted to die, it would choose to die in a battle! Tenax executed the Dragon Countersteps with difficulty and stood in the sky. Its proud silhouette shook the hearts of every spectator.

At this very moment, an indescribable feeling welled up in everyone’s heart.

This indescribable feeling had influenced a lot of people. Those who were emotionally weak were already getting teary eyed.

Fight! Fight! Fight!

As long as it still had breath left in its body, Tenax would not shrink back. It ignited its life's fire for the last time as its unlimited battle intent pierced the skies.

Its dragon cry resonated in heaven and earth. Tenax transformed into a streak of milky white light as it advanced courageously!

Within the VIP lounge, Xiao Chen remained silent. The glint in his eyes was like the cutting edge of a sword. He tightened his fists, the veins were on the verge of breaking, and his joints let out creaking sounds.

Three layers of light screens were launched at Tenax. Nobody had the heart to continue watching this scene. This proud little dragon was fully aware that it was no match for the three sacred beasts, and yet it still continued to press forward. Could it be that it had friendly relations with the young sacred beasts?

To escape reality by averting his gaze was impossible. Xiao Chen stared at the big crystal screen from beginning to end, not saying a single word.

From the horizon, a bloody light dived down fast. A clear dragon cry resonated between heaven and earth. The Crimson Dragon King finally made its move.

Could it be that, under these kind of circumstances, it still wanted to land the final strike?

Many people did not want to watch the appearance of Tenax getting torn apart. However, very quickly, a surprised shout was transmitted from every general room.

The Crimson Dragon King did not choose to attack Tenax, but the three sacred beasts instead. The blazing bloody light illuminated the surroundings and forged ahead to face the three sacred beasts along with Tenax.

The outcome was beyond everyone's expectation. Nobody would have thought that the Crimson Dragon King would assist Tenax. After all, they were in a life or death battle just moments ago!

Why did it suddenly offer a helping hand to its former enemy?

Those who had detailed information about the eleven Dragon Kings were very shocked. The Crimson Dragon King was the most ruthless among the Dragon Kings. This was a public secret, nobody would have thought that it had a merciful heart.

However, outsiders wouldn't know what the Crimson Dragon King was thinking about at the moment. It was not because of pity, it was a dictator among the Dragon Kings. Although the Dragon Kings were destined to fight to the death upon encounter, they would also feel angry when they saw outsiders joining hands to bully their brothers.

If it was in a one versus one battle, the Crimson Dragon King wouldn't care if Tenax was to die tragically. However, since Tenax was being pushed around by three sacred beasts working together, it was unable to tolerate such conduct. The dignity of the Dragon Kings must not be blemished. No Dragon King should die in such an unfair battle!

Violent light and rumbling noise rushed forth as a terrifying energy storm was given rise. It was just like a volcanic eruption that swept everything in the sky away. Every spectator was overwhelmed with shock. These sacred beasts were still so young, and yet, they possessed extraordinary divine abilities. Just think, how much could they accomplish in the future? If they did not die young, they might even become exotic beasts recorded in the history book of this world!

Tenax and the Crimson Dragon King were pushed back. After all, their battle before was too fierce, both sides had already suffered serious injuries. They still couldn't gain an upper hand with two versus three.

The condition of Tenax's injuries became even more serious. From a glance, it looked like Tenax didn't have much energy left. However, half of the attacks were received by the Crimson Dragon King in the end, so it didn't get torn apart immediately.

The Crimson Dragon King faced upward and let out a vicious roar, pretending as if it had went berserk.

Just at this time, the Golden Lion king finally sealed off the hell's gate. The last speck of black light completely disappeared.

Tenax helplessly cast one last glance at the disappeared gates and fell from the sky. The Crimson Dragon King let out an angry roar and transformed into a streak of bloody light to carry Tenax to the ground.

Despite the fact that Tenax has astonishing regeneration power, this time however, it could already feel the breath of death enveloping it completely. When they reached the ground, Tenax nodded towards the Crimson Dragon King and was put on the ground. Its internal organs had already turned into paste, they were completely crushed. Tenax didn't have much strength left in its body. However, it still mustered every last ounce of strength in its body to stand up and let out a prolonged roar. The dragon cry shook the sky and earth.

Among the spectators, even the older generation figures were moved. They would rather have the competition stopped at this very moment. Such a proud little dragon made many people feel as if their heart had been struck.

The Crimson Dragon King silently walked aside.

Xiao Chen silently stood in front of the big crystal screen. It was as if his body had been petrified as he stood there motionlessly...

The four sacred beasts in the sky descended at the same time. The powerful little critter had been sucked into the Genesis with the four of them working together. At present, Tenax was on the verge of dying, and the Crimson Dragon King was seriously hurt so there was no cause for anxiety. It was time for the four of them to fight.

Naturally, Goldie and the Peacock King would team up.

The Golden Lion King and the White Tiger did not have any hesitation, they directly walked together.

Before the battle began, they cast a glance at the Crimson Dragon King. They believed it would be better to get rid of it first. Moreover, absorbing the essence of the Dragon Kings would have tremendous benefits for them.

“Boom!”

An extremely muffled sound suddenly echoed in the sky. It was just like the sound of a sealed up stone room being rammed.

The sudden noise not only made the four sacred beasts raise their guard at the same time and raise their head to look around attentively, even all the spectators were feeling very excited. Their originally crestfallen mood suddenly had a hint of hope.

“Bang!”

A even clearer ramming sound was transmitted from high in the air. They could vaguely see one energy ripple after another appearing in the sky, it was as if space was about to deform.

“I did not mishear!”

“I heard it too, it is that little critter...”

Many people cried out in surprise. They couldn’t help but think of that little critter that was sucked into Genesis.

“BOOM!”

This time, the sound was even louder. Space actually had signs of collapsing.

The Golden Lion King, the Peacock King, and the White Tiger’s External Incarnation flew over simultaneously.

“Rumble!”

The space had been shattered, hell’s gate reappeared as the rainbow-colored divine radiance was launched towards the horizon. It was extremely dazzling. The snow-white little critter rushed out of hell’s gate.

The clothes on Keke’s body, and the gold monkey fur were completely crushed. It launched the rainbow-colored radiance unceasingly and pushed hell’s gate open. It broke free from Genesis and returned with its own power.

“Oh my god!”

“It can’t be...”

“This is too unbelievable!”

“This really isn’t an illusion!”

Everyone cried out in surprise. This was simply unbelievable, it was too outrageous.

Although Keke's real identity had been revealed, everyone recognized it at first glance. That pair of glittering big eyes definitely wouldn't be wrong!

Just what kind of exotic beast was this? How did it come to possess such an unimaginable power? It was actually able to make it back even after hell's gate had been completely shut. It made everyone so dumbfounded that they didn't know what to say!

It could make it back from hell's gate by itself, does that mean it also had the power to open Genesis? Wouldn't that mean it also have divine ability similar to the Golden Lion King's Eye of Reincarnation?

Everyone in the Amber Warbeast Castle flared up, the voice spread over the entire Celestial City.

Just at this time, the Golden Lion King, the multicolored Peacock King, and the White Tiger's External Incarnation moved simultaneously. One after another, glaring rays of light were launched towards the little critter. The sky trembled violently due to the terrifying energy.

"SQUEAK! SQUEAK!!!" The snow-white little critter was angry. Moreover, it was truly very angry!

The rainbow-colored divine radiance swept across the sky and shattered all resistance. It was much more powerful when compared to before it was sucked into Genesis. All the energy attacks were routed as the Golden Lion King, the Peacock King, and the White Tiger's External Incarnation were sent flying.

Keke was panting with rage, it was not going to leave matters at that. Fortunately, it did not notice the condition Tenax was currently in, otherwise it would definitely flip out and reveal a side it had never before shown.

Despite that, it was already scary enough. It directly charged towards the Peacock King that was the closest to it. The rainbow-colored divine radiance swept away the five-colored divine radiance, it even broke through the drizzling sword-qi emitted by the Primal Green Feather, and rushed onto the peacock's back in a flash.

Pulling up radishes!

No, it's more like, pulling up the peacock's tail feathers!

Every spectator was completely flabbergasted, Keke actually exerted itself physically to pull that Primal Divine Feather. It was as if everyone had just swallowed a huge elephant, they couldn't even close their mouths anymore.

CHAPTER 198 – FLIPPING OUT

The snow-white little critter had returned from hell's gate. Although it was still so young and immature, its power was no less than a level-12 storm. It caused everyone to be endlessly shocked.

To open hell's gate, just how much power would that require? Was it something a one foot tall little thing could accomplish? It gave everyone an unfathomable feeling. This was truly a law-breaking little critter.

Especially now, the little critter made everyone so stupefied that their jaws literally dropped. It was pulling the radish, with all of its strength! The snow-white little critter jumped onto the Peacock King's back and exerted all of its strength to pull that Primal Green Feather as if it was really pulling a radish. It didn't seem to be aware that it was a legendary divine item that could crush a lofty mountain.

The multicolored Peacock King let out a long, furious cry, but its body had already been sealed by Keke. The rainbow-colored radiance had completely enveloped the Peacock King, it was unable to release any power. The tail feathers had already spread out, and the five-colored divine radiance was fluctuating, but it just couldn't launch its divine radiance.

Keke spent a long time, and yet it was unable to pull up that Primal Green Feather. It panted with rage and randomly tossed the tail feathers from side to side. The Peacock King was so angry that it almost fainted due to its own anger. The multicolored peacock tail was a royal mess and the little critter's paws were full of beautiful tail feathers.

A murderous vibe drew near as the White Tiger's External Incarnation pounced towards the little critter with metallic characters revolving around it. This time, all the metallic characters emitted glaring rays of light. Obviously, they were several folds stronger compared to before.

The sky started to tremble, that was the revolution of the worldly essence. Endless energy waves surged up violently and ripped through the air as it was launched towards the snow-white little critter's location.

The Golden Lion King also chose to make its move at this moment. The Eye of Destruction and Eye of Reincarnation opened simultaneously. However, this time, the two streaks of light merged as they were launched towards Keke. The bloody light and black light interweaved and burst forth with an even more terrifying vibe that directly opened a tunnel of death in the sky.

It possessed the power of the Eye of Destruction, and also the power of the underworld. Both of these powers merged together and crushed every obstruction. Even the energy wave released by the White Tiger's External Incarnation was shattered.

Keke already suffered a huge loss last time, it was assaulted by others from behind and got sucked into hell's gate. Although the rainbow-colored radiance promptly neutralized the Light of Destruction, it was still stunned by the attack and narrowly lost its way in the dark underworld. Only after using up all of its power did it break free from Genesis and returned the way it came from.

Right now, it wouldn't make the same mistake again. It was vigilantly casting a glance at all sides with its big eyes. Seeing that the White Tiger approached first, it didn't make any unnecessary movements. All it did was sending a wide expanse of multicolored light there, with no less than five layers of light screen.

Although the White Tiger was strong, it was still no match for the law-breaking lil Keke. All of its powerful attacks were neutralized in the first moments. The rainbow-colored radiance was like an unstoppable spell, once it was launched, it shan't be stopped and broke through all the energy waves. Those metallic characters floating around the White Tiger were no exception, more than half of them were shattered. Even the White Tiger's External Incarnation was confined by the little critter and was mercilessly smashed towards the ground.

"Boom!"

Smoke and dust filled the air as a bottomless hole appeared in the ground. The White Tiger's External Incarnation was directly pushed underground.

Just at that time, the Lion King's fusion attack almost arrived, the sound of space breaking down was transmitted over. The death tunnel's momentum was extremely shocking.

Keke was extremely angry at the Golden Lion King. It nearly fell into Genesis for

all eternity because of the Lion King's sneak attack. Its big eyes went completely round the moment it saw the sly lion.

“Swish! Swish! Swish!”

Nine layers of rainbow-colored light screens were launched simultaneously.

That tunnel of death was stopped in midair just like this. Due to the fact that the Lion King did not provide any follow-up energy, the instant the tunnel was stopped, it exploded with a boom.

An extremely eerie and frightening demonic cloud appeared in the sky. The power that came from the underworld suddenly exploded and scattered, giving rise to violent surge of energy in the sky.

Fortunately, this was the sacred warbeast stage, it was built in the open air. If there were any Psychics erecting barriers in the vicinity, everything would be destroyed, regardless of the barrier or the people.

The eerie black fog that shrouded the sky made the snow-white little critter dissatisfied. It waved its paws with all its strength and the black fog, along with the negative vibe, were instantly driven off by the dazzling rays of light.

When the Golden Lion King appeared in front of it, the little critter gave up on the Peacock King and with a shout, it transformed into a streak of white light as it rushed over. Of course, it was making its way through with the rainbow-colored radiance and was completely fearless of the Golden Lion King's Eye of Destruction and Eye of Reincarnation.

A roaring noise fell incessantly on the ear as the terrifying Light of Destruction and Genesis were destroyed by the little critter. Keke passed through in an instant and hopped onto the Golden Lion King's middle head in a short while.

With its pair of legs, it was fiercely stamping on the Golden Lion King's Eye of Destruction. The Lion King felt so sullen that it wanted to let out a snarl. After that vertical eye was sealed by the rainbow-colored radiance, it was unable to launch the bloody light anymore. If it wanted to forcefully open the vertical eye, its head might even break into pieces.

In front of the big crystal screen, all the spectators seemed to be a little petrified. The little critter that just returned from Genesis was too powerful, so

powerful that the other few sacred beasts were powerless to do anything. The little thing's rainbow-colored divine radiance was obviously much stronger when compared to before.

“Squeak!!” Keke let out a squeak furiously, as if it was asking, “Will you give up or not?”

The glint in the Golden Lion's eyes was ice-cold. Although it was feeling sullen, it also felt powerless. As an S-class sacred beast like itself, losing was completely unimaginable. Their powerful innate skills allowed their race to stand at the highest peak and a worthy match practically didn't exist for them.

Their race only left behind a single descendant from generation to generation. If it couldn't find a mate within its lifetime, their race would face the fate of extinction. It was very unlikely for one to be born every few thousand years. According to legend, it might be the only one left in this world. The Golden Lion was a genuine exotic beast.

“I got some news. The Golden Lion King does not have an owner, though it has a servant tending to it. However, that servant is so strong that it's somewhat scary!”

“With the beast as the master and the human as the servant, this proves that the Golden Lion has an extraordinary origin. So much so that someone is willing to reduce himself to a slave to serve the Lion King until it grows up.”

In reality, this was not an unusual story. One must know that, some legendary gods were of the beast race.

In a few Empyrean VIP lounges, someone had received news from their subordinates. Previously, due to the Golden Lion King's extraordinary performance, they had sent a lot of people to investigate.

They say that... in this world, there are a few extremely powerful races that were capable of standing up to the dragons. So much so that they could even slaughter them.

After receiving the news, some of the elders had already categorized the Golden Lion King as one of the few most powerful races. However, they were not very certain. After all, the records regarding the most powerful races were

unclear.

Xiao Chen was located next to a few Empyrean VIP lounges and vaguely heard a little of their conversation. He immediately recalled Buddhist Yizhen. It seemed like their monastery had a kind of ancient book that contained records of many Primal Beasts. Buddhist Yizhen had once said that, Keke might be one of the few exotic beasts. Could it be that the Golden Lion King was also one of them?

Although the elders in the Empyrean VIP lounges got the news regarding the Golden Lion King, they were clearly more interested in Keke at the moment. They instructed their subordinates to scoop out the origin of the snow-white little critter regardless of the cost.

This made Xiao Chen frown inwardly.

Of course, there were some who was more interested in the Golden Lion King. In one of the VIP lounges, a sigh was transmitted along with an aged voiced, “I feel that the Golden Lion King has yet to manifest its full potential.”

“Just where did it come from?”

“It is extremely possible that... the Golden Lion King is an all-enlightened one.”

It was impossible for Xiao Chen to hear this. In fact, the voice was very loud in the room, but no sound leaked out, as if some kind of bizarre power was at work.

1

In the battlefield, Keke had already stamped the Golden Lion King’s head until its head was spinning. After that, it exerted its strength to smash the Lion King and left a big hole on the ground.

It must be mentioned that, although the snow-white little critter was stubborn and obstreperous, it was very kind-hearted. Even though it was nearly sucked into Genesis because of the Golden Lion King, it didn’t rouse up any killing intent. However, just when it jumped to the ground in high spirits, everything changed in that very instant.

The little critter noticed Tenax’s situation at a glance. Although it was still standing, its body was deprived of vitality. Keke transformed into a streak of white light and appeared in front of Tenax in a split second.

“Squeak...” It called Tenax gently, but there was no response. Keke looked at all the sacred beasts in the battlefield anxiously and furiously. After that, it quickly took off the treasured tree hat and stuffed the little sacred tree into Tenax’s wound. Then, with a wave of its paws, layer upon layer of rainbow-colored radiances were sent into Tenax’s body.

The Golden Lion King, multicolored Peacock King, Goldie, and the White Tiger gathered together and fixed their eyes on the snow-white little critter.

Through the rainbow-colored divine radiance, Keke felt the aura of the few sacred beasts on the opposite side within Tenax’s body. However, it could also feel an indistinct life force at the same time.

Seeing the condition of Tenax’s injuries, it was unknown whether it could make it out alive or not. Keke immediately welled-up with extreme anger.

This could be said to be the first time the little critter had flipped out. While standing on the stage, it pointed at all the sacred beasts with its paw. Of course, it didn’t leave out the Crimson Dragon King at the side. It was squeaking unceasingly, as if it was saying, “None of you can get away with this.”

Keke’s first target was the Crimson Dragon King. It was about to rush forward at any time. After receiving the nourishment from the rainbow-colored sacred tree, Tenax’s closed eyes shook a little and it actually transmitted a trace of bizarre fluctuations. That was completely sent out by spiritual sense.

In that instant, the nearly berserk Keke came to a stop and turned its head around to cast a doubtful glance. That’s right, Tenax’s voice was transmitted into its mind, asking it not to hurt the Crimson Dragon King.

While staring at the Crimson Dragon King furiously, Keke conveniently waved its paw and threw the Crimson Dragon King to the side of the stage by enveloping it with a rainbow-colored light screen.

The Crimson Dragon King was the fiercest, it immediately burst into anger. The instant it fell to the ground, it wanted to rush over there. However, after discovering that Keke was using the dragon’s divine ability, it ultimately restrained itself.

Keke disappeared in the blink of an eye and appeared in front of the four

sacred beasts in a flash.

The little critter had flipped out!

The rainbow-colored radiance swept away the four sacred beasts. It was no longer holding anything back at the moment. Although the four sacred beasts were fighting back viciously, they were still sent flying in an instant. Each and every one of them were throwing up blood.

Xiao Chen felt his heart skip a beat. When he was on dragon island, he already found out from Lan Nuo and the Amethyst Dragon King, that Keke practiced the dragon's divine abilities. When a dragon's divine abilities reach the peak stage, it is claimed to be capable of confining everything, sweeping everything, and destroying everything. The little critter has obviously improved. Sealing its opponent's movements was no longer the only thing it could do. Right now, it has already learned the divine ability to "sweep everything away".

The four saints were all furious. To be sent flying by such a tiny thing, it really hurts their pride. The White Tiger let out a long roar, Goldie let out a sudden cry and was the very first to rush over. Following that, the Peacock King and Golden Lion King took off simultaneously.

"Squeak! Squeak!!" The flipped out little critter was no longer showing any mercy when it made its moves. It seemed to be shouting, "Die! Die! ...All of you can go and die!"

Along with the sound of something breaking down, those metallic characters around the White Tiger were shattered into small pieces. The White Tiger's External Incarnation seemed like it was crushed by a huge mountain. The lower half of its body was swept past by eighteen light screens and was completely crushed, not even a drip of blood remained. The White Tiger's main body coughed up blood and fell among the dust as it rolled back and forth.

The instant Goldie surrounded the little critter with nine Shadow Partners, three of them were destroyed by the berserk Keke, along with their souls. The other six figures hurriedly recombined in a split second and ran away in a sorry state.

The Peacock King and Golden Lion King were dominated at once. They were sealed and stopped in the sky.

This was a side of Keke that had never been revealed before. When the little critter flip out... the consequences were considerably grave.

“Whoosh!”

Keke transformed into a streak of white light and chased after Goldie. At the same time, it launched eighteen layer of light screens towards the White Tiger.

Without any explosive sound, the White Tiger’s lower half was cut off. What remained behind was only its upper half stained with sticky blood. It was rolling on the ground unceasingly. From a glance, it seemed like the White Tiger wouldn’t make it out alive.

Keke instantly caught up to Goldie and launched the rainbow-colored divine radiance again. Another two of Goldie’s souls were ripped out of its body.

The entire warbeast castle turned into a cauldron of voices from an extremely quiet state. Everyone yelled as if they had just gone crazy.

In a short period of time, the little critter had actually killed the White Tiger. That was a king among the sacred beasts, the young White Tiger had clearly received the handed-down techniques of the White Tigers. Moreover, it possessed the divine marks bestowed by heaven, its future accomplishments would’ve been limitless. However, it was slaughtered by the little critter just like that! 2

And even as the later generation of the gods, Goldie was about to meet the same fate. Five of its souls had already been destroyed, even having nine lives was not enough!

CHAPTER 199 – THE OUTCOME

The consequences were grave once the little critter flipped out.

In a flash, the White Tiger was about to meet its end. And Goldie had lost five of its lives, even having nine lives were not enough!

The snow-white little critter had an attitude like it would kill even the Gods and Buddhas if they were to interfere. The four sacred beasts were simply no match for the little critter.

“Swish!”

Another rainbow-colored radiance swept over and reaped Goldie’s sixth life. Another one of its Shadow Partners had been destroyed. Goldie had a violent nature, it looked down on Keke before, but now, it was chased by others in such a sorry figure. At present, it finally understood the gap between them was very big. It wouldn’t be all that difficult if the little critter really wanted to kill it.

Keke was extremely fast. It transformed into a streak of white light and overtook Goldie within a few swooshes. It looked like another rainbow-colored radiance was about to be launched soon.

At this time, the Peacock King in the sky was unable to maintain its cool anymore. It grew up together with Goldie, it couldn’t look on helplessly as its buddy was about to get killed. Its multicolored wings radiated with thousand streaks of multicolored light. Its body was overflowing with multi colored brilliance as it dived down. A green drizzling sword-qi was mixed together with the five-colored divine radiance as they were launched towards the snow-white little critter.

Keke was very angry at the moment, anyone who dared to block its path would face its wrath. Even if a god was to come, it wouldn’t stop either.

“Swish! Swish!”

The dazzling light screen soared up and routed the Peacock King’s reputed five-colored divine radiance. Even the green drizzling sword-qi emitted by the Primal Green Feather was blocked by the light screen.

“Squeak!!” The snow-white little critter shouted angrily. Following closely, it disappeared in the blink of an eye and rushed midair. It appeared on the back of the Peacock King and dropped two layers of divine light while sticking close.

“Bang!”

The multicolored Peacock King was unable to bear it anymore and directly fell from the sky. Keke was merciless and continued its assault. It waved its little paw to employ a rainbow-colored radiance to sweep away the Peacock King in front of it.

The descendants of gods had incredible vitality, but even so, they were unable to resist the continuous attacks of Keke. One after another, the rainbow-colored radiances were launched.

The colorful feathers fluttered about in the air. The Peacock King was battered and exhausted, but it was still alive. In the most critical moment, drizzling green-qi leaked out from the Primal Divine Feather, wrapping the Peacock King within.

Back in those days, when that “person” executed the five-colored divine radiance, there was nothing that could bar “his” path, there were nothing “he” couldn’t destroy. There were hardly any worthy adversaries for him in the heaven and earth. Even more so after “he” refined the five feathers and turned them into the most powerful objects. The feathers were divided into five colors, namely; green, yellow, red, black, and white. When five of these feathers are gathered in one place, they would be one terrifying divine artifact.

At the moment, even if there was only the Primal Green Feather, it was more than enough to protect the multicolored Peacock King. Although the Peacock King was unable to manifest the Primal Green Feather’s true power yet, the green feather had the ability to protect its owner automatically.

Seeing that it was unable to kill the Peacock King, the little critter was even more annoyed. As if it had an infinite amount of power, the little critter launched one layer of rainbow-colored radiance after another. In the end, it still plucked a handful of the peacock’s tail feathers.

The originally bright-colored and beautiful Peacock King looked extremely uncouth at the moment. Many areas on its body were laid bare as the glittering feathers fluttered about in the air. Everyone in the warbeast castle was so

shocked that they were unable to utter a single word.

The Golden Lion crouched calmly in the empty sky with an ice-cold glint in its eyes. It didn't move an inch, but the surroundings of the third vertical eye were blazing with divine flames that pulsed violently. It was on the verge of opening!

The snow-white little critter felt the bloodlust and turned its head around in an instant. It immediately noticed the Golden Lion King's current situation and gave up on killing the tenacious Peacock King at once. With a "swish," it disappeared in thin air and showed up in the empty sky, heading directly toward the Golden Lion King.

The Golden Lion King was very calm. Its third vertical eye was already on the verge of opening, so it ignored the little critter's attack to save up as much power as possible. It believed in the strength of its own body, it believed that it could resist a few of the little critter's attacks.

Keke rushed over in a split second and a wide expanse of light screens were launched in that very instant. There were no less than twenty layers of divine radiance that uniformly fell on the Golden Lion King.

The Golden Lion overestimated the strength of its body too much. As a result, blood splashed everywhere in a split second. Twenty deep wounds appeared on the Lion King's golden body, all of them were cut open by the divine radiance. Hints of gold radiance could be found mingled in the watery blood, so much so that they looked a little like golden blood.

However, just from this, its power could be seen very clearly, it was so much more powerful when compared to the White Tiger.

The Golden Lion King's attempt to open the third vertical eye this time had been interrupted again. It was very unwilling and let out a world-shaking bellow. There was just a little bit more to go.

In the end, the Golden Lion King was still an exotic beast, after it let out a thunderous roar, its entire body shone with golden light as blood stopped leaking out. All of its wounds began to heal and its golden body dazzled the eyes.

Keke angrily waved its little paw and directly confined the Golden Lion. After that, it smashed the Golden Lion onto the half-alive Peacock King.

With a loud bang, dust filled the air and two angry roars from the sacred beasts are transmitted outwards. The Peacock King and the Golden Lion King had collided with one another.

The little critter rushed towards the ground and blinked its big eyes twice, as if it had just thought of something.

“Swish! Swish!”

Rainbow-colored radiances were launched and confined both the Golden Lion King as well as the Peacock King respectively. After that, it controlled the two balls of light and made them collide with one another. 1

“Bang!”

“Bang!”

The banging sound never came to a stop. The two sacred beasts felt their heads spinning from the continuous collisions.

The snow-white little critter looked at the Peacock King’s Primal Green Feather, then it looked at the Golden Lion’s third vertical eye as it was hatching up a plan. The vertical eye and green feather were not easy to deal with. At the moment, it had decided to let the two face each other with their strongest aspect.

With a flash of light, Keke sealed the both of them. After that, it controlled the Peacock King’s unfolded tail feathers to bump into the Golden Lion’s third head. To be more precise, it was using the Primal Green Feather to pierce the third vertical eye.

“Rips! Rips! Rips!”

The sound of space tearing apart could be heard. Following closely, a fluctuation that caused people’s heart to race spread out in a flash.

Keke’s big eyes immediately glittered as it looked at the point of collision without batting an eye. However, when the terrifying energy fluctuation came to a stop, it was disappointed. The Primal Green Feather actually did not pierce into the third vertical eye and both remained in good condition. Both sides seemed to possess an unknown power that stopped them from the destructive collision.

“Squeak!!!” The little critter shouted angrily. It waved its little paws with all its strength to control the multicolored light and made the two crash into one another again with their strongest aspects.

“Rips! Rips! Rips!”

The sound of space breaking into pieces transmitted outwards as an extremely bizarre energy spread out. It made people feel nervous and agitated, as if a huge monster had just come into being. Then again, it felt as if there were a few huge mountains pressing down on their hearts. It gave people an indescribable feeling of fear and made them tremble involuntarily.

The Peacock King’s Primal Divine Feather and the Golden Lion’s third vertical eye seemed to contain boundless power. If they were to burst out, it seemed like they would be capable of destroying everything. Just this kind of heart-racing atmosphere alone was enough to astonish everyone.

The space between the two beasts was a piece of darkness. The unknown power had isolated everything in the surroundings from the world. The sound and power of their collision completely disappeared within the black space.

The dark space that abruptly appeared comes and goes just as quick.

The snow-white little critter didn’t know what had just happened, but it noticed that the Primal Green Feather was not destroyed, and the Lion King’s third vertical eye was also safe and sound. Blazing divine flame was still lingering around the eye.

Only now did everyone in front of the big crystal screen let out a gasp. The pressure earlier was really too oppressive.

Angry!

The snow-white little critter’s mind was very simple. It could be said that it had a childish heart. It wanted to avenge Tenax, however, even though it could defeat the opponents, it was unable to punish them. This made the little critter shout in a fit of rage.

It didn’t try to make them crash into one another again. Keke just sealed their movements and banged them on the ground over and over with the rainbow-colored divine radiance. The rainbow-colored radiance scraped them unceasingly

like knife blades. With the protection of the Primal Green Feather, the Peacock King was still better off. It was barely enough to prevent its body from breaking into pieces, it only lost some some feathers in the end.

However, it was different for the Golden Lion King. Although it had a shocking healing power, it was still slower than Keke. With more than ten multicolored radiances falling all at once, it was as if the Golden Lion was getting chopped by more than ten divine swords at the same time. It caused the Golden Lion King to be drenched in blood from head to toe. Although the golden divine radiance flickered in that very instant and healed the wounds, it was still unable to withstand the little critter's continuous attacks.

Only that, the little critter felt a little sick when seeing the blood. It had never taken the life of a living creature, it was not used to these kinds of ruthless methods. Seeing that the Golden Lion King was drenched in blood, it started to hesitate a little.

However, it was not an ordinary little critter to begin with, it knew what to do, it was not the time to be benevolent at the moment. Keke hardened its resolve and launched layer upon layer of divine radiance.

With such an offensive power, even the Golden Lion was unable to bear it. There were a few times it was narrowly chopped in half at the waist, even the thick white bones were exposed. However, it still barely recovered from the attacks in the end.

The little critter's formidability had already made everyone feel their head numb a long time ago. And the Golden Lion King's powerful body was similarly out of everyone's expectation. In front of the big crystal screen, every spectator was overwhelmed with shock. It must be mentioned that the White Tiger had been chopped in half by the little critter effortlessly, and this Golden Lion was actually able to recover from it every time it was about to get chopped in half. With such a freakish ability, if not because of running into the snow-white little critter, just which sacred beast would be able to deal with it?

The divine ability of the vertical eyes were already exaggerated enough, and in addition to such a remarkable healing ability, it was simply a freak that defied the natural order of the world.

However, everyone knew that if this was to go on, the Golden Lion King would inevitably die. It might be able to resist seven or eight attacks from the little critter, but it definitely wouldn't be able to resist up to fifteen or sixteen times. Its healing power was obviously getting weaker.

At this time, all of the Peacock King's multicolored feathers had fell off, it looked extremely miserable. Goldie, who was watching from a distant place, was unable to bear it anymore and rushed over instantly. It knew that it was not a match for Keke, but its honor does not allow it to glance back. It grew up together with the Peacock King since childhood, their relationship was very deep.

"Swish!"

With a flash of rainbow-colored divine radiance, Goldie had been detained in an instant. Keke threw Goldie beside the Peacock King and used the divine radiance to sweep the three of them simultaneously.

Goldie had already lost six of its lives, it only had three out of nine lives remaining. There's no way it could resist much longer.

The multicolored Peacock King struggled and used all of its power to protect Goldie. Taking advantage of the instant when the little critter was dealing with the Golden Lion, it successfully wrapped Goldie within the drizzling green-qi emitted by the Primal Green Feather. It was using the green feather to protect the two of them.

However, it was not able to provide much protection with such a method. After all, the Peacock King was still unable to really control the Primal Divine Feather. It could only rely on its function to automatically protect the owner. In only an instant, another one of Goldie's lives was lost. And the Peacock King itself was only barely alive.

The rainbow-colored radiance flashed one more time. Keke launched more than ten layers of light screens simultaneously. Goldie had lost another one of its lives. At the moment, it only had one life remaining, it was no different from any other sacred beast anymore. If it dies one more time, it wouldn't have any lives left.

And the Peacock King was also very miserable. After sharing a portion of the

Primal Divine Feather's power, it was unable to protect itself anymore. This time, it narrowly lost its life directly. If it was not because it had the blood of the gods flowing in its veins and the fact that it had high vitality, it might have perished a long time ago.

Goldie struggled to get out from the Primal Green Feather's range. It didn't want to let the Peacock King protect it. However, since it was already fixed in place by Keke, its wish would never be fulfilled. Moreover, the Peacock King also didn't want to give up Goldie. If this keeps up, it would be impossible for the two of them to escape the fate of getting wiped out.

However, the little critter had a change of mind. Seeing how the two were giving their all for each other's sake, even when flipped out, Keke didn't have the heart to make its move anymore. It must be mentioned that the snow-white little critter was very kind-hearted. It actually took pity on the opponent under these kinds of circumstances.

These kinds of thoughts gave the two beasts a chance of survival. From a distant location, two figures were closing in at high speed. They came flying from the sky like two streaks of lightning.

"We beg for your mercy!"

"We admit defeat!"

Since the little critter had flipped out, only a short time had passed. The White Tiger's death strongly affected everyone. For fear that the Peacock King and Goldie would meet the same fate, these two ignored the rules of the tournament and broke into the stage at a crucial moment. They wanted to prevent the following tragedy.

At the moment, the snow-white little critter's anger had already gradually settled down. First, it was because it could clearly feel the life force of Tenax slowly recovering. Second, it was moved by the friendship between Goldie and the Peacock King.

The kind-hearted Keke couldn't bear to make its move again.

When the two elders violated the rules and appeared on the stage, the little critter instinctively stopped.

After that, another six elderly men appeared. Those six were the guards of the tournament.

Seeing that the little critter permitted it and didn't let a tragedy take place, the two elders were very moved. After all, they were able to drag two sacred beasts back from the verge of death.

After carrying the Golden Lion King and White Tiger's bodies, Keke disappeared from the scene with a swish as it rushed towards Tenax.

Just at this time, an angry bellow transmitted over, "Let go of the White Tiger!" Following closely, a tall elderly woman flew over and appeared on the stage.

"Boom!"

A streak of lightning was launched at Keke.

Everyone caused a storm of protest. So be it if the violator just broke into the warbeast stage, but she actually made her move against the competing warbeast. This had incited public anger and immediately caused the Amber Warbeast Castle to break out with noise.

Keke was as quick as lightning. While carrying the Golden Lion and White Tiger's dead bodies, it disappeared with a whooshing sound and dodged the attack, then it angrily turned its sight to the sky.

"Evil creature, release the White Tiger's dead body, otherwise you can go and die!" The old woman was quite fierce. She hated the snow-white little critter to the extreme.

"Guards, go and kill that old witch, quick!"

"Quickly behead that old witch!"

.....

The crowds were furious and shouted angrily in succession.

Keke was amenable to coaxing but not coercion. It was very angry as it looked at the old woman. It dodged yet another attack and then appeared in front of Tenax as if it had passed through the space.

"Swish!"

The White Tiger's body was totally crushed after a rainbow-colored radiance swept past. The life essence of the White Tiger burst out and was all pushed into Tenax's body by Keke.

"You hateful evil creature!" The old woman moved even fiercer.

"Squeak!!" The little critter flipped out. It threw the Golden Lion King towards a distant location and then jumped towards the old woman like a streak of white light. It instantly launched the rainbow-colored divine radiance.

"Bang!"

The old woman, who was flying over, was sent tumbling away in a short while.

"Squeak! Squeak!!"

The snow-white little critter shouted angrily and followed up with another divine radiance. A large area of the old woman's clothing were ripped apart as she was sent somersaulting in the sky.

CHAPTER 200 – OPENING THE THIRD EYE

The old woman was very tall and wouldn't be outdone by any ordinary man. Moreover, she looked a little Herculean. If not because she possessed a few characteristics of a woman, she would absolutely be looked upon as a man. Her face had wrinkles, but she did not have the benevolence of the elderly. On the contrary, she looked very ruthless and gave people a bad impression.

With her age and flying ability, it was very easy for people to recognize her as a Zephyrus level expert.

And yet, she was sent somersaulting by the snow-white little critter two times in succession. This was a really shocking event. Naturally, the old woman herself felt even angrier and astonished. To be sent flying away by such a young little critter, it was a very embarrassing event.

"Evil creature, you are courting death!" Following the old woman's fierce shout, nine crescent moon-shaped light blades fell from the sky. Although they were materialized by energy, the light blades were flickering as if they were real divine weapons.

"Squeak! Squeak!!" The little critter wouldn't take it lying down. It glared at the old woman angrily with its gem-like black eyes and fought back.

The rainbow-colored radiances were launched one after another. A total of twenty nine light beams amassed together to form a blazing divine radiance that was launched at the old woman.

This was a soundless collision, but it was equally intense. It could be seen that the holy radiance and densely concentrated light blades broke into pieces as they clashed in the sky. Although there was no ear-splitting noise, the terrifying fluctuations were enough to cause people's heart to race. It felt as if heaven and earth was rocked by a major disaster. It made everyone's soul tremble

The sound was annihilated, even the energy was annihilated. It's only because of this that the devastating storm didn't spread out. This kind of confrontation was the most terrifying. Once a little bit of the energy burst out, the aftermath would be considerably grave.

Seeing that a black hole had swallowed up that space just now, all the spectators felt a chill down their spine.

The old woman's light blades were all destroyed in the sky, and the little critter's holy radiance didn't get completely routed. It continued to rush forward, showering down upon the old woman and ruthlessly shot her from the sky.

The dragon's major divine ability, once it reached the ultimate state, it could confine everything, sweep everything, destroy everything, unable to be stopped, it couldn't be stopped!

The little critter had obviously grasped a little of these three essentials. However, it was most proficient in confinement. In regards to the "sweeping", it was not that proficient in it yet. As for the "destruction", it had only touched upon this field a little bit. However, that was already sufficient. After sweeping the old woman, Keke directly used the confinement technique to trap her and ruthlessly smashed her on the heavily damaged ground.

"Bang!"

Dust filled the air as the old woman was smashed into the ground. A human-shaped hole was carved on the surface of the ground.

"AHHH!!!" The old woman rushed out with her face covered in dirt. She was completely driven mad. She hoped she could commit suicide. To be tossed around by a one foot tall little critter like this, she really had no face left to exist anymore. 1

Everyone in the Amber Warbeast Castle raised an uproar, almost to the point of going berserk.

The little critter had challenged its limit again and again. First, it overpowered the four sacred beasts, and then it broke free from the bounds of Genesis. Following closely, it killed sacred beasts as if it was preparing a dish. And now, it even sent a Zephyrus level old woman somersaulting into the sky. Just how strong was this little thing? Almost nobody could see through the little critter's strength.

The very most important matter was its expression; naive, immature, and

throwing tantrum in a fit of rage. It didn't seem to consider defeating the old woman as something worth showing off. It was not aware of the consequences.

“Evil creature!!” The old woman finally lost it. She didn't care about everyone's mockery and ridicule anymore as she flew towards the little critter with killing intent, “Little bastard... I will definitely get rid of you!”

Keke was very angry, nobody had ever called it a little bastard once. Even though it was a little critter, it had the heart of a young child.

“Whoosh!”

White light flashed and faded away as the snow-white little critter kept changing its position in the sky. As if it was crossing empty space, Keke abruptly appeared beside the old woman. It lifted its hand to launch a divine radiance. With a bang, the divine radiance was flung at the old woman's face.

The old woman's body slanted to one side and her cheek immediately started to swell. Although she was hit by the divine radiance, it felt as if she had received a slap on the face.

“Little bastard!!!” The old woman flew into rage out of humiliation. Such humiliation was really too much.

“Squeak!!” Keke shouted in a fit of rage. Being scolded as a little bastard by others, it was evidently very angry.

“Whoosh!”

It abruptly disappeared once again and appeared not far behind the old woman with a swish. Then with a ripping sound, it launched a divine radiance and struck the top of the old woman's head.

“Bang!”

The old woman was hit and directly fell to the dusty ground from the sky.

The entire stadium was in an uproar, accompanied by rowdy jeering. The old woman really wished she could find a hole and bury herself underground.

Just at this time, the six guards of the warbeast tournament flew over and stopped the old woman, who still wanted to rise in revolt. As a matter of fact, these six should have come over at an earlier time. Just that, when they saw that

the little critter actually had the upper hand, they just looked on without lifting a finger. That was because they were very dissatisfied with the old woman's behavior, so they wanted her to lose face.

The six of them found this old woman to be very despicable. She was clearly up in years, and yet, her temper was even worse than that of the ill-mannered vixen. She didn't have a tid bit of a senior's grace. She was a shame to her peers.

The disturbance on the warbeast stage had been settled forcefully, but it was very difficult to settle down the spectator's high tension. Everyone was continuously discussing just what level had the little critter reached.

"Don't tell me it had already reached the demigod level?"

"Hard to say, but I don't think it should be that exaggerating."

"Due to these sacred beast's powerful divine abilities, they seemed to be unparalleled, but their real power should be around that of the Historia realm. However, without the strength of a demigod, it is hard to fight against their almost freakish divine abilities."

.....

An elder in the Empyrean VIP lounge gave the most accurate evaluation.

"The Golden Lion should be at the Historia realm, but due to its unrivalled divine ability, it is hard to suppress it unless a Zephyrus realm expert makes their move. As for that snow-white little critter, maybe it already touched upon the edge of Zephyrus realm... that's why it was able to send the tiger woman just now somersaulting a few times."

Divine ability, especially those unrivalled ones, possessed the greatest might. If their power was to completely manifest, it would be totally unimaginable. This was the only hope for the weak to be capable of stepping across the dividing line!

Therefore, when people began to open up the treasures in their body, they would try to dig out rare divine abilities. Hence why this realm was given the name of Historia. However, just how many unique and unmatched divine abilities were out there in the world? In a certain kind of sense, except for the inherited skills of some uncommon races, all the other divine abilities could be duplicated

or derived.

The snow-white little critter was pushed into the limelight and swept across the warbeast tournament with absolute power. Causing everyone to be shocked and rousing a lot of interest in the little thing.

Before, Keke was wearing golden monkey fur and child's clothes to disguise itself. Nobody was able to recognize it. However, its true identity was exposed after it broke free from Genesis. Some of its behaviors after that attracted the eyes of everyone present and shocked all the spectators.

Dugu Jianmo silently watched for a really long time.

Even someone who knew her roots and background such as Yan Qingcheng was endlessly shocked. She absolutely never thought that Keke was this strong. At that time, although she knew it was very extraordinary, her impression of it was only that of a mischievous and cute little thing.

Let's not even mention fatty Zhuge, his jaws already dropped due to shock a long time ago. Although the bastard fatty had keen insight and could tell that Keke was out of the ordinary, but he never thought it was this EXTRAORDINARY.

Katalina, Lazio, Fairsnow, and the gang had once seen the snow-white little critter. After Keke swept across the entire warbeast tournament, they were so taken aback to the point that they were petrified.

Everyone who recognized the little critter almost went crazy, it was that inconceivable.

Those who returned from dragon island, whether it was intentional or inadvertent, they didn't leak out that there was once a snow-white little critter who dared to provoke the Dragon King. Therefore, even if people were to investigate the events that once occurred on dragon island, only a few people would know about the secret that Keke came from dragon island.

However, it was no longer possible to keep this a secret. This time, among the people who came to watch the warbeast tournament, there were no lack of people who returned from dragon island. They immediately recognized the snow-white little critter at a glance. Thus, they also naturally linked it to Xiao Chen. As a result, some of the elders in the Empyrean VIP lounges received a

report within moments. Consequently, the secret was no longer a secret.

At present, the old woman was already banished from the premises. The Peacock King and Goldie were already taken away by the two elderly people. A mysterious man who was clad in golden flames walked over to persuade the Golden Lion King to leave, but he was refused by the Golden Lion King.

The two Dragon Kings were brought by others to a safe zone. Since then, the warbeast stage had once again regained tranquility. Only Keke and the Golden Lion King were left on the stage.

“Roar!!!”

The Golden Lion King raised its head to let out a roar that shook the very earth. After that, it rose high into the sky and floated in midair. Its pupils emitted gold glints that gave people chill down their spine. The Lion King had never suffered a loss like this before. Since birth, it had been through dozens of life and death battles, it could even be said that the Golden Lion paved its way out from a pile of corpses. It had never experienced defeat once among the young beasts.

Around the third vertical eye, divine flames were wriggling about. As if it had formed a world of its own, mysterious characters actually floated into sight one after another. The characters emitted ancient vibes like that of the sacrificial writings as they were dedicated to the underworld to call upon some kind of power!

Today, if the Golden Lion King was unable to open its third vertical eye to defeat Keke, it wouldn't be willing to give up.

In order to ensure that it wouldn't be disturbed, the Golden Lion King had a fierce expression. The golden mane around its three heads were erected as liquified golden energy enveloped its entire body. It was bearing the acute pain to make some kind of sacrifice.

The blazing golden divine light was pulsing like a flame. Even the sky seemed to be combusting.

The Eye of Destruction abruptly opened, then it closed at high speed. The bloody ray vanished in a flash. After that, a bloody pattern flowed out from that vertical eye as an inexhaustible power was flowing towards the third vertical eye.

The Eye of Genesis opened quickly and closed just as quick. The black light disappeared in an instant as a bloody pattern appeared. Same as the former, the inexhaustible energy flowed from that vertical eye to the third one.

The two vertical eyes would be completely sealed for a really long time in the future. All for gathering enough power at present to open the third vertical eye immediately!

Around the third vertical eye, those mysterious characters emerged unceasingly and formed a world of their own. It was practically impossible to understand the meaning of those ancient characters. Indistinctly, the sound of chanting and praying could be heard. It was as if they had traveled through time and were transmitted from the distant past.

The voice was getting louder over time and gradually became clearer. No one was able to understand the meaning of those words nor what “he” was feeling. They only knew that it was a sincere prayer and summoning.

It was extremely bizarre!

When the third vertical eye of the Golden Lion was activated, it would actually bring about such a bizarre effect. It made everyone feel as if a storm was welling up in their heart.

This... was apparently a ceremony!

The chanting sound, the praying sound, the sound of the offerings and massacre... they were like the long drawn out sound of an ancient demon!

Was that demonic sound the sincere prayer of the people in the distant past? Just what kind of existence was the Golden Lion King? Could it be a race that was once worshipped by the common people?!

As time passed by quietly, an infinitely small crack could be seen as the third vertical eye of the Golden Lion King was on the verge of opening!

And during the process when that ancient demonic sound was transmitted outward, the snow-white little critter was bewildered. It seemed as if its heartstrings had been touched, the little critter was at a loss.

All of a sudden, the Golden Lion King's third vertical eye opened widely at high

speed!

As if it had sensed danger, the snow-white little critter instantly became incomparably solemn. It was not at all the same as it was in the past. All of that was due to the ancient demonic sound, it was as if a certain sealed door of the little critter had been opened.

“Wooo!”

An eerie sound transmitted outward. The Golden Lion King’s location completely transformed into nothingness, a big section of space seemed to be on the verge of shrinking into a tiny speck until it completely disappear.

The Void!

Even Keke was caught up within.

The Golden Lion King’s figure already couldn’t be seen, and Keke was on the verge of disappearing!

Just at this time, the snow-white little critter seemed to have pushed open a dusty and mysterious door that was in the middle of a long river. Its pair of eyes emitted two brilliant rays.

A black light flickered, it carried a destructive aura like it was a magical light of the underworld. The other light was white and boundless, as if a star had suddenly been lit up and illuminated the boundless universe. Millions and millions of stars poured their light down in a torrent.

The two light beams that appeared all of a sudden were accompanied with a sudden clap of thunder. The situation changed in an instant as heaven and earth turned pale. The boundless energy that spread out had enough power to swallow the whole world.

It was a very strange feeling. It was obviously nothing more than a white and black light, but it felt as if there were thousands of men and horses surging forward. It gave everyone an extremely bizarre feeling.

At this very moment, lil Keke who wore a solemn expression that gave people an extremely ridiculous misconception. It seemed as if Keke was an indomitable great god; dignified and inviolable.

Whether the Golden Lion King had fully opened the third vertical eye was still unknown, but the little critter had already opened an extremely terrifying eye!

CHAPTER 201 – THE WORLD

It was unknown whether it was an illusion or a real world that appeared in the void, the “speck” that should have returned to the void suddenly exploded as endless gray clouds shrouded more than half of the sky.

It was oppressive, the thick clouds of lead was dusky and knew no bounds. The deathly stillness affected everyone’s spirit greatly. It was as if they found themselves in despair. There was no hint of hope in the thick and heavy gray clouds.

This was a lonely world, a lifeless and hopeless world!

As the dark clouds drifted, the shadow of a huge mountain appeared from beyond the abyss. Furthermore, the blood-colored earth also revealed itself slowly. There was even an ink-like ocean rushing forth.

This was a mysterious yet terrifying scene. For a terrain like this to appear in the sky, it was as if a grayish world was abruptly thrust into the empty space. It made everyone unable to distinguish whether it was real or fake, nor were they able to tell where it came from.

This was the outcome brought about by the Golden Lion’s third vertical eye!

Of course, this was not all. This was not even the embodiment of the third vertical eye’s power. This was merely a connected phenomenon.

What was the true power of the third vertical eye, it was still unknown to date. Only that... for this kind of dreadful sight to appear and cover more than half of the sky was already out of everyone’s comprehension. Was this really an ability a Historia level Golden Lion King was capable of?

If that was indeed the case, that could only mean this exotic beast was really too formidable, much more so than what anyone could have expected!

“This is not an actual world, it’s an illusion...” In the Emphyrean VIP lounge, the voice of an elder was transmitted outwards. However, his tone of voice indicated he was not very certain of it.

After the deathly still world suddenly appeared, the chanting and the praying

sound could be heard once again. The sound was gloomy and creaky... it was like an ancient demonic sound that was relayed from ancient times.

“Could it really be that the once forgotten god is making a reappearance?” A very bewildered old man spoke out the doubt in his heart.

“Wooo.....”

The inhumane whistle abruptly echoed in the air and kept all sounds under control. It became the only sound in the heaven and earth. It sounded like the raging waves beating against the shore, yet again, it sounded like rocks boring through the sky!

The dusky and hopeless world instantly became as black as ink. All the sceneries inside disappeared as the snow-white little critter was engulfed by the endless darkness.

The darkness that instantly appeared after that seemed to go on endlessly. At this very moment, everyone felt as if they were on the verge of collapsing.

Regardless of whether it was the older generation experts with profound abilities, or the youngster with average abilities, even the aristocrats with no knowledge of martial arts; every single spectator within the Amber Warbeast Castle had the feeling that the world was collapsing.

Their intuition told them, within the darkness, it was very probable that the Golden Lion King had already opened the third vertical eye and was right in the middle of dealing with the snow-white little critter!

Many practitioners with profound abilities had already given up on the big crystal screen and directly went to the roof of the castles to look around. However, nobody was able to see through the that void at a high altitude. That kind of absolute darkness had completely engulfed all lights. Even the midday sunlight had turned colorless long ago, while the sun had transformed into a black sun.

Even people who possessed clairvoyance were unable to see through the endless darkness!

A moment of eternity.

As such, a few seconds felt like one hundred million years. Everyone urgently wanted to know what was going on inside.

“Rips! Rips! Rips!”

A ripping sound abruptly reverberated.

The figure of the snow-white little critter was like a divine lamp in the middle of the night as it illuminated a wide expanse of space. It stood in the middle of the void calmly, with its entire body emitting inexhaustible splendor. Thousands of streaks of colorful rays were circulating around the little critter.

The streak of lights emitted from Keke’s pair of eyes immediately swept away the endless darkness. The black light was flickering and the white light seemed boundless. The Ninth Heaven was engulfed by what seemed like the vast ocean, it was as if the Milky Way had fallen unto the boundless earth.

The world within the darkness became visible due to the two divine lights emitted by the little critter... The unending brown mountain range, the boundless black ocean, the vast blood-colored earth.

All of these once again made an appearance.

At the same time, something extremely terrifying happened where the snow-white little critter’s line of sight was directed at.

That unending mountain range was collapsing, that endless ocean was raging, that boundless earth was fracturing.

Up till the very end, an earth-shattering power enveloped the entire field. The dreadful aftermath caused by the snow-white little critter’s two eyes shook everyone to their core.

Everything before its eyes ceased to exist.

When it looked at the mountain, the mountain would collapse; when it looked at the ocean, the ocean would dry up; when it looked at the ground, the earth would cave in.

That huge mountain vanished in a puff of smoke, that boundless ocean was evaporating at high speed, the mother earth was ruthlessly caving in...It was a scene of the total destruction of the world.

When it finally stopped, it was as if everyone had already been petrified.

In the end, many people slumped on the ground helplessly. This was because they were either too excited or their spirit had fallen apart.

“Those were illusions, they were not real...” An old man who stood on top of the castle roof spoke to himself. However, from his expression, it seemed like he was not very confident in his answer.

Whether that was real or an illusion, just who could tell?

Light reappeared in the dark sky. The eyes of the snow-white little critter had destroyed everything. That grayish and hopeless world was completely destroyed.

The world existed because of the eye; the world was destroyed because of the eye.

The world was quickly restored back to its original shape.

The black and white divine light in the snow-white little critter's eyes faded away. It had also changed from that dignified state back to its originally lively state. Its glittering black eyes were sweeping all directions as it occasionally exposed a muddle-headed expression. It blinked its eyes constantly, as if it was wondering why it suddenly came to possess that kind of power just now.

The figure of the Golden Lion King appeared in the sky. Its golden body was close to collapsing; there were horrifying wounds all over its body, the blood had turned gold-colored and gushed out unceasingly. Even its white, eerie bones were poking out of the flesh.

Three of its vertical eyes were dripping with bright red blood that seemed to contrast to the golden blood all over its body. All of its vertical eyes seemed to be shut tight as only blood was dripping down.

The Golden Lion cast one last glance at the snow-white little critter before it slowly closed its ice-cold eyes. After that, it fell from the high altitude.

Crushing defeat, it was thoroughly defeated.

Nobody knew if the Golden Lion King had really fully opened the third vertical eye. Even more people didn't know what kind of hideous power was hidden in

that mysterious vertical eye.

However, everyone knew the snow-white little critter's eyes were even more fearful! In that very instant, it actually made that illusory world fall apart. At the same time, it gave people the feeling of spiritual collapse.

That was a power which was forcefully driven out by the Golden Lion King. Or it might possibly be that, the little critter's hidden power was awakened due to the sutras and prayers.

No one in the entire Amber Warbeast Castle uttered a single word. Although everything had concluded just now, people were still having a hard time breaking away from that atmosphere as they silently looked at the scene.

"This kind of existence will make even the gods jealous. This will not end well." An elderly voice reverberated throughout the Amber Warbeast Castle.

The instant Xiao Chen heard that, he immediately had an ominous premonition. That's right, the snow-white little critter was too extraordinary. Perhaps... it might really arouse the jealousy of the gods.

From time immemorial, heroes usually died early and beautiful women would encounter misfortune, would that kind of tragedy happen to Keke as well? That was completely an involuntary response, it was a kind of mysterious intuition. It made Xiao Chen raise his guard reflexively.

Superstitious belief? That was impossible. Xiao Chen believed in himself, he believed that strength would decide everything. However, he had no choice but to... make a plan as soon as possible. The circumstances have changed due to the warbeast tournament this time.

In the sky, a streak of gold light flew over in the blink of an eye. Before the Golden Lion King fell to the ground, a powerful-looking old man caught it.

The golden divine flame raged on in midair. A tall silhouette could be seen within the golden flame. That was an old man wearing broken golden armor. He carried the Golden Lion King and slowly landed on the ground. His expression so was excited that it was almost fanatical. He pointed at Keke while his entire body was trembling, as if he had seen the most unimaginable thing. After that, he suddenly knelt on the ground and muttered with an almost reverent tone. He

kept prostrating himself in worship while facing the empty West sky.

Such an action caused everyone to feel dumbstruck.

It became like this because he clearly recognized Keke's race and origin!

"What is he saying?"

"I don't know, I don't understand what he is saying."

"It sounded a little like the language of the ancient clan."

.....

In the Empyrean VIP lounge, one old man was exceptionally startled, "Could that be the genuine ancient people's language?"

In the sky, the snow-white little critter looked at this scene muddle-headedly. It didn't know why it turned out like this, so it approached the old man on the ground.

However, it seemed as if the old man in the golden divine flame had received a shock, he carried the Golden Lion and flew away without turning back.

"Squeak!!!" Keke shouted and wanted to give chase, but after a series of battles, it already didn't have much strength left. In the end it could only land on the ground while feeling vexed, scratching its head in doubt.

The Amber Warbeast Castle became silent for a moment before a clamor suddenly soared into the sky.

Such powerful young beasts!

Regardless of the White Tiger, who had already passed away, or the seriously injured Peacock King and Goldie, they were all exotic beasts that were hard to come by. Let's not even mention the two Dragon Kings.

Furthermore, the Golden Lion King and Keke had revealed formidable divine abilities that had exceeded everyone's expectation!

If they could grow up smoothly, just who could be well-matched for them in the future? Disposing of them now was perhaps their only chance, but... who would dare to make their move? In regards to this, everyone kept their silence. They were but a cub, if their parents were to be provoked... it would be

unimaginable! It probably wouldn't be hard for them to wipe out a big clan with thousands of years of history.

At the very least, the known information had shown that the old man following the Golden Lion was suspected to be from the ancient race. And the snow-white little critter had once been taken away by that existence into the depths of the south. As such, it was enough to indicate something.....

CHAPTER 202 – UNSTABLE SITUATION ARISE AGAIN

The White Tiger suffered a crushing defeat and perished in the battlefield; Goldie's Shadow Partners were broken and was only left with one life; The five-colored Peacock King was on the verge of dying and survived only because of the protection from the Primal Green Feather; The Golden Lion King, although its vertical eyes were remarkably powerful, still couldn't score a win in the end.

The snow-white little critter made an appearance during the finals and swept the floor with its opponents. It ultimately rose to the top and became the true king of the Sacred Beasts in the South.

This was no less than a hurricane sweeping past the Celestial City. Keke's name had been spread all over the city as soon as the warbeast tournament came to a conclusion. Moreover, its popularity was rising rapidly to the heights of legendary.

In the eyes of the overwhelming majority, the snow-white little critter was cute yet powerful. However, in the eyes of some people, it had already become a thorn in their flesh, they cursed it as the "little monster" resentfully.

Because it forcefully intruded into the competition and changed the flow, many people's expectations were crushed, especially the owner of the six Saints. They despised the little critter to the bone.

In short, the Celestial City was very noisy, almost to the point of an outburst.

Before the warbeast tournament dropped its curtains, the snow-white little critter was invited to go to the top of a tall platform. That awesome platform seemed to symbolize the sacred beast king of the south. It hadn't been used for many years already.

The divine platform that was lying unused for a long time revealed itself. The brownish stone stairs were leading up in a spiral. The snow-white little critter sized up the platform curiously. The ten meter tall divine platform looked like a large inscribed stele, the names of a few dozen sacred beast kings were carved on top of it.

While rolling its big eyes, Keke left a crooked paw print beside its name. The people accompanying it wanted to laugh, but they were unable to. This little critter made an outstanding appearance and caused the three warbeast castles to remain very passive. That was because, they permitted the little critter to take part midway in the competition that led to this outcome. In the end, they had to use many good words to convince the master of the six sacred beasts.

This might be the youngest sacred beast king in the history of the South desolate region, but it might be the most powerful one in the future! The little critter just left and the paw print it left behind started to make big cracks in the surroundings. Those people who originally wanted to laugh were so shocked that they shut their mouth immediately.

After a short rest, the little critter was already jumping around energetically. The exhaustion from the battle was already cleared away a long time ago. There was no need to doubt, if the battle was to continue, it could easily fend them off. The little critter possessed unlimited energy, this made everyone exclaim in admiration involuntarily.

Keke was eating the ginseng king skewers as it walked up the divine platform, causing every spectator feel dizzy. All those skewers were made out from the best parts of old ginsengs. Perhaps, each of those ginsengs were more than two thousand years old. Just who would this be wasteful and feed the snow-white little critter like this? These kind of skewers would cost at least six to seven ginseng kings.

On top of the ten meter tall divine platform, Keke was embracing the white jade box. Its expression was brimming with happiness. The sacred radiance leaking out from the box made it all the more milky white. The little critter was almost infatuated.

Keke directly opened the jade box and took out the relics. The dark brown divine platform was immediately illuminated by thousand streaks of multicolored light.

The sacred beast the once accompanied Buddha, its strength was one that could be well imagine. How could the relics it left behind after breaking through to the Nirvana stage be any ordinary item? It contained an extremely majestic

Buddha power.

The relic was as big as a dragon's eye, it was as lustrous as a pearl, and flickered like the stars. There was an indistinct, yet dense and bright-colored mist lingering in the surrounding of the relic. The mist formed a powerful domain and illuminated everything in the surroundings.

The energy fluctuation was like a stormy sea capable of amassing worldly essence from all directions. It gathered all the brilliance from ten directions and formed a peculiar, yet magnificent scene. The brilliant rays made every object seemingly lose their light.

The snow-white little critter was so happy that it almost passed out from happiness. It threw away the jade box and did something that caused everyone to feel dumbstruck. It directly tossed the relic into its mouth and chewed it like a jelly bean.

Many people had the urge to bang their heads. How could this little critter do such a thing? Its strength was obvious to all, but it was still a cub after all. The power contained by the relic was definitely very terrific. That was left behind by the sacred beast that once accompanied Buddha after all. The little critter actually consumed it directly and did not refine it slowly!

It was a scene that made everyone completely speechless.

Naturally, only a few people noticed it; the little critter only ate half of the relic, the other half was safely secured in its paw. It used the rainbow-colored radiance to confine the relic to prevent any brilliant rays from leaking out. This was set aside for Tenax.

“Crack! Crack!”

Keke ate the relic like it was eating a jelly bean, it swallowed the relic within two or three bite. Moreover, it creased its nose as if it was saying the flavor was not all that good. This expression really gave everyone a pang of dizziness.

The scene of its body exploding and dying didn't come true. It was like nothing happened to the little critter at all. It moved its big eyes in a circle to glance in all directions.

In the end, Xiao Chen also ascended onto the divine platform. He was unable

to hide it anymore as he had already been exposed a long time ago. He knew that when the warbeast tournament ended, the news regarding how Tenax and Keke were following him would have already reached the ears of many major powers.

Xiao Chen carried Tenax, took Keke along, and left in a hurry. Behind him were glances with many unknown meanings.

Although the warbeast tournament had closed its curtain, the disturbances wouldn't end just like this.

And on the same day, a major event that shook the entire Southern region of the immortal's mainland took place; an Immortal's Temple actually appeared within the borders of the Terra Empire. A mysterious yet magnificent paradise appeared in the sky and caused countless practitioners to flock over.

Reportedly, that Temple in Heaven had already been discovered since yesterday. Only that... someone was forcefully sealing off the information, which caused the news to arrive one day later at the Celestial City.

In barely a single day, they had already discovered four divine weapons, namely the Dragonslayer Sword 1, the Demon Sealing Club, the Sacrificial Altar, and the Immortal Tree.

This was undoubtedly sensational news. Just these four divine weapons could make people go crazy. All of them were antiques with deep history.

The news of the Dragonslayer Sword had been spread around for who knows how many eras already. Reportedly, the sword had once bathed in the blood of countless dragons. One must know that dragons were the representative of the strongest race.

The Demon Sealing Club was capable of sealing demons and pushing the gods back. Its extreme might was unimaginable. Other than the user himself, it was hard to understand how daunting it really was.

The Sacrificial Altar was a rare spiritual item. According to legend, it was built by Laozi and Buddha in collaboration. If the legend was true, one might be able to call upon the wisdom of a few ancestor gods with sincere prayer.

The Immortal Tree was a black metallic tree. If it was planted in one's family, it

could grant immortality to the mortals. As for the benefits a practitioner would receive, there's no need to even mention it.

It could be said that, these four treasures could cause a huge sensation even if only one of them was to spread out. The ancient treasures that existed since time immemorial were said to possess unimaginable might.

And these were just divine items obtained after breaking through the first seal of the Temple in Heaven. Just how much more ancient treasures could be found within, it was unimaginable. Especially when they thought about the treasure in the heart of the Immortal's Temple, their minds were already filled with millions of stars. Many people went crazy over this and passed the rumor; that it was extremely possible for an extraordinary artifact to be unearthed, so much so that the item might even surpass a Divine Artifact!

Someone guessed that this Temple must be the historical remains of a certain ancestor god.

Since it had already come to this, many people suddenly discovered that, the Tyrant Dragon King and Winged Dragon King throwing the match was not due to the reason they initially thought. They left the Celestial City hurriedly with a few powerful older generation experts... all because of the major event that occurred in Terra Empire. They were well-informed and started the journey ahead of time.

The aftermath of the warbeast tournament pales in comparison to the news of the Temple in Heaven. It immediately made everyone in the Celestial City flare up with passion and countless practitioners were already making their way towards the Terra Empire.

To the north of Terra Empire, one of the places that was said to be in the heart of the immortal's mainland — Middle Earth. The rumor was even received by many practitioners of the Middle Earth, which was said to be vast and boundless. Many famous practitioners were already making their way towards the Terra Empire.

Three days after the clamor, Xiao Chen was still making an all-out effort to tend to Tenax. With the sacred beast's relic as a source, and the rainbow-colored sacred tree as a conductor, he was nursing Tenax's body.

He was not in a hurry to rush to the Terra Empire. This world has so many

treasures, just who would be able to gather all the divine items in his own hands? He knew his own limits, with his strength at the current level, he was simply powerless to vie for it. Even taking Keke along was out of the question. Rather than taking the risk and cast away his life in vain, he might as well just sit around to gaze at the clouds.

Without a doubt, Tenax was a special kind of Dragon King. Its recovery power far exceeded that of any other sacred beasts. When they were still on dragon island, Xiao Chen was already aware of this. Even in the face of death, it was able to come around.

And a miracle shall happen once again. Those crushed internal organs were actually regenerating under the therapy of the relic and recombined under the guidance of the rainbow-colored sacred tree. Life force gradually returned to that deathly still body.

Reborn!

Tenax had tricked death once again and that feat was not short of reincarnation! After experiencing an extraordinary transformation, Tenax completely regained consciousness.

Although it still couldn't move about, it had recovered and without a doubt, it even surpassed its former self. After going through the baptism of life or death, it will become stronger and be able to walk even further.

The outside world was in complete confusion. The aftermath of the warbeast tournament had yet to calm down, and the Immortal's Temple that was floating in the sky of the Terra Empire caused yet another sensation. The Southern part of the mainland was unable to calm down.

The trees longed for peace but the wind would never cease. Xiao Chen wanted to stay out of it, but was that possible?

The warbeast tournament had already made him a superstar. And the faintly discernable temple in the sky seemed to possess some unimaginable magic power too. Although it was a few thousand miles away, it actually caused the jet-black broken sword at his side to tremble incessantly. On the third day, the sword even streaked through the sky! It transformed into a black light and charged towards the Terra Empire.

While looking at the broken sword flying away, Xiao Chen did not go after it.

2

These three days, he was always in deep thoughts, thinking about which path he should take in his training. The performance of the few sacred beasts during the warbeast tournament gave him a great shock. For a divine ability to actually be that formidable and allowed a Historia level cub to fight against a demigod.

When he thought of that, he couldn't help but admire the innate skills of some races. At most, the Golden Lion King shouldn't be more than five years old. And Keke was only a little more than one year old. Yet, they were already this powerful at such a young age. There's a large gap of power when compared to mankind. Just thinking about it was very discouraging.

These three days, Xiao Chen kept thinking in silence, "How can I become much stronger? Maybe I should dedicate my effort into digging out some of the rarely seen divine abilities."

Only that... it wouldn't be easy to take control of a unique divine ability.

To explore an unexplored path, Xiao Chen kept pondering over this. However, just how to come up with a new path?

Although he was merely at the Historia realm, Xiao Chen thought about it very deeply, very far; these three days were the first sublimation of his training ideology. He wanted to become much stronger, he wanted to walk even further, he wanted to return to the mortal world.....

CHAPTER 203 – CHOICES

At the southern part of the mainland, the appearance of the Immortal's Temple stirred up movements from all directions.

Every night, that watchtower high in the clouds would shine with countless lights and attract endless beams of starlight to pour down in a torrent. Some people suspected that it was the dwelling place of a certain ancestor god. That's why the boundless essence of the heaven and earth would be aroused along with its pulsations.

The Celestial City of the South followed the movements of the wind and the clouds.

Many forces chose their strongest warriors to send to the Terra Empire. They were not expecting to get any of the lost treasures or extraordinary divine artifacts of the ancestor god. If they could get ancient treasures similar to the Dragonslayer Sword, the Demon Sealing Club, the Sacrificial Altar, or the Immortal Tree, that would be more than enough. 1

However, these divine objects that had been passed down since ancient times were sure to be very few in number. If there were too many of them, then they wouldn't be a treasure anymore, they would be nothing more than autumn's spinach. The fight over the spiritual treasures would certainly be very intense. Those without great power wouldn't be able to take those treasures for themselves.

Xiao Chen was sitting quietly in the house.

How should he go about creating a unique martial path? Xiao Chen has been troubled over this for the past seven days. In the end, he took a huge blow to his mental and physical health, his soul was on the verge of collapsing.

The bright moon was hanging high up in the sky. The moonlight sprinkled down like water ripples. Xiao Chen arrived in the courtyard and looked up at the bright moon in the sky. His mind was like a prancing dragon, a single leap reached up thousands of miles and his mind was already revolving around the Moon Palace. In the next instant, he was drifting among the unbounded stars.

Xiao Chen smiled bitterly as the anxiety in his heart faded away. He was too determined to have his own way, instead of obsession, he had already fallen into depravity. How to create a path unique to himself? By forcefully exploring a path no forebearers had ever taken? With his current power, it was still too soon.

Just... let everything flow naturally.

After cutting off that obsession and letting his mental state return to peace, Xiao Chen immediately felt full of vigor and his heart felt ethereal.

To create a unique path, one had to cross over hundreds of known paths.

Without experiencing all kinds of forms, how would one be able to understand the way of the world? Without seeing millions of delicate flowers blooming with their own eyes, how would one come to know appreciation and self-admiration? Only by experiencing it would one be able to understand it clearly. Only by crossing it once would one be able to comprehend it.

In order to break new ground and forge ahead, it was indispensable for one to take the path predecessors had once taken and come to realize the wisdom of the former generations.

Xiao Chen's mind was very calm. Three days of "obsession" was the fountainhead of power. It allowed him to think of unconventional training methods, to walk an uncommon path, and to break away from what was common. Four days of "thinking" was awareness. It allowed him to "understand" and "comprehend".

Xiao Chen's power did not rise, but his mental state had undergone a complete transformation. The sea of consciousness is boundless, it could contain all living things in the heavens and earth, it could contain millions and millions of stars. What one thought and felt, everything starts from the heart. This was the source of power, this was the root of self-sublimation.

The goal, from henceforth, is to surpass thyself.

While the outside world was going through a turbulent time, Xiao Chen remained unmoved. The ancient treasures could hardly move his heart. Instead of going out to search for divine weapons, he'd rather use that time to train his own body. The human body was a treasure in itself, it contained endless power.

If one could open their own seal, what they could acquire would be greater than any extrinsic treasures.

Keep exploring the treasure in the body until I dig out a path unique to myself. With that in mind, Xiao Chen meditated calmly and naturally.

In the blink of an eye, ten days had passed. The seal on the Temple in Heaven still couldn't be cut open. More and more practitioners had gathered at Terra Empire and numerous fierce battles had already broken out. The casualties were innumerable, and many well-known practitioners had fallen.

The undercurrent in the Celestial City also surged up violently.

Eleven days after the Temple appeared in the borders of the Terra Empire, a seemingly lazy and uncaring youngster was strolling all over the Celestial City. He looked like a lazy and idle person. His stroll eventually took him to the warbeast street as he kept glancing around the three great warbeast castles.

The master of the Reagan family, Slovak, just happened to walk out of a big castle. This was supposed to be the perished warbeast castle their family owns back in those days. The reconstruction had already been completed a long time ago, it's just that... they had never put up the sign of the Celestial Warbeast Castle until now. In the past few days, their family was secretly celebrating their imminent comeback. The instant Slovak walked out of the warbeast castle, he just happened to see this lazy youth looking left and right uncaringly.

At this very instant, Slovak immediately held his breath as his eyes emitted two spiritual lights. This was a face he could never forget; the scene from thirty years ago immediately resurfaced in his mind. It was precisely this lazy-looking and unconcerned youth who beat up everyone among the young generation on warbeast street. Slovak himself was nearly slapped to death by him, which caused the older generation of the Reagan family to make their move and almost killed this youth.

They never thought this would invite such a great disaster; during the night, a black gale engulfed the entire Celestial City, and that older generation expert from the Reagan family was crushed in a flash. Even their family's "Celestial Warbeast Castle" was destroyed in a single night.

"Why is he here?!" Slovak felt as if his heart had been grasped. His scar from

the former days seemed to be reopening. The disgrace and humiliation back in those days filled his mind. Though he dared to get angry, he didn't dare to say it.

"He actually didn't age at all, he still looks exactly the same like back in those days. He must have already transcended the bounds of mortals." Slovak felt shocked as he quickly lowered his head to pretend that he didn't see anything.

However, that seemingly uncaring and lazy youth had already noticed him. He wore a fake smile and nodded at him before taking his leave.

Slovak was so frightened that he broke out in a cold sweat. By the time he turned back, the youth had already distanced himself.

"Slovak, why are you sweating?" Not far away, the master of the Zhuge family, Zhuge Qingyun, just happened to walk out of the Amber Warbeast Castle.

"I saw him... that person!"

.....

Very soon, all the important figures of the three great warbeast castles received the report, the person from that time has reappeared again!

In Xiao Chen's courtyard, Tenax had already recovered to a certain extent. This time, it took twice as long before it started to gradually recover. However, it was enough to shock anyone who didn't have the inside information. After all, it was a hopeless situation no matter who looked at it.

It was within expectations, after Tenax tricked death once more, it underwent another evolution. Its entire body was circulating an indistinct brilliance. A surge of power could clearly be felt. It had obviously advanced to the next level.

Tenax could finally walk around on its own feet. Xiao Chen decided to immediately depart from this feuding city tomorrow. If not because he was worried that the journey might cause Tenax's injuries to worsen, Xiao Chen would have left a long time ago.

He couldn't stay in Celestial City for much longer. He was already put in the eye of the storm, an accident might occur if he overstayed his welcome in Celestial City.

"Slam! Slam!"

Sounds of someone knocking at the door was transmitted from outside. Xiao Chen walked over to open the door. A total stranger was standing in front of the door and lazily sized him up.

“You are Xiao Chen?”

“Yes!”

The youngster was like sluggish snail as he walked around Xiao Chen twice to assess him, “You sure have courage, you actually dared to use the name of that old man as your banner. Tsk tsk tsk...”

Xiao Chen did not say anything, he only looked at him calmly.

“You sure are calm and collected. Are you not afraid that when the old man finds out about this, he would raise his hand to annihilate you?”

“If there’s nothing important, why don’t you be on your way.”

As he finished speaking, Xiao Chen shut the door with a “bang”. The door nearly knocked against the youngster’s nose.

“Hey! This guy...” The lazy youngster had a startled expression. After which, he shook his head while smiling as he spoke to himself, “This much is still not considered tacky.”

Speaking until here, with a flash of light, he directly appeared in the courtyard, right in front of Xiao Chen.

“Boy, you don’t need to raise your guard against me. With my strength, there’s no need for me to bluff against you.”

Xiao Chen’s expression stiffened, he could indeed feel that this youngster had immeasurable depths. He should be in an uncommon class of his own. Especially those eyes of his, they actually conveyed the fickleness of time.

“You are a little like the me from thirty years ago.” The youngster patted Xiao Chen’s shoulders as he introduced himself, “I am called Draco.”

“You are... the one who nearly slapped someone from Reagan family to death?” Xiao Chen immediately knew who the person in question was. It was actually the genuine one who came from the depths of the south.

“Heh-heh, that’s why I said we are very much alike. Didn’t you also slap someone from their family thirty years later since then?”

“How could I compare to you? If something happened to you, someone will take responsibility, you are a true ‘prodigal child’. If something happens to me, I will be damned.”

“Hey kid, after finding out my identity, you didn’t even call me senior and actually dared to talk to me like this?” Draco sat on a rattan chair in the courtyard lazily as he cast a sidelong glance at Xiao Chen.

“Since you look so young, I didn’t feel anything and thought you were of the same generation as me.”

“I can’t be bothered to argue with you, the purpose of my visit this time is to...”

“Swish!”

A streak of multicolored light immediately swept over and interrupted Draco’s words. The light fell over him at lightning fast speed.

Draco disappeared from his original location, as if he had never been there in the first place. In an instant, he already jumped onto the stone bridge not far away as he yelled, “Little monster, you are indeed worthy of your name. You sure made quite a lot of progress, I nearly got hit this time.”

Keke did not say a word. It just opened its big eyes to glare at Draco.

Soon after, Tenax and the Azure Dragon King also appeared in the courtyard.

“I’ll be straightforward, I’ve come for the two of them. Their performance made the old man in the depths of the South quite satisfied. I am following his orders to take them back.” Draco pointed at Keke and Tenax. Then he nodded and said, “You guys still remember the trial the old man told you last time? You barely passed.”

“SQUEAK!” The snow-white little critter bared its fangs. That means it wouldn’t go back no matter what.

Tenax hesitated for a moment, then it silently nodded its head.

“Hey, you are really not just a little monster in name right? You actually

rejected the old man's invitation? If it was any other intelligent beast, they would weep at this opportunity." Draco teased Keke with a smile.

Keke rolled its glittering big eyes, then it waved its paws instantly; twenty nine layers of light screens were launched at Draco in succession.

"Just a little bit more, you can't confine me as you are now." Draco was like a flickering light and passing shadows. In an instant, he shifted more than ten meters horizontally.

"Keke, that's enough." Xiao Chen stopped the angry little critter.

"Little monster, I am doing this for your own good. Did you know your life will be in danger if you stay here any longer?" Draco put away his lazy smile and said solemnly, "You even dared to kill that White Tiger with unlimited potential? Do you know how much of a disaster have you incited?!"

"Squeak..." Keke shouted angrily as it pointed at Tenax, then at itself. That means it didn't do anything wrong, it was all for Tenax.

Tenax also nodded its head in agreement.

Draco shook his head and said, "No matter the case, you have already killed that young White Tiger. That fact will never change. That vicious old woman, in other words, that tiger woman might not be your opponent, but someone more powerful will probably make his way over to Celestial City in the next few days. If you don't go now, he will definitely kill you upon arrival."

Xiao Chen despised these kinds of people the most. It obviously lost in a fair battle, to get someone stronger to bully the weak after said event was too underhanded. However, he also didn't have a choice in regards to this. After hearing the news, he felt that the situation was very grave.

Keke and Tenax felt very resentful as they exposed their battle intent.

"You guys are out of the ordinary, but you are still too young in the end. It is not your time to shine yet. Right now, your most important task is to work hard and get stronger." Draco said seriously, "Now, come with me right away."

Keke and Tenax shook their head at the same time. The two of them were just as stubborn.

“You guys should follow him to the South desolate region and hide there for the time being.” Xiao Chen didn’t wish for the two little beasts to get into a mishap.

“It’s fine if you guys don’t give thought to yourselves, but you guys should also think about this guy.” Draco pointed at Xiao Chen and said to the two little beasts, “If you guys don’t go, he will get pulled into the mess you guys created. If you guys go, everything will be peaceful. If not, someone is guarantee to come to your door... Hey!”

“Squeak...”

Keke and Tenax pointed at Xiao Chen at the same time, then at the direction of the south desolate region. That obviously meant they wanted to take Xiao Chen along. Although the two little beasts were young, they were not as ignorant as any ordinary cubs. That felt that leaving Xiao Chen by himself would be dangerous.

Draco shook his head and said, “No, the old man gave his orders. No humans are to take a single step into the depths of the south.”

Xiao Chen lightly patted the two little beasts and said, “You guys don’t need to worry about me.” After that, he turned around and said to Draco, “You guys don’t need to put me under your protection, but I have a request. Is it possible for you to take the Azure Dragon King with you to the depths of the south?”

Draco glanced at the slightly ill Azure Dragon King and thought for a while. After that, he nodded and said, “Alright.”

However, Keke and Tenax were very uncooperative. If he don’t take Xiao Chen along, they refuse to enter the depths of the south. 2

“I will give you guys three days to think this over. Remember, during this period of time, never take one step away from Celestial City. Otherwise I won’t be able to protect any of you.” After finishing these words, Draco turned around and left.

The crossroads of fate are right before their eyes, just which path will they choose?

CHAPTER 204 – BRILLIANT SHOW

Draco had left, and Xiao Chen sunk into deep thoughts. Someone wanted to make a move against them, making it so that they are unable to leave the Celestial City. Doesn't that mean the one sticking out for the White Tiger is not here yet? It seems that... there are still powerful figures out there, but who could that be?

"Three days later, you guys behave yourselves and go with him, don't make me angry." Xiao Chen didn't want the two little beasts to be harmed. They left the dragon island together and arrived at this unfamiliar world. They experienced a lot together, Xiao Chen had already considered them as partners, so much so that he even looked upon them as his childrens.

Tenax stubbornly shook its head. Keke even directly grabbed Xiao Chen's clothing. Their attitude was firm and distinct.

Since that old man in the South Wasteland had already declared, no man would be permitted to take a single step into the depths of the South, Xiao Chen wouldn't hold on to any hope. That kind of person always kept their words.

The time limit was three days. What path should he take after three days? Xiao Chen didn't know whether the danger would fall upon him or not.

The unknown enemy had yet to show himself, but his house was suddenly hit by a few waves of visitors. First of all, it was Zhuge fatty, he ran over with a smug face and invited Xiao Chen to attend the Zhuge family's banquet in the evening.

Zhuge fatty just sat down and Fairsky had also ran into Xiao Chen's residence as fast as lightning. He shouted as soon as he entered, "Xiao Chen, please come to my house later for an afternoon tea.

Soon after, the pretty boy Lazio also appeared. He also issued a similar invitation as he invited Xiao Chen to go and have a seat in the Mander Family's house.

What made Xiao Chen most surprised was that, even the Reagan family sent someone over. Moreover, it was a middle-aged man. He was Hofmann's uncle. A

lot of disagreeable things had occurred between them in the past, they wanted to invite Xiao Chen over and have a talk to properly dissolve the past misunderstanding.

The most unexpected thing was that, even the two courtesans from the Moonflower Castle had arrived, it was Lyria and Carmina. They invited Xiao Chen to go over in the evening. Carmina was even casting a flirtatious glance at him as she said, “Brother Xiao, you will not miss the appointment right? You still remember the promise for when you beat Windfeathers last time?” Her tone of voice was very ambiguous and made people lost in fanciful thoughts.

For the same purpose as the others, someone from the city lord’s manor also arrived. The third son Liu Yu invited Xiao Chen to go to the Paradise Spa in the evening.

.....

There were also many sects he had never encountered before who sent people to give Xiao Chen an invitation card.

Xiao Chen was sweating profusely as he looked at these people doubtfully. Could it be that these people had taken the wrong medicine? They seemed to be impatient to curry his favor!

He knew many people wanted to win over him. As far as the clan was concerned, if they could get Xiao Chen to serve them, their clan would have benefited from this greatly. If Xiao Chen placed himself into the hands of their sect, it was equivalent to getting control over Tenax and the Azure Dragon King simultaneously. And there was even the law-defying little beast, Keke. They would get three sacred beasts with unlimited potential in one fell swoop!

However, was there really a need to band together?! After all, he was situated at the eye of the storm and had offended a very powerful enemy. These major powers should have waited and see how the situation turned out first.

“I say... all of you...”

Xiao Chen just opened his mouth and was interrupted by Hofmann’s uncle. This middle-aged man from the Reagan family was really a smooth talker, “Little brother Xiao, by all means, you don’t need to be polite with me. You can think of

me like your soul brother. Although we have some misunderstanding in the past, there's a so-called proverb; no discord, no concord. Only then would this be called a predestined relationship! If you are still so angry at Hofmann that it's unbearable, come with me immediately and trample him to your heart's content. I already don't have good impression of that boy to begin with. Little brother Xiao, you teaching him a lesson could also serve as disciplining him on our behalf."

Xiao Chen was a little speechless. At that time, this family sent a few Historia level experts to dispose of him. And later, they even sent an old man over to kill him personally. How did he make it so that it really sounded like a predestined relationship?

Zhuge fatty's big belly shook randomly as he walked over to hold Xiao Chen's arm. Then he turned around to face those people, "This fat gentleman will let you know. I am the very first to get acquainted with brother Xiao. It could even be said we are brought together by fate. I was already acquainted with him over at the South Sea. I am more familiar with him than any of you!"

These words made Xiao Chen break out in goose bumps all over. 1

Fairsky also squeezed in from the crowd and hold on to Xiao Chen's other arm as he said, "It was I who gave this house to brother Xiao as a present. As for our relationship, there's no need to mention it." 2

"Pig head fatty! Bastard transvestite!" Someone from among the crowd cursed in a low voice.

"Mother f—! Who dares to scold me?" Zhuge fatty was searching for the perpetrator angrily.

"Who was it? Show yourself!" Fairsky was utterly discomfited.

.....

The courtyard was a complete mess. Even beauties like Carmina and Lyria were joining in the fun.

Xiao Chen heaved a sigh. This world was very realistic, these people's action and scheme... it was easily understandable. It must be because of Draco. Maybe someone recognized his identity and gave rise to a misconception.

After Slovak saw Draco in Celestial City, the news spread like wildfire and allowed many big clans to receive the secret report. Within the city, who knows just how many pair of eyes were watching Draco's every moment.

Just who was Draco, how could he not have noticed that he was being tailed? However, he didn't seem to care and arrived at Xiao Chen's residence through the front door.

This undoubtedly gave every major power in the Celestial City a misunderstanding; that Xiao Chen really had some relationship with that old man in the South Wasteland. No wonder his previous actions were so similar to Draco's. Now the person himself had even visited him personally.

Due to this misunderstanding, all doubts in regards to Xiao Chen's identity had been thoroughly eliminated.

As a matter of fact, the aforementioned was only one of the reason, there was another reason he had yet to call to mind.

The major powers in the Celestial City could even be said to have many eyes and ears. At this most crucial moment, they actually unearthed a major secret from the Undying Sect. The legendary founder of the Demon Sect was actually still alive, and he had an unusual friendship with Xiao Chen!

The major powers in the Celestial City knew Xiao Chen and the Undying Sect had a special relationship. And exactly on this very day, they used a huge amount of money to purchase the internal news from the Undying Sect. How could they not be convinced?

This was undoubtedly a shocking news!

However, there's no way for everyone to know that the founder of the Demon Sect had already reincarnated as a demon and was still on the dragon island. They completely took it for granted and conducted a false mental association.

The founder of the Demon Sect and that existence in the South Wasteland, they were peerless experts that had withdrawn from worldly affairs. If the legends were true, they were unconditionally the strongest under the sun.

These two news were spread out on the same day. How could these big clans not be shaken? They felt Xiao Chen was all the more extraordinary, to actually

have such unusual relationship with those two fierce characters. As if agreed by chance, everyone immediately dispatched groups of people to scout him, in fear that they would be one step slower than the others.

So what if they eyed Xiao Chen covetously and made some powerful enemies in turn? These big clans no longer cared. Even if there was really a White Tiger clan, so what? They have the protection of the dragons! Even the founder of the Demon Sect was behind them, so what was there to worry about?!

Furthermore, some clans believed that Xiao Chen also had the backing of the Phoenixes. After all, someone had once seen Xiao Chen carrying a phoenix feather with his own eyes.

Xiao Chen only knew one of the reasons, he didn't know they had some other motives. However, he knew that there's no such "friendship". In this cruel world of immortals, everything was very realistic.

After sending everyone off politely, Xiao Chen laughed at himself. He was originally on the edge of a risky circumstance, but now everyone was so "crazed" over him. He really didn't know what kind of expressions everyone would wear after knowing the truth.

"The dragons... he really have an unusual friendship with that existence in the South Wasteland?"

In the Undying Sect, Yan Qingcheng's master, Liu Qingfeng, was unable to maintain his calm demeanor anymore. He wore a dissatisfied expression.

"Who leaked these information?"

It would be impossible to find out in a short time. The news that the founder of the Demon Sect was still alive was a secret only a very few elders in the Undying Sect knew about.

"What?" Liu Qingfeng suddenly received a report when he was contemplating. Many people tried to scout Xiao Chen, what's more excessive was that, some people even wanted to marry off their daughters to entice this man who had suddenly become a mighty figure.

Liu Qingfeng spoke to himself, "If the dragons step in, Xiao Chen's safety is all but assured. If he got pulled in by some big clan, it would be equivalent to taking

control over three sacred beasts, especially that snow-white little critter with unimaginable future accomplishment. What's more, they could establish some kind of connections with the dragons. Marrying off a daughter is really too worth it... Summon Qingcheng at once. Xiao Chen is closest to our sect to begin with. For all of these to happen so suddenly, if we don't take the initiatives, perhaps the three sacred beasts will really fall into other people's hands."

"However... senior brother, didn't the patriarch said so? We must treat Xiao Chen with utmost sincerity and not talk about benefit or loss..." An elder to the side issued a different opinion.

"Life itself is a drama, when it is necessary, we have to put up a show. It is very difficult to say what one means." Speaking until here, Liu Qingfeng added, "Anyway... it's fine as long as we don't bring harm to Xiao Chen."

Not long later, the fairy-like Yan Qingcheng had arrived at the big hall. Liu Qingfeng made everyone leave the hall with a wave of his hand.

Some disciples vaguely heard Yan Qingcheng's voice, "No... I don't want to!"

Some with sharp ears even heard Liu Qingfeng's voice, "Qingcheng, you should..."

At present, Xiao Chen was getting pulled by two acquaintances. He felt somewhat helpless and awkward.

Even though they were friends, their family's benefits seemed to be more important. Fairsky and Zhuge fatty wanted to invite Xiao Chen to their family before the others.

Not long later, one of the pearls of the South, Fairsnow, arrived personally. Peerless in style, graceful, and unmatched in beauty.

Zhugue fatty secretly heaved a sigh. He pulled Xiao Chen to one side and sincerely said in a low voice, "I am not from the direct line of the Zhugue family, I am forced into this. As a friend, let me give you a word of advice. You must not be enticed by Fairsnow, this girl is really..."

Speaking until here, the fatty stopped speaking. That was because Fairsnow had already arrived in the front. The fatty immediately scrambled.

CHAPTER 205 – THE SUDDEN MARRIAGE (PART ONE)

A peerless beauty would inevitably attract people's fancy from afar. It must be mentioned that, chasing after beautiful things was in human's nature. Being beautiful was indeed one kind of capital. Fairsnow had a matchless appearance, which added to her value among the young ladies of her age. She would inevitably attract attention everywhere she go. She was, without a doubt, an influential person among the circle of aristocratic girls. As a result, she was always the center of attention among her peers.

Fairsnow has a graceful figure and walked over elegantly. As she revealed a slight smile, her pearly white teeth were exposed. Her voice was very pleasant to listen to as she said, "Brother Zhuge, make sure to come to my house later, don't be late." Following that, she turned around with a faint smile as she looked at Xiao Chen, and said, "I never have the chance to have a proper talk with brother Xiao, I wonder if you are free to come to Fair house today?"

Other than the close contact at the Paradise Spa last time, the two had never been in touch. At this moment, it seemed as if Fairsnow had already forgotten about the event from that time. She didn't feel awkward at all. On the contrary, she seemed calm and indifferent.

Xiao Chen originally wanted to refuse, but when he thought about it, other clans will come to invite him even if he refused the Fair family. Moreover, the Fair family and Zhuge family had sent people to invite him several times, if he refuse again, it would be rude to their families.

"Alright, I originally wanted to pay a visit anyway. Just that I felt it would be too presumptuous of me to visit without any invitation."

"Many thanks to brother Xiao." Seeing that Xiao Chen had agreed so easily, Fairsnow revealed a smile. She said very sincerely, "I know that you must be feeling a little unhappy. You must be aware of why the major clans came to invite you today. But just let me say this; such is the way of life. This world is truly very realistic, there is no hate or love without good cause, no friendship or sweet-talk with no reason. Once the bright-colored skin has been peeled off, everything would be pale and colorless. You have very eye-catching strength, so

you will naturally receive the major clan's passionate invitation."

Speaking until here, the beautiful Fairsnow mocked herself and said, "Do you despise me? You don't need to answer, because you will definitely make up a flowery lie. In any case, I also don't have much of a choice, I'm just following my family's order. However, such is reality. Hehe... to be honest, when my family decided to send me here, I was not really that against it, because I feel that, between you and I, there isn't the slightest bit of non-acceptance. This is the truth."

Fairsnow's beautiful eyes looked exceptional. To be known as one of the pearls of the South, she was indeed devastatingly beautiful. Her beauty made people unable to free themselves from the state of drunkenness the moment they laid eyes on her. She declared her purpose in coming so frankly and directly lifted the veil that the other major clans were unwilling to open. Xiao Chen had a whole new level of respect for her. When some matters were revealed, people would feel more comfortable in contrast.

As for Fairsky, he just stood at the side for a while before he excused himself. This time, he didn't try to prevent Xiao Chen and Fairsnow from being in contact.

"Well, let's stop with the idle chatter, it dampens the mood. Brother Xiao, will you come take a walk with me at Moon Gazing Hill?" Fairsnow smiled, seemingly a little embarrassed. That was not an act, it seemed very realistic.

Moon Gazing Hill was a short hill in the Celestial City. Legends had it that after Celestial City appeared in the South, only then did this mountain fall from beyond the heavens into the city walls. There were many versions of this legend, but the one that had been spread the widest was that; a girl who yearned for the Celestial emperor transformed into a sacred mountain and now rests within the city walls for all eternity.

The hill was no more than three hundred meters tall. It also didn't occupy that much space. Various kinds of rare trees were growing on the hill, even the flowers and plants were of extremely rare varieties. The path towards the top of Moon Gazing Hill was paved with cobblestones. It was possible to see the Celestial City in its entirety on top of the hill.

This was the most famous spot in Celestial City.

The night had fallen, Fairsnow and Xiao Chen stood at the summit looking down at the brightly lit city. The two of them had stood there from the afternoon till now, and haven't spoken a single word since then.

After letting out a helpless sigh, Fairsnow said with pained voice, "No matter who it is, everyone has secret trouble. As the daughter of the Antarctic Warbeast Castle's master, I look to be well-off, but only I myself know how it feels to be in this position. I don't even have the right to choose my own marriage partner. Everything needs to be arranged by the family."

Speaking until here, Fairsnow smiled bitterly and said, "Isn't it pitiful? This is my fate."

Xiao Chen looked at the boundless world outside of the city, he nodded first before he shook his head and said, "That depends on how you look at it. Those at the lowest rung of society don't even have enough food or warm clothes, the distress of an aristocratic lady is happiness they could only thirst for."

"Hehe..." Fairsnow giggled and said, "That's right, I am greedy aren't I? But this is not what I want, riches and honor does not matter, all I want is the freedom to decide my own life. I don't want others to decide for me."

"Did my appearance increase the pressure on you?" Xiao Chen smiled and said, "It doesn't matter, how about I help you out instead? It is unnecessary for them to do this kind of thing."

Fairsnow smiled lightly and said, "Ah... I have shown you a sorry sight. Just now I was really only letting it out. Without any outsiders around, I just wanted to let it go and say something brazen. You don't need to concern yourself with it."

Xiao Chen leaned against a silver-colored apricot tree and said while biting a grass stalk in his mouth, "Just let it all out."

"I know why my family sent me to invite you, they want me to cast off the Fair family. It is about time for a 'cherished' pearl like me to be sold off. They wanted to coax you by means of marriage. Every young lady has a dream of meeting a prince-charming that they could entrust their entire life to. After knowing their intentions, I felt very disgusted and resentful. I even thought about running away from home. However, after thinking things through, I felt relieved. Since every major family is like this. Moreover, your appearance did not only make me feel

pressured, it also made me feel a little thankful and relieved.”

“You feel thankful and relieved?”

“That’s right. At the very least, you are not a scoundrel like Hofmann. Or as vulgar as the younger generation of the Zhuge family.”

Xiao Chen was speechless, then he smiled and said, “I see, so this is where I hold the advantage. It seems like I am only a little better than Hofmann and Zhuge Kun.”

Fairsnow smiled gently and said, “That is only as a comparison, I am not saying you are the same as them. In my opinion, you have great potential and your future prospects seem very bright. How can I be discontent when my family is giving me away to someone who might become well known in the future? Perhaps, we might not have any romantic feelings at first due to this kind of marriage, but I know you are not a heartless guy. From the way you are treating the snow-white little critter and Tenax, I could tell. I am not worried that you will give me the cold-shoulder in the future. I am only disgusted with my family’s forceful arrangements, but so long as I can get this out of my system, then there’s no reason for me to reject it. Otherwise, my ending... might become the same as my paternal aunt; to get married off to a rich and powerful hedonistic son and end up miserable.”

Xiao Chen could feel Fairsnow’s worries about personal gains and losses. The reason why she invited him here, maybe it was to talk about this and to let go of that burden in her heart, while also alleviating the unhappiness in Xiao Chen’s heart.

Fairsnow’s expression was indeed very sincere. Xiao Chen could feel that these feelings were emerging from the bottom of her heart. If not, then Fairsnow was truly very scary to be able to put on such a realistic act.

As for the marriage, Xiao Chen did not declare where he stood. He only smiled and said he would help Fairsnow. As a matter of fact, this was how it is. Although everyone was crazy over him now, everyone’s delusion will naturally be broken three days later.

However... how could everything go within his expectations? There’s a lot of unexpected things in this world.

Night time, Xiao Chen went to the Fair family's mansion. This made a few major powers feel very resentful of the Fair family, but there was nothing they could do. Who asked them not to build a friendly relation with Xiao Chen first like Fairsky did? Moreover, who in the South could be compared to the beautiful Fairsnow?

The Zhuge family was naturally very discontent. Their Zhuge Liang was also on friendly terms with Xiao Chen. In their opinion, the reason the Fair family held the advantage this time was because they were short of a devastatingly beautiful girl like the Fair family.

The Undying Sect also felt a sense of crisis. Although Xiao Chen was close to their Undying Sect, and had some friendship with the Undying Patriarch, they still felt a little uneasy with the Fair family's bold move. Fairsnow, she was one of the most beautiful girls, and as a young man, it was very easy for Xiao Chen to be enticed. However, their Undying Sect also has Yan Qingcheng, whose beauty was comparable to Fairsnow, but since too much had happened between the two of them, it was not easy for Yan Qingcheng to let it go.

In the following three days, Draco did not disappear. On the contrary, he could be seen in the Celestial City everyday. From time to time, he would visit Xiao Chen's house repeatedly. There were even a few times when he was seen pulling Xiao Chen to drink, as if he was treating him as a nephew.

This was a very strong signal, it strengthened the major clan's conviction; that Xiao Chen had a very deep relationship with the depths of the South!

These three days, the sill of Xiao Chen's house was already worn out due to the multitudes of people coming and going. This made Xiao Chen feel rather rueful.

To leave the Celestial City was definitely out of the question. Draco had already told him very clearly, he will definitely die the moment he took a single step out. If not because he was keeping watch here, that person out there would have already enter the city.

The undercurrent was flowing non-stop during these past three days. Liu Qingfeng of the Undying Sect invited Xiao Chen over and told him that the proposal from last time was accepted. He is to wed to Yan Qingcheng one month from now.

Xiao Chen was caught unprepared. He wanted to explain it earnestly, but it only end up making Liu Qingfeng very unhappy as he turned and left abruptly. The news regarding his marriage to Yan Qingcheng one month from now was spread all over the Celestial City at high speed.

The Fair family's reaction was very quick. They quickly mobilized their family's influence to make people believe that Xiao Chen already had a prior engagement with the Fair family; that he is to wed Fairsnow half a month from now.

In regards to this, Xiao Chen wanted to laugh, but he was unable to since he felt a slight chill in his heart.

CHAPTER 206 – THE SUDDEN MARRIAGE (PART TWO)

The South desolate region and Terra Empire each possessed several tens of thousands of miles of territories. In addition to two more areas as big as the Terra Empire, that was the entirety of the Southern area of the immortal's mainland. However, compared to the heart of the mainland, that was completely negligible. The Middle Earth was vast and boundless, it was located at the very center of mother earth.

To the North of Middle Earth, that was the legendary barren land of the ancient gods. As for how far it stretches, nobody knows of it. All in all, nobody had ever made it back alive once they entered the North. 1

To the West of Middle Earth, that was an endless stretch of copper mountains. Legends had it that the ancestor god Fuxi lived in seclusion there. The land was boundless and seemed to stretch on forever.

As for the East side, Middle Earth faced the boundless East Sea. According to legends, even the gods were unable to cross that water body.

The most terrifying thing was that, the aforementioned was only the known territories. And, to the Northernmost of the ancient god's barren land, to the Westernmost of the millions of copper mountains, to the Easternmost of the boundless East Sea, and to the Southernmost of the countless uninhabited islands, just what kind of unknown world that lies beyond these parts, nobody could say for sure.

Legends had it that even the celestial deities would have a hard time entering those unknown regions.

People couldn't help but exclaim in admiration, the world of immortals was vast and boundless. It was impossible for an ordinary man to tour the whole world for a lifetime. It was unknown just how much bigger it was compared to the mortal world.

These three days, Xiao Chen was taking advantage of the ample resources from the major clans that tried to rope him in and received information on the enemies outside of the city. The people who wanted to kill Keke was a male and

female tiger-kin. They are currently waiting for a powerful figure called the Fierce Tiger, otherwise they wouldn't even dare to appear in front of Draco.

Reportedly, they came from an exceptionally ancient clan. Their veins flow with the blood of the White Tiger. The aforementioned clan possessed great influence even in the boundless Middle Earth. Moreover, the most frightening part was that, very few knew where this extremely mysterious clan was hiding in Middle Earth.

This time, the tiger woman and tiger servant did not bring the White Tiger to the South for the warbeast competition, it just happened to coincide with the occasion. They never expected that the White Tiger would die in a place like this, how could they not be furious?

The tiger woman wanted to kill Keke. As a result, she was forced to lose face at the Amber Warbeast Castle instead. The tiger servant also wanted to make his move, but he was frightened by Draco. When they learned that the Fierce Tiger had rushed to the Terra Empire from Middle Earth, they promptly requested help.

They estimated that the Fierce Tiger should arrive within a few days.

This kind of marriage, Xiao Chen did not want it, nor must he hope for it. There were no such things as benevolent major clans. One could take advantage of them and borrow their authority, but marriage was for a lifetime, he did not want to be a cheater in this regard.

Just that, Liu Qingfeng of the Undying Sect didn't give him a chance to explain, and the Fair family did not believe his words. Xiao Chen also did not want to be straightforward. After all, that was his trump card, how could he reveal it so easily? 2

What made Xiao Chen most helpless was that, Draco really seemed as if he was his senior and took extremely good care of him. These three days, he had treated Xiao Chen to a drink, four times. This was obviously to create a misconception for the major clans.

Xiao Chen felt that he might have guessed his intention. Thirty years ago, Draco had clashed with the noble sons of a few major clans, and nearly lost his life in the hands of an older generation expert. His actions now made it clear that

he wanted to fool these major clans, and Xiao Chen was that clown.

He was in fact, a bubble with no background that was being promoted enthusiastically. The major clan's investment here would inevitably be nothing but an empty dream. They would become a huge laughing stock.

"I am a clown!" Xiao Chen mocked himself.

Three days passed in the blink of an eye. Draco arrived at Xiao Chen's residence again and the result was obvious. Keke and Tenax were very straightforward and didn't pay any attention to Draco.

"Hehe, I will give you guys more time. That guy known as the Fierce Tiger is very greedy. He's currently on a treasure hunt in the Terra Empire and wants to break into the Temple of Heaven. I'm afraid that he will not be able to come here so soon."

In the blink of an eye, one week had passed. The news that the Fair family wanted to marry off their daughter was already a well known fact. Their goal was precisely to bring about a fait accompli.

The Undying Sect also did not take it lying down and struck back fiercely. A few major clans were also making their moves in succession. There were some that added fuel to the fire, and those who got in touch with Xiao Chen in the dark.

Recently, the Zhuge fatty and Fairsky were obviously working diligently. However, Xiao Chen had a bad premonition. This kind of conduct could easily break what little friendship they had just barely build up.

Zhugue fatty seemed to be making at least three round trips everyday, "Heh-heh, brother, do me a favor. If we can have some sort of relationship with that old man in the Southern Wasteland, becoming the master of the family is not a pipe dream anymore. How about this? Why don't you help me invite your senior Draco? Our family lord wants to entertain him."

Even the Reagan family was sending people to communicate with Xiao Chen unceasingly, saying that everything that happened in the past was a misunderstanding, and that they would certainly help him if the need arises. Moreover, they also tactfully asked if he wanted to take a concubine.

Xiao Chen felt that it was preposterous. Everything that happened in recent

days felt like a farce, they could actually do this... they were actually capable of doing this!

If there was a powerful figure behind one's back, they could really have avoided strife for several hundred years!

Human's ugly nature had inadvertently been put on full display.

Half a month, it was neither a long period of time nor was it a short period of time. That time was quickly approaching. It was impossible for Xiao Chen to promise this kind of absurd marriage. He felt that it was extremely ridiculous.

However, Draco finally made his move at this time. After sealing Xiao Chen's movements, he promised the Fair family, that he would definitely attend the wedding. Once this news spread out, a few of the major clans were shocked. For Draco to attend the wedding, does that mean they will support the Fair family? The Southern Wasteland had remained low-profile all these years, are they finally going to make their move?

Thus, it was impossible for these major clans to sit back anymore. They wanted to build a relationship with the Southern Wasteland via Xiao Chen no matter what.

Liu Qingfeng of the Undying Sect flew into a terrible rage and made the disciples tremble with fear. However, Yan Qingcheng wouldn't yield no matter what.

"How could Xiao Chen not be a good fit for you? Securing the position as the strongest in the South is only a matter of time, why wouldn't you agree?"

"Master... you were not like this before..." Yan Qingcheng's lily-white face had shed tears as she continued, "I have compromised once, and since then, I vowed that I will not compromise again, even if I end up dead! I admit that he has a bright future ahead, but there is no romantic feelings between the two of us. These kind of thing cannot be forced."

In the backyard of the Fair family; Fairsky was heaving a sigh and said to Fairsnow, who was currently appreciating the flowers, "Sis, you don't really need to put on a facade. Yan Qingcheng does not have the intention to fight over him with you."

“So meaningless, I originally thought there would be a competitor.” Fairsnow revealed a cold smile. 4

Fairsky said, “It was really unexpected for Xiao Chen to be against the marriage. If not because Draco bound him with absolute force, he might flat out refuse it.”

Fairsnow said with a cold voice, “If not because he has relationship with Draco, why would I even lower myself to marry him? My heart is at Middle Earth!”

Fairsnow’s personality was icily arrogant. The difference between her ordinarily sweet-tempered nature was like that of the night and day. However, she looked more attractive than ever.

The Fair family practiced the Water-Lily Technique. Those who practiced this technique, regardless of male or female, would become incomparably beautiful. It was a magical technique with bizarre power. In a certain sense, there’s no ugly men or women in the Fair family.

The shortcoming of this martial art was that, the progress during the Exuvia realm was very slow. However, once they advanced to the Historia realm, their speed would pick up ferociously. It could be said to be a secret technique not only in name, but in reality.

Perhaps nobody knew of this, but Fairsnow had just broken through the Exuvia Ninth Celestial Layer in the recent days. She had concealed her power perfectly. Once she make a breakthrough to the Historia realm, her future accomplishments from now would be immeasurable.

There was an incomplete version of this martial art spread throughout the mortal world. The successive generations of the imperial household possessed one each. It was an internal secret that had never been spread around. It was known as the Sunflower Technique. The incomplete version was not inferior to the genuine Water-Lily Technique, so much so that their training speed in the initial stage was a little faster. However, the price of learning this technique was too high. Those who wished to learn this miraculous technique must first castrate themselves. 5

Half a month passed by very quickly, today is the day of the wedding ceremony. The Fair family had send out invitation cards all over with great

momentum. This marriage was comparable to a grand festival in the Celestial City. 6

At this moment, an unforeseen event occurred in Xiao Chen's residence. Draco laughed heartily and said, "Alright, let's stop playing with those families, it's getting boring." 7

And just at this time, Draco suddenly made his move. Not only Xiao Chen, even Tenax, Keke, and the Azure Dragon King was confined in a ball of black light. The powerful him made people unable to see his upper limits. Even Keke's rainbow-colored radiance had been suppressed.

Draco had a one-eighty change in attitude and his eyes were ice-cold. His voice was as chilly as the winter of the twelfth lunar month as he said to Keke and Tenax, "The first lesson the old man entrusted to me is to have the both of you cut off your relationship with him ruthlessly!" He lifted his hand to unsheathe a longsword and held it against Xiao Chen's neck. He faced Keke and Tenax before he continued, "If you wish to accomplish something, it is necessary to be heartless. Who is he? He's just a human. He wants to become your master, he wants to enslave you for a lifetime. Kill him, and reinstate your true nature, to unleash your restraints. Otherwise, with his existence, you guys will never be able to manifest your potential to the extreme limit!"

Although Keke and Tenax were unable to budge an inch, they could still move their mouth as they let out a furious snarl. And the Azure Dragon King was also letting out a dragon roar, which shook the vast sky.

"Forget it, I am not so heartless as to let you guys kill him with your own hands." Speaking until here, Draco's ice-cold eyes gradually became gentler as he continued, "Be at ease, I won't kill him personally either. I will just leave him at the Celestial City to let him destroy himself."

Finishing all this, Draco transformed into a black mist and flew towards the sky with Keke and the two Dragon Kings bounded. Many people in the Celestial City saw the black cloud flying towards the depths of the South Wasteland.

They were separated... This day had finally arrived. Xiao Chen felt completely empty. From this point on, he had parted with the two little beasts. He also had no idea whether he would ever get a chance to see them again in this lifetime,

because he could already feel it, that old man in the South Wasteland was really too unreasonable!

And just at this time, the people from the Fair family had arrived, to invite him and Draco to their mansion.

Xiao Chen stood up silently and undid the acupuncture points that were sealed by Draco. He knew that the crisis was on the verge of breaking out. Will the Fair family and the other major clans flip out at this point? In addition, did the tiger woman and servant already receive the news and are already on their way to kill him?

CHAPTER 207 – FALSE PLAY COME TRUE

The Fair family had arrived, they looked at Xiao Chen with eccentric expressions. The few courtyards around Xiao Chen’s house had already been purchased by a few major families. The dragon’s roar just now had already alarmed these people. Although they didn’t know the full story, they could roughly guess what had taken place.

This was equivalent to receiving a big slap on the face by that Draco fellow. He was like this thirty years ago, and he is still like this thirty years later. Draco didn’t know the concept of apprehension, his every action was reckless.

Since this kind of thing had already happened... the people from the Fair family left in haste. They must report this to the family lord immediately.

“What?” When Faircloud heard these words, his face changed colour abruptly and he destroyed the entire hall with a wave of his hand. He stood on top of the ruins blankly, his expression ashen. In the end, he gnashed his teeth and said, “Draco, you dare to play us for a fool?! You are but only a mixed breed; half human, half dragon. If not because there’s an old dragon behind your back, you would have died a million times!”

The other major clans who received the news also flew into rage out of humiliation. It made these major clans detest Draco bitterly. He blew up a big bubble and made everyone flatter it. As a result, like the clowns they were, everyone’s secrets were exposed under the sun.

“That wretched Draco!”

“The dragons should really be completely wiped out, they are too arrogant!”

.....

Similar cursing remarks were transmitted from many clans.

This matter covered their head and face in dirt. This was too embarrassing, all of them were played for a fool by Draco.

Especially the Fair family, it was impossible for them to stop halfway; to marry off their daughter or not? The invitation cards had already been sent all over the

Celestial City. Everyone with a head and a face had already received the news.

There were some who rejoiced in other people's misfortune, and some who sneered at them. This was the peace right before the storm in Celestial City. Every major clan was on the verge of exploding at any given time.

Of course, the one who had it the worst was the Fair family. They were being played for a fool. Right now, they really wished they could hang up Draco and behead him with a blade.

Faircloud remained silent above the ruins for a long time. He clenched his knuckles so tight that they had turned pale. In the end, he let out a nasty sigh and said, "Draco, just you wait. Once I reach the realm of immortal, I will definitely settle this with you. I don't believe you will hide in the Southern Wasteland forever!"

"My lord... what to do now?" The underling at the side was trembling with fear as he asked cautiously.

Just at this time, the other members of the Fair family rushed over after receiving the news. The younger generation didn't have enough qualifications to stand here. As for the middle-aged generation, there was a few dozen of them.

"This is mortifying!"

"This slap on the face is too much, perhaps it has already become the joke of the year."

"Big bro, let's cancel this wedding ceremony at once!"

"That's right, you can't marry off Snowy just like this. How can we let her marry that boy with no background for nothing. I will go and kill him later!"

"Shut up!" Faircloud shouted with an ice-cold voice. The imposing family lord made everyone quiet down immediately. "If we break a marriage promise like this, how would everyone in Celestial City view us?"

"But... this boy with no background is unworthy of joining our family by marriage. What benefits will he bring to our family?"

Of course, not everyone was opposed to this marriage. Someone opened their mouth and said, "Even if the dragons are out of the picture, so what? Isn't there

still the founder of the Demon Sect? Besides, he also has three sacred beasts. In addition to that, Xiao Chen showed great promise, and possesses unnatural gifts. In the future, his name will surely shake the world. This should be enough!"

However, the absolute majority were laughing grimly.

"It is obvious that his relationship with the founder of the Demon Sect is the same as with the dragon's. It is but a false rumor spread out to make a fool out of us. The three sacred beasts were taken by Draco to the Southern Wasteland. They don't belong to Xiao Chen anymore. So what if he shows great promises? He has already provoked someone he shouldn't provoke. Do you think he can survive this? It is not necessary for our family to make a great enemy because of him."

Everyone unanimously wanted to stop the marriage. Faircloud got annoyed the more he listened. In the end, he shouted, "Enough! Stop quarreling anymore, the wedding will continue!"

"Big brother... are you crazy?! How can you let this be?"

"Family lord..."

Faircloud swept his eyes over everyone coldly, and said, "Snowy is my daughter, how can I not care about her more so than any one of you? For such a thing to happen, if we immediately break the marriage, everyone in the South will jeer at us. That would be too humiliating."

"But my lord... what about the two people outside of the city?"

Faircloud said very firmly, "We will continue with the wedding as a show of formality. We must not let other people look down on us. Snowy can always remarry in the future."

"Big brother, are you saying... after the formality is over, we will kick Xiao Chen out?"

Although Faircloud was over fifty years old, the magical arts their family practiced were too mystical after all. He didn't look like an elderly person, on the contrary, he looked like a thirty year old handsome man. However, he was not masculine and seemed more feminine.

Faircloud had a cold glint in his eyes as he said, "That would be too obvious and cause gossips to go around. You guys quickly get in touch with the tiger duo outside of the city and explain everything to them. They will naturally know what to do after that. We will be able to preserve our face. As for whether Xiao Chen can make it out alive, that depends on his luck."

In fact, many of the major powers wanted to see the Fair family making a fool of themselves. The families that wanted to immediately dispose of Xiao Chen were making supreme effort to exercise restraint. If the Fair family kicked Xiao Chen out, then their reputation will certainly take a huge fall. It wouldn't be too late to make their move then.

The Fair family's decision to proceed with the wedding made the majority of the clans unable to make any sense of the matter. Never had they thought the Fair family would be so "generous". Could it be that they really wanted to be forced to suffer in silence? Were they not afraid of inciting the hatred of Middle Earth's Tiger clan?

In the backyard of the Fair family, the extremely glamorous Fairsnow had a frosty expression across her entire face. With a wave of her lily-white hand, an explosion of light appeared and a large area of plants were chopped. The leaves were fluttering about in the sky gracefully.

"I am actually going to marry him!"

"Sis, don't be angry." Fairsky got behind her and said, "You should know that father also doesn't have any choice..."

Fairsnow smiled coldly, and walked towards her room while treading across a field of exotic flowers with agile steps.

Xiao Chen quietly looked at the people all around. He was very uncooperative and didn't want to enter the Fair family's mansion. However, he was followed closely by a seventy to eighty year old elder. This was an older generation expert of the Fair family. He was completely focused on Xiao Chen and forced him to take part in this absurd wedding.

All the guests were wearing meaningful smiles. They chuckled as they looked on at the event. They knew that a good show was just beginning. They wanted to see how long the Fair family can keep this up.

Xiao Chen was very calm. He knew that the Fair family was not that benevolent. And that the major clans in the city were even worse. They didn't dispose of him before now because the time had yet to come. And the Fair family's action was even weirder. By no means did he believe that, this was just a simple wedding.

Maybe when the wedding was proceeding, the tiger woman would storm in and behead him, thus putting an end to the wedding. Thinking until here, Xiao Chen suddenly felt a chill in his heart. Had the Fair family also thought about this? Definitely! If they wanted to make a good show out of it, they might have already sent someone to get in touch with the tiger woman. Xiao Chen had thought of all possible scenarios in this very instant.

This hand from the Fair family was really well-played. They could totally save face and naturally turn this crisis around! That's right, if Xiao Chen himself was killed during the wedding ceremony, everyone would only know who the murderer was, and the Fair family would be spared from breaking the marriage promise. Their reputation might even rise because of this. If there's anyone to blame, then they could only blame Xiao Chen for having a short life and how he didn't have the good fortune to take Fairsnow as his wife.

Such an awful scheme, the Fair family was such a schemer! Xiao Chen inwardly heaved a sigh.

There's nothing for him to be scared of. Even if he had to die, he had to make the Fair family suffer a difficult situation. Just when he wanted to make his move, the old man behind him patted his shoulders lightly, and whispered, "Preserve some strength and get ready to run. Our family will not go to extremes. Whether you live or not, that depends on your own luck."

Xiao Chen looked at him coldly, then he quieted down again. Only a little bit of time was needed to cause the Fair family to be stuck in a dilemma. Even if the old man was telling a lie to make him settle down, he still has many opportunities later on.

In the glorious hall, the excellent wine and exotic delicacies were being delivered to the guests unceasingly. The atmosphere was lively and didn't make it seem like it was a pretense.

The host and guests were in harmonious relations. Every now and then, people would go make fun of the Fair family's head, saying that he had found a good son-in-law, and that ten years later, their family would have secured their strongest asset.

Everyone toasted with Faircloud in succession and congratulated him occasionally. Faircloud put on a fake smile, he wished he could crush the wine cup in his hand and pound it into the face of these old fools.

Of course, Xiao Chen's surroundings also had many people who toasted with him in succession. Their words were so passionate that it allowed him to experience what was known as genuinely shameless hypocrites. The expressions of many people made him feel disgusted.

However, he had no choice but to wear a smile and put on an act like an actor.

Xiao Chen felt a little melancholic. This suffering was hard to put into words. Since he was young, he rarely ever cried, but now, he suddenly had a gloomy feeling and felt somewhat miserable. A dignified man like him, was actually forced into this kind of situation.

Just like an actor, he had to conceal his feelings and put on a show by himself in the limelight. When in fact, he was actually a pitiful man.

Ordinarily, the impression he gave people was that of a firm and decisive person. When confronting enemies, he was cold hearted, but who would have known, under the cover of his coldness, he could also feel sorrowful like ordinary people?

It was a very sarcastic wedding ceremony. Everyone was waiting and watch passively, but they had to make supreme effort to put on a play.

However, even when night fell, the people dispatched by Fair family still did not come back. There's not even the need to mention it, but the tiger duo hadn't shown up to kill Xiao Chen yet. 1

Faircloud's expression became all the gloomier. Could it be that they really had to proceed with the wedding? If this keeps up, the pretense will really turn into a reality. Was this not tantamount to lifting a rock to smash his own leg? His intuition was telling him that some accident might have occurred. After finding

an appropriate time, he left the hall and secretly instructed others to dispatch some powerful spies to find out what's going on.

The stars filled the entire sky as the crystal lamp illuminated the glorious hall. Everyone was toasting and the atmosphere was very lively.

And somebody shouted, "It's about time to enter the bridal room, we cannot waste such a precious spring night!"

"That's right, the spring night is invaluable."

"Invite the groom and the bride to enter the bridal room!"

.....

Many people started to create a disturbance, wanting to go disturb the privacy of bridal room. 2

The people of the major clans could already tell, the Fair family was deliberately stalling for time. Perhaps they were expecting outsiders to come and put a stop to this wedding ceremony. Since that was the case, how could they let the Fair family's wish be fulfilled. Whenever it's possible to push forward, they should push without holding back. One after another, the guests were demanding the married couple to enter the bridal room.

The members of the Fair family finally couldn't keep up the facade anymore. They were enmeshed in a trap of their own devising! Things had actually escalated to this degree, what were the spies doing, why hadn't the tiger woman come to kill Xiao Chen yet?!

This was truly a very nerve-wracking moment.

They were practically unable to delay it much longer. The married couple had already finished paying their respects to the elders. If they still don't let them enter the bridal room, they really couldn't keep their heads high anymore.

In the end, Faircloud ground his teeth and left while tucking his sleeves, making his younger brother take charge of the venue.

The old foxes at present were ganging up as if they had become evil spirits. Even their eyes had become fiery as they shouted in succession. The middle-aged group also followed suit and made it so the Fair family had no other choice but

to let the married couple enter the bridal room.

“We want to disturb the privacy of bridal room!”

.....

The atmosphere was fairly festive. Everyone was in a jolly mood.

Xiao Chen calmly watched as all of this unfolds. He was very taciturn.

Just at this time, a tall figure with a broadsword on his back walked towards him. With no traces of politeness, he pushed the young people beside Xiao Chen away.

“Cheers, I wish you long life!” Dugu Jianmo drained the cup in one gulp after saying this. Seeing that Xiao Chen also drained his cup, he left with large strides.

Xiao Chen remained silent. This might be the only sincere toast he had in this wedding ceremony.

Nobody dared to provoke Dugu Jianmo. Although the Solitary clan was very low-key, they were more or less one of the primary clans in the South. Even when Draco was running amok in Celestial City thirty years ago, he didn't cause any inconveniences to Dugu Jianmo's father.

If they really angered the Solitary clan, according to their nature, maybe a few dozen people carrying broadswords would storm into the South Wasteland without saying a word. So what if they had an old dragon keeping watch? The Solitary clan's ancestor definitely had enough strength to take on the strongest creature in the Southern Wasteland!

As he was being shoved by everyone, Xiao Chen was pushed into the backyard. He's about to enter the bridal room.

The fragrance of flowers drifted in the air. The arrangement of the garden made the backyard relaxing and beautiful. The path ran across a clear, small lake. After crossing over the marble bridge, and walking past a long flower garden, Xiao Chen arrived in front of an elaborate building.

“Haha...” He suddenly laughed out loud. There was a hint of dismay, but even more was a grimness and a feeling of decisiveness. ‘Alright, if you guys want to play, I will play with you. To the bridal room we go!’

CHAPTER 208 – WEDDING NIGHT

The three storied building was remarkably beautiful and gorgeous. The base was made out of precious stones, and the window frames were made of red sandalwood, set with agate stones glistening in the background, the fragrance of lavender penetrated deeply into the heart. Although the small building was not grand, it was extremely refined and had rich aestheticism.

The rowdy crowd was not willing to break up, they kept pushing Xiao Chen towards the second floor and pushed open the amethyst door. The crystal lamps embellished the bridal chamber with a gentle light. The warm radiance was rippling with a comforting vibe. However, all of these were only the outer appearance, the few person at the heart of this incident had a substantially different mood.

Fairsnow was wearing a wedding dress that resembled a fiery cloud. She was sitting in front of the bed calmly, with two servant girls on her left and right respectively. The pearl head chain hanging down from her head remained motionless. That was the proof that she was very calm, and did not feel nervous in the slightest.

That's right, in her eyes, the wedding was only a formality. Xiao Chen was absolutely not a good fit for her. Her heart had already flown out of the Southern Wasteland and drifted towards the Northern land. The boundless Middle Earth, it was home to countless illustrious heroes that one could sing or cry about. She didn't want to confine herself to the small Southern Wasteland..... Xiao Chen didn't have any background, how could he compare to a sovereign who ruled over the whole world, how could he compare to the ancient aristocratic families with a millennium of history? Fairsnow was a girl who couldn't be satisfied by an ordinary life. She wanted to dedicate herself to a great power that could sweep across the whole world. She didn't want to remain a nobody, she wanted to become a celebrated figure.

She felt that she was living in a completely different world compared to those ordinary girls who desired for glory and splendor. She felt that her own choice was not at all outrageous, all because she was comparatively calmer and more

realistic. Standing on top of a “huge mountain” would get her a little closer to the “high sky”. She wanted to begin from a high starting point and not to start climbing from the foot of the mountain.

Xiao Chen had already lost the support of the Dragon Kings, there was nothing much he could provide for her. Fairsnow had already sentenced him to the death penalty in her heart; Xiao Chen must not survive after the wedding, all traces of the wedding ceremony needed to be erased.

After opening the door, Xiao Chen walked in with a faint smile. Behind him was the rowdy crowd who kept shouting how they wanted to disturb the privacy of the bridal room from the doorway, so much so that even some of them had charged in without restraint.

“Lift the veil!”

“Carry the bride in your arms!”

Since it had already come to this, Xiao Chen was very calm and unperturbed. What was there to be afraid of this late in the stage? The one who should be worried was the Fair family! After lifting the veil, what was exposed, was a devilishly charming face. Fairsnow had fair skin and was as beautiful as a goddess. She was beautiful to the point where people felt dizzy just looking at her. Many of the youngsters who wanted to disturb the privacy of the bridal room felt that they had talked too much. The noise completely subsided in but an instant as everyone stared blankly.

“Such a pity!” A soft whisper transmitted a sentence from who knew where, “If possible, even if I know it will be certain death, I am still willing to switch this one night with Xiao Chen.”

It was as if everyone had been roused up from their dream. While they were sighing with sorrow, they all shook their heads and began to create a disturbance again. They knew Xiao Chen wouldn’t have the pleasure to enjoy this kind of beautiful girl. The Fair family definitely wouldn’t let this wedding become a reality.

“Exchange cups!”

“Bite the apple!”

Fairsnow finally couldn't maintain her calm demeanor anymore. She didn't know why her family had yet to get in touch with the tiger woman and allowed Xiao Chen to live until now. Moreover, why didn't they put a stop to these people, how could they allow these people to come and disturb the privacy of the bridal room?

She stared at Xiao Chen coldly. She didn't have any affection in her beautiful eyes. Her gaze was brimming with criticism.

"You guys are too excessive..." Xiao Chen laughed as he rejected everyone's suggestion. Since he had already let it go, then what else was there to be scared of? The glimpse of divine light in his eyes that could be seen occasionally indicated he was very calm and cool-headed at the moment.

Xiao Chen ignored Fairsnow's criticising gaze and reached out his hand to lift Fairsnow's chin. He borrowed the words from the predecessor to praise her beauty.

Xiao Chen did not feel flustered due to Fairsnow's otherworldly beauty as he asked in an indifferent tone, "What do you think? Isn't my newlywed wife pretty?"

The crowd was feeling envious, yet endlessly confused as they yelled in succession:

"Of course! She is a goddess after all, one of the pearls of the South."

"Her beauty is comparable to the higher beings."

"More superior than the fairies of mythology."

"She's like a fairy that has descended to the mundane world."

Everyone had a somewhat dazzled expression. Despite the fact that they came here to cause disturbance, the greater part of these compliments were sincere.

That old man who was always following Xiao Chen felt very anxious. There were actually two people beside him with uncharted power blocking his path, making it so that he was unable to target Xiao Chen.

Damn it! He cursed in his heart. Although this two were hiding their real visage by means of a secret art, he could instinctively feel that they were not young

anymore. At the very least, they should be around fifty to sixty years old. Why was someone their age coming to the bridal room to cause disturbance? They were obviously here to stop him.

The old man from the Fair family was gnashing his teeth in anger. He knew this must definitely be the dirty tricks of the other major clans. But even so, there was nothing he could do at the moment. The two's power were so profound that it was somewhat exaggerating. He was completely locked into place from the left and right, making it so that he was unable to budge an inch.

And just at this time, how could Xiao Chen let this chance slip by. Although he didn't know there were people blocking that old man from the Fair family, he could feel that the aura that was locking on to him had vanished gradually. This opportunity couldn't be missed, and thus, he immediately grabbed Fairsnow's lily-white hand with great force and said with a smile, "From now on, we are husband and wife, may our two hearts beat as one."

Hearing this, everyone shouted in succession, "Kiss! Kiss! Kiss!"

Although Fairsnow was wearing a faint smile even under such a circumstance, Xiao Chen was still able to catch that chilly glint in her pair of beautiful eyes. There were hints of killing intent, anger, and contempt.

Xiao Chen smiled. Since he was already in a dilemma, he was able to let it all out. What could be worse than death? Once the tiger woman came, he would be doomed, but now, he could completely let it all out.

One of his hands firmly grabbed onto Fairsnow's lily-white hand, the other one supporting Fairsnow's chin as he said, "Kissing her is not out of the question, but letting you guys see it is too indecent." While saying this, Xiao Chen moved his palm and lightly brushed Fairsnow's cheek. After that, he carefully separated his palm from her cheek while pulling a strand of hair before her eyes.

If they were really husband and wife, then this action should be intimate and comforting. However, the relationship of the newlyweds could even be said to be very subtle. There were hints of blazing anger in Fairsnow's eyes. This was as if Xiao Chen was assailing her with obscenities, but very quickly, she calmed down and smiled sweetly.

Xiao Chen felt a chill in his heart. This girl was very scary indeed, for she was

still able to maintain her calmness even now.

“That won’t work, you must kiss!”

“Exchange ceremony cups!”

Everyone wished for the whole world to be in chaos and shouted in continuous succession. It was rare for the pranks to get this out of hand.

Xiao Chen laughed out loud and said, “What’s that? It’s just a kiss, there’s still something more exciting. How about we start a new tradition instead? Let’s go outside, where there’s more space, we will put on a show for you to see!”

Speaking until here, a powerful force flowed from Xiao Chen’s palm into Fairsnow’s body. She was unable to resist at all with her power. Xiao Chen pushed the windows open, pulled Fairsnow along and flew towards the night sky. His first priority was to get away from the Fair family’s mansion. With a hostage by his side, they probably wouldn’t dare to make a move.

The crowd was very shocked and was immediately startled awake. They knew Xiao Chen was going to take action now. The crowd started to shout one after another and rushed out of the elaborate building immediately afterwards, then they jumped onto the roof. Everyone’s main purpose for coming tonight was to watch a play, the good show had only just begun.

The old man from the Fair family that was in charge of locking Xiao Chen in place was so furious that his intestines were turning green. This reckless Xiao Chen was really too audacious! He actually dared to do this! In fact, since Xiao Chen had detained Fairsnow, even if he was able to make a move, he had to be careful. What’s even more irritating was that, the two warriors from unknown major clans were still detaining him, giving him no chance to make a move.

Xiao Chen did not attempt to escape via the sky, he seemed to be very easy-going as he pulled Fairsnow and stood calmly in the empty sky. It’s not that he didn’t want to run away, but rather the Fair family’s security was too tight. In the skies to the east, west, south, and north, there were actually old men standing guard in each respective location.

If he could get away, he could hide for a period of time, provided how big the Celestial City was. It was not impossible for him to get out of this alive.

Slowly descending from the sky, Xiao Chen grabbed Fairsnow's slender waist and said towards everyone, "Ladies and gentlemen, you guys should have watched enough already, how about sending us husband and wife off?"

Fairsnow did not attempt to struggle and allowed Xiao Chen to embrace her easily. She didn't have any hint of fear in her eyes.

Everyone jumped down from the buildings one after another. They knew Xiao Chen was about to lay his cards on the table. He was currently making preparations to completely break free from here, there would only be one conclusion for him if he waited at this place; the tiger duo would surely kill him. However, everyone also felt apprehensive. This Xiao Chen was really so daring, he actually dared to kidnap the precious daughter of the Fair family.

"It seems like my ending is already set in the stone. Regardless of what I do, is there anything worse than death?" Xiao Chen laughed out loud and shouted towards the old men in the four directions, "If you guys want to kill me, go ahead and do it, but let me remind you, with my power, it is easy for me to pull your family's precious jewel along before death."

"Xiao Chen, you... My Fair family is treating you so kindly, and even betrothed the most beautiful girl in the Southern Wasteland to you, how can you be so indiscriminating and bite the hands that feed you? Why are you doing this?" A middle-aged man from the Fair family shouted loudly.

"Hmph! I'm not inclined to explain myself to you. There's no need for me to waste my time explaining, everyone here should have a rough idea of what's really going on. If you guys from the Fair family continue to feign ignorance, then you guys are totally insulting my intelligence. Get out of the way, if you don't want Fairsnow to get hurt, make way for me!" Xiao Chen's disordered hair was brushed by the wind. The murderous aura he emitted made the surrounding flowers wither as the petals fell and fluttered like butterflies.

That old man of the Fair family finally regained his freedom. The two experts who locked onto him had already disappeared among the crowd in that very instant. However, even if he had regained his freedom, it was already too late.

For a wedding reception to cause this much commotion, the Fair family's mansion immediately blew up with a cauldron of voices. Everyone left the room

in succession and rushed over here.

Everyone couldn't help but admire him. This Xiao Chen boy was really wild and decisive. He actually dared to make his move under this kind of occasion. Moreover, he successfully pulled it off even with an expert nearby.

"Xiao Chen, how can you do this?" The lord of the Fair family, Faircloud, asked with a cold voice.

"I want to keep on living. Get out of the way, I don't want to talk nonsense!" With a wave of his hand, the longsword of a practitioner at the side flew towards his hand. He replaced his palm that was pressing against Fairsnow's lily-white neck with the ice-cold sword.

"Let him go!" Faircloud was also very straightforward.

Without turning around, Xiao Chen led Fairsnow towards the foot of the wall rather than the main entrance. The divine light flashed with a slash of the longsword and destroyed the tall backyard wall with a loud rumble.

As such, Xiao Chen directly walked out from the Fair family's premises like this. His keen spiritual sense was raised to the utmost limit; everything within a radius of a hundred meters were clearly charted in his mind.

It was impossible to continue the wedding after this unforeseen event. Everyone originally came to watch a show anyway, but this show was too blunt and far from intense enough.

Everyone followed Xiao Chen's footsteps and chased after him altogether towards the main street.

Xiao Chen unfolded the Undying Divine Wings and directly soared into the sky, but was soon forced to descend from the sky.

"You want to get away from the Celestial City? Hmph! Then you have to let Snowy go first. If you really want to kill her, I dare you to give it a try!" The voice of the elderly was very cold. It made people unable to harbor any suspicions in his words. The Fair family couldn't allow Xiao Chen to get out of the Celestial City.

"What is there not to dare? If you want me to kill, then I'll do it!" Xiao Chen

was very decisive. Without showing any mercy, he pressed the longsword in his hand against Fairsnow's neck. The blood gushed out right away as a cut wound appeared on her neck.

“Hmph!” The face of the old man in the sky changed immediately as he said in a cold voice, “Pretty good! If you really became my Fair family's son-in-law, that would be really great indeed, such a pity...”

Xiao Chen flipped his hands. Fairsnow's neck had stopped bleeding. Without so much as a single word, he transformed into a streak of divine light as he soared into the sky.

CHAPTER 209 – ERSTARREN PEARL

The starlight was dim, and the moon was hiding behind a black cloud, so only a little moonlight was leaking out. Looking down from the high altitude, the Celestial City was brightly lit and resembled the residential area of immortals.

Xiao Chen was as quick as the divine light, he had already broke away from everyone's line of sight a long time ago as he continued to rise higher into the sky. He was getting further away from the earth and rose even higher, until he soared above the clouds.

While hiding in the clouds, he calmly adjusted his breathing for a moment. Then Xiao Chen began to ponder in silence, did he successfully escape from the city?

Draco once said, so long as he left the city, the tiger duo would immediately make their moves. Xiao Chen was not very convinced; the Celestial City was so big, and the sky so vast, even for the tiger clan, there's no way they'd possess a divine ability so powerful that it was capable of sealing the four sides right?

Xiao Chen stood atop the clouds with a beauty that seemed to have come out of a painting in his arms. He looked at the clear bright moon and began to go through hundreds of simulations; how could he escape from this place safely?

Under the bright moonlight, Fairsnow's lily-white skin was flickering with a crystal clear luster, as if she was an artwork carved out of jade. No words could do her beauty justice.

However, at this moment, this beauty of peerless elegance seemed like nothing more than a puppet in Xiao Chen's eyes. She was completely neglected by Xiao Chen. The person in question had a sharp glint in his eyes as he was gazing at the starry sky while thinking deeply.

"Xiao Chen, let go of me and I'll help you obtain a chance at survival..." Fairsnow had a sweet breath, and her tone was gentle. There wasn't the slightest hint of panic even though she was taken hostage. On the contrary, she was incomparably calm and easygoing.

“I bet you just want to save yourself.” Xiao Chen tightened his arm around Fairsnow’s limber waist, then he sneered, “We were originally in wedding festivities, but now you and I are standing atop the clouds. Although it is a little unconventional, the moon and the stars shine upon us, the hazy night scene, I guess this could also be considered romantic. As a matter of fact, there is this delicate feeling.”

“You want to kill me?” Fairsnow glanced back at Xiao Chen.

“Why talk like that. You are such an outstanding beauty, how could I have the heart to kill you.” The corners of Xiao Chen’s mouth curved up. He had a very splendid smile and his snow-white teeth flickered under the illumination of the moonlight. However, his eyes were not smiling the least bit.

“Because you know it yourself, that you won’t be able to escape!”

“Nonsense, the world is so big, who can stop me from leaving?”

“The tiger duo had already left a soul imprint in your body. Regardless of how big the world is, they will be able to find you no matter where you run?” Fairsnow very calmly declared something that made Xiao Chen feel fearful.

“How could that be?”

Fairsnow smiled sweetly and overshadowed the splendor of the starlight. Her lily-white face transmitted a peculiar charm as she said, “I can tell you how to break the spell, but you need to leave me alive.” It seemed like a compromise, then again, it was like an exchange. However, Xiao Chen was very wary of her. This girl was a clever schemer, it was hard to believe her.

“How can I trust you?”

Fairsnow smiled lightly, her red lips were exceptionally enticing. She opened her cherry-colored lips slightly, and said, “The only question now should be, can I trust you to let me off? I should be more worried on whether you will truly let me go. You have the upper hand, there’s no need to worry.”

Xiao Chen revealed a smile, then he nodded and said, “Alright, please talk.”

“Try to concentrate. There should be a strand of dense white fog in your sea of consciousness.”

Xiao Chen focused his attention and sure enough, he did find an anomaly. Thus, he nodded and said, "That's right."

"This is it, that's the special trick of the tiger clan; by attaching the soul imprint inside your body, even if you run to the ends of the earth, they will still be able to find you. In order to break the constraint, you need to have enough power, otherwise it is impossible to dispel it. Outsiders won't be able to provide any help in this regard. Obviously, you are not as strong as the tiger duo yet. However, there's still another method. That is, to use a divine pearl to seal that strand of soul imprint, making it so that the tiger woman is unable to detect its presence. And I just so happen to have this kind of precious pearl with me, it is known as Erstarren. Not only can it seal the fluctuations of the soul imprint, it can also allow you to avoid detection from a powerful expert. It can provide you a chance to escape from a dangerous situation."

"Seems like you're fully prepared."

Fairsnow said calmly and earnestly, "Because I want to live, I know that once you are in danger, you will kill me without hesitation."

In the dead of night, within the Fair family's mansion, all the guests had already left. However, nobody in the Fair family was able to fall asleep. Just at this very moment, few old men suddenly opened their eyes. They had detected Xiao Chen's presence.

"Swish! Swish!"

Few figures flew out, with Xiao Chen in the center of their formation.

"Don't act rashly, I forgot a few things here." Xiao Chen pressed the longsword against Fairsnow's neck as he said to the few elders, "I know you guys are powerful enough to seal an entire domain, but I'll let you know that, I have a really sharp spiritual sense. If I feel even the slightest energy fluctuation, I will immediately swing the sword to behead Fairsnow!"

Without any sound, the elders slowly moved back.

Xiao Chen left an afterimage in the sky and instantly charged into Fairsnow's chamber.

"This brat really should be put to death by a thousand cuts!"

“Just let him go wild for a little longer.”

“He will be in a world of pain sooner or later!”

The younger generation was very furious, but they were also helpless.

Within Fairsnow’s chamber, a sweet scent drifted in the air. It was like the scent of orchids. However, the interior chamber was pitch-black. Xiao Chen walked into the chamber with Fairsnow in custody, but he stopped in an instant. That was because there was a person standing in the darkness.

“You guys are here, I have been waiting for a long time.”

It was actually Fairsky. His eyes were filled with helplessness, and there was also a hint of sadness. He looked at Xiao Chen quietly and said, “I knew my sister would definitely bring you here to take the Erstarren Pearl.”

As he finished his words, Fairsky spread out his palm, and the pearl in his palm gave off a gentle radiance that made his palm almost transparent in contrast.

Xiao Chen remained silent. After all, Fairsky was one of his friends in this city. As for how deep their friendship went there’s not much to say.

He directly walked over and passed the pearl to Xiao Chen, then he said, “With this, the tiger clan will not be able to track you down anymore. I hope that you will not harm my sister.” Speaking until here, Fairsky turned around and spoke with his back facing Xiao Chen, “No matter what happens in the future, I will always remember I once had a friend like you.”

“I will also re—” Before he could finish his words, Xiao Chen suddenly jumped back as a bloody light was launched from the front. Fairsky actually used a longsword to pierce through his rib cartilage in order to stab Xiao Chen. With such a cover up, and the fact that there’s no energy fluctuation, it was truly a very savage move.

“Swish!”

With a flash of the longsword, Xiao Chen left a bloody scar on Fairsnow’s neck. That immediately caused the elders who were about to make their move from the shadows to stay their hands.

“I told you, I have an exceptional spiritual sense, you guys shouldn’t rashly use

your divine abilities, as that will only speed up Fairsnow's death. Fairsky, you are pretty good, I couldn't even tell you were acting. In the end, this kind of thing still happened..." Xiao Chen put away the Erstarren Pearl, detained Fairsnow, and instantly flew towards the distant sky.

"ROAR!!!"

A world-shaking tiger roar pierced through the vast skies as an extremely powerful energy fluctuation pressed in from ahead. And from the back, another prolonged roar reverberated as an expert was cutting through the air.

"Why do they have to appear with such a timing? It's as if they were waiting for me!" Xiao Chen's expression changed as he seized Fairsnow and dived towards the ground. He rushed into the complicated living area like the flickering light and passing shadows.

Just when he got hold of the Erstarren Pearl, the tiger duo appeared. Their figures were as quick as lightning. They appeared in the sky of the Fair family's mansion in what seemed like an instant.

"Why did it suddenly disappear?" The tiger woman had a fierce nature as she was sweeping her cold eyes all over from the sky. The other old man looked to be around sixty to seventy years old. His eyes were also glistening as they let out sparks in the night sky.

"Xiao Chen got his hands on the Erstarren Pearl, he can seal your soul imprint. Making it so that you are unable to detect his presence." After Fairsky tended to his wound, he could already move unhindered. He looked up at the two powerful experts in the sky and continued, "However, we modified the Erstarren Pearl a little, our Fair family can still find him, you guys don't panic, he will not be able to get away."

Wordlessly, four experts of the Fair family appeared in the sky.

"Heh-heh, good, then we will follow the previously agreed plan. We already know what to do. That damned Draco. If not because he was hindering us, it wouldn't have led to this. However, he already said it. Xiao Chen's life and death is no longer related to him. He felt that it was pointless to play with you guys anymore."

“That son of a b—!” The lord of the Fair family, Faircloud, let out a curse.

They dispatched troops all over as the Fair family didn't want to alarm Xiao Chen. However, they planned to surround him. This night was definitely going to be a stormy night. Many big clans were watching this event closely. In regards to them, the good show was just beginning.

In the commoner's living area, Xiao Chen pointed the longsword at Fairsnow and asked, “Why is it that your family can track our whereabouts? Did you guys do something to the Erstarren Pearl?”

The blood leaked down from her snow-white neck once more as Fairsnow explained calmly, “Concentrate your power and infuse it into the Erstarren Pearl to crush the light ball within. That can sever the linkage to foreign forces.”

Xiao Chen acted in accordance to her words, but in that very instant, his power flowed towards the Erstarren Pearl like a torrential river, it was impossible to stop. It was as if there was a black hole frantically swallowing his power. Xiao Chen was sealed on the spot like a clay figure.

Fairsnow did not hesitate, she broke free from Xiao Chen's control like flickering light and shadow.

“Hmph! The Erstarren Pearl has much more functions than that, wait till your power dries up, I will let you taste all kinds of torture!” Fairsnow wiped the bloodstain on her neck and the expression on her beautiful face was as cold as ice. The glints in her eyes were even colder.

“Hmph!” Xiao Chen let out a cold snort and shook off the Erstarren Pearl directly.

“How is this possible, what kind of secret arts are you practicing?” Fairsnow was very shocked as she quickly fell back. However, she was not worried, because the expert from her family had already arrived. An elder was standing guard in front of her.

“I can even refine a vicious dragon, what can an insignificant pearl amount to.”

Fairsnow let out a melodious laugh and said, “The most important point is, it was able to buy me some time. Xiao Chen, this is the end of the line!”

“Fairsnow, you are really scary indeed. You are too calculative!” Xiao Chen did not panic at all. Since things had already escalated to this point, there’s no point regretting it.

Fairsnow said with a calm, yet cold tone, “You are a rare talent, if not because you have offended the tiger clan, I could still make use of you, such a pity.....”

“Haha...” Xiao Chen laughed out loud and continued, “Looks like you are going to kill your husband tonight, are you not afraid that people would talk behind your back?”

Fairsnow did not get angry, her figure was as fuzzy as a celestial being standing high in the clouds. She answered calmly, “I originally wanted to let the tiger clan take you down. However, I feel that you are more and more scary the more time I spend with you. I must see you die with my own eyes, otherwise... with your talent, your name might really shake the whole world a few dozen years from now. I don’t want that kind of thing to happen. Even more so, I don’t want to let those senseless people say I don’t have good insight.”

The four elders from the Fair family had arrived. They’d already trapped Xiao Chen from four directions, it was practically impossible to escape.

Loud laughter transmitted over as the tiger duo flew over from the sky. The old woman said with a fierce tone, “Although we are unable to catch that little thing, it should be enough even if we offer you as sacrifice to the White Tiger!”

“What about you guys?” Xiao Chen snorted coldly, “To make a move against a younger generation like me with your seniority, have you no shame? The name of the tiger clan is famous in the Middle Earth, having two people like you in the clan is such a loss of face.”

The tiger woman immediately became hostile as she said with a sinister tone, “Brat, don’t try to flaunt. The tiger clan always handle matters like this, who dares to talk back?!”

“I see, so the shamelessness already became some kind of tradition!” Xiao Chen was brimming with disdain.

To be despised and humiliated by a younger generation, the tiger duo immediately wanted to put an end to Xiao Chen’s life.

“And you guys from the Fair family, you guys are such a hypocritical family. In order to fight for fame, you guys brought about such a huge joke. Hey, the news that your pearl of the South killed her husband will definitely be spread all over the Southern Wasteland. The other major clans are waiting to see you make a fool of yourselves.”

Upon hearing this, Faircloud said coldly, “Xiao Chen, stop trying to flaunt to us with your words. Do you think your fate will change if you humiliate us?”

Xiao Chen laughed unrestrained, “I am fully aware of my situation, but I am not afraid of death! What a pity though, that I cannot cut you guys down with my sword. It feels somewhat regretful.”

The tiger woman and many people from the Fair family shouted loudly in succession.

“On what basis do you dare to spout such nonsense?”

“You only just broke into the Historia realm not long ago. You want to kill us? Try again in your next life.”

Xiao Chen raised the longsword high into the sky. His cold voice reverberated, “If time turned back thirty years, which of you old bastards here would dare to speak to me like this?! If we were of the same generation, I could sweep across all of you with one hand!”

“Arrogant!”

“You are asking for it, brat!”

The tiger woman and the others were very resentful. However, they couldn’t help but admit, if time really turned back thirty years, it was very likely that they wouldn’t dare to make a move against Xiao Chen. This made them strengthen their resolve to exterminate Xiao Chen no matter what. They must not give this brat any chance. Otherwise, it would be very troublesome in the future.

“Haha...” Xiao Chen laughed loudly as he looked at everyone in contempt, “If you guys were thirty years younger, I could kill you like slaughtering chickens. Now, who among the younger generations could fight toe-to-toe with me?”

“What’s so special about Historia? There are also young experts as talented as

you in the tiger clan.” The tiger woman stared at Xiao Chen bitterly as she said, “Enough talk, I will kill you at once!”

“Slow down, I will kill him!” Just at this time, a youngster shouted from beyond the group of people. He walked over with large strides, faced Xiao Chen coldly, and said, “I am the youth generation of the Middle Earth’s tiger clan, named Eurus. As you wished-for. You will be killed by the same generation!”

“Swish!”

The sword-qi rushed forth, over hundred rays of light fell towards the earth like shooting stars. The dazzling rays of light fell from all directions and submerged Xiao Chen’s location in a flash.

Everyone was exceptionally shocked. A young expert like this actually showed up, perhaps he might be close to, or had already broken into the Historia realm.

However, before everyone have had the chance to exclaim in admiration, a shocking change already took place. Xiao Chen went against the hundreds of sword-qi, and all the swords were smelted without exception, unable to harm his body. And his longsword was unstoppable! The sword left a streak of light as it slashed through the hundreds of sword-qi. Soon after, blood gushed towards the sky as a head went flying away.

Eurus’ headless corpse stood there for a moment before it fell into a pool of blood. The fresh blood was gushing out like a fountain.

All of this happened too fast and it was carried out efficiently. People were practically unable to believe a youth with unlimited potential would get beheaded by Xiao Chen just when he made his move!

“I already said it, if time turns back for thirty years, all of you are nothing more than chickens, unable to withstand even a single blow!” Xiao Chen stood unmoving as his long hair was brushed by the wind. However, his heart was very calm as he fixed his eyes on everyone, with his longsword raised.

“Eurus!!!” The tiger woman shouted loudly. She didn’t expect that a potential expert among their clan’s youth generation would get killed just like this. She didn’t even have time to save him. She was not of the direct line of the tiger clan, she was just an old slave. Now, a direct descendent of the tiger clan is dead, all

the blame will fall onto her. And in addition to the tragic death of the White Tiger, she really hated Xiao Chen bitterly.

The tiger servant also had a pair of incomparably cold eyes as he said, “We cannot leave this child alive! He has actually grasped a divine ability already. If I did not guess wrongly, that just now was Weapon Fusion, a rare divine ability that can smelt everything provided one have enough power!”

The people from the Fair family looked at Xiao Chen with vigilance. Many of them were having seconds thoughts, it was truly a loss for them that they were unable to pull him into the family. He just broke into the Historia realm, yet he had already grasped such a formidable divine ability. He was truly talented in the path of austerities.

Perhaps his name could really shake the whole world a few dozen years from now. The more they thought about this possibility, the more these people hardened their resolve to eliminate Xiao Chen at once. No accident was to be permitted!

At a distant place, experts from various major clans were watching from the sidelines quietly.

CHAPTER 210 – SHRED OF TEARS

Xiao Chen knew that, without any miracles, he's definitely screwed.

After all, he was only twenty one years old. Even if he was talented, he too was helpless in the face of time. Time could erase everything, but it could also bring up everything. The older generation experts had already been through the baptism of time, their power was not something a youth like him could hope to compare to.

All four directions were already sealed off, the sky was already enclosed, and there were no less than six demigod level experts. How would he be able to escape?

"I will reap your two souls and seven spirits, leaving one soul behind and then seal it in front of the White Tiger's grave for all eternity!" The tiger woman had already landed on the ground as she walked towards Xiao Chen, one step at a time. Her face was cold, as if there were thousands of layers of ice covering it. Her cold tone felt like it came directly from the lowest depths of hell, "Do you have anything to say before your death?"

"None." In the face of death, Xiao Chen was very calm.

It was brightly lit all around, the entire street was light up as hundreds of experts from the Fair family surrounded the area. There were also many people from various major clans watching this in dark, distant places.

Fairsky was hiding in the shadows. It was impossible to judge his state of mind as he stayed completely indifferent. On the other hand, Fairsnow remained easygoing from start to finish, as if she was watching a show completely unrelated to her.

The tiger woman laughed coldly, "You sure are lamentable. In the end, you are going to die like this, and you don't even have any last words nor reluctance to leave this world!"

"Since I am going to die, what's the point of saying too much. Do you want me to beg you in order to satisfy your crazy mind? I'm afraid to disappoint you."

Xiao Chen was as calm as a cloud, as if he was not the one going to die.

“I am already very satisfied. My parents bestowed life upon me and allowed me to grow up happily. I was very happy for the past twenty years of my life. Apart from the love of my parents, I have many genuine friends, and even a girl who liked me. Since I was born, I have experienced love, friendship, and romance. What more could I ask for? I am not a greedy person, such simple happiness is enough for me. Of course, this might be too mediocre for you guys. Everyone of you here wants to rise to a higher position and look down at the whole world, even to the point of sweeping the floor with experts all over the world. You guys will never understand such a simple happiness.”

Fairsnow smiled softly. Under the moonlit night, she appeared like a fairy who had descended upon the mundane world. Words failed to describe her beauty. “I always thought you were a decisive and frightening person. Never have I thought you had such a naive and cute side to you. Just thinking about how you would become my greatest enemy in the future... but alas! Such a pity, your family, your friends, and even the girl who likes you. They will not be able to see you anymore.”

At these words, Xiao Chen did not feel sorrow. His words were incomparably dull, “Who in this world can possess eternity? The most important point is, I am able to feel satisfied before my life comes to a conclusion. My friends can help me take care of my parents. Even if I die, true friendship will not water down even with the passage of time. The girl I once liked, even if I have missed this opportunity forever, she no longer belongs to me. There’s nothing for me to regret before I die. The friendship we once had will remain in my heart forever.”

“Then you can go and die!” The tiger woman pressed forward. She didn’t see him begging for forgiveness. On the contrary, what she saw was Xiao Chen’s calm and easygoing demeanor. This made her feel very disappointed.

Out of everyone’s expectation, Xiao Chen did not choose to suicide, but rather, he pointed his sword towards the tiger woman.

“Haha... You want to fight against me? Aren’t you overestimating yourself too much?”

“No matter what I do, I will not give up until the very last moment. On what

basis do you want me to attempt suicide? That is a insult to me! I, Xiao Chen, can only die in a battle. I will not perform a cowardly act such as suicide.”

His dull and calm demeanor had already vanished. The Xiao Chen right now had revealed a different side. He braced himself and the divine light in his eyes sparkled. Even when facing a demigod, he didn’t have a hint of fear.

Being looked down upon by Xiao Chen, the tiger woman immediately became hot-headed. She really wished she could turn Xiao Chen into meat paste with a slap. However, she quickly changed her way of thinking. Ending Xiao Chen’s life like this was going too easy on him. She should torment him slowly until he died.

Leaving an afterimage in her original position, the old woman appeared in front of Xiao Chen in a flash. The hand that was shaped like a demonic claw swiped downward. Her speed had exceeded everyone’s expectations. Many people were unable to see her movements.

Xiao Chen lifted the sword to block. With a “snapping” sound, the longsword shattered. It scattered, one dazzling radiance after another streaked across the sky like shooting stars.

The second claw swipe was fast approaching. Xiao Chen did not have a sword left in his hands, but he was not worried. As if his entire person had transformed into a sword itself, a resplendent sword-qi cut through the night as he tried to behead the old woman.

“Bang!”

The palm blade struck the old woman’s demonic claw and produced an oppressive noise. Xiao Chen was sent somersaulting by the blow, but the old woman did not move an inch. She sneered as she pressed onward.

Xiao Chen wiped the blood stain at the corner of his mouth and faced the old woman coldly. Just now, although the Weapon Fusion was able to neutralize more than half of the power, he was still unable to resist the torrential power of that claw attack.

“Rips! Rips!”

The ripping sound of space transmitted over as the old woman moved her hands. A few jet-black claws of light seemed to be ripping apart the void in the

sky as they created one dreadful trajectory after another. And then, instantly afterward, this space was confined and trapped Xiao Chen within its domain.

“I will take my time with you!”

Such was reality, although Xiao Chen couldn’t find a worthy opponent among the youth generation, the gap was still too big when compared to a demigod. He was practically unable to resist.

He moved his fingers with difficulty, a hint of blood spilled out from Xiao Chen’s mouth. While bearing the pain, he successfully launched the Death Blow technique. The brilliance illuminated all ten directions as the energy fluctuations transmitted outside of the domain. The old woman was slightly surprised as she walked into the domain.

“Boom!”

It was like a volcanic eruption as dazzling rays of light illuminated the entire night sky. Xiao Chen repeatedly shook his hands and launched the four major techniques at full power. Regardless of the results, he did try his best.

The rays of light were dazzling, they were like millions upon millions of starlight pouring down in torrents. The entire street was illuminated brightly. The old woman was forced to take half a step back, but Xiao Chen was already covered in blood from head to foot. The blood vessels all over his body were ruptured.

However, the divine light did not stop at this point. On the contrary, it became even fiercer as it rushed towards the sky like a raging flame. Even the heaven and earth itself were trembling.

The entire street was destroyed, all those desolate ancient houses in the surroundings instantly turned to dust.

Xiao Chen’s battle intent was skyrocketing. Despite being fully aware of his imminent death, he was still as unyielding. He wanted to let his accumulated anger completely burst out. With the cost of his life, he wanted to shake off the old woman, and fight against his inevitable fate.

Under the dazzling divine light, the entire region completely collapsed. The uninhabited houses were all destroyed without a trace, as if they never existed to begin with. The entire region was flattened and crushed.

The fire of life dimmed over time, this was Xiao Chen's complete loss. However, the unbending will in his eyes was completely undisguised. He quietly stood on the spot with his tall figure as he coldly looked at all the enemies in front of him.

Death, it was not at all scary. It was but the call of nature. Xiao Chen felt as if his soul was going to drift away from his body. He did not have any regret. Regardless of the result, he had already tried his best to struggle.

Far away, the sound of a flute transmitted over. The sad and beautiful melody sounded like a soul depriving song as it guided Xiao Chen's soul towards a distant place.

The area was very quiet. All the people had witnessed everything just now. If not because he was facing a demigod opponent, perhaps even the Historia level practitioners would have a hard time fending off that attack. That inextinguishable fire of life, that unbending fighting intent, they were enough to make everyone shudder in fear. Even the old woman was forced to take a step back, and more than half of her sleeves were burned.

"I am not afraid of death!" Xiao Chen cast an angry look at the blue dome of heaven. The sharp glint in his eyes gradually became dimmer.

For some reason, although they were only killing a Historia level youth, everyone felt heavy hearted. Even if Xiao Chen was killed, they still felt a slight chill. For a Historia level expert to give them this kind of feeling, many people felt alarmed and constrained. Fortunately, this youth was really going to die!

"Haha..." Loud laughter transmitted from a distant place as a few youngsters from the major clans walked over with large strides.

The old woman did not prevent them from approaching as she was silently recalling the four major techniques, namely the God Slayer, Chaotic Patterns, Demon Suppression, and Death Blow. She had the lingering feeling that it was a little weird, it was hard for her to imagine how Xiao Chen was able to practice these legendary secret arts.

"So, even you have days like this, Xiao Chen!" Hofmann was the first to walk over as he laughed heartily. Behind him was Zhuge Kun, Lidong Bo, Austrian, and company.

As if he had heard their taunt, Xiao Chen's originally lifeless eyes suddenly emitted two sharp glints as they pressed on toward Hofmann and company like two streak of lightnings.

"He's alive..."

"How come he's still alive..."

Hofmann and Zhuge Kun were so startled that they immediately ran back. The other two behind them couldn't bear it and directly fell on the ground.

"Haha... so it's actually the dying flash." Seeing that it was a false alarm, Hofmann felt a little embarrassed. After adjusting himself, he bowed deeply towards the tiger woman and said, "Can senior give junior permission to get even with him? After that you can deprive him of his three souls and seven spirits."

The tiger woman silently nodded her head. Hofmann, Zhuge Kun, and company slowly approached. Seeing the light that's gradually getting dimmer, they smiled without restraint.

"Xiao Chen, on what basis are you going against us for?"

"You are but only a very small practitioner from the mortal world, how dare you fight against us?"

"Today, even after death, I will not let you go peacefully!" Hofmann revealed a malicious, yet fanatic smile as he said, "In the end, you still end up being trampled under my foot!"

Zhuce Kun mustered up his courage to push lightly, and Xiao Chen fell on the pool of blood. Seeing this, Hofmann and company laughed loudly as they stepped forward.

Hofmann stepped on Xiao Chen's chest and said maliciously, "I am stepping on you, what are you going to do about it, hanh?"

Zhuce Kun also kicked him repeatedly as he said, "I already vowed at an earlier time, that I will pay you back a hundredfold!"

Xiao Chen's consciousness was already fuzzy as the heartwarming scenes in the mortal world flashed through his mind.

He could see his grey-haired parents, see his childhood friends, and even that girl he once loved... He could feel a shred of tears about to leak out from the corner of his eyes. I can't cry, I've never cried before, how can I cry now?

"I always thought the world of immortals was a transcendental world, I always thought it was an auspicious world ruled by multitudes of immortals... but, that was only my ideal nation. Dreams can never become reality." At the end of Xiao Chen's life, his train of thought was very chaotic.

The cruel world of immortals was even more vicious and realistic than the mortal world. Strength and background represented everything here. In his final moments, Xiao Chen thought of Tenax and Keke. Generally speaking, he was all alone in this world. Only these two little beasts were with him as they went through many trials and hardships.

Lan Nuo, Lawrence, Yizhen, Oxmen, Rowena, and the rest from the dragon island. Where are they now? The friends who once went through life and death tribulations with him, he still hasn't gotten in touch with them, but it seems like there's no chance for that now.

"Haha... Can this guy finally feel the pain?" Hofmann laughed loudly and grabbed Xiao Chen's collar violently. Then he lifted Xiao Chen's body up from the pool of blood as he sneered, "He's about to die, and at the corner of his left eye, there's actually a hint of tears, haha..."

At a distant place, Fairsky remained indifferent. Fairsnow looked closely as she heard this. They knew Xiao Chen did not shed tears because of the few young ruffians. This man didn't even fear death, just what could those tears be for?

"Squeak..." A sorrowful whimper transmitted from a distant location as a streak of white light vanished and flickered in the sky unceasingly. A snow-white little critter approached while slicing through the air. 1

"Wuu~ Wuu~" The sobbing sound was like a sad melody. It made people feel heartbroken just from hearing it. Keke had returned after it escaped from the depths of the Southern Wasteland.

Before it was detained, Keke already knew about Xiao Chen's situation. In the end, Keke broke out of the Southern Wasteland and rushed to Celestial City regardless of everything. For a little critter to attach importance to friendship, it

made some people feel touched.

“Wuu~ Wuu~”

Seeing Xiao Chen lying on the pool of blood, Keke transformed into a streak of divine light and appeared at that spot. It abruptly waved its little paws, Hofmann and company were sent flying away by the rainbow-colored radiance.

“Squeak... Wuu~ Wuu~” The snow-white little critter shouted in fear as it shook Xiao Chen’s head. The rainbow-colored radiance was injected into Xiao Chen’s body, one after another. It was trying to preserve Xiao Chen’s life with all of its ability.

The always naughty and mischievous little critter was actually weeping at the moment. This was the first time it revealed such a terrified and scared expression, for fear that Xiao Chen might die at this point.

“Very good! I originally wanted to kill this little thing anyways. Now it delivered itself in front of me!” The tiger woman was smiling coldly.

The demigod experts moved simultaneously and sealed all four directions. They blocked off all and every possible escape route.

“Wuu~ Wuu~” The little critter was crying as it kept shaking Xiao Chen.

Under the illumination of the rainbow-colored radiance, Xiao Chen opened his eyes and coughed out a small mouthful of blood. He quietly swept his eyes all over and used his bloodstained palm to pat Keke’s head. Then he said weakly, “Go, quickly... you won’t be able to save me... come back here... when you have enough strength...”

“Squeak... Wuu~ Wuu~” Keke shook its head strongly as it was weeping. Its pair of glittering big eyes were already filled with glistening teardrops. It confined Xiao Chen within the rainbow-colored radiance and carried him with its puny body. Then the little critter flew towards the sky.

However, with a loud bang, it was knocked to the ground by layer upon layer of divine lights.

Four directions, six demigod experts, all paths were blocked.

“Put me down... Escape by yourself, avenge me in the future, you must

remember everyone's face here..." Speaking until here, Xiao Chen stopped. And everyone here immediately felt a chill. The snow-white little critter's potential was obvious to all. If it remembered them, then in the future... they wouldn't dare to imagine.

Xiao Chen stopped, because he thought of another problem. The snow-white little critter was still too young, if he was to let it carry such a burden, it was hard to imagine what would become of it in the future. Even though he really wanted to kill everyone who besieged him today, for the little critter's future however, he stopped and heaved a sigh, "I don't wish... for a cute little beast to become a freakish killing machine... I don't want hatred to cloud your mind... In the future, those two elders... and those few youngsters... kill them for me... don't kill anyone else... otherwise I won't forgive you."

Keke was still very young, it was impossible for it to understand that Xiao Chen was still concerned about its future while he was at death's door. However, the spectators could roughly guess his train of thoughts.

"Wuu~ Wuu~" Keke shook its head strongly while still weeping. It carried Xiao Chen and soared up once more. It crossed the empty space and suddenly appeared at the other direction. However, the six demigods had sealed all ten directions and could predict its path accurately. A divine radiance was launched and shot them down from the sky.

"Let go... just remember my words..."

The tiger woman smiled sarcastically, "It's impossible for the two of you to escape from here, all of you must die!"

"Run, you must get out of here!"

CHAPTER 211 – THE GRIEF OF HEAVENS

“Wuu~ Wuu~ Squeak...” The little critter was crying sorrowfully. It kept shaking Xiao Chen who was coughing up blood. It didn’t want to leave by itself no matter what.

“You won’t be able to save me... if you don’t go now, even you will die here...”

“Wuu~ Wuu~” The snow-white little critter wouldn’t listen to Xiao Chen’s advice. Its glittering big eyes were filled with glistening tears as it tried to protect Xiao Chen with the rainbow-colored radiance. With its puny body, Keke carried Xiao Chen on its back and soared up again. It wanted to stake everything on the line and break out from this confined space.

“Since you have already fallen into the net, how can we let you leave like this?” The tiger woman sneered, her expression was very cold as she swiped her demonic claws. At the same time, the tiger servant also launched a streak of divine light, forcing the little critter to fall again.

After being smashed into the ground, hard, the little critter looked at Xiao Chen, who was coughing up blood. It shouted in panic, but it didn’t want to give up just like this. It carried Xiao Chen on its back and tried once again.

One time, two times, three times...

Even if the snow-white little critter was powerful and possessed unlimited potential. It was still heavily injured after receiving the attacks again and again. With its divine ability, it was barely enough to handle one demigod expert. However, it was still too much for it to face the domain laid out by six demigods.

“Squeak... Wuu~ Wuu~” It looked like Keke was asking “Why are you doing this?” Keke’s entire face was filled with tears as it looked at everyone. It didn’t understand why these people are so ferocious and wanted them to die no matter what. With its naive nature, it couldn’t comprehend the human’s complicated heart.

The little critter shielded Xiao Chen and wouldn’t let go no matter what. It attacked the old woman in the sky while still whimpering. It wanted to send this

extremely evil old woman flying and create a gap.

Six demigod experts were sealing off the sky, their eyes didn't have any emotion whatsoever. The four experts from the Fair family were only responsible for sealing off the space. The one attacking was the tiger duo. Only the Middle Earth's tiger clan dared to offend the Southern Wasteland's dragons. The blood of the White Tiger was flowing within the body of everyone in the tiger clan. Legends had it that their ancestor was a White Tiger with divine marks. During the ancient wartime, it had once received three strikes from Buddha and remained unscathed. The depths of its strength was unknown.

"Swish!"

The rainbow-colored radiance flashed, the dragon's divine ability illuminated the surroundings as it swept towards the tiger duo in the front.

"Rips! Rips!"

The tiger woman launched a brilliant ray in the shape of a tiger claw. The light blade looked like a real divine weapon as it cut through the air. It was producing an ear-splitting sound and made the earth tremble violently. The tiger servant also directly launched a crescent moon shaped light blade. It produced a similarly rumbling sound, it sounded as if a magnificent army with thousands of men and horses were surging forward.

The clan had already received their reports and gave them a secret order to kill this snow-white little critter when an opportunity arose. This was tantamount to a must kill order. They have to eliminate this snow-white little critter by all means. The tiger clan rarely issued this kind of order, it was sufficient to prove that they were afraid of Keke. That was because the key figures had already guessed its origin from the depiction.

Following the soundless collision, the light glinted. The destructive energy fluctuation did not spread to the surroundings. However, at that point in the center, there was a rupture burning fiercely like the sun. The glaring rays of light nearly made everyone lose their sight. Soon after, like the annihilation of the cosmos, that point was ultimately sucked into a black hole.

This kind of collision was the most dangerous. With just a small mishap, they would certainly be annihilated. Blood spilled out from the corner of the snow-

white little critter's mouth as it was sent flying away. However, it was still relentlessly protecting Xiao Chen with the rainbow-colored radiance, and didn't let any harm fall unto him. Although it was powerful, possessed extraordinary gifts, and had divine abilities ordinary people couldn't even imagine, it was facing two demigods after all.

One must know that this domain was laid out by six demigods. Inside this domain, they held the absolute advantage, it was impossible for the little critter to break out of the six demigods' domain.

As they rammed into the ground, Xiao Chen moved over with difficulty. He coughed out a mouthful of blood and embraced the heavily injured Keke dearly. Then he looked at the six demigods in the sky quietly.

Xiao Chen swallowed the blood that was about to be coughed out and said calmly, "You may reap my two souls and seven spirits, seal my last remaining soul in front of the White Tiger's grave for all eternity, but let the snow-white little critter go."

"I originally came for it in the first place, how can I let it off!" The tiger woman laughed grimly.

"If you guys kill it. The dragons will not forgive you."

"The Southern Wasteland has the dragons, the tiger clan has the ancestor, who is stronger in the end, that's hard to say!" The tiger servant remained unmoved.

Far away, on top of the Solitary clan's ancient castle. A grey-haired man carrying a broadsword stood in the sky as he looked on quietly. Then he silently heaved a sigh as he spoke to himself, "It shouldn't have appeared in this world. The dragons are either fond of it, afraid of it, or hate it. The relationship is very complicated. There are already more than enough Dragon Kings as is. There are no less than four little dragons that look like the Ancestral Dragon. There's no need for this little critter to be born. However, it didn't get killed by the dragons on dragon island, and successfully arrived at the mainland. The old man in the Southern Wasteland had no choice but to take his stance. But now... the little critter has escaped from the Southern Wasteland by itself, maybe that old man will now turn a blind eye and let it fend for itself."

“Rips!”

The sound of the air getting cut was transmitted over. The old woman was also afraid that an unforeseen event might take place. A cold radiance fell from high in the sky as it was launched directly at Xiao Chen and the snow-white little critter.

Keke broke free from Xiao Chen’s embrace. It spared no effort to charge into the sky to face the old woman.

Along with a glaring flash, the rainbow-colored radiance was launched towards the sky, over and over. The little critter was attacking with all of its might, hoping to break through everyone’s domain.

However, the outcome was as expected. Keke was still very young, no matter how much hidden potential it possessed, it was still unable to solo six demigods at the moment. A swath of blood gently fell as the little critter crashed onto the ground, giving rise to smoke and dust.

Xiao Chen moved his wounded body with difficulty and crawled over slowly, leaving a trail of blood behind. He retrieved a five-colored divine feather from his pocket and put it on Keke’s body. Then he faced everyone in the sky and said, “You guys can ignore the prestige of the dragons, but do you guys want to incur the hatred of the phoenix on top of that? I won’t ask for much, I only need you to let it go. I can make it promise to never take revenge for me. You guys can even erase its memory, all I ask of you is to leave it alive.”

“What could be more thorough than killing it on the spot? Our ancestor is not afraid of the dragons in the Southern Wasteland. The phoenix’s divine feather is only a token of friendship, it is not as important as you might think.”

Right now, it is impossible to even let Keke get out of this alive. Xiao Chen remained silent as he coldly gazed at everyone in the sky.

Just who could save him and Keke? The dragons... seemed to be very heartless, they should have appeared already. Why are they not making an appearance yet?

Will the Undying Sect come to their rescue? The chance is very slim. Although Yan Qingcheng shares the same fate as him due to the Obliterate Demon

Absolute God, it is impossible for them to make an enemy out of numerous major powers for a single disciple. It was impossible for their sect to make such a decision.

“Squeak...” Keke crawled up weakly. It tried to use the rainbow-colored radiance to protect Xiao Chen and attempted to soar into the sky one more time.

“Bang!”

With a flash of divine light, the little critter was struck ruthlessly as it fell onto the ground heavily.

“Let go of me...”

“Squeak... Wuu~ Wuu~” Keke shook its head stubbornly, its eyes filled with tears. Although it was also coughing out blood, it still stubbornly used its small body to carry Xiao Chen, and soared into the sky again.

One time, two times, three times...

For the Nth times, Keke was ruthlessly slammed into the ground by the old woman.

Keke was already losing its strength. At the moment, its originally snow-white fur was already stained red from blood. However, it still stubbornly carried Xiao Chen on its back and attempted to charge into the sky unceasingly. It just wouldn't let go no matter what.

Xiao Chen, who had never cried before, felt the outer corner of his eyes becoming moist. He had never believed in heaven, nor fate, the Xiao Chen that only believed in his own power, at this very moment, felt his heart bleeding. He kept praying, praying that the snow-white little critter could make it out alive.

“Wuu~ Wuu~” The little critter was sobbing. It had already lost all of its strength as it fell into the pool of blood like Xiao Chen did. However, it was still as stubborn as before. It kept trying to crawl towards Xiao Chen obstinately and wanted to carry him on its back to escape again. However, even after so many attempts, the little critter was only able to extend its tiny paws. No matter how much it tried, it was unable to create the rainbow-colored radiance.

In the end, it could only whimper as it crawled towards Xiao Chen with

difficulty. It kept sobbing, the tears had already blurred its sight.

Xiao Chen exerted his strength to embrace it, there's already nothing much to say at this point. He only stared at the tiger duo in the sky coldly.

"Why don't you beg me, beg me to spare you..." The old woman had a sinister smile. Her condition was almost as if she had gone insane. There was a really huge pressure in her heart. The young White Tiger is dead. The direct descendant of the tiger clan also died in this place. She was bearing an unavoidable responsibility.

A wordless contempt. Xiao Chen didn't say anything.

"Then you guys can go and die!" The old woman despised this kind of glance from Xiao Chen the most. She descended from high in the sky and her right palm cut through the air like a blade.

"Squeak..." Keke opened its eyes weakly and looked at Xiao Chen reluctantly one more time. After that, it decided to jump up with the last ounce of its strength to face the old woman.

However, it couldn't even execute the rainbow-colored radiance, just how could it stand up against the old woman?

The little critter's voice was transmitted from the sky for one last time. After that, it came to an end spontaneously as the old woman's palm blade swept past its body. The blood splashed everywhere and following closely, rainbow-colored light illuminated the entire sky. The dazzling radiance was omnipresent and the greater parts of the Celestial City was brightly lit.

Even if Xiao Chen had a heart of steel, he also cried out bitterly in an instant. It felt as if his heart and lungs had been split open. The him who had rarely cried since a tender age, had tears falling like rain. Never before had he thought that he would have such a frail day.

Before the little critter faced the old woman for one last time, the reluctance to part in its eyes, was forever carved onto Xiao Chen's heart...

"Squeak... squeak..." The puerile voice of the little critter seemed to linger on in his ears.

The cute little critter, the gluttonous little critter, the naive little critter, the lively little critter, the little critter who went through many trials and tribulations with him... it actually died like this. 1

“AHHHHHHHHH” Xiao Chen went mad due to sorrow. Like a wild beast that was hurt, he faced upwards and scream.

Far away, a mournful flute sound fluttered in the air and was carried over by the wind. It was like the soul depriving tune of the underworld.

“I don’t want this conclusion...” Xiao Chen felt a pain like a knife being twisted in his heart. His tears were falling like the rain. He was facing upwards and shouting while lying on the pool of blood. He burst into tears like a child.

A sweet fragrance drifted in the air, petals of all colors fluttered about slowly in the sky, gracefully. Every petal was as clear as jade. A rain of flowers actually fell from the sky.

Following that, a Buddhist chant resounded, the faintly discernable ancient chants in the sky enveloped the entire region. Soon after, the last phase of the hymn also resounded simultaneously. Lastly, the praying sounds seemed to pierce through the space-time continuum and arrived at the present time. It sounded extremely sorrowful.

The rainbow-colored radiance enveloped the entire world as the rain of flowers fell gracefully.

Everyone was endlessly terrified. After the little critter was killed, it actually triggered such bizarre changes. Nobody was able to understand what was going on.

Legends had it, that this would only happen when some of the ancestor gods were killed, such as Buddha, Laozi, and a few others. Just what was the origin of this snow-white little critter? For something like this to actually happen... to let the heaven and earth grieve for it, to let thousands of flowers weep for it, how was this possible? How could this be possible!

Everyone was stupefied, especially the tiger woman. She could feel her body temperature dropping. Just what kind of little critter did she kill? It actually caused the heavens to grieve for it and led to this bizarre event. She felt her very

soul trembling in fear.

“I don’t wish for long life, only a perfect symbiosis, I don’t strive to live for hundreds of generations, but only this generation. I don’t seek eternity, but only this life..... With my soul as the sacrifice, a thousand generations of deprivation, a hundred generations of torment, I only wish to give this life to the little critter.....”

At this very moment, Xiao Chen solemnly pledged an oath towards that unknown entity. His voice reverberated clearly in heaven and earth as it spread over more than half of Celestial City. Many people felt emotionally moved.

The old woman was so scared that her entire body was shaking. She was just about to rush over to kill Xiao Chen. Since the flowers fell from the sky, the instant the Buddhist chant, the hymn, and the prayers could be heard, she knew that she might have caused a gargantuan disaster.

The little critter’s corpse did not fall unto the earth, it seemed to have disappeared.

Seven streaks of multicolored lights were spiralling in the sky. Each had a striking resemblance to an Ancestral Dragon. In the end, all the lights rushed towards a palm-sized sapling. In that instant, the rays of light rushed straight towards the skies. The palm-sized rainbow-colored sacred tree blossomed with a glaring divine radiance that made every other object lose its color. Then, it slowly descended.

The old woman was extremely terrified. She transformed into a black light and rushed over there instantly. However, the rainbow-colored sacred tree seemed to possess boundless power that could shatter all resistance. The resplendent light emitted by it instantly sent the old woman flying away.

The sapling slowly descended towards the pool of blood and landed on Xiao Chen’s palm. The rainbow-colored radiance flickered unceasingly.

He could vaguely hear the little thing’s puerile “squeaking” voice. Xiao Chen felt an acute pain in his heart as his tears fell like rain.

Index

Flowers and petals of all kinds fell from the sky unceasingly. They were sparkling and translucent as they fluttered about like withered flowers. The Buddhist chant, the grief-stricken song, the praying sound... continued to linger on.

“I don’t wish for a long life, only a perfect symbiosis, I don’t strive to live for hundreds of generations, but only this generation. I don’t seek eternity, but only this life..... With my soul as the sacrifice, a thousand generations of deprivation, a hundred generations of torment, I only wish to give this life to the little critter.....” This voice reverberated in heaven and earth for a very long time.

The rainbow-colored sacred tree was glittering and made Xiao Chen’s palms almost transparent in contrast. The specks of divine radiance enveloped Xiao Chen, who was in the pool of blood.

The radiance made the night as bright as daytime. The little critter’s death triggered a bizarre event, the heavens were grieving. The entire Celestial City was shaken. Many practitioners were startled by this sudden change and everyone felt an involuntary sadness. They were unable to describe nor understand this feeling.

This was the show of extravagance that only occurred to half of the deities! Those who could make the heavens grieve for them, since ancient times, could be counted by one hand. This was enough to prove that the snow-white little critter’s race was powerful. Many people could already feel their blood run cold.

Many people were already discussing the root cause of this disturbance. All of this happening was due to the death of the young White Tiger.

“The Middle Earth’s tiger clan is too tyrannical. The White Tiger fell in the Warbeast Tournament, who could they blame?”

“Since they took part in the competition, they should have understood and prepared to accept the results. Among the rules of the Warbeast Tournament, it

clearly stated they will not be responsible for the death of the warbeasts. It's a rule even a three year-old child can understand, but they just had to come seeking revenge after the event. They're so unreasonable and shameless!"

"Everything was caused by this shameless clan, they even made the heaven furious."

"The Fair family isn't much better either, because they feared the Middle Earth's tiger clan, they actually worked with them and let outsiders kill their son-in-law."

Everyone knew, it was impossible for this disturbance to settle down even with the death of the little critter.

Since he had already made the pledge, Xiao Chen seemed to have sunk into the borders of death. He was fixing his eyes on the sapling in his palm quietly. His eyes didn't have any emotion.

The rainbow-colored radiance already enveloped his entire body. The divinized acupoints in his body were as dazzling as the stars. At this very moment, they were emitting brilliant rays of light as the boundless life energy surged up violently, restoring his dying body.

Although he remained silent, Xiao Chen was shedding tears noiselessly. He didn't know if he would be able to see that mischievous little thing ever again. Although the rainbow-colored sacred tree had absorbed Keke's soul essence, who could say for sure if it would appear in this world again?

The rainbow-colored sacred tree was swaying, like the little critter snoring in its peaceful sleep. Xiao Chen's heart also thumped in accordance. The radiance of the sacred tree had linked up with the life energy hidden in his major acupoints. Very soon, his entire body was immersed in the dazzling splendor. The ruptured veins were reconnecting, the shattered skin and flesh were healing, the fractured bones were restored.....

The crystal clear skin was flickering with specks of light as the bloody scars all over were completely shaken off. The rainbow-colored light raged on like the divine flame.

It was as if Xiao Chen was reborn from the ashes. His body was once again

filled with an abundance of life energy. He was already fully recovered in a brief moment. But, how about the little critter..... it still didn't reappear.

Fear was lodged in the hearts of the tiger duo. In the face of this bizarre event, they had a bad premonition. Even though they appeared to be in good health now, they were afraid that a calamity was looming in the near future.

Without wasting any time, the two immediately rushed towards Xiao Chen. Light blades in the form of tiger claws were slashed toward Xiao Chen's neck with the intent to kill.

The falling flowers swirled in the air. The petals spread out like ripples of water. With the rainbow-colored sacred tree in Xiao Chen's hands as the center, the multicolored radiance rushed forth. Seven colors of radiance instantly sent the tiger duo flying.

"How did this happen?" The tiger duo were very terrified. After they were sent flying several dozens of meters, they stabilized their figure in the sky and attempted to attack Xiao Chen one more time.

The rainbow-colored sacred tree separated itself from Xiao Chen's palm. It was actually hanging in the air as it launched a huge light beam similar to the comet tail. If not because the tiger duo was fast enough, it was extremely possible that they might pay a great price as a result. Even so, the flow of their qi and blood was still thrown into disorder by the aftermath, and they nearly fell from the sky.

The rays of light flickered as the rainbow-colored sacred tree descended. It was floating in front of Xiao Chen's solar plexus and shook unceasingly. After that, it actually entered Xiao Chen's body as if it was melting.

In this short instant, the divine tree was spreading its vines all over Xiao Chen's body. The stolons bore into his four limbs and all of his veins. The inky jade leaf, the white jade leaf, the green jade leaf, and the gold jade leaf trembled unceasingly and brightly lit up his internal organs.

The nine divinized acupoints were like nine treasures that linked up with the rainbow-colored sacred tree. All of them were connected by the sapling's stolons. The rays of light were dazzling. Xiao Chen's entire body was emitting thousand of streaks of colored light.

Tears had clouded Xiao Chen's vision. It was the little critter's treasured tree that saved him, but what about the little critter? Was it really within the sacred tree? Was it possible for it to reappear in this world again?

He felt a pain like a knife being twisted in his heart...

At this very moment, Xiao Chen felt that he shares the same life as the sacred tree. The rainbow-colored sacred tree connected the nine divinized acupoints and implanted itself in his internal organs. It had taken root in his four limbs like a spiritual root of life. The sacred tree had established an inseparable relationship with Xiao Chen. With a wave of his palm, a multicolored light was launched with a swish. That was actually the major divine ability of the dragons — confinement! 1

Everyone present was incomparably startled. The look on many people's faces were extremely ugly. How did Xiao Chen, who was originally heavily wounded, fuse with the sapling, and moreover, how did he come to grasp Keke's major divine ability?

There were six demigods at the scene. Other than the tiger duo, who dared to kill Keke, the others came to reap Xiao Chen's life. For this man who was on the verge of dying to come across such a stroke of luck, it immediately made everyone unable to sit idly.

The six demigods in the sky besieged Xiao Chen and erected a domain to seal Xiao Chen on the ground. Since things had already escalated to this point, it was impossible for them to let Xiao Chen go anymore. Only by exterminating him would they be able to avoid future complications.

Xiao Chen unfolded the Undying Divine Wings and soared into the sky with great effort. With signs of total annihilation, his palm blade glowed with inexhaustible splendor as seventeen layers of divine radiance were launched toward the tiger duo from all directions.

The tiger duo were as merciless as ever, energy waves in the form of a White Tiger were launched as if they were the External Incarnation. The light blade sliced through the air as it confronted the dragon's major divine ability. The night sky immediately became as bright as daytime. The energy waves surged up violently and spread over all ten directions. The waves of aura overturned many

buildings in the surroundings.

This was a great clash between divine abilities, this was a great confrontation between power!

Xiao Chen fell onto the ground due to the aftershock, but his body was unharmed. He swept his eyes over the sky coldly.

The tiger woman and company were really astonished. How was Xiao Chen capable of standing off against them? Even if he had grasped the little critter's divine ability, it was impossible for him to become this strong. One must know that even the little critter was having a hard time against them under these kinds of circumstances; where it was trapped in this domain. At present, Xiao Chen was only borrowing the power of the divine ability, how was it possible that he could become stronger than the little critter?

In fact, Xiao Chen was also surprised at first, but he realized it after thinking about it for a little bit. Right now, not only was it the power of the little critter, there was also the boundless energy contained within the sacred tree, as well as the power of the nine divinized acupoints in his body.

“Even if you have grasped the little critter's divine ability, so what? Do you think you can breakthrough the domain and escape from here?” The tiger woman was staring at Xiao Chen fiercely. She was extremely angry. Unexpected events kept occurring and made the tiger woman lose her patience. Moreover, her fear was continuously rising, fear that something bad might happen.

Xiao Chen disregarded her taunt and launched one attack after another unceasingly. He wanted to break free from the resistance of the six demigods.

Life and death confrontation, intense collisions. Xiao Chen was able to resist the domain, but was unable to breakthrough.

The six demigods in the sky was somewhat anxious. Although they were in an advantageous situation, they still wanted to eliminate Xiao Chen in the shortest time possible. Because, with the sacred tree in Xiao Chen's body, they couldn't help but worry that some unforeseen event would occur again.

“Great defense, but not enough attack power...” Xiao Chen sighed in his heart. He had presently grasped the “confinement” and “sweeping” techniques among

the dragon's major divine abilities. As for the "destruction" technique, he didn't have the slightest clue.

How he wished he could immediately behead the six people before his eyes. Even though the sacred tree had fused with him and allowed him to grasp Keke's divine abilities, Xiao Chen was still unable to fend off the six people in the sky. He could only make his stand on the ground.

"Am I still going to die in this place after all?" Xiao Chen gradually started to feel crestfallen. He never considered getting any outside help. Among the people he knew, only the demon and Lan Nuo had enough power to save him from this crisis, but distant water does not cure present thirst. 2

Just at this time, from the direction where the faintly discernable melody of the flute was transmitted, a sword flew over as the melody came to an end. It sliced through the air, and was launched towards the domain erected by the six demigods.

The sword fell onto mother earth like the heavenly body. It was a powerful sword attack, it felt as if the Ninth Heaven had been engulfed by the boundless ocean! The sword ray instantly tore the domain and opened a pathway. Nobody expected such a powerful expert would interfere. The refined sword broke through the domain and smashed the equilibrium!

Xiao Chen possessed an astonishing gift in regards to battle. He soared into the sky within that very instant and launched the "sweeping" technique of the dragons across the skies!

He swept the tiger woman and company with more than ten terrifying light beams in succession, then he instantly rushed out of the domain and stood in the sky. He looked towards the direction where the melody of the flute came from with a profound gaze, and then he swept his eyes over everyone at present with a cold gaze.

"Swish!"

With a flap of the Undying Divine Wings, Xiao Chen rushed over instantly and launched a divine radiance to sweep the tiger woman. She was sent somersaulting in but a moment.

The tiger woman flew into rage out of humiliation. Without the domain erected by the six demigods, it was impossible for her to resist the vicious little beast's divine ability by herself. She shouted in anger, "Erect the domain, quickly! We can't let him escape. He must die tonight!"

In reality, who was willing to let Xiao Chen run away? He would certainly become the bringer of calamity in the future.

There's no way Xiao Chen would let them trap him again. His body moved like a legendary dragon with the ability to control rains and floods as he flew towards a distant location.

"Chase!"

"We must not let him run away, we definitely have to kill him!"

The flowers falling from the sky gradually decreased, the Buddhist chant, the sad melody, and the prayers also completely disappeared. Xiao Chen was like the wind and lightning as he distanced himself from Celestial City. He escaped into the uncultivated areas of the Southern Wasteland.

Although the six demigods were pursuing closely and tried every possible method, they still gradually lost any trace of Xiao Chen in the desolate forest.

Xiao Chen smiled grimly. He had finally broken free from the six people. Going back the way he came from, he moved back to Celestial City stealthily.

It's time for a massacre!

This was an impulse he couldn't suppress. Despite knowing that the most appropriate course of action right now was to get away from here, he was still unable to endure it. If he couldn't kill the tiger duo, how would he have the countenance to face Keke.

The little critter couldn't die for nothing!

Now, he wanted to cause mayhem in the city.

The people from the Fair family was still searching in the city. Xiao Chen instantly ran into a group of people. He ruthlessly attacked with the "sweeping" technique of the dragons, and instantly crushed these people. Although it was not a technique specialized in killing, it was still enough to deal with these

people.

“Someone...”

“He’s over here...”

“Xiao Chen is back for the kill!”

Without waiting for them to shout, Xiao Chen had already attacked. He rushed straight for the Fair family.

With a horizontal slash of a palm blade, seven to eight people were chopped in half at the waist. The blood instantly splashed everywhere. Xiao Chen was looking for Fairsnow and Faircloud among the crowd. Another divine radiance swept past with a lift of his hand. More than ten heads were sent flying in a parabola, as blood gushed forth. The main street was dyed red with blood.

He didn’t find Fairsnow nor Faircloud in the crowd. Xiao Chen instantly soared into the sky and rushed out of Celestial City again as he hid in the endless, dark sky.

The six demigods hastily rushed back from the desolate forest. Four of the experts from the Fair family became anxious right away. Among the twenty plus people who died just now, there were seven or eight Historia level experts. This was a loss that shouldn’t have happened! The four ignored the tiger duo and charged toward four directions to gather the younger generation of the family.

As soon as the four people departed, Xiao Chen silently approached from his hiding place and attacked the tiger woman upon encounter!

“This wretched boy!” The tiger duo became furious and turned around to attack Xiao Chen.

It must be mentioned that, the dragon’s divine abilities were really mighty. After dodging the tiger servant’s attack, Xiao Chen ruthlessly sent the tiger woman flying. With a flap of his Undying Divine Wings, his speed was faster than lightning with a push from the rainbow-colored sacred tree. He directly chased for the kill.

With an explosion of light, Xiao Chen sent a diagonal cut with a swish.

The tiger woman countered, but she was practically unable to resist. Along

with the shattering sound, the divine radiance scattered. Xiao Chen rushed past the dozens of divine light fragments toward the tiger woman.

“Pfff!”

Blood gushed out. Xiao Chen’s palm blade had cut through the tiger woman’s right palm. Shaking his palm blade again, it completely crushed the small arm of the tiger woman. It made the tiger servant pursuing from behind burst with anger. However, it was too late to provide support.

“AHHHHHH!!!” The old woman screamed miserably. She flew backwards as much as she could and broke away from Xiao Chen.

As Xiao Chen was dodging the tiger servant who had attacked from behind, he still managed to sweep his leg across. The blazing divine light narrowly beheaded the retreating tiger woman. It missed slightly and peeled off a small piece of her lower jaw.

As such, Xiao Chen distanced himself without even turning back. He knew that once the two got together, he would need to pay a great price to defeat them. He should take advantage of when they were separated to attack.

“How is this possible? How is this possible!” The tiger woman shouted with a sharp voice. Her face looked sinister, her eyes brimming with an ominous glint as she stared at Xiao Chen’s retreating figure that was gradually disappearing. Then she said with a deep voice, “We must not let that boy amount to anything, kill him! We must kill him tonight.”

The tiger duo immediately gave chase.

Hit and run, that was Xiao Chen’s tactic. At present, he had entered Celestial City again. His target was a lone demigod from the Fair family.

“Swish!”

The divine radiance was dazzling as the confinement technique of the dragons was executed. It instantly trapped the old man within. Although it couldn’t completely seal his movements, it was clear that his speed decreased dramatically, as if he was forging ahead in a swamp.

Divine radiance was launched, one after another. After a total of thirty six

divine radiances were launched, Xiao Chen finally sealed the old man's movements.

Without any hesitation, Xiao Chen rushed over with lightning speed. With a roundhouse kick, blazing rays of light illuminated the entire sky and everyone was able to feel the energy fluctuation from this area.

"Pfff!"

Blood spurted out. The two arms of this demigod level expert were instantly cut off from his body.

The merciless kick was supposed to cut this Zephyrus level expert at the waist. However, the adaptive ability of the demigod was very strong. Despite his movements being sealed, he was still able to instantly defend with both hands.

The instant his two arms were broken, Xiao Chen didn't hesitate to turn his back to the demigod and attacked his chest with his right elbow.

"Pfff!"

Blood sprung up as the demigod let out a miserable shriek. His chest was totally caved in. Xiao Chen didn't turn around and immediately distanced himself after giving him a good kick.

With his head crushed, the corpse fell from the sky.

Xiao Chen had extremely gifted battle instinct. His life and death experiences were also very abundant. The only thing he lacked was power and strength. Now that he had momentarily acquired the divine power of the sacred tree, his battle instincts were raised to the limit.

"Xiao Chen, you bastard!"

After Xiao Chen had succeeded with his hit and run tactic, Faircloud and another old man arrived at that location. They let out a resentful bellow from behind and began to give chase.

"I didn't expect for you to have already broken into the Zephyrus realm yourself, Faircloud. Good, I will remember it. At the same time, I ask of you to remember this, I will definitely take your head, along with your daughter's!" As the sound faded away, Xiao Chen disappeared in the dark sky far away.

Xiao Chen didn't dare to go too deep into Celestial City. He was only waiting for his chance in the darkness secretly. Because he was somewhat worried, he was fully aware of how formidable those major clans are. If... an expert of the Immortalis realm really appeared, it wouldn't be anything strange. At that time, he would really be screwed!

Should he retreat for now? However, he was very unwilling. Hate! Keke was killed! If he didn't take revenge for it, and just ran away like this, he felt that his heart would be ripped apart by the pain.

However, immortals..... there might really be an expert of the Immortalis realm within the city. That was an existence that couldn't be challenged. Did he really have to train vigorously and endure it silently for many years before he could take his revenge? Xiao Chen's heart... felt really sullen and painful.

"Do you want power? I can give it to you, but I have a condition..." A devil-like voice abruptly resounded in Xiao Chen's heart, prompting him to make a decision.

"I can also give you the power in which you seek..." Another voice suddenly resounded in his heart. It possessed an indescribable demonic nature, "Everything in this world is fair. If you want to gain something, you must first pay for it."

"Make your decision quickly, the dragon's sacred tree won't stay in your body for much longer."

"It is a very fair deal, as long as you..."

"Time for a massacre..."

"Dye the Celestial City with blood..."

Two demons were enticing him.

CHAPTER 213 – A MAN’S PRIDE

The black metal engravings and golden halberd sealed in Xiao Chen’s hands actually had intelligence, the voice came from them.

“Do you want to take revenge? I will bestow you the power to sweep everything before you.”

“In the presence of absolute power, be it true virtues or dark desires, they will be crushed as easily as a crystal glass. Everything in this world is but an illusion. Everything is like a dream in the presence of unyielding power. Nothing can last for eternity. Do you wish to follow your heart’s desires and move unhindered in the world? I can give you everything.”

“As long as you have power, you can do as you please and dominate everything.”

The two devils were enticing him. There was a hint of dark power reverberating unceasingly in Xiao Chen’s heart. They wanted to lead Xiao Chen towards the sea of desires one step at a time.

Xiao Chen listened quietly and after a really long time later, he finally said, “Since you guys possessed great magical power and are omnipotent, why do you need to make a deal with me.”

Hearing this question, the two devils remained silent. Only after a while did they finally say;

“The most difficult level to surpass in this world is yourself.”

“I got trapped by myself, that’s why I am making a deal with you.”

After staying silent for awhile, he asked, “What kind of price should I pay?”

“Since you share the same life as the sacred tree, and could control the rainbow-colored radiance within, I only need you to offer me that power.”

“Offer that rainbow-colored divine radiance to me, that power is not as formidable as you imagined. I can help you slaughter all the demigod level enemies.”

“What could a mere demigod amount to, they are nothing more than a weak little ant in front of me. Even killing Immortalis level experts is as easy as slicing pie.”

The two devils actually started to quarrel. They wanted the rainbow-colored divine radiance in the sacred tree.

“I can’t accept your condition!” Xiao Chen no longer uttered a single word. He immediately unfolded the Undying Wings and gradually vanished in the darkness.

There was no need to doubt the black metal engravings and golden halberd’s power, but Xiao Chen was unable to accept their condition. It was extremely possible that Keke might be hiding within the rainbow-colored sacred tree. If he offered the rainbow-colored divine radiance within to them, god knows if something bad might happen. Xiao Chen was unable to bear this kind of outcome.

“Don’t tell me you are going to retreat like this? Are you not going to take revenge for the little critter anymore?”

“A manly man wouldn’t retreat just like this. Once angered, he should slaughter the god and bath in their blood. To stay alive with this weighing you down, are you still a man?”

Xiao Chen didn’t pay attention to them any longer. He originally thought smelting two divine artifacts into his body would be a great opportunity. Only now he knew that he had attracted two greedy devils.

“Swish!”

All of a sudden, Xiao Chen felt as if he had entered a land of fantasy. The endless mountains pierced through the skies, the boundless land was completely desolate, not a soul to be seen. The white clouds lingered on the sky and a few temples stood high in the clouds.

In that instant, Xiao Chen soared high above the clouds. The golden divine halberd and the jet-black metal engravings appeared in front of him and flew towards two watchtowers respectively.

“I don’t want to make a deal with you.”

Xiao Chen did not panic. He stood calmly in the sky as he looked at the majestic temples.

At present, the jet-black metal engravings was as big as a lofty mountain. It was floating in the sky and gave people a huge pressure like that of the vast, torrential ocean. The shadow it cast down from the sky was so heavy, so huge. It was emitting a dense and thick black light. At the same time, overflowing black fog was lingering in the surroundings.

On the other side, the golden divine halberd was like a huge mountain that had been thrust into the heavenly dome. It was just as big and one couldn't see its other end. It was floating perfectly straight on top of the temple. The golden divine radiance made the palace below it bright and glorious. That place was so dazzling, as if millions and millions of starlight had converged.

“Are you worried that by offering the rainbow-colored divine radiance to us, the little critter's chance at resurrection would be nulled? Your little critter is already dead in the truest sense. No matter how much you try, it will be useless. Rather than that, why not just make a deal with us and take revenge for it. Let its soul rest in peace.”

“Everything is very fair. If you wish to gain something, you must pay for it first.”

The loud rumbling sound reverberated from above the Ninth Heaven. The two ancient divine artifacts were like giants from ancient times, mighty and astounding.

After grieving, Xiao Chen was incomparably calm even when facing such a change of events. He remained silent for a good while before he said, “Just where did you guys come from?” 1

“Are you in doubt of our strength?”

The divine weapon was as big as huge mountain. The voice it let out was ear-splitting.

The jet-black metal engravings seemed to be immersed in an old memory, its voice contained an indescribable confidence, “A really long time ago, I had smashed Laozi's previous generations into meat paste, and made it difficult for

him to meet up with their souls for eight hundred years. Say, am I strong or what?”

The golden halberd was the same, it was immersed in an old memory and let out a world-shaking rumbling sound soon after, “I... had once nailed Buddha’s previous generation on the Heavenlink Mountain for 7,749 days. Killing him after draining his blood.”

Even if he had just experienced a grievable event, Xiao Chen was still shocked. Just what kind of existences were these two divine artifacts... their origins were really a little too great. Just what kind of desperate war took place in that distant past?

“You guys are definitely powerful, but the one who defeated the both of you is even more so.” Xiao Chen refused again, and said, “I told you, I will not make a deal with you.”

Since it already became like this, he already realized that the two divine artifacts who followed them from the dragon island was only for the sacred tree. However, since they had once concealed themselves within the sacred tree, and were unable to reap any benefits, they wanted to seek help from him.

“Then let’s change the conditions...”

The jet-black metal engravings let out a rumbling sound, and said, “Let’s trade with hundred years of your life. I will grant you power for half of the night.”

“Trading half of my life span for half a day of glory. This could be said to be the most extravagant way to burn my life force!” Xiao Chen exclaimed.

The golden halberd also started to talk, “This is a very fair deal. In half of the night, you can do many things.”

“The life expectancy of an ordinary man is eighty years. Exuvia realm practitioner can live up to one hundred and sixty years. Historia level expert can live up to two hundred and forty years. Pay us hundred years of your life respectively. Minus the twenty one year you have spent, you will have nineteen years remaining.”

“You guys are too greedy. Since you are omnipotent, why not go gather it yourself.” Xiao Chen felt that these two divine artifacts were really like devils.

“If possible, we wouldn’t make this request of you. Everything in this world is equivalent to an ant in our eyes. There’s no need to show mercy.” The golden halberd’s voice reverberated in the sky.

“If I have the strength, I will definitely smelt these two scrap metals.” What divine artifacts, Xiao Chen felt that these two were more like evil weapons.

The black fog lingered around the jet-black metal engravings. It emitted a boundless pressure, and said, “Whether you accept the deal or not is up to you, we will not force you.”

The golden halberd followed up, “If you are confident in yourself, the remaining nineteen years is more than enough. Break through the Zephyrus realm within nineteen years, and your lifespan will increase.”

Xiao Chen remained silent for a while. Then he promised without any hesitation, “I am willing to accept this deal.”

He naturally had the confidence to break into the Zephyrus realm within nineteen years. However, the main reason that compelled Xiao Chen to make the deal was the pride of a man. If he ran away just like this, he wouldn’t be able to forgive himself. If he ran away, he could obtain a new life, and he could slowly take revenge. However, the opportunity had now presented itself in front of him, if he ran away from this, he couldn’t be considered a man anymore.

Seeing that he had agreed without the slightest hesitation, the two vicious weapons seemed to have reconciled.

“Actually, you could have just used the rainbow-colored sacred tree to make the deal. It is about to separate from your body in just a short while anyway.”

“Using the sacred tree to make the deal is out of the question!” Xiao Chen resolutely refused.

“You should think about this properly, two hundred years of lifespan is a heavy price to pay for anyone concerned! The path of asceticism is an arduous path. Lifespan is not something you should spend as you wish. Even if you can break into the Zephyrus realm within nineteen years, you will head towards the even more challenging Nirvana realm and Immortalis realm. You will then be even weaker compared to others. You will be pressed for time.”

“Is it worth it for an already deceased little critter?”

“Of course!” Xiao Chen only let out these two words. Although he seemed to be very calm, he was feeling extremely sad. The little critter was willing to give up its life for him, how could he not be willing to give up a mere two hundred years?

“Incomprehensible.” The two vicious weapons let out a rumbling noise.

“Because I am a man!” Xiao Chen said firmly, “Please begin the trade!”

“Alright. Before that, I just have a little reminder. With two hundred years of your lifespan, it is impossible to grant you too much power. It is just enough to take revenge and to preserve your life, but it is far from enough to dye the Celestial City with blood.”

“I am not a killing machine, I don’t need to dye the Celestial City with blood, I only need to eliminate a few enemies.”

“Alright, begin the trade, let your life force burn. Concentrate your power into the palms...”

The radiance of life shone in the sky. One after another, the radiance rushed towards Xiao Chen’s palms and made this space incomparably dazzling. It couldn’t be any more beautiful than the flower of life blooming. By burning his own life force, the holy radiance illuminated the entire night sky and made the stars in the sky to lose their splendor.

Xiao Chen was standing in the sky just outside of the Celestial City. The glaring rays of light illuminated all ten directions and allowed many practitioners in the Celestial City to feel it in the first moments. The demigod level experts took action instantly and charge towards that piece of sky.

Within the full bloom of the holy radiance, Xiao Chen’s black hair quickly dried up. The color changed from pitch-black to white. In the end, it changed to snow-white. In only but an instant, his hair was already as white as the snow.

Although his skin didn’t become wrinkled, it was not as glossy as it was in the past. Although his steel-like body was standing perfectly straight, there were traces of old age appearing on his body.

White hair like the snow, his appearance remained unchanged, but that sharp

glint in his eyes had become much dimmer. He looked much older and haggard compared to before.

He didn't feel dispirited, depressed, nor regret. All the more was the unswerving determination. Once the trade was completed, Xiao Chen stood in the sky, facing the wind, and looked at the five demigods who rushed over indifferently.

The tiger woman sneered, "One night and your hair already turns white. It's useless even if you rush. Xiao Chen, you will definitely die here tonight." Although that's what she said, she had a lingering doubt. If Xiao Chen dared to wait for them to besiege him calmly, he definitely had something to rely on. The old woman attacked ruthlessly with words, "To age prematurely, even if we don't kill you, you also don't have much longer to live anyway."

The tiger servant also said gloomily, "Heh-heh... you aged, you are already half crippled. The path of asceticism no longer fits you. Allow me to send you to the Western Paradise by myself!"

Xiao Chen spoke very calmly, "My aspiration did not die, my heart did not wither, the spirit did not vanquish! This is the greatest transformation in my lifetime. What deteriorated is only my appearance, what has been born is a true practitioner. Today, I vow to exterminate the five of you!"

Leaving behind afterimages, the five demigods sealed off five directions in the sky as they closed in on Xiao Chen simultaneously.

Five blazing divine radiances charged toward Xiao Chen at the same time. It was impossible for the five demigods to go easy on him, all of them went for the kill.

The dim light in Xiao Chen's eyes instantly glowed. The dragon's divine ability swept past the ten directions. As the rainbow-colored radiance was launched, the divine light coming from five directions were destroyed.

The five demigods practically couldn't believe it. Xiao Chen was actually not affected in their domain, and his attack power was this formidable.

"Kill!"

"Kill!"

The voices of the five people were in sync. They executed their divine abilities respectively and attacked Xiao Chen.

The tiger woman launched three External Incarnations to attack Xiao Chen. Each of them looked just as fierce as the old woman. The accumulated energy was capable of shaking the very atmosphere.

The tiger servant used the “Ancient Transformation” divine ability. His body was originally humanoid, but due to their ancestor being a Saint White Tiger, they had the blood of the White Tiger flowing in their veins. He had successfully transformed into the true body of the White Tiger. In this moment, he actually transformed into a seven to eight meter long White Tiger. He faced the sky and let out a long roar, it sounded just like the sudden clap of thunder that fell from the Ninth Heaven. The roar shook the vast sky as he charged towards Xiao Chen while slicing through the air.

One demigod from the Fair family was killed. Thus, the three from the Fair family loathed Xiao Chen even more. One of them transformed into a black fog and blended into the night sky. Giving rise to a torrential gale, he tried to engulf Xiao Chen. The other demigod grew in size. He actually became fifteen meters tall giant. The “Guardian Deity” was a powerful divine ability. A big hand slapped towards Xiao Chen with unstoppable force. The last one used Swordification. It was as if there were hundreds and thousands of divine swords criss-crossing in the sky. They formed into wall of swords and attacked Xiao Chen in multiple waves.

The five demigods did not hold anything back as they attacked. The extreme force alarmed every practitioner in the Celestial City. Many people were climbing over tall buildings to survey the night sky from an elevated position.

Recalling the little critter, who had already escaped to the Southern Wasteland, but died in Celestial City for the sake of rescuing him, Xiao Chen let out a world-shaking roar like a wounded beast, “AHHHHHH!!!”

With white hair like snow, and a gaze that contained his unswerving determination, a golden halberd immediately appeared in his hand. Immediately, the murderous aura spread through the sky. Many flowers on the ground instantly withered, and many people in the Celestial City could feel a chill run

down their spine.

“Bring it on!” Xiao Chen waved the golden halberd. His eyes emitted two glints of light as his white hair danced hysterically. He was like a death god as he rushed over with the divine halberd.

There was an exceptional fencer in the past, it was said that his sword-qi could reach up to thirty thousand feet long, and one sword could shake the Ninth Heaven. That was, after all, just a legend.

However, the Xiao Chen at present seemed like he really possessed that kind of atmosphere. The divine halberd released a murderous aura that pierced through the vast sky. Nothing could stop the golden light emitted by the divine halberd, it couldn't be stopped!

The halberd in Xiao Chen's hands swept across all directions!

One out of three of the External Incarnations of the tiger woman was instantly chopped in half. The huge tiger transformed from the tiger servant let out a desperate roar. One of its huge ears was cut off, fresh blood sprinkled everywhere as the sky was dyed red.

The one among the Fair family who transformed into the black fog lost one of his arms, his real body revealed itself as he fell back in a sorry state. A wide expanse of blood sprinkled in the sky. The one who transformed into waves of swords revealed their true body after dozens of longswords were crushed in the sky. More than ten bloody holes appeared all over his body, blood gushing out non-stop, as he retreated in distress. And the man who transformed into the giant was the quickest among them all. He distanced himself for more than a hundred meters, but there was already a terrifying wound on his chest. The blood sprinkled all over vast sky.

Xiao Chen swept the golden divine halberd across the ten directions. It instantly drove the demigods who besieged him away. However, he didn't stop here and continued his assault towards the one closest to him; the demigod from Fair family capable of transforming into waves of swords. The sharp divine halberd flickered with a cold light, and the murderous aura made the sky as cold as the severe winter.

“Infinite Sword Wave!” He shouted loudly, hundreds of swords appeared and

rushed towards Xiao Chen. That area was instantly submerged by waves of swords.

However, it was also in that very instant when Xiao Chen raised the divine halberd; the golden flame burst out as a glass shattering sound was transmitted through the sky. The thousands of sword-qi were instantly destroyed.

The demigod from the Fair family turned pale with fright. Their faces were extremely pale as they fell back in a panic. However, Xiao Chen wouldn't give them this chance. With a wave of his Undying Wings, he rushed over with lightning speed.

With a gaze as cold as the Asura, he waved the golden divine halberd in his hands. One head flew in a parabola while gushing out blood. The blood directly gushed towards the sky as the corpse fell towards the ground.

In a split second, Xiao Chen beheaded a demigod with an ominous halberd in hand!

Blood-soaked and wild. Xiao Chen let out a long howl of grief. Recalling Keke's death, it was hard for him to suppress that killing intent in his heart.

Without stopping, Xiao Chen rushed towards the most hateful tiger duo.

The tiger woman's External Incarnations charged toward Xiao Chen from the left and right respectively. They gave rise to two chaotic energy storms, as if two huge waves were rolling over and over.

Xiao Chen was hardly fearful as he rushed forward in a straight line. With a flash of black light in his left hand, huge metal engravings appeared in his hand. He faced the two Incarnations and smashed them with the metal engravings.

A crushing sound echoed in the sky. The energy waves surged up violently as two of the Incarnations were crushed on the spot. The tiger woman coughed out blood as she retreated in defeat.

Xiao Chen's eyes were emitting cold glints as he rushed towards the huge White Tiger blocking his path. With a vertical slash of the divine halberd in his hand, a streak of golden light swept across all directions.

A wave of the halberd caused the wind to dance!

The White Tiger was practically unable to withstand this attack. After changing back to his humanoid form, he wanted to run away from the battlefield, but how could Xiao Chen give him the chance to escape. His body transformed into a startling streak of light as he chased at high speed.

The cold blade of the halberd illuminated the sky. At the same time, it also illuminated the pale face of the tiger servant. He shuddered as he turned around to attack Xiao Chen with nothing held back.

Xiao Chen was cold-hearted and had a heart of steel. His handsome face didn't show the slightest change, and his eyes were flickering with ice-cold glints as he thrust the divine halberd in his hand.

“Pfff!”

The blood splashed everywhere. The golden divine halberd instantly pierced the tiger servant as fresh blood dyed the chilly sky red.

“AHHHHHH!” Xiao Chen looked up to the sky as he let out a shout. His white hair danced hysterically as he continued to rush forward with the tiger servant still stuck on the halberd.

Ahead of them was the Celestial City, there were many lofty buildings in front. Xiao Chen used the golden divine halberd to carry the tiger servant and crash into a tall building, then crash from within to the outside. Keke's death had made him thirst for blood.

The fresh blood flowed along the pole of the halberd, but Xiao Chen was indifferent to it.

CHAPTER 214 – SENSE OF LOSS

The fresh blood flowed along the pole of the halberd, but Xiao Chen was indifferent to it.

He was using the golden divine halberd to pierce the tiger servant and rushed forward in the sky with extreme speed. They crashed into three lofty buildings before Xiao Chen finally let out a howl and brandished the ominous halberd. The tiger servant burst open; his internal organs, four limbs, and head flew in all directions, the stench of blood was dense. The sky was bloody red, the bloody mist drifted in the air, the fishy smell assailed the nostrils, and gave people the desire to throw up.

In the blood-dyed sky, a streak of light rushed out from the bloody mist. It wanted to run far, far away from here. It was the soul of the tiger servant.

The cold glint in Xiao Chen's eyes flashed. With lightning fast speed, his Undying Wings sliced through the vast sky as he began to give chase.

The jet-black metal engravings in his left hand magnified at high speed. It became as big as a house in the blink of an eye. Xiao Chen ruthlessly smashed the tiger servant's soul with the jet-black metal engravings that was distributing an endless black fog. Under the rumbling sound, the black lightning was dancing in the sky and annihilated the tiger servant's soul in a split second. Not even a little bit of soul essence was left over.

Xiao Chen's power shocked everyone, people were unable to comprehend it, how did he become this powerful so quickly. Moreover, the two ominous weapons in his hands were even more terrifying. They were practically unstoppable and destroyed any materials.

Far away, the tiger woman witnessed all of this. She let out a furious roar. He was originally an insignificant boy, but in the end, he actually killed demigods, and heavily wounded them.

The people from the Fair family was even more furious. They already had two demigods killed by Xiao Chen's own hands. They were unable to bear such a great loss.

That ten odd meters tall giant from the Fair family let out a grievous roar. He covered at least ten meters with a single step, instantly running over from the sky, and attacked Xiao Chen with his gigantic palm.

The rays of light from the golden divine halberd illuminated the heavens and earth. The murderous aura seemed to pierce through the Ninth Heaven directly. One after another, sparkling ice crystals began to form in the sky as they drifted down unceasingly.

Xiao Chen soared into the sky, he raised the halberd with both hands and swung it downwards. The golden divine radiance sliced through the sky and instantly gave rise to a torrent of blood. The divine halberd had chopped off the giant's arm. The huge arm brought forth a wide blanket of blood as it fell into the night sky.

"AHHHHHHHHH!!!" The Fair family's demigod let out a pained howl. He instantly reverted to his original form, regaining his normal build. With one arm cut off, the pain could even be said to have pervaded his inner heart. His five senses were almost warped and blood seeped out from the corner of his mouth.

Xiao Chen was calm and undisturbed. He continued to brandish the divine halberd with a cool face and began his assault again.

The gale rushed forth as Xiao Chen was being surrounded by a black fog. The other demigod from the Fair family came to provide support. His body had completely transformed into the black fog. It was possible for that black fog to even corrode a demigod level expert, but this demigod felt a little powerless when confronting the golden light of the divine halberd. He was heavily wounded the instant Xiao Chen waved it. The black fog was cut apart as the demigod coughed out blood. He reverted to his true body and fell back.

Unwilling to let them off so easily, Xiao Chen rushed over by himself while waving the golden halberd.

That demigod who possessed the Guardian Deity divine ability had a cruel smile on his face. He also rushed towards Xiao Chen, with his body emitting glaring rays of light. This was his most desperate, suicidal attack. He wanted to burn all the life energy in his body to finish off Xiao Chen.

Seeing the malevolent expression on his face, Xiao Chen did not feel anything

in the slightest. With a vertical slash of the divine halberd, a streak of bloody light soared into the sky. It was all within his expectations. The demigod who possessed the Guardian Deity divine ability was cut in half from head to toe. Fresh blood wildly gushed out while the corpse exploded.

Xiao Chen made his moves at lightning speed. He instantly pulled out the jet-black metal engravings in his left hand. The metal engravings quickly grew in dimension, from the originally fist-sized engravings, to the size of a building. Xiao Chen grinded the carcass that had just exploded into a meat paste. All the energy waves were smashed to pieces by the jet-black radiance.

By the time Xiao Chen turned around, the demigod from the Fair family that could transform into black fog was long gone. And the tiger woman was already making her way towards the deepest part of the Celestial City.

Demigods were still humans in the end. They cared most about their own lives. The path of asceticism was not easy, they had to pay too much to be able to be at where they are now. Nobody wanted to die a tragic death, especially since they couldn't win.

The death of three demigods made the remaining two completely lose their will to fight. They were practically unable to resist, so they chose to quickly escape.

Since it was already like this, how could Xiao Chen give up now. With a flap of his Undying Wings, he immediately gave chase. No matter what, he couldn't let the tiger woman off. Many of these events were directly related to her.

Three of the tiger woman's Incarnations were pulverized, she was now as pressed as a stray dog. Her arrogant and dominating vibe was no more. It was more vital to run for her life now. Diving down from the sky, she quickly rushed into the complicated streets of the Celestial City. She wanted to hide in the Celestial City, to hide from this Death God.

However, how could Xiao Chen give her this chance? Since the beginning up until now, he had always kept her in check with his spiritual sense. He could let everyone else escape, all except her.

With a roaring gust, Xiao Chen threw the jet-black metal engravings in his hand. The dark clouds rolled over and over, the ink-like waves overflowed in the

sky, the black radiance flickered. A streak of light was left behind in the sky as the jet-black metal engravings overtook the old woman in but an instant.

Under the world-shaking thunderous noise, the black-colored lightning tore the space apart as the old woman's legs were mercilessly swept away by the metal engravings.

A miserable shriek was transmitted over in an instant. The old woman's legs were completely smashed and transformed into a bloody paste as she fell from the starry sky. This kind of bone shattering pain almost made her crazy.

Xiao Chen quickly caught up. There was no need for words, it was not necessary to say anything, his actions were enough to reveal his intentions. The golden halberd was slashed down diagonally.

"Pfff!"

Blood splashed everywhere. The already deformed arm of the old woman was cut off. The pain made her roll around in the sky. Her ash-colored long hair was already a royal mess and her expression was extremely sinister.

She cursed at Xiao Chen threateningly, "You will ultimately die tragically... the tiger clan will not let you off, your negligible skill only amounts to as much as an ant in the eyes of the Middle Earth's tiger clan, it's so insignificant and pathetic..."

An explosion of light flashed as the bloody mist in the sky condensed into icicles. The blood-colored icicles fell down, and even more snowflakes were falling from the sky.

"Pfff!"

With another strike of the divine halberd, the old woman's other arm was cut off. She let out an inhuman howl. Blood flowed along the pole of the halberd and dyed Xiao Chen's hands red. However, he was as calm as an ancient well, he was so calm that it was scary. The radiance in his eyes were as cold as the severe winter.

"The Fierce Tiger from my tiger clan is already in the Southern Wasteland... you won't live for much longer, he will take revenge for us, and torment you to death through the cruelest means!" The old woman revealed a malicious smile at Xiao

Chen. At the same time, her body was emitting a hint of radiance, she wanted to self-destruct.

“Swish!”

The rainbow-colored radiance flashed. The dragon’s confinement technique was executed. Xiao Chen sealed her in an instant and didn’t give her the chance to commit suicide.

Xiao Chen’s eyes emitted two cold glints as he penetrated the old woman’s chest with the halberd. It was not that easy to kill a demigod level expert. He violently shook the halberd as a ball of light drifted out. The old woman’s three souls and seven spirits were being deprived one by one.

With a wave of the divine halberd, a head flew away. The old woman’s corpse fell from the high altitude.

God Slayer!

Xiao Chen’s palm blade left a rainbow-like arc as he slayed one of the old woman’s soul. After that, he waved his palm blade repeatedly and completely annihilated the three souls and seven spirits of the old woman.

The old woman was dead, but Xiao Chen’s heart was still empty. He didn’t feel the thrill of vengeance. Keke would never come back. Even if he managed to kill everyone, then what? Would it really change anything in the end?

However, he must do something, he couldn’t just give up like this. Soaring into the sky, he started to give chase to the last demigod who had run away.

In the Fair family’s mansion, it was very chaotic. Faircloud was standing high in the sky as his body quivered. His clan had lost three demigods, this was an unbearable loss.

The demigod who had transformed into the black fog already made it back to the Fair family’s mansion. He got beside Faircloud, wiped the blood from the corner of his mouth, and said, “Please request the old masters for help.”

Faircloud raised his eyebrow and said, “They are currently training in seclusion. They had once said, unless the life or death of the family is at stake, do not disturb them.”

The demigod smiled bitterly, “Xiao Chen’s strength is already more than someone at the level of demigod can handle. I am worried that he will make his way here. The family will then face a huge disaster...”

At present, it was just as the demigod had said, Xiao Chen was already making his way here. His killing intent did not diminish even with the death of the tiger duo. There were already a few people on his must kill list among the Fair family, he intended to slaughter them mercilessly.

However, just when he was getting close to the Fair family’s mansion, the golden halberd and jet-black metal engravings were shaken as they transmitted via telepathy.

“This is bad!”

“There’s danger ahead.”

Hearing this. Xiao Chen stopped in the sky. After a brief moment of silence, he asked, “Is it impossible to win?”

“As you are now, it is enough to handle those who just broke into the demigod realm. It is barely enough to slaughter a warrior at the peak of demigod. However, any stronger than that, it might be somewhat difficult. If you want to take your chances, the two hundred years you offered to us are far from enough, we don’t want to make a loss.”

“You two scrap metals are deceiving me.”

“We already told you, it is enough to take revenge and safeguard your life. Among your sworn enemies, there’s nobody stronger than demigod. As such, we did not deceive you. However, you want to break into the Fair family’s mansion now, I’m afraid the circumstances there are far from good. I can feel the aura of true experts there. Although they are currently slumbering, it’s possible they might wake up at any moment.”

“Two scrap irons, greedy and shameless.” Xiao Chen let out a curse in a low voice. Then he asked coldly, “If I hit-and-run now, will I be able to escape?”

“This... is possible!” This time, the two ominous weapons gave a definite answer.

In that instant, Xiao Chen mercilessly threw the jet-black metal engravings towards the Fair family's mansion, then he turned around and ran towards the Northwest without looking back.

"Motherf—! What do you think I am..." The jet-black metal engravings transmitted an extremely angry message via telepathy. However, it didn't turn back immediately and fell from the sky like a huge mountain.

"Boom!"

The earth trembled as a majestic palace in the Fair family's residence was crushed. Many buildings in the surroundings collapsed from the aftermath of the shock. Huge cracks appeared on the ground and half of the Fair family's residence were transformed into ruins.

Faircloud saw all of this clearly from the sky, he was so angry that his face turned deathly pale.

"I WILL DEFINITELY SLAUGHTER THIS BRAT!"

"I WILL DEFINITELY KILL HIM!"

The jet-black metal engravings soared into the sky while giving rise to a thousand layers of ink-like waves.

Then it flew towards the Southern Wasteland!

Although he killed many powerful enemies, Xiao Chen still had a sense of loss. He felt like his heart was tearing apart. This time, he was completely and thoroughly defeated..... he had lost too much at this place, too much.

He didn't want to make a childish vow, he didn't shout out his desire. He kept the heartache to himself and flew Northwest silently.

He was getting further away from the Celestial City, he didn't know when he would be able to return.

Xiao Chen quickly strode through the endless wasteland even while bearing an indescribable fatigue.

After getting five hundred miles away from the Celestial City, a streak of light appeared in front of Xiao Chen's path and stopped him. It was actually that lazy-looking Draco.

Xiao Chen came to a stop as he held the golden halberd in his hand. If not for the warning of the two ominous weapons, Xiao Chen really would've struck the guy before his eyes.

Draco was like a bringer of calamity, he was the one who had encouraged this incident to get bigger. Xiao Chen already lost all of his good impression of the dragons in the Southern Wasteland. They were truly too heartless. How could they look on indifferently as Keke was killed?

"Sorry, it seems like you have taken something you should not." Draco stood there lazily, with an unconcerned expression. Although he was talking to Xiao Chen, he was looking all around without a destination.

Xiao Chen did not say anything and flew towards another direction as soon as he turned.

"Swish!"

With a flash, Draco cut off Xiao Chen's path, and said, "Something unpleasant happened, sigh, I am also very sad, but since it has already happened, there's nothing else we can do about it. I am following the old man's order to come and retrieve the dragon's sacred tree. Please cooperate." 1

Suppressing his urge to smash Draco with the jet-black metal engravings, Xiao Chen readjusted his unstable mood and said, "That belongs to the little critter, I will not hand it over."

"Sigh, this is such a headache. I must retrieve it at all cost. I really don't want to kill you, otherwise the little critter would have died for nothing... but if you must force my hand, then I don't have any other choice." Draco seemed to be very relaxed as he walked towards Xiao Chen in the sky absent-mindedly.

Just at this time, a tiger roar transmitted over as a streak of white light flew over like a shooting star. A rough looking and bulky person appeared in the front.

"I finally caught up. Do you think you can walk away after killing the experts of my tiger clan? Brat, compensate me with the sacred tree."

"Fierce Tiger, your hand is too long!" Draco turned around and his expression gradually grew colder.

“Is it now? I don’t think so. He killed the experts of my clan, he must die today. As for the sacred tree, it is not the property of the dragons. It originally belonged to the snow-white little critter, and the dragons were not its owner.”

After communicating with the two weapons for a short while, Xiao Chen already understood. The two before his eyes might possibly be Immortalis level experts. He was practically no match for them. However, the two weapons did give him a definite answer, that it was possible to escape from here.

Since that was the case, Xiao Chen urged the divine halberd and metal engravings to get away from here. Two terrifying streak of lights were instantly left behind in the sky. The black light and golden light flickered as they sliced through the void. It was as if two rainbows had combined as he streaked through the air. The trail immediately disappeared. He was traveling at a speed several thousands of times faster than before.

As strong as Draco and the Fierce Tiger were, even if they raised their speed to the limit, they were still unable to catch up.

Xiao Chen didn’t know where he was flying to, nor did he know how long had he been flying. The sun had ascended, it was yet another new day. Until his strength was finally exhausted, he fell from the sky.

The blue sky looked as if it had been washed by water, it was clean and freed from impurities. It was like a huge sapphire. Yet, it was so far away from the earth, and gave people an extremely natural feeling. The earth, which was connected to the blue sky, was full of vitality. Every kind of flower and plant decorated the land, it was beautiful and vibrant.

A bluish green river was meandering across the fragrant grassland like a green belt. All kinds of flowers were blooming atop this pure land and rustled as the wind blew past.

He was feeling light-headed, but it seemed that Xiao Chen had returned to his homeland. His white-haired parents were standing in front of the village, gazing at the muddy road that led to the outside of the village. He could vaguely see the aged face of his parents, old and gray-haired, faces filled with tears. They looked outside of the village day after day, month after month, waiting for him to return home.

At the riverside, the willows were brushed by the wind as she sang a sad melody, gazing at the Kunlun mountain range day after day, year after year, until the merciless time had taken away her youth..... As time passed, her beautiful figure gradually aged, and gray hair had already taken roots. But even so, she was gazing at the Kunlun mountain range all year round. The crystal-clear water flowed unceasingly and erased the footprints at the riverside with the passage of time... 2

During the bloody battle in the Celestial City, the little critter was reluctant to part and cast one last glance at him before it soared into the sky. Blood sprinkled everywhere and from then on, it hadn't appeared again.....

The half-conscious Xiao Chen felt a splitting headache. He suddenly let out a loud shout and sat on the grassland. His head was covered in cold sweat as he stared fixedly at the pure land before him.

In the village not far ahead, an old couple was standing there. The willow trees were brushed by the wind, and at the riverside ahead, a beauty was standing there.

"Xiao Chen..." The familiar voice transmitted clearly to Xiao Chen's ears.

It was as if Xiao Chen had been struck by lightning. His cheeks were streaming with tears as he muttered, "I have returned to my hometown..."

CHAPTER 215 – QING QING

After that chaotic night, three days had already passed. Many secret operations were taking place in Celestial City. As for the events that occurred that day, many people were passing various judgments. Although the major clans were powerful and influential, it was impossible for them to keep this under wraps for long.

The Fair family was undoubtedly dejected. Three of their demigods were killed. It was a disastrous loss. Even half of their official residences was razed to the ground. They had completely lost face.

The power of the tiger clan was obvious to all. Although their base was as far as the Middle Earth, the major clans in the South still had no choice but to be careful when associating with them. Other than the Undying Sect and the Solitary clan, almost no other clan could stand up to them.

What's rare was that, during the event this time, the tiger clan also did not get off lightly. Their millennium long reputation had been harmed.

The news spread all over the South quickly, and people were discussing it spiritedly. The major clans were on the negative side of this news, but there was no way around it. It was impossible to keep this news from spreading.

Xiao Chen's feat that night, was admittedly the focal point of the discussion, but even more people were discussing the bizarre event brought about by the snow-white little critter. Many people forecasted that ten odd years from now, there would inevitably be huge chaos in the world of immortals.

The origins of the little critter was too extraordinary!

Back in those days, when Buddha and Laozi's previous generations died, this had also happened. It invited devastating disorder on earth for a lifetime. And perhaps, this time, an even bigger gate of catastrophe would be pried open.

The rumor was spread all over the South.

And for those who knew what was really going on, such as the old masters of the tiger clan and the antiques in the South, they only shook their heads in

silence.

When the entirety of the South was abuzz, Xiao Chen's whereabouts were unknown. Nobody in the Celestial City knew which way he went.

The flowers were brightly colored, the sweet scent of the grass and the smell of the soil made this place even more vivid and real.

Xiao Chen's eyes were brimming with tears as he fixed his gaze ahead. Looking at his gray-haired parents, looking at that elegant figure he was familiar with, he couldn't believe all of this was real.

Could it be that he had caused a spatial distortion and really returned to his hometown?

However, when he concentrated his mind and walked over step by step, all of this disappeared. The sky was still blue, the flowers were still fragrant, the scenery was as usual. It truly had a striking resemblance to his hometown. Only that, his gray-haired parents and girlfriend were not there. The village already disappeared for a long time and couldn't be seen.

"It is a dream in the end..." Xiao Chen heaved a sigh, "But why was it so realistic?"

He took a step forward, this plain was filled with a sea of beautiful flowers as far as the eye could see. Flowers of all colors made mother earth brim with spiritual energy.

There were also many small animals that were not afraid of people as they looked at Xiao Chen with curiosity. The long-eared snow-white rabbit and gorgeous multicolored deer were running all around Xiao Chen.

The dense spiritual energy here was like a thin layer of mist. The flowers and grass in the surroundings looked extremely gorgeous under the illumination of the sun.

"Just where is this place?" Xiao Chen was filled with doubts. This was really like an extraordinarily pure land, without any profane vibes. Even the little animals were not startled by people. This really was a little shocking.

The true realm of immortals might be like this, with spiritual energy adrift, as

beautiful as a picture scroll.

Xiao Chen soared into the sky. He wanted to see everything in the surroundings clearly from a higher position. The instant he rose to the sky, he suddenly felt like three more suns appeared. All four directions had a sun respectively, he lost his sense of direction.

Confusion!

This was not an ordinary place. It had a mysterious power that made people lose their sense of direction. Xiao Chen felt that the sky was gorgeous, his surroundings were actually filled with many flowers and plants.

It made him incomparably shocked. The vegetation floating in the sky was similar to the ones on the ground; there were dense spiritual energy lingering on the plants.

Could it be that there was a huge illusion spell shrouding this entire area?

Xiao Chen did not move around recklessly. He slowly descended to the grassland and when he raised his head to look again, there was only one gentle sun hanging in the sky. Everything that he had seen earlier was gone.

This was not a simple place, Xiao Chen lamented as such. After settling on a direction, he walked forward with large strides.

However, after walking for about an hour, he found that he had returned to his original location. There were still traces of when he was lying down unconscious earlier.

“Just what kind of place have I gotten myself into?” Xiao Chen frowned.

After calming down, he carefully probed his surroundings. Just at this moment, a speck of light suddenly blossomed in his body. The rainbow-colored sacred tree was shaking a little in his body.

The sacred tree was actually still within his body, but it was no longer linked to the nine divinized acupoints. Xiao Chen couldn't borrow the divine power from it any longer.

After thinking for a while, Xiao Chen guided the sacred tree out of his body. The treasured tree shook slightly in his hand, and the dense spiritual energy in

the surroundings was all dispersed. It was like a dense fog had been cut open. Everything before Xiao Chen's eyes became clear, he had once more regained his sense of direction.

No longer hesitating, he held the treasured tree in his hand and flew forward at low altitude.

As such, he advanced like this for no less than five hundred miles. He could already see the forest up ahead. He was finally about to get out of this sea of flowers.

At the border zone of the sea of flowers, there was a towering rocky hill there, with a few big characters carved on it: Maze of Flowers.

The calligraphic touch was forceful. Xiao Chen only recognized these characters after pondering for a while, because those characters were really too old.

"So the pure land behind me is called the Maze of Flowers. What a fitting name."

The verdant forest ahead didn't seem like it was barren. On the contrary, it was auspicious and peaceful.

"Did you come out from the Maze of Flowers?" A delicate voice was transmitted from close by with hints of doubt.

Xiao Chen turned his head to look, he only saw an elegant girl with an otherworldly vibe. She was standing quietly in between the flower trees.

The eyes were the windows to a man's soul. Her beautiful eyes were as pure as limpid autumn waters and she had long eyelashes. She gave people the impression of a lovable and naive little girl. Her beautiful nose was sticking out elegantly, her red lips were moist, and her pearly white teeth were as lustrous as pearls.

The girl's delicate body was like a soft willow, graceful yet delicate. It was not an exaggeration to say she was a perfect beauty. Her long black hair was bright and reflected the light. It spread out naturally until her waist. She was wearing a white dress. The girl was so beautiful, as if she was a fairy that came out of a painting.

The girl was extremely beautiful and elegant, yet she had an unworldly vibe. It just so happened that she was looking at Xiao Chen in wonder. Her long eyelashes flickered as she blinked her eyes, it was suffused with her sincerity.

She was like a gentle wind that lightly brushed past. The otherworldly girl gave people a breathtaking feeling. She was like the spotlessly white flower atop the faintly discernible mountain of immortals. She was that special.

“Uncle, why are you not saying anything?” The melodious sound carried a hint of doubt.

Uncle? Xiao Chen was shocked. He was left speechless after touching his long snow-white hair.

“Uncle, you have already walked out from the Maze of Flowers, all of these are not illusions.” Speaking until here, the girl retrieved a bottle from the wicker basket hanging on her arm. Then she said, “Uncle, please drink this blest clear water. This way, you can break away from the illusions faster.” As she said this, she tossed the bottle over carefully. One could tell that she was a little precautious and didn’t want to get too close.

Xiao Chen picked up the bottle and twisted off the lid. The fragrance immediately penetrated deeply into the heart. With a “Gulp!” he downed the blest clear water. After the grievous event, he had yet to drink or eat anything in the following three days. He was honestly feeling a little thirsty. After finishing the drink, his entire body felt relaxed. The pores all over his body seemed to have opened up. He realized that the blest clear water was not an ordinary item. It had already washed his fatigue away.

“Uncle, you sure can drink.” The girl had a benevolent glance. She smiled lightly and made people feel as if they had been cleansed by the spring wind. It was a very infectious smile. It was like a clear spring in the desert, like an oasis in the middle of Gobi Desert.

Xiao Chen returned the bottle to the girl and asked with a gentle voice, “Do I really look that old? I shouldn’t be that much older compared to you.”

The elegant girl nodded her head seriously, then she shook her head and said, “Young uncle.”

Xiao Chen smiled bitterly. This unworldly girl was indeed very special. However, it was very easy to generate favorable impression.

After experiencing all kinds of dangerous events in Celestial City. Seeing a spirited girl like this was just like a clear spring that trickled past the dry land.

“Where is this place?”

“This is heaven.” The girl exposed a mischievous smile, two tiny dimples appeared on her cheeks. She was somewhat cute and charming.

“How about you?”

“Naturally, I am an angel in heaven.”

Coming across such a mischievous girl, Xiao Chen also smiled involuntarily as he said, “Tell me quickly, this is very important to me.”

“Oh, alright. This is the Pure Land. Some great-grandpas and grandmas are living here in seclusion. Uncle, how did you find this place?” The girl was blinking her big eyes in a daze, her long eyelashes were quivering. She creased her tender nose and appeared very cute and lively.

“I also have no idea how I got here, how far is this place from Celestial City?”

“So far!” The girl was shocked as she looked at Xiao Chen, and said, “This is five million miles away from the Southern Wasteland. Uncle, how did you run so far?” 1

He kneaded his temples, Xiao Chen felt an indescribable exhaustion. Although the blest clear water had already washed away his exhaustion, he was still feeling tired. He knew his body was slightly ill, but even more so were his spirits.

“Uncle, why don’t you come to our village first, your condition doesn’t seem that good.”

“Thank you.”

Xiao Chen followed the girl in white dress silently as they pushed their way through the beautiful forest.

“Uncle, do you have a load on your mind? If you don’t look at where you’re going, you will bump into that big tree.”

With her warning, Xiao Chen dodged instinctively. It resulted in the gentle laughter of the girl, “Uncle, you are so amusing. I was lying, why you are not paying attention to the road.”

“Uncle is very tired.”

“Young uncle, cheer up. Don’t look that dispirited. Look, isn’t the forest beautiful? Grandpa told me every tree here possess intelligence. One of them was planted personally by the ancestor god Fuxi. If you can find it, you can be relieved from all your worries. It can grant you any wish.”

On the way, the girl was singing and talking cheerfully. She was running all over the place. Even when running into a young deer, she would call out to it in a friendly manner. Inside the wicker basket, other than herbal medicines, it was also filled with various wild flowers.

“Uncle, I seldomly come across people I don’t know, tell me about all the interesting things out there.” The girl was as lively as a fairy. From start to finish, she was very cheerful and was full of vitality.

“Uncle, why are you not talking anymore?”

“Plop!” Xiao Chen blacked out and fell into the flower thickets.

“Gasp! Uncle, are you alright?” The girl circumvent a few ancient trees with agile steps as she ran over to support Xiao Chen. Then she said with astonishment, “Young uncle, your life energy is very weak. It seems like you don’t have much time left.”

The girl lightly waved her slender fingers. A crystal clear radiance spilled down and shrouded Xiao Chen within. After that, she was humming some unknown song with her melodious voice as she walked forward with agile steps. Xiao Chen was floating in the crystal clear radiance as it followed behind the girl’s back.

After advancing for approximately ten miles, the beautiful forest gradually became thinly spread as a small village revealed itself in front of them. There was spiritual energy drifting in the air, and the sunlight filtered through the leaves, it really looked like paradise.

There were pavilions and kiosks in the gardens, small bridges over running water, fragrant flowers and plants. The scenery was incomparably beautiful.

It seemed like there were only a few dozen households in this small village. All of them were small wooden house, each and every one of the house resembled a big mushroom. The roofs were full of rattans. The emerald green leaves and bright-colored flowers were flickering with specks of light.

The young girl ran towards a courtyard with two wooden houses. She pushed open the wooden gate as she called out with a lively yet mischievous voice, "Grandpa, I'm back."

"Qing Qing, you are back." A gray-haired old man with child-like face pushed the door of the wooden house open as he walked into the courtyard.

"Un! Grandpa, I picked up an uncle on the way back."

"....."

The reason why Xiao Chen lost consciousness was because the drainage of his life energy was too excessive. Many organs in his body were aging rapidly. Although it had yet to show on the outside, his qi and blood were clearly very weak. This time, he fainted for no less than half a month. During this time, he vaguely heard the old man's words.

"If not for the treasured tree that's hidden in his body, he might be in danger. In addition to that, there are nine bizarre acupuncture points providing hints of life energy to his body. Otherwise, with his remaining lifespan, it would be very hard to keep his organs working normally."

"The young uncle is so pitiful."

Another half month passed like this before there were signs of Xiao Chen gradually waking up.

It was already a little more than one month since that nightmare. Just when the Celestial City had calmed down, more news spread like wildfire; that the Fair family and the tiger clan were going to connect by marriage. Although they had yet to make a formal announcement, the rumor was already passed to the outside world. Fairsnow, one of the pearls in the Southern Wasteland, was betrothed to the seventh son of the tiger clan's master. They were going to complete the marriage during the current year.

This sensational news undoubtedly made secret activities surge up violently in

the chaotic Celestial City. Many people could tell how powerful the tiger clan was. Their hands had already reached out from the Middle Earth to the Southern Wasteland. Were they truly trying to expand their power, or were they trying to probe the dragons in the Southern Wasteland? Nobody knew for sure.

During this one month, Xiao Chen was befuddled. He was finally going to regain consciousness.

During this day, beyond the paradise-like village, the roar of a dragon was transmitted over. The thunderous sound tore through the peace and tranquility here.

However, the elders who resided here did not feel angry, they were still as calm as an ancient well. Those who were reading continued to read, those who were taking a stroll continued to stroll, those who were training continued to train.

The young girl who brought Xiao Chen back pushed the fence open in a cheerful mood as she ran towards the outside of the village.

At a distant place, there was a two meters long black dragon. It was flickering with black light that was no different than a black cloud as it ran over quickly. It possessed an Ancestral Dragon head, tiger-like body, Ancestral Dragon tail, and a full body of black scales. It looked extremely warlike.

“Blackie, why are you so late?” Qing Qing lightly stroked the head of the black dragon and happily jumped onto its back.

What’s baffling was that, the proud dragons that normally wouldn’t allow people to ride on them, especially the genuine kings of dragons, was not angry at all. On the contrary, it jumped onto the treetop with the young girl on its back and leapt from one branch to another as if it was flying, leaving behind afterimages in the sky.

Far away, a silly-looking fatty was running over. He was sweating profusely as he waved at the black dragon that was prancing on the tip of branches.

“Brother fatty, how can you take Blackie away for so long and not let it come to see me.”

“We got caught up in a life or death disaster just recently.” The little fatty was gasping for breath in the forest.

“We went to the sacred mountain. I have fused my five beast souls as one. Blackie even seized a strand of dragon qi, as well as the soul of a primal beast king.” The little fatty’s excitement was undisguised.

The young girl, Qing Qing, opened her mouth widely and said with a start, “You guys went to the sacred mountain’s ancient altar? What you can obtain there is the soul of a genuine primal beast! Brother fatty, you are too awesome, you actually fused five souls as one.”

“Just good luck, hehe. Didn’t you notice? Blackie has changed from 1.5 meters to 2 meters. It reaped more benefits than me this time.”

“Oh, that’s right. It was still about one meter long when it left the dragon island with your group. Its improvement is really great this one year.” The young girl nodded before she said, “Oh, by the way, brother fatty, I picked up a strange uncle.”

“Picked... up?” Obviously, the little fatty was bewildered, “Just what kind of person could have charged into the Pure Land?”

“He seemed to have made it through the Maze of Flowers.”

“What, there’s actually someone powerful enough to make it through that scary place?”

“Hehe, I bring you to see him, the young uncle is very handsome.”

After arriving in the wooden house, the little fatty immediately shouted in shock, “Xiao Chen... why is it him?”

“Eh, you know this pitiful uncle?”

“Of course, during the critical moments, if not because of him, our entire group would have died in the hands of the demon.”

Just at this time, Xiao Chen was just about to wake up. He opened his eyes in a daze, and saw a familiar face. A silly-looking fatty was looking at him with a smile.

“Ox...man?”

“It is me! What happened to you, Xiao Chen? Motherf—! Who made you like this, tell me, the great Ox will wipe him out!”

Qing Qing pulled Oxman's sleeve and said via telepathy, "A lot of his life energy was drained."

"It's going to be all right, fear not! I will go to the mysterious sacred mountain. Who knows, we might be able to obtain the soul of an ancestor god. At that time, you will have more than enough life energy for a few generations." Oxman could see Xiao Chen's weakened state. He pounded his chest to comfort him.

A coughing sound transmitted from outside. Qing Qing's grandfather walked in and pulled Oxman's round face like he was teasing a young child. He was all smiles when he said, "Children's words carry no harm. Don't speak nonsense when you don't understand anything. It wouldn't be good if you angered the primal beast souls in the sacred mountain."

CHAPTER 216 – PURE LAND

In the bird's nest, the nestlings were chirping and waiting to be fed. At the riverside, the flower petals drifted along with the wind, and the fragrance of the flowers was carried by the wind. There was a small village full of spiritual energy, that village had the same vibe as Xiao Chen's hometown. The lively village was similar to that small mountain village beside the Yellow River. Xiao Chen suspected he was in a dream.

Two months had passed in an instant. Xiao Chen's body was slowly recovering. Although he was in a critical situation, abundant life energy was stored in the nine divinized acupoints. The life energy didn't rush out all at once, but a little bit would leak out everyday to heal his aging organs. Because of that, Xiao Chen's condition was maintained at a very subtle equilibrium.

His flame of life was still burning, his power was still the same as before. Xiao Chen's heart was filled with immense battle intent, he wished he could go back to Celestial City immediately.

However, he knew that he was far from strong enough to survive in Celestial City. After thinking about it calmly, his agitated heart gradually calmed down.

Standing on the stone bridge, he looked at his white-haired self reflected in the water. Xiao Chen remained silent. This time, he was completely and thoroughly defeated..... He had lost too much in Celestial City, too much. His felt completely empty.

He had lost faith in humanity. People would fight for fame, profit, romance, love, hate, and enmity, but what for?

He lost a friend, Fairsky had betrayed their friendship, he pulled out a sword and attacked him with no regards. He lost Keke, its body and soul were destroyed.

He lost two hundred years of his lifespan. That was equivalent to two lifetimes of a normal person. However, he didn't manage to fill the gaps in his heart. He would never forget about the crushing defeat that night.

He ran away from Celestial City!

Xiao Chen had lost too much, he felt a heart ripping pain. He didn't want to make a childish vow nor shout out his goal. He kept this pain to himself as he was thinking back to those events in silence. He was reflecting upon it calmly.

He was too frivolous and flamboyant. His recognition of human nature was too little. Fame, benefits, power, romance, love, hate, enmity..... interweaved to form one huge net that nobody in this world could hide from. He must sharpen himself.

Does that mean he has to endure patiently and continue to escape?

No! Youthfulness wouldn't last that long. It was needless to repress his natural instincts. He was a free and spontaneous person, restraining himself would only have negative effect on his life.

What he needed was to reflect upon it. He needed to be even more experienced, to the point that he could be called shrewd and ruthless. He had to become more mature, and polish himself from the craggy corner.

It was not a compromise. He was not discouraged. Rather, this was a transformation for the purpose of enriching his life.

He had to learn from this crushing defeat. Being seasoned did not mean to lose the drive, or even one's prime. The passion would never stop burning, those feelings would build up his confidence even more.

The only thing that should be changed was his methods, his heart would remain the same forever!

Xiao Chen stood quietly on the stone bridge, thinking deeply.

Qing Qing's grandfather was taking a stroll and walked towards the stone bridge. The old man was beaming with smiles all day long. He seemed very kind and benevolent.

"Thinking about something?"

"Just reflecting."

The old man chuckled and said, "Experiencing defeat is not scary at all, the most important thing is how you look upon the defeat. If those outstanding

individuals never experienced defeat, they would always remain at the level of just 'outstanding'. We need to go through constant hardships before we come to understand its true meaning. I was also a frivolous youngster during my years. I had stirred up too much trouble because of my arrogance. I truly had too many bitter experiences. Having power is one thing, but how you use that power is the most important point. Don't be like those who are easily swayed from left to right, but you also must have a superior means to face the storm."

Xiao Chen smiled and heeded the advice.

"Elder, how about I treat you to some drinks."

"Let's go then! I almost forgot, the one Qing Qing saved is a millionaire who carries a few hundred thousand gold plates! Even if you buy all the best wine from Granny Phoebe, there will be enough to last for several years."

Six hundred thousand gold plates, that was the award money given when Keke won the title of the Southern Wasteland Beast King. Every time he saw these gold plates, he would recall the little thing and experience a heart ripping pain.

Thinking about it, he really was a millionaire. He hadn't spent the eight hundred thousand gold coins from selling Pasteur. It's just that... the money were still with the Zhuge fatty.

"It's not that I am stingy, but these few hundred thousand gold coins, I really don't want to touch them. That will only make me feel bad. However, you don't have to worry. I went to the deep forest and picked up a Nonafrond Grass. I already delivered it to Granny Phoebe. It should be enough to trade for a dozen bottles of the best wine."

"Haha... that's great, that should be enough for the both of us." The old man laughed heartily.

Xiao Chen sincerely respected this benevolent and optimistic old man. The old man was very amiable, but the depth of his power couldn't simply be described as unfathomable.

What made Xiao Chen the most shocked was that, in this village, there were more than ten elders about the same age as this old man.

What he learned from the little fatty Oxman was that, this Pure Land was the

hiding place of the previously well known practitioners from the Jungle Tribe and the Beastmen. Just what kind of past did they possess, nobody knew. According to Oxman, even his grandmother was respectful towards these people. Using the little fatty's words, the people at this place were "impressive" figures.

Xiao Chen guessed the elders in this Pure Land must have had extremely glorious past. However, they wanted to live a simple life, thus they gathered in this secluded region.

Not a lot of people would come here to disturb these elders, other than a few special cases. In regards to the Jungle Tribe and the Beastmen, this place was a true paradise.

Beyond this Pure Land were numerous Jungle Tribes and Beastmen Tribes, covering thousands of miles of territory. It was impossible to count just how many ancient tribes were in these territories.

This place was Northwest of the Celestial City, but within the whole picture of the immortal's mainland, this was located at the Southwest border. It was close neighbor to the Middle Earth.

If one could fly, it would only take one day to get to Middle Earth.

Granny Phoebe's small pub was out in the open. There were only a few sets of table and chair arranged in front of the small wooden house. Many elders would visit the pub everyday. They could already smell the fascinating aroma of the liquor from very far away. These were not just any normal wines. Xiao Chen had experienced it himself. These could even be said to be godlike wines that directly intoxicated the very bones.

Although these elders were very kind and amiable, Xiao Chen didn't dare to slight them. He would smile at each and every elder to show his respect.

"Xiao Chen, your body is too weak, your life energy is pathetically low. Today, I will teach you a skill and how to refine your body. I guarantee that your life energy will slowly recover."

The Elder Turtle was a beastman, because his beast soul was originally that of a turtle, everyone including Xiao Chen addressed him as Elder Turtle. However, at their current level of power, they already looked completely human.

The Elder Turtle's posture was rather... awkward. He was just like a big turtle crawling in the sky, but his mouth was opening and closing unceasingly as traces of world essence flowed into his mouth like water.

Elder Ye reminded, "Xiao Chen, you should learn this without delay. This is a wonderful technique to maintain good health by seizing the essence of the world. It is a rare ability to maintain long life."

Xiao Chen thanked them hastily and crawled in the sky awkwardly. He diligently listened the Elder Turtle's guidance and carefully savour it. He couldn't help but exclaim in admiration, even their martial arts were, too wonderful for words.

"Hehe... young uncle, what are you doing?" Qing Qing walked over from outside the village as she giggled.

"Plop!"

Xiao Chen was shocked and fell onto the ground.

"Hehe, uncle, don't get too excited. Actually, your posture just now was very accurate. I couldn't learn it no matter what."

Elder Turtle stroked his white beard as he said with a smile, "Little girl, don't make fun of him. Although the posture is not very good-looking, it is a genuine skill that can save your life. Every time I wanted to teach you, you would run away."

Just because she was pure, it didn't mean she was simple-minded. Qing Qing could even be said to be very bright. She had a creative mind. This intelligent girl was the favorite of every elder in this village.

She smiled brilliantly and said, "Oh, that's right. Qing Qing will seek out Elder Turtle to teach me in the future." Speaking until here, she turned around to face Xiao Chen and said, "Uncle, are you really going to the sacred mountain with brother fatty? That place is very dangerous. You are still in poor health, you shouldn't take risks."

Hearing this, every elder in the pub looked at Xiao Chen. Elder Ye said, "There is only a one out of ten chance to survive, not many people dare to take the risk. It is too dangerous."

Elder Turtle also said, “It’s too dangerous. If I was not forced into a corner at that time, I definitely wouldn’t go there and take my chances.”

The beastmen’s sacred mountain, that was the most mysterious land. Legends had it that it was a “Cyprus Furnace” successfully refined by ancestor god Suirensi. The furnace was supposedly capable of smelting anything in the world.

However, for some reason, the Cyprus Furnace transformed into a sacred mountain and became a place where the saintly souls gathered. The souls of many fallen warriors would gather at that place.

Of course, that was only part of the secret that everyone was aware of. Legends have it that the sacred mountain possessed even more secrets that even the prophets and ancestors of various beastmen tribes didn’t know about.

“I really want to go... I want to try and see if I can summon Keke’s soul at that place.”

Xiao Chen did not hide his origin. These elders knew how he managed to make it to this Pure Land.

Granny Phoebe walked out from the small wooden house. Although she had a head full of white hair, her face was very beautiful. If one said she was senile, that was definitely wrong, but it was not appropriate to say she was young either. She smiled towards Xiao Chen and said, “Yesterday, the Nonafrond Grass you procured was very effective. It is enough to brew fifty jar of fairy wine.” After that, she said with slight concern, “Since you want to take your chances, nobody here will stop you. But we must remind you again, that place is truly very dangerous. I will teach you a self-protection skill.”

Speaking until here, Granny Phoebe became very solemn as she chanted, “The universe contain emptiness, the heart harbors the world, grant life to my imagination, shadows produced from my body...”

Granny Phoebe looked very dignified at that moment, she flew up in a whirl and made all kinds of complicated movements. Her hands kept forming one seal after another. A star sign appeared over her head from thin air and let off millions of streaks of light. It was so bright that it blinded everyone!

Elder Ye faced Xiao Chen and said, “Quick, memorize it immediately. That is the

highest form of every seal technique known in legends, the Seal of Aquarius!”

Xiao Chen moved his body as his heart desired as he listened to Granny Phoebe’s instructions. While he was savouring all the information, he began to form the Seal of Aquarius.

Granny Phoebe was a clan member of the Jungle Tribe. She was extremely proficient in the laws of nature. She could use her systematic spells to wrest control of nature’s power. The Seal of Aquarius was the supreme technique she perfected by combining it with the Buddhist’s star sign.

Xiao Chen immersed himself in this ethereal state and sensed the Seal of Aquarius’ formidable power. He had a feeling, once this technique reached its peak state, it could swallow up the sun and the moon.

On the other side, Qing Qing also danced like a butterfly. Her slender fingers were forming the seals unceasingly. A crystallized star sign appeared on top of her head, she looked as pure as a goddess. She spoke to herself, “Every time I see Granny Phoebe forming the seals, it gives me a different feeling. I wonder when will I be able to form the seals.”

“Your aptitude is not bad.” After seeing that Xiao Chen had memorized the fundamentals, Granny Phoebe gave her evaluation.

One must know that Xiao Chen was naturally gifted on the path of austerities. However, in the eyes of these people, he had just barely passed. It was enough to indicate how powerful and incomprehensible they were. These elders once had unknown “pasts”. They had seen one too many gifted practitioners, and they were naturally one of those well-known figures.

Qing Qing was very clever, she giggled and told Xiao Chen, “Uncle, why don’t you hurry up and buy some wine. Treat everyone here to their heart’s content, and they might just teach you a skill. Then you will reap endless benefits for a lifetime.”

Xiao Chen knew she was helping him with good intention. Of course, he was not a blockhead and immediately treated these elders to fine liquors.

“Khhhh! This is the stuff!”

The doors of many wooden houses in the village were pushed open. Once they

heard someone was going to treat them, many elders turned up without being invited with a chuckle.

In reality, these elders didn't think closed door training was worth doing. Training on a regular basis was not that important to them. Every time a youngster from the beastmen or Jungle tribe came, they would give them pointers heartily.

Even though Xiao Chen was practicing the profound technique of the ancient monolith himself, he still felt that the techniques occasionally revealed by these elders were top-notch abilities. If he could learn a few of them and compare them, it would be very beneficial for his training.

Life in the Pure Land was a simple one. It was one without prestige and full of livelihood. There's no fighting and scheming here, nor was there a scramble for power and profit. Compared to Celestial City, this was truly a paradise. It made Xiao Chen feel as if being in the Celestial City was already a thing from the distant past.

In the following month, Xiao Chen learned a few difficult to understand profound arts from the elders. Every time when he truly comprehended these arts, he would always have this one thought; could these elders be gods? How did they manage to create such powerful secret arts? It seemed like they were not one bit weaker than the secret arts of the ancient monolith!

Time passed by quickly, it had already been four months since Xiao Chen arrived at the Pure Land. His bodily functions were mostly recovered. His state was situated at a subtle equilibrium. He decided to take action now. He's going to the beastmen's sacred mountain with Oxman in an attempt to summon Keke's soul.

